

**THE TEXT IS  
LIGHT IN  
THE BOOK**











UNITED STATES DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR  
OFFICE OF THE SOLICITOR

+

# HANDBOOK of FEDERAL INDIAN LAW

By

FELIX S. COHEN

Chairman, Board of Appeals  
Department of the Interior

Foreword by

HAROLD L. ICKES

Secretary of the Interior

Introduction by

NATHAN R. MARGOLD

Solicitor for the Department  
of the Interior



UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE  
WASHINGTON 1941



## CONTENTS

---

	Page
Foreword by Harold L. Ickes.....	v
Introduction by Nathan R. Margold.....	vii
Author's Acknowledgments.....	viii
Analysis of Chapters.....	xix
Chapter 1 The Field of Indian Law Indians and the Indian Country.....	1
2 The Office of Indian Affairs.....	9
3 Indian Treaties.....	33
4 Federal Indian Legislation.....	68
5 The Scope of Federal Power over Indian Affairs.....	89
6 The Scope of State Power over Indian Affairs.....	116
7 The Scope of Tribal Self-Government.....	122
8 Personal Rights and Liberties of Indians.....	151
9 Individual Rights in Tribal Property.....	183
10 The Rights of the Indian in His Personality.....	195
11 Individual Rights in Real Property.....	206
12 Federal Services for Indians.....	237
13 Taxation.....	254
14 The Legal Status of Indian Tribes.....	268
15 Tribal Property.....	287
16 Indian Trade.....	348
17 Indian Liquor Laws.....	352
18 Criminal Jurisdiction.....	358
19 Civil Jurisdiction.....	366
20 Pueblos of New Mexico.....	383
21 Alaskan Natives.....	401
22 New York Indians.....	416
23 Special Laws Relating to Oklahoma.....	425

iii

PROPERTY OF UNIVERSITY  
OF WASHINGTON LIBRARIES  
GRADUATE READING ROOM  
NON-CIRCULATING



## FOREWORD

---

There are few subjects in the history and law of the United States on which public views are more dramatically and flagrantlly onerous than on the subject of Indian affairs. According to the popular view, the Indian is a vanishing race, his lands are steadily dwindling, restricted as to the hunt and deuced the warpath, he has nothing to live for and nothing to contribute to our civilization, he is not entitled to the rights of citizenship he subsists on "rations", and he cannot sign his name without the approval of a reservation superintendent.

The facts are very different. Indians today are probably the most rapidly increasing racial group in our population, the total area of Indian lands has been increasing slowly but steadily for nearly 5 years, the Indian today is making significant and vital contributions to American art and citizenship, and to our knowledge and enjoyment of the resources of forests, plains, streams, and trails that were heretofore before white immigrants came, all native Indians today are citizens, entitled to all of the rights and bound by all of the obligations of citizenship, if some of them still have equitable interests in property which they cannot alienate, they share this disability, or advantage, with a large number of their non-Indian fellow citizens.

That Indians have legal rights is a matter of little practical consequence unless the Indians themselves and those who deal with them are aware of those rights. Such, however, is the complexity of the body of Indian law, based upon more than 4,000 treaties and statutes and upon thousands of judicial decisions and administrative rulings, rendered during a century and a half, that one can well understand the vast ignorance of the subject that prevails even in ordinarily well informed quarters. For more than a century, commissioners of Indian affairs have appealed for aid in reducing this unmanageable mass of materials to some orderly form. Yet during that period none of the attempts to compile a simple manual of the subject was carried to completion.

Ignorance of one's legal rights is always the handmaid of despotism. This Handbook of Federal Indian Law should give to Indians useful weapons in the continual struggle that every minority must wage to maintain its liberties, and at the same time it should give to those who deal with Indians, whether on behalf of the federal or state governments or as private individuals, the understanding which may prevent oppression.

It is entirely fitting that this contribution to the enlightenment of administrators and Indians should have been made under the leadership of one who has striven valiantly to free our national relations with the Indian tribes from the despotic traces of less tolerant epochs. On April 28, 1934, President Franklin D. Roosevelt, in urging the passage of the Wheeler-Howard Act, which, with its recent extensions to Oklahoma and Alaska, stands today as the most important segment of our Indian law, declared:

The Wheeler-Howard bill embodies the basic and broad principles of the administration for a new standard of dealing between the Federal Government and its Indian wards.

It is, in the main, a measure of justice that is long overdue.

We can and should, without further delay, extend to the Indian the fundamental rights of political liberty and local self-government and the opportunities of education and economic assistance that they require in order to attain a wholesome American life. This is but the obligation of honor of a powerful nation toward a people living among us and dependent upon our protection.

Certainly the continuance of autocratic rule, by a Federal department, over the lives of more than 200,000 citizens of this Nation is incompatible with American ideals of liberty. It also is destructive of the character and self-respect of a great race.

The continued application of the allotment laws, under which Indian wards have lost more than two-thirds of their reservation lands, while the costs of Federal administration of these lands have steadily mounted, must be terminated.

Indians throughout the country have been stirred to a new hope. They say they stand at the end of the old trail. Certainly, the figures of impoverishment and disease point to their impending extinction, as a race, unless basic changes in their conditions of life are effected.

I do not think such changes can be devised and carried out without the active cooperation of the Indians themselves.

The Wheeler-Howard bill offers the basis for such cooperation. It allows the Indian people to take an active and responsible part in the solution of their own problems.



This Handbook of Federal Indian Law will constitute, I believe, a lasting contribution towards the ideals thus enunciated

This work cannot have the legal force of an act of Congress or the decision of a court. Whatever legal force it will have must be derived from the original authorities which have been assiduously gathered and patiently analyzed. In publishing this work the Department of the Interior does not assume responsibility for every generalization, prediction, or inference that may be found in the volume. What is implicit, however, in the fact of publication is a considered judgment that this volume will prove a valuable aid in fulfilling the obligation which Congress has laid upon the Department of the Interior to protect and safeguard the rights of our oldest national minority.

The labors which Solicitor Nathan R. Margold, Assistant Solicitor Felix S. Cohen, and their aides and collaborators have devoted to this pioneer work will be appreciated, not only by those Indians and Indian Service administrators whose needs it most directly serves, but by all of us who hold dear the civilized ideals of liberty and tolerance.

(Signed) HAROLD L. ICKES

JULY 9, 1940

## INTRODUCTION

### 1 THE BACKGROUND OF FEDERAL INDIAN LAW

We in this country are slowly learning to appreciate the significance of the problem of Indian rights for the cause of democracy here in the United States and throughout the Western Hemisphere. Over the radio, a few months ago, came the words of a man who knows more than any one else in the world about Indians as human beings. His words are a better introduction to the Indian problem than I can write.

What sort of treatment dominant groups give to subject groups—how governments treat minorities—and how big countries treat little countries. This is a subject that comes down the centuries, and never was it a more burning subject than in this year 1939—even in this month, December 1939.

So the question: How has our own country treated its oldest and most persisting minority, the Indians, how has it treated them, and how is it treating them now? This is an important question. I believe that nearly all Americans realize the importance of this question. Many millions of our citizens feel an interest, curious and sympathetic and sometimes enthusiastic, in our Indian minority.

What I shall describe will be a bad beginning which lasted a long time, which broke Indian hearts for generation after generation, which inflicted destructions that no finite time can wholly repair. Then I shall describe how the long-lasting bad record was changed to something good, how, although the change came so late, it did not come too late, how when the change came, it still found hundreds of Indian tribes ready to respond to the opportunity which at last had been given them. I shall describe how the good change has developed across three Presidencies, so that it is not an achievement or program of a single political party. But I shall describe, too, the decisive and immense good change which has come under President Franklin D. Roosevelt and Secretary of the Interior Harold I. Ickes.<sup>1</sup>

I shall not quote the main body of Commissioner Collier's speech, for that reappears, amplified and developed somewhat, in the pages that follow. I quote, again, only his final words:

No, the task is not finished. It is only well begun. But one part of the task is finished, and it marks and makes an epoch. The oppressions which crushed the Indian spirit have been lifted away. From out of an ancient and dark prison house the living Indian has burst into the light, into the living sunlight and the future. All of his age-tempered powers and his age-tried discipline are still there. He knows that the future is his, and that the century of dishonor, for him, is ended.

But he needs our continuing help, and our nation's debt to him is not yet paid.

The thing we have started to do, and with your help, you citizens of our country, will continue to do, is to aid the Indian work out his own destiny. We have helped him to return and to rebuild the richness of his own national life, and in doing this we think we have enriched the national life, the national heritage and the national honor of 130,000,000 Americans. This is the way the democracy of the United States is solving the minority problem of its first Americans.

Let me carry your thought beyond our own national borders. Our Indians are a tiny, though now a growing minority. But south of the Rio Grande, the Indians number not hundreds of thousands, but millions. Pure-blooded Indians are the major population in Mexico, in Guatemala, Honduras, Peru, Ecuador. There are thirty million Indians—one growing race, and one of the world's great races. And that race is marching toward power. It may be that the most dependable guarantee of the survival and triumph of real democracy in our hemisphere, south of the Rio Grande, is this advance toward power of the Indians, who from most ancient times, and now, are believers in, and practitioners of local democracy.

What we are doing—what with your help we shall do—to meet our own Indian minority problem has a deep significance to these 30,000,000 other Indians, and to all the countries where they are located. Here we enter within the battleground and effort-ground of our Western Hemisphere destiny. It is upon this scale of two continents, and of a democracy defended and increased through at least one-half of our globe, that world-history will view our own record with our Indian minority.

<sup>1</sup> "America's Handling of its Indigenous Indian Minority," an address by John Collier, December 4, 1939. 7 Indians at Wash., No. 2, January, 1940 pp. 11, 16.

Against this background of history and of struggle and hope, the federal law governing Indian affairs may be viewed not, as it has too often been viewed, as a curious collection of anachronisms and mysteries, but rather as a revealing record in the development of our American constitutional democracy. The decline of dictatorship in the Indian country is fresh enough in our national memory so that we may perhaps profit from an analysis of weaknesses that dictatorial bluster ever seeks to conceal, and from an understanding of the ways in which the forms and forces of democracy have, in this small sector of an endless battle line, won victory.

## 2 THE BASIS OF FEDERAL INDIAN LAW

For more than a century, Supreme Court Justices, Attorneys General, and Commissioners of Indian Affairs have commented on the intricate complexity and peculiarity of federal Indian law. Yet until now no writer has attempted to gather into a single work these intricacies. The reason may perhaps best be appreciated by those who have attempted that task. The federal law governing Indians is a mass of statutes, treaties, and judicial and administrative rulings, that includes practically all the fields of law known to textbook writers—the law of real property, contracts, corporations, torts, domestic relations, procedure, criminal law, federal jurisdiction, constitutional law, conflict of laws, and international law. And in each of these fields the fact that Indians are involved gives the basic doctrines and concepts of the field a new quirk which sometimes carries unpredictable consequences.

To survey a field which includes, for instance, more than four thousand distinct statutory enactments, one must generalize. And generalization on the subject of Indian law is peculiarly dangerous.

For about a century the United States dealt separately with the various Indian tribes and the legal rights of the members of each tribe were fixed by treaty.<sup>2</sup> These treaties are for the most part still in force and of recognized validity. In them one finds reflected the very wide pre-Columbian divergencies that existed, for instance, between the great agricultural towns and confederacies of the Southeast and the loosely organized nomadic hunters of the Plains area, or between the small fish-eating, slave-owning bands of the Northwest Coast and the great constitutional democracy that was the League of the Iroquois.

When Congress in 1871 enacted a law<sup>3</sup> prohibiting further treaty making with the Indian tribes, the form of governmental dealing with the Indians was changed, but the essential character of those dealings was not modified. Congress continued to deal with the Indian tribes, in large measure, through "agreements," ratified by both Houses of Congress, which do not differ from treaties in legal effect. The only substantial change accomplished by the law of 1871 was that whereas Indian treaties were submitted for the ratification of the Senate alone, as the Constitution of the United States provides,<sup>4</sup> agreements are ratified by the action of both Houses, and thus the House of Representatives, which had long been excluded from equal participation in Indian affairs, has achieved an equal status with the Senate in that field. Apart from treaties and agreements with particular tribes, the dealings of the Federal Government with the Indians have been predominantly by way of special statutes applying to named tribes, and, most recently, by way of tribal constitutions and tribal charters, all varying very considerably among the different tribes. Until the last years of the nineteenth century there was very little general legislation applying a uniform pattern to all tribes, and what little there was usually turns out, on analysis, to be in the nature of generalization from provisions that had appeared in several treaties.

During what may be roughly defined as the allotment period—from 1887, when the General Allotment law<sup>5</sup> was passed, to 1933, when the process of allotment came to an end—there developed a tendency to impose upon all Indian tribes a uniform pattern of general laws and general regulations. This tendency was commonly justified in terms of administrative efficiency and economy, and to this justification there was sometimes added the thought that Indian treaties, special statutes, and regional differences were all outworn relics which had to be sacrificed in the march of national progress. The effect, however, of this policy of ignoring the special rights conferred on individual tribes by treaty and statute and ignoring the political autonomy and cultural diversity of the tribes was to cause tremendous and widespread resentment among the Indians. The Indians found Indian and white champions. Protest against mistreatment of the Indian led to many investigations. A survey was conducted by the Institute for Government Research at the request of Secretary of Interior Work. The results of this study, published in 1928 under the title "The Problem of Indian Administration," gave direction

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 3, for an analysis of these treaties.

<sup>3</sup> Act of March 3, 1871, 16 Stat. 565, 605. 25 U. S. § 2079; 26 U. S. C. 71.

<sup>4</sup> Article II, sec. 2.

<sup>5</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 388, 26 U. S. C. 381 et seq.

for more than a decade to Indian reform. On February 1, 1928, the Senate authorized its Committee on Indian Affairs to carry out an intensive survey of the condition of the Indians in the United States.<sup>4</sup>

These investigations have brought to light many of the evils resulting from attempts to impose a uniform pattern of treatment upon groups with different wants, and thus have strengthened the tendency towards special consideration of the legal problems of particular tribes. The policy of superseding the old pattern of uniformity and absolutism found expression in the Wheeler-Howard (Indian Reorganization) Act. Pursuant to this law, approved on June 18, 1934,<sup>5</sup> more than a hundred tribes in the United States adopted their own constitutions for self-government.<sup>6</sup> Practically all the regulations of the Indian Service have now been made subject to modifications for particular tribes through the provisions of these tribal constitutions and tribal ordinances.

These considerations indicate that a work on federal Indian law must deal with law made for, and in large part by, diverse groups with divergent economic interests, political institutions, and levels of cultural attainment.

Anyone who has worked in the field of Indian litigation is frequently asked by otherwise well informed people whether he understands "the Indian language." There are, in fact, more than 200 different Indian languages, some of them as distinct from each other as English and Chinese. This linguistic diversity is paralleled by diversities in the conditions and legal problems of more than 200 different Indian reservations.

Common opinion pictures the original American dressed in feathers and wampum, his belt adorned with scalps, mounted on a horse, gazing after buffalo. This picture blurbs over the fact that many Indians, before white contact, were farmers and fishermen who had never seen feather head-dresses, wampum, scalps, or buffalo, that no Indian ever rode a horse before the Spaniards brought horses into North America, and that the special combination of striking Indian peculiarities which the modern "cerus Indian" embodies did not exist before the rise of modern American showmanship.

Just as the popular picture of the Indian embodies a false juxtaposition of traits, so the popular view of Indian law embodies a false juxtaposition of ideas.

The popular view of the Indian's legal status proceeds from the assumption that the Indian is a ward of the Government, and not a citizen, that therefore he cannot make contracts without Indian Bureau approval, that he holds land in common under "Indian title" that he is entitled to education in federal schools when he is young, to rations when he is hungry, and to the rights of American citizenship when he abandons his tribal relations.

This is, on the whole, a thoroughly false picture, although historical exemplification may be found for each feature.

It would be absurd to set up in place of this false and oversimplified picture of federal Indian law any other equally simple picture. It may be worth while, however, to set forth certain hypotheses concerning the recurrent patterns of federal Indian law, which will be tested against decisions, statutes, and treaties in the pages that follow. These hypotheses may be conveniently grouped under four leading principles: (1) The principle of the political equality of races; (2) the principle of tribal self-government; (3) the principle of federal sovereignty in Indian affairs; and (4) the principle of governmental protection of Indians.

<sup>4</sup> Whereas there are two hundred and twenty five thousand Indians presently under the control of the Bureau of Indian Affairs, who are, in contemplation of law citizens of the United States but who in fact treated as wards of the Government and are prevented from the enjoyment of the free and independent use of property and of liberty of contract with respect thereto, and

Whereas the Bureau of Indian Affairs handles, leases, and sells Indian property of great value, and disposes of funds which amount to many millions of dollars annually without responsibility to and without effective responsibility to Congress, and

Whereas it is claimed that the control by the Bureau of Indian Affairs of the persons and property of Indians is preventing them from accommodating them selves to the conditions and requirements of modern life and from exercising that liberty which is due to their own efforts without which they can not develop into self reliant, free, and independent citizens and have the rights which belong generally to citizens of the United States, and

Whereas numerous complaints have been made by responsible persons and organizations charging improper and imprudent administration of Indian property by the Bureau of Indian Affairs, and

Whereas it is claimed that prevalent diseases are widespread among the Indian population, that the death rate among them is not only unreasonably high but is increasing, and that the high use in many localities is becoming jeopardized, and

Whereas the acts of Congress passed in the last hundred years having as their objective the civilization of the Indian tribes seem to have failed to accomplish the results anticipated, and

Whereas it is expedient that said acts of Congress and the Indian policy incorporated in said acts be examined and the administration and operation of the same as affecting the condition of the Indian population be surveyed and appraised. Now, therefore, be it

Resolved, That the Committee on Indian Affairs of the Senate is authorized and directed to make a general survey of the conditions of the Indians and of the operation and effect of the laws which Congress has passed for the civilization and protection of the Indian tribes, to investigate the relation of the Bureau of Indian Affairs to the persons and property of Indians and the effect of the acts, regulations, and administration of said bureau upon the health, improvement, and welfare of the Indians, and to report its findings in the premises, together with recommendations for the correction of abuses that may be found to exist, and for such changes in the law as will promote the security, economic competition, and progress of the Indians.

Said committee is authorized to send for persons, books, and papers, to administer oaths, to employ such clerical assistance as is necessary, to sit during any recess of the Senate, and at such places as it may deem advisable. Any subcommittee, duly authorized thereto, shall have the powers conferred upon the committee by this resolution.

The expenses of said investigation shall be paid out of the contingent fund of the Senate and shall not exceed \$30,000.

Ree, 70th Cong., 1st sess.)

<sup>5</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 28 U. S. C. 461 et seq. For subsequent amendments and extensions, see Chapter 7.

<sup>6</sup> See Chapter 7.

## A POLITICAL EQUALITY

The right to be immune from racial discrimination by governmental agencies is an essential part of the fabric of democratic government in the United States. In part, this right is constitutionally affirmed by the fifth, fourteenth, and fifteenth amendments to the Federal Constitution, in part, the right is embodied in statutes providing penalties for racial discrimination by agencies of Federal and State Government, and, in part, the right is no more than a moral right implicit in the character of democratic government but not always protected by adequate legal machinery.

Despite a widely prevalent impression to the contrary, all Indians born in the United States are citizens of the United States and of the state in which they reside.<sup>9</sup> As citizens they are entitled to the rights of suffrage guaranteed by the fifteenth amendment,<sup>10</sup> and they are likewise entitled to hold public office,<sup>11</sup> to sue,<sup>12</sup> to make contracts,<sup>13</sup> and to enjoy all the civil liberties guaranteed to their fellow citizens.<sup>14</sup> These rights take on a special significance against the background of highly organized administrative control. They indicate that a body of federal Indian law, considered as "racial law," would be as much an anomaly as a body of federal law for persons of Teutonic descent, and that the existence of federal Indian law can be neither justified nor understood except in terms of the existence of Indian tribes.

## B TRIBAL SELF-GOVERNMENT

The principle that an Indian tribe is a political body with powers of self-government was first clearly enunciated by Chief Justice Marshall in the case of *Worcester v. Georgia*.<sup>15</sup> Indian tribes or nations, he declared,

\* \* \* had always been considered as distinct, independent, political communities, retaining their original natural rights, \* \* \* (P 559)

To this situation was applied the accepted rule of international law

\* \* \* the settled doctrine of the law of nations is, that a weaker power does not surrender its independence—its right to self-government—by associating with a stronger, and taking its protection. (P 560)

From these premises the courts have concluded that Indian tribes have all the powers of self-government of any sovereignty except insofar as those powers have been modified or repealed by act of Congress or treaty. Hence over large fields of criminal and civil law, and particularly over questions of tribal membership, inheritance, tribal taxation, tribal property, domestic relations, and the form of tribal government, the laws, customs, and decisions of the proper tribal governing authorities have, to this day, the force of law.<sup>16</sup>

## C FEDERAL SOVEREIGNTY

The doctrine that Indian affairs are subject to the control of the Federal Government, rather than that of the states, derives from two legal sources.<sup>17</sup> In the first place, the Federal Constitution expressly conferred upon the Congress of the United States the power "to regulate commerce with the Indian tribes."<sup>18</sup> Matters internal to the tribe itself even to this day have been left largely in the hands of tribal governments. Federal power has generally been invoked in matters arising out of commerce with the Indian tribes, in the broad sense in which that phrase has been used to include all transactions by which Indians sought to dispose of land or other property in exchange for money, liquor, munitions or other products of the white man's civilization. The growth of the commerce clause has meant the expansion of federal power in Indian affairs, at the expense of state power.

Supplementary to the express constitutional power over commerce with the Indian tribes which was conferred upon Congress, the Federal Government was constitutionally endowed with plenary power over the making of treaties. Since the Federal Government had made several treaties with Indian tribes prior to the adoption of the Constitution in 1787, and continued to make such treaties for more than eight decades thereafter, the growth of federal power over Indian relations, at the expense of all claims of state power, was continuous and unchecked during the period in which the outlines of our present law of Indian affairs were established.

<sup>9</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 2

<sup>10</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 4

<sup>11</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 4

<sup>12</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 6

<sup>13</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 7

<sup>14</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 10

<sup>15</sup> 6 Pet. 516 (1823)

<sup>16</sup> See Chapter 7

<sup>17</sup> See Chapter 5

<sup>18</sup> Art. I, sec. 8

At the present time it may be laid down as a rough general rule that Indians on an Indian reservation are not subject to state law. This exemption is of particular importance in the fields of criminal law and taxation. The general rule has been modified in a few particulars by congressional action conferring upon the state specific power over certain subjects. Perhaps the most important of these laws delegating power to the states is the General Allotment Act,<sup>19</sup> which provides that, when tribal lands have been individualized, the individual parcels shall be inherited in accordance with the laws of the state. Another important exception to the general rule of federal sovereignty exists in the case of Oklahoma, where very extensive powers over Indians have been conferred upon the government of the state.<sup>20</sup> In both of these cases, as well as in various other matters, the power of the state is defined by federal legislation.<sup>21</sup>

#### D. GOVERNMENTAL PROTECTION OF INDIANS

Most of the legislation of the United States with respect to Indian affairs is subject to a dual interpretation. To the cynic such legislation may frequently appear as a mechanism for the orderly plundering of the Indian. To those more charitably inclined, the Government has appeared as the protector of the Indians against individuals who wished to separate the Indian from his possessions. Without attempting to anticipate the judgment that history will render on this conflict of doctrine, it may be said that at least the theory of American law governing Indian affairs has always been that the Government owed a duty of protection to the Indian in his relations with non-Indians. As was said by the Supreme Court of the United States in the case of *United States v. Kagama*:<sup>22</sup>

Because of the local ill feeling, the people of the States where they [the Indian tribes] are found are often their deadliest enemies. From their very weakness and helplessness, so largely due to the course of dealing of the Federal Government with them, and the treaties in which it has been promised, there arises the duty of protection, and with it the power. This has always been recognized by the Executive and by Congress, and by this court, whenever the question has arisen. (P. 384.)

As a practical matter the individuals against whom the Indian needed the most vigorous kind of protection were the trader and the settler. Both wanted Indian land. The trader also wanted furs. The trader offered directly or indirectly, in exchange for land or furs, kettles, knives, clothing, liquor, firearms, ammunition, and other commodities. Some of these commodities were unknown in the pre-Columbian cultures, and the tribes had developed no adequate social controls over their use; the byproducts of this trade were disease, violence and, in many cases, the destruction of the game on which the Indians had subsisted. The settler wanted Indian land. Often he offered, in exchange for the land, the trader's goods, often he took the land without offering any *quid pro quo*. This intercourse between Indians and whites threatened the decimation of Indians through violence, disease, and starvation and imposed upon the Federal Government a tremendous cost for military protection of the white frontier families against the not always discriminating retaliation of the despoiled natives. The effort to control this intercourse was the guiding motif of federal Indian legislation down to our own generation.

Thus the problems of federal Indian law have been primarily the problems of (1) the regulation of Indian traders, (2) controlling the disposition of Indian land, (3) the protection of that land against trespass, and (4) the control of the liquor traffic. A few words on each of these four points may suggest the general contours of our federal law on Indian affairs.

(1) In 1790 the Federal Congress adopted the policy of regulating trade with the Indians through a system of licensing traders.<sup>23</sup> Except for a brief period, from 1796 to 1822, when a system of Government trading houses was maintained, the principle of control of Indian trade through licenses has been in force. Under this system federal supervision of the character and quality of goods sold and prices charged has been possible. Sales of liquor, and of firearms and ammunition not needed for useful purposes, have been banned. The system depended very largely for its effectiveness upon the isolation of the Indian groups affected, and in recent years the growth of towns and cities upon or near various Indian reservations and the development of mail-order trade have introduced elements of uncertainty into the question of the present efficacy and future development of our federal control over Indian trade.

<sup>19</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 885, 28 U. S. C. § 461 *et seq.* See Chapter 11.

<sup>20</sup> See Chapter 24.

<sup>21</sup> See Chapter 6.

<sup>22</sup> 118 U. S. 815, 361 (1886). The comma after "them" in the third line of the quotation appears in the Supreme Court Reporter edition but not in the U. S. Reports edition. It is essential to the sense of the passage.

<sup>23</sup> See Chapter 16.

(2) The problem of federal control over the disposition of Indian lands becomes a very esoteric legal problem if pursued into the mysteries which have been created by those who sought to deduce specific limitations upon Indian land sales from the inherent attributes of the general concept of "Indian title." The notion of "Indian title," as a supposed special form of tenure involving rights of possession but no right of alienation, is a notion that depends upon certain feudal doctrines of sovereignty, dominion, and seisin, on which evidence controversy is possible. The subject, however, loses much of its mystery if the sale of land be viewed against the background of federal control over other types of Indian trade. The fact is that, while recognizing that the Indian tribes owned lands in their possession and had the right to dispose of them the Federal Government has always circumscribed such disposition by means of laws prescribing the manner and terms upon which Indian land may be alienated.<sup>1</sup> The economic significance of this control is apparent in the following statement of the United States Supreme Court:<sup>2</sup>

The Indian right to the lands as property, was not merely of possession, that of alienation was concomitant, both were equally secured, protected and guaranteed by Great Britain and Spain, subject only to ratification and confirmation by the license, charter or deed from the governor representing the king. Such purchases enabled the Indians to pay their debts, compensate for their depredations on the traders resident among them, to provide for their wants, while they were available to the purchasers as payment of the considerations which at their expense had been received by the Indians. It would have been a violation of the faith of the government to both, to encourage traders to settle in the province, to put themselves and property in the power of the Indians, to suffer the latter to contract debts, and when willing to pay them by the only means in their power, a cession of their lands, withhold an assent to the purchase, which, by their laws or municipal regulations, was necessary to vest a title. (Pp 758-759)

The first Indian Intercourse Act<sup>3</sup> provided that all alienations of Indian land should be made "at some public treaty, held under the authority of the United States." In the land sales that were made by treaty the United States was generally the purchaser, but in a few cases States or private individuals were designated as purchasers of the land sold.

Apart from treaties, a series of special statutes, generally but not always dependent upon the consent of the Indians concerned, provided for the sale of Indian lands. Other statutes, general as well as special, have provided for the leasing, by the Indians or by the Secretary of the Interior on their behalf, of Indian lands and minerals and the sale of Indian-owned timber.<sup>4</sup> Legislation authorizing the allotment of tribal lands, and supplementary laws dealing with such allotments, have provided for the sale or lease of allotted lands, under various degrees of federal administrative supervision.<sup>5</sup>

By maintaining its control over the transactions by which Indians dispose of land, the United States has been able to establish a degree of control over the moneys or other *pro quo* received by the Indians in connection with such disposition.<sup>6</sup> Thus various types of tribal and individual funds, generally representing returns from the disposition of Indian land and subject to federal control, have been established, and a good deal of the attention which Congress and the Interior Department have given to the Indian problem has been directed to the proper use of this money. Part of this vast fund, obtained from the disposition of Indian natural resources, has been used for the administration of education, health, and other public services on the Indian reservations, part of it has been distributed to the Indians in per capita payments, and part has been utilized, with or without the consent of the Indians, for expenses of government administration on the reservations. The various service functions of the Indian Service which have developed out of the administration of these funds must be left for later treatment.<sup>7</sup> It is enough for our present purposes to note that the principle of federal protection of the Indian, applied specifically to Indian lands, continued to exert its force beyond the transaction of Indian land sale, and that by virtue of this principle federal control came to be extended over almost the entire economic life of the Indian.

(3) The protection of Indian land against trespass was one of the first responsibilities assumed by the Federal Government. The promise of special protection for lands retained by the Indian tribes was an important *quid pro quo* in the process of treaty-making by which the United States acquired a vast public domain.<sup>8</sup> This

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 15.

<sup>2</sup> *Aristech v. United States*, 9 Pet. 711, 738-759 (1835). And see Chapter 15 note 18.

<sup>3</sup> Act of July 22, 1790, 1 Stat. 137.

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 13.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapters 6, 11.

<sup>6</sup> See Chapter 16.

<sup>7</sup> See Chapter 12.

<sup>8</sup> See Chapter 3.

promise of protection was sometimes backed up by a treaty provision declaring that trespassers put themselves outside the protection of the Federal Government, and might be dealt with by the tribes themselves according to their own laws and customs.

It is characteristic of the piecemeal approach characterizing federal legislation on Indian affairs that despite the importance of the subject of trespass upon Indian lands no general legislation on the subject has ever been enacted. Apart from the various treaty provisions with particular tribes, there are separate laws dealing with trespass by unlicensed traders, by horse thieves, and other criminals or would-be criminals, by settlers, by persons driving livestock to graze on Indian lands, and by hunters and trappers.<sup>32</sup> But there is to this day no general law which can be invoked against those trespassers whose occupation Congress has not foreseen. Ordinary civil actions have been brought by, or on behalf of, Indians and Indian tribes to protect Indian lands against trespass, but Indian unfamiliarity with legal procedure has often rendered this remedy ineffective. In recent years the Federal Government has devoted considerable attention to litigation for the protection of Indian lands against trespass. The right of the Federal Government to bring such suits has been justified either on the theory that title to the lands rested with the Federal Government or on the more general theory that the Federal Government has a special obligation, as guardian of the Indians, to protect their lands against trespass even where full title in fee simple is held by the Indian tribe.<sup>33</sup> It is pertinent to note, finally, that the federal protection of Indian lands against trespass by State authorities has given rise to the established doctrine that such lands are not subject to State land taxes.<sup>34</sup> This doctrine has been invoked, in turn, by state authorities as a reason for not rendering to reservation Indians various public services that are rendered to other citizens of the state, e. g. public education.<sup>35</sup>

(4) In the belief that a great deal of Indian disorder was the result of traffic in intoxicants, Congress early established a total prohibition law for the Indian country.<sup>36</sup> This law has been maintained in force continuously for more than a century. The breaking down of early conditions of isolation has made the enforcement of this legislation an increasingly difficult problem.

### E SUMMARY

In each of the foregoing four fields of legislation the principle of federal protection of the Indians has been carried into effect by means of some type of federal control over transactions between Indians and non-Indians, whether through complete prohibition, licensing, or the prescribing of conditions governing particular transactions. It is fair to say that historically and logically federal control over transactions of these four types is at the root of the entire body of federal legislation on Indian affairs. Thus this tremendous and unwieldy mass of legislation, comprising more than 4,300 distinct enactments, may be viewed in its entirety as the concrete content of the abstract principle of federal protection of the Indian.

In terms, this principle, an offspring of the more general one of federal sovereignty over Indian affairs, is entirely consistent with the principles of racial equality and of tribal self-government in matters internal to the tribe. In practice, however, the unsolved problems of our federal law in the field of Indian affairs all deal fundamentally with the demarcation of domain among these independent competing principles.

### 3 METHOD OF TREATMENT

This handbook does not purport to be a cyclopedia. It does not attempt to say the last word on the varied legal problems which it treats. If one who seeks to track down a point of federal Indian law finds in this volume relevant background, general perspective, and useful leads to the authorities, the handbook will have served the purpose for which it was written. More than this might have been done if it had been possible to carry through the work on the scale in which it was originally planned by Assistant Attorney General McFarland.

The method of this handbook is dictated by its subject matter. Federal Indian law is a subject that cannot be understood if the historical dimension of existing law is ignored. As I have elsewhere observed,<sup>37</sup> the groups of human beings with whom Federal Indian law is immediately concerned have undergone, in the century and a half of our national existence, changes in living habits, institutions, needs and aspirations far greater than the changes that separate from our own age the ages for which Hammurabi, Moses, Lycurgus, or Justinian legislated.

<sup>32</sup> See Act of July 22, 1790, 1 Stat. 137; Act of March 1, 1794, 1 Stat. 320; Act of May 18, 1795, 1 Stat. 409; Act of March 3, 1799, 1 Stat. 763; Act of March 30, 1804, 2 Stat. 130; Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 729.

<sup>33</sup> See Chapter 15, note 101D.

<sup>34</sup> *The New York Indians*, 6 Wall. 781 (1860). And see Chapter 15.

<sup>35</sup> See Chapter 6.

<sup>36</sup> See Chapter 17.

<sup>37</sup> U. S. Department of the Interior, Office of the Solicitor, *Statutory Compilation of the Indian Law Survey: A Compendium of Federal Laws and Treaties Relating to Indians*, edited by Felix S. Cohen, Chief, Indian Law Survey, with a Foreword by Nathan R. Margold, Solicitor, Department of the Interior (1940, 46 vols.) vol. 1, pp. 1-14.



Telescoped into a century and a half, one may find changes in social, political, and property relations which stretch over more than 30 centuries of European civilization. The toughness of law which keeps it from changing as rapidly as social conditions change in our national life is, of course, much more serious where the rate of social change is 20 times as rapid. Thus, if the laws governing Indian affairs are viewed as lawyers generally view existing law, without reference to the varying times in which particular provisions were enacted, the body of the law thus viewed is a mystifying collection of inconsistencies and anachronisms. To recognize the different dates at which various provisions were enacted is the first step towards order and sanity in this field.

Not only is it important to recognize the temporal "depth" of existing legislation, it is also important to appreciate the past existence of legislation which has, technically, ceased to exist. For there is a very real sense in which it can be said that no provision of law is ever completely wiped out. This is particularly true in the field of Indian law. At every session of the Supreme Court, there arise cases in which the validity of a present claim depends upon the question: "What was the law on such and such a point in some earlier period?" Laws long repealed have served to create legal rights which endure and which can be understood only by reference to the repealed legislation. Thus, in seeking a complete answer to various questions of Indian law, one finds that he cannot rest with a collection of laws "still in force," but must constantly recur to legislation that has been repealed, amended, or superseded.

Important, however, as is the historical factor in the understanding of federal Indian law, a mere chronology of laws and decisions would be of little value. Systematic analysis is needed, the more so because no treatise has ever been written on the subject of federal Indian law. Indeed the subject hardly exists, as yet, except as a mass of rules and laws relating to a single subject matter. Unfortunately relation to a single subject matter is not enough to establish systematic interconnections among the rules and statutes so related. This any lawyer can see for himself by referring to treatises on "the law of horses" or "the law of fire engines." Federal Indian law does exhibit a systematic interconnectedness of parts, but to discover and define the common standards, principles, concepts, and modes of analysis that run through this massive body of statutes and decisions is an analytical task of the first order.

History and analysis need to be supplemented by an understanding of the actual functioning of legal rules and concepts, the actual consequences of statutes and decisions. Language on statute books, in the field of Indian law as in other fields, frequently has only a tenuous relation to the law-in-action which courts and administrators and the process of government have derived from the words of Congress. The words of court opinions frequently have as tenuous a relation to the actual holdings. Magic "solving words" like "Indian title," "wardship," and "competency," are often used to establish connections, between a case under consideration and some precedent, that turn out on reflection to be purely verbal. Functional study of the federal Indian law in action is essential to a work that may serve the practical purposes of administrators.

While it has been fashionable in some circles to consider historical, analytical, and functional approaches to legal problems as mutually exclusive and antagonistic, a more tolerant and useful viewpoint is expressed in the keynote article of one of the most promising of the newer legal periodicals:

Precisely because it is a very different question from these questions that have occupied so large a part of traditional jurisprudence, the question of the human significance of law must be posed as a supplement to established lines of inquiry in legal science rather than as a substitute for them. Indeed, there is an intimate and mutual interdependence among these lines of inquiry, historical, analytical, ethical, and functional.

The law of the present is a tenuous abstraction hovering between legal history and legal prophecy. The functionalist cannot describe the present significance of any rule of law without reference to historical elements. It is equally true that the historical jurist cannot reconstruct the past unless he grasps the meaning of the present.

The functionalist must have recourse to the logical instruments that analytical jurisprudence furnishes. Analytical jurisprudence, in turn, may develop more fruitful modes of analysis with a better understanding of the law-in-action.

Functional description of the workings of a legal rule will be indispensable to one who seeks to pass ethical judgments on law. The functionalist, however, is likely to be lost in an infinite maze of trivialities unless he is able to concentrate on the *important* consequences of a legal rule and ignore the *unimportant* consequences, a distinction which can be made only in terms of an ethical theory.<sup>28</sup>

<sup>28</sup> F. S. Cohen: *The Problems of a Functional Jurisprudence*, 1 *Modern Law Review* (London) (1937) 6, 7.

When I assigned to the writer of these words the task of applying to the field of Indian law the standards of scholarship which he had written about and demonstrated in several other fields,<sup>1</sup> I did so with the conviction that the resulting work would be a contribution to legal scholarship and legal method as well as to the immediate field of Indian Law. Assistant Solicitor Felix S. Cohen has brought to bear in the writing of this work not only an unusual equipment in fields of research but seven years of practical experience in handling on the various Indian reservations the most difficult controversies that have arisen during that period and in drafting a significant part of the legislation about which he writes.

(Signed) NATHAN R. MARSHALL,  
*Solicitor*

DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR, July 3, 1940

<sup>1</sup> The Field of Use of Legal Criticism (1931), 11 Yale Law Jour. 201; The Legal System and Legal Ethics (1937) (in collaboration with Mr. Justice Brandeis) Summary Judgments in the Supreme Court of New York (1932), 32 Cal. L. Rev. 156; The Subject Matter of Ethical Science (1934), 39 Int. Jour. of Ethics 397; Modern Ethics and the Law (1935), 1 Brooklyn L. Rev. 49; Transcendental Nomos and the Functional Approach (1936), 15 Cal. L. Rev. 409; Anthropology and the Problems of Indian Administration (1937), 16 Southwestern Social Science Quarterly No. 2; The Relativity of Ethnological Systems and the Method of Systematic Induction (1939), 26 Journal of Ethnology 97; The Social and Economic Consequences of Polynesian Immigration Laws (1939), 2 Nat. L. Rev. (April) 171; Indian Rights and the Federal Courts (1940), 28 Minn. L. Rev. 148.



## AUTHOR'S ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

---

It is a pleasant duty to acknowledge the aid of the many individuals who have cooperated in the preparation of this work.

In the first place, it must be said that this work would not have been completed but for the strong belief of my two chiefs, Secretary Harold L. Ickes and Solicitor Nathan R. Margold, and of Commissioner of Indian Affairs John Collier in the importance of the work and their inspiring confidence in the ability of our staff to carry it to completion.

Secondly, I must acknowledge the aid and encouragement that were given in the early stages of the work by Carl A. McFarland, then Assistant Attorney General, and his able assistant, Charles E. Collett, then Chief of the Trial Section in the Lands Division of the Department of Justice. There was the vision that those who have worked in the preparation of this Handbook have tried to carry out, and their cooperation in this work, so long as they were able to give it, was unstinted.

Of those who aided in the actual preparation of this Handbook I owe a special debt to my chief collaborator, Theodor H. Haas, but for whose indefatigable energies a large part of this work must have remained unwritten. I am happy also to acknowledge the loyal aid given by two others who were with the work "for the duration," Miss Mirra Pollitt and Mrs. Bettie Renner, both of the Department of Justice.

Because of unfortunate exigencies over which none of us had any control, the aid rendered by other attorneys collaborating in the project was limited in each case to a few weeks or months. I am nonetheless aware of the vital contributions that were made to the writing of this Handbook by Pedro Capo-Rodriguez, whose many years of experience representing the United States in Indian litigation have been of the greatest value in the preparation of this work, and by attorneys Fred G. Folsom, Jr., Abraham Glaser, Mrs. Pauline B. Heller, Thomas L. Karsten, Samuel Miller, Clifford Stearns, and Mrs. Doris Williamson. Valuable aid in the historical research involved in various portions of this work was given by Miss Mary K. Morris and Miss Lucy M. Kramer. Finally, I should like to acknowledge the part played in the preparation of this work by Miss Gisela G. Lobell and Mr. Joseph Watson, who checked and filed thousands of items of source material upon which the writing of this work was based.

Those of us who did the actual writing of this Handbook constitute only a small part in the stream of human energies that have influenced the form and content of this work. My associates in the Department of the Interior, particularly Ebert K. Bulew, First Assistant Secretary, Oscar L. Chapman, Assistant Secretary, William Zimmerman, Jr., Assistant Commissioner of Indian Affairs, Frederic L. Kuge, First Assistant Solicitor, William H. Flanery, Charlotte T. Lloyd, Kenneth Meiklejohn, H. Byron Mock, Phineas Indritz, Mario Berger, and Frances Lavender, Assistant Solicitors, William A. Biophy, Special Attorney for the Pueblo Indians, John R. T. Reeves, General Counsel of the Indian Office, Samuel J. Flukinger, Assistant General Counsel, E. S. McMahon, Attorney, Fred H. Daiker, Assistant to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, Allan G. Haiper, Field Representative, George A. Hosack, Chief of the Alaska Unit of the Division of Game Management, and Seton H. Thompson, Assistant Chief of the Division of Alaska Fisheries, both of the Fish and Wildlife Service, and David E. Thomas, Chief of the Alaska Section of the Office of Indian Affairs, have all contributed in different ways to this work.

Finally I should like to make grateful acknowledgment of the aid given along the many vital steps that lie between writing and publication, by Dr. W. C. Mendenhall, Director of the Geological Survey, William Barton Greenwood, Finance Officer for the Bureau of Indian Affairs, Fred W. Johnson, Commissioner of the General Land Office, Floyd E. Dotson, Chief Clerk of the Interior Department, Frank C. Updike, Chief of the Miscellaneous Service Division, Miss Helen Logan and John H. Ady, in charge of the printing work of the Department, and Miss Marie J. Tumisky and Miss Grace L. Dent, to whom the task of proof-reading was entrusted.

Even this lengthy roster, sufficient as it is to dispel any illusory author's pride, is far from representing a complete sum of the human efforts that move through the pages of this volume. To do justice to those efforts one would have to mention the writers of books, articles and briefs, which are quoted at length in these chapters, the judges whose opinions form the backbone of the volume, the administrative officials whose reports and legal

memoiranda have proved so valuable in fields not yet covered by the decided cases, the statesmen in the White House, in Congress, and among the Indian tribes whose thoughts have taken form in the language of statute, treaty, and tribal law, which makes up so large a portion of this study, the many critics outside of Government circles who have brought to light defects in Indian law and administration, the critics of preliminary drafts of these chapters who have aided in many successive revisions, and the score or more of clerical and stenographic assistants who have performed many tasks incidental to the preparation of this work. But any such attempt to place on a written page all the names of those on whom one has depended would be inevitably vain. For each of us in his appointed work, in Government service as elsewhere, is the instrument of forces that run through an entire generation. What has made this work possible, in the final analysis, is a set of beliefs that form the intellectual equipment of a generation—a belief that our treatment of the Indian in the past is not something of which a democracy can be proud, a belief that the protection of minority rights and the substitution of reason and agreement for force and dictation represent a contribution to civilization, a belief that confusion and ignorance in fields of law are allies of despotism, a belief that it is the duty of the Government to aid oppressed groups in the understanding and appreciation of their legal rights, a belief that understanding of the law, in Indian fields as elsewhere, requires more than textual exegesis, requires appreciation of history and understanding of economic, political, social, and moral problems. These beliefs represent, I think, the American mind in our generation as it impinges upon one tiny segment of the many problems which modern democracy faces. It is fundamentally to these beliefs and to this mind that an author's acknowledgments, gratitude, and loyalty are due.

(Signed) FRANK COWAN

JULY 1, 1940

## ANALYSIS OF CHAPTERS

CHAPTER 1		Page
THE FIELD OF INDIAN LAW INDIANS AND THE INDIAN COUNTRY		
Section 1	The field of Indian law	1
Section 2	Definitions of "Indian"	2
Section 3	Indian country	3
CHAPTER 2		
THE OFFICE OF INDIAN AFFAIRS		
Section 1	The development of the Indian Service	9
A	Establishment	9
B	Development	10
C	List of Commissioners	11
Section 2	The development of Indian Service policies	12
A	The period from 1826 to 1850	12
B	The period from 1851 to 1867	14
C	The period from 1868 to 1876	17
D	The period from 1877 to 1904	20
E	The period from 1905 to 1928	24
F	The period from 1929 to 1939	26
G	Historical retrospect	28
Section 3	The administration of the Indian Service today	29
A	Organization and activities	30
B	Personnel	31
C	Cooperation with other agencies	32
CHAPTER 3		
INDIAN TREATIES		
Section 1	The legal force of Indian treaties	33
Section 2	Interpretation of treaties	37
Section 3	The scope of treaties	38
A	The international status of the tribes	39
1	War and peace	39
2	Boundaries	40
3	Passports	40
4	Extradition	40
5	Relations with third powers	40
B	Dependence of tribes on the United States	40
1	Protection	41
2	Exclusive trade relations	41
3	Representation in Congress	42
4	Congressional power	42
5	Administrative power	42
6	Termination of treaty-making	43
C	Commercial relations	43
1	Cessions of land	43
2	Reserved rights in ceded lands	44
3	Payments and services to tribes	44
D	Jurisdiction	45
1	Criminal jurisdiction	45
2	Civil jurisdiction	45
E	Control of tribal affairs	46
Section 4	A history of Indian treaties	46
A	Pre-revolutionary precedents 1832-1776	46
B	The Revolutionary War and the peace 1776-83	47
C	Defining a national policy 1783-1800	48
D	Extending the national domain 1800-1817	51
E	Indian removal westward 1817-46	53
1	Cherokees	54
2	Choctaws	56
3	Choctaws	56
4	Creeks	58
5	Florida Indians	60
6	Other tribes	60
F	Tribe of the far West 1846-54	62
G	Experiments in allotment 1854-61	63
H	The Civil War 1861-65	64
I	Post Civil War treaties 1866-71	65
Section 5	The end of treaty-making	66
Section 6	Indian settlements	67
CHAPTER 4		
FEDERAL INDIAN LEGISLATION		
Section 1	The beginnings 1789	68
Section 2	Legislation from 1790 to 1799	69
Section 3	Legislation from 1800 to 1809	71
Section 4	Legislation from 1810 to 1819	71
Section 5	Legislation from 1820 to 1829	72
Section 6	Legislation from 1830 to 1839	72
Section 7	Legislation from 1840 to 1849	76
Section 8	Legislation from 1850 to 1859	76
Section 9	Legislation from 1860 to 1869	77
Section 10	Legislation from 1870 to 1879	77
Section 11	Legislation from 1880 to 1889	78
Section 12	Legislation from 1890 to 1899	79
Section 13	Legislation from 1900 to 1909	80
Section 14	Legislation from 1910 to 1919	81
Section 15	Legislation from 1920 to 1929	82
Section 16	Legislation from 1930 to 1939	83
Section 17	Indian appropriation acts 1789 to 1939	88
CHAPTER 5		
THE SCOPE OF FEDERAL POWER OVER INDIAN AFFAIRS		
Section 1	Sources of federal power	89
Section 2	Congressional power—Treaty-making	91
Section 3	Congressional power—Commerce with Indian tribes	91
Section 4	Congressional power—National defense	92
Section 5	Congressional power—United States territory and property	94
A	Tribal lands	94
B	Tribal funds	97
C	Individual lands	97
D	Individual funds	98

Section 6	Congressional power—Membership	98
Section 7	Administrative power—Introduction	100
Section 8	The range of administrative powers	100
Section 9	Administrative power—Fiduciary funds	103
	A Acquisition	103
	B Leasing	104
	C Alienation	104
Section 10	Administrative power—Fiduciary funds	105
Section 11	Administrative power—Individual funds	107
	A Approval of allotments	107
	B Release of restrictions	108
	C Probate of wills	110
	D Issuance of rights-of-way	111
	E Leasing	113
Section 12	Administrative power—Individual funds	114
Section 13	Administrative power—Membership	114
	A Authority over enrollment	114
	B Remedies	114

#### CHAPTER 6

#### THE SCOPE OF STATE POWER OVER INDIAN AFFAIRS

Section 1	Introduction	116
Section 2	Federal statutes on state power	117
	A General statutes	117
	B Special statutes	118
Section 3	Reserved state powers over Indian affairs	119
	A Indian outside Indian country engaged in non-federal transaction	119
	B Indian outside Indian country engaged in federal transaction	119
	C Indian within Indian country engaged in non-federal transaction	120
	D Non-Indian outside Indian country engaged in federal transaction	120
	E Non-Indian in Indian country engaged in federal transaction	120
	F Non-Indian in Indian country engaged in non-federal transaction	121
	G Summary	121

#### CHAPTER 7

#### THE SCOPE OF TRIBAL SELF-GOVERNMENT

Section 1	Introduction	122
Section 2	The derivation of tribal powers	122
Section 3	The form of tribal government	126
Section 4	The power to determine tribal membership	133
Section 5	Tribal regulation of domestic relations	137
Section 6	Tribal control of descent and distribution	139
Section 7	The taxing power of an Indian tribe	142
Section 8	Tribal powers over property	143
Section 9	Tribal powers in the administration of justice	145
Section 10	Statutory powers of tribes in Indian administration	149

#### CHAPTER 8

#### PERSONAL RIGHTS AND LIBERTIES OF INDIANS

Section 1	Introduction	151
Section 2	Citizenship	153
	A Methods of acquiring citizenship	153
	1 Treaties with Indian tribes	153
	2 Special statutes	153

Section 2	Citizenship—Continued	
	A Methods of acquiring citizenship—Continued	
	3 General statutes naturalizing allottees	154
	4 General statutes naturalizing other classes of Indians	154
	B Noncitizen Indians	154
	C Effect of citizenship	156
Section 3	Suffrage	157
	A Indian disenfranchisement	157
	B Constitutional protection of Indian voting rights	158
Section 4	Eligibility for public office and employment	160
	A Public office	159
	B Preference in Indian and other governmental service	159
	1 Extent of employment	159
	2 Civil service	159
	3 Treaties and statutes	160
	(a) Treaties	160
	(b) General statutes	160
	4 Statutes of limited application	160
	(a) Construction work on reservation	160
	(b) Purchase of Indian products	161
	(c) Military service	161
	(d) Youth	161
Section 5	Eligibility for state assistance	162
Section 6	Right to sue	162
Section 7	Right to contract	164
	A Power of attorney	164
	B Cooperatives and business organizations	165
	C Rights of creditors	165
Section 8	The meanings of "incompetency"	167
	A General lack of legal capacity	167
	B Restricted meanings	167
	1 Inability to allocate land	167
	(a) Statutes	168
	(b) Treaties	169
	2 Inability to receive or spend funds	169
Section 9	The meanings of "wardship"	169
	A Wards as domestic dependent nations	170
	B Wards as tribes subject to congressional power	170
	C Wards as individuals subject to congressional power	171
	D Wards as subjects of federal court jurisdiction	171
	E Wards as subjects of administrative power	171
	F Wards as beneficiaries of a trust	172
	G Wards as noncitizens	172
	H Wardship and restraints on alienation	172
	I Wardship and inequality of bargaining power	172
	J Wards as subjects of federal bounty	173

	Page		Page
Section 10 Civil liberties.....	173	Section 7 Federal protection of individual personal property.....	200
A Discrimination.....	173	Section 8 Expenditure and investment of individual Indian money.....	201
1 Discriminatory state laws.....	173	Section 9 Deposits of individual Indian money.....	202
2 Discriminatory federal laws.....	174	Section 10 Bequest, descent and distribution of personal property.....	202
3 Oppressive federal administrative action.....	175	A In the absence of federal legislation.....	202
(a) Concentration of administrative power.....	175	B Under federal acts.....	203
(b) Confinement on reservations.....	176	1 Descent.....	203
B Remedies.....	177	2 Bequest.....	203
1 The right of expatriation.....	177	Section 11 Individual rights in personal property—Crops.....	204
2 Anti-discrimination statutes and treaties.....	178	Section 12 Individual rights in personal property—Livestock.....	204
(a) Federal statutes affecting Indians only.....	178		
(b) Federal statutes affecting all races.....	179	CHAPTER 11	
(c) State statutes affecting all races.....	179	INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS IN REAL PROPERTY	
(d) Treaties affecting all races.....	179	Section 1 Background of the allotment system.....	206
3 Constitutional protection.....	179	A Early development of the allotment system.....	206
Section 11 The status of freedmen and slaves.....	181	B The General Allotment Act.....	207
		C Consequences of the allotment system.....	210
CHAPTER 9		D Appraisal of the allotment system.....	215
INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS IN TRIBAL PROPERTY		E Termination of the allotment system.....	217
Section 1 The nature of individual rights in tribal property.....	183	Section 2 Right to receive allotments.....	217
Section 2 Dependency of individual rights upon extent of tribal property.....	185	A Eligibility.....	218
Section 3 Eligibility to share in tribal property.....	185	B Selection of allotment.....	219
Section 4 Transferability of the right to share.....	187	C Approval of allotment.....	219
Section 5 Rights of user in tribal property.....	188	D Cancellation.....	219
A Occupancy of particular tracts.....	188	E Surrender.....	220
B Improvements.....	189	Section 3 Possessory rights in allotted lands.....	220
C Grazing and fishing rights.....	190	Section 4 Alienation of allotted lands.....	221
D Rights in tribal timber.....	191	A Land.....	221
Section 6 Individual rights upon distribution of tribal property.....	192	B Timber.....	222
A Modes of distribution.....	192	C Exchange of allotted lands.....	223
B Time of distribution.....	193	D Mortgage.....	225
C The limits of legislative distribution.....	193	E Indemnity.....	225
		F Condemnation.....	225
CHAPTER 10		G Removal of restrictions.....	226
THE RIGHTS OF THE INDIAN IN HIS PERSONALTY		H Rights of conveyees of allotted lands.....	226
Section 1 Nature and forms of individual personal property.....	195	Section 5 Leasing of allotted lands.....	227
Section 2 Sources of individual personal property.....	196	Section 6 Descent and distribution of allotted lands.....	229
Section 3 Sources of individual personal property—Proceeds from allotted lands.....	196	A Intestacy.....	230
Section 4 Sources of individual personal property—Individualization of tribal funds.....	197	B Testamentary disposition.....	231
Section 5 Sources of individual personal property—Payments from the Federal Government.....	198	C Partition and sale of inherited allotments.....	233
A Annuities.....	199		
B Method of payment.....	199	CHAPTER 12	
Section 6 Sources of individual personal property—Payments of damages.....	200	FEDERAL SERVICES FOR INDIANS	
		Section 1 Introduction.....	237
		Section 2 Education.....	238
		A Development of federal policy.....	238
		B Eligibility for school attendance.....	241
		C Compulsory education.....	241
		D Use of funds for Indian education.....	242
		Section 3 Health services.....	243
		Section 4 Rations, relief, and rehabilitation.....	244
		Section 5 Social security benefits.....	245
		Section 6 Federal loans.....	245
		A Loans under special Indian legislation.....	245
		B Loans under general legislation.....	247
		Section 7 Reclamation and irrigation.....	248
		A Operation and maintenance charges.....	250
		B Blackfeet project.....	250



Section 7	Reclamation and migration—Continued	Page
D	Colorado River project.....	270
D	Crow migration project.....	271
F	Flathead migration project.....	271
F	Fort Belknap project.....	271
G	Fort Hill project.....	271
H	Fort Peck Reservation.....	272
I	San Carlos project.....	272
J	Unalakleet.....	272
K	Wind River.....	272
L	Yakima.....	272
Section 8	Federal legal services.....	272

# CHAPTER 13

## TAXATION

Section 1	Sources of limitations on taxing power of the states.....	274
A	"Instrumentality" doctrine.....	274
B	Federal statutes.....	275
C	State constitutions.....	276
D	State statutes.....	276
Section 2	State taxation of tribal lands.....	276
Section 3	State taxation of individual Indian lands.....	277
A	Trust allotments.....	277
B	The General Allotment Act.....	278
C	Homestead allotments.....	279
D	Land purchased with restricted funds.....	280
Section 4	State taxation of personal property.....	282
Section 5	State sales taxes.....	283
Section 6	State inheritance taxes.....	284
Section 7	Federal taxation.....	285
A	Sources of limitations.....	285
B	Federal income taxes.....	286
C	Other federal taxes.....	286
Section 8	Tribal taxation.....	286

# CHAPTER 14

## THE LEGAL STATUS OF INDIAN TRIBES

Section 1	Tribal existence.....	288
Section 2	Termination of tribal existence.....	272
Section 3	Political status.....	273
Section 4	Corporate capacity.....	277
Section 5	Contractual capacity.....	279
Section 6	Capacity to sue.....	283
A	Statutes authorizing suits by tribes.....	283
B	Statutes authorizing suits against tribes.....	283
C	Jurisdictional capacity in the absence of specific statutes.....	283
Section 7	Tribal hunting and fishing rights.....	285

# CHAPTER 15

## TRIBAL PROPERTY

Section 1	Definition of tribal property.....	287
A	Tribal ownership and tenancy in common.....	288
B	Tribal ownership and individual occupancy.....	288
C	Tribal lands and public lands of the United States.....	289
D	The composition of the tribe as proprietor.....	289
Section 2	Forms of tribal property.....	290

Section 3	Sources of tribal rights in real property.....	291
Section 4	Aboriginal possession.....	291
Section 5	Treaty reservations.....	294
A	Methods of establishing treaty reservations.....	294
B	Treaty definitions of tribal property rights.....	295
C	Principles of treaty interpretation.....	296
Section 6	Statutory reservations.....	296
A	Legislative definitions of tribal property rights.....	298
Section 7	Executive order reservations.....	299
Section 8	Tribal land purchase.....	302
Section 9	Tribal title derived from other sovereignties.....	303
Section 10	Protection of tribal possession.....	306
A	Legislation on trespass.....	306
B	Congressional respect for tribal possession.....	308
C	Who may protect tribal possession.....	308
D	Effect of title upon possessory right.....	309
E	Against whom protection extends.....	309
Section 11	Extent of tribal possessory rights.....	309
Section 12	The territorial extent of Indian reservations.....	310
Section 13	The temporal extent of Indian titles.....	311
Section 14	Subsurface rights.....	312
Section 15	Tribal timber.....	313
Section 16	Tribal water rights.....	316
A	Tribal right versus state right in navigable waters.....	318
B	Extent of reserved water right.....	318
Section 17	Tribal rights in improvements.....	319
Section 18	Tribal conveyances.....	320
A	Restraints on alienation.....	320
B	Historical view of restraints.....	321
C	Federal legislation.....	322
D	Involuntary alienation.....	324
E	Invalid conveyances.....	324
Section 19	Tribal leases.....	325
Section 20	Tribal houses.....	327
Section 21	Statute of surplus and ceded lands.....	328
Section 22	Tribal rights in personal property.....	328
A	Forms of personal property.....	327
B	Tribal property and federal property.....	327
C	Tribal ownership and common ownership.....	328
D	Tribal interest in trust property.....	328
E	The composition of the tribe.....	328
F	Interest on tribal funds.....	328
G	Creditor's claims.....	329
Section 23	Tribal right to receive funds.....	329
A	Sources of tribal income.....	340
B	Manner of making payments to tribe.....	343
Section 24	Tribal right to expend funds.....	345

# CHAPTER 16

## INDIAN TRADES

Section 1	History of legislation.....	348
Section 2	Present law.....	349

# CHAPTER 17

## INDIAN LIQUOR LAWS

Section 1	Historical background.....	352
Section 2	Sources and scope of federal power re liquor traffic.....	352

Section 3 Existing prohibitions and enforcement measures.....	354
Section 4 Locality where these measures apply.....	356
Section 5 Enforcement agencies, jurisdiction, and procedure.....	357

## CHAPTER 18 CRIMINAL JURISDICTION

Section 1 Introduction.....	356
Section 2 Crimes in Indian country.....	358
Section 3 Crimes in Indian country by Indian against Indian.....	362
Section 4 Crimes in Indian country by Indian against non-Indian.....	363
Section 5 Crimes in Indian country by non-Indian against Indian.....	364
Section 6 Crimes in Indian country by non-Indian against non-Indian.....	365
Section 7 Crimes in areas within exclusive federal jurisdiction.....	365
Section 8 Crimes in which locus is irrelevant.....	365

## CHAPTER 19 CIVIL JURISDICTION

Section 1 Introduction.....	366
Section 2 Federal courts.....	366
A Jurisdiction dependent upon parties.....	366
1 United States as plaintiff.....	366
(a) Generally.....	366
(b) Indian cases.....	367
(c) Suits involving land.....	367
(d) Suits involving personal property.....	369
(e) Other suits.....	369
(f) Effect of judgment.....	369
2 United States as defendant.....	370
3 United States as intervenor.....	371
4 Indian tribe as party litigant.....	371
5 Individual Indian as party litigant.....	372
B Jurisdiction dependent upon character of subject matter.....	372
Section 3 Court of Claims.....	373
Section 4 Federal administrative tribunals.....	378
Section 5 State courts.....	379
Section 6 Tribal courts.....	382

## CHAPTER 20 PUEBLOS OF NEW MEXICO

Section 1 Status of Pueblos under Spanish law.....	383
Section 2 The Pueblos under Mexican rule.....	384
Section 3 The Pueblos under the New Mexican territorial government.....	385
A History of Pueblo legislation.....	385
B History of judicial and executive attitudes towards Pueblos.....	387
Section 4 The Pueblos in the State of New Mexico.....	389
A The Sandoval decision.....	389
B Effect of the Sandoval decision.....	389
C The Pueblo Lands Act.....	390
D The development of federal control.....	391

Section 5 Pueblo self-government.....	393
Section 6 Pueblo land titles.....	396
Section 7 The relation of the Pueblos to the Federal Government.....	396
Section 8 The relation of the Pueblos to the state.....	398
Section 9 The Pueblo as a corporate entity.....	399

## CHAPTER 21

### ALASKAN NATIVES

Section 1 Classification of Alaskan natives.....	401
Section 2 Classification of natives under Russian rule.....	402
Section 3 Titles ofcession.....	402
Section 4 Sources of federal power.....	403
Section 5 Citizenship.....	403
Section 6 Status of natives.....	404
Section 7 Education.....	406
Section 8 Property rights.....	407
A Fishing and hunting rights.....	407
B Renter ownership.....	409
C Lands.....	411
Section 9 Tribes and associations.....	413

## CHAPTER 22

### NEW YORK INDIANS

Section 1 Historical background.....	416
A Resistance by Iroquois to French.....	417
B Affairs of Iroquois as affecting all colonies.....	418
C Shift of control of Iroquois affairs from Albany to Colony to Crown.....	418
D National and international aspect of Iroquois as affecting Federal Constitution.....	418
1 Iroquois in Revolutionary War.....	418
2 Importance to union of peace negotiations with Iroquois.....	418
E Effect of treaties of 1789 and 1794.....	419
F Federal management of New York Indian affairs.....	419
1 Education and civilization.....	419
2 Restrictions on alienation of land.....	419
3 Removal to the West—Treaties of 1838 and 1842.....	420
4 State encroachment on ceded reservations.....	420
5 Federal recognition of Seneca constitution.....	421
6 Separation from Seneca Nation of Tonawanda band.....	421
7 Indian leases.....	421
Section 2 Present status of tribal government.....	421
A Seneca Nation.....	422
B Tonawanda band of Senecas.....	423
C St Regis Mohawks.....	423
D Tuscarora Nation.....	423
E Onondaga Nation.....	424
F Cayuga Nation.....	424
G Shinnecock Indians.....	424
H, Poosapatuck Indians.....	424

CHAPTER 28		Page	
SPECIAL LAWS RELATING TO OKLAHOMA			
Section 1	Oklahoma tribes.....	125	
Section 2	Removal.....	126	
Section 3	Self-government.....	126	
Section 4	Government of Indian Territory.....	127	
Section 5	Statehood.....	128	
Section 6	Termination of tribal government—Five Civilized Tribes.....	129	
Section 7	Enrollment—Five Civilized Tribes.....	130	
Section 8	Alienation and taxation of allotted lands of Five Tribes.....	131	
	A. Choctaws.....	131	
	B. Choctaws and Chickasaws.....	131	
	C. Creeks.....	137	
	D. Seminoles.....	138	
	E. Five Civilized Tribes as a group.....	139	
Section 9	Leasing of allotted lands of Five Civilized Tribes.....	442	
Section 10	Trusts of restricted funds of members of Five Tribes.....	444	
Section 11	Inheritance among Five Civilized Tribes.....	444	
	A. Intestate succession.....	444	
	B. Wills.....	445	
	C. Probate jurisdiction.....	445	
	D. Partition.....	446	
Section 12	Special laws governing Osage tribe.....	446	
	A. Allotments.....	447	
	B. Hearings and competency.....	450	
	C. Inheritance.....	454	
	D. Leasing.....	454	
	1. Tribal oil and gas and mineral leases.....	454	
	2. Agricultural uses of restricted lands.....	455	
Section 13	Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act.....	455	

# HANDBOOK OF FEDERAL INDIAN LAW

## CHAPTER 1

### THE FIELD OF INDIAN LAW: INDIANS AND THE INDIAN COUNTRY

#### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
Section 1 The field of Indian law	1
Section 2 Definitions of 'Indian'	2
Section 3 Indian country	5

#### SECTION 1 THE FIELD OF INDIAN LAW

Indians are human beings, and like other human beings become involved in lawsuits. Nearly all of these lawsuits involve problems in the law of contracts, torts, and other recognized fields which have no particular relevance to Indian affairs. In many cases the only legal problems presented are of this character. Not every lawsuit, therefore, which involves Indians can be considered a part of our Indian law. Conversely not every case that presents a problem of Indian law involves Indians as litigants. Most of the land in the United States, for example, was purchased from Indians, and therefore almost any title must depend for its ultimate validity upon issues of Indian law even though the land Indian owners and all their descendants be long forgotten.

Our subject, therefore, cannot be defined in terms of the parties litigant appearing in any case. It must be defined rather in terms of the legal questions which are involved in a case. Where such questions turn upon rights, privileges, powers, or immunities of an Indian or in Indian tribe or an administrative agency set up to deal with Indian affairs or where governing rules of law are affected by the fact that a place is under Indian ownership or devoted to Indian use, the case that presents such questions belongs within the confines of this study.

Further, we shall use the term "federal Indian law" to cover not only decisions of courts, strictly so called, but also decisions of administrative agencies and such materials, contained in statute, treaty, Executive order, or governmental regulation, custom and practice, as are accorded, by courts and administrative bodies, "the force of law."

This subject matter is treated, in the course of this volume from several distinct perspectives.

In the present chapter the scope of federal Indian law is considered, particularly in terms of the class of persons and places with which this branch of law deals.

The following three chapters treat from an historical perspective, the three basic strands of development which make up the federal Indian law—administration (Chapter 2), treaty making (Chapter 3), and legislation (Chapter 4).

The following three chapters deal with the problems of federal Indian law in terms of the question, "From what governmental

source do legal relations flow?" These chapters deal, respectively, with the powers of federal (Chapter 5), state (Chapter 6), and tribal (Chapter 7) governments.

Chapters 5 to 17 treat the substantive law of the field from the standpoint of the generic question: What are the rights, powers, privileges, and immunities of the parties?

Of these chapters, the first four deal with the legal status of individual Indians, treating personal rights and liabilities (Chapter 8), rights of participation in tribal property (Chapter 9), individual rights in personal property (Chapter 10), and individual rights in real property (Chapter 11).

The following two chapters deal with rights, vested both in tribes and in individuals, which are subsumed under the headings, "Federal Services for Indians" (Chapter 12) and "Taxation" (Chapter 13).

The substantive rights, powers, privileges, and immunities of Indian tribes form the subject of Chapters 14 and 15, the former dealing generally with "The Status of Indian Tribes," the latter with "Tribal Property."

The final two chapters of this substantive law section of the Handbook deal with matters involving primarily the legal position of two classes of non-Indians who have a special relation to Indian affairs, to wit: traders (Chapter 16) and purveyors of liquor (Chapter 17).

Chapters 18 and 19 deal with problems of court jurisdiction, the former in the field of criminal law, the latter in the field of civil law.

The last four chapters of this Handbook treat of four groups of Indians occupying peculiar positions in the law. Chapter 20 deals with the Pueblos of New Mexico, Chapter 21 analyzes the peculiar problems of the Natives of Alaska, Chapter 22 comments briefly on the New York Indians, and Chapter 23 offers a sketch of "Special Laws Relating to Old Indians."

With these comments on the substance and structure of the volume, we turn to a more explicit delimitation of the persons and places that are the primary subjects of our federal Indian law.

In this delimitation of domains we may properly begin by considering the various definitions that have been offered at the terms "Indian" and "Indian country."

## SECTION 2 DEFINITIONS OF "INDIAN"

The term "Indian" may be used in an ethnological or in a legal sense. Ethnologically, the Indian race may be distinguished from the Caucasian, Negro, Mongolian, and other races. If a person is three-fourths Caucasian and one-fourth Indian it is absurd from the ethnological standpoint, to assign him to the Indian race. Yet legally such a person may be an Indian from a legal standpoint, then, the logical question of race is generally pertinent, but not conclusive. Legal status depends not only upon biology, but also upon social factors, such as the relation of the individual concerned to a white or Indian community. This relationship, in turn, has two sides: an individual and a community. The individual may wish to leave a tribe or be expelled from a tribe or he may be adopted by a tribe. He may or may not seek out an Indian reservation. He may or may not be subject to the control of the Federal Government with respect to various transactions. All these social or political factors may affect the classification of an individual as an "Indian" or a "non-Indian" for legal purposes, or for certain legal purposes. Indeed, in accordance with a statute reserving jurisdiction over offenses between tribal members to a tribal court, a white man adopted into an Indian tribe has been held to be an Indian,<sup>1</sup> and the decided cases do not foreclose the argument that a person of entirely Indian ancestry who has never had any relations with any Indian tribe or reservation may be considered a non-Indian for most legal purposes.

What must be remembered is that legislators, when they use the term "Indian" to establish special rules of law applicable to "Indians" are generally trying to deal with a group distinguished from "non-Indian" groups by public opinion, and this public opinion varies so widely that on certain reservations it is common to refer to a person as an Indian although 15 of his 18 ancestors, 4 generations back, were white persons, while in other parts of the country, as in the Southwest, a person may be considered a Spanish American rather than an Indian although his blood is predominantly Indian.

The lack of unanimity which exists among those who would attempt a definition of Indian is reflected in the difference in instructions to the enumerators of the 1930 and 1940 censuses.

<sup>1</sup> *Major v. United States*, 184 U. S. 657 (1902).

\* A graphic example of the following by cases of untrained impressionists of what constitutes an Indian is found in a series of cases on the question whether the natives of the Pueblo are "Indians." In 1889 the Supreme Court of the Territory decided that they could not be considered Indians because they were "civilized, industrious, and law-abiding citizens" and "a people living for three centuries in peace, abiding, and cultivating the soil for the maintenance of themselves and families, and earning an example of virtue, honesty, and industry to their more civilized neighbors." *United States v. Lugo*, 9 N. M. 422, 485, 442 (1899). In 1878 the Supreme Court likewise held that these people could not be considered Indians because they were "a peaceable, industrious, intelligent, honest, and virtuous people." \* \* \* Indians only in future complexion and a few of their habits. \* \* \* *United States v. Joseph*, 64 U. S. 614, 615 (1878). So long as these impressions continued to prevail, efforts of the Indian Bureau to assert full powers of "domestication" over the Pueblo were unsuccessful. See Chapter 20, sec. 4, *infra*. In 1913 however, the Indian Bureau compiled enough reports of immorality among the Pueblo to convince the Supreme Court that its earlier observations on the Pueblo character had been based upon incorrect information and that these people were really Indians needing Indian Bureau supervision. The Court, *per* Van Devanter, J., quoted at length from agents' reports of drunkenness, debauchery, disease, and communal life in support of the conviction that they were Indians, being "a people, untrained and inferior people." *United States v. Randall*, 321 U. S. 28, 30-37 (1913). It may be doubted whether the conception of what makes a man an Indian implicit in all these opinions, would be accepted today. The test of "common knowledge" is advanced by Cardozo, J., in the dissent in *Korowia v. California*, 281 U. S. 85, 96 (1934), in support of the view that "not imperially" a person with Indian blood of less than one-fourth degree is to be regarded as an Indian.

In the 1930 census enumerators were instructed to return as Indians not only those of full Indian blood, but also those of mixed white and Indian blood, "except where the percentage of Indian blood is very small" or where the individual was "regarded as a white person in the community where he lives." The instructions further specified that "a person of mixed Indian and Negro blood shall be returned as a Negro unless the Indian blood predominates and the status is as Indian is generally accepted in the community."<sup>2</sup>

In the 1940 census on the other hand, enumerators were directed that "a person of mixed white and Indian blood should be returned as Indian, if enrolled on an Indian agency or reservation roll, or if so so enrolled, if the proportion of Indian blood is one-fourth or more, or if the person is regarded as an Indian in the community where he lives." The provision concerning persons of mixed Indian and Negro blood was changed to provide for the return of such an individual as Negro, unless the Indian blood *predominates* by predominates and he is *universally* accepted in the community as an Indian.<sup>3</sup>

Recognizing the possible diversity of definitions of "Indianhood," we may nevertheless find some unity at least in a definition of "Indian" as a person meeting two qualifications: (a) That some of his ancestors lived in America before his discovery by the white race, and (b) that the individual is considered an "Indian" by the community in which he lives.

The function of a definition of "Indian" is to establish a test whereby it may be determined whether a given individual is to be excluded from the scope of legislation dealing with Indians.

A typical statute dealing with Indians is the Trade and Intercourse Act of 1834,<sup>4</sup> which in section 26 provides:

\* \* \* That so much of the laws of the United States as provides for the punishment of crimes committed within any place within the sole and exclusive jurisdiction of the

<sup>1</sup> The Indian population of the United States and Alaska, 1930 U. S. Department of Commerce Bureau of the Census, Washington, D. C. For a discussion of statutes dealing with Indians and freedom see Chapter 8, sec. 11.

<sup>2</sup> The results of the 1940 census are not available at the time of publication of this book so that it is not possible to compare the possible differences in results occasioned by the difference in instructions to enumerators. In the census of 1910, though the question of who should be included as Indian was left to the discretion of the enumeration, he was obliged once he had decided an individual was an Indian to obtain information concerning tribe and blood. According to the results of 1930 there were 912,983 Indian in continental United States and 29,981 in Alaska while in 1910 there were 205,881 Indians in continental United States and 26,131 in Alaska. In commenting on the results of these two censuses, Dr. George B. L. Allen in *The Indian Population of the United States and Alaska, 1910-1930* U. S. Department of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, stated:

In the case of the Indian population, the rate of increase or decrease is of little significance. It is the size of the Indian population, especially the increase upon the attrition paid to the enumeration of mixed bloods, and the interpretation of the term "Indian" in the instructions to enumerators. It is not without significance that in the two censuses in which specific questions were asked as to tribe and blood the number of Indians should have been much larger than at censuses in which these questions were not asked. If the definition of the Indian population were limited to Indians maintaining tribal relations, the enumeration of the Bureau of Indian Affairs is probably more nearly accurate than that of the census. This assumption in 1930 showed a total of 228,381. On the other hand if all persons having even a trace of Indian blood were returned as Indians the number would have been about the total returned at the census of 1890. (P. 1.)

As of January 1, 1939, the Bureau of Indian Affairs estimated that there were under jurisdiction 851,878 Indians in continental United States and 29,981 in Alaska, or a total of 881,859. This number includes individuals of as little as 1/4 Indian blood entitled to certain rights or benefits as Indians, as well as white persons adopted into an Indian tribe. Statistical Supplement to the Annual Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, 1939.

<sup>4</sup> Act of June 30, 1834, sec. 25, 4 Stat. 739, B. S. 2145, 25 U. S. C. 217.

United States, shall be in force in the Indian country. *Provided*, the same shall not extend to crimes committed by one Indian against the person or property of another Indian. (P 733)

Lacking other criteria than the words of the statute, the courts have, reasonably enough, taken the position that the term "Indian" is a mere descriptive of an individual who has Indian blood in his veins and who is regarded as an Indian by the society of Indians among whom he lives. Thus, in holding that a white man who is adopted into an Indian tribe does not thereby become an Indian within the meaning of the foregoing statute,<sup>1</sup> the Court, in *United States v. Rogers*,<sup>2</sup> said

"... And we think it very clear, that a white man who at mature age is adopted into an Indian tribe does not thereby become an Indian and was not intended to be embraced in the exception above mentioned. It is only such adoption as entitles to certain privileges in the tribe, and makes himself amenable to their laws and usages. Yet he is not an Indian and the exception is confined to those who by the usage and customs of the Indians are regarded as belonging to their race. It does not speak of members of a tribe and of the race generally, of the family of Indians, and it is intended to leave them both, as regarded their own tribe and other tribes, also, to be governed by Indian usages and customs. (Tp 572-573)

Though a white man cannot by association become an Indian within the application of the foregoing statute, an Indian may, nevertheless, under some circumstances lose his identity as an Indian. It has been held that the General Allotment Act<sup>3</sup> operates to make Indians who are descendants of aboriginal tribes, but who have taken up residence apart from any tribe and adopted habits of civilization from Indians, within the meaning of an Alaska statute defining Indians for the purpose of liquor legislation as "aboriginal races inhabiting Alaska who annexed to the United States, and their descendants of the whole or half blood who have not become citizens of the United States."<sup>4</sup>

In upholding the constitutionality of the federal statute making murder of an Indian by another Indian on an Indian reservation a federal crime, the Supreme Court declared

the true intention is that the offending Indian shall belong to that or some other tribe.<sup>5</sup>

On the other hand, an Indian does not lose his identity as such within the meaning of federal criminal jurisdictional acts, even though he has received an allotment of land, is not under the control or immediate supervision of an Indian agent, and has become a citizen of the United States and of the state in which he resides.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Act of June 30, 1874, 4 Stat 729.  
<sup>2</sup> 4 How 567 (1846). Accord, *United States v. Ragsdale*, 27 Fed Cas No 16112 (C C Ark, 1847), *Pe Paite Mogan*, 20 Fed 298 (D C W Ark 1888), *Westminster v. United States*, 158 U S 545 (1895), *Alberty v. United States*, 162 U S 499 (1896) (holding that a Negro does not by adoption into a tribe become an Indian).

The same rule would seem to apply to a white man married to an Indian woman and residing on a reservation. At least it has been held that a white man, married to an Indian woman, residing on a reservation, and made a member of the tribe or nation, is not an Indian entitled to share in tribal funds or in the allotment of Indian lands. *Eldred v. United States*, 208 U S 78 (1908).

<sup>3</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat 484, 27 U S C 531, et seq.  
<sup>4</sup> *Nagle v. United States*, 135 Fed 141 (C C A 9 1911).

<sup>5</sup> *United States v. Kagans*, 118 U S 875, 333 (1886). And see Chapter 14, fn 9.

<sup>6</sup> *United States v. Flynn*, 25 Fed Cas No 16124 (C C Minn 1870), *Halliseell v. United States*, 221 U S 417 (1911), *United States v. Kays*, 129 Fed 879 (D C W D 1903), *United States v. Johnson*, 235 U S 278 (1909), *United States v. Ruston*, 215 U S 201 (1909). Also see Chapter 8, sec 2C.

Within the meaning of those various statutes which though applicable to Indians do not define them, the courts, in defining the status of Indians of mixed Indian and other blood,<sup>7</sup> have largely followed the test laid down in *United States v. Rogers*,<sup>8</sup> to the effect that an individual to be considered an Indian must not only have some degree of Indian blood but must in addition be recognized as an Indian. In determining such recognition the courts have decided both recognition by the tribe or society of Indians and recognition by the Federal Government as expressed in treaty and statute.<sup>9</sup>

Thus in *United States v. Higgins*<sup>10</sup> it was said

In determining as to what class half-breed beings, we must refer, then, to the treatment and recognition the executive and political departments of the government have accorded them. (P 350)

Considering the treaties and statutes in regard to half-breed, I may say that they never have been treated as white people entitled to rights of American citizenship. Since that position has been made in them, special provisions of land, special appropriations of money. No such provision has been made for any other class. It is well known to those who have lived upon the frontier in America that, as a rule, half-breed or mixed blood Indians have issued with the tribes to which their mother belonged, that they have, as a rule, never found a welcome home with their white relatives, but with their Indian kindred. It is but just, then, that they should be classed as Indians, and have all of the rights of the Indian. In *U S Op Attys Gen 7* it is said, "Half-breed Indians are to be treated as Indians, in all respects, so long as they remain in their tribal relations." (P 352)

<sup>7</sup> The term "mixed blood Indian" has been held to include not only those of half white or more than half white blood, but every Indian having an ascertainable admixture of white blood, however small. *United States v. Detroit First Nat Bank*, 211 U S 245 (1914). *State v. Moolis*, 61 Wash 142 112 Pac 269 (1910). For a discussion of distinctions based on degrees of Indian blood see Chapter 5 sec 5B(1)(a).

<sup>8</sup> *Supra*, fn 7.

<sup>9</sup> Numerous treaties, as well as statutes, have recognized individuals of mixed blood as Indians. Treaty of September 29, 1817, with the Wyandot and other tribes, 7 Stat 388, Treaty of October 6, 1818, with the Miami Indians, 7 Stat 291, Treaty of August 4, 1821, with the Sac and Fox Indians, 7 Stat 424, Treaty of November 16, 1824, with the Onapaw Indians, 7 Stat 213, Treaty of June 2, 1826, with the Osage Indians, 7 Stat 240, Treaty of June 3, 1827, with the Kanza Indians, 7 Stat 247, Treaty of August 5, 1828, with the Chippewa, 9 Stat 291, Treaty of October 10, 1829, with the Potawatomi Indians, 7 Stat 258, 299, Treaty of October 29, 1826, with the Miami Indians, 7 Stat 802, Treaty of August 1, 1829, with the Winnebago Indians, 7 Stat 824, Treaty of July 25, 1830, with the Sisseton Indians, 7 Stat 880, Treaty of August 30, 1831, with the Ottawa Indians, 7 Stat 909, Treaty of September 15, 1832, with the Winnebago Indians, 7 Stat 972, Treaty of September 21, 1832, with the Sac and Fox Indians, 7 Stat 874, Treaty of October 27, 1832, with the Potawatomi Indians, 7 Stat 400, Treaty of March 28, 1835, with the Ottawa and other Indians, 7 Stat 498, Treaty of July 29, 1837, with the Chippewa Indians, 7 Stat 597, Treaty of September 26, 1837, with the Sioux Indians, 7 Stat 590, Treaty of November 1, 1837, with the Winnebago Indians, 7 Stat 545, Treaty of October 4, 1842, with the Chippewa Indians, 7 Stat 692, Treaty of October 18, 1848, with the Menominee Indians, 9 Stat 974, Treaty of March 15, 1854, with the Ottawa and Menominee Indians, 10 Stat 1048, Treaty of February 22, 1855, with the Chippewa Indians, 10 Stat 1169, Treaty of February 27, 1855, with the Winnebago Indians, 10 Stat 1174, Treaty of September 24, 1857, with the Pottawatomie Indians, 11 Stat 721, Treaty of March 12, 1858, with the Pottawatomie Indians, 12 Stat 992, Treaty of September 20, 1858, with the Osage Indians, 14 Stat 689, Treaty of October 14, 1859, with the Cheyenne Indians, 14 Stat 708, Treaty of March 21, 1860, with the Seminoles Indians, 15 Stat 758, Act of April 27, 1850, 6 Stat 371, Act of June 30, 1854, 4 Stat 740, Act of March 2, 1857, 6 Stat 680, Act of June 5, 1872, 17 Stat 226, 26 U S C 470, 27 U S C 108, Act of May 27, 1868, 35 Stat 312, 26 U S C 184, 26 U S C 41(24).

In at least one treaty children are described as quarter blood Indians. Treaty of September 29, 1817, with the Wyandot and other tribes, 7 Stat 384.

<sup>10</sup> 108 Fed 848 (C C Mont 1900).

Presumptively, a person of mixed blood residing upon a reservation, and enrolled in a tribe, is in Indian for purposes of legislation on federal criminal jurisdiction.<sup>12</sup> It has been held<sup>13</sup> that an individual of less than one-half Indian blood enrolled in a tribe and recognized as an Indian by the tribe is an Indian within the Act of March 3, 1909.<sup>14</sup> Declining federal jurisdiction to a type committed by one Indian against another within the limits of an Indian reservation. Likewise, it has been held<sup>15</sup> that mixed bloods who are recognized by the tribe as members thereof may properly receive allotments of lands as Indians in *Stall v. United States*,<sup>16</sup> where one eighth bloods were involved, the court stated that the persons were "of sufficient Indian blood to satisfy initially handicap them in the struggle for existence," and held that they were Indians and were entitled to be enrolled as such.

Citizenship has been denied a person of half white and half Indian blood on the ground that such an individual is not a "white person" within the meaning of that phrase as used in the statute.<sup>17</sup>

On the question of the status of offspring of white and Indian or Negro and Indian parents there are conflicting lines of authority. One holds to the common law doctrine that the offspring of free parents assumes the status of the father, the other to the general tribal custom that the offspring assumes the status of the mother.<sup>18</sup>

In the first category are decisions to the effect that the offspring of the union between a white man<sup>19</sup> and an Indian woman or between a Negro<sup>20</sup> and an Indian woman assume the status of the father and are therefore not Indians within the meaning of statutes extending or denying federal jurisdiction over crimes committed by or in Indian country, whether Indian and there are holdings that where a child is born of the reservation of a white father and an Indian mother, he will not by returning to the reservation, and receiving an allotment of land as an Indian be classed as an Indian so as either to exempt his property from state taxation or to bring himself within the criminal jurisdiction of states relating to Indians.<sup>21</sup>

In the second category we find many cases which follow the general tribal custom wherein it is held that the offspring of an Indian mother and a white or Negro father assumes the status of the mother. There again the ultimate question of the status of

the individual will depend on his or his mother's recognition as an Indian by the tribe. In this connection the language of the court in *Walden v. United States*<sup>22</sup> may be noted:

"\* \* \* In this proceeding the court has been informed as to the usages and customs of the different tribes of the Sioux Nation, and has found as a fact that the common law does not obtain amongst said tribes, as to determining the issue to which the children of a white man, united to an Indian woman, belong, but that, according to the usages and customs of said tribes, the children of a white man married to an Indian woman take the race or nationality of the mother."

"\* \* \* The United States have never, so far as legislation is concerned, recognized the technical title of the common law in reference to the children born of a white father and an Indian mother. In 1897 Congress in the Indian Appropriation Act of that year (Act June 7, 1897, c. 3, 30 Stat. 90) declared:

"That all children, born of a marriage heretofore solemnized between a white man and an Indian woman, her blood and not by adoption, whose said Indian woman is at that time, or was at the time of her death, recognized by the tribe, shall have the same rights and privileges to the property of the tribe to which the mother belongs or belonged at the time of her death by blood, as any other members of the tribe, and such child of such rights."

In *Dawson v. Gibson* 58 Fed. 445, 5 C. C. A. 545, the Circuit Court of Appeals of this circuit said:

"It is common knowledge, of which the court should take judicial knowledge, that the domestic relations of the Indians of this country have never been regulated by the common law of England and that that law is not adapted to the habits, customs, and manners of the Indians."

The court has considered the cases cited by counsel for defendants wherein, upon certain facts, persons were held not to be Indians, but these cases either seek to invoke what they say was the common law, or are in criminal proceedings. These cases, so far as they seek to invoke the common law to the Indians, are not followed, for reasons herein stated, and, so far as they seek to invoke criminal statutes, are unavailing as there is a wide distinction to be made between the construction of a criminal statute and a contract between a tribe of Indians and the United States. (Pp. 419-420.)

That, however, even with reference to statutes on federal criminal jurisdiction, the child of an Indian mother may assume her status is borne out by the decision of the court in *United States v. Sanders*.<sup>23</sup>

Likewise, it has been held<sup>24</sup> that the child of a white father and an Indian mother, abandoned by the father and residing in tribal relationship with the mother is an Indian within the meaning of a statute defining the offense of selling liquor to Indians.

In the foregoing discussion notice has been taken with but a single exception only of those statutes wherein no definition of the word "Indian" was attempted.

Although Congress has classified Indians for various particular purposes, it has never laid down a classification and either specified or implied that individuals not falling within the classification were not Indians. In various enactments classification has

<sup>12</sup> *Pannett Smith v. United States*, 151 U. S. 90 (1894).

<sup>13</sup> *United States v. Gadsden*, 180 Fed. 890 (C. C. P. D. Wn. 1911). Accord: *Blair v. Campbell*, 43 Minn. 364 75 N. W. 951 (1893).

<sup>14</sup> 15 Stat. 1088, 1151.

<sup>15</sup> *Stann v. United States*, 218 Fed. 283 (C. C. Neb. 1902).

<sup>16</sup> 105 Fed. 115 (C. C. S. D. 1912).

<sup>17</sup> *In re Omelette*, 6 Fed. 246 (C. C. Ore. 1890) (Construing R. 9, § 671).

<sup>18</sup> On tribal power over determination of membership see Chapter 7, sec. 4.

<sup>19</sup> *Pate Reynolds*, 20 Fed. Cir. No. 11719 (C. C. W. D. Ark. 1879).

<sup>20</sup> *United States v. Ward*, 42 Fed. 320 (C. C. S. D. Cal. 1890).

<sup>21</sup> *United States v. Higgins*, 110 Fed. 609 (C. C. Mont. 1901). See Chapter 11, sec. 4.

<sup>22</sup> *United States v. Walden*, 99 Fed. 437 (C. C. Wash. 1900). See Chapter 18.

<sup>23</sup> *In United States v. Egan*, 161 Fed. 318 752 (C. C. Mont. 1900) it was held that one born of a white father and an Indian mother and who was a recognized member of the tribe of Indians in which his mother belonged was not subject to taxation under the laws of the state in which he resided. In *United States v. Sanders*, 245 Fed. 411 (C. C. A. 8 1917) the daughter of a half to three fourths blood Chippewa woman and a white man was held to be, by blood a member of the Fond du Lac Band of Chippewas of Lake Superior, the court thereby overruling the action of the Department of Indian Affairs in refusing enrollment and allotment to the daughter. And in *Albury v. United States*, 162 U. S. 409 (1896) the court held that an illegitimate child, born of an Indian man and a colored woman, takes the status of its mother, and as therefore not an Indian.

<sup>24</sup> 143 Fed. 415 (C. C. S. D. 1906), see also *Stout v. Mierd Blood*, 20 Op. A. G. 711 (1894).

<sup>25</sup> 21 Fed. Cir. No. 16220 (C. C. Ark. 1847). Cf. *De Puteo Pro*, 99 Fed. 28 (C. C. A. 7 1088) (holding that the child of an Indian mother and a half blood father who lives on the reservation and is recognized as an Indian, is an Indian within federal and state jurisdiction). See also *Walden*.

<sup>26</sup> *Parrill v. United States*, 110 Fed. 942 (C. C. A. 8, 1901). Accord: *Halbert v. United States*, 283 U. S. 758 (1931).

been based primarily upon the presence of some quantum of Indian blood. Thus, the Indian Appropriation Act of May 25, 1918,<sup>10</sup> provides:

No appropriation except appropriations made pursuant to treaties, shall be used to educate children of less than one-fourth Indian blood.

For the purpose of controlling the traffic in liquor with the Indians Congress has classified Indians under the "charge of any Indian superintendent or agent."<sup>11</sup> By a later act<sup>12</sup> the classification was changed to include "any Indian to whom allotment of land has been made while the title to the same shall be held in trust by the Government" or "any Indian a ward of the Government under charge of any Indian superintendent or agent" or "any Indian, including mixed bloods, over whom the Government, through its departments, exercises an administrative." This classification is perhaps as broad as any that may be found in congressional enactment, extending as it does to all mixed bloods providing only that they be considered as wards of the Government.<sup>13</sup>

Various special acts relating to certain tribes have provided for the removal of restrictions on alienation from lands of the members of the tribe of less than one-half Indian blood. Other acts have used the term "mixed blood."<sup>14</sup>

In the Act of March 4, 1924,<sup>15</sup> relating to the Eastern Band of Cherokee of North Carolina, Congress states:

That thereafter no person of less than one-sixteenth degree of said Eastern Cherokee Indian blood shall be recognized as entitled to any rights with the Eastern Band of Cherokee Indians, except by inheritance from a deceased member or member. (P. 1518)

Congress had previously recognized Indians of less than this degree of blood for in the Act of June 4, 1924,<sup>16</sup> it provided:

That any member of said band whose degree of Indian blood is less than one-sixteenth may, in the discretion of the Secretary of Interior, be paid a cash equivalent in lieu of an allotment of land. (P. 870)

<sup>10</sup> 40 Stat. 764, 25 U. S. C. 207.

<sup>11</sup> Act of July 21, 1892, 27 Stat. 280, 201.

<sup>12</sup> Act of January 30, 1907, 29 Stat. 706. See Chapter 17.

<sup>13</sup> For a discussion of wardship see Chapter 8, sec. 9.

<sup>14</sup> Act of May 27, 1908, 35 Stat. 212 (Five Civilized Tribes). Act of March 8, 1921, 41 Stat. 1249 (O. S. A.).

<sup>15</sup> Act of June 21, 1924, 43 Stat. 858, Act of March 1, 1907, 34 Stat. 1034.

<sup>16</sup> 43 Stat. 1718.

<sup>17</sup> 43 Stat. 266.

A recent statutory definition of an Indian is that contained in the Indian Reorganization Act<sup>17</sup> which in section 19 provides:

The term Indian as used in this Act shall include all persons of Indian descent who are members of any recognized Indian tribe now under Federal jurisdiction, and all persons who are descendants of such members who were, on June 1, 1934, residing within the present boundaries of any Indian reservation, and shall further include all other persons of one-half or more Indian blood. For the purposes of this Act, Eskimos and other aboriginal peoples of Alaska shall be considered Indians. (P. 688)

In this act as in the foregoing acts, the definition of "Indian" is limited in its connotation to the purposes of the legislation.

Apart from statute, the administrative agencies of the Federal Government dealing with Indian affairs commonly consider a person who is of Indian blood and a member of a tribe, regardless of degree of blood, an Indian.<sup>18</sup>

Thus the Indian Law and Order Regulations approved by the Secretary of the Interior on November 27, 1941,<sup>19</sup> contain the provision:

For the purpose of the enforcement of the regulations in this part, an Indian shall be deemed to be any person of Indian descent who is a member of any recognized Indian tribe now under Federal jurisdiction.

This definition exemplifies the idea that in dealing with Indians the Federal Government is dealing primarily not with a particular race as such but with members of certain social-political groups towards which the Federal Government has assumed special responsibilities.

<sup>17</sup> Act of June 18, 1934, is Stat. 954, 25 U. S. C. 401, et seq. It further defines the term Indian in title as Indians, sec. Chapter 21, sec. 1.

<sup>18</sup> Here, too, however, one finds administrative regulations which classify Indians according to blood quantum for particular purposes. Thus by Executive order of January 31, 1939, Indians of one-fourth or more Indian blood were categorized in positions in the Bureau of Indian Affairs were concerned from Civil Service examination. See Chapter 8, sec. 48(2). On the other hand regulations concerning the admission of Indians into Indian hospitals and sanatoriums provide that:

52.2 Persons who are in need of hospitalization and who are enrolled Indians, recognized members of a tribe, and who are unable to provide such hospitalization from their own funds, may be admitted to such institutions.

52.4 Preference should be given to those of a higher degree of Indian blood.

(25 U. S. C. 85, 25 Stat. 854)

<sup>19</sup> 25 U. S. C. 101.2

## SECTION 3 INDIAN COUNTRY

Although the term "Indian country" has been used in many senses, it is perhaps the most usefully defined as country within which Indian laws and customs and federal laws relating to Indians are generally applicable. The phrase "generally applicable" is used because for certain purposes tribal law and custom and federal law relating to Indians have a validity regardless of locality. Thus, for example, Congress has made it a crime to sell liquor to Indians anywhere in the United States,<sup>20</sup> and the status which an Indian acquires by tribal custom marriage will generally be recognized in all parts of the United States.<sup>21</sup>

The greater part, however, of the body of federal Indian law and tribal law applies only to certain areas which have a peculiar

relation to the Indians and which in their totality comprise the Indian country.

The Indian country at any particular time must be viewed with reference to the existing body of federal and tribal law. Until 1817 it is country within which the criminal laws of the United States are not generally applicable, so that crimes in Indian country by whites, against whites, or by Indians, are not cognizable in state or federal courts,<sup>22</sup> any more than crimes committed on the soil of Canada or Mexico. Treaties defined the boundaries between the United States, or the separate states,

<sup>20</sup> Act of July 23, 1892, 27 Stat. 280, as amended by Act of June 15, 1908, 35 Stat. 990, 25 U. S. C. 241. And see Chapter 17, sec. 9.

<sup>21</sup> 54 U. S. C. 89 (1942) and see R. A. Brown, The Indian Problem and the Law (1980) 89 Yale L. J. 807, 815. See also Chapter 7, sec. 5.

<sup>22</sup> Under the Act of July 22, 1790, 1 Stat. 137, federal jurisdiction was extended over any crime committed by a citizen or inhabitant of the United States against the person or property of any friendly Indian in any town, settlement, or territory belonging to any nation or tribe of Indians. Since the act specified that it was to be in force only for 2 years, it was superseded by the Act of March 3, 1794, 1 Stat. 329, which extended federal jurisdiction as before. On criminal jurisdiction see Chapter 18.



and the territories of the various Indian tribes or nations." Within these territories the Indian tribes or nations had not only full jurisdiction over their own citizens, but the same jurisdiction over citizens of the United States that any other power might lawfully exercise over citizens from the United States.<sup>1</sup> Treaties between the United States and various tribes commonly stipulated that citizens of the United States within the territory of the Indian nations were to be subject to the laws of these nations.<sup>2</sup>

It is against this legal background that the first legislative definitions must be understood. As early as July 22, 1790,<sup>3</sup> Congress used the expression "Indian country" in the first time and introduced it, apparently with the meaning of country belonging to the Indians, occupied by them, and to which the Government recognized them as having some kind of title and title. In the Act of March 3, 1793,<sup>4</sup> "Indian country" and "Indian territory" were used synonymously.

The Act of May 19, 1796,<sup>5</sup> confirmed the first statutory definition of Indian country, fixing, according to the then existing treaties, the boundary line between Indian country and the United States. In this act, as in those which followed it, the term "Indian country" is used as descriptive of the country within the boundary lines of the Indian tribes. In 1799,<sup>6</sup> and again in 1802,<sup>7</sup> the boundary of Indian country was redefined by Congress to conform with new treaties. In each instance it was provided that a citizen or inhabitant of the United States committing a crime against a friendly Indian or Indians within Indian country should be subject to the jurisdiction of the federal courts. In both of these acts the words "Indian country" and "Indian territory" are used synonymously.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Treaty of January 21, 1795, with the Wyandot Delaware, Chippewa and Ottawa Nations, 7 Stat. 16, Treaty of November 23, 1795, with the Cherokee, 7 Stat. 35, Treaty of January 3, 1796, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 21, Treaty of January 10, 1796, with the Chickasaw Nation, 7 Stat. 24, Treaty of January 9, 1796, with the Wyandot Delaware, Chippewa, Pottawattamie and Sac Nations, 7 Stat. 28, Treaty of August 7, 1796, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 97, Treaty of July 3, 1797, with the Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 80, Treaty of August 3, 1797, with the Wyandot Delaware, Shawnee, Chippewa, Pottawattamie, Miami, Red River, Weas, Kickapoo, Piankashaw, and Kaskaskia, 7 Stat. 49, Treaty of October 2, 1798, with the Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 69, Treaty of December 17, 1801, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 66, Treaty of October 17, 1802, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 73, Treaty of November 3, 1804, with the Sac and Fox, 7 Stat. 84, Treaty of July 4, 1807, with the Wyandot Ottawa Chippewa Miami and Delaware Shawnee, Pottawattamie Nations, 7 Stat. 87. See also Chapter 3, sec. 3A(2), 3A(1).

<sup>2</sup>It is interesting to note in this connection that some of the early Trade and Intercourse Acts contained a provision requiring a citizen or inhabitant of the United States to acquire a passport before going into the country subject to treaty to the Indians. Act of May 29, 1790, 1 Stat. 469, Act of March 3, 1799, 1 Stat. 745, Act of March 30, 1802, 2 Stat. 149. This provision was modified in the Act of June 10, 1834, 4 Stat. 729 so as not to apply to citizens of the United States. See Chap. 4, sec. 3A(5), Chapter 4, sec. 6.

<sup>3</sup>Treaty of January 21, 1795, with the Wyandot Delaware Chippewa, and Ottawa Nations, 7 Stat. 16, Treaty of November 23, 1795, with the Cherokee, 7 Stat. 18, Treaty of January 3, 1796, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 21, Treaty of January 10, 1796, with the Chickasaw Nation, 7 Stat. 24, Treaty of January 31, 1796, with the Shawnee Nation, 7 Stat. 20, Treaty of January 9, 1796, with the Wyandot Delaware Chippewa, Pottawattamie, and Sac Nations, 7 Stat. 28, Treaty of August 7, 1796, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 97, Treaty of July 3, 1797, with the Wyandot Delaware, Shawnee, Chippewa, Pottawattamie, Miami, Red River, Weas, Kickapoo, Piankashaw, and Kaskaskia, 7 Stat. 49.

<sup>4</sup>1 Stat. 137.

<sup>5</sup>1 Stat. 320, similarly in the Act of March 8, 1799, 1 Stat. 748, and in Act of March 30, 1802, 2 Stat. 189.

<sup>6</sup>1 Stat. 469.

<sup>7</sup>Act of March 8, 1799, 1 Stat. 748.

<sup>8</sup>Act of March 30, 1802, 2 Stat. 189.

<sup>9</sup>For a true meaning of the term "Indian territory" see Chapter 28.

The convenience of a territory in which white desperadoes could escape the force of state and federal law made itself felt in the Act of March 1, 1817, which extended federal law to cover crimes committed in Indian or white person within any town, district, or territory belonging to any nation or tribe of Indians, subject, however, to the limitation that the act should not be construed to extend to an offense by one Indian against another Indian within any Indian boundary.

Indian country in all these statutes is territory, wherever situated, within which federal law is generally applicable, but if it is applicable only in special cases designated by statute, and state law is not applicable at all. This conception of the Indian country reflects a situation which finds its counterpart in international law in the case of newly acquired territories, where the laws of those territories continue in force until repealed or modified by the new sovereign. We find that Congress, when called upon to define Indian country in the Act of June 30, 1834,<sup>9</sup> said:

"That all that part of the United States west of the Mississippi and not within the State of Missouri and Louisiana or the Territory of Arkansas, and, also, that part of the United States east of the Mississippi river, and not within any State to which the Indian title has not been extinguished, for the purposes of this act, be taken and deemed to be the Indian country."

Whether Indian territories within the exterior boundaries of a state but exempted by treaty or statute from state jurisdiction were included within the foregoing definition is a question not free from doubt.<sup>10</sup> Such doubts, however, were resolved by a series of judicial decisions and in the failure to include section 1 of the Act of 1834<sup>11</sup> in the Revised Statutes, thereby repealing it.<sup>12</sup>

No subsequent statutory definition of Indian country appears, though for purposes of defining federal criminal jurisdiction reference is made in numerous acts<sup>13</sup> to "Indian country."

<sup>9</sup>3 Stat. 383.

<sup>10</sup>4 Stat. 727. In the report of the Committee of Indian Affairs to the House of Representatives concerning among others this act we find the following interesting commentary suggesting a basis for the definition of Indian country in the then continued:

"The Indian country" . . . will include all the territory of the United States west of the Mississippi and within Louisiana, Missouri and Arkansas, and those portions east of the river, and not within the family of any tribe to which the Indian title has not been extinguished. The Southern Indian title has not been embraced within it. Most of them have agreed to emigrate. To all their lands with the exception of those of a part of a single tribe, the Indian title has been extinguished and the States in which the Indians of that tribe still remain have extended their laws over them.

This act is intended to apply to the whole Indian country as defined in the first section. On the west side of the Mississippi its limits can only be changed by a legislative act, on the east side of that river it will continue to exhibit only those sections of country not within any State to which the Indian title shall not be extinguished. The effect of the extinguishment of the Indian title to any portion of it will be the inclusion of such portion from the Indian country. The limits of the Indian country will be modified it all times obvious and certain. By the Indians' act of 1803 the boundary of the Indian country was a line of marks and bounds, variable from time to time by treaties. And from the multiplicity of these treaties it is now somewhat difficult to ascertain what at any given period was the boundary or extent of the Indian country. (P. 10.)

Re Report No. 474, 25th Cong. 1st sess., vol. 4, May 20, 1834.

<sup>11</sup>It was early held that lands in territorial status to which Indian title had not been extinguished and which were exempted by treaty or statute from state jurisdiction remain within the meaning of the 1834 Act notwithstanding the admission of the state into the Union. *United States v. Delamater*, 7 Fed. 894 (D. C. Ore. 1881).

<sup>12</sup>4 Stat. 729.

<sup>13</sup>Re *S. v. 16000, Donnelly v. United States*, 228 U. S. 243, 268 (1911).

<sup>14</sup>Act of March 27, 1864, 10 Stat. 269, 270, Act of February 18, 1876, 19 Stat. 310, 313, 18 U. S. C. 2144, 26 U. S. C. 2145. For statutes making it a criminal offense to attempt to lingo into "Indian country" see Chapter 17, sec. 8.

Notwithstanding the repeal of section 1 of the Act of 1834,<sup>1</sup> the Supreme Court, when called upon to determine whether certain land was Indian country, applied in a number of instances the definition contained therein.<sup>2</sup>

The first case<sup>3</sup> to reach the Supreme Court after the repeal of section 1 of the 1834 act involved the legality of the seizure of liquor by military officers under the authority contained in the Act of 1834, as amended by the Act of 1864.<sup>4</sup> The legality of the seizure depended on whether or not it was made in Indian country, the locus being at a point within the territory of Dakota. In an unusual opinion the Court, per Mr. Justice Miller, made the following observations:

Notwithstanding the immense changes which have since taken place in the vast region covered by the act of 1834, by the extinguishment of Indian titles, the creation of States and the formation of territorial governments, Congress has not thought it necessary to make any new definition of Indian country. Yet during all this time a large body of laws has been in existence, whose operation was confined to the Indian country, whatever that may be. And men have been punished by death, by fine, and by imprisonment of which the courts who so punished them had no jurisdiction, if the offenses were not committed in the Indian country as established by law. These facts afford the strongest presumption that the Congress of the United States, the judges who administered those laws, must have found in the definition of Indian country, in the act of 1834, such an adaptability to the altered circumstances of what it was then Indian country as to enable them to ascertain what it was at any time since then. (P. 207)

After analyzing the definition as contained in section 1 of the 1834 Act the Court further said:

... if the section be read as describing lands west of the Mississippi, outside of the States of Louisiana and Missouri, and of the Territory of Arkansas, and land east of the Mississippi not included in any State, but lands alone to which the Indian title has not been extinguished, we have a description of the Indian country which was good then, and which is good now, and which is capable of easy application at any time.

It follows from this that all the country described by the act of 1834 as Indian country remains Indian country so long as the Indians retain their original title to the soil, and ceases to be Indian country whenever they lose that title, in consequence of any different provision by treaty or by act of Congress. (Pp. 208-209)

In following the Bates decision, the courts have held that reservation lands to which Indian title has not been extinguished come within the definition of Indian country<sup>5</sup> as contained in the 1834 Act, whether situated within a territory<sup>6</sup> or state.<sup>7</sup> Ordinarily, Indian title is extinguished by cession under treaty or act of Congress, and the land ceases to be Indian country when the cession becomes effective.<sup>8</sup> Where the land, however, is held by the United States in trust, to be sold for the

benefit of the Indian tribe, the courts have held that it remains "Indian land until actually sold."<sup>9</sup>

The first important extension of the rule laid down in the Bates case occurred in 1913 in the case of *Donnelly v. United States*,<sup>10</sup> which involved the question of whether the jurisdiction of the United States extended to the crime of murder committed on an executive order Indian reservation. In holding that federal criminal law was applicable, the Court said:

It is contended by plaintiff in error that the term "Indian country" is confined to lands to which the Indians retain their original right of possession, and is not applicable to those set apart as Indian reservation out of the public domain, and not previously occupied by the Indians.

\* In the fifth Intercourse Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 729, c. 161, the first section defined the "Indian country" for the purposes of that act. But this section was not included in the Revised Statutes, and it was therefore repealed by § 3500, Rev. Stat. *See post*, *Crane Dog*, 109 U. S. 576, 561, *United States v. Le Brie*, 121 U. S. 278, 280, *Clamont v. United States*, 225 U. S. 551, 557. Under these decisions, the definition is contained in the act of 1834 may still be referred to in connection with the provisions of its original context that remain in force, and may be considered in connection with the changes which have taken place in our situation, with a view of determining from time to time what must be regarded as Indian country where it is spoken of in the statutes. With reference to country that was formerly subject to the Indian occupancy, the cases cited furnish a criterion for determining what is "Indian country." But "the changes which have taken place in our situation" are so numerous, and so material, that the term cannot now be confined to land formerly held by the Indians, and to which then title remains unextinguished. And, in our judgment, nothing can more appropriately be deemed "Indian country" within the meaning of those provisions of the Revised Statutes that relate to the regulation of the Indians and the government of the Indian country, than a tract of land that, being a part of the public domain, is lawfully set apart as an Indian reservation. (P. 288-289)

In the same year, the Supreme Court in the case of *United States v. Randoval*<sup>11</sup> held that the lands of the Pueblo Indians come within the definition of Indian country for the purpose of federal liquor regulation. The Pueblo lands were not, strictly speaking, a reservation, but were lands held by communal ownership in fee simple. It would seem that the term Indian country is applied to the Pueblo lands only in lands occupied by "distinctly Indian communities" recognized and treated by the Government as "dependent communities" entitled to its protection.<sup>12</sup>

The foregoing decisions are concerned with lands in tribal tenure. While the Supreme Court in the *Donnelly* case eliminated the necessity for original tribal title as a condition to the application of federal criminal law, it failed to consider the applicability of the category of Indian country to the individual Indian holdings.

Under the practice of allotting lands in severalty to individual Indians, title to the allotted land was held in trust by the Government for the benefit of the allottee, or vested in the

<sup>1</sup> 4 Stat. 726, 728.

<sup>2</sup> *Bates v. Clark*, 95 U. S. 204 (1877); *See Post*, *Crane Dog*, 109 U. S. 556 (1883); *United States v. LeBrie*, 121 U. S. 278 (1887); *Clamont v. United States*, 225 U. S. 551 (1912).

<sup>3</sup> *Bates v. Clark*, 95 U. S. 204 (1877).

<sup>4</sup> *See Post*, *Crane Dog*, 109 U. S. 556 (1883).

<sup>5</sup> *United States v. LeBrie*, 121 U. S. 278 (1887). *Of United States v. Forty Three Gallons of Whisky*, 108 U. S. 461 (1883) (holding that, by statute, ceded Indian lands may remain Indian country for the purpose of excluding federal liquor laws); *Clamont v. United States*, 225 U. S. 551 (1912); *Dick v. United States*, 208 U. S. 840 (1908).

<sup>6</sup> *United States v. La Plant*, 200 Fed. 92 (D. C. S. D. 1911) (holding that land held under "C. C. A." ceased to be Indian reservation land when ceded, even before sale to private parties); *United States v. Myrie*, 200 Fed. 887 (C. C. A., 1913).

<sup>7</sup> *Ash Sheep Co. v. United States*, 252 U. S. 159 (1920), aff'd 250 Fed. 501 (C. C. A. 9, 1918), and 254 Fed. 59 (C. C. A. 9, 1918). And see Chapter 15, see 21.

<sup>8</sup> 228 U. S. 248 (1911). Accord *Prosser v. United States*, 282 U. S. 497 (1931) ("An Indian reservation is Indian country.")

<sup>9</sup> 221 U. S. 232 (1913).

<sup>10</sup> For a fuller discussion of this case see Chapter 20, see 4. In holding that jurisdiction to punish the offense of larceny committed within a Pueblo included in the Federal Government, the Court defined Indian country as "any wooded land or reserve occupied by an Indian nation or tribe of Indians." *United States v. Chanow*, 280 U. S. 487 (1930).

been the protection of a dependent people. Indians in this colony have been afforded the same protection by the government as that given Indians in other settlements known as "reservations." Congress alone has the right to determine the manner in which this country's guardianship over the Indians shall be carried out, and it is immaterial whether Congress designates a settlement as a "reservation" or "colony."

The Reus Colony has been validly set apart for the use of the Indians. It is under the superintendence of the Government. The Government retains title to the lands which it permits the Indians to occupy.

When we view the facts of this case in the light of the relationship which has long existed between the Government and the Indians—and which continues to date—it is not reasonably possible to draw any distinction between this Indian "colony" and "Indian country." We conclude that § 247 of Title 25, *supra*, does apply to this Reno Colony (Po 577-730).<sup>4</sup>

The foregoing decisions have open the question of whether an allotment within the exterior boundaries of an Indian reservation which is held by the allottee in fee simple may be subject to the application of federal criminal law, and tribal law, or whether such land is subject to the exclusive jurisdiction of the state.<sup>19</sup>

Whether land acquired by the United States and used for Indian purposes which do not involve Indian occupancy rights, such as school, hospital or agency sites not within a reservation, are "Indian country" is a question which has not been definitely settled by any court decision. Administrative practices and rulings, however, indicate that such lands are not considered "Indian country."<sup>10</sup>

"It has been indicated that in the light of the McGowan case lands purchased under the Indian Reorganization Act (Act of June 18, 1904, as amended) and yet not produced in violation of law added to existing reservations, notwithstanding the purpose of being Indian reservations, and that they are purchased by the Federal Government at its law and order jurisdiction over Indian lands, such as purchased lands pending, the formal declaration of their reservation status. Memo bot I D, February 17, 1989

1-16-1989

<sup>14</sup>The Solicitor for the Interior Department, after analyzing the McGowan case commented

[illegible]

These examples demonstrate that lands held by the United States without a declaration of trust and used for school or other institutional purposes may be considered Indian reservations. The Indian Department has no objection to this classification. They point the distinction between this type of land and lands held exclusively by the United States for institutional purposes is that in the latter case the land is held in trust for the benefit of their wards. The latter class of lands is best illustrated by two reservations, from schools and hospitals where the Department has itself not classified them. One is the land at the Indian Hospital at Fort Belknap, Montana, and the other is the land at the Indian Hospital at the General Land containing Indian Reservations. 2)

Another way of demonstrating this conclusion is by reference to the general proposition that Indian country is country where not only Federal laws, but also Indian laws and customs apply. It is apparent that Indian laws apply only in areas occupied by Indian groups and communities and not to lands held for Federal institutions in Pierre, Phoenix, or any other non-Indian community.

In brief, my conclusion is that lands held by the United States and purchased for the purpose of establishing Federal institutions for Indian welfare are not Indian country nor Indian reservations unless an Indian tribe or group has occupancy rights in the land. Such lands may be "reservations of the United States" as for example that term is used in right of way statutes (Memo Solicitor I D, July 1, 1938), but they would not be "Indian

## CHAPTER 2

# THE OFFICE OF INDIAN AFFAIRS

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
<i>Section 1 The development of the Indian Service</i> .....	9	<i>Section 2 Continued</i>	
<i>A Establishment</i> .....	9	<i>D The period from 1877 to 1904</i> .....	20
<i>B Development</i> .....	10	<i>E The period from 1905 to 1938</i> .....	24
<i>C List of commissioners</i> .....	11	<i>F The period from 1939 to 1989</i> .....	26
<i>Section 2 The development of Indian Service policies</i> .....	12	<i>G Historical retrospect</i> .....	28
<i>A The period from 1876 to 1880</i> .....	12	<i>Section 3 The administration of the Indian Service today</i> .....	29
<i>B The period from 1881 to 1887</i> .....	14	<i>A Organization and activities</i> .....	29
<i>C The period from 1888 to 1876</i> .....	17	<i>B Personnel</i> .....	31
		<i>C Cooperation with other agencies</i> .....	32

## SECTION 1 THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE INDIAN SERVICE

### A ESTABLISHMENT

The relations of the United States with the Indians generally have been through designated administrative agencies, and it is therefore important to examine the structure, guiding policy, and manner of functioning of these agencies at various periods.

As a general rule, the Crown and the colonies regulated intercourse between their own subjects and the Indians, but made no attempt to govern the mutual relations of Indian tribes.<sup>1</sup>

After the French and Indian War, and prior to the adoption of the Constitution, two superintendencies of Indian affairs were created—one for the northern and one for the southern colonies. The superintendents were in effect ambassadors, a role which to a limited extent superintendents fill today. Their duties consisted of observing events, negotiating treaties, and generally keeping peace between Indians and the holder settlers.<sup>2</sup>

On July 12, 1775,<sup>3</sup> the Continental Congress, as one of its first acts, and exercising definite governmental power for all the colonies, declared its jurisdiction over Indian tribes by creating three departments of Indian affairs—northern, southern, and middle, at the head of each was placed commissioners, five for the southern, three (later four)<sup>4</sup> for the northern, and three for the middle department. Their duties were " \* \* \* to treat with the Indians \* \* \* in order to preserve peace and friendship with the said Indians and to prevent their taking any part in the present commotions."<sup>5</sup> The duties of the commissioners did not differ from those of the colonial superintendents but then status as official representatives of a new government, not the Crown, was added.

The importance of these offices is indicated by the fact that the commissioners of the middle department unanimously elected on July 12, 1775, were Benjamin Franklin, Patrick Henry, and James Wilson.<sup>6</sup>

By a general ordinance for the regulation of Indian affairs of August 7, 1786,<sup>7</sup> the Congress of the Confederation followed the colonial precedent and established two departments—the northern, north of the Ohio River, and west of the Hudson River, and the southern, south of the Ohio River. At the head of each was placed a superintendent under the control of and reporting to the Secretary of War. Each had power to grant licenses to trade and live with the Indians.

This ordinance remained partially in force after the adoption of the Constitution of the United States.<sup>8</sup>

On August 7, 1789,<sup>9</sup> early in the first Congress, the War Department was established, upon whose Secretary devolved all matters relative to Indian affairs as were " \* \* \* entrusted to him by the President of the United States, agreeably to the Constitution \* \* \*"

The first Congress and the first President recognized the need for remedying a problem of conflict of Indian and white interests, serious even then.<sup>10</sup>

On August 20, 1789,<sup>11</sup> 5 months after the first Congress convened, it appropriated \$20,000 for "negotiating and treating with the Indian tribes," the first of a long series of appropriations for that purpose.

On September 11, 1789,<sup>12</sup> in an early act establishing the salaries of executive officers of the Government, Congress began the policy of making the governor of a territory superintendent of Indian affairs in that jurisdiction by appropriating \$2,000 to "the Governor of the western territory, for his salary as such, and for

<sup>1</sup> *Joint Com. Conf. (Library of Congress ed.)*, vol. XXXI, p. 401.

<sup>2</sup> *The Act of September 11, 1789*, 1 Stat. 87, 68, refers to " \* \* \* superintendent of Indian affairs in the northern department \* \* \* " *The Intercourse Act of July 22, 1790*, 1 Stat. 137, mentions " \* \* \* the superintendent of the department \* \* \* "

<sup>3</sup> *Act of August 7, 1789*, 1 Stat. 49, 50.

<sup>4</sup> See Schneekloth, *op. cit.*, pp. 18-19 for Washington's statement to the Senate on Indian treaties. " \* \* \* the treaty with the Cherokee has been actually violated by the disorderly white people on the frontiers of North Carolina." (*Annals of Congress*, 1st Cong., 1st sess., p. 66).

<sup>5</sup> *Act of August 20, 1789*, 1 Stat. 64.

<sup>6</sup> *Act of September 11, 1789*, 1 Stat. 67, 68.

<sup>7</sup> Schneekloth, *The Office of Indian Affairs, Its History, Activities, and Organization* (1927), p. 12.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>9</sup> *Joint Com. Conf. (Library of Congress ed.)*, vol. II, p. 175.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 188.

<sup>11</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 175.

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 188.

discharging the duties of superintendent of Indian affairs in the northern department."

In 1790, Congress exercised its power under the committee clause of the Constitution, passed the first act "to regulate trade and intercourse with the Indian tribes," which provided for buying of Indian furs and conferred extensive regulatory powers on the President. This temporary act was renewed with modifications until 1802 when the first permanent fur-trade act was passed.<sup>1</sup>

The first specific appropriation for Indian affairs appears in the Act of December 24, 1791.<sup>2</sup> The sum of \$39,424.71 was appropriated "for defraying all expenses incident to the Indian department," authorized by law.

The Treasury Department was given responsibility for the purchase of Indian goods as well as other War Department supplies by the Act of May 8, 1792.<sup>3</sup>

Trading houses under Government ownership were maintained from 1796<sup>4</sup> to 1822.<sup>5</sup> Their function was to supply the Indians with necessary goods at a fair price, and offer a fair price for their furs in exchange.<sup>6</sup> The agents were appointed by the President and responsible for him. Their accounts were transmitted to the Secretary of the Treasury.

The office of Superintendent of Indian Trade was set up in 1806.<sup>7</sup> The superintendent, like the agent for each trading house, was appointed by the President. His duties were, among other things, "to purchase and take charge of all goods intended for trade with the Indian nations . . . and to ascertain the time to such places as he shall be directed by the President."<sup>8</sup>

After the abolition of the office of Superintendent of Indian Trade in 1822,<sup>9</sup> Secretary of War Calhoun created the Bureau of Indian Affairs by order of March 11, 1824,<sup>10</sup> and placed at its head Thomas L. McKenney who had formerly been superintendent of Indian trade. His duties included the administration of the

civilization fund<sup>11</sup> under departmental regulations, the examination of claims arising out of laws regulating intercourse with Indian tribes, and routine office correspondence.<sup>12</sup>

His staff consisted of a chief clerk and one assistant.<sup>13</sup> His representatives in the field included superintendents, agents, and subagents.<sup>14</sup>

## B DEVELOPMENT

The period between 1824 and 1832, when the statutory office of Commissioner of Indian Affairs in the War Department was established, appears to have been one of confusion in the Bureau of Indian Affairs.<sup>15</sup>

By Act of July 9, 1832,<sup>16</sup> Congress authorized the President to appoint, with the consent of the Senate, a Commissioner of Indian Affairs who was to have "the direction and management of all Indian affairs, and of all matters arising out of Indian relations . . . . He was under the direction of the Secretary of War and subject to the regulations prescribed by the President."

The number of clerks was not specified. The Secretary of War was empowered to transfer or appoint the necessary number of clerks " . . . so as not to increase the number now employed . . . by the department."

Two years later the Act of June 30, 1834,<sup>17</sup> once considered the organization of the Indian Office, "was passed 'to provide for the organization of the department of Indian Affairs.' This statute established certain agencies and abolished others. It provided for the employment of subagents, interpreters, and other employees, the payment of annuities, the purchase and distribution of supplies, etc. It was in effect, a reorganization of the field force of the War Department having charge of Indian affairs," and in no way altered the power of the Secretary of War or the Commissioner,<sup>18</sup> or changed the status of the Bureau of Indian Affairs in the War Department."

Subsequent appropriation acts provided for the hiring of additional personnel.<sup>19</sup>

Under section 5 of the Act of March 8, 1840,<sup>20</sup> by which the Home Department of the Interior was established, the Bureau

<sup>1</sup> As now territories were created the convention was often made, so office superintendent of Indian affairs a position which he eventually held until the territory became a state, in some cases, however, the office of the superintendent was transferred before ennobled to one of the general superintendences in the Indian Service or to the Washington Office. (Schmeckelbein *op cit*, p. 10.)

In 1807 at the time the Indian Peace Commission was created (Act of July 22 1790 1 Stat. 137, in force for 1808) whose government was also superintendent of Indian affairs *op cit*—Colombia District, Indian Mountain Commission *op cit*, p. 62. The Peace Commission in its report (though it might these governments be directed of their duties as superintendent. (Report of Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1808) p. 48.)

<sup>2</sup> Act of July 22 1790 1 Stat. 137, in force for 1808.  
<sup>3</sup> Act of March 30 1802 2 Stat. 179. For a summary of these acts see Chapter 4, sec. 2 and 3. See also Chapter 16.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Stat. 228, 228.

<sup>5</sup> This is the first mention in an appropriation act of the existence of an Indian Department.

<sup>6</sup> 1 Stat. 279.

<sup>7</sup> Act of April 18, 1790, 1 Stat. 462. This act was a temporary measure enacted every 2 or 3 years up to the abolition of Government trading houses in 1822. See Chapter 16.

<sup>8</sup> Abolished by Act of May 6 1822 9 Stat. 679.

<sup>9</sup> In several of his annual addresses to Congress, Washington had strongly urged the establishment of trading houses by the Government in order to protect the Indians from the practices of private traders.  
<sup>10</sup> (Schmeckelbein *op cit*, p. 23. See also pp. 20, 22.)

<sup>11</sup> Act of April 21 1800, 2 Stat. 402.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., sec. 2. Appropriation acts indicate the expansion of the office of Indian trade by providing for compensation of additional clerks.  
<sup>13</sup> *op cit*, Act of March 8, 1840, 2 Stat. 544, Act of February 20, 1850 2 Stat. 677, 550.

<sup>14</sup> Act of May 6 1822 9 Stat. 679.

<sup>15</sup> II Doc No 148, 19th Cong, 1st sess, p. 6.

<sup>16</sup> Act of March 9 1832 9 Stat. 516 provided a permanent annual appropriation of \$100,000 for " . . . introducing among them [the Indians] the habits and arts of civilization . . . .", repealed by Act of February 14 1875 c. 159, 17 Stat. 457, 461. For further discussion see Chapter 12, sec. 2.

<sup>17</sup> Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, 1832, p. 1. Hereafter in this chapter these reports will be referred to as "Rep Comm Ind Aff."

<sup>18</sup> Schmeckelbein, *op cit*, p. 27. Act of March 2, 1827, 4 Stat. 243, provides for one clerk in the Bureau of Indian Affairs. Act of February 12 1828 4 Stat. 217 for one clerk and messengers.

<sup>19</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1832, p. 1.

<sup>20</sup> Schmeckelbein, *op cit*, p. 27 quotes Schmeckelbein (Personal Memoirs, 1848 p. 310) on the "movement in the fiscal affairs of the Indian department . . . . there is a screw loose in the public machinery somewhere."

<sup>21</sup> 4 Stat. 604 B S § 402-403 25 U S C 1-2.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., sec. 2.

<sup>23</sup> 1 Stat. 785.

<sup>24</sup> See Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1832, p. 1.

<sup>25</sup> Edmund A. Convent Lodge—A Civilization Won (1937), p. 104.

<sup>26</sup> Schmeckelbein, *op cit*, p. 28.

<sup>27</sup> Congress continued to pass appropriation acts for the "Indian department" as it had since 1791 (Act of December 28 1791, 1 Stat. 226, 228, see *op cit* of January 27, 1835, 4 Stat. 748), and to allow compensation for the Commissioners of Indian Affairs and his clerks (Act of March 4, 1840 4 Stat. 700).

<sup>28</sup> See *op cit* Act of May 9, 1850, 5 Stat. 20, Joint Resolution of May 2, 1840 5 Stat. 409.

<sup>29</sup> 8 Stat. 305, B S § 441, 5 U S C 485.

of Indian Affairs passed from military to civil control. This is provided "That the Secretary of the Interior shall exercise the supervision and appellate powers now exercised by the Secretary of the War Department, in relation to all the acts of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs."

The administration of Indian affairs was not markedly affected by this transfer, because as early as 1854 the office was essentially a civilian bureau.<sup>10</sup> Army officers continued to be employed occasionally as agents.<sup>11</sup>

After 1849 Congress debated for years the expediency of transferring the Indian Bureau back to the War Department.<sup>12</sup> Constitutional questions of responsibility between the two departments ensued.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>10</sup> Administration of the Indian Office (Bureau of Municipal Research Publication No. 65) (1915), p. 13.  
<sup>11</sup> Schmeckeburn *op cit.* p. 44. By Act of July 15, 1870, 10 Stat. 375 Congress prohibited the appointment of military officers to civil posts unless commissioned war agents.

However, the exception later made affecting Indian agencies appears to be a survival of the period of military control. By Act of July 15, 1870, c. 104, sec. 1, 27 Stat. 120, Act of July 1, 1898, c. 245, sec. 1, 30 Stat. 571, 771, it is § 2002, 26 U. S. C. 27.

The President may detail officers of the United States Army to act as Indian agents at such places as in the opinion of the President may, in the presence of any Army officer and without the consent of the Secretary of the Interior.

(From 26 U. S. C. 27)

<sup>12</sup> Administration of the Indian Office (Bureau of Municipal Research Publication No. 65) (1915), p. 13. Schmeckeburn *op cit.* pp. 50-51.

In 1867 a commission appointed by Congress (Pub. Res. of March 3, 1867, 1 Stat. 872) to inquire into civil and military authority over Indians reported:

"... The question whether the Indian bureau should be placed under the War Department or retained in the Department of the Interior is one of considerable importance, and both sides have very warm advocates." (P. 6)

(Sen. Rept. No. 108 49th Cong. 2d sess. pp. 3-8)

Commissioners of Indian Affairs during his report of 1869 gave 11 reasons for his vigorous opposition to the transfer. He held, among other things, that the proposed Indian policy was practical, but unstable was inimical to peaceful war.

"... I cannot for the life of me perceive the propriety or the efficiency of employing the military instead of the civil departments unless it is intended to adopt the Albigensian motto and proclaim to these people 'Death or the Koran'." (P. 10)

On January 7, 1868, the Peace Commissioner (appointed by Act of July 20, 1867, 15 Stat. 171) recommended that "... Indian Affairs be committed to an independent bureau or department." (Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff. 1868, p. 48). However, at the end of the same year (October 9, 1868) in a supplementary report to the President it stated:

"... In the opinion of this commission the Bureau of Indian Affairs should be transferred from the Department of the Interior to the Department of War."

(Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff. 1868, p. 872)

<sup>13</sup> Administration of the Indian Office (Bureau of Municipal Research Publication No. 65) (1915), p. 18.

Excerpts from official reports reveal this conflict. E. g., Commissioner Manypenny in his report for 1874 states:

"Occasions frequently arise in my intercourse with the Indians requiring the employment of force." "... The Indian Bureau would be relieved from embarrassment and rendered more efficient, if in such cases, the Department had the direct control of the means necessary to execute its own orders." (P. 27)

In Secretary of Interior Harlan's introduction to the Report of the Commissions of Indian Affairs for 1895, he stated that:

"On taking charge of the Department on the 15th day of May last, the relations of officers respectively engaged in the military and civil departments in the Indian country were in an unsatisfactory condition. A singular conflict of jurisdiction and a want of confidence in each other led to mutual animosities whereby the success of military operations against hostile tribes and the execution of the policy of this department were seriously impeded. Upon conferring with the War Department it was informally agreed that the agents and officers under the control of the Secretary of the Interior should hold no intercourse, except through the military authorities, with tribes of Indians against whom hostile measures were in progress, and that the military authorities

"In 1869," to correct mismanagement in the purchase and handling of Indian supplies, the Board of Indian Commissioners was created, to be appointed by, and report to, the President. It was composed of not more than 10 men eminent for intelligence and philanthropy, to serve without pecuniary compensation, and to exercise joint control with the Secretary of the Interior over the appropriations in that act. By Act of July 15, 1870,<sup>14</sup> the Board was empowered "... to supervise all expenditures of money appropriated for the benefit of Indians ... and to inspect all goods purchased for and sold to Indians ...". Although the Board was entirely independent of the Bureau of Indian Affairs, it studied and advised on important questions of Indian policy.<sup>15</sup>

This Board was abolished by Executive Order 0145, May 25, 1913,<sup>16</sup> which provided that if the Board's affairs be wound up by the Secretary of the Interior, and that its records, property, and personnel be transferred to, or remain under, his supervision.

By title 7, section 483, of the United States Code,<sup>17</sup> the Secretary of the Interior now has supervision over "... all public business relating to ... 'The Indians,' and by title 25, section 2, of the United States Code,<sup>18</sup> the Commissioner of Indian Affairs over "... the management of all Indian affairs and of all matters arising out of Indian relations ...". Under the direction of the Secretary of the Interior and according to regulations prescribed by the President.

## C LIST OF COMMISSIONERS

Prior to 1832, the Secretary of War was chief officer in charge of Indian matters. From 1806 to 1822 he had the advice of the Superintendent of Indian Trade, and from 1824 to 1832 of the successive heads of the new Bureau of Indian Affairs—Thomas L. McKimney (1824-30), Samuel S. Limlinton (1830-31), Elliot Herring (1831-33). Herring became first Commissioner of Indian Affairs in 1832.<sup>19</sup>

In the 1808 years following the establishment of the office of Commissioner of Indian Affairs, that post has been held by some 32 individuals representing a wide range of variation in their outlook upon the responsibilities and opportunities of that office. These individuals have set forth in the Commissioners' Annual Reports<sup>20</sup> and in unofficial writings<sup>21</sup> their views on the Indian question, and these expressions are in many ways the most useful guides to the variations of Government Indian policy.

In tracing prevailing policies for a particular period, the following list<sup>22</sup> of Commissioners of Indian Affairs, with the Secretaries and Presidents under whom they served, may prove useful.

"should refrain from interference with such agents and officers in their relations with all other tribes, except to afford the necessary aid for the enforcement of the regulations of this department." (P. 14)

<sup>14</sup> R. S. c. 209, 23 U. S. C. 21, derived from Act of April 10, 1860, 10 Stat. 13, 40, and Act of July 15, 1870, sec. 8, 10 Stat. 385, 860. See *Reyn v. United States*, 8 C. C. 305 (1872).

<sup>15</sup> 10 Stat. 385, 360.

<sup>16</sup> Schmeckeburn, *op cit.* p. 37.

<sup>17</sup> See 25 U. S. C. 21.

<sup>18</sup> R. S. c. 431, derived from Act of March 8, 1849, c. 108, 9 Stat. 898.  
<sup>19</sup> R. S. c. 161, derived from Act of July 9, 1822, c. 174, sec. 1, 4 Stat. 564 and Act of July 27, 1868, c. 236, sec. 1, 15 Stat. 229.

<sup>20</sup> Schmeckeburn, *op cit.* pp. 26-27; Kinney, *op cit.* p. 102.

<sup>21</sup> The heads of the Bureau of Indian Affairs also reported annually to the Secretary of War from 1824 to 1832.

<sup>22</sup> Walker, *The Indian Question* (1874); Manypenny, *Our Indian Waids* (1880); Leupp, *The Indian and His Problem* (1910).

<sup>23</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1882, pp. 1-2.

Commissioners of Indian Affairs

Commissioner	Date	Secretary	President
Burrage, Thos. J.	July 10, 1849	Com. I	Ferguson
Blair, Carey J.	July 11, 1849	Com. I and Pennington	Do
(succeeded J. Harris)	Oct. 22, 1850	Pennington, to Blair	Van Buren
McClintock, William	Oct. 29, 1850	McClintock and Pennington	Polk
Brown, George	Nov. 11, 1850	Pennington	Taylor
Leake, Lolo	July 1, 1850	Going to Miami	Do and Fill
Mann, J. M., George W.	April 24, 1850	McClelland and Pennington	Pierce
Jackson, James W.	April 17, 1857	Thompson	Buchanan
Min, Charles K.	June 11, 1858	Do	Do
Pease, James V.	Nov. 1859	Do	Do
(succeeded Allen B. Hall)	May 4, 1860	Do	Do
Allen, William H.	May 1, 1860	Smith to Taylor	Lincoln
Conk, Henry M.	Nov. 10, 1860	Hall and Downing	Johnson
Doak, F. V.	Nov. 1, 1860	Downing	Do
Taylor, Nathaniel C.	May 20, 1867	Downing and Cox	Grant
Walker, J. S.	May 21, 1869	Cox and Leake	Do

<sup>1</sup> See laws of the U. S.

<sup>2</sup> Laws and all following, Secretary of the Interior

Commissioners of Indian Affairs—Continued

Commissioner	Date	Secretary	President
Walker, Francis A.	Nov. 20, 1871	Delano	Do
Smith, John Q.	Dec. 20, 1871	Delano and Chandler	Do
Myer, John T.	Dec. 11, 1871	Chandler and Schuyler	Do
Trumbull, B. E.	Sept. 27, 1877	Schuyler	Grant
Price, H. W.	Mar. 15, 1880	Do	Do
Adams, John D. C.	Mar. 15, 1881	Do	Do
Oliver, John H.	Mar. 21, 1883	Do	Do
Brown, D. M.	Oct. 10, 1883	Do	Do
Moore, J. B.	June 10, 1884	Do	Do
Boyd, J. M.	Apr. 17, 1891	Do	Do
Leach, J. M.	May 2, 1891	Do	Do
Leach, J. M.	Dec. 7, 1901	Do	Do
Valentine, Robert G.	June 16, 1900	Do	Do
Chick, John	June 2, 1913	Do	Do
Harris, Charles H.	Apr. 1, 1913	Do	Do
Hamlin, Charles F.	July 1, 1920	Do	Do
Cohen, John	Apr. 24, 1931	Do	Do

## SECTION 2 THE DEVELOPMENT OF INDIAN SERVICE POLICIES

The history of Indian Service policies is the story of the rise and decline of a system of paternalism for which it is difficult to find a parallel in American history. The Indian Service begins as a diploma for service in holding negotiations between the United States and the Indian nations and tribes, characterized by Chief Justice Marshall as "domestic dependent nations."<sup>1</sup> By a process of gradual and gradualism, on the one hand, and voluntary surrenders of tribal powers, on the other, the Indian Service reached the point where nearly every aspect of Indian life was subject to the almost uncontrolled discretion of the United States. In recent years there has been a marked reversal of these tendencies.

The reports of various Commissioners of Indian Affairs give the most genuine chronological insight into changing administrative policies.

### A THE PERIOD FROM 1825 TO 1850

In 1825 Thomas L. McKenney, as head of the new Bureau of Indian Affairs,<sup>2</sup> in his first brief report<sup>3</sup> to the Secretary of War, wrote, regarding those Indians whose titles to land had been extinguished and who had elected to remove, that it was " \* \* \* the policy of the Government to guarantee to them lasting and undisturbed possession" of their new land beyond the boundaries of Missouri and Arkansas.

The extent to which this policy was carried into effect is elsewhere discussed.<sup>4</sup>

In his lengthiest report for 1826,<sup>5</sup> McKenney, in urging increased appropriations for the support of Indian schools,<sup>6</sup> was firmly convinced of—

" \* \* \* the vast benefits which the Indian children are deriving from these establishments, and which go further, in my opinion, towards securing our borders from bloodshed, and keeping the peace among the Indians themselves, and attaching them to us, than would the physical force of our Army, if employed exclusively towards the accomplishment of those objects."

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 8.

<sup>2</sup> A discussion of the subjects of Indian administrative power will be found in Chapters 5, 8, 11, 12, 15, 16, 17.

<sup>3</sup> The head of the Bureau of Indian Affairs was not designated Commissioner until 1832.

<sup>4</sup> Annual Report for 1825, Office of Indian Affairs, p. 91.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 428 and Chapter 15, sec. 5, 21.

<sup>6</sup> Annual Report for 1826, Office of Indian Affairs, p. 508.

<sup>7</sup> In the years immediately following, reports devote a section to the increase in school attendance as an indication of civilization.

<sup>8</sup> Annual Report for 1826, Office of Indian Affairs, p. 508. Compare this early attitude regarding the use of the military, with that expressed by Commissioner Walker in 1872, infra.

McKenney only later saw the problem of the returned student, and recommended that—

" \* \* \* as these youths are qualified to enter upon a course of civilized life, sections of land be given to them, and a suitable present to commence with, or to supplement the other implements suited to the occupations, in which they may be disposed, respectively, to engage. They will then have become an intermediate link between our own citizens, and our wandering neighbors, softening the shades of each, and enjoying the confidence of both."

Samuel S. Hamilton, in his only report<sup>7</sup> as head of the Bureau of Indian Affairs, recommended in 1830 that with " \* \* \* the increase of our population, and the consequent extension of our settlements, \* \* \* the act to regulate trade and intercourse with the Indian tribes, passed in 1802, be revised, and the line setting the Indian boundary by that act be redrafted. This recommendation, repeated in 1831, was finally acted upon in the Intercourse Act of 1834.<sup>8</sup>

Elbert Herring who headed the Bureau of Indian Affairs for 1 year, and subsequently became its first Commissioner, recommended the Government's recent policy of removal as the only means of checking the complete disintegration of the Indian tribes.

" \* \* \* tribes, numerous and powerful have disappeared from among us in a ratio of decrease, ominous to the existence of those that still remain, unless counteracted by the substitution of some principle sufficiently potent to check the tendencies to decay and dissolution. This salutary principle exists in the system of removal, of change of residence, of settlement in territories exclusively their own, and under the protection of the United States, connected with the benign influences of education and instruction in agriculture and the several mechanic arts, whereby social is distinguished from savage life."

In his report for 1832 as Commissioner of Indian Affairs, Herring again commends the policy of removal in favored terms.

" \* \* \* In the consummation of this grand and sacred object rests the sole chance of averting Indian annihilation. Founded in pure and disinterested motives, may it meet the approval of heaven, by the complete attainment of its beneficent ends!"

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 508.

<sup>2</sup> Annual Report for 1830, Superintendent of Indian Affairs, p. 108.

<sup>3</sup> Act of June 30, 1834, § 12. See sec. 14, and §§ 14 and 15, supra, and Chapter 14, sec. 8.

<sup>4</sup> Annual Report for 1831, Indian Bureau, p. 172.

<sup>5</sup> Annual Report for 1832, Office of Indian Affairs, p. 160.

In this report appears the first mention of vaccination as a health measure for the benefit of the Indians, and the employment of physicians by the Bureau.

In 1833 appears the first mention in Commissioners' reports of the need "among Indian tribes for

something, however simple in the shape of a code of laws, suited to their wants,"<sup>1</sup> discussed and submitted for their adoption, to obviate the inconveniences, and secure the benefits, incident thereto, in the relations that are springing up under the fostering care of the Government.

Tacksonian policy<sup>2</sup> was reflected in the increasing emphasis in commissioners' reports on the use of the military to effect what began as voluntary removal. In his report for 1851, apropos of the future of the Cherokee to date to sign a treaty of removal, Commissioner Hixson wrote

"Should occasion call for it, the military will be ordered out for the protection of those who decide on emigration, and of the emigrating officers of Government engaged in this arduous and responsible service."

In 1835 he wrote

"There has been no intermission of exertion to induce the removal of the Cherokee to the west of the Mississippi, in conformity with the policy adopted by the Government."

In 1846 the new Commissioner of Indian Affairs, Oliver A. Harris, wrote

"The removal of the Creek Indians, like that of the Seminoles, was made a military operation on the commission by them of hostile acts."

T. H. C. Crawford, in his first report as Commissioner of Indian Affairs for 1838,<sup>3</sup> apropos of removal, states that for the most part it has been peaceful, including that of the Cherokees. However, the "indisposition" of the Potawatomes, "to comply with their engagements" caused the agent

on the application of the white settlers, to call upon the Governor of Indiana for a military force to repress any outbreak that might occur. The Governor authorized General John Tipton to accept the services of one hundred volunteers, who raised them, and used their services in the collection and removal of the Potawatomes.<sup>4</sup>

Commissioner Crawford urged that some evidence of title to lands granted to them in the West be given Indians on removal.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.* p. 182. For a discussion of federal health services, see Chapter 12, sec. 8.

<sup>2</sup> *Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1888, p. 186. Some of the tribes, notably the Five Civilized Tribes, never adopted their own code of laws. In 1889, Commissioner Pison tells of the preparation and submission by the Potawatomes of their own code of laws to the department for approval (*Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1882, p. VIff).

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter 3, sec. 410. Commenting on the situation that arose with the election of President Jackson, Schmeckebner writes

"The election of Jackson to the Presidency in 1828 resulted in a definite change in the Indian policy in regard to removal. Both Monroe and Adams had adopted the policy of voluntary emigration, but Jackson was determined to use force if necessary. A mere landing of the guns and the threat would induce no definite change; but when the method of obtaining the treaties is taken into consideration it is easy to see that the government was determined to use any possible necessity to accomplish its ends."

(Schmeckebner, op. cit., p. 88)

<sup>4</sup> *Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1884, p. 248

<sup>5</sup> *Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1885, p. 262

<sup>6</sup> *Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1886, p. 308

<sup>7</sup> *Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1886

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 418

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 414

In the field of education he reports

"The principal level by which Indians are to be lifted out of the muck of folly and vice in which they are sunk, is education. To teach a savage man to read, while he continues a savage in all else, is to throw seed on a rock. Manual labor schools are what the Indian condition calls for."

The educational policy of civilizing the Indians through manual training in agriculture and the mechanic arts became the accepted policy of the Indian office.<sup>10</sup>

"The problem of the Indian field agent who becomes too closely identified with a particular tribe attracted concern. "Is there not some hazard of his becoming attached to their particular interests?" "By transferring them from one position to another," Commissioner Crawford wrote, "as frequently as may be required proper, they will be cut off from the strong enlistment of their feelings."

Vaccination for smallpox during an epidemic and medical services supplied by the Bureau of Indian Affairs are again mentioned.<sup>11</sup>

Commissioner Crawford like Commissioner Hixson,<sup>12</sup> recommended a code of laws for the government of the Western tribes, but added "this, as it seems to me, indispensable step to their advancement in civilization cannot be taken without their own consent."

Like many commissioners before and after him, Commissioner Crawford felt that the policy of allotment was the only proper policy for the Government to pursue. "Common property and civilization cannot coexist."

Of a proposed plan, for a confederation of Indian tribes west of the Mississippi, he held that "practical considerations would seem to require that they should be kept distinct from each other."

For the next few years, commissioners report "progress" in removal, treaty making and education in the manual arts. They begin to include "accompanying documents" prepared by field personnel.

Commissioner Medill in his report for 1847 told of the need for a "statistical account of the various tribes, including a digest of their industrial means, peculiar habits, resources, and employments of every kind," which would "materially aid the Department in suggesting the most suitable means for their improvement." This need was reiterated and various attempts were made to fill it.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 420-421. Many later treaties contained a specific provision for the establishment of manual labor schools.

<sup>11</sup> See Chapter 12, sec. 2.

<sup>12</sup> *Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1888, p. 422

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>14</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 424. Commissioner Crawford states that in the northwest alone, at least 25,000 deaths occurred. Three thousand persons were vaccinated in the Columbia River region.

<sup>15</sup> See *supra*, and *Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1888, p. 186

<sup>16</sup> *Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1838, p. 424

<sup>17</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 425. See Chapter 11, sec. 1.

<sup>18</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 420

<sup>19</sup> *Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1847, pp. 747-748

<sup>20</sup> *J. of Act.* of June 27, 1846 § 20, 84, provided for a survey, but failed to provide the necessary means to execute it. Act of March 4, 1847, sec. 8, § 20, 204, likewise provided for a census to illustrate "the history, the present condition, and future prospects of the Indian tribes of the United States." At the time of Commissioner Medill's report, results were being returned by agents and subagents "of most interesting and satisfactory character" (*Rep Comm Ind Aff.*, 1847, p. 748). Some 12 years later, in 1859, Secretary of the Interior Thompson wrote

"The statistical information in the possession of the Indian office is too meager and vague to enable us to determine with



The role that was played by missionary groups through their teachers and schools was clearly stated by Commissioner Medill:

In every system which has been adopted for promoting the cause of education among the Indians, the Department has found its most efficient and faithful auxiliaries and laborers in the societies of the several Christian denominations.

Commissioner Orlando Brown, in addition to various reports on the status of removal, including a full report on the proposed removal of the Seminoles to be conducted by the military, also made recommendations for various changes in policy. That (1) "in all treaties hereafter to be made with the Indians, the policy of giving lands, farming utensils, provisions, etc., in lieu of money, be insisted on \* \* \* as far as practicable, that (2) Congress take steps for the ultimate participation in the national legislation of those Indians qualified or soon to be so,"<sup>1</sup> that (3) that be made various changes in personnel: the number of superintendents be increased from 5 to 7,<sup>2</sup> the duties of agent and superintendent and superintendent and governor of a Territory be separated,<sup>3</sup> the position of subagent (\$750 per annum, with duties often equal to those of agent) be abolished,<sup>4</sup> and that of runner, with a salary lower than that of agent (\$1,000 per annum) while the responsibilities and Indians are few, be established.<sup>5</sup>

#### B THE PERIOD FROM 1851 TO 1867

The question of the status of the Indian, and the technique by which he might be civilized, had not been answered satisfactorily in 1851 when Commissioner Lake wrote:

On the general subject of the civilization of the Indians, many and diversified opinions have been put forth, but, unfortunately like the race to which they relate, they are too wild to be of much utility. The great question, How shall the Indians be civilized yet remain without a satisfactory answer. The magnitude of the subject, and the manifold difficulties inseparably connected with it seem to have bewildered the minds of those who have attempted to give it the most thorough investigation \* \* \* I therefore leave the subject for the present remaining, only, in my plan for the civilization of our Indians will, in my judgment, be fatally defective, if it do not provide, in the most efficient manner, first, for their concentration, secondly, for their domestication, and, thirdly, for their ultimate incorporation into the great body of our citizen population.<sup>6</sup>

Commissioner Leav's recommendation that the Indians be concentrated was effectuated through the gradual diminution of the size of most Indian reservations. The plan for domestication had appeared in earlier reports and was, in fact, the accepted practice of the Bureau of Indian Affairs at that time. The recommendation that Indians be ultimately incorporated into the citizenry of the country may mark a new departure from the theory and practice of removal and segregation. It apparently bore fruit in the Allotment Act,<sup>7</sup> with its provisions for citizenship and fee simple tenure of land.

between the ratio of increase or decrease among the aboriginal population.  
(Bureau, Report of Secretary of the Interior, 1869, p. 4, in Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1870.)

<sup>1</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1847, p. 749

<sup>2</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1849, pp. 939-941

<sup>3</sup> Ibid, p. 958

<sup>4</sup> Ibid, p. 958

<sup>5</sup> Ibid, pp. 952-953

<sup>6</sup> Ibid, pp. 954, 955

<sup>7</sup> This would circumvent the limitation to 11, of full agents authorized by law (Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1840, pp. 934, 935)

<sup>8</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1851, pp. 12-13

<sup>9</sup> Act of February 8, 1867, 21 Stat. 388. See Chapter 11

In 1853, Commissioner Manypenny objected to the practice of permitting Indian tribes, established in the State of western migration, to retain portions of their tribal domains as reservations.

With but few exceptions, the Indians were opposed to selling any part of their lands, as announced in their replies to the speeches of the commissioners. Finally, however, many tribes expressed their willingness to sell, but on the condition that they could retain tribal reservations on their present tracts of land. The idea of retaining reservations, which seemed to be generally entertained, is not deemed to be consistent with their interests, and every good influence ought to be exercised to enlighten them on the subject. If they dispose of their lands, no reservations should, if it can be avoided, be granted or allowed. There are some Indians in various tribes who, in occupying tracts, cannot be civilized, and who are in such an advanced state of civilization that if they desired to remain, the privilege might well, and ought perhaps to be granted, and their lands in which are reserved for them homes. Such Indians would be qualified to enjoy the privileges of citizenship. But to make reservations for an entire tribe on the tract which it now owns, would, it is believed be injurious to the future peace, prosperity, and advancement of the people. The commissioners, as far as they could, endeavored to enlighten them on this point, and labored to convince them that it was not consistent with the true interest of themselves and their posterity that they should have tribal reservations within their present limits.<sup>8</sup>

Commissioner Manypenny further urged the revision of the Intercourse Act of 1834<sup>9</sup> and the regulations promulgated thereunder, to meet changing conditions in Indian relations.

\* \* \* A new code of regulations is acutely needed for this branch of the public service. That now in force was adopted many years since, and, in many particulars, has become obsolete or incompatible, especially in our new and distant territories. The regulations now existing are based upon laws in force respecting Indian affairs, and the President has authority, under the act of June 30, 1834,<sup>10</sup> providing for the organization of the department of Indian Affairs, to prescribe such rules as he may think fit for carrying into effect its provisions.<sup>11</sup>

This plea is repeated by succeeding commissioners.

In his second annual report,<sup>12</sup> Commissioner Manypenny forewarns a crisis in the whole removal policy, and urged its abandonment in favor of fixed and permanent settlements "in order not to be disturbed."

\* \* \* By allotment by patent and force, some of these tribes [in Kansas territory] have been removed, step by step, from mountain to valley, and from river to plain, until they have been pushed half way across the continent. They can go no further, on the ground they now occupy the crisis must be met, and their future determined.<sup>13</sup>

The wonderful growth of our distant possessions, and the rapid expansion of our population in every direction, will render it necessary, at no distant day, to restrict the limits of all the Indian tribes upon our frontiers, and cause them to be settled in fixed and permanent localities, thereafter not to be disturbed. The policy of leaving Indian tribes from time to time, as the settlements approach their habitations and hunting-grounds, must be abandoned. The migrants and settlers were formerly content to remain in the rear, and thrust the Indians before them into the wilderness, but now the white population overlaps the reservations and homes of the Indians, and is beginning

<sup>8</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1853, p. 249

<sup>9</sup> Ibid, p. 250. See Commissioner Denver's report (1857), *infra*, of Indians being permitted to settle upon tribal land.

<sup>10</sup> Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 729

<sup>11</sup> Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 728

<sup>12</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1853, pp. 261-262

<sup>13</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1854

<sup>14</sup> Ibid, p. 10

to inhabit the valleys and the mountains beyond, hence removal must cease, and the policy abandoned.

To protect Indian funds from fraud, Commissioner Manypenny recommended that—

"All executive contracts of every kind and description, made by Indian tribes or bands, with claim agents, attorneys, traders, or other persons, should be declared by law null and void, and an agent, interpreter, or other person, employed in or in any way connected with the Indian service, guilty of participation in transactions of the kind referred to, should be instantly dismissed and expelled from the Indian country, and all such attempts to injure and defraud the Indians, by whosoever made or participated in, should be penal offences punishable by fine and imprisonment. We have now paid laws to protect the Indians in the secure and unmolested possession of their lands, and also from domination by the introduction of liquor into their country, and the obligation is equally strong to protect them in a similar manner from the wiles and intrigues of such attempts to obtain possession of their funds."

Secretary of the Interior McClelland in 1874, paraphrases the obligations, reiterates

"The duty of the government is clear, and to force to the Indians requires that it should be faithfully discharged. Experience shows that much is gained by steadily observing our pledged faith with the Indian tribes, and every principle of justice and humanity prompts to a strict performance of our obligations."

Commissioner Denver, in 1877,<sup>121</sup> tells of the successful extinguishing of title to all lands owned by Indians west of Missouri and Iowa "except such portions as were reserved for their future homes."

Of Indians who have removed to

"large reservations of fertile and desirable land, entirely disproportionate to their wants for occupancy and support. Their reservations should be restricted so as to contain only sufficient land to afford them a comfortable support by actual cultivation, and should be properly divided and assigned to them, with the obligation to remain upon and cultivate the same."

Commissioner Denver urged discontinuance of the practice of distributing funds due to tribes in per capita payments to individual members. This practice, he thought, tended to break down the authority of the chiefs, and thus

"disorganizes and leaves them without a domestic government." The distribution of the money should be left to the chiefs, so far at least as to enable them to punish the lawless and unwise by withholding it from them.

Commissioner Denver tells of the attempt by the Government to suppress the practice in California of kidnapping Indian children and selling them for servants.

<sup>121</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 17.

<sup>122</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 21-22. See also extract from Report of Secretary of Interior, 1882, p. 13, in *Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1882.

All contracts with them should be prohibited and all promises or obligations made by them should be declared void. Legislation along the lines urged was enacted in 1871. See Chapter 14, sec. 6.

<sup>123</sup> Extract from Annual Report of the Secretary of Interior, 1874, p. 41, in *Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1874.

<sup>124</sup> *Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1877.

<sup>125</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 8. See Commissioner Manypenny's Report for 1868, supra, pp. 249, 250 for opposition to such a policy.

<sup>126</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 4.

<sup>127</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 7.

<sup>128</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 10.

He concludes his report with a plea for a reconciliation of Indian law

"I urgently repeat the recommendation of my immediate predecessor, that there be an early and complete revision and codification of all the laws relating to Indian affairs, which, from lapse of time and material changes in the location, condition, and circumstances of the most of the tribes, have become so insufficient and unsuitable as to obstruct the greatest embarrassment and difficulty in conducting the business of this branch of the public service."

In 1868, Commissioner Mix estimated the number of Indians to be about 350,000,<sup>129</sup> approximately the same number as it is estimated exists today.<sup>130</sup> He further estimated that about 308 treaties had been signed since the adoption of the Constitution, and that approximately 581,164,158 acres had been acquired through cession at a cost of \$49,816,344.<sup>131</sup>

The principle upon which treaty making with the Indians for land cessions rested was thus stated

"that the Indian tribes possessed the occupancy or usufruct right to the lands they occupied, and that they were entitled to the peaceful enjoyment of that right until they were finally and justly divided or it."

However, that principle was apparently not adhered to in the Territories of Oregon and Washington.

"Strong inducements were held out to our people to migrate and settle there, without the usual arrangements being made, in advance, for the extinguishment of the title of the Indians who occupied and claimed the lands."

According to Commissioner Mix, just Government policy had been shown in at least three respects: (1) Removal from places to places prevented the acquiring of "settled habits and knowledge of and taste for civilized pursuits"; (2) assignment of too large a country to be held in common resulted in improper use and failure to acquire "a knowledge of separate and individual property"; (3) annuities resulted in idleness among Indians and fraudulent practices by whites.

The policy of concentrating the Indians on small reservations of land, and of sustaining them there for a limited period, until they can be induced to make the necessary exertions to support themselves, was commenced in 1873, with those in California. It is, in fact, the only course compatible with the obligations of justice and humanity.

The military appears to have been used in the vicinity of reservations "to prevent the intrusion of improper persons upon them [the Indians], to afford protection to the agents, and to aid in controlling the Indians and keeping them within the limits assigned to them."

In 1860, Secretary of the Interior Thompson reports progress in the shift of Government policy from that of removal to that of fixed reservations.<sup>132</sup>

<sup>129</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 12.

<sup>130</sup> *Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1888, p. 1.

<sup>131</sup> See Chapter 1, sec. 2, fn. 4.

<sup>132</sup> *Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1868, p. 1.

<sup>133</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 6.

<sup>134</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 7.

<sup>135</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 7. He notes the difference in development between the northern tribes and those of the South who were permitted to remain for long periods in their original locations (pp. 6-7).

<sup>136</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 6.

<sup>137</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 6.

<sup>138</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 10.

<sup>139</sup> See Commissioner Manypenny's recommendation for such a shift in 1864, supra.

The policy heretofore adopted of removing the Indians from time to time, as the necessities of our frontier population demanded a cession of their territory, the usual consideration for which was a large money annuity to be divided among them *per capita* had a deleterious effect upon their morals, and continued them in their savage habits. This policy, we are now compelled by the necessity of the case to change. At present, the policy of the government is to gather the Indians upon small tribal reservations, within the well defined territorial boundaries of which small tracts of land are assigned, in severalty, to the individual members of the tribe with all the rights incident to its estate in fee simple, except the power of alienation. This system, wherever it has been tried has worked well, and the reports of the superintendents and agents give a most gratifying account of the great improvement which it has effected in the character and habits of those tribes which have been brought under its operation.<sup>1</sup>

After B. Greenwood, Commissioner of Indian Affairs, under Secretary Thompson,<sup>2</sup> recommended that the reservation policy, as it had been pursued in California, be abandoned.

"Neither the Government nor California receives any right in the Indians of that State to one foot of land within her borders. An unnecessary number of reservations and separate tracts have been established, the locations of many of them have proved to be unsuitable, and have not been sufficiently isolated."

Under these circumstances, and being desirous to initiate a policy for California which will secure our own citizens from annoyance, and at the same time, save the Indians from the speedy extinction with which they are threatened, I feel constrained to recommend the repeal of all laws authorizing the appointment of superintendents, agents, and sub-agents for California, and the abandonment of the present, and the substitution of a somewhat different plan of operations. . . . The State should be divided into two districts, and an agent appointed for each.<sup>3</sup>

The agents should give the Indians in their respective districts to understand that they are not to be fed and clothed at government expense, but that they must supply all their wants by means of their own labor.<sup>4</sup>

Should Congress authorize a change in the present system, and new reservations be established, great care should be taken so as to isolate the Indians from contact with the whites. Fertile lands should be selected which will repay the efforts to cultivate them.<sup>5</sup>

During the Civil War period, when defections from the Federal Government occurred and tribes were concluding treaties with the Confederate Government,<sup>6</sup> the movement to terminate the practice of dealing with Indian tribes by treaty and to deal with them instead as objects of national charity, lacking legal rights, gained momentum.

Secretary of the Interior Caleb B. Smith clearly stated the new policy:

It may well be questioned whether the government has not adopted a mistaken policy in regarding the Indian tribes as quasi-independent nations, and making treaties with them for the purchase of the lands they claim to own. They have none of the elements of nationality, they are within the limits of the recognized authority of the United States and must be subject to its control. The rapid progress of civilization upon this continent will not permit the lands which are required for cultivation to be surrendered to savage tribes for hunting grounds. In

deed, whatever may be the theory, the government has already demanded the removal of the Indians when their lands were required for agricultural purposes by advancing settlements. Although the consent of the Indians has been obtained in the form of treaties, it is well known that they have yielded to a necessity which they could not resist.<sup>7</sup>

A radical change in the mode of treatment of the Indians should, in my judgment, be adopted. Instead of being treated as independent nations they should be regarded as wards of the government, entitled to its fostering care and protection. Suitable districts of country should be assigned to them for their homes, and the government should supply them, through its own agents, with such articles as they are, until they can be instructed to earn their subsistence by their labor.<sup>8</sup>

Under the Lincoln administration, Commissioner Dole concurred himself with the legal disadvantage under which Indians labored, in the conflict between state and federal jurisdiction.<sup>9</sup>

They find themselves amenable to a system of local and federal laws, as well as their treaty stipulations, all of which are to the vast majority of them wholly unattainable. If a white man does them an injury, redress is often before them. If, on the other hand, as only had after death, and redress is only after themselves cruel injustice. If one of their number commits a crime, punishment is slow and swift, and oftentimes is visited upon the whole tribe.<sup>10</sup>

Better cooperation between the Federal Government and the states was recommended, with state legislation leading to national citizenship the goal to be pursued.

Very much of the evil attendant upon the location of Indians within the limits of States might be obviated, if some plan could be devised whereby a more hearty cooperation with government on the part of the States might be secured. It being a demonstrable fact that Indians are capable of attaining a high degree of civilization, it follows that the time will arrive, as in the case of some of the tribes, it has doubtless now arrived, when the peculiar relations existing between them and the federal government in its case, without detriment to their interests or those of the community or State in which they are located, in other words, that the time will come when, in justice to them and to ourselves, their relations to the federal government should be identical with those of the citizens of the various States. In this view, a more generous legislation on the part of most of the States within whose limits Indians are located, looking to a gradual removal of the disabilities under which they labor, and their ultimate admission to all the rights of citizenship, as from time to time the improvement and advancement made by a given tribe may warrant, is earnestly to be desired, and would, I doubt not, prove a powerful incentive to exertion on the part of the Indians themselves.<sup>11</sup>

At the end of the Civil War, Secretary of the Interior Hallan reported the terms of a negotiated peace with those Indians who had joined forces with Confederate soldiers.<sup>12</sup>

Such preliminary arrangements were made as, it is believed, will result in the abolition of slavery among them, the cession within the Indian territory of lands for the settlement of the civilized Indians now residing on reservations elsewhere, and the ultimate establishment of civil government, subject to the supervision of the United States.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Extract from Report of the Secretary of the Interior, 1860, pp. 4-5 in Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1860

<sup>2</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1869

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 22

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 28

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 24

<sup>6</sup> See Chapter 9 sec 41 and Chapter 8, sec 11

<sup>7</sup> Extract from Report of the Secretary of the Interior, 1862, p. 7, in Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1862

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 9

<sup>9</sup> See Chapter 8, sec 10

<sup>10</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1862, p. 12

<sup>11</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 12

<sup>12</sup> See Chapter 8, sec 41 and Chapter 8, sec 11

<sup>13</sup> Extract from Report of the Secretary of the Interior, 1865, p. 111, in Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1865

Apparently, even at this late date the policy of complete extermination of the Indian was advocated by "gentlemen of high position, intelligence, and personal character."<sup>1</sup>

Financial considerations forbade the maintenance of such a policy.<sup>2</sup> It is estimated that the maintenance of each regiment of troops engaged against the Indians of the plains costs the government two million dollars per annum.<sup>3</sup> Such a policy is manifestly as impracticable as it is in violation of every dictate of humanity and Christian duty.<sup>4</sup>

Secretary Mallin, in making Congressional action for the necessary reforms in the administration of justice on Indian reservations, stated:

It is earnestly recommended that the superintendents, and also agents of suitable rank, be empowered to act as civil magistrates within the limits of reservations where the tribal relations are maintained, and also on the plains remote from the jurisdiction of civil authorities. The want of an acceptable and efficient provision for the administration of justice has been sensibly felt in cases arising between members of the tribes, or between Indians and the white men who have been permitted to reside among them.<sup>5</sup>

Commissioner Cooley<sup>6</sup> recommended various Indian reforms in Indian Service personnel, particularly with regard to traders and agents. To eliminate collusion between them, he urged Congress to make it a penal offense for

any agent or other official in the Indian Service to be in any manner, directly or indirectly, interested in the profits of the business of any trader, or in any contract for the purchase of goods, in any trade with the Indians, at their own or any other agency, and the same penalties to apply to the receiving of any relative to trade, or to purchasing goods or provisions for the use of the Indians of any firm in which they or any relative may be partners or in any way interested.<sup>7</sup>

In 1898, as commissioner had done before, Commissioner Cooley<sup>8</sup> urged the \$1,500 they had received since 1894,<sup>9</sup> as a means of securing more thoroughly qualified persons. Commissioner Cooley held

"The fact that immovable applicants stand ready to take any place which is vacated is not, in my judgment, an argument against an increase of pay, it is simply a proof of the commonly received idea of the outside profit of the business."<sup>10</sup>

He noted progress in the civilization of the Indians

Another evidence of progress in the right direction is the request made by several agents, on behalf of the Indians, that the kind of goods furnished to them may be changed from the blankets, bright-colored cloths, and various gewgaws, which have from time immemorial come to make up the Indian's wardrobe, to substantial garments, improved agricultural implements, etc.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, p. III.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. III, IV.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. IV. See Chapter V, sec. 9.

<sup>4</sup> *Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1885.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 2. Legislation along the lines proposed was enacted in 1874. Act of June 22, 1874, sec. 10, 18 Stat. 110, 177, 28 U. S. C. 57. This, in effect, strengthened the restrictions contained in section 14 of the Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 738, 739, 18 U. S. C. 2078, 22 U. S. C. 48. The Act of June 19, 1893, 53 Stat. 840, 26 U. S. C. 871, modified these two prohibitory statutes to permit purchases for personal use by federal employees.

<sup>6</sup> By Act of April 20, 1818, 4 Stat. 461, agents' salaries varied from \$3,000 to \$4,000, and subagents' were fixed at \$500. By Act of June 8, 1884, 4 Stat. 785, agents' salaries were fixed at \$1,000, and subagents' at \$750.

<sup>7</sup> *Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1885, pp. 3-1.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 4.

In 1867, Acting Commissioner M'Winn<sup>12</sup> summarized the obstacles to Indian civilization as lack of law, and the means to overcome them:

"The Indian has almost constant contact with the vicious, mischievous whites, who not only teach him their vice, ways, but defend and abet him, and, often without cause, with a little compulsion as they would experience in killing, I do, take even his life."<sup>13</sup>

Further

"the Indian has no certainty as to the permanent possession of the land he occupies, and which he is urged to improve, for he knows not how long he may be permitted to enjoy it."<sup>14</sup> Evidently the remedy for these evils lies in securing to the Indians a permanent home in a country exclusively set apart for them, upon which no whites or citizens, except government agents and employees, shall be permitted to reside, or intrude, in the granting to them allotment of land as individual property, to cultivate and improve, in the appointment of moral, honest, and efficient agents, with a firm compensation for services, and in the prompt fulfillment by the government of its treaty and other obligations, furnishing the necessary aid required for teaching, and placing them in the way of becoming self-sustaining, and eventually independent of the government.<sup>15</sup>

It recommended to the Secretary the repeal of section 3 of the Act of July 28, 1864,<sup>16</sup> allowing any citizen "of proper character" to trade with Indians, since the Department had no authority to limit the number, nor discretion to determine the fitness or ability of a trader.<sup>17</sup>

#### C THE PERIOD FROM 1868 TO 1878

For the next few years, as Indians largely in the process of being settled on reserved reservations, commissioners concerned themselves primarily with problems of permanent policy and administration. Should treaty making be abandoned? What was the proper role of the military? Should the Bureau of Indian Affairs be transferred back to the War Department?<sup>18</sup> How should the Indian Service be reorganized so as to overcome charges of dishonesty and inefficiency? What was the best technique for individualizing and controlling the Indian? What were the present rights and future prospects of the Indian?

Although Commissioner Pikes<sup>19</sup> in 1869 argued that treaties were "promptly and faithfully executed," nevertheless he recommended as Secretary Smith had in 1862<sup>20</sup> that the whole policy of treaty making be abandoned.

A treaty involves the idea of a compact between two or more sovereign powers, each possessing sufficient authority and force to compel compliance with the obligations incurred. The Indian tribes of the United States are not sovereign nations, capable of making treaties, as none of them have an organized government of such inherent strength as would secure a faithful obedience of its people in the observance of compacts of this character. They are held to be the wards of the government, and the only title the law concedes to them to the lands they occupy or claim is a mere possessory one. But, because treaties have been made with them, generally for the extinguishment of their supposed absolute title to land uninhabited by them, or over which they roam, they have

<sup>12</sup> *Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1867, p. 1.

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 1.

<sup>14</sup> 14 Stat. 225, 280, R. S. § 2128.

<sup>15</sup> *Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1867, pp. 6-9.

<sup>16</sup> See sec. 18, *supra*, for a discussion of that problem, and the recommendations of various commissioners and the Indian Peace Commission of 1867.

<sup>17</sup> See *Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1862, p. 7, and *supra*.

become falsely impressed with the notion of national independence. It is time that this idea should be dispelled, and the government to use the chief factor of this decline with its help, and soon out of way. Many good men, looking at this matter only from a Christian point of view, will perhaps say that the poor Indian has been greatly wronged and has feared that this whole country was one lot of such he has been degraded, and that he has been driven from place to place until he has hardly left him a spot where to lay his head. This indeed may be anthropologic and humane, but the fact is that the few objects of his such conclusion, and are if any way has been done by the government in including this people into the habit of their being independent sovereigns, while they were at the same time recognized only as its dependents and wards. As civilization advances, and their possessions of land are required for settlement, such legislation should be adopted to them as a wise, liberal, and just government ought to extend to subjects holding their dependent relation.

By the Act of March 3, 1871,<sup>11</sup> treaty making was withdrawn from acts, agreements, ignored by both Senate and House of Representatives, continued to be made. In 1873 Commissioner Edwin P. Smith urged that every agreement cease

" \* \* \* We live in them over sixty five independent nations within our borders with whom we have entered into treaty relations as being sovereign peoples, and at the same time the same agents are sent to control and impose these foreign powers, and are for them is words of the Government. This double condition of sovereignty and wardship involves increasing difficulties and humiliations, as the traditional chiefs, losing his hold upon his tribe, ceases to be distinguished for anything except for the hum's shine of goods and money which the Government endeavors to send through him, to his nominal subjects, and as the necessities of the Indians, put on one side by civilization, require more help and greater discrimination in the manner of distributing the tribal funds. So far, and as it is possible, all recognition of Indians in any other relation than strictly as subjects of the Government should cease. To provide for this, ideal legislation will be required."

On the use of the military, official opinion varied. Commissioner Devens (1868)<sup>12</sup> was strongly opposed, Commissioner Parker (1869)<sup>13</sup> himself a general, believed in its use, partly mainly for those Indians who failed to remove. In his 1870 report<sup>14</sup> he lamented the passage by Congress of an act<sup>15</sup> which " \* \* \* prohibited the employment of army officers in any civil capacity " \* \* \* Commissioner Francis A. Walker (also a general) in 1872<sup>16</sup> urged the use of the military to effect the "peace policy."<sup>17</sup>

" \* \* \* Such a use of the military constitutes no abridgment of the "peace policy," and involves no disparagement of it. It was not to be expected—it was not in the nature of things—that the entire body of wild Indians should submit to be restrained in their selfishness, proclivities, without a struggle on the part of the more anxious to maintain their traditional freedom."

<sup>11</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1868 p 6

<sup>12</sup> 19 Stat. 544, 556, 2 S. 4 2079, 26 U S C 71. See Chapter 3

<sup>13</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1873 p 4

<sup>14</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1870, pp 8-10

<sup>15</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1869 p 5

<sup>16</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1870, pp 8-10

<sup>17</sup> Act of July 15, 1870, 16 Stat. 819. See fn 41 supra. By Act of July 13, 1862, c 164, sec. 1, 27 Stat. 120, and Act of July 1, 1868, c 545, sec. 1, 16 Stat. 871, 678, the President was given the power to detail Army officers for duty to Indian agencies. 25 U S C 27

<sup>18</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1875

<sup>19</sup> In 1867 (Act of July 30, 1867, 15 Stat. 17) the Indian Peace Commission was authorized by Congress to study the cause and cure for Indian wars. Their recommendations in 1868 (Report of January 7, 1868 to the President in Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1868, pp 20-50) were the basis for the new "peace policy" of the Government. See discussion sec 1 supra

<sup>20</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1874, p 5

Commissioner Walker complained that his policy had been widely misunderstood and criticized by the press

" \* \* \* This misunderstood ending in regard to the occasional use of force in making effective and unprovoked the policy of peace, has led to small portion of the press of the country to treat the more vigorous application of the sword to refractory Indians which is characterized the operations of the last three months as an abandonment of the peace policy itself, whereas it is, in fact, a legitimate and essential part of the original scheme which the Government has been endeavoring to carry out, with prospects of success, never more bright and hopeful than to day."

In 1873, Commissioner Edward P. Smith urged that a military force be set up among the Sioux, notwithstanding treaty assurances to the contrary

Hitherto the military have been used from going on this reservation because of the expense of the treaty with the Sioux, in which it is agreed that no military force shall be brought on the line. I respectfully recommend that provision be made it once for placing it at the disposal of the military force sufficient to enable the agents to enforce respect for their authority, and to conduct agency affairs in an orderly manner."

After many years of charges against Indian Service field personnel of dishonesty and inefficiency,<sup>21</sup> a new system of choosing agents was inaugurated in 1880 under President Grant.<sup>22</sup> Their nomination was for the most part delegated to various religious bodies active in missionary work, particularly the Society of Friends. The remaining agencies were filled by Army officers detailed for such duty,<sup>23</sup> until the Appropriation Act of July 15, 1870,<sup>24</sup> caused them to relinquish civil posts

Commissioner Parker in 1860 and in 1870 reported the plan working well.<sup>25</sup> However, it was gradually abandoned and completely discontinued by the early eighties.<sup>26</sup>

On the question of the techniques for individualizing and controlling the Indians, commissioners differed somewhat, although all agreed basically on allotment of land in severalty as one of the major methods

" \* \* \* The policy of giving to every Indian a home that he can call his own is a wise one, as it induces a strong incentive to him to labor and make every effort in his power to better his condition. By the allotment, generally, of this plan on the part of the government, the Indians would be more rapidly advanced in civilization than they would if the policy of allowing them to hold their land in common were continued."

" \* \* \* A fundamental difference between barbarians and a civilized people is the difference between a herd and an individual. \* \* \* The starting-point of indi-

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., p 6

<sup>22</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1874 p 9

<sup>23</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1869 p 5

<sup>24</sup> 21st Annual Message to Congress, December 6 1869

<sup>25</sup> I have attempted a new policy towards these wild of the nation. \* \* \* The Society of Friends is well known for having succeeded in living in peace with the Indians in the early settlement of Pennsylvania, while their white neighbors of other sections in other sections were constantly embroiled. They are also known for their opposition to all strife, violence, and war, and are generally noted for their strict integrity and fair dealing. These considerations induced me to give the management of a few reservations of Indians to them and to throw the burden of the selection of agents upon the society itself. \* \* \* For superintendents and agents not on the reservations, officers of the Army were selected. (Richmond, Minutes and Papers of the Friends, 1867, Vol IX, pp 8762-8968)

According to Schmuckebach this policy was inaugurated by Grant to insure against opposition to his appointments by the Senate (Schmuckebach, op cit, p 54)

<sup>26</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1868, p 5

<sup>27</sup> 18 Stat. 315, 319. See fn 157, supra

<sup>28</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1869, p 1, Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1870, pp 6-10

<sup>29</sup> Schmuckebach, op cit, p 85, fn 92

<sup>30</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1870, p 9. See Chapter 11, sec 1

vidualism for an Indian is the personal possession of his portion of the reservation.<sup>11</sup>

In 1870, Commissioner Parker reported, in an indication of Indian progress, that many were willing to have their land surveyed and allotted.<sup>12</sup>

In 1872, Commissioner Walker defended the "hostile" policy which had been in effect for years:

The Indian policy, so called, of the Government, is a policy, and it is not a policy, or rather it consists of two policies, entirely distinct, seeming, indeed, to be mutually inconsistent and to reflect each upon the other. The one regarding the treatment of the tribes which are practically hostile, that is, whose hostility is only expressed just so long as, and so far as, they are supported in idleness by the Government, the other regarding the treatment of those tribes which, from traditional friendship, from numerous alliances, or by the force of their numbers, are either undisturbed toward, or incapable of resistance to the demands of the Government.<sup>13</sup>

If it is, of course, hopelessly foolish if the expenditures of the Government should be proportioned not to the good but to the ill desert of the several tribes, that such bodies of Indians should be supported in entire idleness by the bounty of the Government simply because they are undisciplined and insolent while well disposed Indians are only assisted to self-maintenance, since it is known they will not fight. . . . And yet, all this the Government is right and its policy wrong, and the 'Indian policy' is sound, sensible, and benevolent because it reduces to the minimum the loss of life and property upon our frontier, and allows the freest development of our settlements and railways possible under the circumstances.<sup>14</sup>

There is no question of national dignity, but if it is considered, involved in the treatment of natives by a civilized power. With wild men, as with wild beasts, the question whether in a given situation one shall fight, kill, or run, is a question merely of what is easiest and best.<sup>15</sup>

Commissioner Walker discussed the function of the reservation as he saw it:

\* \* \* The Indians should be made as comfortable as, and as uncomfortable as, their reservations as it was in the power of the Government to make them. That such of them as went right should be protected and fed, and such as went wrong should be harassed and scourged without intermission. . . . Such a use of the strong arm of the Government is not war, but discipline.<sup>16</sup>

\* \* \* The reservation system affords the place for thus dealing with tribes as a band, without the access of influences inimical to peace and virtue. It is only necessary that Federal laws, judiciously framed to meet all the facts of the case, and enacted in season, before the Indians begin to scatter, shall place all the members of this race under a strict reformatory control by the agents of the Government. Especially is it essential that the right of the Government to keep Indians upon the reservation assigned to them, and to arrest and return them whenever they wander away, should be placed beyond dispute. \* \* \*

The problem of the consolidation and sale of surplus land on reservations had already appeared in 1872:

The reservations granted heretofore have generally been proportioned, and rightly so, to the needs of the Indians in a roving state, with hunting and fishing as their chief means of subsistence, which condition implies the occupation of a territory far exceeding what could possibly be

cultivated. As they change to agriculture, however rude and primitive it first, they tend to contract the limits of their occupation. With proper management and management the portions thus involved are capable of division, or sale can be so thrown together as to make it impracticable the integrity of the reservation. Where this change has taken place there can be no question of the expediency of such sale or cession. The Indian Office has already found this course, and notwithstanding the somewhat questionable character of some of the resulting transactions, issuing especially out of violent or turbulent combinations to prevent a fair sale it can be confidently affirmed that the removal of the Indians has actually been subsided thereby.<sup>17</sup>

The present rights and the future prospects of the Indian appears to have concerned many commissioners. Commissioner Taylor, in 1868, asked the question:

Shall our Indians be civilized, and how?

\* \* \* Assuming that the government has a right, and that it is its duty to solve the Indian question definitely and decisively, it becomes necessary that it determine it once the best and speediest method of its solution and then, armed with right, to act in the interest of both races.

It might make right, we use the sword, and they the work, and we would do no wrong to proceed by the choicest and nearest route to the desired end, and could, therefore, justify ourselves in ignoring the moral as well as the conclusion of rights of the Indians, if they stand in the way, and, as they lawful masters, treat them then as slaves and then as slaves, or put them out of their own way and ours by extermination with the sword, starvation, or by any other method.

If, however, they have rights as well as we, then clearly it is our duty as well as sound policy to solve the question of their intimate relations to us and each other, is to secure their rights and promote their highest interest, in the simplest, easiest, and most economical way possible. But to assume they have no rights is to deny the fundamental principles of Christianity, as well as to contradict the whole theory upon which the government has uniformly acted towards them, we are therefore bound to respect their rights, and, if possible, make our interests harmonious with them. \* \* \*

Commissioner Walker, in 1872, answered the question in one way:

It belongs not to a sanguine but to a sober view of the situation, that three years will see the alternative of war eliminated from the Indian question and the most powerful and hostile bands of to day thrown in entire helplessness on the mercy of the Government. \* \* \*

No one certainly will rejoice more heartily than the present Commissioner when the Indians of this country cease to be in a position to dictate, in any form or degree, to the Government when, in fact, the law hostile tribe becomes reduced to the condition of suppliants for charity.

Commissioner John Q. Smith in 1876 answered the question in another way:

\* \* \* No new hunting-grounds remain, and the extinction of the wild destruction of the Indians is inevitable. The next twenty-five years will be to determine the fate of a race. If they cannot be taught, and taught very soon, to accept the necessities of their situation and begin in earnest to provide for their own wants by labor in civilized pursuits, they are destined to speedy extinction.<sup>18</sup>

\* \* \* We have depopulated the Indians of their rich hunting grounds, thereby depriving them of their ancient means of support. Ought we not and shall we not give them at

<sup>11</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1878, p. 4.

<sup>12</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1870, p. 9.

<sup>13</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1872, p. 8.

<sup>14</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 6.

<sup>15</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 8.

<sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 4.

<sup>17</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 11-12.

<sup>18</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 18.

<sup>19</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1908, p. 16.

<sup>20</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1872, p. 9.

<sup>21</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1876, p. VI.



to returned students, especially the young women for whom it is specially difficult to provide."

The cost of maintaining an Indian pupil in a reservation boarding school may be set down as a little over \$100 per annum, in a day school at about \$40 per annum."

In the matter of health, also, Commissioner Price had specific recommendations.

When the length of time (three or four years) which is required for the physician to qualify himself with the language, habits, and mental peculiarities of Indians is taken into consideration, and also the diplomacy which is required to obtain and maintain their confidence, it is obvious that it is especially desirable to procure efficient and if possible, plain useful medical officers of pronounced moral and temperate habits, of great will power, capable of making good and enduring impressions on the Indians. It is detrimental to the service to be continually changing medical officers.

In connection with permanent medical officers, a system should be inaugurated of caring for the blind, insane, and destitute aged Indians."

The problem of education in Indian Territory, pressing since the close of the Civil War, had not been solved by 1882.

The rights guaranteed to the freedmen in the Indian Territory by treaty stipulations have been ignored, and so far as their interests are involved the treaties themselves have been virtually set aside, both by the Indians and by the government."

In this report of January 28, 1882, Agent Trafts writes that it—

It is unpopular in the Cherokee Nation to advocate a measure that provides for placing the colored man on an equality with the Cherokees, and the politicians are civilized enough to do nothing that might lessen their chances for political success, hence until the sentiment shall undergo a revolution there will be no favorable action.

From the hesitancy heretofore shown by the nation to carry out in good faith toward the colored people simply what has been granted them by the treaty, I am convinced that the nation will not act and settle the status of the colored people until a more potent demand is made on the nation to execute the conditions of their treaty respecting them.

Many of the colored people speak the Cherokee language, and having been brought up among Cherokees and acculturated to their ways, it would be a hardship to remove them from that country, and remaining in the nation, they should be accorded all their rights. Agent Trafts recommended the appointment of a commission to visit the agency with authority to hear evidence and determine the question whether the claimants were freedmen liberated by voluntary act of owner, or by law, or whether they were free colored persons and in the country at the commencement of the rebellion, and whether they were new comers of the nation at the time of the treaty, or returned within six months thereafter—the findings of the commission to be submitted to the department for approval."

With the discovery of valuable coal deposits in an Indian reservation in Arizona Territory, arose the problem of its extraction and removal. Commissioner Price felt that the Indians could not be prevailed upon to remove among, that the Government could not undertake to work the mines, that the Indians themselves were not capable technically of doing so, and even were they, they could not dispose of the coal since

under existing law there is no authority for permitting the severance and removal from an Indian reservation, for purposes of sale or speculation, of any material attached to or forming a part of the realty, such as timber, coal, or other minerals."

Commissioner Price therefore recommended a system of leasing.

After carefully considering the questions involved, this office became convinced that the most practicable solution of the matter would be the adoption of a system of leasing upon a royalty plan, and accordingly a draft of a joint resolution was prepared in this office and submitted to the department in April 1881 with a view to securing the needed legislation thereto. It was believed that by this means a very large part of the annual expenditure for the support and care of the Indians of Arizona and New Mexico might be transferred to the government from the pocket of the miner without hardship to consumers, and that the Indians themselves would be greatly benefited, not only by the example of industry set, but through the opportunity that would be afforded them to earn wages by their own labor."

According to Commissioner Aikin's report for 1886, "the system of leasing grazing land had been tried on the Cheyenne and Arapaho Reservations unsuccessfully. By Presidential proclamation the leases were declared null and void, and the cattle and cattlemen removed, much to the satisfaction of the Indians who

no longer contemplate the monopoly of hundreds of their reservation by outsiders, but in place thereof they view with satisfaction their own fields of corn, and farms improved with fences, put up by their own labor."

The system of leasing Indian lands was further complicated by a decision of the Attorney General to the effect that—

the system of leasing Indian lands which has hitherto prevailed is illegal without the consent of Congress."

Commissioner Aikin recommended that the leasing system either be legalized, as his predecessor had recommended before him, or abolished."

If Congress would authorize Indians to dispose of their lands, or would take any definite action as to the policy which this office can legally pursue in regard to leasing Indian land, it would materially lessen the perplexities and confusion which now pertain to the subject. More over, if some way could be adopted by which, under proper restrictions, the surplus acres on the several Indian reservations could be utilized with profit to the Indians, the annual appropriations needed to care for the Indians could be correspondingly and materially reduced."

Of the general allotment bill, which had passed the Senate and was favorably reported in the House, Commissioner Aikin reported

"As there seems to be no substantial opposition to this bill, it is hoped that it will become a law during the coming winter. Its passage will relieve this office of much embarrassment and enable it to make greater progress in

<sup>100</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1882, p XXXV

<sup>101</sup> *Ibid*, p XL

<sup>102</sup> *Ibid*, p XLVII See Chapter 12, sec 8

<sup>103</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1882, p LV

<sup>104</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1882, p LVII

<sup>105</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1882, p XLIX See Chapter 15, sec 19

<sup>106</sup> *Ibid*, p XLIX

<sup>107</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1880

<sup>108</sup> See Sen Rpt Doc 17, 45th Cong, 2d sess, vol I, pt I, 1886

<sup>109</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1886, p XLIX

<sup>110</sup> *Ibid*, p XIX 15 Op A G 235 (1885)

<sup>111</sup> See Rep Comm Ind Aff (Hiram Price) 1882, p XLIX, and *supra*

<sup>112</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff, 1896, p XIX

<sup>113</sup> *Ibid*, p XIX



the important work of assisting the Indians to become in-  
dividual owners of the soil by an indefeasible title.

Of counts of Indian offenses which had been submitted at various  
sessions to the Indian Affairs Commission, Commissioner Atkins wrote:

"These counts, in the imagination of a great resistance to the Indians in the United States, of self-government and in  
perpetrating themselves for citizenship. I am of the opinion  
that it should be placed upon a legal basis by an act of  
Congress, authorized, then, and established, under such rules  
and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may pre-  
scribe. Their due and punishment could then be defi-  
nitely determined and justice goodly accomplished."

Commissioner Atkins expressed a hope with regard to Indians  
which has not yet been realized:

"But it is earnestly hoped that the necessity for white  
traders upon the reservations will soon be superseded.  
Under the law the full blood Indian is entitled the right  
to trade with the Indians of his tribe without the restric-  
tions imposed upon him at present, and white traders. It is  
the constant aim and effort of the Indian Office to make the  
Indian self-reliant and self-sustaining, and if this policy  
is pursued with the aid of the educational advantages  
available at almost every agency I cannot but believe that  
the Indians will at an early day acquire sufficient ability  
to maintain the trading posts themselves and supply their  
people with such goods as they may need."

In the report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs for 1888  
one notes the beginning of a problem which grew into major  
proportions in 1910, i. e.—the problem of the annuity roll.

In this connection I would suggest that action should  
be taken by Congress, to confine the benefits arising under  
Indian treaties to those justly entitled thereto, by excluding  
from participation therein whites, half-breeds, and mixed  
Indians by adoption, and also the descendants of whites  
and Indians beyond a certain degree."

Of the application of the Allotment Act,\* which had been in  
force for more than a year, Commissioner Obeyes reports slow  
progress, and considerable opposition:

Considerable opposition to the allotment policy has  
been developed from its sources. Those who believe in  
the wisdom of tribal ownership, and in the policy of con-  
tinuing the Indians in his aboriginal customs, habits, and  
independence, oppose it because it will eventually dissolve  
his tribal relations, and cause his absorption into the white  
people. On the other hand those who expected that the  
severalty act would immediately open to public settle-  
ment long coveted Indian lands, oppose it because they  
have learned that these expectations will not be realized.

There is a third class of persons who are hostile in  
favor of allotting Indian lands, but who are apprehensive  
that under the flexible terms of the allotment act, allot-

ments may be forced upon Indians before they are ready  
to receive, use, and hold them."

Commissioner Obeyes presents a detailed analysis of the status  
of Indian health—"the diseases prevalent among Indians, the  
scarcity of physicians, and nurses, and the need for a hospital  
at every agency."

In his report on the operation of the contract system of pur-  
chasing Indian supplies, whereby numerous contractors submit  
samples which the Government is forced to examine, he recom-  
mends that the Indian Office fix the standard sample on which  
bids are to be received, thus assuring uniformity of quality,  
saving time, and eliminating charges of favoritism.

Since Commissioner Obeyes had been United States Civil  
Service Commissioner as well as Superintendent of Indian  
Schools, he was particularly interested in incorporating school  
employees under Civil Service, to correct the "patry spoils sys-  
tem" method of appointment and dismissal.

For no matter how desirous the Commissioner of  
Indian Affairs and the Superintendent of Indian Schools  
may be to obtain good material for the service, and no  
matter how conscientiously both may endeavor to improve  
its condition, they will, so long as this system is endured,  
be obstructed in all such efforts by clamorous demands  
that the places of Indian reservations, and in the schools  
not on reservations, shall be dispensed as rewards for  
political service. In short, the Commissioner and Super-  
intendent, with 1,200 places (exclusive of Indians) at  
their disposal, can not give to the agency and the school  
competent employees until after they shall have secured  
protection from political pressure and personal solici-  
tation, and such protection can be afforded to them only  
by the provisions of the civil service act of 1883. As  
United States Civil Service Commissioner I gave to this  
subject much consideration, and I have no doubt that the  
provisions of that act could be applied to the Indian  
service, and, that by their application thereto, under  
wise rules promulgated by the President, the cause of  
Indian civilization would be advanced many years."

Commissioner Thomas J. Morgan entered upon his duties on  
July 1, 1889, and made his first report in October of that year.  
He offers, until such time as he may acquire himself

by personal observation with the practical work  
ings of the Indian field service."

First—"The numerous Indian locations occupied by  
the Indians in this country can not much longer be main-  
tained. The reservation system belongs to a 'vanishing  
state of things' and must soon cease to exist."

Second—"The logic of events demands the absorption of  
the Indians into our national life, not as Indians, but as  
Americans in citizens."

Third—"As soon as a wise conservatism will warrant it,  
the relations of the Indians to the Government must rest  
upon the full recognition of their individuality.  
Each Indian must be treated as a man, be allowed a  
man's rights and privileges, and be held to the perform-  
ance of a man's obligations. Each Indian is entitled to  
his proper share of the inherited wealth of the tribe, and  
to the protection of the courts in his 'life, liberty, and

\**Ibid.*, p. XX. In an earlier report (1885) Commissioner Atkins had  
recommended that "When the Indians have taken their lands to serve  
in sufficient quantities . . . the remainder should be purchased by  
the Government and thrown open for homesteading."

The money paid by the Government for these lands should be held  
in trust in a fund to be used for the benefit of the Indians, may provide  
for the education, civilization, and material development and ad-  
vancement of the red race, leaving for each tribe its own money.  
(*Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1885, p. IV.)

This became part of the General Allotment Act of February 8, 1887, 24  
Stat. 388 26 U. S. C. 831 et seq. and was the basis of trust fund reports  
of succeeding commissioners. For a discussion of the background of the  
allotment system see Chapter II, sec. 1.

\**Ibid.*, p. XXXVII. The courts of Indian offenses were established in  
1889 according to the Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs for  
1889 (p. 20).

\**Ibid.*, p. XL. See Chapter 10.

\**Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.* (John H. Obeyes), 1888, p. XXXIII.

\**See* Feb. 24, 1887, 24 Stat. 388 26 U. S. C. 831, et seq.

\**Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1888, p. XXXVII. The necessity for sur-  
veying prior to allotment and the late date at which the appropriation  
bill passed are the reasons given.

\**Ibid.*, pp. XXXVIII-XXXIX. Of report of the previous commis-  
sioner Atkins in 1889, supra of " . . . no substantial opposition to  
this bill . . . " (p. XX).

\**Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1888, p. XXXIV-XXXV.  
\*There were 81 physicians in more than 200,000 Indians—approx-  
imately 1 for every 2,500 Indians.

\**Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff.*, 1888, p. LXVXI, LXVXII.

\**Ibid.*, p. LXVXI. From April 17, 1889 to October 10, 1889, accord-  
ing to the Civil Service Commission annual files.

\**Ibid.*, p. LXVXII. From 1880 to 1888, according to Indian Office  
Library files.

\**Ibid.*, p. LXVXI.

poison of happiness." He is not entitled to be supported in idleness.

*Fourth*—The Indians must conform to "the white man's way," peacefully if they will, forcibly if they must. They must adjust themselves to their environment, and conform their mode of living substantially to our civilization. This civilization may not be the best possible, but it is the best the Indians can get. They can not escape it, and must either conform to it or be crushed by it.

*Fifth*—The paramount duty of the hour is to prepare the young generation of Indians for the new order of things thus forced upon them. A comprehensive system of education would place the American public school system, but adapted to the special exigencies of the Indian youth, embracing all persons of school age, compulsory in its demands and uniformly administered, should be developed as rapidly as possible.

*Sixth*—The tribal relations should be broken up, social life destroyed, and the family and the intimacy of the individual substituted. The allotment of lands in severalty, the establishment of local courts and police, the development of a person's sense of independence, and the universal adoption of the English language are means to this end.

*Seventh*—In the administration of Indian affairs there is need and opportunity for the exercise of the same qualities demanded in any other great administration—in integrity, justice, efficiency, and honesty. Dishonesty, injustice, favoritism, and incompetency have no place here any more than elsewhere in the Government.

*Eighth*—The chief thing to be considered in the administration of this office is the character of the men and women employed to carry out the designs of the Government. The best system may be perverted to bad ends by incompetent or dishonest persons employed to carry it into execution while a very bad system may yield good results if wisely and honestly administered.

In 1890, Commissioner Morgan made a very detailed report (141 pp.) of the duties, difficulties, hopes, and improvements of his administration. One of the chief difficulties was lack of personnel. A chief clerk, solicitor, and medical expert for the office were urged, in addition to other clerical help. Agents' salaries were still too low for adequate performance.

Another difficulty was the whole reservation policy.

The entire system of dealing with them [the Indians] is vicious, involving, as it does, the installing of agents, with semi despotic power over ignorant, superstitious, and helpless subjects; the keeping of thousands of them on reservation patches as prisoners, isolated from civilized life and dominated by force and force, the sense of ration and annuities, which inevitably tends to breed pauperism, the disbursement of millions of dollars' worth of supplies by contract, which invites fraud, the maintenance of a system of licensed trade, which stimulates cupidity and extortion, etc.

Commissioner Morgan looked with hope on

\* \* \* the settled policy of the Government to break up reservations, destroy tribal relations, settle Indians upon their own homesteads, incorporate them into the national life, and deal with them not as nations or tribes or bands, but as individual citizens. The American Indian is to become the Indian American. \*

The rapid process of individualizing the Indian, Commissioner Morgan felt, was retarded by the reduction of reserva-

tions. "More than 17,400,000 acres, or about one seventh of all Indian land had been acquired by the Government during the 1011."

Commissioner Morgan reported

\* \* \* the growing recognition on the part of Western people that the Indians of their respective States and Territories are to remain permanently and become absorbed into the population as citizens.

There is also a growing popular recognition of the fact that it is the duty of the Government, and of the several States where they are located, to make ample provision for the secular and industrial education of the young generation.

Commissioner Morgan refused to grant further licenses for Indians to leave the reservation for the purpose of travel with "Wild Wags," shows on the grounds of the demoralizing influence.

"\* \* \* I consider the payment of cash to Indians," Commissioner Morgan wrote, "except in return for services rendered or labor performed for themselves or their people, as of very little if benefit in a majority of cases."

In the matter of travel, the policy of the office was to permit it least two on every reservation.

Competition within the reservation in addition to that going up outside, is fostered by licensing on each reserve is many times as practicable.

Commissioner Downing, in 1895, reports progress, particularly in the education and the employment of the Indians.

\* \* \* a large increase has been made in the number of Indian employees, and in filling positions at agencies and schools Indians have been given the preference for appointment when found competent to do the work required.

In education, opposition from the older Indians appears to have lessened. Enrollment and school attendance increased.

\* \* \* without resort to coercion even to the extent allowed by law. \* \* \* I have refrained from using such means, preferring the better course of moral suasion and convincing arguments, and finding them ultimately effective. It gives me pleasure to note the success of such methods.

<sup>1012</sup> Ibid., p. VI.

<sup>1013</sup> Ibid., p. XXXIX. Of the reduction of Indian owned lands Commissioner Morgan felt constrained to say

This might seem like a somewhat rapid reduction of the landed estate of the Indians but when it is considered that for the most part the land relinquished was not being used for any purpose whatever, that actually any of it was in cultivation that the Indians did not need it and would not be likely to need it at any future time, and that they were as, in believed reasonably well paid for it the matter assumes quite a different aspect. The same the tribal relations are broken up and the reservation system done away with the better it will be for all concerned. If that were no other reason for this change the fact that individual ownership of property is the universal custom among the civilized people of this country would be a sufficient reason for making the handful of Indians to adopt it. (p. XXXIX.)

<sup>1014</sup> Ibid., p. VI-VII.

<sup>1015</sup> Ibid. pp. VII, LVII. By letter of August 4, 1890, the Secretary of the Interior directed that no more licenses be granted. (Ibid., p. LVII.) On the variance of passes to Indians leaving a reservation, see Chapter 8, sec 16A (3).

<sup>1016</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1890, p. CXVIII.

<sup>1017</sup> Ibid., p. LX. However, Commissioner Morgan felt the whole license system was archaic. " \* \* \* a relic of the old system of considering an Indian as a ward, a reservation as a corral, and a tradership as a golden opportunity for plunder and profit." (Ibid., p. LX.)

<sup>1018</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1895, p. I.

<sup>1019</sup> Ibid., p. 4.

<sup>1012</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1890, pp. 3-4.

<sup>1013</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1890, p. 3-4.

<sup>1014</sup> Ibid., pp. IV-V. See sec 8B in/a.

<sup>1015</sup> Ibid., pp. CXVIII-CXXI. Salaries ranged from \$900 to \$2,200, and averaged \$1,688. See fn 142, supra.

<sup>1016</sup> Ibid., p. V.

<sup>1017</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1890, p. VI. For an index of prevailing policy on allotment versus tribal ownership, see the Act of March 3, 1883, 27 Stat 567, 561 (Klekopoo).



Various amendments<sup>10</sup> to the Allotment Act permitting allotment had been proposed some years, but the Act of June 25, 1910<sup>11</sup> requiring that the Secretary determine the facts of alleged allottees and issue patents in fee entitled

"A vast amount of work, many allotments in now of 20 years' standing, estates in contested, and the questions of law, and particularly of fact become extremely difficult, largely through difficulty in obtaining testimony of value. As allotments have been made on 775 reservations and upon the Winnebago Reservation alone—one of the smaller reservations—there are 600 band cases, the work to be done under this act will be some one of the greatest tasks of the office."

This issuing system, in effect in operation since 1911,<sup>12</sup> raises some of the oldest questions of policy with which the Indian Office has to deal.<sup>13</sup> Commissioner Valentine analyzes the cases where leasing has been of real value to the Indian—where the Indian is already farming, as much as his capital and help permit, where the Indian has chosen some other industrial pursuit than farming, where he is all or otherwise incapable of doing so. For the most part, however, "the leasing system has been practiced as a positive detriment to the Indians."<sup>14</sup> A steady rental from his land is one of the strongest incentives not to begin to work.<sup>15</sup>

Commissioner Valentine reports the result of investigation into the status of "State" Indians—Indians who have long been more or less independent of the Federal Government.<sup>16</sup>

"It is noted on this that in many cases these Indians have worked out for themselves with some assistance from their States, problems which the Service has still to meet in other parts of the field."

Although, by the Act of May 8, 1906,<sup>17</sup> the Secretary of the Interior was given the power, before the expiration of the 25 year trust period, to issue a patent in fee "whenever he shall be satisfied that any Indian allottee is competent and capable of managing his or her affairs."<sup>18</sup> A conservative policy was followed.<sup>19</sup> Much application had to be considered on its merits, and was accompanied by a report of the superintendent. However, even with this conservative policy, during the first 8 years of the law's operation, 80 percent of the patentees disposed of their land and its proceeds.<sup>20</sup>

Commissioner Valentine, therefore, inaugurated a policy of requiring more rigid proof of competency, and superintendents were required to answer more specific questions.<sup>21</sup> In his report for 1911, he sums up his policy thus:

"I am opposed to granting patents in fee unless circumstances clearly show that a title in fee will be of undoubted advantage to the applicant."<sup>22</sup> In the

face of existing evidence of carelessness and incompetence in the policy of giving patents in fee would be utterly to cross purposes with the object of the Government to create an industry, thrift, and independence.

In 1917 under Commissioner Cato Sells,<sup>23</sup> a more drastic policy was inaugurated.

Broadly speaking a policy of greater liberalism will henceforth prevail in Indian administration to the end that every Indian as soon as he has been determined to be competent to support his own business as the average white man, shall be given full control of his property and have all his lands and monies turned over to him, after which he will no longer be a ward of the Government. Pursuant to this policy, the following rules shall be observed:

1. *Patents in fee*—To all able bodied adult Indians of less than one-half Indian blood, there will be given as far as may be under the law full and complete control of all their property. Patents in fee shall be issued to all adult Indians of one-half or more Indian blood who may, after careful investigation, be found competent, provided, that where deemed advisable patents in fee shall be withheld for not to exceed 10 years as a home.

Indian students, when they are 21 years of age or over, who complete the full course of instruction in the Government schools receive diplomas and have demonstrated competency will so be decided.

2. *Sale of lands*—A liberal ruling will be adopted in the matter of patenting upon applications for the sale of inherited Indian lands where the applicants retain other lands and the proceeds are to be used to improve the homesteads or for other equally good purposes. A more liberal ruling than has hitherto prevailed will be applied to those Indians with regard to the application of non-competent Indians for the sale of their lands where they are old and feeble and need the proceeds for their support.

3. *Certificates of competency*—The rules which are made to apply in the granting of patents in fee and the sale of lands will be made equally applicable in the matter of issuing certificates of competency.

4. *Individual Indian monies*—Indians will be given unrestricted control of all their individual Indian money upon issuance of patents in fee or certificates of competency. Strict limitations will not be placed upon the use of funds of the old, the indigent, and the invalid.

5. *Provide shares—Trust funds*—As speedily as possible their property shares in tribal trust or other funds shall be paid to all Indians who have been declared competent, unless the legal status of such family prevents. Where practicable the paternal shares of incompetent Indians will be withdrawn from the Treasury and placed in banks to their individual credit.

This is a new and far reaching declaration of policy. It means the dawn of a new era in Indian administration. It means that the competent Indian will no longer be treated as half-ward and half-citizen. It means reduced expenditures by the Government and more self-respect and independence for the Indian. It means the ultimate absorption of the Indian race into the body politic of the Nation. It means, in short, the beginning of the end of the Indian problem.

Competency commissions were set up, and superintendents were required to furnish—

"a list of all Indians of one-half or less Indian blood, who are able bodied and mentally competent,

<sup>10</sup> See Chapter 5 sec. 11B and 11C And of Rep Comm Ind Aff. 1911 p. 20

<sup>11</sup> 36 Stat. 895 See Chapter 5 sec. 11C

<sup>12</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1911, p. 20

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 20 See Chapter 11 sec. 5 and Chapter 17 sec. 19

<sup>14</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1911, pp. 20-27

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 27

<sup>16</sup> In the case of the Catawba Indians of South Carolina, over whom the State of South Carolina had assumed sovereign rights without Indian objection. It had treated with the Indians since 1783, had granted them a reservation and had attempted to extinguish their title in 1810. The Alabama Indians in Texas lived on land granted to them conditionally by the state about 1860. Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1911, pp. 46, 47

<sup>17</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1911, p. 40

<sup>18</sup> 34 Stat. 182, 183, generally known as the Burke Act. See Chapter 5, sec. 11B

<sup>19</sup> Schmeckeborn, *op cit*, pp. 150-151

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 151

<sup>21</sup> According to Schmeckeborn (*op cit*, p. 151) between 1900 and 1912, 3,400 applications for patents were approved, and approximately 2,000 denied

<sup>22</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff. 1911, pp. 22-23

<sup>23</sup> Cato Sells was Commissioner of Indian Affairs for 8 years under President Wilson (from 1913 to 1921), the first Commissioner to hold office for that length of time

<sup>24</sup> Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs 1917, pp. 3-4 declaration of policy of April 17, 1917 (Schmeckeborn, *op cit*, pp. 152-153) From 1917 to 1920 10,950 fee simple patents were issued, as compared with 8,894 from 1900 to 1915 (Schmeckeborn, *op cit*, p. 154. Also Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1920, p. 8)

twenty one years of age or over, together with a description of land allotted to said Indians and the number of the allotment. It is intended to issue patents in fee simple to such Indians.

The question of Indian citizenship became prominent after Indian participation in the World War.<sup>1</sup> In reply to CHAIRMAN COMMISSIONER SELLS wrote in 1920:

I have, however, gone further and taken the position that the citizenship of Indians should not be based upon their ownership of lands, but on its exercise, in kind or in fee, but upon the fact that they are self-sufficient, and from that report has been made on a bill introduced in Congress during for its purpose the conferring of citizenship on all Indians but retaining control of the estates of incompetents.

Commissioner SELLS adapted the policy with respect to individual Indian money or jewelry, if directly to competent adult Indians without deposit, or having it disbursed in large sums by the superintendents from funds deposited under their supervision.<sup>2</sup>

In 1921, with a change in administration, the new Commissioner<sup>3</sup> declared:

This practice, however, for issuing patents in fee to Indians of one third or less Indian blood without any further proof of competency, has been discontinued and in all cases involving the issue of patents to Indians, the practice is now to require a formal application and proof of competency.<sup>4</sup>

The result of the shift in policy is clear from the following tabulation of patents issued from 1921 to 1926.<sup>5</sup>

Fiscal year	
1921	1,692
1922	911
1923	627
1924	919
1925	471
1926	322

In his brief report for 1922, Commissioner Burke devotes a considerable portion to education.

In the education of the Indian youth lies the hope of the future greatness of the American Indian. In this time, when it is so essential to practice economy in every possible way, it should be realized that the child who is allowed to grow up in this country without being taught English and manual skill in some useful occupation is always in danger of becoming a liability. It is false economy to neglect the education of any children.<sup>6</sup>

An industrial survey of all the reservations, based on a house-to-house canvass of Indian families, was inaugurated

\* \* \* to ascertain their condition, needs, and resources, with the view to organizing the work of the reservation.

<sup>1</sup> Letter of March 7, 1919, to superintendents in Behmchekui *op cit* pp. 173-174. This letter patently of Commissioner SELLS under the citizenship of Franklin D. Roosevelt is now the result of litigation based on forced allotments and sale of land for taxes which is still one of the chief concerns of the Department of Indian. See Chapter III.

<sup>2</sup> By Act of November 6, 1918, 41 Stat. 550, § 8 U. S. C. citizenship had been made available to Indian participants in the World War who were honorably discharged, on condition of costs of competent jurisdiction. See Chapter 8, sec. 2.

<sup>3</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1920, p. 5. By Act of June 2, 1924, c. 239, 43 Stat. 234, § 2 U. S. C. 174, such general citizenship was granted. See Chapter 8, sec. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1920, p. 50.

<sup>5</sup> Charles H. Burke became the new Commissioner of Indian Affairs, and served for more than 8 years under 2 Presidents. The reports again become brief summaries as they were at the beginning of the Bureau of Indian Affairs in 1824.

<sup>6</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1921, p. 23.

<sup>7</sup> Behmchekui *op cit* p. 154.

<sup>8</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1922, p. 7.

service so that each family will make the best use of its resources.

The industrial survey was to form the basis of a more complete survey, one for each reservation, combining the needs—for health, education, housing, sanitation, social welfare on the one hand and the resources—both tribal and individual on the other. The purpose of such a survey would be "to formulate the reservation economic program or policy which may be followed for such term of years as will place the Indians on a self-sufficient basis."<sup>7</sup>

Increasing cooperation with Federal health agencies, as well as with state, local and voluntary agencies is noted during Commissioner Burke's administration.<sup>8</sup>

It is hoped that closer cooperation may be established between BIA's living Indian populations and the Federal Government in dealing with questions of education, health, and law enforcement. Probably State should ultimately assume complete responsibility for the Indians within their borders, but pending, that time, there is much to be done by the Federal service.

## F THE PERIOD FROM 1929 TO 1938

The survey of the social and economic conditions of the Indians began at the invitation of the Interior Department in 1926 by the Institute for Government Research.<sup>9</sup> It was completed in 1928.

The publication of this report helped to inaugurate a new era in the Indian Service. The criticisms and recommendations contained in the report commanded the attention of the Bureau,<sup>10</sup> as well as the general public. The report raised serious doubts as to the wisdom of such established Indian policies as that which had developed around the allotment problem. Of the policy of individual allotment, the report declared:

\* \* \* Not accompanied by adequate institution in the use of property, it has largely failed in the accomplishment of what was expected of it. It has resulted in much loss of land and an enormous increase in the deficit of administration without a compensating advance in the economic ability of the Indians. The difficult problem of inheritance is one of its results. \* \* \* (p. 41.)

Even more serious doubts were raised as to the efficiency and adequacy of the public services rendered by the Indian Bureau. On the question of health, the survey reported:

The health of the Indians as compared with that of the general population is bad. (p. 3.)

\* \* \* For some years it has been customary to speak of the Indian medical service as being organized for public health work, yet the fundamentals of sound public health work are still lacking. (p. 190.)

<sup>11</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 11.

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 11. That program was later followed in the establishment of a unit of the Soil Conservation Service known as Technical Cooperation Bureau of Indian Affairs (TC-BIA) in November 1928. The purpose of the TC-BIA is to make such surveys and recommendations for such reclamation in collaboration with the Soil Conservation Service.

<sup>13</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1928, p. 1.

<sup>14</sup> *Ibid.* 1928, p. 7.

<sup>15</sup> Microm, Problem of Indian Administration (1928). In a publication from the American Indian Defense Association (American Indian Fair, Bulletin No. 12 June 1928, p. 6) the survey was evaluated.

The report of the Institute for Government Research is the most important single document in Indian Affairs since John Hunt Jackson's "The Century of Dishonor," published 47 years ago. It contains three sections, which intrinsically are very fine. (Health, Education and Women and Family) and Community Life. It is 847 pages of text as a result of teamwork between most of the agencies even as to where responsibility shall lie. The omission (even in regard to health and education) of most of the facts which give a quality of similar deliberate manner and thoroughness by Indians in their social conditions of these reservation classes, the handling of individual Indian trust money and territorial Indian lands, the qualities of the report increase its conviction and usefulness.

<sup>16</sup> Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1928, pp. 4-7.

Special hospital equipment, such as X-ray, clinical laboratory, and special treatment facilities is generally lacking. (P 284)

No sanitation in the Indian Service meets the minimum requirements of the American Sanitation Association (P 287)

The hospitals, sanatoria, and sanatorium schools maintained by the Service, despite a few exceptions, must be generally characterized as lacking in personnel, equipment, management, and design. (P 9)

On the subject of education, the survey was scarcely less critical.

The work of the government directed toward the education and advancement of the Indian himself is distributed among the control and conservation of his property, his health, and his life. (P 5)

The survey still finds itself obliged to say frankly and unequivocally that the provisions for the care of Indian children in boarding schools are grossly inadequate. (P 11)

On the economic problems of the Indians, the survey did much to overthrow the popular impression, based largely on the publicity given to a few "out" Indians that the Indians generally occupied a favored economic position.

An overwhelming majority of the Indians are poor, even extremely poor, and they are not adjusted to the economic and social system of the dominant white civilization. (P 3)

The prevailing living conditions among the great majority of the Indians are conducive to the development and spread of disease. (P 3)

Even under the best conditions it is doubtful whether a well rounded program of economic advancement financed with due consideration of the natural resources of the reservation has in any been thoroughly tried out. The Indians often say that programs change with superintendents. Under the present administration there is little evidence of anything which could be termed an economic program. (P 14)

Of the general social objectives of Indian administration, the survey had this to say:

The Indian Service is not appreciated the fundamental importance of family life and community activities in the social and economic development of a people. The tendency has been rather toward weakening Indian family life and community activities, thus toward strengthening them. (P 13)

On the question of law and order, the survey reported:

Most notable is the confusion that exists as to legal jurisdiction over the restricted Indians in such important matters as crimes and misdemeanors and domestic relations. The act of Congress providing for the punishment of eight in four crimes applies to the restricted Indians on tribal lands and restricted allotments, and cases of this character come under the unquestioned jurisdiction of the United States courts. Laws respecting the sale of liquor to Indians and some other special matters have been passed, and again jurisdiction is clear. For the great body of other crimes and misdemeanors the situation is highly unsatisfactory. (Pp 16-17)

The positive recommendations of the survey, which have greatly influenced the policy of the Indian Bureau since 1928,<sup>20</sup> stressed the need for a comprehensive educational program designed to meet the problems of reservation life, the need for sustained and coordinated economic planning and development, the need for a strengthened, more efficient and better paid personnel, the encouragement of Indian use of Indian lands, the strengthening of Indian community life, the clarification of con-

ditions in the Indian law and order situation and the final settlement of outstanding legal claims.<sup>21</sup>

Commissioner Rhoads,<sup>22</sup> like his predecessor, devotes a good part of his reports to education, particularly to federal state relations.<sup>23</sup> In 1929 he reports:

"... The States and the local public school districts appear to be generally in sympathy with the plan of education by the States, conditioned, however, upon such financial assistance as they need and is the Federal Government in effect."

In 1931 Commissioner Rhoads reiterates:

"... Indian education is in no sense solely a Federal problem, but a State and local problem as well. When Congress in 1924 made all Indian citizens it served notice that Indians could no longer be looked on as the citizenry of any State."

In 1932, Commissioner Rhoads states:

The most significant feature of the year in Indian education was the determined effort to make the change from boarding school attendance to local day or public school attendance for Indian children.

This was in keeping with the new education policy of providing the Indian education "in his own community setting."

Throughout the reports,<sup>24</sup> of recent commissioners appears the title "Additional lands for Indian use, one result of the Allotment Act. In some cases tribal funds are used on a reimbursable plan for such purchases."<sup>25</sup>

Commissioner Collier in his first report in 1933 discusses the four main lines along which his policy is to be directed: Indian lands, Indian education, Indians in Indian Service, and reorganization of the Indian Service.

(1) *Indian lands*—The allotment system has enormously cut down the Indian landholdings, and has rendered many acres, still owned by Indians, practically unavailable for Indian use. The system must be revised both as a matter of law and of practical effect. Allotted lands must be consolidated into tribal or corporate ownership with individual tenure, and new lands must be acquired for the 80,000 Indians who are landless at the present time. A modern system of financial credit must be instituted to enable the Indians to use their own natural resources. And turning to the modern techniques of land use must be supplied Indians. The wastage of Indian lands through erosion must be checked.

(2) *Indian education*—The redistribution of education opportunity for Indians, out of the concentrated boarding school, reaching the farm, and into the day school, reaching the farm, must be continued and accelerated. The boarding schools which remain must be specialized on lines of occupational need for children of the older groups, or of the need of some Indian children for institutional care. The day schools must be worked out on lines of community service, reaching the adult as well as the child, and influencing the health, the recreation, and the economic welfare of their local areas.

(3) *Indians in Indian Service*—The meeting new needs of Indians in their own official and unofficial service must

<sup>20</sup> It will be noted that most of these recommendations had been made from time to time in commissioner's reports.

<sup>21</sup> Charles J. Rhoads, 1929-33.

<sup>22</sup> See for example Rep Comm Indian Aff., for 1929, pp 4-7, for 1930, pp 7-13, for 1931, pp 4-13, for 1932, pp 4-9.

<sup>23</sup> Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1929, p 5.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid 1931, p 7.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid, 1932, p 4.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid, 1932, p 5.

<sup>27</sup> See e.g., Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1928, p 23, 1929, p 10, etc.

<sup>28</sup> See e.g., Rep Comm Ind Aff., 1928, p 23, 1931, pp 80-81, etc. See Chapter 17, secs 6, 8.

<sup>29</sup> For an account of the effect which this report had on Indian education for instance, see Chapter 12, sec 2.

be pressed without warring. To this end, adjustments of Civil Service arrangements to Indian needs must be sought, but in order that Indians may be better equipped, opportunities for professional training must be made as much as possible accessible to Indians. With respect to modification of Civil Service, a steadily widening tribal and local participation by Indians in the management of their own properties, and in the administration of their own services must be pursued.

(4) *Reorganization of the Indian Service*—A decentralization of administrative control must be progressively attempted. The special functions of Indian Service must be integrated with one another and with Indian life, in terms of local needs and of local groups of Indians. An enlarged responsibility must be vested in the superintendents of reservations and beyond them, in community in the Indians themselves. This reorganization is in part dependent on the revision of the tribal allotment system, and in part it is dependent on the freer development of cooperative relations between the Indian Service as a Federal agency, on the one hand, and the State counties, school districts, and other local units of government on the other hand.<sup>80</sup>

Commissioner Collier's major policies found statutory expression in the Wheeler Howard (Indian Reorganization) Act of June 18, 1934.<sup>81</sup> The extent to which they have been embodied in existing law and practice will be one of the principal inquiries of the substantive chapters that follow.

## G HISTORICAL RETROSPECT

Recent trends in our national Indian policy are set forth against the background of history in a statement prepared by the Office of Indian Affairs in 1933, at the request of the Department of State.<sup>82</sup>

\* \* \* The chief issue around which Indian policy revolved prior to 1934 was whether this, in lieu of ownership (for land and resources) could best be brought about through peaceful treaty, through force of arms, or through the usual legal forms of gift, deed and mortgage. Indian policy and Indian administration, even today when this motive has been revised, is marked with what is of the earlier policies, and can be understood only as these earlier policies are understood.

During the years when the rivalries of England, France and Spain on the continent gave the various Indian tribes, positions of strategic power, negotiations with these tribes were carried on by the Colonies and later by the United States on the basis of international treaties. These treaties acknowledge the sovereignty of Indian tribes, and implied the acknowledgement of a possessory right in the soil that the tribes occupied. After the cession of Louisiana by France in 1803, the termination of the war with Great Britain in 1814 and the cession of Florida by Spain in 1819, they developed an increasing tendency to deny the sovereignty of Indian tribes and to deal with them by force of arms.<sup>83</sup>

The use of military force to control Indians was a dominant factor in United States policy from the 1820's until the 1880's and did not wholly disappear with the last of the Indian wars in the 1890's. This warfare materially handicapped the settlement of the West and paved the way for the Federal Government. It was officially estimated with probable correctness about 1870 that Indians had

cost the Government in excess of \$1,000,000 for every dead Indian.<sup>84</sup>

While treaties and wars had failed to bring down the national organization and culture of the Indian tribes, the official policy brought with it a growing roster of white superintendents, farm agents, teachers, inspectors, and missionaries who supervised Indian leaders, and to a large extent succeeded in destroying Indian culture. There was developed a system of closed reservations, introduced initially by the Indian Bureau, which in 1849 had been transferred from the War Department to the Department of the Interior. This policy was first carried out in the United States in the reservation of unincorporated states. A newly codified and vast body of administrative regulations, and the personal government of Indian agents who were politically appointed. Misery became extreme upon the reservations, graft became notorious, and led to more Indian outbreaks, and as a means of relief, President Grant in his first term, placed Christian mission bodies, dominantly in charge of Indian affairs in numerous parts of the country. This official identification of mission in India with Indians, a mission was brought to its end in later years, but the policy of identification of the mission bodies with the Indian therein had not been dissolved until very recent times.<sup>85</sup> It was not, it is known, that the Indians were entitled to the constitutional guarantees of liberty of conscience.<sup>86</sup>

The guiding concept in what may be called the antithesis of the Federal policy toward Indians was the destruction of all Indian tribal bonds, the offering of Indian languages and culture, the forcing of the Indians to an individual to become identified with and lost in the white race, and the breaking of tribal, communal and even family households into individual allotments of land, timber and grazing lands.<sup>87</sup>

In the antithesis phase of Indian policy, a unit pattern of administration and of program was imposed throughout the Indian country.<sup>88</sup>

Against the above background the present phase of governmental Indian policy can be better understood. The present policy continues the Federal antithesis phase over Indians and trespassing over Indian property while seeking to establish individual and group identity within the guardianship.<sup>89</sup> \* \* \* In the new phase, the stress is against uniformity and in the direction of the maximum of local adaptation, both of method and of goal.<sup>90</sup>

In all of these phases, of the present day government policy toward Indians, an underlying factor is the realization that the Indian is no longer the "vanishing American," but is actually increasing in numbers. During the past eight years the growth in population as reported by Indian agencies in the United States has been at the rate of over 1 per cent per annum. As with various other peoples during periods of development, the birth rate has been decreasing but the decline in the Indian birth rate has been even greater.

To help Indians in making adjustments to the drastic changes in their way of life made necessary by the overwhelming invasion of the alien white race, and yet to foster the perpetuation of much of their cultural heritage, to train and stimulate them for complete economic self-sufficiency, looking toward a better standard of living for this vital race are the ultimate goals of the present Administration.

Although only slightly over a third of a million in population in a nation of approximately 130 million people, the Indians of the United States will become an even greater factor in its cultural, social, and economic life.<sup>91</sup>

<sup>80</sup> Annual Report of The Secretary of the Interior, 1868, Rep. Comm. Ind. Aff., pp. 68-69.

<sup>81</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 25 U. S. C. 481 et seq. See Chapter 4, sec. 18.

<sup>82</sup> A Brief Statement on the Background of Present Day Indian Policy (submitted November 21, 1933).

<sup>83</sup> This statement was for the use of the American delegation at the Eighth International Conference of American States, at Lima, Peru, December 9, 1908.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., pp. 1-2.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 2.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 8.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., pp. 3-4.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 8.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 8.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 8.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 9.

## SECTION 3 ADMINISTRATION OF THE INDIAN SERVICE TODAY

## A ORGANIZATION AND ACTIVITIES

The organization and functions of the Office of Indian Affairs today are pictured in the accompanying chart.\*

The Commissioner of Indian Affairs is the titular and functioning head of the entire office both in Washington and in the field. He has directly under him the Assistant Commissioner, who shares the duties of office and acts in his place. These duties are General management and the promulgation of policies covering all matters relating to Indians, and to the natives of Alaska, including economic development, organization of tribes, education, health activities, land acquisitions, leases, sales, forest and grazing management, construction maintenance, and operation of irrigation facilities, construction and upkeep of roads and bridges on Indian reservations, conservation work, and relief activities, and the interpretation of the needs of the Indian Service in legislative and budgetary terms.

\*See Chart on Organization and Functions prepared by the Office of Indian Affairs as of May 1940. All the descriptions of duties contained in this section are based on information supplied by the Indian Office. The chart appears also in Departmental Service for Indians, (President's Advisory Committee on Education Staff Study No. 19, 1939), p. 28.

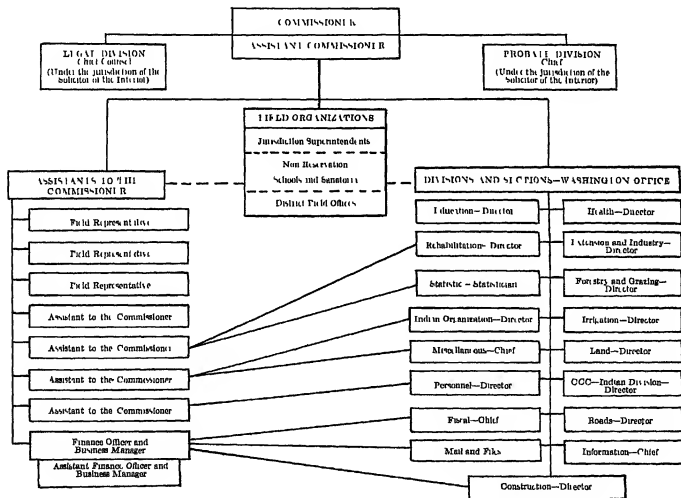
The Probate Division and the Legal Division are jointly under the Office of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs and under the Solicitor for the Department.

The Probate Division\*\* determines heirs and probates wills of all deceased Indians outside the Five Tribes and Osage Nation, reviews the work of the Probate Attorneys of the Five Tribes, and the probate recommendations of the Osage Tribal Attorney and Superintendent, and handles income and maintenance in matters of Five Tribes.

The Legal Division reviews matters covering legal and other questions affecting the Indians, including reviewed reports on Congressional bill affecting Indians, and passes on a host of other legal matters involving Indians in their property, rights of way, condemnation, taxation, irrigation, determination of heirs, etc.

The Assistants to the Commissioner are the Commissioner's immediate staff officers. They are assigned from time to time numerous duties which devolve upon the Commissioner's Office. In general the Assistants to the Commissioner serve to coordinate the diverse functions of the Service, and to stimulate cooperative planning. There are at present three field representatives, for

\*\*See Chapter 11, sec. 6.



ORGANIZATION CHART OF THE OFFICE OF INDIAN AFFAIRS  
1940



special assistants and two finance officers. One field representative is in charge of contacts with Indian tribes, the second, in charge of conferences and the settling of official matters, and the third in charge of new projects and management problems. The four special assistants are in charge of land use, consolidation and leasing problems. A second coordinates projects involving land use and resettlement and works chiefly with the Statistics Section and the Rehabilitation Division. A third handles all matters relating to Indian tribal organization, Indian delegations, law and order, individual Indian matters, field investigations and works chiefly with the Indian Organization Division and the Miscellaneous Section. A fourth is in charge of personnel policies and works with the Personnel Division. The finance officer has issued in the charge of all fiscal matters for the Office of Indian Affairs—its budget, expenditure of funds under appropriation acts, and legislation.

In the Washington office, organizational functions are broken up into 17 divisions and sections directly under the Office of the Commissioner. At the head of each division is a director. The division director is responsible to the Commissioner for the general development of policies and programs and the professional direction of activities within the sphere of their several interests. They work through the agency superintendents and in cooperation with city and other officials to the Commissioner. Each division director collaboration with the finance officer prepares estimates of needed funds, presents these to the Director of the Budget and the committee of Congress. They advise the finance officer in the allotment of funds to agencies. They collaborate with the personnel officer in the preparation of civil service examinations and in the selection, placement, in service training, transfer, and separation of personnel.

The Education Division has professional direction of the educational program of Indian schools in the United States and of schools for the natives of Alaska. It handles all matters relating to the attendance of Indian children in public schools, administrative official loan in funds, coordinates social welfare services.

The Civilian Conservation Corps, Indian Division administers C C C funds allotted to the Indian Service and gives general direction to work projects, safety measures, and the entire program of welfare, instruction, and recreation.

The Irrigation Division has general direction of the construction, operation, and maintenance, including power service of irrigation projects, together with the development of subsistence gardens and domestic and stock water supplies on Indian reservations.

The Roads Division develops and directs policies and programs of road and bridge work on Indian reservations, including construction and maintenance, proper specifications, and purchases all road machinery, equipment, and trucks.

The Health Division develops policies and programs of health conservation and gives professional supervision to all medical, dental, nursing, and sanitation activities.<sup>20</sup>

The Division of Forestry and Game manages conservation projects, exercises professional direction of the general forestry and game program.

The Division of Extension and Industry stimulates and aids the development of agricultural and livestock enterprises and home improvement.

The Land Division is responsible for protection and proper handling of all Indian owned land, and for acquisition of additional lands needed for tribal, individual, school, hospital, or other purposes, and reviews or initiates legislation pertaining to Indian lands, mineral rights, and tribal claims.

The Statistics Section collects, tabulates, and analyzes data obtained from the field on population, health, Indian income, land, agricultural and other activities of Indians needed in dealing with Indian problems and Indian development and coordinates statistical needs, improves statistical records, and designs forms for use in the field and by divisions of the Washington office.

The Rehabilitation Division applies for allotments of emergency relief funds, and in consultation with other divisions and with field superintendents refers to agencies these funds for approved rehabilitation projects.

The Indian Organization Division assists Indian tribes and bands to draft constitutions, bylaws, and charters of incorporation under authority of the Act of June 18, 1914,<sup>21</sup> the Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act<sup>22</sup> and the Alaska Reorganization Act,<sup>23</sup> conducts education in work and supervises elections in connection therewith, assists tribes to make intelligent use of the powers acquired through organization and incorporation, reviews ordinances and resolutions adopted by tribes and presented for the departmental review or approval, and determines the tribal status of individual Indians or groups of Indians.

The Miscellaneous Section initiates correspondence on the following: maintenance of law and order, individual Indian money claims for withdrawal of pre-1848 shares and Sioux benefits, inter-tribe dance and ceremonies, Indian monuments, delegations to Washington, and a variety of miscellaneous subjects.

The Personnel Division develops personnel policies, stimulates and coordinates in service training, develops employment opportunities in private industry for Indians, and provides records and precedents for the orderly and efficient management of personnel.

The Fiscal Division directs and supervises bookkeeping and accounting matters, examination of accounts and claims, requisition of funds for advance to disbursing agents, investment and deposit of Indian funds, and property accounting.

The Service Section provides services such as stenographic pool, mail room for handling of incoming and outgoing mails, and organized flow of all pertinent correspondence for the orderly and efficient handling of the business of the office.

The Construction Division in cooperation with the superintendents and the seven field division directors, prepares plans and specifications, estimates costs, and supervises the construction of all Indian Service buildings, gathers engineering data and prepares engineering reports on buildings, utility services, and plant maintenance.

The Information Division advises on articles for publication and public speeches by employees of the Office of Indian Affairs, assembles, and interprets to the public pertinent facts concerning Indians and the work of the Indian Office, and has editorial supervision over the office publication "Indians at Work."

Directly under the Office of Indian Affairs, and solely responsible to it are field organizations covering 64 superintendents, and 27 independent units—6 subagents, 10 schools, and 9 district offices.

The superintendent is responsible directly to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs for the orderly and efficient administration of governmental affairs relating to the Indians of his jurisdiction, including money, property, and personnel. He coordinates the work of his staff and utilizes all available technical and professional aid from the Washington and district offices in developing and administering a program that serves the needs of the Indians of his jurisdiction.

<sup>20</sup> See Chapter 4, sec. 16.

<sup>21</sup> See Chapter 23, sec. 13.

<sup>22</sup> See Chapter 21, sec. 9.

<sup>23</sup> See Chapter 12, sec. 8.

An examination of the regulations under which the Indian Service operates will illustrate its imbricated activities. The codified regulations cover Alaska, Indians, Indians and Agents, Civilian Conservation Corps, Indian Division, credit to Indians, education of Indians, enrollment and allotment of Indians, forests, grazing lands and wells, hospital and medical care of Indians, irrigation projects, law and order, leases, permits, and sale of minerals on restricted Indian lands, money, tribal and individual property, in the competitive certificates, sales, and management of proceeds, records (Oklahoma Indian tribes), rights of Indians, rights of way, roads and Indian reservations, training with Indians, wilderness and roadless areas, wildlife. In addition to the regulations contained in the Code of Federal Regulations there are many special regulations.<sup>100</sup>

### B PERSONNEL

"The Act of July 9, 1942"<sup>101</sup> which provided for the appointment of a Commissioner of Indian Affairs at a salary of \$5,000 made no provision for special clerical assistance or contingent expenses of the office. The Appropriation Act of June 16, 1943,<sup>102</sup> provided for the first time in addition to \$5,000 for salary of the Commissioner at Indian Affairs, \$5,000 for salary of clerk in the office of the Commissioner, \$700 for salary of the messenger, and \$800 for contingent expenses.<sup>103</sup>

Provisions for various interests and new offices gradually appeared in the appropriation acts.<sup>104</sup>

The Commissioner of Indian Affairs<sup>105</sup> and the Assistant Commissioner<sup>106</sup> are appointed by the President with the consent of the Senate. All other employees<sup>107</sup> are appointed by the Secretary of the Interior after certification by the Civil Service Commission,<sup>108</sup> with the exception of special field personnel and certain

administrative offices in the Washington office.<sup>109</sup> The salaries are fixed basically by the Classification Act of March 4, 1924.<sup>110</sup> The extent to which Indians themselves are employed is elsewhere discussed.<sup>111</sup>

Up to 1893 officers in immediate control of Indians were known as Agents.<sup>112</sup> They were appointed by the President with the consent of the Senate.<sup>113</sup> To remove this office from politics the Act of March 3, 1895,<sup>114</sup> authorized the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, to devolve the duties of agent upon the superintendent of the school located at the agency.<sup>115</sup>

With the closing of Government schools many "superintendents" were left without schools. Agency<sup>116</sup> has since become the term for units of administration but officers in charge are still called superintendents.<sup>117</sup>

"The superintendent of an agency is a bonded officer, responsible for all expenditures."<sup>118</sup> The superintendent is authorized to acknowledge deeds, administer various oaths, take depositions.<sup>119</sup> He instructs new employees in their duties and the statutory limitations or prohibitions.<sup>120</sup> He may not serve as a chairman of an Indian matter appointment by a local committee.<sup>121</sup>

No employee of the United States Government may have any interest or concern in any trade with the Indians, except for and on account of the United States, and any person offending is liable to a penalty of \$5,000 and removal from office.<sup>122</sup> The purchase of articles from Indians for home use by Government employees is not held to constitute a trade.<sup>123</sup>

According to Commissioner Collier

*The major principle of field administration is that the Superintendent of a jurisdiction is the responsible officer in that jurisdiction. He is responsible directly to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. There is no intervening administrative authority between him and the Commissioner, and is there any intervening administrative authority between him and the employees under his jurisdiction. . . .*

Commissioner C. D. Bells expressed the same idea in 1918

*Inspecting officers should impress superintendents with the fact that they are held responsible for every activity*

<sup>100</sup> This list is taken from title 25 of the Code of Federal Regulations (1940) pp. 1-3. The major subjects covered by these regulations are discussed in other chapters of this book.

<sup>101</sup> 4 Stat. 501, 25 U. S. C. § 462, 25 U. S. C. § 466.

<sup>102</sup> 4 Stat. 677.

<sup>103</sup> This is the budget for the Office of the Commissioner only and does not include the field. There was no specific appropriation for the "Indian Department".

<sup>104</sup> By the Act of June 17, 1950 (21 Stat. 210), the Commissioner's salary was raised to \$5,700 and the budget for the office raised to \$77,900. By the Act of August 7, 1952 (22 Stat. 219), the Commissioner's salary was raised to \$6,000. By the Act of July 31, 1946 (24 Stat. 372), the Office of Assistant Commissioner was created at a salary of \$4,000. The Assistant Commissioner also performed the duties of chief clerk. The Commissioner's salary was raised to \$5,000 by the Act of April 24, 1902 (12 Stat. 120, 126). Under the Appropriation Act of June 18, 1940 (76th Cong. 1st Sess. Pub. No. 610), the Commissioner's salary is \$9,000 annually and the Assistant Commissioner's \$7,000. By the Act of February 26, 1907, 34 Stat. 937, 25 U. S. C. § 462, the Chief Clerk's Office was separated from that of Assistant Commissioner and by the Act of June 17, 1950, 86 Stat. 406, the Chief Clerk's title was changed to Second Assistant Commissioner. By the Act of May 10, 1916, 39 Stat. 66, 25 U. S. C. § 462, the Assistant Commissioner's Office was abolished and the title of Chief Clerk reinstated. This act also provided compensation for interpreters, times if clerk, chiefs of divisions, law clerk, examiners of migration accounts, draftsman, etc.

<sup>105</sup> Act of July 9, 1942, 4 Stat. 504, 25 U. S. C. § 462.

<sup>106</sup> Act of July 9, 1942, 4 Stat. 504, 25 U. S. C. § 462.

<sup>107</sup> On June 10, 1920, Schmeckelner reported 5,002 employees in the entire service, 100 in Washington office, with a total salary of \$4,106,910 (Schmeckelner, *op cit* p. 284). These were, according to the 1910 budget, 9,178 employees in the Bureau of Indian Affairs (including employees and conservation employees) of which 488 were in Washington, with a total salary of \$4,178,927 (Figure from Office of Indian Affairs, May, 1940).

<sup>108</sup> The Civil Service Commission has, to some extent, recovered the special difficulties that exist in the Indian Service and has held examinations for the purpose of filling special positions in the Indian Service such as those for teachers and nurses (Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1897) p. 241, *ibid* (1908), p. 208). Annual reports of the Secretary of the Interior comment on the extreme diversity in the types of personnel needed and on the need for persons with ability to handle human relations problems, in addition to their particular training

(Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1897) pp. 210-242, Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1898), p. 250).

<sup>109</sup> This need for such personnel equipped employees was voiced by Commissioner C. D. Bells in 1918 (100th Sess. Sec. 2, *supra* Alvin Schmeckelner *op cit* pp. 290-299).

<sup>110</sup> See Schmeckelner *op cit* pp. 281, 294 to list of such exceptions.  
<sup>111</sup> 42 Stat. 1188. Amended by the Act of May 18, 1928, 45 Stat. 776 (76th Cong. 1st Sess.). Act of July 9, 1942, 4 Stat. 504 (Brookhart Act); and by Executive Order No. 6746, June 21, 1931.

<sup>112</sup> See Chapter 8, *supra* § 43.

<sup>113</sup> See Schmeckelner *op cit* p. 282.

<sup>114</sup> 27 Stat. 413, 25 U. S. C. § 60. This provision was revised in later Indian legislation acts up to March 1, 1907, 34 Stat. 1023, 1920.

<sup>115</sup> Schmeckelner *op cit* pp. 282-294.

<sup>116</sup> Department of the Interior U. S. Indian Field Service Regulations (1895) Section A—Administration, p. A-8. The superintendent is bonded in such amount as the President or Secretary of the Interior may require.

<sup>117</sup> *ibid* pp. A-11, A-12.

<sup>118</sup> *ibid* p. A-9.

<sup>119</sup> *ibid*, p. A-9. See Chapter 12, *supra* § 2.

<sup>120</sup> *ibid*, p. A-32. Based on R. S. § 2078 (derived from Act of June 30, 1874, 4 Stat. 735, 735), 25 U. S. C. § 68. Act of June 22, 1874, 18 Stat. 146, 27, 25 U. S. C. § 87. See letter of Attorney General dated February 15, 1940, holding that an employee of the Indian Service may not act as an employee of other house, or a school manager of an Indian community store. And see Memo. Sol. I. D. November 7, 1919, holding Indian Service employee may not leave land from Indian to home use.

<sup>121</sup> *ibid*, p. A-52. (Order of Secretary of the Interior September 30, 1912). See also Act of June 19, 1908, 35 Stat. 840, 25 U. S. C. (Supp.) 871.

<sup>122</sup> Office of Indian Affairs, Order No. 481, Field District Plan, June 21, 1937, p. 2.

relating to Indians within their jurisdiction, from "serving the tribes" to taking care of all Indians. (Department of Interior, Office of Indian Affairs, "Methods and Suggestions for Inspecting Offices of the United States Indian Service," February 23, 1916, p. 7.)

### C COOPERATION WITH OTHER AGENCIES

Some decentralization of administrative control over Indian life<sup>13</sup> has been effected in recent years by the decentralization of government departments, among the federal, state and tribal governments. In earlier decades cooperation where it has existed has been primarily between the Indian Bureau and other federal agencies,<sup>14</sup> not between the Indians and the agencies. In recent years various federal agencies have been in direct contact with the Indians. They include the Soil Conservation Service, the Forest Service Administration, the Social Security Board, the Civilian Conservation Corps,<sup>15</sup> the National Youth Administration, the Public Works Administration and the Works Progress Administration.

The General Land Office assists the Indian Office in the sale of land which the Indians have ceded to the United States.<sup>16</sup> It also adjudicates all administrative Indian allotments and Indian homesteads,<sup>17</sup> and issues rulings on certification by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs<sup>18</sup> who must also consent to the granting of various licenses by the Federal Power Commission<sup>19</sup> and other agencies in irrigation, right of way, power development, and other land use.

In the field of conservation the Indian Service often unites for common action with one or more state or federal bureaus. The Interdepartmental Rio Grande Board, composed of representatives of the Indian Service, Mining Service, and the Bureau of Reclamation of the Department of the Interior, and the Bureau of Conservation Service, the Forest Service, the Forest Service Administration, and the Bureau of Agriculture of the Department of Agriculture,<sup>20</sup> seeks to determine how to conserve the population of Indians and Spanish Americans, and to subvert permanently through the utilization of the Rio Grande watershed in central and northern New Mexico.<sup>21</sup>

A survey and planning unit was created by the Soil Conservation Service to study Indian reservations and prepare plans for proper land use and conservation for the Indian Service.<sup>22</sup> This unit (TC-BIA) has supplied a new type of integrated administrative procedure in which two services are functionally integrated through pre-seeing technical and organizational distance.

<sup>13</sup> See Chapter 5. See also see 2P *supra*, for a statement of policy regarding decentralization by Commissioner Collier in 1933.

<sup>14</sup> 2P *supra*, the Bureau of Plant and Soil Industry of Agriculture and the Reclamation Service, Geological Survey and Forest Service at Interior had cooperated with the Indian Bureau under Commissioner Leupp in 1908. (see sec 2 *supra* also see Rep Comm Ind Mf 1909 pp 2-9.)

<sup>15</sup> The Indian Office has a special division devoted to the C C C. See sec 8A *supra*.

<sup>16</sup> Compare The General Land Office (1921), p. 76.

<sup>17</sup> *Ibid.* p. 88.

<sup>18</sup> *Ibid.* pp. 61-62.

<sup>19</sup> Since the primary responsibility for administering an Indian reservation is in the Commissioner of Indian Affairs and the Secretary of the Interior, it has been urged that the Federal Power Commission must do office to issue a permit if the Secretary believes that a proposed power development would be inconsistent with the purposes of the reservation. (Letter of Assistant Commissioner of Indian Affairs to Chairman, Federal Power Commission, February 10, 1935.)

<sup>20</sup> National Resources Planning Board, General Land Office and Reclamation Service (cooperation are consulting members. (Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1938) p. 64.)

<sup>21</sup> Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1938) p. 283.

<sup>22</sup> Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1939) p. 188. The unit is commonly designated as TC-BIA, Technical Cooperation, Bureau of Indian Affairs.

tions.<sup>23</sup> The TC-BIA works with and through the Indian superintendents, then local chiefs and Indian governing bodies. They are consulted in its surveys, they comment on its findings, and they are expected to carry out its program.<sup>24</sup>

Section 1 of the Act of March 10, 1934,<sup>25</sup> provides:

The Office of Indian Affairs, the Bureau of Fisheries, and the Bureau of Biological Survey are authorized, jointly, to prepare plans for the better protection of the wildlife resources including fish, migratory waterfowl and upland game birds, game animals and fur bearing animals upon all the Indian reservations and unallotted Indian lands coming under the supervision of the Federal Government.

It also empowers the Secretary of the Interior to promulgate such plans and to make the rules for their enforcement.

Where there is danger of depletion of fish and animals, particularly in the case of spawning salmon, where fox or mink hunters in its exploit small local runs, the Office cooperates with the Alaska Game Commission and the Division of Alaska Fish and Game Bureau of Fisheries, in settling problems affecting the rights of Indians.

An interesting cooperative enterprise is the joint operation by the Indian Service and the Bureau of Animal Industry of a sheep genetics laboratory at Fort Wingate, New Mexico.<sup>26</sup>

The Indian Service has always cooperated with the Department of Justice in enforcing prohibition laws and suppressing liquor traffic with the Indians, and generally in litigation affecting Indians.

Other cooperative agencies<sup>27</sup> include the Extension Service of the Department of Agriculture, the Bureau of Mines, Standard Oil, Animal Industry, and Plant Industry, the Public Health Service,<sup>28</sup> the Children's Bureau of the Department of Labor, and agricultural colleges, and education and welfare bureaus of various states.<sup>29</sup>

Mr. Joseph C. McLaughlin, one of Commissioner Collier's first assistants, has summed up the recent trend in Indian administration:

Thus we see the Indian Office divesting its authority into three directions: first among other agencies of the Federal Government which have specialized services to render, second among the local state and county governments which are much more closely associated with the problems in some areas than Washington can be, and third among the tribal governments which have organized governing bodies, and which expect eventually to take over and manage all of the affairs of Indians. Perhaps thus, but not at once, it may be found possible to secure special treatment, special protective and beneficial legislation for the Indians, and they shall become self-supporting, self-managing, and self-directing communities within our national citizenry. (P. 76.)<sup>30</sup>

<sup>23</sup> Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1936) p. 189.

<sup>24</sup> Indian Office Order 483 United States Indian Field Service Rules and Regulations (1910) section A—Administration pp. A-5, A-6.

<sup>25</sup> 48 Stat. 402, 403.

<sup>26</sup> Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1938) p. 283.

<sup>27</sup> Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1936), pp. 109-172, 180-183.

<sup>28</sup> The United States Public Health Service, since 1926 has detailed personnel to the Indian Service, for health and medical work on reservations. *Ibid.* p. 179.

<sup>29</sup> Under the Johnson O'Malley Act of April 18, 1934, 48 Stat. 590, amended by Act of June 4, 1936, 49 Stat. 1493, state educational and health services were made available to certain Indian tribes by contract between the State and the Federal Government. As of 1939 California, Washington, and Minnesota have contracted for the education of Indian children in Wisconsin for child welfare services and Avera for limited educational services. (Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1939), p. 64.) See Chapter 13, sec. 1.

<sup>30</sup> Joseph C. McLaughlin, The Cession of Monopolies, Control of Indians by the Indian Office in Indians of the United States, April 1940, pp. 64-76. This paper was prepared for the First Inter-American Conference on Indian Life, held at Paternate, Mexico, in April 1940.

# CHAPTER 3

## INDIAN TREATIES

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE		PAGE
<i>Section 1 The legal force of Indian treaties</i> .....	33	<i>Section 3 The scope of treaties—Continued</i>	
<i>Section 2 Interpretation of treaties</i> .....	37	<i>B. Consideration of tribal affairs</i> .....	46
<i>Section 3 The scope of treaties</i> .....	38	<i>Section 4 History of Indian treaties</i> .....	46
<i>A. The international status of the tribe</i> .....	39	1 <i>Pre-Revolutionary precedents 1732-1776</i> .....	46
1 <i>War and peace</i> .....	39	2 <i>The Revolutionary War and the peace 1776-83</i> .....	47
2 <i>Boundaries</i> .....	40	3 <i>Defining a national policy 1783-1800</i> .....	48
3 <i>Passports</i> .....	40	4 <i>Extending the national domain 1800-1817</i> .....	51
4 <i>Privatization</i> .....	40	5 <i>Indian removal westward 1817-46</i> .....	53
5 <i>Relations with third powers</i> .....	40	1 <i>Chickasaws</i> .....	54
<i>B. Dependence of tribes on the United States</i> .....	40	2 <i>Chickasaws</i> .....	56
1 <i>Protection</i> .....	41	3 <i>Choctaws</i> .....	56
2 <i>Exclusive trade relations</i> .....	41	4 <i>Chicks</i> .....	58
3 <i>Representation in Congress</i> .....	42	5 <i>Florida Indians</i> .....	60
4 <i>Congressional power</i> .....	42	6 <i>Other tribes</i> .....	60
5 <i>Administrative power</i> .....	42	6 <i>Tribes of the Far West 1846-54</i> .....	62
6 <i>Termination of treaty-making</i> .....	43	7 <i>Experiments in allotment 1854-61</i> .....	63
<i>C. Commercial relations</i> .....	43	8 <i>The Civil War 1861-65</i> .....	64
1 <i>Cessions of land</i> .....	43	9 <i>Post-Civil War treaties 1865-71</i> .....	65
2 <i>Reserved rights in ceded lands</i> .....	44	<i>Section 5 The end of treaty-making</i> .....	66
3 <i>Payments and services to tribes</i> .....	44	<i>Section 6 Indian agreement</i> .....	67
<i>D. Jurisdiction</i> .....	45		
1 <i>Criminal jurisdiction</i> .....	45		
2 <i>Civil jurisdiction</i> .....	45		

### SECTION 1 THE LEGAL FORCE OF INDIAN TREATIES

One who attempts to survey the legal problems raised by Indian treaties must at the outset dispose of the objection that such treaties are somehow of inferior validity or are purely antiquarian interest. These objections apparently spring from the belief that when the treaty method of dealing with the natives was abandoned in the Indian Appropriation Act of 1871<sup>1</sup> the force of treaties in existence at that time also disappeared.

Such an assumption is unfounded. Although treaty making itself is a thing of the past, treaty enforcement continues. As a matter of fact, the act in question expressly provides that these shall be no lessening of obligations already incurred.

The reciprocal obligations assumed by the Federal Government and by the Indian tribes during a period of almost a hundred years constitute a chief source of present-day Indian law. As one legal commentator has pointed out:

" \* \* \* The chief foundation [of federal power over Indian affairs] appears to have been the treaty-making power of the President and Senate with its corollary of Congressional power to implement by legislation the treaties made."

And by a broad reading of these treaties, the national government obtained from the Indians themselves authority

to legislate for them to carry out the purpose of the treaties.<sup>2</sup>

That treaties with Indian tribes are of the same dignity as treaties with foreign nations is a view which has been repeat-

<sup>1</sup> See Rice, *The Position of the American Indian in the Law of the United States* (1921) 16 J Comp Leg 78, 80-81. See also Chapter 5, sec. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Justice Baldwin in the case of *Cherokee Nation v. Georgia* 5 Pet 1 (1831) gives an interesting account of the negotiation of treaties by the Continental Congress with the Indians.

The proceedings of the old congress will be found in 1 Laws U S 597, commencing 1st June 1775 and ending 1st September 1776, of which some extracts will be given 30th June 1775. "Resolved that the committee for Indian affairs do prepare proper rules to the several tribes of Indians, as the Indians depend on the colonies for arms, ammunition and clothing which are so necessary for their subsistence." "That the commissioners have power to treat with the Indians," "to take to their assistance provisions of influence among the Indians." "To preserve the confidence and friendship of the Indians and prevent their selling to the west of the north-west of life, 40,000 trading of Indian goods be imported." "No person shall be permitted to trade with the Indians without a license." "Traders shall sell their goods at reasonable prices, allow them to the Indians for their skins, and take no advantage of their distress and impotence." "The trade to be only at ports designated by the commissioners." Specimens of the kind of intercourse between the congress and deputies of Indians may be seen in pages 602 and 603. They would not incorporation into a judicial opinion (P 84).

<sup>1</sup> Act of March 3, 1871, 16 Stat 544, 596 E S § 2079 25 U S C 71.

<sup>2</sup> See, for example, Act of June 15, 1935, sec 4, 48 Stat 878.



course, a moral obligation rested upon Congress to act in good faith in performing the stipulations entered into on its behalf. But as with treaties made with foreign nations, *Chinese Exclusion Case*, 130 U. S. 581, 600, the legislative power might justly be in conflict with treaties made with the Indians. *Thomas v. Gay*, 169 U. S. 264, 270, *Ward v. Race Horse*, 165 U. S. 701, 711. *Appling v. Chaudry*, 100 U. S. 494, 495. *Hiscoke v. Knowles & Perry Ry. Co.*, 100 U. S. 112, 113. *The Cherokee Tobacco*, 11 Wall 616.

The power exists to abrogate the provisions of an Indian treaty though presumably such power will be exercised only when circumstances arise which will not only justify the government in disregarding the stipulations of the treaty, but in its demand, in the interest of the country and the Indians the necessity that it should do so. When the treaty was entered into between the United States and a tribe of Indians it is never doubted that the power to abrogate existed in Congress, and that in its exercise such power might be ascribed from considerations of governmental policy, particularly if consistent with perfect good faith towards the Indians.

The Attorney General has ruled:<sup>14</sup>

By the 6th article of the Constitution treaties as well as statutes are the laws of the land. There is nothing in the Constitution which assigns different ranks to treaties and to statutes. The Constitution itself is the highest rank which either by the very structure of the Government, or a statute not inconsistent with it, and it is not inconsistent with it, relating to subjects within the scope of the treaty making power, such as stand upon the same level, and to be of equal validity, in the case of all laws emanating from an equal authority, the earlier in date yields to the later. (P. 327)

This doctrine has been qualified by some cases. In the case of *Joint v. Alchon*,<sup>15</sup> it is held that title to land granted to an Indian by treaty cannot be divested by any subsequent action of the lesser Congress or the Executive department.

The constitution of treaties is the prerogative of the judiciary, and, except in cases purely political, Congress has no constitutional power to settle the rights under a treaty, or to affect titles already acquired by the treaty itself. *Wilson v. Wolf*, 6 Wall 53, 89; *Richard v. Felipe*, 6 Wall 160; *Smith v. Stevens*, 10 Wall 321, 327; *Hadden v. Joy*, 37 Wall 211, 247. (P. 322)

Thus the issuance of a patent by the General Land Office upon lands reserved by a treaty with Indians is void.<sup>16</sup>

The Supreme Court is often coupled as a tribunal about the absolute power of Congress to supersede a treaty obligation with a discussion of the moral obligation of the Government to fulfill

<sup>14</sup> 12 Op. A. G. 154 (1870).

<sup>15</sup> Congress has never abrogated treaties unconstitutionally by legislation those with Indians (Linco and the French treaty of 1774 being the chief case), point. *Bowl The Expanding Treaty Power in Selected Events on Constitution of Law vol 2 The Nation and The States* (1918) pp. 410, 414.

The Solicitor of the Department of the Interior has said: "Congress has paramount authority over such reservations, and the Indians occupying them (*Lone Wolf v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 811, 865) and may if it sees fit so to do provide time limits to restrict the Indians in their pursuit and enjoyment of fishing and hunting. *In re Blackfeet*, 109 U. S. 59, 60, 61 (D. C. W. B. 1902). And even when the Indians have been treated with the provisions of prior treaties with the Indians that in respect to authority for upholding their validity. Thus in *The Cherokee Tobacco Case* (11 Wall 616) it is held that a law of Congress imposing a tax on tobacco is in conflict with a prior treaty with the Cherokee, and is paramount to the treaty. And in *Ward v. Race Horse* (165 U. S. 504) the Court said that the provision in treaty of February 24, 1863, with the Shoshone Indians that the Indians were within the limits of what is now the State of Wyoming, that they shall have the right to hunt upon the unoccupied lands of the United States, so long as game may be found thereon, was superseded by the movement of the Shoshone let admitting Wyoming into the Union, and that the Indians were not entitled to the Indians the right to exercise the hunting privilege within the limits of the State in violation of its laws. (94 U. S. 537, 539 (1876))."

<sup>16</sup> 175 U. S. 1 (1899) holding unconstitutional Total Reclamation of August 4, 1894, 28 Stat. 1018, authorizing departmental approval of a lease after the revocation of a different lease by the Indian Landowners.

<sup>17</sup> *United States v. Gorge*, 111 U. S. 847 (1884). Also see *Spaulding v. Chandler*, 160 U. S. 804 (1896). It has been held that an Executive

such a violation. In holding that an act of Congress extended revenue laws over the Indian Territory, despite a prior treaty exempting tobacco raised on Indian reservations, the Court wrote:<sup>17</sup>

A treaty may supersede a prior act of Congress, and an act of Congress may supersede a prior treaty. In the cases stated in these principles were applied to treaties with foreign nations. It treats with Indian nations within the jurisdiction of the United States, which have considerations of humanity and good faith may be involved and require their faithful observance, it must be more obligatory. They have no higher sanctity and no greater inviolability or immunity from legislative invasion can be claimed for them. The consequences in all such cases have led to questions which must be met by the political department of the government. Thus in the sphere of mutual commerce. In the case under consideration the act of Congress must prevail as if the treaty were not an element to be considered. If it wrong has been done, the power of Congress is with Congress, not with the judiciary, and that body, upon being applied to, it is to be presumed, will promptly use the proper relief. (P. 621)

*Justice d. Black v. Veatch*, 2 Pet. 134.  
*2 Federal v. Mason*, 2 Curtis 454. *The Clinton Bridge*, 1 Wash. 177.

By many statutes and occasionally by treaties the Court of Claims has been authorized to determine many claims for treaty violations.<sup>18</sup>

In considering a jurisdictional act<sup>19</sup> the Supreme Court discussed the liability of the United States for a violation of a treaty with the Creek tribe.

But we think it plain that that act only gave authority to the Court of Claims to hear and determine claims for the amount due or claimed to be due said lands from the United States under any treaties or laws of Congress.<sup>20</sup> It does not purport to be a bill of rights, conferred on petitioners, by the treaties or laws of the United States, to authorize any recovery except in accordance with the legal principles applicable in determining those rights under laws and treaties of the United States. See *United States v. Old Settles*, 115 U. S. 427, 468, 469; *United States v. Little Lake (Chippewa)*, 229 U. S. 495, 500. (P. 436)

under which purports to restore to the public domain land ceded by treaty to Indians is unconstitutional. 28 Op. A. G. 141 (1887).

*Cherokee Tobacco*, 11 Wall 616 (1870). For an example of the superseding of a treaty in the General Allotment Act see *Boz D.*, 100 U. S. 40, 190, 211 D. 233.

The moral obligation to perform the terms faithfully was recognized in the promise to the Treaty of August 9, 1814, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 130, which related to the fulfillment "with punctuality and good faith" by the United States of terms of treaty with the Creek upon the time of their making was in that the United States. Also see Chapter 14, sec. 2, in 41.

An example of a treaty superseding a statute is noted in *Cherokee Indians*, 24 Op. A. G. 474 (1870).

See Chapter 14, sec. 2 and Chapter 19, sec. 2, *Ray v. Brown*, *The Indian Problem and the Law* (1940), 9 Yale L. J. 807, 823-324 and Mexican Problem of Indian Administration (1928) pp. 405-811. Treaties in effect the foundation for claims. *United States v. Old Settles*, 115 U. S. 427, 468-469 (1893). Congress may waive the benefit of the rule of *ex aequitate* in allowing another trial of a claim against the United States, *Cherokee Nation v. United States*, 270 U. S. 475 (1926) or disallowing them. *United States v. Old Settles*, 115 U. S. 427, 475 (1893).

*United States v. Old Settles*, 115 U. S. 427, 475 (1893). April 11, 1916, 9 Stat. 47 (Seymour and Whipple lands of Iowa), authorizes the Court of Claims to hear and determine claims "for the amount due or claimed to be due said lands from the United States under any treaty or laws of Congress."

The Supreme Court in *United States v. Blackfeet*, 195 U. S. 8 (1894), held that when the United States undertook by treaty to "expose to sale to the highest bidder" the land ceded to the United States by the Indians and disposed of a large part of it for \$44,000 (1924). The Act of the Federal Government was guilty of a violation of trust.

In a subsequent case the Court held that provisions granting claims against the United States are strictly construed. *Blackfeet v. United States*, 180 U. S. 405, 476 (1900). The Court said:

"The moral obligations of the Government toward the Indians, wherever they may lie, are for Congress alone to recognize,



## SECTION 2 INTERPRETATION OF TREATIES

A third rule in the interpretation of Indian treaties is that ambiguities are resolved in favor of the Indians.<sup>1</sup>

For example, a provision in an Indian treaty which exempts lands from "levy, sale, and forfeiture" is not in the absence of expressions so limiting, if combined to the levy and sale under ordinary judicial proceedings, but also includes the levy and sale by county officers for the nonpayment of taxes.<sup>2</sup>

An agreement embodied in an act of Congress, which in turn "ceded, granted, and relinquished" to the United States all of their "right, title, and interest," did not make the lands public lands in the sense of being subject to sale or other disposition under the general land laws, but only in the manner provided for in the special agreement with the Indians.<sup>3</sup>

The best interests of the Indians,<sup>4</sup> however, do not necessarily coincide with a grant to them of the broadest possible lands. The Supreme Court has held that the best interests of the Indians do not require that they should be allotted lands in fee rather than lands held in trust by the government for them.<sup>5</sup>

While trying to serve the Indians' best interests the courts have indicated that they will not dispose with any of the conditions or requirements of the treaties upon any notion of equity or general convenience or substantial justice. Justice McLean, in the case of *United States v. Ghatnap Yation*,<sup>6</sup> said

But in no case has it been supposed that the court could by mere interpretation or in defiance to its view as to what was right under all the circumstances, incorporate into an Indian treaty something that was inconsistent with the clear import of its words. It has never been held that the obvious, palpable meaning of the words of an Indian treaty may be disregarded because, in the opinion of the court, that meaning may in a particular instance work with it would regard its injustice to the Indians. That would be an intrusion upon the domain constituted by the Constitution to the public department of the Government. Congress did not intend, when passing the act under which this litigation was instituted, to invest the Court of Claims or this court with authority to determine whether the United States had in its fit its with the Indians, violated the principles of law dealing with what was said in *The Amiable Isabella*, 4 Wheat 1, 71, 72, is evidently applicable to treaties with Indians. Mr. Justice Story, speaking for the court, said "In the first

place this court does not possess any treaty making power. That power belongs by the Constitution to another department of the Government, and to that, joined, or added to its activity by inserting its clause, whether small or so important or trivial, would be on our part an institution of power and not in exercise of judicial functions. It would be to make, and not to construe a treaty. Nothing in this court supplies a *coram quo* in a treaty any more than in law. We are to find out the intention of the parties by just rules of interpretation applied to the subject matter, and, having found that, our duty is to follow it as far as it goes, and to stop where that stops—wherever may be the imperfections or difficulties which it leaves behind.

In the next place, this court is bound to give effect to the stipulations of the treaty in the manner and to the extent which the parties have declared and not otherwise. We are not at liberty to dispense with any of the conditions or require amendments of the treaty, or to take its interpretation at an arbitrary point of our stipulation upon any notion of equity or general convenience or substantial justice. The terms which the parties have chosen to fix the form which they have prescribed and the circumstances under which they are to have operation, rest in the exclusive discretion of the contracting parties, and whether they belong to the essence of the moral part of the treaty, the court gives the rule to the judicial tribunals." (17 532-533.)

So, too, it has been held that the reservation of a privilege to fish and hunt on lands transferred by a treaty is established by a treaty does not prevent the prosecution of tribal Indians violating a reservation law on such lands, since the treaty does not expressly or implicitly limit the right of the state to enact conservation measures.

A somewhat different although related, idea of treaty interpretation is the effect that, since the wording in treaties was designed to be understood by the Indians, who often could not read and were not trained in the technical language, doubtful clauses are resolved in a nontechnical way as the Indians would have understood the language.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Kennedy v. Beal* 241 U S 366 (1916). The clause "Also, except fire and serious to them" was the purpose of fishing and hunting on the said tract of land herein intended to be conveyed" (Treaty of September 15, 1797, with the Seneca Nation 7 Stat. 601, 602) was interpreted as

\* \* \* reservation of a privilege of fishing and hunting upon the granted lands in common with the grantee and others to whom the privilege might be extended but not subject to taxation that new ways power of appropriate legislation as to all those privileged which entered in the several acts of Congress or the laws where the privilege was exercised" (17 603-604.)

Interpretations of other clauses are noted in sec. 4 of this Chapter and Chapter 8 sec. 28 and Chapter 14 sec. 7.

<sup>2</sup> *Peaslee v. McGowan*, 215 U S 98, 60 (1909). Chapter 8, sec. 21. See *Worcester v. Georgia* 6 Pet. 515-515-533 (1818). In commenting on frequent mistakes on writer said

\* \* \* As the Indians had no written language and few of the character and knowledge of English, in those transactions were carried on generally through interpreters many of whose were ignorant. The declaration of the finding could not be a source of misapprehension. In the region east of the Mississippi the geography was fairly well known and it was possible to describe the land with a fair degree of accuracy by reference to the streams and ridges the area west of the Mississippi, however, was little known when many of the treaties were made, and the descriptions were of the most indefinite character.

The method of making the treaties varied according to the character of the communities. In those where the Indians were directly represented, notably the treaty with the Cheeks made in 1857, the Indians were present and the English and the "dances" for instance, George C. Shibley, factor at Fort Omaha, give the following account of the negotiations with that tribe in 1863.

\* \* \* On the 28th of November, 1868, Peter Chingone, the Great Spirit, came to the Great Spirit, and after the 10th he assembled the Chiefs and warriors of the Great and Little Omahas in council and proceeded to state to them the substance of a treaty which he said Governor Lewis had demanded that they should sign and to execute with them. Having thereby explained to them the purpose of the treaty, he then made them effect in his hearing and very nearly in the following words: "You have heard this treaty explained to you. Those who now come forward and sign it, shall be considered friends of the United

<sup>1</sup> Also see Chapter 15 sec. 70. Agreements with Indians are interpreted according to the same principles as treaties (See *see 6 infra*). *Martin v. Lowallen* 270 U S 558-564 (1926). Mr. Justice Stone said in the case of *Quarles v. Shaw* 260 U S 407 (1910).

While in general treaty provisions are not to be presumed and strictly construed, they are to be strictly construed, *Henry v. Colonial Trust Co.* 275 U S 232. The contrary is the rule to be applied to tax exemption for the Indians by agreement between them and the national government. *Cherokee v. Georgia* 197. Such provisions are to be liberally construed. Doubtless people who are the wards of the nation dependent upon its protection and good faith. Hence, in the words of Chief Justice Marshall "The language used in treaties with the Indians should never be construed to their prejudice. It would be made use of which is susceptible of a more extended meaning than then plain import, as contrasted with the terms of the treaty, they should be considered as used only in the latter sense." *Worcester v. Georgia* 6 Pet. 515-533. See *the Kansas Indians*, 5 Wall 737-760. And it must be made use of according to their technical meaning, but "in the sense in which they were naturally be understood by the Indians." *Joseph v. McKean*, 170 U S 1, 11. (17 737-760.)

<sup>2</sup> *Winters v. United States* 207 U S 564 (1908), 34 Op. A. G. 480 (1905), 6 Op. A. G. 608 (1874). *Worcester v. Georgia*, 6 Pet. 515, 520 (1818). And see Art. 11 of Treaty of September 8, 1849, with Navajo, 8 Stat. 974.

<sup>3</sup> *The Kansas Indians* 5 Wall 737 (1860).

<sup>4</sup> *The Act of April 27, 1904* 38 Stat. 382 (Crew Reservation) misinterpreted in *Ash Sheep Co. v. United States*, 262 U S 160 (1923).

<sup>5</sup> *See 32 Op. A. G. 580 (1902).*

<sup>6</sup> *Blay v. Long* 260 U S 518, 519, 521 (1918).

<sup>7</sup> 170 U S 494 (1900). Also see *United States v. Minnesota*, 270 U S 181 (1926).



The Supreme Court in the case of *Taney v. Metchum*<sup>11</sup> said:

In constituting any treaty between the United States and an Indian tribe, it must always (as it was pointed out by the counsel for the appellants) be borne in mind that the negotiations for the treaty are conducted on the part of the United States, in civilized and political nation by representatives skilled in diplomacy, ministers of a written language, understood by the modes and forms of creating the various treaties of this kind known to them, and assisted by an interpreter employed by themselves, if the treaty is drawn up by them and in their own language, that the Indians on the other hand, are a weak and dependent people, who have no written language and are wholly unfamiliar with all the forms of law, expression, and whose only knowledge of the terms in which the treaty is framed is that imparted to them by the interpreters employed by the United States, and that the treaty must therefore be construed not according to the technical meaning of its words in English law, but in the sense in which they would naturally be understood by the Indians. (Pp 10-11.)

These principles received many applications in decisions interpreting treaties derived from private conveyances which were often used as treaties with the Indians. For example, the

States and treated accordingly. Those who refuse to come forward and claim it shall be considered enemies of the United States, and treated accordingly. And the United States will not allow any other person to claim a part of this land but must have it that he can show that he has done this and had thought that could they do so he had demanded their land and had thought proper to offer them something in return for it they had no choice they had either sign the treaty or be regarded enemies of the United States. (Memorandum The Office of Indian Affairs Its History Activities and Organization (1947) pp 99-101)

In discussing the status of Indian tribes during the Civil War, one writer stated:

• • • Moreover the Indians fought as selected allies, some as nations diplomatically, others as tribes, but all made war as with tribes, parties and not in the treaty in accordance with the law of nations in time of peace. Vol 10, American Indians in Kinship and Relationship vol 1, the Smithsonian, Indians (1917) p 17.

<sup>11</sup> 17 U S 1 (1909).

<sup>12</sup> *Johnson v. M'Intosh*, 21 U S 50, 70 (1809). See, for example, in Art 4 of the Treaty of September 18 1823, 7 Stat. 224, the United

States and it is not construed as in absolute fee simple, unless the treaty in some other words clearly indicates that the tribe so understood the nature of the conveyance.

The United States Supreme Court, interpreting the clause,

The United States shall cede to be conveyed to the Choctaw Nation a tract of country west of the Mississippi River in fee simple to them and their descendants, in answer to them what they shall exist is a nation and live on it. (P 78.)

held that this did not create a trust for the individuals then comprising the nation and their respective descendants.

Although in interpretation of a treaty should be made in the light of conditions existing when the treaty was executed, as often indicated by its history before and after its making, the exact situation which caused the inclusion of a provision is often difficult to ascertain.<sup>13</sup> New conditions may arise which could not be anticipated by the signatures to a treaty. A judicial administrative construction of a treaty which has long been requested as by contract and action is usually followed by the courts.<sup>14</sup>

Senators promised to guarantee the Seminoles Florida tribes "the reasonable portion of the district country" toward them and the Treaty of September 26 1855 with the Choctaw and others, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 431, provides that in consideration of the cession to them "the United States shall grant to the said United Nation of Indians to be held as other Indian lands, and land which has lately been assigned to emigration, Indians, a tract of country west of the Mississippi river to be assigned to them by the President of the United States."

<sup>13</sup> *Op. A. C.* 22 (1894). And see Chapter 15 see 70.

<sup>14</sup> *Peterson v. McCutcheon*, 215 U S 86 68-69 (1909).

<sup>15</sup> *Memorandum v. United States*, 74 C. C. 375 408 (1898). Also see *Amery v. United States*, 41 C. C. 85 85-87 (1890).

<sup>16</sup> *Op. A. C.* 746 (1911). See *Smith v. Iowa*, 32 F. 2d 744 (C. C. A. 10 1911) and *282 U S 803* (1911) in which the court declined to permit the testimony of interested witnesses to vary after its execution in that the object of the agreement is interpreted by the courts.

<sup>17</sup> *Tracy v. United States*, 12 Fed. C. S. No. 6189 (C. C. Kan. 1878). Also see *Tracy v. United States*, supra in 78 and see Chapter 5 see 7.

### SECTION 3 THE SCOPE OF TREATIES

In the Constitution<sup>15</sup> the President was given power to make treaties, with the advice and consent of the Senate, provided two thirds of the Senators present concur.<sup>16</sup> The Supreme Court, in interpreting this provision, said:<sup>17</sup>

It is manifest that the power is given, in general terms, without any description of the objects intended to be embraced within its scope it must be assumed that the framers of the Constitution intended that it should extend to all these objects which in the intercourse of nations had usually been regarded as the proper subjects of negotiation and treaty, if not inconsistent with the nature of our government and the relation between the States and the United States. (*Johnson v. M'Intosh* et al.,

14 Peters, 569, 1 Kent, 106, 2 Story on the Constitution, § 1508, 7 Hamilton's Works, 501, Duer's Jurisprudence, 229.)

Again, the scope of this power was described by the Supreme Court in the case of *United States v. Forty-three Gallons of Whiskey*<sup>18</sup>:

Besides, the power to make treaties with the Indian tribes is as we have seen, extensive with that to make treaties with foreign nations. In regard to the latter, it is beyond doubt, ample to cover all the usual subjects of diplomacy. (P 197.)

During the last period of treaty making, amendments by the Senate were frequent.<sup>19</sup>

A special limitation of the treaty making power is that it can not appropriate money.<sup>20</sup> Referring to this fact, the Circuit Court for the District of Michigan<sup>21</sup> said that a treaty

• • • cannot bind on control the legislative action in this respect, and every foreign government may be presumed to know, that so far as the treaty stipulates to pay money, the legislative sanction is required. (P 446.)

<sup>18</sup> 93 U S 188 (1870). Also see *Griffin v. Ryan*, 113 U S 288, 206 (1890).

<sup>19</sup> See, for example, Treaty of February 18 1867, with the Seneca and Fox Indians, 16 Stat. 495, Treaty of February 28 1867, with the Seneca, and others, 41 46 Stat. 513, 523.

<sup>20</sup> *24 Op. A. C.* 626 (1904), *26 Op. A. C.* 168 (1904).

<sup>21</sup> *Truman v. American Baptist Missionary Union*, 24 Fed. C. S. No. 14251 (C. C. Mich. 1882).

<sup>15</sup> Treaties already made were recognized by the Constitution. *Cherokee Nation v. Georgia*, 5 Pet. 1 (1831). *Worcester v. Georgia*, 6 Pet. 515, 570 (1832).

<sup>16</sup> Art. 2 sec. 2 cl. 2. An amendment to a treaty adopted by the Senate which did not receive Presidential approval was not embodied in law promulgation cannot be regarded as part of the treaty. *Adams v. United States*, 170 U S 1, 29 (1898). Professor Willoughby writes of the early practice:

During the five years under the Constitution the relations between the President and the Senate were especially close. In 1789 President Washington notified the Senate that he would consent with them to make a treaty with the Indians of the Northwest Territory and on the next day and again two days later, went with General Knox before that body for that purpose. Again in 1790 President Washington, in written communication, asked the advice of the Senate as to a new boundary treaty to be entered into with the Cherokee. The Constitution and the Constitutional Law of the United States (2d ed. 1920) vol. 1, p. 621.

<sup>16</sup> *Holzen v. Joy*, 17 Wall. 212, 242-248 (1872).

However, as Boyd has pointed out<sup>30</sup>

Although in regard to treaties nothing, for appropriations Congress has seemed reluctant to do without making it plain that there was a discretionary right vested in Congress in the premises, such appropriations have always been forthcoming.

Apart from this limitation, treaties may contain provisions which could not constitutionally be included in acts of Congress.<sup>31</sup>

Within the broad scope of "all the moral subjects of diplomacy," the Federal Government and the Indian tribes adopted treaties covering not only all aspects of intercourse between Indians and whites but also some of the internal affairs of the tribes themselves. Among the most important of the subjects covered were:

#### A The international status of the tribe

- 1 War and peace
- 2 Boundaries
- 3 Passports
- 4 Extradition
- 5 Relations with third powers

#### B Dependence of tribes on the United States

- 1 Protection
- 2 Exclusive trade relations
- 3 Representation in Congress
- 4 Congressional power
- 5 Administrative power
- 6 Termination of treaty making

#### C Commercial relations

- 1 Cessions of land
- 2 Reserved rights in ceded land
- 3 Payments and services to tribes

#### D Jurisdiction

- 1 Criminal jurisdiction
- 2 Civil jurisdiction

#### E Control of tribal affairs

### A THE INTERNATIONAL STATUS OF THE TRIBE

Until the last decade of the treaty making period, terms familiar to modern international diplomacy were used in the Indian treaties.

The United States sometimes guaranteed the integrity of the territory of a nation, "unprovoked war was" "repelled, prosecuted and determined" "in conformity with principles of national justice and honorable warfare,"<sup>32</sup> some of the Creek Nation acted "conformity to national truth" and "suffered themselves to be subjugated to violations of their national honor,"<sup>33</sup> the United States desired that "a perfect peace shall exist between the nations or tribes" "named and the republic of Mexico."<sup>34</sup>

Many provisions show the international status of the Indian tribes,<sup>35</sup> through clauses relating to war, boundaries, passports, extradition, and foreign relations.

<sup>30</sup> Boyd, *The Expanding Treaty Power in Selected Essays on Constitutional Law*, vol. 3, *The Nation and the States* (1948), p. 430-434.

<sup>31</sup> *Missionary v. Holland*, 262 U.S. 430 (1923). Also see *Blackd-Boy*, on *Constitutional Law*, vol. 3, pp. 397-405.

<sup>32</sup> For discussion of unusual provisions see sec. 4b of this Chapter. Relevant treaty provisions are discussed in other chapters.

<sup>33</sup> Treaty of September 17, 1778 with the Delaware, Art. 6, 7 Stat. 18; Treaty of August 9, 1814 with the Creeks, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 120, 121.

<sup>34</sup> *Ex parte* Treaty of August 9, 1814, with the Creeks, 7 Stat. 120.

<sup>35</sup> Treaty of August 21, 1835 with the Comanche and others, Art. 9, 7 Stat. 471-475.

<sup>36</sup> Also see Chapter 14, sec. 7.

1 *War and peace*—The capacity of Indian tribes to make war was frequently recognized.<sup>36</sup> Most of the early treaties were treaties of peace and friendship, and often provided for the restoration on exchange of prisoners,<sup>37</sup> and sometimes for hostages until prisoners were released.<sup>38</sup>

Indian tribes have also waged wars with States. The State of Georgia and the Creek Nation were engaged in several wars towards the close of the eighteenth century.<sup>39</sup>

The Supreme Court commented on the status of Indian tribes in these terms:

"We need no instance where Congress has made a formal declaration of war against an Indian nation or tribe but the fact that Indians are engaged in acts of lower hostility to citizens, especially if the Government has deemed it necessary to dispatch military force for their subjugation, is sufficient to constitute a state of war."<sup>40</sup> *United States v. 361 U.S. 297* (1957).

A few treaties included mutual assistance pacts. By Article 8 of the Treaty of January 9, 1789 with the Winneton and others,<sup>41</sup> the parties agreed to give notice of war on any harm that might be meddled with the other party, and do all in their power to hinder and prevent the same.<sup>42</sup> Article 2 of the Treaty of July 22, 1814, with the Winneton and others,<sup>43</sup> provided that

"The tribes and bands abovementioned, engage to give them aid to the United States in prosecuting the war against Great Britain, and such of the Indian tribes as will continue hostile, and to make no peace with either without the consent of the United States."

In some treaties the Indians agreed to suppress insurrections and permit the military occupation of their country by the United States,<sup>44</sup> or the establishment of garrisons or forts by the

<sup>36</sup> *Ex parte* Treaty of Dinwiddie River, September 27, 1810, with the Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 838-839.

<sup>37</sup> "no war shall be undertaken or prosecuted by said Cherokee Nation but by declaration made in full Council and to be approved by the U.S. unless it be in self defence." " " " (Art. 7).

For a discussion see *Flaming v. McChesney*, 215 U.S. 58-60 (1909).

<sup>38</sup> Treaty of September 17, 1778 with the Delaware Nation, 7 Stat. 18. "That a perpetual peace and friendship shall from henceforth take place." " " (Art. 4). Later treaties "have peace" "This was intended to cover 'peace and friendship' is made clear in Treaty of January 9, 1789 with the Winneton, Art. XIII, 7 Stat. 18, which "renewed and confirmed the peace and friendship entered into in an earlier treaty." "This clause merely gave peace." Treaty of January 21, 1787 with the Winneton, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 18. See for example, "A Treaty of Peace and Friendship, with the Chickasaw, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 141 and Treaty of September 20, 1814, with the Chickasaw, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 170.

<sup>39</sup> Treaty of November 28, 1785 with the Cherokees, Art. 1 and 2, 7 Stat. 18. Treaty of July 2, 1781 with the Cherokees, Art. 3, 7 Stat. 40.

<sup>40</sup> Treaty of October 22, 1794 with the Six Nations, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 15. Treaty of January 31, 1785, with the Winneton and others, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 16.

<sup>41</sup> See 2 Op. A. G. 110 (1848).  
<sup>42</sup> *Montoya v. United States*, 180 U.S. 261 (1901). See Chapter 14, sec. 8.

<sup>43</sup> 7 Stat. 28. See also Treaty of August 9, 1814 with the Winneton, Art. 9, 7 Stat. 49. Treaty of November 28, 1785 with the Cherokees, Art. 11, 7 Stat. 18. Treaty of January 8, 1786, with the Chickasaw, Art. 10, 7 Stat. 21. Treaty of January 31, 1785, with the Shawnee Nation, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 28.

<sup>44</sup> 7 Stat. 118. Article 12 of the Treaty of November 10, 1808, with the Great and Little Osage Nations, 7 Stat. 107, provided:

"And the chiefs and warriors of aforesaid nation and engage that neither the Great nor Little Osage nation will ever, by sale, exchange or in any other manner supply any nation or tribe of Indians, not in treaty with the United States, with guns, ammunition or other implements of war."

Also see Treaty of July 8, 1825, with the Belinseetee or Minnetonkae Tribe, Art. 7, 7 Stat. 261.

<sup>45</sup> Treaty of March 21, 1800, with the Seminoles, Art. 1, 14 Stat. 705.

President,<sup>8</sup> or to prevent other tribes from making hostile demonstrations against the United States government or people.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>2</sup> *Boundaries*—The treaties are usually separated by frontier lines. Many treaties fixed the boundaries between the United States and Indian tribes, and between Indian tribes.<sup>10</sup> Old boundaries were sometimes altered,<sup>11</sup> and during the removal period, treaties actually described the new territory allotted to the Indians.<sup>12</sup>

Frequently treaties prohibited the trespass<sup>13</sup> of settlement<sup>14</sup> of American citizens on Indian territory unless licensed to do so.<sup>15</sup>

Such provisions were supplemented by statutes.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>3</sup> *Passports*—Additional evidence of the national character of the Indian tribes appears in the provisions requiring passports for citizens or individuals of the United States to enter the domain of an Indian tribe. The Treaty of August 7, 1790,<sup>17</sup> with the Creek Nation provided in part:

"No shall any such citizen or individual go into the Creek country, without a passport first obtained from the Governor of some one of the United States on the office of the troops of the United States commanding at the nearest military post on the frontiers, or such other person as the President of the United States may, from time to time, authorize to grant the same."

Such provisions were supplemented by statutes which required citizens of the United States, as well as foreigners, to secure passports before entering the Indian country, this statutory requirement being later revised in the case of citizens.<sup>18</sup>

<sup>4</sup> *Extradition*—The surrender of fugitives from justice by one nation to another is usually covered by treaty similarity with the Indians and the United States.

Some treaties required the Indian tribes to deliver up persons committing crimes who were on their land, to be punished by the

United States.<sup>19</sup> A few treaties provided for the extradition of such persons for punishment by the states,<sup>20</sup> or by the States or territory of the United States northward of the Ohio.<sup>21</sup> A few only of treaties provided for the punishment of United States citizens in the presence of the Indians.<sup>22</sup> A particularly broad provision in regard to extradition was contained in the Treaty of June 19, 1858, with the Sioux,<sup>23</sup> which requires the extradition of violators of treaties, laws, and regulations of the United States or of the law of the State of Minnesota. Other treaties provided that the Indians shall prevent fugitive slaves from taking shelter among them and shall deliver such fugitives to the United States.<sup>24</sup>

<sup>5</sup> *Relations with third powers*—During the first few decades of the Republic, the political relations of many of the Indian tribes were not confined to the United States. As late as 1835<sup>25</sup> the "friendly relations" existing between some Indian tribes and the Republic of Mexico,<sup>26</sup> the Republic of Texas,<sup>27</sup> and among the seven Indian tribes were formally recognized by the United States.<sup>28</sup>

## B DEPENDENCE OF TRIBES ON THE UNITED STATES

While the national character of Indian tribes has been frequently recognized in treaties,<sup>29</sup> and statutes,<sup>30</sup> numerous treaties provisions establish their status as dependent nations.<sup>31</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Article 9 of the Treaty of January 21, 1785 with the Winndots and others, 7 Stat. 16 provides:

"If any Indian or Indians shall commit a robbery or murder on any citizen of the United States, the title to which shall offend any law of the United States, shall be bound to deliver them up, at the first request, to be punished according to the ordinances of the United States."

Also see Treaty of September 27, 1790 with the Choctaws, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 8-9.

<sup>2</sup> Treaty of July 2, 1791, with the Cherokee Nation, Art. 11, 7 Stat. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of January 6, 1790 with the Winndots and others, Art. 6, 7 Stat. 28.

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of November 28, 1785 with the Choctaws, Art. 7, 7 Stat. 19.

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of January 8, 1790 with the Cherokee Nation, Art. 6, 7 Stat. 21.

<sup>6</sup> Article 7 of the Treaty of May 17, 1846 with the Comanches and others, 9 Stat. 944 provided that Indians guilty of assassination shall be delivered up to the United States.

<sup>7</sup> Art. 6, 12 Stat. 1037. Also see Treaty of March 12, 1859, with the Poncas, Art. 7, 12 Stat. 907. For an example of a provision providing for extradition between tribes see Treaty of August 7, 1866 with the Creek and Seminole, Art. 14, 14 Stat. 690.

<sup>8</sup> Treaty of September 18, 1831, with the Flatheads, Art. 7, 7 Stat. 221.

<sup>9</sup> Treaty of August 24, 1835, with the Comanches and others, 7 Stat. 171.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, Art. 10.

<sup>11</sup> Treaty of May 26, 1837, with the Kioway and others, 7 Stat. 135.

<sup>12</sup> See in 185 Stat. 1 Indian tribes also made treaties with the states and with the United States. The Federal Government sometimes entered state dealings with Indians. While at times entered into treaties with Indian prior to the adoption of the Constitution (W. A. DAVIS, *Outline of Legislation on the Constitutional Jurisdiction of the United States*, 2d ed. (1890), p. 293).

<sup>13</sup> The Constitution forbids a state from entering into any treaty, alliance, or federation. \* \* \* (Art. 1, sec. 10. See *Coffey v. Grouse*, 128 U. S. 13-14 (1887)).

<sup>14</sup> Many states like New York entered into numerous treaties with Indian tribes subsequent to the Constitution with the consent of the United States. (See *Supreme Court in Worcester v. Georgia*, 6 Pet. 515, 551 and "Under the constitution no state can enter into any treaty, and it is believed, that, since its adoption, no state under its own authority, has held a treaty with the Indians.")

<sup>15</sup> *Second Coffey v. Grouse*, 128 U. S. 13, 15 (1887). See Chapter 8, sec. 11. On the view of the South that such state succeeded to the property rights of Great Britain and could treat with the Indians as it pleased, see *United States v. Groom County, N. C.*, 10 F. 2d 99, D. C. W. D. N. C. 1900, rev'd sub nom *United States v. Wright*, 61 F. 2d 300 (C. C. N. C., 1891), cert. den. 285 U. S. 689 (1911).

<sup>16</sup> Treaty of January 21, 1785, with the Winndots and others, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 16.

<sup>17</sup> Treaty of November 28, 1785 with the Choctaws, Art. 3, 7 Stat. 18.

<sup>18</sup> Treaty of January 8, 1790, with the Cherokee Nation, Art. 3, 7 Stat. 19.

<sup>19</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 8.

<sup>20</sup> The relationship of the United States to the Indians has been likened to suzerainty. Wilson and Tucker, *International Law* (1880), p. 63.

<sup>1</sup> Treaty of June 19, 1858 with the Creek Nation, Art. 9, 7 Stat. 69.

<sup>2</sup> Treaty of November 10, 1808 with the Osage, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 107.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of October 20, 1805 with the Delaware, Art. 1, 11 Stat. 731.

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 17, sec. 12 and see Art. 4 of this Chapter.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 1, sec. 9 in 10. The primary purpose of some treaties was to establish boundaries. 7 Op. U. S. 31 (1835).

<sup>6</sup> Treaty of August 19, 1825 with the Sioux and others, 7 Stat. 272.

<sup>7</sup> Article 1 provided for peace between Sioux and Chippewas, Sioux and Punks and the Torwags.

<sup>8</sup> Treaty of July 2, 1791 with the Cherokee, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 80.

<sup>9</sup> Treaty of October 27, 1802 with the Choctaws, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 71.

<sup>10</sup> See sec. 4B infra. Also see Treaty of December 29, 1836 with the Choctaws, Art. 10, 7 Stat. 478 providing for removal of Indians to reservations.

<sup>11</sup> Article 5 of the Treaty of January 19, 1832 with a band of the Wyandots, 7 Stat. 304 provides that the band may:

\* \* \* remove to and live on the river Blaine in Michigan where they own a reservation of land or to any place they may obtain a right of purchase from other Indians to go.

<sup>12</sup> See sec. 4B infra and see Chapter 15, sec. 5.

<sup>13</sup> Article 9 of the Treaty of May 24, 1814, with the Chickasaws, 7 Stat. 460, provides that:

\* \* \* the agent of the United States, upon the application of the chiefs of the nation will resort to every just and civil remedy, (at the expense of the United States), to prevent any wrong done to the said country. \* \* \*

<sup>14</sup> Article 7 of the Treaty of March 6, 1801 with the Sacs and others, 12 Stat. 174, provided that no member of a tribe, except Government employes or persons connected with Government service, shall go on the reservation (except with the permission of the agent or the Superintendent of Indian Affairs).

<sup>15</sup> Treaty of January 21, 1785, with the Winndots and others, Art. 5, 7 Stat. 16.

<sup>16</sup> Treaty of July 2, 1791, with the Cherokee Nation, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 29. Also see sec. 4C infra.

<sup>17</sup> See Chapter 10.

<sup>18</sup> See Art. 16 of May 19, 1790, 1 Stat. 480. Also see Art. of March 7, 1795, sec. 1, 1 Stat. 748 and Art. of March 30, 1805, sec. 2, 2 Stat. 159. See in 47, Chapter 1.

<sup>19</sup> Art. 7, 7 Stat. 85, 87. See also Treaty of July 2, 1791, with the Choctaws, Art. 9, 7 Stat. 89.

<sup>20</sup> See Chapter 4, sec. 8.

3. *Protection*—For example, article 2 of the Treaty of August 14, 1804, with the Kickapoois,<sup>127</sup> provides that—

The United States will take the Kickapoois tribe under their immediate care and protection, and will afford them the same protection as is afforded to the other Indian tribes and against all other persons whatever who are charged by their own citizens. And the said Kickapoois tribe do hereby engage to refrain from making war or taking any insult or offence to any other Indian tribe or to any foreign nation, without having first obtained the approbation and consent of the United States. (P. 78.)

Similar provisions are contained in other treaties.<sup>128</sup> In constituting a similar provision, the Supreme Court said<sup>129</sup>

By this treaty [Treaty of Hopewell] the Cherokees were recognized as one people, composing one tribe or nation, but subject, however, to the jurisdiction and authority of the Government of the United States, which could regulate their trade and manage all their affairs. (P. 293.)

Treaties with many of the other tribes left no doubt of the protection of the United States to them.<sup>130</sup>

In many respects this relationship is similar to that established in a great variety of cases between great powers and small, weak or backward states. Thus the limitations upon Indian law making and enforcement which appear in some treaties may be likened to the limitations imposed upon the jurisdiction of certain oriental states, such as China, over the nationals of western countries residing within their territories.<sup>131</sup>

The practical inequality of the parties must be borne in mind in testing Indian treaties. It explains the presence of many cessions and the frequency with which similar or identical provisions appear in many Indian treaties during certain periods.<sup>132</sup> Each tribe is *vis à vis* relations.<sup>133</sup> The political dependence of the Indian tribes upon the United States Government implied, and was implied by, their economic dependence. This economic dependence found expression in agreements by the tribes not to sell real or personal property or otherwise have commercial dealings with other sovereigns than the Federal Government or with their

<sup>127</sup> 7 Stat. 78.

<sup>128</sup> The Treaty of August 7, 1790, with the Creek Nation, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 45 provides that

The said United Kings, Chiefs and Warriors, for themselves and all parts of the Creek Nation within the limits of the United States do acknowledge, themselves and the said parts of the Creek Nation to be under the protection and authority of the United States and of no other nation whatever; and they also stipulate that the said Creek Nation will not hold any treaty with an individual State or with individuals of any State.

The Treaty of November 17, 1807 with the Ottawa and others, Art. 7, 7 Stat. 103, provides that

The said Nations of Indians acknowledge themselves to be under the protection of the United States, and no other power, and will prove by their conduct that they are worthy of so great a blessing. Compare the following excerpt from the first section of a law passed by the Georgia Legislature on October 4, 1787, quoted in 2 Op. A. G. 110, 124 (1828).

\* \* \* That from and immediately after the passing of this act the Creek Indians shall be considered as out of the protection of this State, and it shall be lawful for the government and people of the same to go to war with, capture, kill and Indians wherever they may be found within the limits of the State. \* \* \* (Pp. 122-123.)

<sup>129</sup> *Worcester v. United States*, 11 U. S. 409 (1806).

<sup>130</sup> For example, Treaty of December 30, 1840, with the Utah Indians, Arts. 1 and 4, 5 Stat. 984.

<sup>131</sup> Cf. Dickinson, *The Equality of States in International Law* (1920), p. 224.

<sup>132</sup> For example, Treaty of September 26, 1825, with the Ottawa and Missourians, 7 Stat. 277, and the Treaty of September 30, 1825, with the Pawnees, 7 Stat. 279, Treaty of October 28, 1807, with the Cheyennes, *Apaches* Treaty Art. 11, 15 Stat. 874, and Treaty of April 29, et seq., 1868, with the Sioux, Art. 11, 15 Stat. 885. Also see Chapter 8, sec. 11, *supra*.

<sup>133</sup> *Id.* Chapter 10.

207785-41—5

citizens or even with citizens of the United States not authorized by the Federal Government to engage in such transactions.

In some cases, these limitations were explicit, as in Article 16 of the Treaty of November 18, 1808,<sup>134</sup> whereby the Osages declined all right to

cede sell or in any manner transfer their lands to any foreign power, or to citizens of the United States or to individuals of Louisiana, unless duly authorized by the President of the United States to make the said purchase or accept the said cession on behalf of the government.

In other cases, the exclusiveness of economic relations with the Federal Government was implied in agreements that the United States "shall have the sole and exclusive right of regulating the trade with the Indians."<sup>135</sup>

Occasionally a tribe was given power to regulate its trade and intercourse with the United States in compliance with the constitution of the United States and the laws made in pursuance thereof regulating trade and intercourse with the Indians,<sup>136</sup> or was empowered to veto the admission of a trading house to its trade within certain limits.<sup>137</sup>

Some treaties provided for the appointment of an agent to trade with the Indians,<sup>138</sup> and established trading posts to designated places for trade.<sup>139</sup> Occasionally Indians were prohibited from trading outside the limits of the United States,<sup>140</sup> or were required to approach foreigners or other unauthorized persons coming "into their district of country, for the purposes of trade or other views," and to deliver them to federal officials.<sup>141</sup>

<sup>134</sup> 7 Stat. 107, 109. Also see Treaty of January 9, 1789 with the Winitons and others, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 42; Treaty of September 21, 1812 with the Sioux and others, Art. 5, 7 Stat. 174; Treaty of May 17, 1810 with the Comanches and others, Art. 2, 9 Stat. 844.

<sup>135</sup> Treaty of November 25, 1795, with the Chickasaw, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 15; Treaty of January 10, 1796, with the Chickasaw, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 24; Art. 13 of the Treaty of June 9, 1825 with the Ponca Tribe, 7 Stat. 247 contains another type of trade clause.

\* \* \* The said tribe do admit the right of the United States to regulate its trade and intercourse with them.

Also see Treaty of January 3, 1786, with the Choctaw Nation, Arts. 8, 7 Stat. 21.

<sup>136</sup> Sometimes this power was granted for mutual considerations. Treaty of July 9, 1825, with the Cheyenne Tribe, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 285; Treaty of July 30, 1825, with the Delaware and Miami Tribes, Art. 5, 7 Stat. 261.

<sup>137</sup> The Treaty of December 30, 1840, Arts. 1 and 4, 5 Stat. 984 provided for the submission of the Utah Indians to the power and authority of the United States, and extended to these Indians the trade and intercourse laws already applicable to other tribes. Also see Treaty of September 9, 1849, with the Navajo, Art. 4, 9 Stat. 974. Some of the treaties did not contain such sweeping provisions, but merely provided that the United States never to admit and hence it ideas to hold into commerce with said tribe (the signatory tribe), under mild and equitable regulations. Treaty of June 9, 1825, with the Ponca Tribe, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 247. The similar provisions see Treaty of June 22, 1825, with the Ponca Nation and 2 counties bands of Sioux, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 250, and Treaty of July 3, 1826, with the Seneca and Onondaga Tribes of Sioux, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 263.

<sup>138</sup> Treaty of August 7, 1806, with the Creek and Seminole, Art. 15, 11 Stat. 609. But cf. 1 Op. A. G. 645 (1804).

<sup>139</sup> Treaty of July 19, 1800 with the Choctaw, Art. 5, 14 Stat. 799.

<sup>140</sup> *Id.*, Treaty of September 17, 1775, with the Delawares, Art. 5, 7 Stat. 18.

<sup>141</sup> Treaty of January 9, 1789, with the Winitons and others, Arts. 10, 11 and 12, 7 Stat. 28; Treaty of June 20, 1790, with the Creek, Art. 10, 7 Stat. 90. See Chapter 10.

<sup>142</sup> Treaty of July 5, 1825, with the Seneca and Onondaga Tribes, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 262; Treaty of July 9, 1825, with the Cheyenne Tribe, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 250; Treaty of January 9, 1789, with the Winitons and others, Art. 7, 7 Stat. 28.

<sup>143</sup> Treaty of August 8, 1786, with the Winitons and others, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 49.

<sup>144</sup> Treaty of December 20, 1854, with the Nagsqually and others, Art. 14, 10 Stat. 1132.

<sup>145</sup> Treaty of September 20, 1825, with the Ottawa and Missourians, Arts. 4, 7 Stat. 277; Treaty of September 30, 1825, with the Pawnees, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 279.

*Representation in Congress*—Further light on the relations between the tribes and the Federal Government may be found in treaties which provided for the election of Indian delegates to Congress.<sup>1</sup> This practice was explained in the report of the House Committee on Indian Affairs in the Trade and Intercourse Act of 1834.<sup>2</sup>

The proposition for allowing Indians a delegate is now new for the first time brought forward.

It was first suggested in 1769, and in the first treaty ever formed by the United States with any Indian tribe. The treaty with the Delaware of the 12th September, 1763, contains the following article. And it is further agreed, that in the contracting parties (should it be the future) be found conducive for the interests of both parties) to invite any other tribes who have been friends to the interests of the United States to join the present confederation and to form a State, whereas the Delaware nation shall be the first, and have a representative in Congress. Provided Nothing contained in this article is to be considered as conclusive until it meets with the approbation of Congress.<sup>3</sup>

In the treaty of Hopewell, of 1775, is the following article: "Article 12 That the Indians may have full confidence in the justice of the United States in respect to their interests they shall have the right to send a deputy of their choice, whenever they think fit to Congress."<sup>4</sup>

In the treaty with the Creek nation of September, 1809, they represent the privilege of having a delegate in the House of Representatives by the treaty stipulations that "the commissioners do not feel that they can make a treaty stipulation accord to the request, but if their desire present it in the treaty, that Congress may consider and decide the application."<sup>5</sup>

The proposition is now presented to Congress with the decided opinion of the committee that it ought to receive a favorable consideration. (Rep. 21-22)

This recommendation is now effectuated.

*Consensual power*—The extent to which Indian treaties limited or confirmed consensual power to legislate over Indian affairs is the subject of a separate inquiry.<sup>6</sup> For the present it is sufficient to note that federal statutes have been extended over Indian country by the mere force of a treaty,<sup>7</sup> and that treaties sometimes provided for the creation of United States courts in the Indian country.<sup>8</sup> Thus, for example, Article 2 of the Treaty of October 4, 1812,<sup>9</sup> with the Chippewa Indians provided in part

The Indians stipulate that the laws of the United States shall be continued in force, in respect to their trade and intercourse with the whites, until otherwise ordered by Congress.

Article 7 of the Treaty of October 2, 1861,<sup>10</sup> with the Chippewa Indians reads

The laws of the United States now in force, on that now hereafter be enacted prohibiting the introduction and sale of spirituous liquors in the Indian country, shall be in full force and effect thenceforth, until the contrary be so ordered, until otherwise directed in Congress or the President of the United States.

The Treaty of February 27, 1865,<sup>11</sup> with the Winnebago Indians provided

The laws which have been or may be enacted by Congress, regulating trade and intercourse with the Indian tribes, shall continue and be in force within the country herein provided to be selected as the future permanent home of the Winnebago Indians, and those portions of

and laws which prohibit the introduction, manufacture and sale of spirituous liquors, in the Indian country, shall continue and be in force within the country herein ceded to the United States, until otherwise provided by Congress.

*Administrative power*—The President was frequently granted considerable power in treaties. He was authorized to establish trading posts,<sup>12</sup> military posts or garrisons on Indian lands,<sup>13</sup> to designate the places for trade<sup>14</sup> to appoint agents,<sup>15</sup> to inhibit the claims of whites against Indians and Indians against whites,<sup>16</sup> to inhibit the migration of<sup>17</sup> and other difficulties between tribes,<sup>18</sup> to prescribe the time of the removal and settlement of Indians,<sup>19</sup> to determine whether grants of land to certain Indians shall be conveyed,<sup>20</sup> to dispose of certain reserved lands as he sees fit,<sup>21</sup> to give reservations to the headmen of a tribe,<sup>22</sup> or a title<sup>23</sup> in agriculture and<sup>24</sup> to extend to an Indian tribe "from time to time, such benefits and acts of kindness as may be convenient, and seem just and proper" to him,<sup>25</sup> to decrease the amount of rations in proportion to any unusual decrease of the Peace and stop the payment of rations in the event that "satisfactory efforts to advance and improve their condition were not made,"<sup>26</sup> to approve offerings chosen by the chiefs and head men,<sup>27</sup> to invest tribal money in stock,<sup>28</sup> to pay the payments to the chiefs and headmen of Indians,<sup>29</sup> and to receive complaints of injuries done by individuals to the Indians and see such paid as they "shall be necessary to preserve the said peace and friendship" with an Indian tribe.<sup>30</sup>

Article 7 of the Treaty of September 30, 1800,<sup>31</sup> with the Delaware, and others provided in part

when any theft or other depredation shall be committed by any individual or individuals of one of the tribes above mentioned, upon the property of any individual or individuals of another tribe, the chiefs of the party injured shall make application to the agent of the

<sup>1</sup> Treaty of June 20, 1760, with the Creek Nation, Art. 3(a), 7 Stat. 29.

<sup>2</sup> Treaty of June 10, 1802, with the Creek Nation, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 65. Other federal officials like Secretary of the Interior and the Commissioner of Indian Affairs were also at initial power by treaty.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of July 7, 1825, with the Shawnee and Ogishbee Tribes, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 452. Treaty of July 6, 1825, with the Cherokee Tribe, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 295.

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of October 20, 1842, with the Chickasaw Nation, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 481.

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of January 6, 1821, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 217.

<sup>6</sup> Treaty of August 11, 1847, with the Chippewa and others, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 63.

<sup>7</sup> Treaty of September 21, 1858, with the Oregon and Missouian, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 420.

<sup>8</sup> Treaty of February 8, 1833, with the Menomonee, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 342.

<sup>9</sup> Treaty of September 17, 1818, with the Wyandots and others, Art. 7, 7 Stat. 175. Treaty of October 2, 1818, with the Potawatamie Nation, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 185.

<sup>10</sup> Treaty of June 2, 1861, with the Ojibwa, Art. 10, 7 Stat. 340.

<sup>11</sup> Treaty of October 1, 1865, with the Western Band of Shoshonee, Art. 6, 18 Stat. 689.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid. Art. 7.

<sup>13</sup> Treaty of September 24, 1819, with the Chippewa Nation, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 203.

<sup>14</sup> Treaty of June 6, 1825, with the Chippewa Tribe, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 235.

<sup>15</sup> Treaty of March 12, 1866, with the Pawnee, Art. 2, 12 Stat. 897, also see Treaty of March 15, 1861, with the Arapahoe and Cheyenne Indians, Art. 4, 12 Stat. 1164.

<sup>16</sup> Treaty of November 5, 1857, with the Tonawanda Band of Senecas, Art. 6, 12 Stat. 791.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., Art. 6. Also see Treaty of October 1, 1899, with the Shos and Bannocks of the Missouian, Art. 11, 15 Stat. 467, giving the Secretary power over tribal money.

<sup>18</sup> Treaty of November 1, 1837, with the Winnebago Nation, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 514, interpreted in 4 Op. A. G. 371 (1880).

<sup>19</sup> Treaty of August 8, 1793, with the Wyandots and others, Art. 10, 7 Stat. 49.

<sup>20</sup> 7 Stat. 113.

<sup>1</sup> See sec. 4B, infra.

<sup>2</sup> H. Rept. No. 474, Comm. on Ind. Aff., 28 Cong., 1st sess., May 20, 1884.

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter 3, sec. 2.

<sup>4</sup> *See note on Ohio Dog*, 100 U. S. 595, 597 (1888).

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of July 19, 1866, with the Cheyenne, Art. 7, 14 Stat. 700.

<sup>6</sup> 7 Stat. 601.

<sup>7</sup> 12 Stat. 667. See Chapters 17, sec. 1, fn. 14.

<sup>8</sup> Art. 8, 10 Stat. 1172.

United States, who is charged with the delivery of the annuities of the tribe to which the offending party belongs, whose duty it shall be to hear the proofs and allegations on either side, and determine between them, and the amount of his award shall be immediately deducted from the annuity of the tribe to which the offending party belongs, and given to the person injured, or to the chief of his village for his use.

Treaties provided for the withholding, for a year or for such time as an administrator should determine, of annuities of an Indian drinking intoxicating liquors or providing others with liquor in violation of treaty provisions.<sup>12</sup> Administrative determinations were also authorized for reducing annuities in cases of depredations<sup>13</sup> and horse stealing.<sup>14</sup>

**6 Termination of treaty-making.**—The last stage of dependent cession is reached when a treaty-making power abandons the right to make further treaties. Such a provision is found in the Treaty of February 28, 1801,<sup>15</sup> with the Aikpahwe and Cheyenne Indians:

• And, in order to render unnecessary any further treaty engagements or arrangements hereafter with the United States, it is hereby agreed and stipulated that the President, with the assent of Congress, shall have full power to modify or change any of the provisions of former treaties with the Aikpahwe and Cheyennes of the Upper Arkansas, in such manner and to whatever extent he may judge to be necessary and expedient for their best interests.

A similar result is achieved by treaties in which a tribe makes provision for the termination of its tribal existence.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>12</sup> Treaty of March 12, 1858, with the Poncha, 12 Stat. 907, Treaty of June 19, 1858, with the Sioux, Art. 7, 12 Stat. 1037. The use of congressional power in conjunction with the treaty-making power to impose prohibitions against the liquor traffic by treaties with the Indians is discussed in Chapter 17, see 2. Treaty provisions regarding the enforcement of liquor prohibition laws were common.

Article 12 of the Treaty of October 18, 1820, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 210 provided:

In order to promote industry and sobriety, amongst all classes of the said people in said nation but particularly the poor it is further provided by the parties, that the agent appointed to reside here shall be and he is hereby vested with full power to seize and confiscate all the whiskey which may be introduced into said nation except that used at public dances or brought in by the permit of the agent or the principal chiefs of the three districts.

The Indians were sometimes required to aid in the enforcement of these laws. Thus provisions were sometimes made whereby the Indians promised to fill the gaps of violations of liquor prohibitions. (Treaty of May 17, 1846 with the Comanche and other tribes, Art. 12, 9 Stat. 864.)

In some of the treaties the Indians promised "to use their best efforts to prevent the introduction and use of ardent spirits in their country." (Treaty of May 18, 1814, with the Sac and Foxes, Art. 10, 10 Stat. 1074.) The Treaty of February 11, 1850, with the Micmacs, Art. 1(2), 11 Stat. 679, provided "that the Micmacs will suppress the use of ardent spirits among their people and forbid, by all prudent means, its introduction in their settlements."

The Treaty of February 22, 1795, with the Chippewas, Art. 9, 10 Stat. 1165 provides:

• • • that they will abstain from the use of intoxicating drinks and other liquors which they have been addicted.

<sup>13</sup> Treaty of September 10, 1800, with the Delawares and others, Art. 7, 7 Stat. 113.

<sup>14</sup> Treaty of June 26, 1794 with the Choctaw Nation, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 41. Article 7 of the Treaty of January 22, 1805, with the Willamette Indians, 10 Stat. 1147, provided that:

• • • any one of them who shall drink liquor or procure it for other Indians to drink may have his or her proportion of the annuities withheld from him or her for such time as the President may determine.

Also see Treaty of December 26, 1854, with the Nisqually, Art. 9, 10 Stat. 1142.

<sup>15</sup> Art. 7, 12 Stat. 1103.

<sup>16</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 1-2.

## C COMMERCIAL RELATIONS

Commercial things gradually formed the substance of those treaties which were not specifically treaties of peace.

**1 Cessions of land.**—That which the Indians had which the United States most desired was, until very recently, land. The process of treaty-making was the first method of acquiring lands for, as well as from, the Indians.<sup>17</sup> The United States and the Indians sometimes exchanged land,<sup>18</sup> and land was sometimes ceded to the states.<sup>19</sup>

The right to pass through the Indian territory in certain places was sometimes reserved by the United States,<sup>20</sup> as were rights to build roads and establish mills and ferries,<sup>21</sup> or to transmit telegraph lines or railroads,<sup>22</sup> or a named railroad to have a right of way (provided full compensation is paid),<sup>23</sup> and options to purchase rights of way.<sup>24</sup>

Considerable power was often given to the Federal Government by provisions relating to land. The Treaty of August 5, 1824,<sup>25</sup> granted to the United States the right to search for minerals.

Many treaties empowered the United States to allot land to Indians,<sup>26</sup> which, in a few cases was made "except from tax-

<sup>17</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 2. Westwood Legal Aspects of Land Acquisition, p. 2. Indians and the Land. Contributions by the Delegation of the United States. First Inter-American Conference on Indian Life, Patuxent, Md., Nov., published by Office of Indian Affairs April 1940.

<sup>18</sup> For an example of cession by the United States to Indians see Treaty of September 17, 1812, with the Winnebagoes, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 370. For an example of a reservation for a tribe of land from a cession see Treaty of September 21, 1812, with the Sac and Fox, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 371. Land was ceded to the Indians including the right to have small lands. This will be not be sold at a higher price than 37¢ per bushel of 80 pounds weight, otherwise the Jews would be sold. Treaty of October 19, 1816, with the Chickasaws, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 192. It is well settled that good title to lands of an Indian tribe may be granted to Indians by a treaty between the United States and the tribe without an act of Congress on my part from the executive authority of the United States. Final Instructions to the Agents of the Indian Bureau, 9 Op. U. S. 24 (1857).

Examples of treaty provisions on land cessions by the Indians to the United States will be found in the Treaty of August 27, 1804 with the Pankas, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 81; Treaty of September 30, 1809, with the Delaware and others, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 111; Treaty of July 8, 1817, with the Choctaws, Art. 10, 7 Stat. 170.

<sup>19</sup> Treaty of June 30, 1802, with the Senecas, 7 Stat. 70. Treaty of July 1, 1817, with the Choctaws, Arts. 1 and 2, 7 Stat. 180. Treaty of February 12, 1827, with the Creek Nation, Art. 7, 7 Stat. 247.

<sup>20</sup> Treaty of May 11, 1796, with the Seven Nations of Canada, 7 Stat. 95.

<sup>21</sup> Treaty of August 5, 1795, with the Wyandots and others, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 49. On provisions regarding line navigation for all through navigable streams, see Treaty of July 8, 1817, with the Choctaws, Art. 9, 7 Stat. 169.

<sup>22</sup> Treaty of September 20, 1817, with the Wyandots and others, Art. 11, 7 Stat. 160. Also see Treaty of November 11, 1794, with the Six Nations, Art. 5, 7 Stat. 41. Treaty of August 10, 1825, with the Kiowas, Arts. 1, 2 and 3, 7 Stat. 270. Art. 5 provided for compensation for the property. Treaty of August 7, 1850, with the Creeks and Seminoles, Art. 15, 11 Stat. 600.

<sup>23</sup> Treaty of July 4, 1808, with the Delawares, Art. 13, 14 Stat. 799. Also see Treaty of June 22, 1815, with the Choctaws and Chickasaws, Art. 18, 11 Stat. 611.

<sup>24</sup> Treaty of January 22, 1805, with the Willamettes, Art. 8, 10 Stat. 1143.

<sup>25</sup> Treaty of November 15, 1801, with the Potawatamies, Art. 5, 12 Stat. 1191. Also see Treaty of May 30, 1800, with the Delawares, Art. 5, 12 Stat. 1159.

<sup>26</sup> With the Chippewas, Art. 3, 7 Stat. 890.

<sup>27</sup> Treaty of July 6, 1817, with the Choctaws, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 180. Treaty of February 27, 1805, with the Winnebagoes, Art. 4, 10 Stat. 1172. Treaty of January 31, 1805, with the Wyandots, Arts. 8 and 9, 10 Stat. 1160, contained in *Indian Affairs*, 22 Fed. Cas. No. 6,468 (C. C. Kan. 1875). Sometimes a determination was made between full bloods and half bloods. Treaty of June 8, 1825, with the Kansas Nation, Art. 6, 7 Stat. 244. Treaty stipulations apply to half bloods as well as full bloods, unless otherwise specially provided. 20 Op. A. G. 742 (1894).



smith and such agricultural assistants as the President may deem expedient.<sup>10</sup> Two bulls,<sup>11</sup> horses, partridges and provisions,<sup>12</sup> sufficient grain, ammunition (in compensation for horses lost by Indians who were removed),<sup>13</sup> for such a nation removing, "a black kettle, rifle gun, bullet moulds and implements, and ammunition sufficient for hunting and defence for one year," plus corn,<sup>14</sup> 200 cattle, 200 hogs, plus 2,000 pounds of iron, 1,000 pounds of steel and 1,000 pounds of tobacco annually, and the assistance of 10 boats.<sup>15</sup> The payment of annuities in the form of money, much maize, provisions, or domestic animals, at the option of the Indians,<sup>16</sup> the building of houses for chiefs,<sup>17</sup> mills and mills for a period of 5 years,<sup>18</sup> agriculture and money for the repair of mill and schoolhouse,<sup>19</sup> the building of a church and an allowance for a Catholic priest.<sup>20</sup>

The United States agreed in treaties with most of the tribes to pay annuities in various forms: for education, blacksmiths, farmers, librarians, millers, millwrights, iron, coal, steel, salt and artificial sulphuric tobacco, and transportation.<sup>21</sup>

Many treaties contained clauses providing for additional annuities,<sup>22</sup> or for the commutation of annuities,<sup>23</sup> or for presents and annuities,<sup>24</sup> and goods,<sup>25</sup> a year's,<sup>26</sup> and clothing.<sup>27</sup>

By treaties, the United States also agreed to make payments to enable the raising of a tribal crop of hard money,<sup>28</sup> to pay a state for a balance due by a tribe,<sup>29</sup> to provide money for poor Indians,<sup>30</sup> to pay demands for slaves and other property alleged

to have been stolen by the Indians,<sup>31</sup> to pay debts or other obligations owed by the nation,<sup>32</sup> to pay the Indians for land ceded to a state,<sup>33</sup> for expenses incurred by the nation and to indemnify the individuals of the Cherokee nation for losses sustained by them in consequence of the march of the militia and armed troops in the service of the United States through their nation.<sup>34</sup>

## D JURISDICTION

1. *Criminal jurisdiction*.—Many treaties deal with the difficult political problems created by offenses of Indians against whites or whites against Indians.

Some of the earliest treaties adopt the rule normal in treaties between equals. Whites committing offenses within the Indian country against Indians laws, or subjected to punishment by the Indian tribe, must as Indians committing offenses against state or federal laws outside the Indian country be subjected to punishment by state or federal courts.<sup>35</sup>

A number of treaties adopt a modified rule, similar to that found in treaties between the United States and various Oriental nations,<sup>36</sup> whereby the United States is granted jurisdiction over its citizens in the Indian country, to punish them for offenses they may commit, and the Indian tribe undertakes to deliver such offenders to agents of the Federal Government.<sup>37</sup>

Finally, a number of treaties confer upon the Federal Government authority to punish Indians who commit offenses against non-Indians even within the Indian country.<sup>38</sup>

Not until some time after the end of the treaty-making period did the Federal Government take the ultimate step of asserting jurisdiction over offenses committed by Indians against Indians within the Indian country.<sup>39</sup>

2. *Civil jurisdiction*.—Most treaties contain no express provisions on civil jurisdiction and therefore, by implication, confirm the rule that tribal law governs the members of the tribe within the Indian country, to the exclusion of state law.<sup>40</sup>

A few treaties, however, make explicit and emphatic the rule that state laws will not be applied to the Indians. These clauses are usually found in treaties with tribes that it is hard to deal with, or with whom the United States has had long and bitter experiences with state jurisdiction, and the intensity of Indian feeling on the subject is sometimes reflected in the language of the treaty. Thus the purpose of the Treaty of May 6, 1828, with the Cherokee Nation,<sup>41</sup> is stated to be the securing to the Cherokees migrating, westward.

... a permanent home, and which shall, under the most solemn guarantee of the United States, be, and is made, their forever—a home that it shall never, in all future time, be embarrassed by having extended around it the

<sup>10</sup> Treaty of September 23, 1849, with the Chippewas, Art. 5, 7 Stat. 201.

<sup>11</sup> Treaty of July 10, 1879, with the Kickapoos, Art. 5, 7 Stat. 200.

<sup>12</sup> Treaty of October 1, 1824, with the Indians, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 155.

<sup>13</sup> Treaty of July 3, 1857, with the Cheyennes, Art. 6, 7 Stat. 196.

<sup>14</sup> Treaty of October 15, 1820, with the Cherokees, Art. 7, 7 Stat. 210.

<sup>15</sup> Treaty of October 2, 1826, with the Miami, Art. 3, 7 Stat. 300.

<sup>16</sup> Treaty of June 2, 1825, with the Osage, Art. 3, 7 Stat. 240.

<sup>17</sup> Treaty of June 2, 1825, with the Osage, Art. 3, 7 Stat. 240. Also

<sup>18</sup> Treaty of November 10, 1808, with the Choctaw, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 217.

<sup>19</sup> Treaty of December 2, 1794, with the Onondaga and others, Arts. 2

and 9, 7 Stat. 47. Cf. Treaty of January 7, 1806, with the Cherokees,

Art. 2, 7 Stat. 101.

<sup>20</sup> Treaty of June 7, 1874, with the Miami, Art. 14, 10 Stat. 1091.

<sup>21</sup> Treaty of August 23, 1854, with the Kickapoos, Art. 1, 7 Stat. 78.

<sup>22</sup> Procs. of Committee No. 174, 2d Cong. 184, c. 1, 1 Stat. 20, 1894

vol. IV (pp. 88-90). It is thus the most important but contains

references to other types. For examples, see Treaty of November 17,

1807, with the Onondaga and others, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 105; Treaty of

August 6, 1820, with the Chippewas, Art. 6, 7 Stat. 200; Treaty of June

9, 1805, with the Wabigoon and others, Art. 4, 12 Stat. 935; Treaty of

April 10, 1838, with the Union River, Art. 13, 13 Stat. 741. Some

treaties prohibited the sale of annuities for the payment of debts of

individuals. Treaty of November 15, 1874, with the Cheyenne and others,

Art. 7, 10 Stat. 1122; Treaty of November 20, 1854, with the Chippewas

and others, Art. 7, 10 Stat. 1123.

<sup>23</sup> The Treaty of December 30, 1805, with the Flatheads, Art. 1, 7

Stat. 100 provided for annuities, and added that "the United States, at

any time they shall think proper, divide the said annuity among the

individuals of the said tribe." Also see Treaty of August 11, 1803, with

the Kickapoos, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 78.

<sup>24</sup> Treaty of November 17, 1807, with the Ottoways and others, Art. 8,

7 Stat. 108.

<sup>25</sup> Treaty of November 11, 1794, with the Six Nations, Art. 6, 7 Stat.

44. Also see Treaty of March 24, 1842, with the Creek, Art. 13, 7 Stat.

800.

<sup>26</sup> Treaty of January 21, 1787, with the Winnebago and others, Art. 10,

7 Stat. 10. Treaty of June 26, 1794, with the Chickasaw, Art. 1, 7 Stat.

48; Treaty of December 29, 1853, with the Cherokees, Art. 18, 7 Stat. 378.

<sup>27</sup> Treaty of December 21, 1865, with the Moleks, Art. 5, 12 Stat. 951.

<sup>28</sup> Treaty of May 7, 1848, with the Crow, Art. 9, 15 Stat. 699. Also

see Treaty of May 10, 1868, with the Cheyennes and others, Art. 6, 15

Stat. 679. For some other types of provisions relating to annuities see

Treaty of July 1, 1835, with the Caddo Nation and the State of Louisiana,

Art. 4, 7 Stat. 470; Treaty of November 28, 1858, with the Creek, Art. 4,

7 Stat. 674.

<sup>29</sup> Treaty of October 18, 1820, with the Choctaws, Art. 18, 7 Stat. 210.

<sup>30</sup> Treaty of January 8, 1821, with the Creeks, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 215.

<sup>31</sup> Treaty of October 29, 1820, with the Miami, Art. 6, 7 Stat. 300.

<sup>32</sup> Treaty of May 9, 1842, with the Seminoles, Art. 6, 7 Stat. 369.

<sup>33</sup> Treaty of November 1, 1804, with the Osage, Art. 4, 7 Stat. 107.

<sup>34</sup> Treaty of March 22, 1816, with the Cherokees, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 138.

<sup>35</sup> Treaty of November 21, 1815, with the Seneca Indians, Art. 18,

9 Stat. 979.

<sup>36</sup> Treaty of March 22, 1816, with the Cherokees, Art. 5, 7 Stat. 130.

<sup>37</sup> See Chapter 1, sec. 3, fn. 48.

<sup>38</sup> See, e.g., Art. 21 of Treaty of July 3, 1841, with the Choctaw, 8 Stat. 392,

500.

<sup>39</sup> See, e.g., Art. 6 of Treaty of August 21, 1815, with the Quapaw

Tribe, 7 Stat. 176-177. Cf. Treaty of May 15, 1840, with the Comanches

and others, Art. 12, 9 Stat. 814 providing that any person introducing

intoxicating liquors among these Indians "shall be punished according

to the laws of the United States."

<sup>40</sup> See, e.g., Art. 9 of Treaty of January 21, 1787, with the Winnebago

and others, 7 Stat. 16, 17, Art. 6 of Treaty of November 28, 1858, with

the Cherokee, 7 Stat. 18.

<sup>41</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 9, Chapter 18.

<sup>42</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 1, 2.

<sup>43</sup> 7 Stat. 111. *Loc. cit.* Art. 5 of Treaty of New Echota, December 20,

1825, with the Cherokee Tribe, 7 Stat. 478.



lines, or placed over it the jurisdiction of a Territory or State, not be passed upon by the extension in any way of any of the limits of any existing Territory or State.

Various other treaties contained similar pledges.<sup>1</sup> Some treaties contained specific guarantees against invasion.<sup>2</sup>

### E CONSTRUCTION OF TRIBAL AFFAIRS

From 1776 to 1819 we had no treaty provision which limits the powers of self government of any tribe with respect to the internal affairs of the tribe. All limitations upon tribal power, during this period, are in some way related to intercourse with non Indians. Even the sporadic treaty provisions authorizing allotment of tribal land either first, as part of the treaty itself, the individuals, or define the class of individuals, who are to receive allotments, or provide for the issuance of patents by the authorities of the tribe.<sup>3</sup>

In the wake of the War with Mexico, several treaties were imposed upon tribes of the newly acquired territory in which the long-cherished distinction between internal and external affairs of the tribes was abandoned and the internal affairs of the tribes were declared subject to federal control.

The language contained in the Treaty of September 9, 1819, with the Navajo,<sup>4</sup> which this tribe agreed that the United States "shall, if it is easiest convenience, desirable, settle, and adjust their territorial boundaries, and pass and execute in their territory such laws as may be deemed conducive to the prosperity and happiness of said Indians"<sup>5</sup> is symptomatic rather than legally important. It symbolizes a tendency to disregard the national character of the Indian tribes, a tendency that was perhaps stimulated by the loose organization and backward culture of the Southwestern nomadic tribes.

<sup>1</sup> See, e. g. Art. 11 of the Treaty of March 24, 1802, with the Chick Nation 7 Stat. 606, 608; Art. 11 of the Treaty of July 20, 1811, with the Wyandot, Seneca, and Shawnee, 7 Stat. 951, 951.

<sup>2</sup> For example Treaty of September 29, 1817, with the Wyandot and others, Art. 18 7 Stat. 160, 160.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of August 9, 1811, with Chick Nation 7 Stat. 120, Treaty of September 20, 1817, with the Wyandot, Seneca, Delaware, and other tribes, 7 Stat. 160.

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of November 6, 1819, with the Mima Tribe 7 Stat. 509. And of Act of March 8, 1820, § 410 (Boothtown) providing for allotment by chiefs of tribe, who were to observe "the existing laws, customs, usages, or agreements of said tribe." Second Act of March 3, 1825 § 412 6 Stat. 645 (Stockbridge).

<sup>5</sup> 8 Stat. 974.

<sup>6</sup> Third Act of March 3, 1825 § 412 of Treaty of December 30, 1820, with the Utah Indians 9 Stat. 984.

## SECTION 4. A HISTORY OF INDIAN TREATIES

### A PRE REVOLUTIONARY PRECEDENTS 1532-1776

First mention of the necessity of a civilized nation treating with the Indian tribes in a sense Indian consent to cession of land or changes of political status<sup>1</sup> was made in 1532 by Juan Pizarro de Victoria,<sup>2</sup> who had been invited by the Emperor of Spain to advise on the rights of Spain in the New World.

After considering in detail the argument that barbarians could not own land by reason of the sin of unbelief or other moral sin, or by reason of "unsoundness of mind," Victoria reached the conclusion that

• • • the aborigines in question were true owners, before the Spaniards came among them, both from the public and the private point of view.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Victoria, De Indis et De Jure Belli Relectiones (Trans. by John P. Lewis, 1917), 1917, sec. 2, titles 6, 7.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., Introduction (Nye), p. 71.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., sec. 1, title 24, p. 128.

A year later, in 1550, began a series of treaties by which various tribes undertook to abandon their tribal existence.<sup>4</sup>

In 1851, a new breadth of authority was conferred upon the executive in such of the Federal Government by such clauses as the following:

Rules and regulations to protect the rights of persons and property among the Indians, parties of this Treaty, and adapted to their condition and wants, may be prescribed and enforced in such manner as the President or the Congress of the United States, from time to time, shall direct.

This provision, taken from the Treaty of July 28, 1851, with the "Sacaton (Nisetteon) and Wapiti (Walperton) Sioux,"<sup>5</sup> was copied bodily in several other treaties.<sup>6</sup>

The most important breach in the scope of tribal self government made by treaty was made in 1864 and thereafter, by those treaties which conferred upon the President power to allot tribal lands to individual Indians.<sup>7</sup>

Along with this encroachment upon the powers of the tribes to appoint rights in tribal land among the members of the tribe, there came other extensions of federal authority over the handling and distribution of tribal funds and other incidental matters.<sup>8</sup>

The Civil War brought new occasions for the use of federal power in tribal affairs as a result of conflicts between different nations of a tribe. The Treaty of June 11, 1866, provided for "a cession of all past offences against the laws of the United States, committed by any members of the Creek Nation" and "in memory for all past offences against their government."

Thus during the last decade or so of the treaty making period, the basis upon which treaties had been made was gradually undermined by successive specific encroachments upon the autonomy of various tribes.

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of April 1, 1850, with the Winnebago Indians 9 Stat. 987 and see Chapter 14, sec. 4.

<sup>5</sup> 10 Stat. 649, 650.

<sup>6</sup> See Treaty of August 5, 1851 with the Medawakan Sioux etc. 10 Stat. 654.

<sup>7</sup> See Treaty of March 15, 1854, with the Otoe and Missouri Indians 10 Stat. 1038 and Treaty of March 18, 1864, with the Omaha Tribe 10 Stat. 1043, discussed in sec. 46, infra.

<sup>8</sup> See, e. g. 28 (5) supra.

<sup>9</sup> Art. 14 Stat. 788. Also see Chapter 8, sec. 11. Also see the pre-Civil War Treaty of August 6, 1846, with the Cherokee Nation, "Treaty Party" and "Old Settlers," Art. 2 § 8 Stat. 871, whereby the Cherokee Nation declared a general amnesty for all past offenses after a period of civil strife and agreed to a bill of rights.

Since the Indians were true owners, Victoria held, discovery could convey no title upon the Spaniards, for title by discovery can be justified only where property is ownerless.<sup>9</sup> Nor could Spanish title to Indian lands be validly based upon the divine rights of the Emperor or the Pope,<sup>10</sup> or upon the belief or sinfulness of the aborigines.<sup>11</sup> Thus, Victoria concluded, even the Pope had no right to partition the property of the Indians, and in the absence of a just war only the voluntary consent of the aborigines could justify the annexation of their territory.<sup>12</sup> No less than their property, the government of the aborigines was entitled to respect by the Spaniards, according to the view of Victoria. So long as the Indians respected the natural rights of Spaniards, recognized by the law of nations, to travel in their

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., sec. 2, p. 129.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., sec. 2, titles 1-6.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., sec. 2, titles 8-18.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid.

lands and to surrender, trade, and defend their rights therein, the Spaniards could not win a just war against the Indians,<sup>1</sup> and therefore could not claim any rights by conquest. In that situation, however, sovereign power over the Indians must be claimed through the consent of the Indians themselves.

Another possible title is by treaty and almost by choice, as the Indians, aware alike of the prudent administration and the humanity of the Spaniards, were of their own motion, both rulers and ruled, to accept the King of Spain as their sovereign. This could be done and would be a lawful title, by the law natural too, seeing that a State can appoint any one it will to be its lord, and heretofore the consent of all is not necessary, but the consent of the majority suffices. For as I have argued elsewhere, in matters touching the good of the State the decisions of the majority bind even when the rest of a country mind, otherwise might could be done for the welfare of the State, it being difficult to get all of the same way of thinking. Accordingly, if the majority of any city or province were Christians and they, in the interests of the faith and for the common weal, would have a prince who was a Christian, I think that they could elect him even against the wishes of the others and even if it meant the repudiation of other unbelieving rulers, and I would that they could choose a prince not only for themselves, but for the whole State just as the Turks for the good of their State changed their sovereigns and, disposing of the prince Feghi, the father of Chienchang, in his place, I change which was approved by Pope Zachary. Thus, then, can be put forward as a sixth title.

The monarchs of Spain and their subordinate administrators, like in any other administration since, did not consistently carry out the Spaniards' legal duties. They did, however, adopt many laws and issue many charters recognizing and confirming the rights of Indian communities,<sup>2</sup> and the theory of Indian title put forward by Vitoria came to be generally accepted by writers on international law of the sixteenth, seventeenth, and eighteenth centuries who were cited as authorities in early judicial litigation on Indian property rights.<sup>3</sup>

The idea that land should be acquired from Indians by treaty involved three assumptions: (1) That both parties to the treaty are sovereign powers, (2) that the Indian tribe has a transferable title, of some sort, to the land in question, and (3) that the acquisition of Indian lands could not safely be left to individual colonists but must be controlled as a governmental monopoly. These three principles are embodied in the "New Project of Freedoms and Exemptions," drafted about 1630 for the guidance of officials of the Dutch West India Co., which declares:

The Patrons of New Netherland, shall be bound to purchase from the Lords Sachems in New Netherland, the soil where they propose to plant their Colonies, and shall acquire such right thenceforth as they will agree for with the said Sachems.<sup>4</sup>

The Dutch viewpoint was shared by some of the early English settlers. In the spring of 1639, Roger Williams, who insisted that the right of the natives to the soil could not be bought by an English patent, founded the Rhode Island Plantations.<sup>5</sup> This was the territory inhabited by the Narragansetts and for which Williams had treated

From time to time other British colonies had similar treaties to treaties with the Indians.<sup>6</sup> Unilateral dealing for the purchase of Indian land by individual colonists was prohibited in Rhode Island as early as 1637.<sup>7</sup> By the middle of the eighteenth century, eight other colonies had laws forbidding such purchases approved by the constituted authorities.<sup>8</sup> The effect of such laws was to eliminate the conflicts of land titles that otherwise resulted from overlapping claims by individual Indians or tribes, to protect the Indians, in some measure, against fraud, and to center in the colonial governments a desirable monopoly.

With the outbreak of the French and Indian War the problem of dealing with the natives which had been left largely to the individual colonies was temporarily returned to the control of the mother country.<sup>9</sup> Later, treaties with the Indians were again negotiated by the colonies.<sup>10</sup>

On several occasions the Crown indicated its belief in the sanctity of treaty obligations.<sup>11</sup> Some of the treaties contained definite stipulations regarding land tenure.<sup>12</sup>

## B THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR AND THE PEACE 1776-83

From the first days of the organization of the Continental Congress great solicitude for the natives was evidenced. The Congress pledged itself to mutual concessions in securing and preserving the friendship of the Indian nations.<sup>13</sup> First fruit of this effort was the treaty of alliance with the Delaware Indians of September 17, 1778.<sup>14</sup> Its provisions are so significant that Chief Justice Marshall's analysis in this respect should be noted.

The first treaty was made with the Delawares, in September 1778. The language of equality in which it is drawn, evinces the respect with which the negotiation was undertaken, and the opinion which then prevailed in the United States.<sup>15</sup> The sixth article is entitled to peculiar attention, as it contains a declaration of dangers which were, at that time, ascribed to the United States, by their enemies, and from the imputation of which Congress was then peculiarly anxious to free the government. It is in these words: "Whereas, the enemies of the United States have endeavored, by every artifice in their power, to possess the Indians in general with an opinion, that it is the design of the states, to proceed to extirpate the Indians, and take possession of their country, to obliterate such false suggestion, the United States do engage to guarantee to the aforesaid nation of Delawares, and their heirs, all their terri-

<sup>1</sup> In Pennsylvania in advance of settlement William Penn sent several commissioners to confer with the Indians and conclude with them a treaty of peace. (15th Annual Report Bureau of Ethnology, 1906-07, pt. II, pp. 601-609). Also see Chapter 25, sec. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Kinney, op. cit., p. 14. As early as 1608 English colonists in Virginia purchased land directly from the Indians in that territory (p. 12).

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. The colonies were Massachusetts, Virginia, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia.

<sup>4</sup> *Indian Federal Indian Relations* (1938) pp. 4-9.

<sup>5</sup> See, for example, the Treaty of Hard Labor on October 14, 1786, which defined the boundaries of Vermont, and the Treaty of Fort Stanwix, November 3, 1784, defining the boundary of the northern district of New York (p. 9-10).

<sup>6</sup> See, e.g., *Worcester v. Georgia*, 6 Pet. 515, 546, 548 (1832).

<sup>7</sup> In 1768 John Tobson, prominent representative of the British government, referring to the boundaries established by the treaty of peace with the United States of that year, told the Six Nations:

You are not to believe or even think that by the line which has been described it was meant to deprive you of an extent of country of which the right of soil belongs to you and is in yourselves as sole proprietors as far as the boundary line used upon [by treaty of 1768] and established in the most solemn and public manner in the presence and with the consent of the governors and commissioners, despatched by the different colonies for that purpose. (Kinney, op. cit., p. 118.)

<sup>8</sup> *Year Cont. Cong. (Library of Congress ed.)* 1775 vol. II, p. 174.

<sup>9</sup> *Treaty of September 17, 1778*, 7 Stat. 33.

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 3, title 1, of seq.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 8, title 16, p. 159.

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter 20, sec. 1.

<sup>4</sup> Vitoria, *supra*, Introduction (Nye). See also Vattel, *Le Droit des Gens*, vol. 1, bk. 1, sec. 138, and other authors cited by Kinney. See both parties in *Johnson v. McIntosh* 5 U.S. (1823). And see Chapter 15, sec. 4.

<sup>5</sup> J. B. Broadhead, Documents Relative to the Colonial History of the State of New York (Holland Documents II, No. 27) (1836, PC MSS. ed.), vol. 1, p. 89.

<sup>6</sup> Kinney, A Continent Lost—A Civilization Won (1987) pp. 11-12.

total rights, in the fullest and most ample manner it has been bounded by former treaties, is long as the said Delaware nation shall abide by, and hold fast the chain of friendship now entered into. The parties further agree, that other tribes, friendly to the interest of the United States may be invited to form a sister, whereof the Delaware nation shall be the heads, and have a representation in congress. This treaty, in its language, and in its provisions, is formed as well as may be on the model of treaties between the crowned heads of Europe. The sixth article shows how congress then treated the numerous chains of choosing districts particularly to the political and civil rights of the Indians.

Articles 4 and 7 are also noteworthy. By Article 4, any offenders of either party, must the treaty of peace and friendship will not be to punish, except:

"... by imprisonment, or any other competent means, till a law and impartial trial can be had by judges or juries of both parties, as near as can be to the laws, customs and usages of the contracting parties, and natural justice."

Article 5 provided for a

"... well regulated trial under the conduct of an intelligent, candid agent with adequate powers, not more influenced by the love of his country, and a constant attention to the duty of his department in promoting the common interest, than in the strict purposes of conducting and funding all the duties of his office to his private emolument."

### C DEFINING A NATIONAL POLICY 1783-1800

Following the close of the Revolutionary War the United States entered into a series of treaties with Indian tribes by which the "hatchet" was "forever buried."

In the spring of 1784 Congress appointed commissioners to negotiate with the Indians. Full power was given them to fix boundary lines and conclude a peace, with the understanding that they would make clear to the Indian territory was forfeit as a result of the military victory.<sup>1</sup> This idea was not novel at General Washington, on September 7, 1783, had expressed himself as agreeable to regarding the territory held by the Indians as "conquered provinces," although opposed to dividing them from the country altogether.<sup>2</sup> The commissioners met at Fort Mifflin and on October 22 concluded a treaty with the hostile tribes of the Six Nations.<sup>3</sup> In the opening paragraph the United States receives the Indians "into their protection." This has

<sup>1</sup> *Washington's Journals*, 6 Part 515-548, 549 (15-22). See also the 12 Treaty with the Choctaws of November 28, 1783, 7 Stat. 11, discussed below which granted to the Choctawes the right to send a deputy of their own choice to Congress whenever they think fit. This, however, was never carried into effect. See also sec. 13 (1) *supra*.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 4, sec. 2 and Chapter 10.

<sup>3</sup> The phrase appears in the 11th article of Hopewell with the Choctaws November 28, 1783, Art. 19, 7 Stat. 18, with the Choctaws January 8, 1786, Art. 21, 7 Stat. 21, and with the Chickasaws January 10, 1786, Art. 21, 7 Stat. 24.

This phrase was later supplanted by the phrase "all annuities not past arrears shall henceforth cease." See in 288, *infra*. As the disturbances caused by the Revolutionary War settled, this phrase disappeared. <sup>4</sup> *Memorandum of Mr. John Jay*, in 1786 the Continental Congress, through its chairman, David Hanson again tried to make it clear, this time to the Seneca Indian, Complanter, that:

"... the United States alone possess the sovereign power within the limits described at the late Treaty of peace between them and the King of England. You may observe to the Indians that they tell us, who say that the King of England has not in the late Treaty given up the lands of the Indians to them, but that the United States have given up the lands of the Indians." (*Joint Conf. Com. Library of Congress*, ed., 1786, vol. X.XV, p. 256)

<sup>5</sup> 10 *Fed. & Washington Writings* Vol. V (1791), pp. 308-312.

<sup>6</sup> Treaty of October 22, 1784, 7 Stat. 15. The Treaty was confirmed in *New York Indians*, 5 *Writ* 701 (1860) and in *Commencement v. Ows*, 6 *Dall* 170 (1800).

been cited as the source of the concept of the Federal Government as the guardian of Indian tribes.

Article 2 provides that the "Onondaga and Tuscarora Nations shall be settled in the possession of the lands on which they are settled."

Article 4 orders

"... goods to be delivered to the said Six Nations for their use and comfort."

This became a practice which later developed into a complete logistic system of supplying promised goods and services to Indian tribes.<sup>7</sup>

Soon afterwards another treaty was agreed upon with the Wandots, Delawares, Chippewas, and Ottawas at Fort McIntosh on January 21, 1785.<sup>8</sup> The next year the Shawnee chiefs signed a treaty at the mouth of the Miami.<sup>9</sup> These three treaties, which were the only ones entered into with the northern tribes before the adoption of the Constitution, are very similar in nature. All of them state the conclusion of hostilities and the relaxation of the protective influence of the United States.<sup>10</sup>

In the Treaty of January 21, 1785, at Fort McIntosh,<sup>11</sup> and the Treaty of January 31, 1786, at the Miami,<sup>12</sup> the boundaries between the Indian nations and the United States are defined and the lands therein are allotted to the said nations to live and hunt on with the provision that if any citizen of the United States should attempt to settle on their territory, he would forfeit the protection of the United States.<sup>13</sup> In addition both treaties "provided for the return to the United States of Indian robbers and murderers." In the treaty with the Shawnees,<sup>14</sup> there is a similar provision with regard to United States offenders against the Indians.

Congress was slow in taking action regarding the southern tribes. It was not until March 15, 1785,<sup>15</sup> that a resolution was

<sup>7</sup> *United States v. Douglas*, 100 *Fed* 182 (C. C. & S. 1911).

<sup>8</sup> An illuminating statement regarding title (found under the Treaty of Fort Stanwix is found in *Dart v. State of New York*, 23 *P* 20 451 (D. C. N. Y. 1927).

<sup>9</sup> The source of title here is not later patent or other form of grant by the federal government. After the Indians claim inalienable rights, arising prior to white occupation and recognized and protected by treaties between Great Britain and the United States and between the United States and the Indians. By the Treaty of 1784 between the United States and the Six Nations of Indians and the Treaty of 1786 between the United States and the State of New York and the seven Nations of Canada, the right of occupation of the lands in question was given to the Indians was not granted but recognized and confirmed (P. 664).

<sup>10</sup> See, for a similar provision the Treaty of Fort McIntosh with the Wandots, Delawares, etc., January 21, 1785, 7 Stat. 10.

<sup>11</sup> Treaty of January 31, 1786, 7 Stat. 16. By this treaty the United States Supreme Court stated in *Dart v. State of New York*, 175 *U* S 1 (1899).

<sup>12</sup> "The United States stipulated and relinquished to the said nations respectively all the lands lying within certain limits, to be hereinafter and hereupon occupy as they saw fit, but the said nations of either of them was not to be at liberty to dispose of those lands, except to the United States." (P. 3)

<sup>13</sup> See also *Commencement v. Ows*, 6 *Dall* 170 (1800).

<sup>14</sup> Treaty of January 31, 1786, 7 Stat. 26.

<sup>15</sup> The Fort Mifflin treaty in its 10th article introduced a technique of giving presents upon the signing of the instrument which soon became standard practice in negotiating agreements with the Indians. Also to be noted is the reversing to the first time of land within Indian boundaries for establishment of United States trading posts which is provided in Article 4 of the same treaty.

<sup>16</sup> Arts. 8, 4, 5, 7 Stat. 18.

<sup>17</sup> Arts. 6, 7 Stat. 26.

<sup>18</sup> For a discussion of the significance of this stipulation see Treaty of July 2, 1791, with the Choctaws, 7 Stat. 89, and in 294 and 295, *infra*.

<sup>19</sup> Arts. 9, 7 Stat. 16, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 26.

<sup>20</sup> Art. 8, Treaty of January 31, 1786, 7 Stat. 26. The Treaty at Hopewell, *infra*, contains a similar provision with the Choctaws November 28, 1783, Art. 7, 7 Stat. 18, the Choctaw, January 8, 1786, Art. 6, 7 Stat. 21, the Chickasaw January 10, 1786, Art. 6, 7 Stat. 24.

<sup>21</sup> *Joint Conf. Com. (Library of Congress ed.)*, 1785, vol. XXVIII, pp. 160-162.

pressed for the appointment of commissioners to deal with the Indians in those in the southern part of the country.

The federal commissioners met with the Cherokees at Hopewell on the Koonce, and concluded a treaty on November 2, 1775, which declared that the United States

gave peace to all the Cherokees, and receive them into the Union and protection of the United States of America, on the following conditions: In *Worcester v. Georgia*,<sup>1</sup> Chief Justice Marshall gave the following answer to the argument that this language put the Indians in an inferior status:

"When the United States gave peace, did they not also receive it? Were not both parties de jure equal? If we consult the history of the day, does it not inform us, that the United States were at first in a hurry to obtain it as the Cherokees? We may ask further, did the Cherokees come to the aid of the American government to solicit peace, or, did the American commissioners go to them to obtain it? The treaty was made at Hopewell, not at New York. The word 'gave,' then, has no real importance attached to it."

Marshall, at the same time also called attention to Article 3 of the Hopewell agreement which acknowledges the Cherokees to be under the protection of no other power but the United States, saying:

The general law of European sovereigns, respecting their claims in America, limited the interference of Indians in a great degree, to the particular potentate whose ultimate right of domain was acknowledged by the others. This was the general wife of things, in time of peace. It was sometimes changed in war. The consequence was, that their supplies were derived chiefly from that nation, and their trade confined to it. Goods, indispensable to their comfort, in the shape of presents were received from the same hand. What was of still more importance, the strong hand of assistance was interposed to restrain the disorderly and licentious from intrusions into their country, from encroachments on their lands, and from those acts of violence which were often attended by reciprocal murder. The Indians perceived in this protection only what was beneficial to themselves—an engagement to punish aggressions on them. It involved, practically, no claim to their lands—no dominion over their persons. It merely bound the nation to the British crown, as a dependent ally, claiming the protection of a powerful friend and neighbor, and receiving the advantages of that protection without involving a surrender of their national character. This is the true meaning of the stipulation, and is, undoubtedly, the sense in which it was made.

Article 9 of the Hopewell treaty with the Cherokees holds that

"the United States in Congress assembled shall have the sole and exclusive right of regulating the trade with the Indians, and in managing all their affairs in such manner as they think proper."

In *Worcester v. Georgia* it was argued that in this article the Indians had surrendered control over their internal affairs. This interpretation was vigorously rejected by the Supreme Court:

To construe the expression "managing all their affairs" into a surrender of self government, would be, we think, a perversion of their necessary meaning, and a departure from the construction which has been uniformly put on them. The great subject of the article is the Indian trade, the influence it gave, made it desirable that Congress should possess it. The commissioners brought forward the claim, with the profession that their motive was "the benefit and comfort of the Indians, and the prevention of injuries or oppressions." This may be true, as respects the regulation of their trade, and as respects the regulation of all affairs connected with their trade, but cannot be true, as respects the management of all their affairs. The most important of these are the cession of their lands and

security against intruders on them. Is it credible, that they should have considered themselves, as surrendering to the United States, the right to decide their future cessions, and the terms on which they should be made, or to compel their submission to the violence of disorderly and licentious intruders? It is equally inconceivable that they could have supposed themselves, by a phrase thus signed into an article, or rather and most interesting subject, to have divested themselves, of the right of self government on subjects not connected with trade. Such a measure could not be "for their benefit and comfort," or for "the prevention of injuries and oppressions." Such a construction would be inconsistent with the spirit of this and all subsequent treaties, (especially of those articles which recognize the right of the Cherokees to declare hostilities, and to make war. It would convert a treaty of peace, covenanted into an act annulling the political existence of one of the parties. Had such a result been intended it would have been openly avowed.

Article 12, permitting Cherokee representation in Congress, is of particular interest, although it was never fulfilled:

During the first year of the Confederation the dissatisfaction among the Indians resulting from using the "conquered province" concept is the basis for forty deliberations become apparent. The Security of W. U., therefore, on May 2, 1788, recommended a change in policy which would permit the outright purchase of the soil of the western territories described in former treaties with such additions as might be affected by further negotiations. Acting on this suggestion, Congress appropriated \$20,000.00 on July 2, 1788,<sup>2</sup> which, together with the balance remaining from the sum allocated on October 22, 1787,<sup>3</sup> was earmarked for use in extinguishing Indian claims to land already ceded.

The immediate result of this step was the treaties of Fort Miamia with the Winnetob, Delaware, Chippewa, and Ottawa, Indians,<sup>4</sup> and with the Six Nations, entered into early in 1789,<sup>5</sup> which reaffirmed many of the original terms of the Fort Stanwix and Fort McIntosh treaties. Both of these agreements provide for the United States relinquishing and quietclaiming certain described territory to the Indian nations. However, article 8 of the Fort Miamia treaty with the Winnetob, Delawares, Chippewas, and Ottawas,<sup>6</sup> added that the said nations should not be at liberty

"to sell or dispose of the same, or any part thereof, to any sovereign power, except the United States, nor to the subjects or citizens of any other sovereign power, nor to the subjects or citizens of the United States."

Article 7 also provided for the opening up of trade with Indians, establishing a system of licensing with guarantees of protection to certified traders, and a promise by the Indians to apprehend and deliver to the United States those individuals who intrude themselves without such authority. Article 6 makes first mention of negotiations, and binds both parties to a method of handling claims arising therefrom.

Although the Fort Miamia conferences were held during the life of the Confederation, the report of the results obtained was received in the first months of the new government operating

<sup>1</sup> Ibid pp 558-554

<sup>2</sup> See Art 6, Treaty with the Delawares, of September 17, 1778, 7 Stat 18 and in 234, supra

<sup>3</sup> Main, op cit, p 112

<sup>4</sup> Ibid

<sup>5</sup> Ibid

<sup>6</sup> Treaty of January 9, 1789, 7 Stat 28

<sup>7</sup> Treaty of January 9, 1789 (unratified), 7 Stat 28. See also in 208 supra, for interpretation of this treaty in *Jones v. Meehan*, 176 U S 1, 9 (1899)

<sup>8</sup> Treaty of January 9, 1789, 7 Stat 28

<sup>1</sup> 7 Stat 18

<sup>2</sup> 8 Stat 515, 551 (1882)

<sup>3</sup> Ibid p 551

under the Constitution, and transmitted to the Senate of the United States on May 25, 1789, for its approval.<sup>1</sup>

Puzzled over the proper procedure, George Washington wrote to the Senate asking what it was to be advising him to "execute and enjoy" the observance of the treaties.

It is said to be the general understanding, and practice of nations, is a check on the mistakes and misdeeds of ministers or commissioners, not to consider any treaty negotiated and signed by such officers, as final and conclusive, until it shall be the subject of consultation with whom they derive their powers. This practice has been adopted by the United States respecting her treaties with European nations, and I am inclined to think it would be advisable to observe it in the conduct of our treaties with the Indians.

Not unmindful of the significance of the ratification of Indian treaties, the Senate appointed a special committee to investigate the matter. After several days of debate the Senate advised formal ratification.<sup>2</sup>

On August 22, 1789, George Washington appeared in the Senate Chamber to point out to the assembled group the gravity of the Indian situation in the South North Carolina and Georgia, the President said, but he not only refused to sign the treaties of Hopewell but he also disavowed them. Moreover, upon hostilities, created between Georgia and the Creek Nation. All of this the President continued involved so many complications that he wished to raise political issues for the advice and consent of the Senate. Accordingly, he put seven questions which resulted in instructions to deal with the Creek situation first and, it need be, to use the whole amount of the current appropriation for Indian treaties for this purpose.<sup>3</sup>

On August 7, 1790, articles of agreement were concluded between the President of the United States and the kings, chiefs, and warriors of the Creek Nation.<sup>4</sup> Article 5 is a solemn guarantee to the Creeks of all their lands within certain described limits. Article 7 stipulated that—

No citizen or inhabitant of the United States shall attempt to hunt or destroy the game on the Creek lands. Nor shall any such citizen or inhabitant go into the Creek country, without a passport first obtained from the Governor of some one of the United States.

The obligation thus assumed by treaty the United States proceeded to implement in section 2 of the Indian Intercourse Act of May 19, 1796,<sup>5</sup> which made it a criminal offense for strangers to hunt, trap, or drive livestock in the Indian country.

It was found necessary to attach secret articles providing for transportation of merchandise duty free into the Creek Nation

by the United States in the event of hostilities between the Creeks and Spaniards.<sup>6</sup>

In Article 5 of the secret treaty, the United States, for the first time,

... agreed to educate and clothe such of the Creek youth as shall be agreed upon, not exceeding four in number at any one time.<sup>7</sup>

In the following year, 1791, the commissioners turned their attention to the difficulties between the Choctaws and the State of Georgia. Finally, on July 2, near the junction of the Holston River and the French Broad, the Cherokee Nation abandoned its claims to certain territories in return for \$1,000 annuity.<sup>8</sup> The instrument signed on that occasion was well described by the court in *Worcester v. Georgia*:

The third article contains a perfectly equal stipulation on the surrender of prisoners. The fourth article declares that "the boundary between the United States and the Cherokee nation shall be as follows, beginning" etc. We hear no more of "illuminations" or of "hunting grounds." A boundary is described, between nation and nation, by mutual consent. The national character of a sub-ability of each to establish this boundary is acknowledged by the other. To preclude forever all disputes, it is agreed, that it shall be plainly marked by commissioners, to be appointed by each party, and in order to extinguish forever all claims of the Cherokee to the ceded lands, an additional consideration is to be paid by the United States. For this additional consideration, the Choctaws receive all right to the ceded land, forever. By the fifth article, the Choctaws allow the United States to send through their country, and the navigation of the Tennessee river. The acceptance of these concessions is an acknowledgment of the right of the Choctaws to make or withhold them. By the sixth article, it is agreed, on the part of the Choctaws, that the United States shall have the sole and exclusive right of regulating their trade. No claim is made to the management of all their affairs. This stipulation has already been explained. The observation may be repeated, that the stipulation is itself an admission of their right to make or refuse it. By the seventh article, the United States solemnly guarantee to the Choctaw nation all their lands not herebefore ceded. The eighth article relinquishes to the Choctaws, any citizens of the United States who may settle on their lands, and the ninth forbids any citizen of the United States to hunt on their lands, or to enter their country without a passport. The remaining articles are equal, and contain stipulations which could be made only with a nation admitted to be capable of governing itself.<sup>9</sup>

This treaty of July 2, 1791, again includes a provision (Article 8) noticed before, viz., that any citizen settling on Indian land "shall forfeit the protection of the United States, and the Choctaws may punish him or not, as they please."<sup>10</sup> Thus

<sup>1</sup> The Debates and Proceedings in the Congress of the United States (1789-90), vol. 1 pp. 40-41. (Hereinafter referred to as Debates and Proceedings.)

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 88.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 84. It is interesting to note that the committee report (p. 82) which was passed down in distinction between treaties with European powers, and treaties with the aborigines, insisting that solemn ties were not necessary in the latter case.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 80-71. Washington asked the Senate "if all others should fail to induce the Creeks to make the desired cession to Georgia, shall the Commissioners make it an ultimatum?" (P. 70.) The Senate answered "No" (P. 71.)

<sup>5</sup> Stat. 36. A recent often found in Indian treaties is the following, which appears in Art. 16 "All annuities for past guarantees, shall hereafter cease." (See also Treaty of July 2, 1791, Art. 16, 7 Stat. 39, Treaty of June 29, 1796, Art. 9, 7 Stat. 98.) It should be further noted that Art. 2 pledges the Creeks to refrain from treating with any individual State, or the individuals of any State. Patterson v. Lake, 2 Pet. 218 (1829), construes provisions of this treaty relative to grants of land within the territorial limits of the State of Georgia.

<sup>6</sup> 7 Stat. 409.

<sup>7</sup> Treaty of August 7, 1790, Archives No. 17, Debates and Proceedings vol. 1 p. 1029 (*supra*, at 284).

<sup>8</sup> The Creek Treaty was amended on June 29, 1796 by a treaty which among other things provided that the United States give to the Creek Nation "goods to the value of six thousand dollars, and . . . sent to the Indian nation, two black mules, with saddles, to be employed for the upper and lower Creeks with the necessary tools." Art. 5, Treaty of June 29, 1796, 7 Stat. 88.

<sup>9</sup> See Art. 9, Treaty with the Kickapoos, August 11, 1805, 7 Stat. 78. *supra* for the first contribution by the United States for an actual education in the support of a priest. " . . . to convert . . . in the rudiments of literature." See also Chapter 12, sec. 2.

<sup>10</sup> Art. 4, Treaty of July 2, 1791, 7 Stat. 39. This sum was increased later to \$1,500 by the Treaty at Philadelphia of February 17, 1792, 7 Stat. 42. The Holston Treaty was further amended by the Treaty of Tallico of October 2, 1798, 7 Stat. 98 contained in Patterson v. Browder, 1 Wheat. 115 (1818), *Latham v. Paine*, 14 Pet. 4, 18 (1846).

<sup>11</sup> Worcester v. Georgia, 6 Pet. 515, 555-556 (1832).

<sup>12</sup> See fn. 208 *supra*. A similar provision appears in the Treaties of January 21, 1785, with the Wiamocas, Delawareas, Chippewas, and Otis.

article, the court in *Raymond v. Raymond*<sup>1</sup> cites it as the basis for the lack of jurisdiction of the federal judiciary in suits between members of the Choctaw Nation, saying:

It is not material to the present issue that this provision has been subsequently modified. It shows, as do subsequent treaties, that for more than a century this tribe of Indians had claimed and exercised, and the United States have guaranteed and secured to it, the exclusive right to regulate its local affairs, to govern and protect the persons and property of its own people, and of those who join them, and to adjudicate and determine their reciprocal rights and duties. (P. 722.)

Despite efforts at conciliation, dissatisfaction was spreading among the Indian tribes. Word was received that the Indians of the Northwest Territory were preparing to cooperate with the Six Nations in a major war. Washington dispatched instructions to Colonel Pickens to hold a council with the Six Nations. At the same time preparations were made to take military action on the western frontier and General Wayne, a Revolutionary War veteran, was put in charge of the troops, who on August 20, 1794, routed the natives in the battle of Fallen Timbers.

A new treaty was made with the Six Nations on November 11, 1794.<sup>2</sup> In this agreement the lands belonging to the Oneida, Onondaga, Cayuga, and Seneca were described and acknowledged by the United States as the property of the aforementioned Indian nations, and in addition the United States pledged to add the sum of \$8,000 to the \$15,000 annuity already allowed by the Treaty of April 23, 1794,<sup>3</sup> with the Five Nations.

Shortly thereafter, a treaty<sup>4</sup> was concluded with the nations which had participated in the ill-fated expedition against General Wayne. This agreement provides for the cession of an immensely important area which today comprises most of the State of Ohio and a portion of Indiana. At the same time the United States stipulates (Article 5):

The Indian tribes who have a right to those lands, are quietly to enter them hunting, planting, and dwelling thereon so long as they please, without any molestation from the United States, but when those tribes, or any of them, shall be disposed to sell their lands, or any part of them, they are to be sold only to the United States, and until such sale, the United States will protect all the said Indian tribes in the quiet enjoyment of their lands against all citizens of the United States, and against all other white persons who intrude upon the same.

The exact meaning of this article was at issue in *Williams v. City of Chicago*. After examining the instrument in detail the court held:

... We think it entirely clear that this treaty did not convey a fee simple title to the Indians, that under it no tribe could claim more than the right of continued occupancy, and that when this was abandoned all legal

right of interest which both the tribe and its members had in the territory came to an end. (11 Ph. 437-438.)

The Seven Nations of Canada on May 31, 1796,<sup>5</sup> released all territorial claims within the State of New York, with the exception of a tract of land 6 miles square.<sup>6</sup>

## D EXTENDING THE NATIONAL DOMAIN 1800-17

By 1800 the rapid growth of the nation had given impetus to the drive to add to the territory under federal ownership. This could be done effectively by extinguishing native title to desired lands. The treaty makers of this period may be said to have had a single objective—the acquisition of more land.

Success in this direction was almost immediate and by 1803 the President of the United States was able to report to Congress:

The friendly tribe of Kickapoo Indians, who has transferred its country to the United States, reserving only for its members what is sufficient to maintain them in an agricultural way. This country, among the most fertile within our limits, extending along the Mississippi from the mouth of the Illinois to and up the Ohio, though not so necessary as a barrier since the acquisition of the other bank, may yet be well worthy of being laid open to immediate settlement, as its inhabitants may disperse with rapidity in support of the lower country, should future circumstances expose that to foreign enterprise.

Article 4 of the Kickapoo treaty<sup>7</sup> contains the first provision for contributions by the United States for organized education, for the erection of a new church,<sup>8</sup> and for the building of a house for the church.<sup>9</sup>

The Indians pledge themselves to refrain from waging war or giving any insult or offense to any other Indian tribe or to any foreign nation without first having obtained the prohibition and consent of the United States. (Art. 2.) The United States in turn like the tribe under their immediate care and patronage, and guarantee a protection similar to that enjoyed by their own citizens. The United States also reserve the right to divide the annuity promised to the tribe "amongst the several families thereof, reserving always a suitable sum for the great chief and his family" (Art. 4.)

President Jefferson selected William Henry Harrison, Governor of Indiana Territory, to represent the United States Government in its negotiations with the Indian tribes of the West.<sup>10</sup>

After protracted negotiations at Fort Wayne with the Delaware, Shawnee, and other tribes of the Northwest Territory, a substantial cession of territory was secured by the Treaty of June 7, 1803.<sup>11</sup>

An interesting provision is found in Article 3, whereby the United States guaranteed to deliver to the Indians annually said

<sup>1</sup> 101 U.S. 515, 11 Stat. 284, 1862. <sup>2</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>3</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>4</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>5</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>6</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>7</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>8</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>9</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>10</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>11</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>12</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>13</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>14</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>15</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>16</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>17</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>18</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>19</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>20</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>21</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>22</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>23</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>24</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>25</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>26</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>27</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>28</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>29</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>30</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>31</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>32</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>33</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>34</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>35</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>36</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>37</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>38</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>39</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>40</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>41</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>42</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>43</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>44</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>45</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>46</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>47</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>48</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>49</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>50</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>51</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>52</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>53</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>54</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>55</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>56</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>57</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>58</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>59</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>60</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>61</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>62</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>63</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>64</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>65</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>66</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>67</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>68</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>69</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>70</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>71</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>72</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>73</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>74</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>75</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>76</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>77</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>78</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>79</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>80</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>81</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>82</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>83</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>84</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>85</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>86</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>87</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>88</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>89</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>90</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>91</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>92</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>93</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>94</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>95</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>96</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>97</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>98</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>99</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>100</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>101</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>102</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>103</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>104</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>105</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>106</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>107</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>108</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>109</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>110</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>111</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>112</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>113</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>114</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>115</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>116</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>117</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>118</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>119</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>120</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>121</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>122</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>123</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>124</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>125</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>126</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>127</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>128</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>129</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>130</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>131</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>132</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>133</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>134</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>135</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>136</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>137</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>138</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>139</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>140</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>141</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>142</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>143</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>144</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>145</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>146</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>147</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>148</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>149</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>150</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>151</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>152</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>153</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>154</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>155</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>156</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>157</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>158</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>159</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>160</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>161</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>162</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>163</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>164</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>165</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>166</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>167</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>168</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>169</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>170</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>171</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>172</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>173</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>174</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>175</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>176</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>177</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>178</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>179</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>180</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>181</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>182</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>183</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>184</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>185</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>186</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>187</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>188</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>189</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>190</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>191</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>192</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>193</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>194</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>195</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>196</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>197</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>198</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>199</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>200</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>201</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>202</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>203</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>204</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>205</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>206</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>207</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>208</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>209</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>210</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>211</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>212</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>213</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>214</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>215</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>216</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>217</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>218</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>219</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>220</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>221</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>222</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>223</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>224</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>225</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>226</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>227</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>228</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>229</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>230</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>231</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>232</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>233</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>234</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>235</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>236</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>237</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>238</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>239</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>240</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>241</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>242</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>243</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>244</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>245</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>246</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>247</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>248</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>249</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>250</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>251</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>252</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>253</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>254</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>255</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>256</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>257</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>258</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>259</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>260</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>261</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>262</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>263</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>264</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>265</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>266</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>267</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>268</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>269</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>270</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>271</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>272</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>273</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>274</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>275</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>276</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>277</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>278</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>279</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>280</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>281</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>282</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>283</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>284</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>285</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>286</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>287</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>288</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>289</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>290</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>291</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>292</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>293</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>294</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>295</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>296</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>297</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>298</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>299</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>300</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>301</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>302</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>303</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>304</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>305</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>306</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>307</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>308</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>309</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>310</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>311</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>312</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>313</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>314</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>315</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>316</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>317</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>318</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>319</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>320</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>321</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>322</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>323</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>324</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>325</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>326</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>327</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>328</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>329</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>330</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>331</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>332</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>333</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>334</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>335</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>336</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>337</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>338</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>339</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>340</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>341</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>342</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>343</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>344</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>345</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>346</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>347</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>348</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>349</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>350</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>351</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>352</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>353</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>354</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>355</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>356</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>357</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>358</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>359</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>360</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>361</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794.

<sup>362</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>363</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>364</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>365</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>366</sup> 10 Stat. 116, 1794. <sup>367</sup> 1

not to exceed 150 bushels from a still spring, which the Indians had ceded.

The next year another large tract was ceded from the Delaware. In this treaty the United States expressly recognizes the Delaware Indians "as the rightful owners of all the country" specifically bounded (Art. 1).

Since the Prinkshin tribe refused to recognize the title of the Delaware to the land ceded by this treaty,<sup>11</sup> Harrison negotiated a separate treaty.<sup>12</sup> It provided for land cessions and reserved the right to the United States of appointing the annuity, "allowing always a due proportion for the chiefs."

Harrison went to St. Louis to meet the chiefs of the Sacs and Foxes, and having for them land which was rich in mineral deposits of copper and lead. "There he succeeded in getting on November 3, 1804" as has been noted by his biographer Dwyer, "the largest tract of land ever ceded in one treaty by the Indians since the settlement of North America."

In this agreement it is stipulated (Art. 3) that "the laws of the United States regulating trade and intercourse with the Indian tribes, already extended to the country included by the Sacs and Foxes." The tribes also promise to put in good (Art. 10) to the war which waged between them and the Great and Little Osages. Article 11 guarantees a safe and free passage through the Sac and Fox country to every person traveling under the authority of the United States.<sup>13</sup>

The conclusion of the treaty at St. Louis brings to an end for several years negotiations with the Indians of the West. However, treaty making in other quarters continued and Jefferson was busy to inform Congress in 1805.

Four years later session the northern tribes have sold "us the land between the Connecticut River and the former Indian boundary, and those on the Ohio from the same boundary to the River, and for a considerable depth inland. The Chickasaws, and the Choctaws have sold "us the country between and adjacent to the two districts of

right to locate three tracts of land as sites for houses of confinement. However, if ferries are established in connection therewith the Indians are to use said ferries toll free.

Five other treaties which need not be examined at length were negotiated during the first years of Jefferson's Administration. *Choctaws v. Treaty of October 24, 1801, 7 Stat. 67, Choctaws v. Treaty of December 17, 1801, 7 Stat. 66, Choctaws v. Treaty of June 10, 1802, 7 Stat. 66, Shawnee v. Treaty of June 20, 1802, 7 Stat. 78, Choctaws v. Treaty of October 17, 1802, 7 Stat. 78, Choctaws v. Treaty of August 31, 1807, 7 Stat. 80.* These included two treaties for the building of roads through Indian territory, two treaties relinquishing areas of land to native Indians under the sanction of the United States, and two treaties for running boundary lines in accordance with previous negotiations, and the treaties providing for cessions of territory to the United States.

<sup>11</sup> *Treaty of August 18, 1801, 7 Stat. 81.*

<sup>12</sup> *Sac and F. v. Treaty of August 18, 1801, with the Delaware, 7 Stat. 81.*

<sup>13</sup> *August 27, 1804, 7 Stat. 80.*

<sup>14</sup> *Ibid., Art. 4.*

<sup>15</sup> *Treaty of November 3, 1804, 7 Stat. 94, concluded in Sac and Fox Indians of the Mississippi in *John v. Sac and Fox Indians of the Mississippi in Oklahoma*, 220 U. S. 482 (1911).*

<sup>16</sup> *Johnson op. cit. p. 105.*

An additional article provided that under certain conditions grants of land from the Spanish Government, not included within the treaty boundaries, should not be invalidated. This particular provision was given application in a decision by the Supreme Court of the United States in *Marsh v. Brooks*, 14 How. 515 (1852).

<sup>17</sup> *Treaty with the Wyandots, Ottawas, etc., of July 4, 1805, 7 Stat. 87, Treaty with the Delaware, Potawatamies, etc., of August 23, 1806, 7 Stat. 94. In this last mentioned treaty the United States agreed to consider (Art. 4) the Miamis, Shawnees, and Wab Indians as "joint owners" of a certain area of land and for the first time agreed not to purchase wild land without the consent of each of said tribes. In early times the Chickasaws were dealt with as a single tribe. *Chippewa Indians of Minnesota v. United States*, 801 U. S. 858 (1937).*

<sup>18</sup> *Treaty with the Chickasaws of July 25, 1805, 7 Stat. 80, Treaty with the Choctaws of October 25 and 27, 1805, 7 Stat. 82, 83.*

Tennessee and the Creeks "the residue of their lands in the fork of the river up to the Mississippi." The three former purchases are important, inasmuch as they constitute disjointed parts of our settled country and render their intercourse secure, and the second particularly so in with the small pond on the river, which was ceded by the first land ceded by the Prinkshin tribe.<sup>19</sup> It completes our possession of the whole of both banks of the Ohio, from its source to its mouth, and the navigation of that river is thereby rendered forever safe to our citizens settled and settling on its extensive waters. This purchase from the Chickasaws has been for some time particularly interesting to the State of Georgia.

A treaty negotiated with the Choctaws in November 10, 1807,<sup>20</sup> continued the first reservation of land for the use of individual Indians.<sup>21</sup>

Article 2 carries the significant provision of

Forty eight thousand dollars to enable the Mingoes to discharge the debt due to their merchants and land owners.

The treaty with the Great and Little Osages of November 10, 1804,<sup>22</sup> provided in addition to land cessions, the pledge (Art. 12) that the Osages would not furnish "any nation or tribe of Indians not in amity with the United States, with arms, ammunition, or other implements of war."

In one of his last official messages to Congress on November 3, 1805 Jefferson observed:

With our Indian neighbors the public peace has been steadily maintained. Some instances of individual wrong have, at other times taken place, but in no wise impeding the will of the Nation. Beyond the Mississippi, the Lower, the Sacs, and the Abenakis, have delivered up for trial and punishment individuals from among themselves, accused of murdering citizens of the United States. On this side of the Mississippi the Creeks, by executing them, have shown to select citizens of the same kind, and the Choctaws have manifested their readiness and desire to do amicable and just arrangements requiring denouement, committed by disorderly persons of their tribe. One of the two great divisions of the Choctaw nation have now made considerable progress in the citizenship of the United States, and to be identified with us in laws and government, in such progressive manner as we shall think best.<sup>23</sup>

During this time there had come into power and influence among a great number of Indian tribes a Shawnee, Tecumseh, and his brother, Lawless, in called "The Prophet." When disturbing reports of the behavior of the two Shawnees reached Harrison, he resolved to press further before all Indian tribes were rendered unwilling to part with their land. Accordingly in September, 1809, he convened the head men of the Delawares, Potawatamies, Miamis, and Bel River Miamis and requested some 2,000,000 acres.<sup>24</sup> Thus they yielded "A month later

<sup>19</sup> *Treaty of November 14, 1805, 7 Stat. 96, concluded in *Offer v. Choctaw*, 144 U. S. 14 (1897).*

<sup>20</sup> *Treaty of December 30, 1807, 7 Stat. 100.*

<sup>21</sup> *Message of December 3, 1807 in Debates and Proceedings (1807-7), vol. 10, p. 15.*

<sup>22</sup> *Treaty of November 18, 1807, 7 Stat. 98.*

<sup>23</sup> *Ibid., Art. 1. A tract of land was reserved for the use of Abenaki and Shawnee daughters of a white man and Choctaw woman.*

<sup>24</sup> This is not the first time that attention to the individual financial situation of the Indians was made in a treaty. Both the treaty with the Creeks, June 18, 1802, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 68 and the Treaty with the Chickasaws, July 23, 1805, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 80 make mention of debts owed by the natives. Also see *Choctaw v. U. S.*

<sup>25</sup> *Treaty of November 10, 1804, 7 Stat. 107, concluded in *Trot Springs v. U. S.*, 92 U. S. 688, 704 (1875).*

<sup>26</sup> *Debates and Proceedings (1808-9), vol. 10, p. 1.*

<sup>27</sup> *Ibid. By the Treaty of Detroit, November 17, 1807, 7 Stat. 105 and the Treaty of Brownstown, November 25, 1808, 7 Stat. 112, less important reservations were secured.*

<sup>28</sup> *Johnson op. cit. p. 106.*

<sup>29</sup> *Treaty of September 30, 1809, 7 Stat. 114.*

States certain title which they jointly held, and in exchange the United States bound themselves to give to that branch of the Nation on the Arkansas, as much land as they had received, or might thereafter



most 30 years thereafter Indian territory, which was concerned almost solely with removing certain tribes of Indians to the westward, and the removal of the Cherokee Nation. The first and most significant of these treaties is concluded with the southern tribes later known as the Five Civilized Tribes."

1. *Cherokees*.—In 1816 Andrew Jackson is Commissioner for the United States not with the Cherokees to discuss the proposition of exchanging lands. Many influential Cherokees were bitterly opposed to it, and the great majority of Indians were extremely dubious of the value of removing elsewhere.

However, the next year a treaty, proposed by Andrew Jackson, was accepted by representatives of the Cherokee Nation. Its terms include (Art. 1) a cession of the land occupied by the Cherokee Nation in return for a proportion of tract of country elsewhere; (Art. 2) a stipulation (Art. 3) for the taking of a census of the Cherokee Nation in order to determine those remaining, and those remaining, behind and thus divide the annuities between them; compensation for improvements (Arts. 6 and 7); and (Art. 8) reservations of 640 acres of Cherokee land in his estate with a reversion in fee simple to their children, to each and every head of any Indian family residing on the east side of the Mississippi River.

"The treaty was not without its merits, and the idea of individual title with restrictions on alienation, as a basis of citizenship, was destined to play a minor role in later Indian legislation."

When the attempt to execute the treaty was made, its weak points came to light. Removal was voluntary, and the national will to remove was lacking. In 1819 a delegation of Cherokees appeared in Washington and negotiated with Secretary Calhoun a new treaty,<sup>12</sup> which contemplated a cessation of migration.

The Cherokee Nation opposed removal and further cession of land, but once more the Federal Government sought to persuade them to move west. By the treaty of May 6, 1828,<sup>13</sup> made with that portion of the Cherokee Nation which had removed across the Mississippi pursuant to earlier treaties, another offer was made. Article 8 provides:

"... that then Brothers yet remaining in the States may be induced to join them... it is further agreed, on the part of the United States, that to each Head of a Cherokee family now residing within the chartered limits of Georgia, or in either of the States, East of the Mississippi, who may desire to remove West shall be given, on enrolling himself for emigration, a good Rifle, a Blanket, and Kettle, and five pounds of Tobacco (and to each member of his family one Blanket), also, a just compensation for the property he may abandon, to be received

by persons to be appointed by the President at the United States."

This treaty was negotiated to define the limits of the Cherokees' new home in the West—limits which were different from those contemplated by the treaty of 1817 and convention of 1819 and included the following promise:

"The United States agree to possess the Cherokee, and to grant unto it to them forever, and that guarantee is hereby solemnly pledged, of seven millions of acres of land."

Also interesting is the preamble, wherein is stated:

"... the anxious desire of the Government of the United States to secure to the Cherokee Nation of Indians... a permanent home, not which shall, under the most solemn guarantee of the United States, be, and remain, theirs forever—a home that shall never, in all future time, be embarrassed by having extended around it lines, or placed over it the jurisdiction of a Territory or State, not be pressed upon by the extension, in any way, of any of the limits of any existing Territory or State."

Article 6 provided that whenever the Cherokees desired it, a set of plain laws suited to their condition would be furnished.<sup>14</sup>

Confidential agents were then sent to the Cherokee Nation to renew efforts to secure immigrants to the west, but these efforts met with little success.<sup>15</sup> Obviously more forcible measures would have to be used, and the expansionists awaited eagerly the replacing of John Quincy Adams with a third Executive who would not hesitate to take such action.<sup>16</sup>

The election of 1828 supplied just such a President. Despite a constitutional marginal address,<sup>17</sup> Andrew Jackson immediately made it clear that the Indians must go West.<sup>18</sup> In this he was

"The term 'property which he may abandon' is construed as flaccid property, 'that which he could not take with him, in a word, the land and improvements, which he had occupied in 2 Op. A. G. 821 (1880)."

"Treaty of May 6, 1828, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 411."

"This treaty was ratified with the proviso that it should not interfere with the lands assigned or to be assigned to the Creek Indians nor should it be construed to cede any lands heretofore ceded to any tribe by any treaty now in existence."

On February 14, 1831, a treaty (7 Stat. 414) to settle disputed Creek claims was negotiated with the Cherokee Nation west of the Mississippi. In addition to certain amendments to the preceding, agree ment an article described as:

"... a perpetual mark West and West and unaltered by all the Country lying West of the Western boundary of the above described limits and as far West as the proximity of the United States, and then limit of said extent."

which had been guaranteed in Treaty of May 6, 1828, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 411, was reaffirmed.

"The article was canceled at Cherokee request, by Treaty of February 14, 1831, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 414."

"Foreman, Indian Removal (1929), pp. 2, 291, Abil Indian Confederation in Annual Report, American Intellectual Association (1908) Vol. 2, p. 881."

"Abel, op. cit., p. 870."

"In his speech of March 4, 1829, Jackson said:

"It will be my sincere and constant desire to observe toward the Indian tribes within our limits a just and liberal policy, and to give that humane and considerate attention to their rights and their wants which is consistent with the habits of our Government and the feelings of our people." (H. Misc. Doc. 248 Cong. 2d sess. (1829-30), Vol. 37, pt. 2, p. 498.)

"See Abel op. cit., p. 870, 978, Foreman, op. cit., p. 21. In his first message to Congress of December 8, 1829, Jackson urged voluntary removal as a protection to the Indians and the states. (H. Misc. Doc. 248 Cong. 2d sess. (1829-30) Vol. 37, pt. 2, p. 458.) On May 28, 1830, the Indian Removal Act (4 Stat. 411, 26 U. S. C. 174, R. S. § 2114) was passed. (Amendments guaranteeing protection to the Indians from the states and respect for treaty rights until removal were defeated. (Abel, op. cit., p. 890).) It gave to President Jackson power to initiate proceedings for exchange of lands. This was begun, with requests for conferences, in August of 1830. (Foreman, op. cit.,

receive, east of the Mississippi... "The tribe (Cherokee) was divided into two bodies, one of which remained while they were east of the Mississippi, and the other settled themselves upon United States land in the country on the Arkansas and White rivers."

The effect of removal to individual Indians of a mile square each seemed to heads of families by the Cherokee treaties of 1817 and 1819 is fully decided in the case of *Cornier v. Winston's Lessee*, 2 Leinger Tex. Rep. 143 (1829). The removal of the Cherokee Nation into two parties is also discussed in *Old River v. United States*, 138 U. S. 427 485-410 (1908).

"Treaty of July 8, 1817, 7 Stat. 196. It is to be noted that in the preamble of the treaty the following quotation of President Madison is cited with approval:

"... when established in their new settlements, we shall still consider them as our children, give them the benefit of exchange, then policies for what they will want at our rate, and always hold them firmly by the hand."

"For opinions of the Attorney General on compensation provided for the sixth and seventh articles in rights of removal and on removal of lands, see 8 Op. A. G. 828 (1918), 8 Op. A. G. 587 (1896), 4 Op. A. G. 110 (1812), 4 Op. A. G. 580 (1847)."

"Treaty of February 27, 1819, 7 Stat. 196."

"7 Stat. 811."

acted by the legislature of Georgia which had enacted laws to harass and make intolerable the life of the Eastern Cherokee.<sup>10</sup>

When the objectives of the hostile legislation became evident the chief of the Cherokee Nation, John Ross, determined to seek relief and filed a motion in the Supreme Court of the United States to enjoin the execution of certain Georgia laws. The bill reviewed the various guarantees in the treaties between the Cherokee Nation and the United States and complained that the action of the Georgia legislature was in direct violation thereof.

While the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court was denied on the grounds that the Cherokee Nation was not a foreign state within the meaning of the Constitution, Chief Justice Marshall nevertheless gave reference to a highly significant analysis—the first judicial analysis—of the effect of the various treaties upon the status of the Indian nation.

"The numerous treaties made with them by the United States, recognise them as a people capable of maintaining the relations of peace and war, of being responsible in their political character for any violation of their engagements, or for any aggression committed on the citizens of the United States by any individual of their community. Laws have been enacted in the spirit of these treaties. The acts of our government plainly recognise the Cherokee nation as a state, and the courts are bound by those acts."

Shortly thereafter, two missionaries, Worcester and Butler, were indicted in the Superior Court of Gwinnett County for residing in that part of the Cherokee country situated to Georgia by recent state laws, in violation of a legislative act which forbade the residence of whites in Cherokee country without an oath of allegiance to the state and a license to remain.<sup>11</sup> Mr. Worcester pleaded that the United States had acknowledged in its treaties with the Cherokees the latter's status as a sovereign nation and as a consequence the prosecution of state laws could not be maintained. He was tried, convicted and sentenced to 4 years in the penitentiary.

On a writ of error the case was taken to the Supreme Court of the United States, where the Court reversed its jurisdiction and reversed the judgment of the Superior Court for the County of Gwinnett in the State of Georgia, declaring that it had been pronounced under color of a law which was repugnant to the Constitution, laws, and treaties of the United States. Chief Justice Marshall in delivering this opinion examined the recitals of the various treaties with the Cherokees and proceeded to point out:

"They [state laws] interfere forcibly with the relations established between the United States and the Cherokee nation, the regulation of which, according to the settled principles of our constitution, are committed exclusively to the government of the Union. They are in direct hostility with treaties, entered in a succession of years, which mark out the boundary that separates the Cherokee country from Georgia, guarantee to them all the land within their boundary, solemnly pledge the faith of the United States to restrain their citizens from trespassing on it, and recognize the preexisting power of the nation to govern itself. They are in hostility with the acts of congress for regulating this intercourse, and giving effect to the treaties." \*

pp 21-22) The Indians were advised that refusal meant end of federal protection and abandonment to state laws (Abel, *op. cit.*, p. 382, Foreman, *op. cit.*, pp. 261-272).

<sup>10</sup> See *Worcester v. Georgia*, 6 Pet. 515 (1832). See also, Foreman, *op. cit.*, pp. 220-230.

<sup>11</sup> *Cherokee Nation v. Georgia*, 5 Pet. 1, 18 (1831). See Chapter 14, sec. 2.

<sup>12</sup> Foreman, *op. cit.*, p. 285.  
<sup>13</sup> *Worcester v. Georgia*, 6 Pet. 515, 561, 562, (1832). On the failure of Georgia to abide by the Supreme Court decision, see Chapter 7, sec. 2.

In September 1831, the President sent Benjamin F. Cuyler of Tennessee into the Cherokee country to superintend the work of enrolling the natives for the journey to the west.<sup>14</sup> Cuyler found the task difficult and slow, only 71 families enrolling by December.<sup>15</sup> The Cherokees were divided on removal, one group headed by John Ridge favorable to emigration, another faction remaining loyal to their chief, John Ross, and opposed to the program.<sup>16</sup> In 1834 the Ridge faction negotiated a sweeping treaty for removal which failed of ratification by the Cherokee council.<sup>17</sup>

In 1835 delegates from both factions were sent to Washington. After the Ross group had refused the President's terms negotiations were opened with the opposing party, and on March 14 an agreement was drawn up which was not to be considered binding until it should receive the approval of the Cherokee people in full council.<sup>18</sup>

At a full council meeting in October 1835, at Red Clay, Tennessee, both factions, temporarily abandoning their quarrels, united in opposition to this treaty and rejected it.<sup>19</sup> Another meeting was then called at New Echota, and a new treaty was negotiated and signed.<sup>20</sup>

By Article 1, the Cherokee Nation ceded all their land east of the Mississippi River to the United States for \$5,000,000.

Article 2 of this instrument recites that whereas by treaties with the Cherokees west of the Mississippi, the United States had guaranteed and seemed to be conveyed by patent a certain territory as their permanent home, together with "a perpetual outlet west," provided that other tribes shall have access to saline deposits on said territory, it is now agreed to convey to the said Indians, and their descendants by patent, in fee simple "a certain additional territory."

The state of the Cherokees in their new homeland, by Art. 2, 7,000,000 acres and an additional 800,000 acres) has been variously called a fee simple,<sup>21</sup> an estate in fee upon a condition subsequent,<sup>22</sup> and a base, qualified or determinable fee.<sup>23</sup>

Article 5 provides that the new Cherokee land should not be included within any state or territory without their consent, and

<sup>14</sup> The methods which were employed at this time have been described thus:

"Intoxication was met by intrigue. Curry secretly employed Indian mixed-bloods for a liberal compensation to circulate among the Indians and advance claims which they could not back the next day. Puffed with liquor the Indians were charged with debt for which their property was taken with or without process of law. (Foreman *op. cit.*, p. 210.)

<sup>15</sup> *Ibid.* *op. cit.* at 352, p. 401.

<sup>16</sup> Treaty of June 10, 1831 (unratified). This treaty ceded to the United States all the Cherokee land in Georgia, North Carolina, Tennessee and Alabama, and the Indians agreed to move west. Abel, *op. cit.*, p. 403. Foreman, *op. cit.*, pp. 264, 265.

<sup>17</sup> Treaty of March 14, 1835 (unratified). By this treaty the tribe ceded all its eastern territory and agreed to move west for \$5,000,000. Foreman, *op. cit.*, p. 268. Abel, *op. cit.*, pp. 403-404.

<sup>18</sup> Foreman, *op. cit.*, pp. 260-267.

<sup>19</sup> December 20, 1835, 7 Stat. 478, 488 (Supplement). The events leading to this treaty are analyzed in L. K. Cohen, *The Treaty of New Echota* (1896), 8 *Indians at Work*, No. 19.

<sup>20</sup> *Cherokee Nation v. Southern & American Railway Co.*, 135 U.S. 841 (1890). In *United States v. Rogers*, 23 Fed. 658, 884 (D.C. W.D. Ark. 1883), the court stated:

"... By looking at the title of the Cherokees to their lands we find that they hold them all by substantially the same kind of title, the only difference being that the outlet is numbered with the expectation that the United States is to permit other tribes to pass on it, or at least to have with them the right to break the title of the Cherokee Nation to the outlet is just as fixed, certain, extensive and perpetual as the title to any of their lands."

The President and Senate in concluding a treaty, can lawfully covenant that a patent should issue to convey lands which belong to the United States. *Holden v. Joy*, 17 Wall. 211 (1872).

<sup>21</sup> *Holden v. Joy*, 17 Wall. 211 (1872).

<sup>22</sup> *United States v. Reese*, 27 Fed. Cas. No. 18,187 (D.C. Mass. 1868).

that their right to make laws and inconsistent with the Constitution of interference with them should be secured.<sup>10</sup>

"The New England treaty also provided (Art. 12) that certain conditions, reservations of 160 acres for those who wished to remain east of the Mississippi<sup>11</sup> and for settlement of claims (Art. 13) for former reservations. In addition a commission was established (Art. 17) to adjudicate these claims."

<sup>12</sup> *Chickasaw*—Although the domain of the Chickasaw Nation was conclusively restricted by the treaties of 1756<sup>13</sup> and 1785<sup>14</sup> it was not until 1830 that the subject of "removal" was given serious consideration. During the summer of that year, the President and the principal chiefs of the Chickasaw Nation and wished them that they would be compelled either to migrate to the west or to submit to the laws of the State.<sup>15</sup> After several days of conference a provisional treaty<sup>16</sup> was signed. However, performance was conditioned upon the Chickasaws being given a home in the West on the lands of the Choctaw Nation, and as the two nations could come to no agreement the treaty remained unfulfilled.<sup>17</sup> Nevertheless, while within their own Chickasaw land east of the Mississippi was isolated, and the problem of removal became a pressing government problem.<sup>18</sup>

On October 20, 1842,<sup>19</sup> another treaty for removal was negotiated in which all of the land of the tribe east of the Mississippi

was ceded to the United States<sup>20</sup> to be sold at public auction.<sup>21</sup> Article 1 provides:

"That the Chickasaw people shall not deprive themselves of a comfortable home in the country where they now live, until they shall have provided a country in the west to remove to."<sup>22</sup> It is therefore agreed

"that if they will endeavor as soon as it may be in their power, after the expiration of this treaty, to hunt out and procure a home for their people, west of the Mississippi river,

they are to select out of the same lands, a comfortable settlement for every family in the Chickasaw nation to include their present improvements, if the land is good for cultivation, and if not they may take it in any other place in the nation, which is not occupied by any other person."

"All of which tracts of land, so selected and returned, shall be held, and occupied by the Chickasaw people, uninterrupted until they shall find and obtain a country suited to their wants and condition. And the United States will guarantee to the Chickasaw nation, the quiet possession and uninterrupted use of the said reserved tracts of land, so long as they may live on and occupy the same."

Despite the guarantee of the United States to the Chickasaws of the "quiet possession and uninterrupted use" of the reserved tracts,<sup>23</sup> while settlers continued to overrun and occupy their country unlawfully.<sup>24</sup> Furthermore, the problem of finding land in the West proved a difficult one. Finally convinced of the need for amending the treaty in certain particulars, the Government consented to the conclusion of another treaty on May 24, 1844.<sup>25</sup> This altered the program of removal, granted in fee certain reservations, while asserting, that the Chickasaws "will hope to find a country adequate to the wants and support of their people, somewhere west of the Mississippi."

By Article 2, the Chickasaws on their removal were to be protected by the United States from the hostile practices. They pledged themselves never to make war on another tribe, or on whites, "unless they are so authorized by the United States." Article 4 set up a commission of Chickasaws to pass on the competency of members of the tribe to handle and sell their land. Articles 5 and 6 listed the cases in which reservations could be granted in fee, and determined the amount of land in each case.<sup>26</sup> Article 9 provided that funds from the sale of Chickasaw lands be used for schools, mills, blacksmith shops, etc.<sup>27</sup>

<sup>28</sup> *Choctaw*—By 1820 it was evident that the Choctaws, distributed by the number of settlers who were pouring into the rich valleys of the Mississippi, would consent to "removal." At

<sup>10</sup> In *Cherokee Nation v. Southern Railway Co.*, 135 U. S. 611 (1890) the Supreme Court commented on this clause.

<sup>11</sup> "In the Treaty of New Bayou 1836 the United States guaranteed and agreed that the lands ceded to the Cherokee Nation should at no future time without their consent be included within the territorial limits or jurisdiction of any State or Territory, and that the Government would secure to that nation 'the right to their national grounds to the full extent of the same, and to the lands they may desire to occupy for the government of the persons and property within their own country belonging to their people or such persons as have connected themselves with them.'"

<sup>12</sup> But neither these nor any previous treaties expressed any intention on the part of the Government to disengage them from their condition of political dependence and civilize them, but to separate independent, self-sufficient people with no superfluous within the limits. . . . (p. 65.)

<sup>13</sup> The Indians who remained behind under this provision dissolved their connection with the Cherokee Nation (*Cherokee Trust Funds*, 117 U. S. 284 (1886)), without becoming citizens either of the United States or North Carolina. *United States v. Brown*, 50 Fed. 817 (C. C. 4, 1897).

In later years some of the ceded Cherokee lands were bought back by the Cherokees who resisted removal. In 1829 this land was recovered to the United States in trust by Indian disposition under the act of June 4, 1824, 49 Stat. 370. See *Historical Notes*, 27 U. S. C. 1461.

<sup>14</sup> That the President is empowered to appoint new commissioners, there being no limitation to this authority except the fulfillment of its purposes, but that the expense cannot be charged out of the Cherokee fund is the advice of the Attorney General. 10 Op. A. G. 800 (1870), 4 Op. A. G. 78 (1842). See also 5 Op. A. G. 268 (1850), 11 Rep. No. 321, 28th Cong. 1st sess. (1864).

<sup>15</sup> Treaty of September 20, 1830, 7 Stat. 1307. Not certain ceded lands north and south of the Tennessee River, the Indians received \$12,000 per annum for 10 years (Aits 2 and 3).

<sup>16</sup> Article 7 prohibits the borrowing of money to be used within the Chickasaw Nation and describes the removal of the Indians as a disadvantage to the nation.

<sup>17</sup> Treaty of October 19, 1842, 7 Stat. 192, contained in *Polk's Field v. Clark*, 2 How. 76, 81 (1844). All Chickasaw land north of the north boundary of Tennessee was ceded for \$400,000—\$20,000 annually for 10 years (Aits 2 and 3).

<sup>18</sup> *Foreman*, op. cit. p. 193. Much of the Chickasaw chiefs was to receive 160 sections of land if the treaty were satisfied.

<sup>19</sup> Treaty of September 3, 1840 (unratified).

<sup>20</sup> Several official attempts were made by the Government to persuade the Chickasaws of the desirability of amalgamating with the Choctaws. *Foreman* op. cit. pp. 199-198.

<sup>21</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 197.

<sup>22</sup> 7 Stat. 321. Supplementary and explanatory articles (7 Stat. 388) adopted October 22, 1842. Art. 10 is of interest. The Chickasaws:

"... shall always need a friend to advise and direct them. . . . There shall be an agent kept with the Chickasaws, to be appointed by the President, to reside within the jurisdiction of the United States as a nation. . . . And whenever the office of agent shall be vacant, the President will pay due respect to the wishes of the nation."

<sup>23</sup> *Ibid.* Art. 1.

<sup>24</sup> *Ibid.* Art. 2.

<sup>25</sup> *Ibid.* See Aits 4, 5 and 15.

<sup>26</sup> *Foreman* op. cit. p. 190.

<sup>27</sup> Treaty of May 24, 1844, 7 Stat. 150. It is of interest that in previous treaties the word "cede" was used. In this phrase "abandon" their homes is used (Art. 2).

<sup>28</sup> Art. 2. Much land was not found until 1837, when the Chickasaws purchased a large tract of land from the Choctaws. *Foreman*, op. cit. p. 200.

<sup>29</sup> The opinion that a widow keeping house and having children or other persons residing with her (except slaves, is the head of a family unless said children or other persons are provided for under the sixth and eighth articles, that as many Indian wives as were living with their children apart from their husbands (though wives of the same Indian) are "heads of a family" within the meaning of the fifth article of the treaty, see 7 Op. A. G. 34, 11 (1839). And yet, on the scope of investments under Art. 11, 5 Op. A. G. 170 (1847).

Title to reservations was complete when the locations were made to identify them. *Bray v. Polk*, 18 Wall. 112 (1877).

For details concerning the number of allotments to lands, the sum approved, and the names of the assignees of those Indians who obtained lands pursuant to the provisions of the Chickasaw treaty made at Washington in 1844, see 17 Rep. No. 190, 29th Cong. 1st sess., vol. VI (1846).

<sup>30</sup> Also see sec. 303 of this Chapter.

cordially negotiations were begun and on October 25, 1820,<sup>100</sup> the Indians ceded to the United States the "country to be" in western Mississippi "on the land west of the Mississippi between the Arkansas and Red rivers."<sup>101</sup>

Article 4 of the treaty contains the guarantee that the boundaries established should remain without alteration.

"...until the period at which said nation shall become civilized and enlightened is to be made citizens of the United States, and Congress shall fix off a limited parcel of land for the benefit of such family or individual in the nation."

Article 12 gave the agent full power to confiscate all whiskey except that brought under permit into the nation. This appears to be the first attempt by treaty to regulate traffic in liquor.

Shortly after the treaty was signed it was discovered that a part of Choctaw's new country was already occupied by white settlers.<sup>102</sup> The President called to Washington delegates from the Choctaw Nation to reconsider the matter and negotiate another treaty. This was done on January 20, 1825,<sup>103</sup> and the Choctaws for \$6,000 a year for 10 years (Art. 3), and a permanent annuity of \$6,000 (Art. 2), ceded back all the land lying east of a line which today is the boundary between Arkansas and Oklahoma. One of the 1825 treaty it is also agreed that all those who have reservations under the preceding treaty shall have permits, with the consent of the President of the United States, to sell and convey the same in fee simple.<sup>104</sup> Article 7 calls for the modification of Article 4 of the preceding treaty so that the Congress of the United States shall not exercise the power of allotting lands to individuals without the consent of the Choctaw Nation.

A few years later, federal agents, anxious to speed up the migration program under the Removal Act of 1830,<sup>105</sup> held another series of conferences in the Choctaw Nation.

At Dancing Rabbit Creek, a conference characterized by generous present giving,<sup>106</sup> a treaty was signed on September 27, 1830.<sup>107</sup> By this agreement the Choctaws ceded the remainder of their holdings east of the Mississippi to the United States Government in return for:

"...a tract of country west of the Mississippi River, in fee simple to them and their descendants, to inure to them while they shall exist as a nation and live on it."<sup>108</sup>

<sup>100</sup> Treaty of Doak's Stand or October 18, 1820, 7 Stat. 210. Concerned in *Choctaw Nation v. United States*, 110 U. S. 2 (1885), *United States v. Choctaw Nation*, 179 U. S. 494, 507 (1900), *Maffett v. United States*, 224 U. S. 448, 450 (1912). In *W. H. White, 112 U. S. 694, 100 (1884)*, this treaty was cited in support of the statement that the alien and dependent condition of the members of the Indian tribes could not be put off at their own will without the action or consent of the United States. In *Fleming v. McArthur*, 215 U. S. 80, 80 (1909) the Supreme Court declared that by this treaty the United States could not claim title to the Choctaw Nation with "no qualifying words."

<sup>101</sup> Abel op. cit. § 302, p. 280. The tract was ceded potentially by the state of Mississippi. See Vol. I.

<sup>102</sup> Art. 2.

<sup>103</sup> Abel op. cit., pp. 280-287.

<sup>104</sup> Treaty of January 20, 1825, 7 Stat. 284, continued in 2 Op. A. G. 405 (1831), and 8 Op. A. G. 48 (1838).

<sup>105</sup> Act of May 26, 1830, 4 Stat. 411, 8 U. S. 2111, 20 U. S. C. 174.

<sup>106</sup> The expense account for the negotiations of Dancing Rabbit Creek submitted by the federal commissioners included items of \$1,409.81 for calico, quilts, razors, soap, etc. See Doe No. 512, 28th Cong. 1st sess., pp. 261-265.

<sup>107</sup> Stat. 388. This was the first treaty made and ratified under the Removal Act of May 26, 1830, 4 Stat. 411.

<sup>108</sup> Art. 2. In 1809 the United States Supreme Court examined this particular provision and ruled that this was a grant to the Choctaw Nation and was not to be held in trust for members of the tribe, which upon dissolution of the tribal relationship would confer upon each individual absolute ownership as tenants in common. *Fleming v. McArthur*, 215 U. S. 80 (1909). See Chapter 15, sec. 1A.

This tract was the same as that in the Treaty of January 20, 1825.

Provision is also made for reservations of land to individual Indians in Articles 11<sup>109</sup> and 19.<sup>110</sup> In Article 11 it is also stipulated that a grant in fee simple shall issue upon the fulfillment of certain conditions.<sup>111</sup>

Whether the construction of Article 11 created a trust for the children of each reservee was one of the questions before the United States Supreme Court in *Wilson v. Wall*.<sup>112</sup> And the Court:

"The parties to this contract may justly be presumed to have had in view the previous custom and usage with regard to grants to persons 'desirous to become citizens.' The treaty suggests that they are 'a people in a state of rapid advancement in education and refinement.' But it does not follow that they were acquainted with the doctrine of trusts."<sup>113</sup> (P. 57.)

The following provisions of Article 4 of the Treaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek deserve to be noted:

"The Government and people of the United States are hereby obliged to secure to the said Choctaw Nation of Red People the jurisdiction and government of all the persons and property that may be within their limits west of that no Territory or State shall ever have a right to take laws for the Government of the Choctaw Nation of Red People and their descendants, and that no part of the land granted them shall ever be embraced in any Territory or State but the U. S. shall forever secure said Choctaw Nation from and against all laws except such as from time to time may be enacted in their own National Council, not inconsistent with the Constitution, Treaties, and Laws of the United States."<sup>114</sup>

<sup>109</sup> 7 Stat. 284.

<sup>110</sup> Article 14 provided reservations of land for those electing to remain and become citizens of the state. Such persons retained their Choctaw citizenship but lost their annuity if they removed. That in the event of the death of reservees under the twentieth article of the treaty of 1830, before the fulfillment of the condition precedent to the grant in fee simple of the reserve, the interest thereby acquired passed to those persons who under said law succeeded to the inheritable interest of the individual in question. See 4 Op. A. G. 107 (1838).

If an Indian was prevented by the force or fraud of individuals having no authority from the Government from complying with the conditions of Article 11 of the Treaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek, it is considered in the Attorney General that the remedy was limited such individuals, although it permanent dispossession was produced by the sale of the land by the Government (even though he might have responded to law possession by such persons) who his claim is still valid. 4 Op. A. G. 71 (1836). And see on liability to receive reservations, 7 Op. A. G. 71 (1836).

No forfeiture has resulted from the fraudulent acts of the agent of the Government who induced claimants to apply for reserves under the nineteenth article, and which were located for them, but for which payments have not been demanded nor issued. See 4 Op. A. G. 102 (1839).

To the effect that the essential provisions of the Choctaw treaty of 1830 must be given precedence over any rights claimed under the provisions laws, but that regulations to carry treaty into effect need not be inflexible and may be modified in any way not inconsistent with the treaty. See 3 Op. A. G. 365 (1838).

<sup>111</sup> See note on § 8 (1) after ratification of the treaty with the intention of becoming a citizen is a condition.

<sup>112</sup> *Wilson v. Wall*, 8 Wall. 87-90 (1867).

<sup>113</sup> In a negligence action brought in 1910 to the United States Court in the Indian Territory, the defense advanced was a general denial and a plea of the statute of limitations, which it was claimed was in force in the Indian Territory when that country was a part of the territory of Missouri, and continued in force notwithstanding the separation of the territory. This Court Judge Caldwell denied, calling attention to the treaty with the Choctaw Nation of September 27, 1830, 7 Stat. 388 by which the United States Government "bound itself in the most solemn manner to exclude white people from the territory, and never to permit the laws of any state or territory to be extended over it." *St. Louis & B. P. Co. v. O'Connell*, 49 Fed. 446, 442 (C. C. 1, 8, 1898).

<sup>114</sup> That this the Choctaw, to punish by their own laws white men who come into their nation, see 2 Op. A. G. 695 (1834) and see Chapter 7, sec. 9.

The nature and extent of the jurisdiction of the Choctaw Nation were reviewed by Attorney General C. C. Cushing in 1877.

Now, among the provisions of the treaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek are several of very significant character having exclusive reference to the question of criminal jurisdiction.

In the first place, it provides that any Choctaw, committing acts of violence upon the person or property of citizens of the United States "shall be delivered up for trial and punishment by the laws of the United States, in which also are to be punished all acts of violence committed upon persons or property of the Choctaw Nation by citizens of the United States." Provision less explicit, but equally on the same principle, is made for the repression or punishment of third persons engaged in made by the United States to prevent or punish the intrusion of their "citizens" into the territory of the nation. (Art. 6, § 7, 9, 12.)

In the second place, the Choctaws express a wish in the treaty that Congress would grant to the Choctaw the right of punishing by their own laws, any white man who shall come into the nation, and intrude any of their national resources. (Art. 4.) But Congress did not decide to the request. On the contrary, it has made provision, by a series of laws, for the punishment of crimes affecting white men committed by or on them in the Indian country, including that of the Choctaws, by the courts of the United States. (See act of June 30, 1834, in which it is large, p. 729, and act of June 17, 1844, in which it is large, p. 691.) These acts cover, so far as they go, all crimes except those committed by Indian against Indian.

But there is no provision of treaty or in statute, which takes away from the Choctaw jurisdiction in a case like this, a question of property strictly internal to the Choctaw nation, nor is there any written law which confers jurisdiction of such a case on any court of United States. (Art. 171, 178-179.)

Before the Treaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek was proclaimed, the whites began to move into Choctaw country illegally,<sup>104</sup> and Indians "ill organized and inadequately provisioned" began to move west "under the aegis of Greenwood Le Flore, a mixed blood and former Choctaw chief." President Jackson then ordered that removal be supervised by the Army.<sup>105</sup> Removal began on a large scale in the fall of 1831.<sup>106</sup> It had not been entirely completed at the end of the century.<sup>107</sup>

4. *Civilians*—Thecession of land by the Creeks after the uprising of the "hostiles" in 1812 was the first step in the direction of systematic removal.<sup>108</sup>

The Compact of 1802<sup>109</sup> became the source of constant agitation in Georgia for change in the Creek boundary line. On January 22, 1831,<sup>110</sup> ratification of the boundary of the Creek Nation was secured,<sup>111</sup> but the lands obtained by this agreement were less fertile<sup>112</sup> than had been anticipated and another treaty

was negotiated January 8, 1821.<sup>113</sup> Part of the consideration tendered the Creeks on this occasion (Art. 4) was the payment to the State of Georgia of "whatsoever billance may be found due by the Creek nation to the citizens of said State."

The value of the ceded land was placed at \$450,000, of which not more than \$250,000 was to be paid to settle the claims of Georgia citizens against the Creek Nation,<sup>114</sup> the exact amount of which is left to the decision of the President of the United States.

After the land had been made, Georgia asked that it be entitled to cover other claims. The Attorney General, after advising that the award of President Monroe must be considered final and conclusive reviewed the contents of the treaties between the United States and the Creek Nation and assented.

One head of these claims submitted for my opinion is the claim for property destroyed and which the people of Georgia carry back to 1783, the date of the treaty of Augusta. How much this claim under these treaties? There is not one treaty which contains any stipulation to answer for property destroyed. \* \* \* what is the effect in a treaty of peace, of express provisions with regard to some past wrongs and a total silence as to others? Is it not a virtual extinguishment of all claims for antecedent wrongs with regard to which the treaty is silent?

It is further asked, why the Creek nation did not stipulate for the payment over to themselves of the large surplus that must inevitably remain, upon the supposition that the claim for property destroyed was not to be allowed? \* \* \* They were at the feet of the white people, with whom they were treating. They saw a formidable array of arms, \* \* \* and of the circumstances attending which the living race of Creeks must have been wholly ignorant—and now dug up from the dead by the State of Georgia, and presented and pressed as living and valid claims. \* \* \* the alleged debts were Indian, a conquered and despised race, for whom it was natural for them to suppose that no sympathy was left either by the nation or the judge. Is it not probable that, under these circumstances, they were ignorant enough to think it probable that no surplus would remain, and that they were willing enough to surrender to the United States the whole \$250,000, on the condition of then relieving them from claims to which they seemed to be no end, but which threatened to be immortal? \* \* \*

In 1824 commissioners from the United States Government arrived in the Creek Nation to negotiate for still another session. At Broken Arrow, in Alabama, they met with the Creeks and told them that the President had extensive holdings beyond the Mississippi which he wished to give them in exchange for the land they then occupied.<sup>115</sup>

The Creek chiefs replied:

"\* \* \* this is the almost inevitable consequence of a removal beyond the Mississippi, we are convinced. It is true, very true, that "we are surrounded by white people," that there are enticements made—what advantages have we that similar ones will not be made on us, should we deem it proper to accept your offer, and remove beyond

<sup>104</sup> 7 Op. A. G. 174 175-179 (1855). See Chapter 7, sec. 9.

<sup>105</sup> February 24, 1831.

<sup>106</sup> Foreman, op. cit. p. 41.

<sup>107</sup> *Ibid.* p. 58.

<sup>108</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>109</sup> *Ibid.* p. 42.

<sup>110</sup> *Ibid.* pp. 48-49.

<sup>111</sup> *Ibid.* p. 104.

<sup>112</sup> Treaty of Augusta, 1821, § 12, 130.

<sup>113</sup> Abel, op. cit. in 712 p. 278. See also 4D supra.

<sup>114</sup> By that compact Georgia ceded territory now part of Alabama and Mississippi in consideration of which the United States agreed to extend to the Creek Nation the limits of Georgia as soon as it could be done peaceably and on reasonable terms. Abel, op. cit. in 712 p. 222, 232.

Ordinarily lands ceded to the United States become part of the public domain. By the Georgia pact it became the property of the state. Hence Georgia felt free to alienate it as it could be done peaceably and on reasonable terms. (Abel, op. cit. in 712 p. 222, 232.)

<sup>115</sup> Treaty of January 22, 1821, § 12, 171.

<sup>116</sup> Indian Office Letter: Boone, Series I, D., p. 224, cited in Abel, op. cit. pp. 322-325.

<sup>117</sup> Treaty of January 8, 1821, § 12, 217. Subsequent to this treaty, the question of whether the United States was keeping its part of the Georgia compact arose. A House committee reporting on January 7, 1822 (American State Papers, "Indian Affairs," II, p. 239), held that it was not. According to Abel, op. cit. in 324, the constitutional significance of removal dates from that report.

<sup>118</sup> By the Treaty of August 7, 1790, § 16, the Creeks had undertaken responsibility to return persons, white or Negro, in any part of the nation (Art. 8). By that article, the Treaty of Indian Springs of January 8, 1821 (Art. 4), § 215, held them responsible for claims not exceeding \$250,000 by the citizens of Georgia, for runaway slaves.

Foreman, op. cit. p. 417.

<sup>119</sup> 2 Op. A. G. 110, 120, 150-151 (1828).

<sup>120</sup> Tall, December 7, 1824, Journal of Proceedings at Broken Arrow (Indian Office MS Records) cited in Abel, op. cit. in 352, p. 387.

the Mississippi, and how do we know that we would not be encroaching on the people of other nations?"

Finally after days of unvarying speech making, the conference was adjourned. However one Commissioner Dunn of Campbell, aware that one faction in the Creek Nation headed by William McIntosh<sup>11</sup> favored migration, brought about the resumption of treaty negotiations at Indian Springs, its stronghold in Georgia.<sup>12</sup>

Significantly the Great Chief of the Creeks, Little Prince, and his second in command, Big Warrior, were absent, having dispatched a representative to the treaty council to protest against the lack of authority of those in attendance.<sup>13</sup> Undiscounted, Campbell continued the negotiations and on February 12, 1825,<sup>14</sup> a treaty was concluded providing for the surrender of certain Creek holdings for \$400,000 for lands of like quantity and value, westward of the Mississippi.<sup>15</sup>

A year later a new treaty<sup>16</sup> was negotiated and referred to the Senate which refused its advice and consent.<sup>17</sup> A few days later a supplementary article<sup>18</sup> providing for an additional cession of land was submitted and with this alteration, the treaty received Senate confirmation.<sup>19</sup>

Here, however, the matter did not end. Georgia now denied that treaties with the Indians had the same effect as those with civilized nations and asked that the whole question of claims under the Treaty of 1821 be reconsidered. This was refused by the Attorney General of the United States who declined.

The matter of this objection requires to be briefly analyzed.

First, they cite an *unratified* Indian. And what then? Are not the treaties which it made with these obligations on both sides? It was made a question in the case of *Georgia*, whether treaties made by "Christians with heathens were obligatory on the former." This discussion," says Vattel (book 1 chap. viii, sec. 161), "might be necessary at a time when the madness of party still darkened those principles which it had long caused to be forgotten, but we may venture to believe it would be superfluous in our age. *The law of nature alone regulates the rights of nations.*" The difference of religion is a thing absolutely foreign to them. Different people treat with each other in *quality of men*, and not under the character of *Christians or of Mussulmans*. Their

common safety requires that they should treat with each other and treat with security."

What Vattel says of difference of religion is equally applicable to this objection. And that civilization which should claim an exemption from the full obligations of a treaty, is set to naught by its construction on the ground that the other party to the treaty was uncivilized would be as little justified in any respect as the nation which should claim the same consequences on the ground that the other contracting party was a heathen.

With the departure from the Presidency of John Quincy Adams the strict observance of treaty obligations with the Indian tribes ceased to be a accepted national policy. Henceforth the emphasis was to be on removal,<sup>20</sup> and a few days after his inauguration Andrew Jackson insisted that it was necessary for the Creeks to migrate as soon as possible.<sup>21</sup> In vain the Creeks protested.<sup>22</sup> Then declaration to Washington was demanded in substance on the condition that they would be fully empowered to negotiate in conformity with the wishes of the Government.<sup>23</sup> Finally a treaty was concluded March 24, 1825<sup>24</sup> and all the Creek land east of the Mississippi passed into the possession of the Federal Government.

By article 14 of this agreement the United States solemnly promised tribal self-government to the Creeks. A number of years later this guarantee handed in charge to the jury regarding robbery committed in the Indian country. The court in denying that the Indian country was under the sole and exclusive jurisdiction of the United States, said:

"A sole and exclusive jurisdiction would exclude all Indian laws and regulations, punish crimes committed by Indian on Indian and real estate and govern property and contracts and the civil and political relations of the inhabitant Indians and others in that country. It would be wholly opposed to a self-government by any Indian tribe or nation. This self-government is expressly recognized and secured by several treaties between the United States and Indian tribes in the Indian country situated by the act of 1824 to Arkansas or Missouri. District for certain purposes. This may be seen from the treaty with the Choctaws in 1830, and the treaty with the Creeks in 1822, and other Indian treaties." (P. 106)

For a number of years it was alleged that the United States had not fulfilled its obligations under this treaty. That was brought by the Creek Nation in the Court of Claims under the jurisdictional act of May 24, 1921.<sup>25</sup> The plaintiff sought to recover the \$837 value of the entire reserves except as to those claims for which it had been proved that the owners received the stipulated "land consideration, alleging that the Government

<sup>11</sup> 7 Ark. Decem. 8 1824. Journal of Proceedings held in Abel *op cit* p. 137.

<sup>12</sup> A mixed blood cousin of Governor Dismas of Georgia and leader of the lower Creek towns (Abel *op cit*, p. 138).

<sup>13</sup> Campbell had suggested various ways of securing the Creek signature to a removal treaty. Finally he was informed that the President would not countenance a treaty unless it was made "in the usual form, and upon the ordinary principles with which Treaties are held with Indian tribes." (Abel *op cit*, p. 138).

<sup>14</sup> Indian Office Letter Books Series II No 1 pp. 400-410 cited in Abel, *op cit* p. 138.

<sup>15</sup> Stat. 207.

<sup>16</sup> Art. 2. All Creek holdings within the State of Georgia were included in the cession.

<sup>17</sup> Treaty of Washington of January 24 1826 7 Stat. 286.

<sup>18</sup> Abel, *op cit*, p. 139.

<sup>19</sup> Supplementary article of March 11, 1826 7 Stat. 289.

<sup>20</sup> In the Committee of the Whole Session of Georgia asked that the first article be altered so that the Indian Spring Treaty could be abrogated without reflecting upon its negotiation. This was refused. Beaman and five others were the only members of the Senate who on the final vote refused to consent to ratification. Afterwards, Beaman admitted that he had voted against the treaty because he felt that it did not contain enough of an inducement to migration. American State Papers, Indian Affairs II, pp. 748-749, cited in Abel, *op cit* p. 132.

<sup>21</sup> Before the whole matter was settled to the satisfaction of Georgia, which claimed that more than the described territory should have been relinquished, another treaty of cession was negotiated. Treaty of November 15, 1827, 7 Stat. 307.

<sup>22</sup> 2 Op. A. G. 110 135-136 (1828). See also sec. 1 *supra* p. 5.

<sup>23</sup> Indian Office Letter Books Series II No 1 pp. 37-37<sup>1/2</sup>, cited in Abel *op cit* p. 62 p. 70.

<sup>24</sup> On February 6 1825 the Head Men and Warriors of the Creek Indians addressed the Congress of the United States entitling them not to involve the program of removal pointing out "We are assured that beyond the Mississippi we shall be exempted from further taxation."

"... Can we obtain ... assurances more distinct and positive than those we have already received and trusted? Can then power exempt us from migration in our promised lands if they are in compliance to our protection while we live? ... If we do No. 102 22d Cong. 1st sess. (1832), vol. 1, p. 18.

<sup>25</sup> Indian Office Letter Books Series II No 7, p. 422, cited in Abel, *op cit*, pp. 187-188.

<sup>26</sup> 7 Stat. 306. (This was amended in certain particulars by treaty of February 14, 1828, 7 Stat. 417 and November 24, 1828, 7 Stat. 674.) Article IV of the Treaty of February 14 1831 7 Stat. 417 expressly removed the Seminole Indians in Florida and provided for a permanent and comfortable home on the lands of the Creek Nation in conformity to treaty negotiations with the Seminoles. See also 7 Stat. 468.

<sup>27</sup> *American State Papers*, Indian Affairs II, p. 447 ("C. Mowmen 1843). And see *Atlantic and Pacific Railroad Co. v. Alabama*, 163 U. S. 41, 417-418 (1897). See Chapter 28.

<sup>28</sup> C. 151, 43 Stat. 1380.

failed to remove intruders from the country ceded is justified by Article V of the treaty and that it is evident it became impossible to fulfill Articles II and III involving the surveying and selection by the Indians of reserved lands. While the Court of Claims found that the Creek Nation, with certain exceptions, had waived all claims and demands in subsequent treaty, its holding on the execution of this treaty is illuminating.

<sup>8</sup> While the record leaves no room for doubt that most of the Indian lands in imprisonment were perpetuated upon the Indians in the sales of a large part of the reserves the conclusion is justified, and we think inescapable, that because of repeated investigations prosecuted by the Government these lands were largely eliminated. The investigations were conducted by able and fearless men and were most thorough. Every possible claim was asserted by them to the individual reserves who claimed that they had been defrauded to prevent their claims. Chiefs of the nation were invited to bring to the attention of the investigators all claims of individual Indians upon the Indians, and were issued all claims would be considered and justice done. Hundreds of complaints upon investigation were found to have been fraudulently procured and their cancellation recommended by the investigating agents. While the identity of the national case investigated and found to have been fraudulent, and the final action of the Government on the actual reports recommending the removal of such cases was not disclosed, it is manifest that accommodations were in the main followed and new contracts of sales were made certified to the President and approved by him. (Pp. 260-261.)

<sup>9</sup> *Florida Indians*—One of the problems arising from the treaty with Spain by which the Florida Indians were acquired was that of the proper disposition of the Indians who inhabited that region.<sup>10</sup> In some quarters it was insisted that the Indians had been living in the territory for so long only and even if this were not true then lands were now forfeit by conquest. General Jackson in particular was outspoken in his opposition to treating with the Indians, asserting that if Congress were ever going to exercise its power over the natives it could not do better than to begin with these "conquered" natives.<sup>11</sup>

After 2 years of considering the various viewpoints concerning them in Florida was decided upon, and President Monroe appointed commissioners to treat with the Florida Indians. The result was the Treaty of Fort Moultrie of September 1823.<sup>12</sup> Article I of this instrument reads that—

"The undersigned chiefs and warriors, for themselves and their tribes, have assented to the humanity, and thence

<sup>10</sup> *Creek Nation v. The United States* 77 C. Cls. 220, 252, 260 (1931). On all division of Creek Indian land under Article II, dissections as to issuing of patents on individual reserves under II, III, IV, as to state citizenship and right to patent. Art. I. See 16 Op. A. G. 41 (1878), 8 Op. A. G. 298 (1887), 399 (1890).

<sup>11</sup> See fn. 417 *supra*.

<sup>12</sup> Treaty of February 22, 1823, October 29, 1820, with Spain ratified by United States February 18, 1821, 8 Stat. 272.

<sup>13</sup> In 1821, a subject, Penoles, was appointed for the Florida Indians by Jackson (then Governor) to explore the country determine the number of Indians and prepare them either for concentration in Florida or for removal elsewhere. Abel, *op. cit.* p. 328.

<sup>14</sup> They were known as Seminoles ("Spaniards") in Florida or descendants of Creek Tribes: Hitchiti, Yamacsee, Yuchi and 1 Negro element. Foreman *op. cit.* p. 310.

<sup>15</sup> Abel *op. cit.* p. 328. The first Seminole War with General Andrew Jackson in command had ended in 1818 disastrously for the Indians. The use by runaway slaves in their territory continued as did the subsequent white raids. Foreman *op. cit.* p. 318.

<sup>16</sup> Abel *op. cit.* p. 320.

<sup>17</sup> 7 Stat. 524. For the first time (Art. 7) recognition of the fugitive slave problem and the Indians agreed to prevent such individuals from taking refuge, and to apprehend and return them for compensation. See also Treaty of June 18, 1827, 7 Stat. 427 in which the Appalachee band of Indians relinquished all privileges to which they were entitled by this treaty (Art. 1).

themselves on, and have promised to continue under the protection of the United States, and of no other nation, power or sovereign, and, in consideration of the promises and stipulations herein made, do cede and relinquish all claims of title which they may have to the whole territory of Florida.

In return the United States (Art. 4) "assigned" land with a guarantee of peaceable possession, and gave them (Art. 3) in addition to implements, stock and an annuity, protection against all persons.

<sup>4</sup> provided they conform to the laws of the United States, and refrain from making wars, or having any alliance to any foreign nation, without having first obtained the permission and consent of the United States.

An additional article granted to say chiefs permission to remain and large tracts of lands.

Soon it was obvious that the territory assigned was insufficient. Agriculture was impossible in the swamps of the nation. Although it is provided by Article 9 the boundary line was to be extended to find "good tillable land," it still failed to afford the tribe adequate means of support.<sup>18</sup>

Friction developed between Indians who remained and white settlers, and between the removed Indians and whites searching for runaway slaves. The plight of those who had remained grew steadily worse.<sup>19</sup>

In 1812 it Payne's Landing, they were persuaded to accept it, although the treaty<sup>20</sup> was not to be considered binding until in initial party explored the west and found a suitable home. However in 1813 the chiefs who undertook this preliminary search, without authority to do so, signed another treaty<sup>21</sup> which was construed to make removal under the only treaty obligatory instead of optional. This treaty was never accepted by the tribe, and large scale removal of Seminoles never took place.<sup>22</sup>

<sup>6</sup> *Other tribes*—In the Northwest Territory a treaty of removal was concluded with the Delaware Indians on October 3, 1818.<sup>23</sup> Article 2 of this agreement binds the United States, in exchange for land in Indiana<sup>24</sup> to provide for the Delawares a country to reside in, upon the west side of the Mississippi, and to guarantee to them the peaceable possession of the same.

The next year treaties signed at Edw.sville Illinois,<sup>25</sup> and at Fort Harrison<sup>26</sup> provided for exchange of Kickapoo lands in Indiana and Illinois to Missouri territory. By the terms of the Edw.sville treaty (Art. 6) the United States, ceded to the Indians and their heirs forever a certain tract of land in Missouri territory, provided that "the said tribe shall never sell the said land without the consent of the President of the United States." Article 4 of the Fort Harrison treaty refers to the contemplation by the tribe of Kickapoo of the Vermilion, of removing from the country they now occupy.

In 1824, a treaty<sup>27</sup> with the Chickasaw Nation was concluded, whereby the Chickasaws ceded all their land in Arkansas territory and agreed to remove to the land of the Choctaw Indians (Art. 4).

These agreements were for a number of years the major at points made by the United States to persuade the Indians of

<sup>18</sup> Abel, *op. cit.* pp. 320-324, Foreman, *op. cit.* pp. 318-319.

<sup>19</sup> Foreman, *op. cit.* pp. 318-320.

<sup>20</sup> Treaty of May 9, 1812, Preamble and Art. 1, 7 Stat. 368.

<sup>21</sup> Treaty of March 28, 1813, 7 Stat. 423. This treaty was the cause of the second Seminole War. Foreman, *op. cit.* p. 321. Some of the Indians fled to the swamps where demolition fighting went on for years.

<sup>22</sup> Foreman, *op. cit.* p. 323.

<sup>23</sup> Treaty of October 3, 1818, 7 Stat. 178. And also supplement to this treaty September 24, 1820, 7 Stat. 327.

<sup>24</sup> Treaty of July 30, 1819, 7 Stat. 300.

<sup>25</sup> Treaty of August 30, 1819, 7 Stat. 202.

<sup>26</sup> Treaty of November 16, 1824, 7 Stat. 222.

that region to exchange their holdings for land lying elsewhere.<sup>15</sup> Then in the autumn of 1842 four treaties were negotiated at Castor Hill, Missouri, which assured the departure from Missouri of the remnants of the Kickapooes, the Shawanoes, and Delaware,<sup>16</sup> the Kaskaskias and Pottawattomies,<sup>17</sup> and the Peoria and Wea.<sup>18</sup> In the meantime other federal commissioners were negotiating with the bands of Pottawattomies, who inhabited Indiana, Illinois, and Michigan. Although a number of treaties<sup>19</sup> providing for cession of their land were concluded with them, it was not until late in 1844 that their signature was secured to the first of a series of "removal" treaties.<sup>20</sup> The treaty of February 11, 1847,<sup>21</sup> provided for their removal within 2 years.

For a number of years the white settlers in the Northwest and the Rutes and Foxes had clashed. In 1804<sup>10</sup> the United Tribes of Sau and Fox Indians had made a treaty of limits with the United States. The white settlers interpreted that to mean relinquishment of all claims east of the Mississippi. This cession the Rutes and Foxes never recognized.<sup>11</sup> Dissatisfaction was further increased by the treaties of August 4, 1824<sup>12</sup> August 19, 1827,<sup>13</sup> and July 17, 1830.<sup>14</sup> After the making of the last treaty, the Indians left on their winter hunt and upon returning discovered that their lands north of Rock River, which had been in dispute for some time had been surveyed and sold during their absence. Hostilities ensued. At the battle of Bad Axe August 2, 1812, the Winnebagoes and the Rutes and Foxes were defeated.<sup>15</sup> In the treaties of Fort Armstrong which reunited the United States, seemed from the Winnebagoes, all their claims east of the Mississippi,<sup>16</sup> and from

the Sacs and Foxes nearly all of eastern Iowa with the exception of a small reserve on which they were concentrated.<sup>100</sup>

In the following year the Federal Government obtained the consent of the United Nation of Chippewa Ottawa and Potawatame Indians to a treaty at Chicago, Illinois. In this treaty<sup>10</sup> the United States, in exchange for the land the Indians held about 7,000,000 acres including the western shore of Lake Michigan, transferred to them (Art. 2) approximately the same amount of territory to be held as other Indians lands are held."

At about the same time, the Qnapaws were concentrated in the northeast corner of the Indian territory.<sup>11</sup> This was done because of the failure of the original plan<sup>12</sup> to confine them to lands occupied by the Caddo Indians.<sup>13</sup>

It is not to be understood that during this period treaty makers were occupied with removal to the exclusion of all else. In fact, until 1829, the number of treaties negotiated solely for the purpose of extinguishing aboriginal title to land predominated.<sup>41</sup> Even during the years 1828-40 when the migration program was at its height, treaties were concluded with the Ojibwe, and Mississauga,<sup>42</sup> Plover, Menominee,<sup>43</sup> the Miami, (8 treaties), the Wabigoon,<sup>44</sup> the United Nations of Chippewa, Ottawa, and Potawatomi Indians,<sup>45</sup> the Iowa,<sup>46</sup> the Yankton Sioux,<sup>47</sup> Sioux,<sup>48</sup> and

<sup>41</sup>Tricities of session were common during this period but outright removal to exchanged lands was not.

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of October 24, 1942 7 Stat. 891.

<sup>1894</sup> Treaty of October 26, 1884. 7 Stat. 897

<sup>1</sup> Treaty of October 27, 1844, 7 Stat. 403.

<sup>425</sup> Treaty of October 29, 1882, 7 Stat. 410.

[illegible]

7 Stat 52

<sup>10</sup> Twenty of November, 1901, 7 Stat 84

<sup>101</sup> Abel, *op. cit.*, pp. 396–387.

1670.)

<sup>48</sup> 7 Stat 272. Constrained in *Bleeker v. Wetherby*, 95 U.S. 517 (1877). To this treaty the Sioux and the Chippewa, Menominee, Iowa, Winnebago and a portion of the Ottawa, Chippewa and Potawatomi tribes were also parties.

On October 21, 1857, by a treaty with the Sacs and Foxes of Wisconsin, 7 Stat. 543 the right of interest to the country described in the second article and recognized in the third article of this treaty, was ceded to the United States, together with all claims or interests under the treaties of November 3, 1804, 7 Stat. 54, August 4, 1824, 7 Stat. 229, July 18, 1830, 7 Stat. 428, and September 17, 1830, 7 Stat. 531.

NO 7 Stat 328

<sup>487</sup> Abel, *op cit.*, p 891

<sup>40</sup>Tracy to September 21 1832 7 Stat 37.

<sup>10</sup> Treaty of September 20, 1883, 7 Stat. 43.

<sup>71</sup> *Florida* of May 18 1863 7 *Stat* 424

<sup>1</sup> Treaty of November 17, 1824, 7 Stat. 3.

<sup>11</sup> The lands given them by the Caddos proved very poor hence they returned to their old home in Arkansas. (Pleasant Treaty of May 13, 1831, 7 Stat. 421.)

It should be noted that by Treaty of July 1 1835 the (addo Indians (7841-470) agreed to removal in these terms " \* \* \* promise to remove it their own expense out of the boundaries of the United States \* \* \* and never more return to live settle or establish themselves in a nation Indian or community of people within the same."

[illegible]<sup>287</sup> *Treaty* of September 21, 1839, 7 Stat. 429.

<sup>188</sup>Treaty of October 9, 1883, 7 Stat. 448.

\*Treaty of October 27, 1882, 7 Stat 405. This modified the treaty concluded February 8, 1881, 7 Stat 342, and provided for a grant of land to the Stockbridge, Munsee and Brothertown Indians, and New York Indians. Later the Stockbridge Indians migrated west under the terms

<sup>428</sup> Treaty of October 28, 1834, 7 Stat 458, Treaty of November 6, 1838, 7 Stat 569, Treaty of November 28, 1840, 7 Stat 582

<sup>100</sup>Treaty of April 23, 1896, 7 Stat. 502.

<sup>40</sup>Treaty of July 29, 1829, 7 Stat. 820.

<sup>102</sup> Treaty of October 19, 1888, 7 Stat.

<sup>10</sup> Treaty of October 21, 1837, 7 Stat.

<sup>101</sup>Treaty of September 29, 1837, 7 Stat 538.



Great and Little Oregon Indians<sup>11</sup> providing for a considerable restriction of their ancient domain. A series of treaties were also negotiated about 1825 by Dr. Gen. Philip Atkinson of the United States Army and Benjamin O'Fallon Indian agent, which dealt only with problems of trade and friendship.<sup>12</sup>

#### F. TRIBES OF THE FAR WEST 1816-51

In the late summer of 1846 war having been declared with Mexico<sup>13</sup> General Philip Kearney in command the Army of the West advanced into New Mexico.

Without doing battle New Mexico's governor fled leaving Kearney in control of the province.<sup>14</sup> Following the cessation of the war between the United States by the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo of February 2, 1848,<sup>15</sup> a treaty of peace with the Navaho Indians who inhabited that region was concluded in 1849.<sup>16</sup>

Two months later December 30, 1849, another far western tribe, the Ute, signed a treaty<sup>17</sup> and the period of negotiating with the Indians who claimed through the act acquired from Mexico and the Oregon Territory may be said to have opened.

To Fort Laramie in the early summer of 1850 came a great number of Shosh Cheyenne, Arapaho, Crow, Assinibou, Gros Ventre, Mandan and Arikara. After several days of conference, Indian agent Thomas Fitzpatrick secured their signature to a treaty in which the natives promised peace, acknowledged certain boundaries and agreed to recognize the right of the United States to erect posts and maintain roads within their territory.<sup>18</sup>

This treaty was never formally proclaimed by the President and because of this its validity was challenged in *Ray v. United States* and *Opallia Tribe of Shona Indians*.<sup>19</sup> The Court of Claims examined the circumstances, found that the treaty had been acted upon by Congress, and referred to in subsequent agreements, and held that proclamation was not necessary to give it effect and that both parties were bound by the covenant from the date of its signature.

In the meantime the discovery of gold in California had caused the migration westward to assume the proportions of a

stampede. Soon this newly admitted state was faced with the familiar problem of keeping its title for preemption purposes in ample supply of public land. An equally familiar solution was quickly decided upon. Congress appropriated \$23,000 and dispatched commissioners to treat with the California Indians regarding the territory they occupied.<sup>20</sup>

Some 18 treaties with 18 California tribes were negotiated by these Federal agents in 1851. All of them provided for a surrender of native holdings in return for small reservations of land elsewhere. Other stipulations made the Indians subject to state law.<sup>21</sup>

When the terms of these various agreements became known the California State Legislature formally protested the granting of any lands to the Indians. The zealous for this opposition were received by the President and the Secretary of the Interior, and finally a number of months after the agreements had been negotiated they were submitted to the Senate of the United States for ratification. This was refused on July 5, 1852.<sup>22</sup>

The Indians, however, had already begun performance of their part of the agreement. Urged by government officials to anticipate the approval of the treaties they had started on the journey to the proposed reservations. Now they found themselves in the unfortunate position of having sacrificed their homes for lands which were already occupied by settlers and regarding which the Federal Government showed no willingness to take action. This situation was never remedied until the creation in the 1920's of several small reservations for the use of these Indians can be said to have done so.<sup>23</sup>

In 1852 the Apaches, occupying portions of the territory relinquished by Mexico, were invited to a Treaty Council at Santa Fe, New Mexico. They came and duly promised perpetual peace (Art. 2) with the United States.<sup>24</sup> They also engaged (Art. 5) to refrain from hostile incursions into Mexico.

The following year the Comanches, Kiowas, and Apaches met at Fort Atkinson. An agreement very similar in substance to the Santa Fe Treaty was concluded July 27, 1853.<sup>25</sup>

Although the number of families traveling the Oregon trail had increased steadily during the 40's, no agreements were made with the Indians of the territory until 1853. Then, in September of that year, the Rogue River Indians signed a treaty with the United States providing for a substantial cession of land (Art. 1) from which a certain portion was to be reserved for a temporary home until such time as a permanent residence should be designated by the President of the United States (Art. 2). A similar arrangement was made with another Oregon tribe, the Cow Creek band, on September 19, 1853.<sup>26</sup>

While these first treaties were being signed with the Indian tribes of the Far West, agreements with other tribes were being negotiated. Eight treaties,<sup>27</sup> providing for territorial cessions

<sup>11</sup> Treaty of January 11, 1839, 7 Stat. 576.

<sup>12</sup> Treaty of June 9, 1825 with Pomoan Tribe, 7 Stat. 237. Treaty of June 22, 1825 with Teton, Jambon and Santonian Bands of Shosh Tribe, 7 Stat. 250. Treaty of July 5, 1825 with Nomia and Opallia Tribe, 7 Stat. 252. Treaty of July 6, 1825 with Cheyenne Tribe, 7 Stat. 253. Treaty of July 10, 1825 with Hunkpapa Band of Sioux, 7 Stat. 257. Treaty of July 15, 1825 with Kiowa Tribe, 7 Stat. 259. Treaty of July 10, 1825 with Mandan Tribe, 7 Stat. 264. Treaty of September 26, 1825 with Ute and Arikara Tribes, 7 Stat. 277. Treaty of September 30, 1825 with Pawnee Tribe, 7 Stat. 279. Treaty of October 6, 1825 with Arikara Tribe, 7 Stat. 282.

<sup>13</sup> Act of May 18, 1810, 9 Stat. 9 and Presidential Proclamation, Appendix No. 2, 9 Stat. 999.

<sup>14</sup> The province was taken in the name of the United States on August 22, 1846 and Kearney was made governor. *West. The Red Man in the New World Drama* (1951), p. 408.

<sup>15</sup> 9 Stat. 822. See Chapter 20, sec. 9.

<sup>16</sup> Treaty of September 9, 1849 9 Stat. 974. Article 2 states "that from and after the signing of this treaty hostilities between the contracting parties shall cease and perpetual peace and friendship shall exist." p. 9.

<sup>17</sup> Treaty of December 30, 1849 9 Stat. 994.

<sup>18</sup> In agreement with the Comanche, Tom Anadon Caddo etc., on May 16, 1846, 9 Stat. 944. It pointed out Texas shortly after the Republic had become a member of the Union actually surrendered them. The last articles of all three agreements acknowledge the jurisdiction of the United States.

<sup>19</sup> Treaty of September 17, 1851, 11 Stat. 749. Three of these tribes—the Assinibou, the Apaches, and the Gros Ventres—were treating with the United States for the first time. See *Repts. Comm. Ind. Aff.* 1852, pp. 300-300.

<sup>20</sup> 16 C. Cls. 177 (1910).

<sup>21</sup> Act of September 30, 1850, 9 Stat. 544, 558.

<sup>22</sup> *Wise* op. cit., p. 410.

<sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 421-425.

<sup>24</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 428. Of Act of May 18, 1850, 45 Stat. 802 conferring jurisdiction over California Indian claims upon Court of Claims.

<sup>25</sup> Treaty of July 27, 1853, 10 Stat. 979.

<sup>26</sup> Treaty of July 27, 1853, 10 Stat. 1018.

<sup>27</sup> Treaty of September 10, 1850, 10 Stat. 1018. Continued in *Ross, Ray v. United States and Rogue River Indians*, 29 C. Cls. 178 (1884).

By the treaty of November 15, 1854, 10 Stat. 1119, the Rogue River Indians agreed to permit other tribes and bands, under certain conditions, to reside on their reservation (Art. 1).

<sup>28</sup> Treaty of September 19, 1853, 10 Stat. 1027.

<sup>29</sup> Treaty of January 14, 1846, with Kansa Tribe, 9 Stat. 842. Treaty of August 2, 1847, with Chipewyan of the Mississippi and Lake Superior, 9 Stat. 904. Treaty of August 21, 1847, with Pillager Band of Chippewyan Indians, 9 Stat. 908. Treaty of August 6, 1848, with Pawnee, 9 Stat. 940. Treaty of April 1, 1850, with Wyandott Nation of Indiana, 9 Stat. 987. Treaty of July 23, 1851, with Sioux Sisseton and Wahpeton Bands, 10 Stat. 940.

and 10 treaties " stipulating for removal of the Indians to more compact lands were signed during these years.

### G EXPERIMENTS IN ALLOTMENT " 1851-61

On March 21, 1851, George W. MANNING, of Ohio became Commissioner of Indian Affairs. The new official was designated by the President to enter into negotiations with the tribes west of the states of Missouri and Iowa to white settlement on their land, and extinguishment of their title.<sup>1</sup>

His first success in this connection was with the Ottawas and Missourians on March 17, 1851.<sup>2</sup> Article 6 of the instrument signed on this occasion provides:

The President may from time to time, at his discretion, cause the whole of the land herein reserved \* \* \* to be surveyed off into lots, and to sell to such Indian or Indians of said confederate tribes as are willing to avail [themselves] of the privilege, and who will live on the same as a permanent home, if a single person or on twenty-one years of year, one eighth of a section, to each family of two, one quarter section, to each family of three, and not exceeding five, one half section, to each family of six and not exceeding ten, one section, and to each family exceeding ten in number, one quarter section for every addition of five members. And he may prescribe such rules and regulations as will secure to the family, in case of the death of the head thereof, the possession and enjoyment of such permanent home and the improvements thereon. And the President may, at any time in his discretion after such person or family has made a location on the land assigned for a permanent home, issue a patent to such person or family for such assigned land, conditioned that the tract shall not be aliened or leased for a longer term than two years, and shall be exempt from levy, sale, or forfeiture, which conditions shall continue in force until \* \* \* the State constitution embracing such land within its boundaries shall have been formed, and the legislature of the State shall remove the restrictions. And if any such person or family shall at any time neglect or refuse to occupy and till a portion of the land assigned, and on which they have located, or shall move from place to place, the President may, if the patent shall have been issued, revoke the same, or if not issued, cancel the assignment, and may also withhold from such person or family, their proportion of the annuities or other moneys due them, until they shall have returned to such permanent home, and resumed the pursuits of industry, and in default of their return, the tract may be declared abandoned, and thereafter assigned to some other person or family of such confederate tribes as may be proposed as a successor for the disposal of the excess of said land. And the section of the land hereby reserved, after all the Indian persons or families of such confederate tribes shall have had assigned to them permanent homes, may be sold for their benefit, under such laws, rules, or regulations as may hereinafter be prescribed by the Congress or President of the United States. No State legislature shall remove the restriction herein provided for without the consent of Congress.

This treaty, like many other treaties negotiated during the administration of Commissioner Manning, included a clause

(Art. 1) by which the Indians relinquished all claims to money or due under earlier treaties. The policy of paying Indians for lands by means of permanent annuities, which had involved the conservation of the Indian estate, was thrown into discard, and there was substituted a policy of quick distribution of tribal lands, parallel to the quick distribution of tribal lands which allotment entailed. Underlying this policy of quick distribution was the assumption that tribal existence was to be brought to an end within a short time.

On March 16, 1854, an agreement similar in its details regarding allotment was concluded with the Omaha.<sup>3</sup>

All treaties providing for the individualization of land holdings, as signed by the Shawnee Indians on May 10, 1854,<sup>4</sup> The terminology used in this instrument varies somewhat from that of the preceding treaties. Instead of the provision that:

"The President may, from time to time, at his discretion, cause the whole of the land herein reserved \* \* \* to be surveyed off into lots, and to assign,"

article 2 holds that:

All Shawnees \* \* \* shall be entitled to \* \* \* two hundred acres, and if the head of a family, a quantity equal to two hundred acres for each member of his or her family \* \* \*

Deeded provisions are also included for the assignment of individual holdings to intermarried persons, minors, orphans, adopted persons, and incompetents; the latter to have the selection made by some disinterested person or persons appointed by the Shawnee Council and approved by the United States Commissioner. Further article 6 provides that "competent" Shawnees shall receive their share of the annuity in money, but that that of the "incompetent" Indians "shall be disposed of by the President." In the manner best calculated to promote their interests, the Shawnee Council being first consulted with respect to such persons.

Six treaties " stipulating allotment of land in severalty were

<sup>1</sup> Treaty of March 18, 1851, 10 Stat. 1045. Concluded in *United States v. Coalinga*, 215 U. S. 278 (1909), *United States v. Huston*, 215 U. S. 201 (1909), *United States v. Payne*, 204 U. S. 440 (1924). By the terms of this agreement the United States under certain conditions agreed to pay the Indians \$882,000 for land ceded (Arts. 4 and 5). Later it was contended by the Omaha Tribe in 1914 argued before the Court of Claims in 1918 that although the cession had been made the Government had failed to pay anything. This the Government admitted but contended that the Omaha Indians did not own and did not have the right to make a cession thereof. In finding for the plaintiff the court said "At the time the treaty was made the United States recognized the Omaha as having title to the land north of the due west line and specifically promised to pay for it \* \* \* The defendants can not now be heard to say that the Indians did not own the land when the treaty was made and had no right to make a cession of it." *Omaha Tribe v. United States*, 73 C. Cls. 649, 650 (1918), mod. 235 U. S. 276 85 C. Cls. 521.

<sup>2</sup> Treaty of May 10, 1854, 10 Stat. 1054. Concluded in *Walker v. Hinkley*, 16 Wall. 498 (1872), *United States v. Blackfeather*, 155 U. S. 180 146-147 (1894), *Jones v. Mohan*, 175 U. S. 1 (1899), *Blackfeather v. United States*, 190 U. S. 368 (1908), and *Dunbar v. Greene*, 108 U. S. 166 (1903).

<sup>3</sup> The treaty of 1854 left the Shawnee people's title to land with a declaration of their dependence on the National government for protection and the vindication of their rights. And since their tribal organization has continued as it was before \* \* \* While the general government has a superintending care over their interests and continues to treat with them as a nation, the State of Kansas is exempted from deriving that title to it. She accepted this status when she accepted the act admitting her into the Union. Conflicting rights and privileges on these Indians cannot affect their situation, which can only be changed by treaty stipulation or a voluntary abandonment of their tribal organization. An long as the United States recognizes their national character, she is under the protection of treaties and the laws of Congress and their property is withdrawn from the operation of State laws. (Arts. 1 and 2.)

<sup>4</sup> *The Cowan Indians*, 5 Wall. 777, 760-77 (1860).

<sup>5</sup> *Delaware*, Treaty of May 6, 1854, 10 Stat. 1048, *Ioway*, Treaty of May 17, 1854, 10 Stat. 1069, *Sacs and Fox of the Missouri*, Treaty of May 18, 1854, 10 Stat. 1074, *Kickapoo*, Treaty of May 18, 1854, 10 Stat. 1078, *Kaskaskia, Peoria, etc.*, Treaty of May 30, 1854, 10 Stat. 1082, *Miami*, Treaty of June 6, 1854, 10 Stat. 1084.

<sup>1</sup> Treaty of November 28, 1840, with Miami, 7 Stat. 582, Treaty of March 17, 1842, with Wyandot, 11 Stat. 851, Treaty of October 4, 1842, with Chickasaw Indians of the Mississippi and Lake Superior, 7 Stat. 591, Treaty of October 11, 1842, with Sac and Foxes, 7 Stat. 598, Treaty of June 5 and 17, 1846, with Potawatomi, 9 Stat. 868, Treaty of October 18, 1846, with Menominee, 9 Stat. 922, Treaty of November 24, 1846, with Stockbridge, 9 Stat. 908, Treaty of March 18, 1846, with Ottawa and Missourians, 10 Stat. 1058.

<sup>2</sup> Prior to 1854, several treaties were signed which provided for the allotment of land. Chapter 11, sec. 1A, Chapter 8, sec. 241. Several early treaties used the words "allot" and "allotment" but they referred to the assignment of lands to groups of Indians. Kinney, *A Continent Lost—A Civilization Won* (1907), pp. 82-83.

<sup>3</sup> Report of the Comm. of Ind. Aff. (1858), p. 249.

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of March 18, 1854, 10 Stat. 1058.

concluded by Commissioner Minnecpung in the next 2 months. In one of these, provision is made for the setting up of a permanent fund with the proceeds from the sale of the lands ceded by the Indians. The United States is charged with the duty of administering this fund. The extent of this obligation was determined by the Court of Claims which held in the *Dakota Title v. The United States* that the fund was related to the preservation of the principal and not the interest. The claimant could not be considered as the United States. The claimant's obligation to maintain the fund was the duty of the Secretary in which the principal had been first invested.<sup>1</sup>

In the autumn of 1854 the Chippewa of Lake Superior became a party to a treaty providing for the allotment of land to individual Indians by the President at his discretion, and with the power to make

rules and regulations, respecting the disposition of the land in case of the death of the holder or of a family or single person occupying the same or in case of its abandonment by them.<sup>2</sup>

Article 2 also provides for the allotment of 80 acres to rich mixed blood over 21 years of age.

The Wyandott treaty concluded January 11, 1875<sup>3</sup> is particularly interesting. The first article stipulates that tribal lands are dissolved, declares the Indians to be citizens of the United States and subject to the laws thereof and of the territory of Kansas, although those who wish to be exempted from the immediate operation of such provisions shall have continued in them the assistance and protection of the United States. Article 2 provides for the cession of their holdings to the United States, stipulating the subject of which cession is, that the said lands shall be subdivided, assigned, and reconveyed, by patent in fee simple, in the manner herein first provided for to the individuals and members of the Wyandott nation, severally.<sup>4</sup> Articles 4 and 5 provide for the most detailed method of allotment yet encountered, in which the commissioners, one from the United States and two from the Wyandott nation, were to make a distribution of lands to certain specified classes of individuals. Patents are then to issue continuing an absolute and unclouded title to the individuals, but for those not so listed the patents will contain certain restrictions and may be withdrawn by the

Commissioner of Indian Affairs. None of the land thus assigned and patented is subject to taxation for a period of 5 years.

In February of 1875 the Chippewa of Minnesota<sup>5</sup> and the Winnebago-Sioux Indians<sup>6</sup> ceding their territorial holdings but not of which there is "reserved" and "set apart" for the Chippewa and "ceded" for the Winnebago Indians for a permanent home. Further the President is authorized whenever he deems it advisable to allot their lands in severalty.

The tribes of the Far West were not overlooked in this burst of treaty-making activity. In the closing months of 1874 and the opening days of the following year six treaties<sup>7</sup> were negotiated with the Indians of Oregon, the various tribes of the Puget Sound region etc. All of these provided for the allotment of land in severalty and for reservations of territory described by such phrases as "such portions" as may be assigned to them<sup>8</sup> "shall be held" as an Indian reservation, and "district which shall be designated for permanent occupancy".

Seven more treaties providing for the assignment of land to individual Indians were negotiated during Commissioner Minnecpung's administration which ended in 1877. All of these feature extensive land cessions with certain reservations either "set apart as a residence" or "held and regarded as an Indian reservation" or "reserved" for the use and occupancy of the Indians.<sup>9</sup>

James W. Denver, Charles E. Mier, and Alford B. Greenough, who successively held the position of Commissioner of Indian Affairs until the outbreak of the Civil War, were likewise committed to a treaty policy providing for allotment in severalty. Under their auspices seven such agreements<sup>10</sup> were negotiated. These instruments in form and substance differ little from those of the Minnecpung administration.

## H THE CIVIL WAR 1861-65

The four years of conflict between the states had its effect on the various Indian tribes. Violence and bloodshed had become commonplace and several Indian tribes seized the occasion to accompany demands upon the Federal Government with a display of force.<sup>11</sup> This was particularly the case in Minnesota,

<sup>1</sup> 72 U. S. Ch. 443 (1861).

<sup>2</sup> For opinion that a patent under Art. 5 should issue to Christian Indians but if it may be restricted by act of Congress after issue under the effect would be to invalidate title of bona fide purchasers, that title of Christian Indians will not be vested in the Indians comprising the tribe called by that name as tenants in common, but in the tribe itself as the nation, see 9 Op. A. G. 34 (1867) and see chapter 15 see 11.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of September 30 1854 Act 2 Stat 1199. Constructed in *Lee v. Brown* 162 U. S. 602 (1896). *Wyandott v. Hitchcock* 201 U. S. 202 (1906). *Chippewa Indians of Minnesota v. United States* 301 U. S. 178 (1937) and *Minnesota v. United States*, 306 U. S. 482 (1939).

The President is empowered by Art. 5 to hold private with "such restrictions or the power of alienation as he may see fit to impose." A stipulation that the patentee and his heirs shall not sell leave, or in any manner alienate said tract without the consent of the President of the United States is within the meaning of this Article. *United States v. Boudier* 31 P. (2d) 624 (D. C. W. D. Va., 1928). Moreover such restrictions extend to the tribes on the land as well as the land itself. *Star v. Campbell* 205 U. S. 527 (1908).

The court in holding that state fish and game laws have no application to the Big River Reservation because federal law is exclusive also called attention to Art. 11 of the above treaty which gave the right to hunt and fish on lands ceded until otherwise ordered by the President. *Star v. Campbell* 205 U. S. 527 (1908) (D. C. W. D. Va., 1901).

<sup>10</sup> Treaty of January 18 1863 10 Stat 1191. Constructed in *Goody v. Atchaf*, 203 U. S. 146, 149 (1906). Power of voluntary sale granted, land withheld from taxation on forced alienation, *Wall v. Brydshaw* 16 Wall 436 441 (1872). *Shoshone v. Stanton*, 183 U. S. 290 (1902), *Conley v. Balgove*, 216 U. S. 84 (1910).

<sup>11</sup> Treaty of February 22 1855 10 Stat 1167. Constructed in *United States v. Wall*, *Land Road of Chippewa Indians* 245 U. S. 498, 500 501 (1917). *United States v. First National Bank* 254 U. S. 291 301 (1920) (dealing with rights of mixed blood Chippewas). *Johnson v. Goetz*, 244 U. S. 422, 437 (1914) (discussing liquor provisions). *United States v. Minnesota* 270 U. S. 81 (1926), and *Chippewa Indians of Minnesota v. United States*, 301 U. S. 558 (1937). Treaty of February 27, 1855 10 Stat 1172.

<sup>12</sup> Treaty with the Empire, etc., of November 28, 1854, 10 Stat 1125, Treaty with the Cheyenne, etc. of November 18, 1854, 10 Stat 1122, Treaty with the Villanotte of January 22, 1855, 10 Stat 1144, Treaty with the Wyandott, January 31, 1855 10 Stat 1180, Treaty with the Nezperce, etc., December 26, 1854, 10 Stat 1132, Treaty with the All-Sioux Chippewa February 22, 1855, 10 Stat 1165.

<sup>13</sup> Treaty of June 9 1865 with Walla Walla Cayenne, and Umatilla Tribes 12 Stat 945, Treaty of June 24, 1865, with Indians in middle Oregon 12 Stat 964, Treaty of June 9, 1865, with Yakima 12 Stat 961, Treaty of June 11, 1865, with Nez Perce, 12 Stat 977, Treaty of July 12, 1865 with Flatheads, etc., 12 Stat 978, Treaty of July 31, 1865, with Ottumwa and Chippewas, 12 Stat 921, Treaty of August 2, 1865, with Chippewas 12 Stat 981.

<sup>14</sup> Mendocino and Wahpukoota Bands of Sioux, Treaty of June 19, 1865, 12 Stat 1031, Sawtooth and Whitson Bands of Sioux, Treaty of June 19, 1865, 12 Stat 1047, Winnebago Treaty of April 15, 1860, 12 Stat 1101, Swan Creek Chippewas and Christian Indians, Treaty of July 15, 1860, 12 Stat 1105, Sahn and Ponce, Treaty of October 1, 1860, 15 Stat 407, Kansas Indians, Treaty of October 5, 1860, 12 Stat 1111, Delaware, Treaty of May 10, 1860, 12 Stat 1120.

<sup>15</sup> However several treaties of allotment were negotiated during this period. Treaty of March 18, 1862, with Kansas Indians, 12 Stat 1221, Treaty of June 24 1862, with Ottumwa 12 Stat 1207, Treaty of June 28, 1862, with Kickapoo, 13 Stat 628, Treaty of June 9, 1862, with the New Price, 14 Stat 647, Treaty of October 14, 1864, with the

while in the summer of 1862, the Sioux of the Mississippi participated in a season of unsuccessful marauding against the whites.<sup>67</sup>

While no treaty negotiations were attempted with the Sioux of that State, the Chippewas were added to a series of treaty councils in 1863 and 1864. Here their signatures were secured to treaties providing for removal and allotment of land in seven days.<sup>68</sup>

In the Far West the Indians succeeded in making treaties at Fort Bridger,<sup>69</sup> Box Elder,<sup>70</sup> and Timba Valley,<sup>71</sup> in the Utah Territory and at Ruby Valley,<sup>72</sup> in the Nevada Territory with the Shoshones, at Lapwai<sup>73</sup> in the Territory of Washington with the Nez Percés,<sup>74</sup> at Cosquees in the Colorado Territory with the Utes,<sup>75</sup> and at Klamath Lake in Oregon with the Klamath Indians.<sup>76</sup> The last mentioned were negotiating with the United States for the first time and Article 9 of the agreement signed by them included the very hard stipulation then being inserted in many treaties that

They will submit to and obey all laws and regulations which the United States may prescribe for their government and conduct.

### I POST CIVIL WAR TREATIES 1865-71

The years immediately after the close of the Civil War were filled with Indian councils and conferences. Usually these parties resulted in the signing of treaties in which mutual pledges of amity and friendship were prominent and frequent.

In October of 1865 the Cheyenne and Arapaho,<sup>77</sup> the Apache, Cheyenne, and Arapaho,<sup>78</sup> the Comanche and Kiowa,<sup>79</sup> met with Army officers Hamilton and Hains and signed treaties promising that peace would hereafter be maintained. A few days later eight tribes of Sioux at Fort Snider made the same promise.<sup>80</sup>

<sup>67</sup>Treaty of October 5, 1859, 12 Stat. 1111 was entered into with the Kansas Indians, Treaty of March 1, 1862, 12 Stat. 1221. Also see Chapter 8, sec. 11.

<sup>68</sup> Seymour, Story of the Red Man (1928), 208-209.  
<sup>69</sup>Treaty of March 11, 1865, with Chippewas of the Mississippi and the Pillar and Lake Winnebagoish Bands, 12 Stat. 1249, Treaty of October 2, 1865, with Red Lake and Pembina Bands of Chippewas, 13 Stat. 649, Treaty of May 7, 1866, with Chippewas of the Mississippi and the Pillar and Winnebagoish Bands, 13 Stat. 998, Treaty of October 18, 1864 with Chippewas of Saginaw, Swan Creek, and Black River, 14 Stat. 637.  
<sup>70</sup>Treaty of July 2, 1868, with Shoshone Bands, of Shoshone Indians, 18 Stat. 686.  
<sup>71</sup>Treaty of July 8, 1868, with Northwestern Bands, of Shoshone Indians, 19 Stat. 608.  
<sup>72</sup>Treaty of October 12, 1863, with Shoshone Goshute Bands, 18 Stat. 681.

<sup>73</sup>Treaty of October 1, 1868, with Washan Bands of Shoshone Indians, 18 Stat. 689. Art. 6 of the treaty reads:

The said bands agree that whenever the President of the United States shall deem it expedient for them to abandon the roaming life which they now lead and become herdsmen or farmers, they are hereby authorized to make such reservations for their use as he may deem necessary within the country above described, and they do also hereby agree to remove their camps to such reservations as he may indicate, and to reside and remain thereon.

Art. 6 of the treaty with the Shoshone Goshute Bands (see in 621, supra) is similar.

<sup>74</sup>Treaty of June 9, 1863 with the Nez Percés, 14 Stat. 647.  
<sup>75</sup>Treaty of October 7, 1868, with Tabagewee Band of Utes, 18 Stat. 678.

<sup>76</sup>Treaty of October 14, 1864 with Klamath and Modoc tribes, and Yahookun Band of Snake Indians, 18 Stat. 707.  
<sup>77</sup>Treaty of October 14, 1865, 14 Stat. 708.  
<sup>78</sup>Treaty of October 17, 1865, 14 Stat. 713.

<sup>79</sup>Treaty of October 18, 1865, 14 Stat. 717.  
<sup>80</sup>Two Kettles Band of Sioux Indians, Treaty of October 19, 1865, 14 Stat. 728, Blackfeet Band of Sioux, Treaty of October 19, 1865, 14

Immediately after the close of war, commissioners representing the President of the United States, appeared among the Five Civilized Tribes. Some of these Indians had been openly sympathetic with the rebel cause, even entering into treaties with the Confederacy. This action was viewed upon by the commissioners as an indication of disloyalty, and a treaty negotiated in 1865 with the Cheeks, Cherokee, Chickasaw, Chickasaw, Osage, Seminoles, Sawtooth, Shawnee, and Quapaw tribes opens with the statement that the Indians by their declaration had become liable to a forfeiture of all the guarantees which the United States had previously made to them.<sup>81</sup>

While this treaty was never ratified, the principle announced undoubtedly colored subsequent negotiations and is reflected in the treaties of 1866 with the Seminoles,<sup>82</sup> Choctaws and Chickasaws,<sup>83</sup> Creeks,<sup>84</sup> and Chickasaws.<sup>85</sup> These agreements provide, among other things, for the surrender of a considerable portion of the territory occupied by the Indians, they pledge peace, general amnesty, the abolition of slavery, and the renunciation of civil and property rights to freedmen, and acknowledge a large measure of control by the Federal Government over the affairs of the tribes.

The summer of 1867 found the Plains still in the grip of the Sioux War. Moreover, the Cheyenne and Arapaho, the Comanche and Kiowa had joined the belligerents, carrying hostilities over a wide area.

The Indian Peace Commission,<sup>86</sup> composed of civilians and Army officers appointed "to investigate the cause of the war and to arrange for peace,"<sup>87</sup> was successful in part. At Medicine Lodge Creek in Kansas, the Kiowa, Comanche, and Apache,<sup>88</sup> and the Arapaho and Cheyenne<sup>89</sup> promised peace, the abandonment of the chase, and the pursuit of the habits of civilized living.

In the summer of 1868, many Sioux, together with a scattering of Cheyenne and Arapaho warriors, renewed hostilities, which were terminated by the treaty of April 29, 1868.<sup>90</sup> A month later the Cheyenne<sup>91</sup> and the Northern Arapaho and Cheyenne<sup>92</sup> put an end to hostilities in two agreements concluded May 7, 1868, and

Stat. 747, Sans Arc Band of Sioux, Treaty of October 20, 1865, 14 Stat. 741, Ojibwa Band of Sioux, Treaty of October 20, 1865, 14 Stat. 739, Yanktonal Band of Sioux, Treaty of October 20, 1865, 14 Stat. 735, Upper Yanktonal Band of Sioux, Treaty of October 20, 1865, 14 Stat. 743, Ojibwa Band of Sioux, Treaty of October 20, 1865, 14 Stat. 747, Lower Brule Band of Sioux, Treaty of October 14, 1865, 14 Stat. 690.

The peace established by these agreements was a fleeting one. War continued with the Sioux for a brief interruption for 2 years thereafter.

<sup>81</sup>Kimmer, op. cit., p. 157.

<sup>82</sup>Treaty of March 21, 1868, 14 Stat. 785.

<sup>83</sup>Treaty of April 28, 1868, 14 Stat. 789.

<sup>84</sup>Treaty of June 14, 1868, 14 Stat. 785.

<sup>85</sup>Treaty of July 20, 1868, 14 Stat. 799.

<sup>86</sup>Established by Act of July 20, 1867, 15 Stat. 17.

<sup>87</sup>Report of the Commissioners of Indian Affairs, 1868, p. 4.

<sup>88</sup>Treaty of October 21, 1867, 15 Stat. 581. Treaty of October 21, 1867, 17 Stat. 639.

<sup>89</sup>Treaty of October 28, 1867, 15 Stat. 668.

<sup>90</sup>Treaty of April 29, 1868, 15 Stat. 635. By the Sioux treaty, the United States agreed that for every 50 children (of the said Sioux tribe who can be induced or compelled to attend school) a house should be provided and a teacher appointed to teach the elementary branches of our English education should be furnished (*Quick Bear v. Leupp*, 230 U. S. 55, 80 (1908)).

<sup>91</sup>Treaty of May 7, 1868, 15 Stat. 649. Continued in *Diaper v. United States*, 154 U. S. 240 (1894), *United States v. Proctor*, 305 U. S. 527, 629 (1938).

<sup>92</sup>Treaty of May 10, 1868, 15 Stat. 655.

May 30 1865 By Summit the Nipmuc, ' the eastern band of Shoshone and the Bannock, ' and the Nez Perce ' had also

ratified of June 1 1865 15 Stat 667 Provision for allotment of land in severalty to individuals wishing, to farm is found in Art. 5 of this treaty. This agreement also contained in Art. 3 this remaining several

It first men among the Indians shall commit a wrong or depredation upon the person or property of any one white (black or Indian) subject to the authority of the United States and act in violation thereof the Nation to the latter shall on proof made to the court and on notice by him deliver up the wrong doer to the United States to be tried and punished according to its laws.

In 1869 the Supreme Court of Arizona holding the district court in error in denying to several Indians who had been imprisoned by the War Department a writ of habeas corpus called attention to this treaty saying:

\* \* \* This stipulation amounts to a covenant that had Indians shall not be punished by the United States except pursuant to laws

## SECTION 5 THE END OF TREATY-MAKING

The advancing tide of settlement in the west following the close of the Civil War dispelled the belief that it would ever be possible to separate the Indians from the whites and thus give them an opportunity to work out their situation alone. Assimilation, allotment and citizenship became the watchwords of Indian administration<sup>1</sup> and attacks on the making of treaties grew in force.<sup>2</sup>

The termination of the treaty-making period was suggested by section 6 of the Act of March 29, 1867<sup>3</sup> which provided:

And all laws allowing the President, the Secretary of the Interior, or the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to enter into treaties with any Indian tribes at hereby it is provided, and no expense shall hereafter be incurred in negotiating a treaty with any Indian tribe until an appropriation authorizing such expense shall be first made by law.

This provision marked the growing opposition of the House of Representatives to the practical exclusion of that House from control over Indian affairs. The provision in question was repealed a few months later<sup>4</sup> but the House continued its struggle against the Indian treaty system. Semmelmeyer recounts the incidents of that struggle in these terms:

While the Indian Peace Commission succeeded in ending the Indian treaty-making system, it was not accepted by the Senate were not acceptable to the House of Representatives. A the Senate alone ratified the treaties, the House had an opportunity of expressing its opinion regarding them until the appropriation bill for the fiscal year 1870, making appropriations for carrying out the treaties, came before it for approval during the third session of the Fortieth Congress. The items providing funds for fulfilling the treaties were inserted by the Senate, but the House refused to agree to them, and the session expired on March 4, 1869, without any appropriations being made for the Indian Office for the fiscal year beginning July 1.

When the first session of the Forty-first Congress, convened in March, 1869, a bill was passed by the House in the same form as at the previous session. The Senate promptly amended it to include the sums needed to carry out the treaties, negotiated by the Peace Commission. The House again refused to agree but a compromise was

become signatories to treaties of peace. These were the last treaties made by the United States with Indian tribes

defining their offices and prescribing the punishments therefor. While Congress by its legislation in its disregard treaties, the executive branch of the government may not do so. The district court was in error in denying the writ of habeas corpus.

In re By 131 U. S. 7 1868 16 Stat 673. Cited in *Marques v. Hule*, 98 U. S. 176 (1878). *Malley v. United States*, 161 U. S. 207 (1895), and *Ward v. Race Horse*, 163 U. S. 504 (1896).

In *United States v. Shoshone Tribe of Indians*, 401 U. S. 113 (1969) it was held that the right of the Shoshone Tribe in the lands set apart for it under the treaty of July 3, 1868 with the United States, included the mineral and timber resources of the reservation, and the value of these was properly included in fixing the amount of compensation due for so much of the lands as was taken by the United States. *Twenty of August 11 1868, 10 Stat. 603*

finally reached by which these were voted in addition to the usual appropriation a lump sum of two million dollars " enable the President to maintain peace among and with the various tribes, bands, and parties of Indians, and to promote civilization among said Indians, bring them, where practicable, upon reservations, relieve their necessities, and encourage their efforts to self support" (10 Stat. L., 61).

The House also insisted on the insertion of a section providing "That nothing in this act contained, or in any of the provisions thereof, shall be so construed as to partly or ignore any treaty made with any tribes, bands or parties of Indians since the twentieth day of July, 1867." This was rather a remarkable piece of legislation in that while it did not abrogate the treaties, it withheld its approval although the treaties had already been formally ratified and proclaimed. The effect, but again, wrote into the act the feeling of the House of Representatives. At the next session of Congress a similar section was added to the Indian appropriation act for the fiscal year 1871, with the additional provision that nothing in the act should in any way apply to, or diminish any of the powers of the Executive and Senate over the subject.<sup>5</sup> The entire section, however, was inadvertently omitted in the enrollment of the bill and was not formally enacted until the passage of the appropriation act for the fiscal year 1872 (16 Stat. L., 570).

Probably one of the reasons for the refusal of the House to agree to the treaty provisions was its distrust of the administration of the Office of Indian Affairs, for it was during the debate on this bill that General Truitt made his scathing indictment of that Office.<sup>6</sup> (Ep. 65-58)

*Discontinuance of treaty making, 1871*—When the appropriation bill for the fiscal year 1871 came up in the second session of the Forty-first Congress the fight of the previous year was renewed, the Senate insisting on appropriations for carrying out the new treaties and the House refusing to grant any funds for that purpose. As the end of the session approached it appeared as if the bill would fail entirely, but after the President had called the attention of Congress to the necessity of making the appropriations, the two houses finally reconciled their differences.

The strong fight made by the House and expressions of many members of the Senate made it evident that the treaty system had reached its end, and the Indian appropriation act for the fiscal year 1872, approved on March 3, 1871 (16 Stat. L., 568), contained the following clause, tacked on to a sentence making an appropriation for the Yankton Indians: "Provided, That hereafter no Indian nation or tribe within the territory of the United States shall be acknowledged as an independent nation, tribe, or power with whom the United States may contract by treaty. *Provided further*, That nothing herein

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 2 for excerpts from commissioners' reports and voting termination of the treaty system.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> 15 Stat. 7, 9. Also see Act of April 10, 1869, sec. 5 16 Stat. 18, 49. The first annual report of the Board of Indian Commissioners submitted late in 1868, and the annual report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs for the same year recommended the abolition of the treaty system of dealing with the tribes. Knapp, *A Continent Lost—A Civilization Won* (1897), pp. 148, 160, 160.

<sup>4</sup> Act of July 20, 1867, 16 Stat. 18.

contained shall be construed to my tribute or upon the obligation of any treaty heretofore lawfully made and ratified with any such Indian nation or tribe." (P. 78)<sup>10</sup>

<sup>10</sup> *Vermaclaker Office of Indian Affairs* 1927 pp. 76-77. Act of March 1, 1871, 16 Stat. 544. 66d. R. S. 4209, 471, 5 C. 71. See also the statement of Justice Commissioner of Indian Affairs Francis A. Walker, who wrote in 1874.

In 1871, however, the weakness of conscious strength and the growing jealousy of the House of Representatives towards the policies inaugurated by the Senate—of determining, in com-

mon with the executive, all questions of Indian right and title and of conducting the United States' Indian policy to recognize obligations limited only by its own discretion for which the House should be bound to make provision without inquiry led to the adoption after several years of the Indian Affairs bill of 1874 (pp. 11-12) that "hereafter no Indian nation or tribe within the territory of the United States shall be acknowledged or recognized as an independent nation, tribe or power, with whom the United States may contract in treaty." (P. 5.) (Walker, the Indian Question 1871.)

Following this enactment a congressional committee was appointed to prepare a compilation of treaties still in force. Act of March 3, 1874, 17 Stat. 579.

## SECTION 6 INDIAN AGREEMENTS

The substance of treaty making was declined, however, to continue for my decades. For in substance a treaty was an agreement between the Federal Government and an Indian tribe. And so long as the Federal Government and the tribes continue to have common dealings, occasions for agreements are likely to recur. Thus the period of Indian land cessions was marked by the "agreements" through which such cessions were made.<sup>11</sup> These agreements differed from formal treaties only in that they were ratified by both houses of Congress instead of by the Senate alone.<sup>12</sup> Like treaties, these agreements can be modified, ex-

<sup>11</sup> Such agreements are exemplified by the Act of April 29, 1874, with the Utes 18 Stat. 48. Act of July 10, 1882, with the Cheyenne 22 Stat. 157. Act of March 1, 1891, with the Cherokee 26 Stat. 845. The propriety of legislation dependent upon Indian consent was questioned for a time but apparently doubts were set at rest, and the practice of legislation on the basis of Indian consent became solidly established. See *U. S. Canfield, Ltd. v. Fowles* (1891) 15 Am. L. Rev. 21, 27.

<sup>12</sup> Thus in *Dick v. United States* 208 U. S. 340, 859 (1908) the Supreme Court upheld the constitutionality of a prohibition against introduction of liquor into certain ceded lands, which was contained in an agreement of 1869 with the Nez Perce Tribe. It is a valid regulation based upon the treaty-making power of the United States and upon the power of Congress to regulate commerce with those Indians.

Even the wording of statutes providing for the negotiation of reserve lands sometimes discloses their kinship with treaties. For example the Act of May 1, 1876, 19 Stat. 47, provides for the payment of a commission "to treat with the Sioux Indians for the relinquishment of the Black Hills country in Dakota Territory."

<sup>13</sup> The Supreme Court has said in *United States v. Scommo Nation*, 299 U. S. 417, 428 (1937), and

"... that Congress had the power to change the terms of the agreement and authorize these payments as well established." *U. S. v. Lone Wolf v. Hitchcock* 157 U. S. 683, 684-687.

The Attorney General has said 26 Op. A. (1440, 647 (1907).

"... Certainly if as has been often advanced Congress may abrogate a formal treaty with a sovereign nation (*Cherokee Nation* case 180 U. S. 581; *Hong v. United States*, 145 U. S. 678; *Pong Yu Tung v. United States*, 145 U. S. 706; *Le Abo Shobe Mining Co. v. United States*, 175 U. S. 460), it may also or repeal an agreement of the kind with an Indian tribe."

In considering whether it has been superseded by a general law an agreement has been accorded the same status as a special law. *Mohe v. Lenoire*, 278 U. S. 78, 67 (1928). Accord *Lone Wolf v. Langford*, 278 U. S. 60 (1928).

cept that rights created by statute, the agreement into effect cannot be impaired.<sup>13</sup> In referring to such an agreement Justice Van Dyke said:

But it is said that the act of 1902 contemplated that they should should accept allotments and be the participants in the distribution of the remaining lands, and also of the funds, of the tribe. No doubt such was the purpose of the act. But that, in our opinion, did not confer upon them any vested right such as would disable Congress, from thereafter making provision for admitting newly born members of the tribe to the allotment and distribution. The difficulty with the appellants' contention is that it treats the act of 1902 as a contract, when it is only an act of Congress and can have no greater effect.<sup>14</sup> *Cherokee Intermarriage Cases*, 204 U. S. 76, 93. It was but an exercise of the administrative control of the Government over the tribal property of tribal Indians, and was subject to change by Congress at any time before it was carried into effect, and while the tribal relations continued. *Stephens v. Cherokee Nation* 171 U. S. 445, 188; *Cherokee Nation v. Hitchcock* 187 U. S. 294; *Wellen v. Adams*, 201 U. S. 415, 423 (P. 648).

Legislation based upon Indian consent does not come to an end with the close of the period of Indian land cessions and the stoppage of Indian land losses in 1884. For in that very year the underlying assumption of the treaty period that the Federal Government's relations with the Indian tribes should rest upon a basis of mutual consent was given new life in the mechanism of federally approved tribal constitutions and tribally approved federal charters established by the Act of June 18, 1894.<sup>15</sup> Thus, while the form of treaty making no longer obtains, the fact that Indian tribes are governed primarily on a basis established by common agreement remains, and is likely to remain so long as the Indian tribes maintain their existence and the Federal Government maintains the traditional democratic faith that all Government derives its just powers from the consent of the governed.

<sup>14</sup> *Choate v. Trapp*, 224 U. S. 665, 671 (1912).

<sup>15</sup> *U. S. v. Girty*, 189 U. S. 845, 848 (1912), quoted with approval in *Bureau v. Brady*, 235 U. S. 441, 450 (1914).

<sup>16</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 26 U. S. C. 461, *et seq.* discussed in Chapter 4, see 16

# CHAPTER 4

## FEDERAL INDIAN LEGISLATION

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 <i>The Beginnings 1789</i> .....	68	Section 10 <i>Legislation from 1870 to 1879</i> .....	77
Section 2 <i>Legislation from 1790 to 1799</i> .....	69	Section 11 <i>Legislation from 1880 to 1889</i> .....	78
Section 3 <i>Legislation from 1800 to 1809</i> .....	71	Section 12 <i>Legislation from 1890 to 1899</i> .....	79
Section 4 <i>Legislation from 1810 to 1819</i> .....	71	Section 13 <i>Legislation from 1900 to 1909</i> .....	80
Section 5 <i>Legislation from 1820 to 1829</i> .....	72	Section 14 <i>Legislation from 1910 to 1919</i> .....	81
Section 6 <i>Legislation from 1830 to 1839</i> .....	72	Section 15 <i>Legislation from 1920 to 1929</i> .....	82
Section 7 <i>Legislation from 1840 to 1849</i> .....	76	Section 16 <i>Legislation from 1930 to 1939</i> .....	85
Section 8 <i>Legislation from 1850 to 1859</i> .....	76	Section 17 <i>Indian appropriation acts 1789 to 1899</i> .....	88
Section 9 <i>Legislation from 1860 to 1869</i> .....	77		

While federal Indian legislation forms the basic material of all the substantive chapters that follow, it may serve a useful purpose to present at this point a brief panorama of the more important general statutes in the field that have been enacted during the century and a half which this book covers. Such a panorama may convey some sense of the dramatic development of Indian legislation, and throw some light upon the basic purposes that have dominated Indian legislation at different periods in our history. Much historical perspective is of particular usefulness in the field of Indian law. Solon H. Murgold, in his introduction to the Statutory Compilation of the Indian Law Survey,<sup>1</sup> comments on "the importance of the factor of history in this field of law" in the following terms:

During the century and a half that this compilation covers, the groups of human beings with whom this law deals have undergone changes in living habits, institutions, needs, and institutions far greater than the changes that separate them from even up to the ages for which Hammurabi, Moses, Aristotle, or Justinian legislated. It is swept into a century and a half, one may find changes in social, political, and property relations which stretch over more than thirty centuries of European civilization. The toughness of law which keeps it from changing as rapidly as social conditions change in our national life is, of course, much more serious where the rate of social change is twenty times as rapid. Thus, if the laws governing Indian affairs are viewed as lawyers generally view existing law, without

reference to the varying times in which particular provisions were enacted, the body of the law thus viewed is a surprising collection of inconsistencies and anachronisms. To recognize the different dates at which various provisions were enacted is the first step towards order and unity in this field.

Not only is it important to recognize the temporal "depth" of existing legislation, it is also important to appreciate the past existence of legislation which has, technically, ceased to exist. For there is a very real sense in which it can be said that no provision of law is ever completely wiped out. This is particularly true in the field of Indian law. At every session of the Supreme Court there arise cases in which the vitality of a present claim depends upon the question "What was the law on such and such a point in some earlier period?" Laws long repealed have served to create legal rights which endure and which can be understood only by reference to the repealed legislation. Thus in seeking a complete answer to various questions of Indian law, one finds that he cannot deal with a collection of laws "still in force," but must constantly turn to legislation that has been repealed, amended, or superseded.

Let this serve at the same time as an apology for including in this work a chronicle of Indian legislation and as an explanation of the rudimentary character of this chronicle. To analyze the legal problems raised by each of the statutes noted is, after all, the main task of the rest of the book. For our present purposes it suffices simply to note what legislative problems in the field of Indian law have been faced in each decade of our national existence.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>2</sup> On the interpretation of Indian statutes see Chapter 8, sec. 11.

## SECTION 1 THE BEGINNINGS 1789

During the first year of the first Congress, and indeed in the space of some 5 weeks, there were enacted four statutes which established the outlines of our Indian legislation for many years to come. The first of these was the Act of August 7, 1789,<sup>1</sup> establishing the Department of War, which provided that that Department should handle, in addition to its primary military af-

fairs "such other matters . . . as the President of the United States shall assign to the said department . . . relative to Indian affairs." We have elsewhere noted how the authority thus conferred was later transferred to the Department of the Interior.<sup>4</sup> While the days have long passed when our military relations with the Indian tribes were the most

<sup>1</sup> 1 Stat. 49.

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 1B, and Chapter 8, sec. 10A(8).

important aspect of Indian affairs to the Federal Government, the types of administrative control established under the Act of August 7, 1789 still play a large part in Indian law.

The second statute referring to Indians enacted by the new Congress provided for the government of the Northwest Territory and in effect incorporated, with minor amendments, the North West Ordinance of 1787 containing the following article on Indian affairs:

ART. 3. "The utmost good faith shall always be observed towards the Indians. Their land and property shall never be taken from them without their consent, and in their property, rights, and liberty they never shall be invaded or disturbed, unless in just and lawful wars authorized by Congress; but laws founded in justice and humanity shall from time to time be made, for preventing wrongs being done to them, and for preserving peace and friendship with them."

This represented the first of many measures by which Congress, in administering the government of the territories, legislated over Indian affairs with "plenary" authority. Congress legislated on the territories with the same latitude that the states enacted legislation to govern human conduct within state boundaries.<sup>1</sup>

The statute dealing with the Northwest Territory was followed by statutes establishing territorial or state governments for 35 states admitted to the Union after the adoption of the Constitution. In these 34 states were located nearly all the Indians with whom the federal law on Indian affairs now deals. Here

<sup>1</sup> Act of August 7, 1789, 1 Stat. 50. For a discussion of colonial dealings with the Indians concerning land see Chapter 17, sec. 9.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 5.

perhaps is one clue to the frequent use of the concept of "plenary power" vested in the Federal Government over Indian affairs.

The third act of Congress dealing with Indian affairs was the Act of August 20, 1789, which appropriated a sum not exceeding \$20,000 to defray "the expense of negotiating and treating with the Indian tribes" and provided for the appointment of commissioners to manage such negotiations and treaties. This statute thus marks the beginning of a mode of dealing with Indian affairs that was to remain the primary mode of governmental action in this field for many decades to come.<sup>3</sup>

The fourth and last of the statutes enacted by Congress at its first session which dealt with Indian affairs was the Act of September 11, 1789, which specified salaries to be paid to the "Superintendent of Indian Affairs in the northern department," a position held *ex officio* by the governor of the western territory.

Noteworthy is the fact that of the first 13 statutes enacted by the first Congress of the United States, four dealt primarily or partially with Indian affairs. In these four statutes we find the essential administrative machinery for dealing with Indian affairs established, and its expenses provided for. And we find four important sources of federal authority in dealing with Indian matters invoked. The power to make war (and, presumably, peace), the power to govern territories, the power to make treaties, and the power to spend money.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>3</sup> 1 Stat. 54.

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 4.

<sup>5</sup> 1 Stat. 87.

<sup>6</sup> Also see Chapter 5, sec. 1.

## SECTION 2 LEGISLATION FROM 1790 TO 1799

The first act of Congress specifically defining substantive rights and duties in the field of Indian affairs was the Act of July 22, 1790,<sup>1</sup> significantly titled, "An Act to regulate trade and intercourse with the Indian tribes." The significance of the title becomes clear when one notes that the act deals not only with the conduct of licensed traders, but also with the sale of Indian lands, the commission of crimes and trespasses against Indians and the procedure for punishing white men committing offenses against Indians.<sup>2</sup> It seems fair to infer that the legislators who adopted this statute thereby gave a practical and contemporaneous construction to the clause of the Federal Constitution which gives to Congress:

"... the power to regulate commerce ... with the Indian tribes."<sup>3</sup>

The Act of July 22, 1790, contained seven sections. The first three provided that trade or intercourse with the Indian tribes should be limited to persons licensed by the Federal Government, that such licenses might be revoked for violations of regulations governing such trade, prescribed by the President, and that persons trading without licenses should forfeit all merchandise in their possession.<sup>4</sup>

Section 4 declared:

"... That no sale of lands made by any Indians, or any nation or tribe of Indians within the United States, shall be valid to any person or persons, or to any state, whether having the right of preemption to such lands or not, unless the same shall be made and duly executed at some public treaty, held under the authority of the United States."<sup>5</sup>

Sections 5 and 6 dealt with crimes and trespasses committed by non-Indians against Indians within "any town, settlement or territory belonging to any nation or tribe of Indians."<sup>6</sup> Such offenders were to be subject to the same punishment to which they would be subject if the offenses had been committed against a non-Indian within the jurisdiction of the state or district from which the offender came, and the procedure applicable in cases involving crimes against the United States was made applicable to such offenders.<sup>7</sup>

The final section declared that the act should "be in force for the term of two years, and thence to the end of the next session of Congress, and no longer."<sup>8</sup>

It may be noted that each of the substantive provisions of the Indian trade and intercourse act fulfilled some obligation assumed by the United States in treaties with various Indian tribes. In its first treaty with an Indian tribe, the Treaty of September 17, 1778, with the Delaware Nation,<sup>9</sup> the United States had undertaken to provide for the accommodation of the Delawares—

"... a well-regulated trade, under the conduct of an intelligent, candid agent, with an adequate salary, one more influenced by the love of his country, and a constant attention to the duties of his department by promoting the common interest, than the sinister purposes of converting and buying all the duties of his office to his private emolument."<sup>10</sup> (Art. 5)

Similar undertakings, providing for congressional action in the regulation of traders, had been undertaken in various other

<sup>1</sup> 1 Stat. 137.

<sup>2</sup> Art. 1, sec. 8, cl. 3. Also see Chapter 5, sec. 3.

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter 10, sec. 1.

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 18C.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 18, sec. 5.

<sup>6</sup> 1 Stat. 138.

<sup>7</sup> 1 Stat. 138.

<sup>8</sup> 1 Stat. 138.

<sup>9</sup> 1 Stat. 138.

<sup>10</sup> 1 Stat. 138.



ties which by 1790 had been concluded with most of the tribes then within the boundaries of the United States."

Section 4 limiting land sales to the United States, also supplemented provisions contained in various treaties.<sup>1</sup>

"The provisions with reference to the punishment of non-Indians committing crimes or trespasses within the territory of the Indian tribes likewise carried out obligations which had been assumed as early as September 17, 1776, in the treaty of that date with the Delaware Nation," providing for fair and impartial trial of offenders against Indians.

"The mode of such trials to be hereafter fixed by the wisdom of the United States in Congress assembled, with the assistance of such deputies of the Delaware nation, as may be appointed to act in concert with them in adjusting this matter to their mutual liking."

Similar provisions promising punishment of white offenders as a substitute for other methods of redress employed by Indian tribes had been included in practically all the treaties which were in force when the first Indian trade and intercourse act was adopted.<sup>2</sup>

"The foregoing analysis of statutes is fulfillment of treaty obligations would probably apply equally to each of the later Indian trade and intercourse acts culminating in the permanent Act of June 30, 1834.<sup>3</sup>

Despite the caution of Congress in making the first Indian trade and intercourse act a temporary measure, the substance of each of the provisions contained in this act remains law to this day.

Minor amendments were made in the language of these provisions by the second Indian trade and intercourse act, that of March 1, 1791. This act also introduced a number of new provisions which have to the most part found their way into existing law. A prohibition against settlement on Indian lands and authority to the President to remove such settlers are contained in section 5 of this act. Section 6 deals with horse thieves and house traders. Section 7 prohibits employees in Indian affairs from having "any interest or concern in any trade with

the Indians." Section 9 provides for the furnishing of various goods and services to the Indian tribes. Section 13 specifies that Indians within the jurisdiction of any of the individual states shall not be subject to trade restrictions.

This act, like the preceding act was declared a temporary measure.<sup>4</sup>

"The Act of May 19, 1796, constitutes the third in a series of trade and intercourse acts. Generally it follows the 1791 act with minor modifications. It adds a detailed definition of Indian country.<sup>5</sup> It adds a prohibition against the driving of livestock on Indian lands. It requires passports for persons traveling into the Indian country.<sup>6</sup>

"The 1796 act continued, for the first time, a provision (Sec. 14) for the punishment of any Indian belonging to a tribe in amity with the United States who shall cross into any state or territory and there commit any one of various listed offenses.<sup>7</sup> In the first instance application for "satisfaction" was to be made to the nation or tribe to which the Indian offender belonged, if such application proved fruitless, after a reasonable waiting period fixed at 18 months, the President of the United States was authorized to take such measures as might be proper to obtain satisfaction for the injury. In the meantime, the injured party was guaranteed "an eventual indemnification" if he refrained from "attempting to obtain private satisfaction or revenge."<sup>8</sup> "The only specific measure of redress which the President was authorized to take under this act was the withholding of annuities due to the tribe in question.

"The fourth and last of the temporary Indian trade and intercourse acts was the Act of March 3, 1799.<sup>9</sup> This act made only minor changes in the provisions of the 1796 act.

Apart from the four temporary Indian trade and intercourse acts passed during the decade from 1790 to 1799, the only statute of special importance was the Act of April 18, 1796,<sup>10</sup> which established Government trading houses with the Indians, under the control of the President of the United States. While the institution of the Government trading house was abolished in 1822,<sup>11</sup> some of the provisions designed to assure the honesty of employees of these establishments have been carried over into the law which now governs Indian Service employees.<sup>12</sup> Control of the Government trading houses became the most important administrative function of the Federal Government in the field of Indian affairs, and when the Government trading houses were finally abolished it was only natural that the superintendent of Indian trade in charge of these establishments became the first head of the Bureau of Indian Affairs.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See, Article 9 of Treaty of November 28, 1785, with the Cherokee Nation 7 Stat. 16, 20; Art. 8 of Treaty of January 8, 1786, with the Chickasaw Nation 7 Stat. 21, 22; Art. 8 of Treaty of January 10, 1786, with the Chickasaw Nation 7 Stat. 24, 25; Art. 7 of Treaty of January 9, 1789, with the Winando, Delaware, Ottawa, Chippewa, Pottawatimie and Fox Nations 7 Stat. 38, 40. See Chapter 3, sec. 3B(2).

<sup>2</sup> Art. 4 of Treaty of January 9, 1789, with the Winando, and others had provided:

"... But the said nations or either of them, shall not be at liberty to sell or dispose of the same in any part thereof to any foreign power (except the United States) nor to the subjects or citizens of any other sovereign power, nor to the subjects or citizens of the United States.

The following treaties contained specific guarantees against settlement on Indian lands by citizens of the United States. Art. 5 of Treaty of January 21, 1786, with the Winando Delaware Chippewa and Ottawa Nations 7 Stat. 16, 17; Art. 5 of Treaty of November 28, 1785, with the Cherokee Nation 7 Stat. 18, 19; Art. 4 of Treaty of January 9, 1789, with the Chickasaw Nation 7 Stat. 21, 22; Art. 4 of Treaty of January 10, 1786, with the Chickasaw, 7 Stat. 24, 25; Art. 7 of Treaty of January 21, 1786, with the Shawanoe Nation 7 Stat. 20, 27. Other treaties provided generally for the protection of Indian lands.

<sup>3</sup> Art. 4, 7 Stat. 14, 24.

<sup>4</sup> See treaties cited in Sec. 17 and 18, *supra*.

<sup>5</sup> 4 Stat. 729. See Chapter 8, sec. 3.

<sup>6</sup> 1 Stat. 329.

<sup>7</sup> See, Chapter 2, sec. 4B.

<sup>8</sup> See 17, 1 Stat. 325, 382.

<sup>9</sup> 1 Stat. 460.

<sup>10</sup> See 1. See Chapter 1, sec. 8.

<sup>11</sup> See 2. See Chapter 15, sec. 10.

<sup>12</sup> See 3. See Chapter 3, sec. 1A(5), Chapter 8, sec. 10A(8).

<sup>13</sup> See Chapter 18, sec. 4.

<sup>14</sup> C. 40, 1 Stat. 743.

<sup>15</sup> 1 Stat. 452.

<sup>16</sup> Act of May 6, 1822, 8 Stat. 679.

<sup>17</sup> See Act of April 18, 1796, sec. 4, 1 Stat. 462 followed in Act of June 30, 1834, sec. 14, 4 Stat. 735, 736, R. S. 1, 2078, 25 U. S. C. 68. And see Chapter 2, sec. 3B.

<sup>18</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 1A.

## SECTION 3. LEGISLATION FROM 1800 TO 1809

The most important legislation enacted by Congress during the first decade of the nineteenth century was the permanent trade and intercourse act of March 30, 1802. The first temporary Indian trade and intercourse acts adopted in 1790, 1793, 1796, and 1799 had, by a process of trial and error, marked out the main outlines of Federal Indian law, and the Act of 1802 made few substantial changes in reference to permanent from the provisions of the Act of March 3, 1799.<sup>1</sup> The only significant addition made by the 1802 act appears in section 21 of that act, which deals with the liquor problem in these terms:

That the President of the United States be authorized to take such measures, from time to time, as to him may appear expedient to prevent or restrain the vending or distributing of spirituous liquors among all or any of the said Indian tribes, any thing herein contained to the contrary thereof notwithstanding.

The circumstances under which this provision, urged by various Indian chiefs, was recommended by President Jefferson and enacted by Congress are elsewhere noted.<sup>2</sup>

Apart from the permanent Indian trade and intercourse act, two legislative enactments during the decade from 1800 to 1809 deserve notice. Both of them imposed upon the Indian Service marks of its military origin which endured for more than a century.

The first of these statutes was the Act of January 17, 1800,<sup>3</sup> entitled "An Act for the preservation of peace with the Indian tribes." This act was apparently designed to prevent the European belligerents of that time from inciting the Indian tribes on the western frontier to attacks against the United States. The first section of this act provides:

That if any citizen or other person residing within the United States, or the territory thereof, shall send any talk, speech, message or letter to any Indian nation, tribe, or chief, with an intent to produce a contravention or infraction of any treaty or other law of the United States, or to disturb the peace and tranquillity of the United States, he shall forfeit a sum not exceeding two thousand dollars, and be imprisoned not exceeding two years.

After a long and checkered career, this provision of law<sup>4</sup> was repealed by the Act of May 21, 1914.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 2 Stat 139.

<sup>2</sup> 46, 1 Stat 748. See sec 2, *supra*, and Chapter 17, sec 1.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Stat 6.

<sup>4</sup> The provision in question was incorporated in the Act of June 30, 1834, sec 13, 4 Stat 729, 731 and became R b 3 211 and 45 U S C 171.

<sup>5</sup> 48 Stat 787. See 25 U S C A 171 (Supp).

Section 2 of this act prescribed penalties for the carrying on, delivering, or attempting to deliver the contents of the Indians from the government of the United States, or from any such person or persons is not, or may be employed and enlisted by the President of the United States, as a commissioner or commissioner, agent or agents, in any capacity whatever, for establishing or preserving a friendly intercourse with the Indians, or for managing the concerns of the United States with them, he shall forfeit a sum not exceeding one thousand dollars, and be imprisoned not exceeding twelve months.

Another statute enacted by Congress during this decade which left a mark upon the Indian Service for many years was the Act of May 14, 1800,<sup>6</sup> which provided for the issuance of licenses out of army provisions to Indians visiting the military posts of the United States. This is the first congressional statute supporting the system of inducing peace by giving tribute which characterized Indian Service policy for many years.<sup>7</sup>

The same statute likewise provided for repaying to Indian delegates the expense of their visits to Washington.<sup>8</sup>

During the decade from 1800 to 1809, there was no further Indian legislation of general and permanent significance. Appropriation acts, acts extending Indian trading house legislation, legislation for the establishing of new states and territories, measures for executing treaty provisions, and laws dealing with the disposition of lands acquired from the Indians by treaty make up the bulk of the legislation enacted during this decade in the field of Indian affairs.

The same statute likewise provided for repaying to Indian delegates the expense of their visits to Washington.<sup>9</sup>

During the decade from 1800 to 1809, there was no further Indian legislation of general and permanent significance. Appropriation acts, acts extending Indian trading house legislation, legislation for the establishing of new states and territories, measures for executing treaty provisions, and laws dealing with the disposition of lands acquired from the Indians by treaty make up the bulk of the legislation enacted during this decade in the field of Indian affairs.

<sup>6</sup> See 2, incorporated in Act of June 30, 1834, sec 14, 4 Stat 729, 731, R b 3 211, 25 U S C 172, repealed by Act of May 21, 1914, 48 Stat 787.

<sup>7</sup> Incorporated in Act of June 30, 1834, sec 15, 4 Stat 729, 731, R b 3 211, 25 U S C 173, repealed by Act of May 21, 1914, 48 Stat 787. On recent uses of this statute, prior to its repeal, see Chapter 8, sec 30A (2).

<sup>8</sup> 48 Stat 787. See 25 U S C 171, 25 U S C 172.

<sup>9</sup> See Chapter 2, sec 2C, Chapter 12, sec 1, 4.

<sup>10</sup> See 2.

## SECTION 4. LEGISLATION FROM 1810 TO 1819

Congressional legislation on Indian affairs in the decade from 1810 to 1819 continues the trends noted in the preceding decade. Two statutes of special significance deserve to be noted.

The Act of March 3, 1817,<sup>10</sup> established for the first time a system of criminal justice applicable to Indians as well as to non-Indians within the Indian country. The act provided that Indians or other persons committing offenses within the Indian country should be subject to the same punishment that would be applicable if the offense had been committed in any place under the exclusive jurisdiction of the United States. Federal courts were given jurisdiction to try such cases. The statute

contained an important proviso (sec. 2), safeguarding the criminal jurisdiction of the Indian tribes:

nothing in this act shall be so construed as to affect any treaty now in force between the United States and any Indian nation, or to extend to any offense committed by one Indian against another, within any Indian boundary.

The proviso, as well as the main provision of the statute, have found their way, with some modifications, into existing law.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>10</sup> See 25 U S C 217, 218. Note however, that the historical notes to these sections in the U S Code and the U S Code Annotated fail to show their actual origin. For further discussion of the significance of these sections, see Chapter 5, sec 1, Chapter 7, sec 9, Chapter 18, sec 8, 4.

<sup>11</sup> 42 U S C 888.

A second important statute adopted during this decade was the Act of March 3, 1819,<sup>1</sup> entitled "An Act making provision for the civilization of the Indian tribes adjoining the frontier settlements."

Section 1 of this act, which is law to this day,<sup>2</sup> provides:

That for the purpose of providing against the further decline and final extinction of the Indian tribes, adjoining the frontier settlements of the United States, and for introducing among them the habits and arts of civilization, the President of the United States shall be, and he is hereby authorized, in every case where he shall

<sup>1</sup> 8 Stat. 550.

<sup>2</sup> 25 U. S. C. 271.

## SECTION 5 LEGISLATION FROM 1820 TO 1829

By the Act of May 6, 1822,<sup>1</sup> the United States trading houses with the Indian tribes were abolished. On the same day a law was enacted specifying the conditions under which licensed Indian traders were to operate. The act imposed various conditions upon the activities of licensed traders and conferred broad authority upon such traders upon administrators of the act also provided (sec. 4) for the regular settlement of accounts of Indian agents. Section 4 of this act established a rule, which is still law, which in its present form declares:

<sup>1</sup> 3 Stat. 679.

<sup>2</sup> Act of May 6, 1822, c. 75, § 3, Stat. 682.

## SECTION 6 LEGISLATION FROM 1830 TO 1839

The decade of the 1830's is marked by five statutes of great importance, the Act of May 28, 1830, governing Indian removal; the Act of July 9, 1832, establishing the post of Commissioner of Indian Affairs; the Indian Trade and Intercourse Act of June 30, 1834; the act of the same date providing for the organization of the Department of Indian Affairs; and the Act of January 9, 1837, regulating the disposition made of proceeds of ceded Indian lands.

The list of these acts<sup>1</sup> established in general terms the policy, which had theretofore been worked out in several specific cases,<sup>2</sup> of exchanging federal lands west of the Mississippi for other lands then held by Indian tribes. The act provided that such exchanges should be voluntary, that payment should be made to individuals for improvements relinquished, and that suitable arrangements should be given to the Indians as to the permanent character of the new homes to which they were migrating.

Section 3 provided:

That in the making of any such exchange or exchanges, it shall and may be lawful for the President solemnly to require the tribe or nation with which the exchange is made, that the United States will forever receive and guarantee to them, and their heirs or successors, the country so exchanged with them; and if they prefer it, that the United States will cause a patent or grant to be made and executed to them for the same. *Provided always*, That such lands shall revert to the United States, if the Indians become extinct, or abandon the same.

Sections 6 and 7 defined the administrative authority of the President and the duty of protection owing to migrating tribes in the following terms:

Sec. 6 \* \* \* That it shall and may be lawful for the President to cause such tribe or nation to be protected,

judge improvement in the habits and condition of such Indians practicable, and that the means of instruction can be introduced with their own consent, to employ capable persons of good moral character, to instruct them in the mode of agriculture suited to their situation, and for teaching them children in reading, writing, and arithmetic, and performing such other duties as may be required according to such instructions and rules as the President may give and prescribe for the regulation of their conduct, in the discharge of their duties.

Section 2 of this act established a permanent annual appropriation of \$10,000 for carrying out the provisions of section 1.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter 12, sec. 2 for a discussion of the use made of these appropriations.

In all trials about the right of property in which an Indian may be a party on one side, and a white person on the other, the burden of proof shall rest upon the white person, whenever the Indian shall make out a plausible presumption of title in himself from the fact of previous possession or ownership.<sup>4</sup>

Apart from the foregoing general acts, treaties and legislation providing for the enforcement of treaty provisions continued to represent the main growing point of Indian law.

<sup>4</sup> 25 U. S. C. 241, derived from Act of June 30, 1834, sec. 24 & 8 Stat. 729, 733, § 8, § 2120.

if their new residence, against all interruption or disturbance from any other tribe or nation of Indians, or from any other person or persons whatever.

Sec. 7 \* \* \* That it shall and may be lawful for the President to have the same superintendence and control over any tribe or nation in the country to which they may remove, as contemplated by this act, that he now authorizes to have over them at their present places of residence. *Provided*, That nothing in this act contained shall be construed as authorizing or directing the violation of any existing treaty between the United States and any of the Indian tribes.<sup>5</sup>

The Act of July 9, 1832,<sup>6</sup> entitled "An Act to provide for the appointment of a commissioner of Indian Affairs, and for other purposes," represents the first legislative authorization for the post of Commissioner of Indian Affairs. Its significance in the development of Indian administration has been discussed elsewhere.<sup>7</sup>

Section 1 of this act<sup>8</sup> which is still invoked as a basis for the administrative authority of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, declared:

\* \* \* That the President shall appoint by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, a commissioner of Indian Affairs, who shall, under the direction of the Secretary of War, and agreeably to such regulations as the President may, from time to time, prescribe, have the direction and management of all Indian affairs, and of all matters arising out of Indian relations, and shall receive a salary of three thousand dollars per annum.

Other sections of the act dealt with the appointment of clerks to the office of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, the supervision of accounts by the Commissioner, and the discontinuance of

<sup>5</sup> R. S. 1214, 25 U. S. C. 174.

<sup>6</sup> C. 374, 4 Stat. 664.

<sup>7</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 13.

<sup>8</sup> R. S. 1440-407, 25 U. S. C. 1-2. See Chapter 5, sec. 8.

<sup>1</sup> Act of May 28, 1830, 4 Stat. 411. Secs. 7 and 8 were later incorporated in R. S. 1214, 25 U. S. C. 174.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 2A, Chapter 3, sec. 4D.

"the services of such agents, subagents, interpreters, and mechanics, is very from time to time become unnecessary, in consequence of the civilization of the Indians, or other causes."<sup>1</sup>—an illuminating comment upon the idea of impermanence which even then surrounded the treatment of the Indian problem.

Included in this act was a general prohibition against the introduction of "idolatrial spirits into the Indian country"<sup>2</sup> which is part of the law to this day.

June 30, 1834, perhaps the most significant date in the history of Indian legislation. On this day there were enacted two comprehensive statutes which, in large part, form the fabric of our law on Indian affairs to this day. Of these two statutes one stands as the final act in a series of acts "to regulate trade and intercourse with the Indian tribes."<sup>3</sup> The other, approved on the same day, is entitled "An Act to provide for the organization of the department of Indian Affairs."<sup>4</sup> The two statutes<sup>5</sup> were dealt with in a single report of the House "on matters on Indian Affairs," which contains an illuminating analysis of the entire legislative situation with respect to Indian affairs.

The difficulties and the general objectives in terms of which this legislation of 1834 was drafted are suggested in the following statements of the Committee report:

"The committee are aware of the unusual difficulties of the subject—of providing a system of laws and of administration, simple and economical, and, at the same time, efficient and liberal—that shall be suited to the various conditions, and relations, of those for whose benefit it is intended and that shall, with a due regard to the rights of our own citizens, meet the just expectations of the country in the fulfillment of its proper and assumed obligations to the Indian tribes. Yet, so manifestly defective and inadequate is our present system, that an immediate revision seems to be imperiously demanded. What is now proposed is only an approximation to a perfect system. Much is necessarily left for the present to Executive discretion, and still more to future legislation."<sup>6</sup>

The Indians, for whose protection these laws are proposed, consist of numerous tribes, scattered over an immense extent of country of different languages, and partaking of all the forms of society in the progression from the savage to an approximation to the civilized. With the nomadic tribes we have treaties, imposing duties of a mixed character, recognizing them in some sort as dependent tribes, and yet obliging ourselves to protect them, even against domestic strife, and necessarily retaining the power so to do. With other tribes we have general treaties of amity, and with a considerable number we have no treaties whatever. To most of the tribes with whom we have treaties, we have stipulated to pay annuities in various forms. The annexed tables (A, B, I, J, K, L) exhibit a condensed view of these relations, and will assist in determining the nature and extent of the legislation necessary for the Indian Department. These, though a part of the condensation of the sessions of law, are intended to promote their improvement and civilization, and which may now be considered as the leading principle of this branch of our legislation."<sup>7</sup>

The Indian Trade and Intercourse Act of 1834 followed in many respects the similar act of March 30, 1802,<sup>8</sup> and incorporated provisions of other acts which have already been cited.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See 5, R. S. § 2073, 25 U. S. C. 65.

<sup>2</sup> See 4, R. S. § 2189, 25 U. S. C. 461. See Chapter 17, sec. 3 in 35.

<sup>3</sup> 4 Stat. 720.

<sup>4</sup> 4 Stat. 738.

<sup>5</sup> This report also deals with a third proposed bill, relating to the (then) of the proposed "western territory," which was never enacted.

<sup>6</sup> H. Rept. No. 474, 23d Cong., 1st sess. (May 20, 1834).

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 1.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 2.

<sup>9</sup> 2 Stat. 139. See sec. 5, supra.

See Chas. 38, 46, 51, supra.

By its first section it substituted a general definition of Indian country for the definition by metes and bounds that had been continued in the 1802 act and that it had become largely obsolete as a result of the city sessions.<sup>10</sup>

Sections 2 to 5 of the act deal with increased duties and impose a more detailed system of control over such traders than had been previously in force. These controls constitute, in large part, the present law on the subject and are elsewhere analyzed.<sup>11</sup> The purpose of the legislation with respect to control of traders is set forth in the following, terms in the House Committee report:

"The Indian trade, as heretofore, will continue to be carried on by licensed traders. The Indians do not need the traders on equal terms, and do not doubt have much reason to complain of it and imposition. Some further provision seems necessary for their protection. Heretofore, if it has been considered that if every person (whether he be his character) is entitled to a license on offering his bond. It has been the source of much complaint with the Indians. Power is now given to refuse licenses to persons of bad character, and for a more general reason, in it would be improper to permit such persons to trade in the Indian country," and to revoke licenses for the same reasons. The committee are aware that this is granting an extensive power to the agents, and which may be liable to abuse, yet, when it is recalled that the distance from the Government at which the traders reside, will prevent a previous consultation with the head of the department, that what is necessary to be done should be done promptly, that the agents act under an official responsibility, that they are required to assign the reasons of their conduct to the War Department, that an appeal is given to the party injured and that the dismissal of the agent would be the consequence of a wilful act of injustice, the rights of the traders will be found as well secured as is compatible with the security of the Indians.

The report of the commissioners, appended to this report, contains a detailed statement of the exorbitant prices demanded by the Indian traders. As a remedy in part, they recommend, first, a substitution of goods for money in the payment of annuities. This suggestion has been adopted so far as to authorize it to be done by the consent of the tribe. In addition to the trade goods, it will furnish them with something like a standard of the value of goods, and enable them to deal on more equal terms with the Indian traders.<sup>12</sup>

Section 6 of the act declares the prior requirement that all persons going into the Indian country must be a passport, so as to make the requirement applicable only to foreigners.<sup>13</sup>

Sections 7 to 12 of the 1834 Trade and Intercourse Act recast with minor modifications provisions of the 1802 Trade and Intercourse Act.<sup>14</sup>

Sections 13 to 15 of the act recast provisions of the Act of January 17, 1800,<sup>15</sup> relating to subversive activities among Indian

<sup>10</sup> "Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 730. For a discussion of the significance of the 1831 definition see Chapter 1, sec. 3.

<sup>11</sup> See Chapter 19.

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, op. cit., p. 11.

<sup>13</sup> "Other nations have excluded foreigners from trade and intercourse with the Indians within their territories. We have adopted the same policy is the only one safe for us, or beneficial to the Indians. The provision is therefore continued that no foreigners shall enter the Indian country without a passport. But it is not deemed so necessary that all the restrictions of the former laws be to our own citizens should be retained. Of them, so many travellers in or through the Indian country we ought not to have the same, or even any jealousy. And so frequent and necessary are the occasions of our citizens to pass into the Indian country, that of them no passports will be required for such objects. Such has been the intercourse of obtaining passports that, for years, the provision in the act of 1802, requiring them has been a dead letter. If, however, our citizens desire to trade so to render in the Indian country for any purpose whatever, a license for that particular purpose is required." H. Rept., op. cit., p. 11.

<sup>14</sup> See Chas. 38, supra.

<sup>15</sup> 2 Stat. 6, discussed in sec. 4, supra. See 25 U. S. C. 171, 172, 173.

tribes. On the question of allowing the executive power to be moved under the non-Indian the Committee declined.

To facilitate the negotiations of treaties, it is deemed absolutely necessary that the commissioners should have power to control or remove all white persons who may attempt to put forward the negotiations, and that they should have it necessary, the aid of military force."

Section 17 repeats and amplifies provisions of the 1852 act relating to Indian depredations.

The remaining provisions of the statute deal primarily with the prosecution of crimes. Officials of the Indian Department are empowered to make arrests. "The liquor prohibition provisions of the 1852 act" are continued and amplified. The provision in the Act of May 6, 1852 "relating to Indian witnesses is likewise continued (Section 22)."

Provisions on criminal jurisdiction are thus summarized in the House Committee report:

In consequence of the change in our Indian relations, the laws relating to crimes committed in the Indian country, and to the tribunals before whom offenders are to be tried require revision. By the act of 21st March, 1817, the criminal laws of the United States were extended to *off persons* in the Indian country without exception, and by that act, as well as that of 30th March 1802, they might be tried wherever apprehended. It will be seen that we can not consistently with the provisions of some of our treaties, and of the territorial acts, extend our criminal laws to offenses committed by or against Indians, or which the tribes have exclusive jurisdiction, and it is rather of course than of right that it would take to punish crimes committed in that territory by and against our own citizens. And this provision is retained principally on the ground that it may be made to rest on Indian law in the early stages of their Government. It is not perceived that we can with any justice or propriety extend our laws to offenses committed by Indians against Indians, at any place within their own limits.

Some doubts have been suggested as to the constitutionality of so much of those acts as provides for the trial of offenders wherever apprehended without expressing any opinion on that subject, it is thought that provisions more consonant to all parties and at the same time free from all constitutional doubts, might be adopted. And for this end it is proposed, for the sole purpose of *executing this act*, to annex the Indian country to the judicial districts of the adjoining Territories and States. This is done principally with view to offenses that are to be prosecuted by indictment. In all cases of offenses, when the punishment, by former laws was fine or imprisonment, the imprisonment is now omitted, leaving the penalty to be recorded in an action of debt, prosecuted in any district where the offender may be found."

The second <sup>11</sup> of the basic 1884 acts was intended to deal comprehensively with the organization and functions of the Indian Department. This purpose is developed in the sponsoring House Committee's report in the following terms:

The present organization of this department is of doubtful origin and authority. Its administration is expensive, inefficient, and irresponsible.

The committee have sought, in vain, for any lawful authority for the appointment of a majority of the agents and subagents of Indian affairs now in office. For years, usage rendered officially lawful only by reference to indirect and equivocal legislation, has been the only sanction for their appointment. Our Indian relations commenced at an early period of the revolutionary war. What was

necessary to be done, either for defense or conciliation, was done, and being necessary, no inquiry seems to have been made as to the authority under which it was done. This undisturbed state of things continued for nearly twenty years. Though some general regulations were enacted, the government of the department was chiefly left to Executive discretion. In the subsequent legislation, what was, in fact, mere usage, seems to have been taken as having been established by law. It does not appear that the origin or history of the department has ever attracted the attention of Congress. No report of its investigation is found in its records. In ascertaining the authority of the appointment of the officers in the department, the committee have referred to the acts of the Government of which they will now present a brief history, and which, it is believed, will fully sustain the position that a majority of the agents and subagents of Indian affairs have been appointed without lawful authority. This position is not taken with a view to put any practical administration in fault, for it applies to every administration for the last thirty years."

The conclusion as to the lack of legal authority for various positions actually maintained in the office of Indian Affairs was borne out by a detailed review of the legislation of Congress beginning with ordinances enacted prior to the Declaration of Independence. The statute substitutes for the patchwork of treaties existing, a comprehensive schedule of departmental offices and makes all such officers responsible to the President of the United States and to regulations promulgated by him."

Other sections of the 1884 act providing for the organization of the department of Indian Affairs seek to restore and guarantee tribal rights upon which administrative encroachments had previously been made, and to encourage Indians to take over increased measure of responsibility for the administration of the Indian Service. In matters of annuity payments, the 1884 act establishes the principle that all such payments are to be made to the chiefs of the respective tribes or to such other representatives as the tribes themselves may appoint. In explanation of this provision (see 11), the Committee declared:

In the course of their investigations, the committee have become satisfied that much injustice has been done to the Indians in the payment of their annuities. The payments are required, by the terms of the treaties, to be paid to the tribe as a political body capable of acting as a nation, and it would seem as a necessary consequence, that the payments should be made to the constituted authorities of the tribe. If those authorities distribute the annuities thus paid with a partial hand, they alone are responsible. If injustice shall be done, we are not the instruments, we have discharged our obligation, and it will be for the Government to undertake to appoint the annuities among the individuals of the tribes? And in what manner can it be done, with safety or convenience? If distributed to heads of families in proportion to the number of each family, it would require an annual enumeration, or a register of the changes. If paid to the individuals at their residences, it would be troublesome and expensive if the individuals were required to travel to the agency, to receive the portion of their share, to many it would not be worth going for. What security can be given against the frauds of the agents? What vouchers shall be produced to account for the payments? The payment to the chiefs is a mode simple and certain, and the only mode that will render the annuities beneficial to the tribe, by enabling it to apply them to the expenses of their Government, to the purpose of education, or to some object of general concern. When distributed to individuals, the amount is too small to be relied on as a support, yet sufficiently large to induce them to foster the labor necessary to produce their supplies. And it is found that those are the most industrious and thrifty who have no such aid.

Individual payments were introduced probably with a view to induce emigration, by paying those who choose to

<sup>11</sup> H. Rept., op. cit., p. 14

<sup>12</sup> Sec. 10

<sup>13</sup> See in G1 *supra*

<sup>14</sup> Sec. 4 and 21

<sup>15</sup> Sec. 10 *supra*

<sup>16</sup> Act of June 22, 1875

<sup>17</sup> H. Rept., op. cit., pp. 13-14

<sup>18</sup> Act of June 80, 1884, 4 Stat. 785

<sup>19</sup> H. Rept., op. cit., pp. 2, 3. See Chapter 2, sec. 1B

<sup>20</sup> Secs. 1, 2, 8

emigrate their supposed share of the annuity. Whatever may have been the policy which gave rise to it, neither policy nor justice requires its continuance.

With a view to prevent frauds of another kind, in reference particularly to the payment of goods, the President is authorized to appoint an officer of rank to superintend the payment of annuities. This, and the provision relating to the purchase of goods for the Indians, will place sufficient guards to prevent fraudulent payments.

The committee have reason to believe others have existed in relation to the supply of goods for presents at the making of treaties, or to fulfill treaty stipulations. Those who present at the loss of the Government. Those under treaty stipulations are at the loss of the Indians. The goods for presents have been usually furnished by the Indian traders, and at an advance of from 60 to 100 per cent. This the Government has been obliged to submit to, or else it will not risk the use of his influence to prevent a treaty. Should this influence be attempted the Government will now have a sufficient remedy by revoking the license. The goods furnished under treaties have been charged at (what has been represented as a moderate rate) an advance of 70 per cent, and at this rate delivered to the Indians. It is now provided that the goods in both cases are to be purchased by an agent of the Government, and where there is a rise (as in case of goods purchased under treaties) there is to be purchased on proposals based on previous notice.<sup>11</sup>

The objective of setting the Indian Service itself with Indians was embodied in a provision of section 9 of this act reading:

And in all cases of the appointments of interpreters or other persons employed for the benefit of the Indians, a preference shall be given to persons of Indian descent, if such can be found, who are properly qualified for the execution of the duties.<sup>12</sup>

A related objective was to be achieved by the following provision in section 9, which is law to this day (except that the Secretary of the Interior has succeeded to the powers of the Secretary of War):

And where any of the tribes are, in the opinion of the Secretary of War, competent to direct the employment of their blacksmiths, mechanics, teachers, farmers, or other persons engaged for them, the direction of such persons may be given to the proper authority of the tribe.<sup>13</sup>

The purpose behind these provisions is illuminated by a passage in the Committee report which declares:

The education of the Indians is a subject of deep interest to them and to us. It is now proposed to allow them some direction in it. With the assent of the President, under the superintendence of the Governor, so far as their annual fee is concerned, and that a preference should be given to educated youth, in all the employments of which they are capable, as traders, interpreters, schoolmasters, farmers, mechanics, &c., and that the course of their education should be so directed as to render them capable of those employments. Why educate the Indians unless their education can be turned to some practical use? and why educate them even for a practical use, and yet refuse to employ them?<sup>14</sup>

Other provisions of the act in question prohibit employees of the Indian Department from having "any interest or concern in any trade with the Indians, except for, and on account of, the United States."<sup>15</sup>

Provisions of similar acts with respect to supplies and rations are recited in §§ 15 and 16. The latter provision is a re-enactment of section 2 of the Act of May 18, 1800, authorizing "issuing of rations to Indians at military posts."<sup>16</sup>

Section 17 contains responsibility for regulations authorized by law in the following terms:

That if the President of the United States shall be, and he is hereby authorized to prescribe such rules and regulations, as he may think fit, for carrying into effect the various provisions of this act, and of any other act relating to Indian affairs, and for the settlement of the accounts of the Indian department.<sup>17</sup>

The purpose of this section is set forth in the following language of the Committee report:

The President is authorized to make the necessary regulations for carrying into effect the several acts relating to Indian affairs. In 1829, such regulations having reference to the laws then in force, were reported to the House by Messrs. Clark and Cass, commissioners appointed for that purpose. They appear to have been drawn with great care, and with such alterations as the bills reported require, would, in the opinion of the committee, be proper, and efficient, and should the acts reported pass, it would be proper to have the regulations reported to Congress at the next session, when they can be adopted by an act of Congress, or go into operation under the general provision referred to.<sup>18</sup>

The fifth important segment of the existing law on Indian affairs that took shape under legislation of the 1890's is that relating to payments made to tribes, by reason of treaty provisions, by the Federal Government from proceeds derived from the disposition of ceded Indian lands. The Act of January 9, 1837,<sup>19</sup> comprises three sections containing provisions of substantive law. The first section<sup>20</sup> requires the deposit in the United States Treasury of money received from the sale of lands ceded to the United States by treaties providing either for the investment or for the payment of such proceeds to the Indians.

Section 2 of the act<sup>21</sup> provides:

That all sums that are or may be required to be paid, and all money that are or may be required to be invested by said treaties, are hereby appropriated in conformity to them, and shall be drawn from the Treasury as other public moneys are drawn therefrom, under such instructions as may from time to time be given by the President.

Section 3<sup>22</sup> declares:

That all investments of stock, that are or may be required by said treaties, shall be made under the direction of the President, and special accounts of the funds under said treaties shall be kept at the Treasury, and statements thereof be annually laid before Congress.

These provisions of law established what was for a long time the basis of handling Indian tribal funds derived from sales of ceded land. As the sums involved increased year by year the handling of them became more and more important as providing the sustenance upon which the activities of the Indian Service were based.

<sup>11</sup> H. Rept. on act, pp. 9-10.

<sup>12</sup> Sec. 9, 4 Stat. 736, 737, R. S. § 2069, 25 U. S. C. 45. See Chapter 5, sec. 4B.

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.* See Chapter 7, sec. 10.

<sup>14</sup> H. Rept., on act, p. 20.

<sup>15</sup> Sec. 14, 4 Stat. 737, 748. See Chapter 2, sec. 1B, fn. 736.

<sup>16</sup> See fn. 42-43, supra.

<sup>17</sup> R. S. § 456, 25 U. S. C. 9. See Chapter 5, sec. 8.

<sup>18</sup> H. Rept. on act, pp. 22, 23.

<sup>19</sup> C. 1, 5 Stat. 135.

<sup>20</sup> R. S. § 2095, 25 U. S. C. 162.

<sup>21</sup> R. S. § 2094, 25 U. S. C. 163.

<sup>22</sup> R. S. § 2095, 25 U. S. C. 167.

## SECTION 7 LEGISLATION FROM 1840 TO 1849

During the decade of the 1840's two statutes were enacted which have impressed a lasting mark upon Federal Indian law. The first of these was the Act of March 3, 1847,<sup>10</sup> which amended in various respects the comprehensive legislation of June 30, 1834.<sup>11</sup> These amendments included broadening of the language of the Indian liquor legislation.<sup>12</sup> Section 3 of the 1847 act relaxed the requirement that had been established by the 1834 legislation to the effect that moneys due tribes should be paid to tribal officers, and authorized payment of such moneys "to the heads of families and other individuals entitled to pursue suits thereon." This, in effect, substituted the judgment of Federal officials for that of tribal governments on the question of tribal membership, so far as the disposition of funds was concerned. This provision was the first in a long series of statutes designed to individualize tribal property.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>10</sup> 9 Stat. 203.

<sup>11</sup> See Sec. 6, *supra*.

<sup>12</sup> Sec. 2 of the 1847 act amended Sec. 20, Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 729.

<sup>13</sup> Amending Sec. 31, Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 735.

<sup>14</sup> See Chapter 2, Sec. 22, for a discussion of official policy on this point.

The same section of the 1847 act contains a prohibition against the payment of annuities to Indians while there is liquor in the vicinity.<sup>14</sup>

A second statute of the 1840's which has had an important bearing upon Indian administration is the Act of March 3, 1849,<sup>15</sup> establishing "a new executive department of the government of the United States to be called the Department of the Interior, the head of which department shall be called the Secretary of the Interior." Section 5 of this act declared:

That the Secretary of the Interior shall exercise the supervisory and appellate powers now exercised by the Secretary of the War Department, in relation to all the acts of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, and shall sign all recommendations for the advance or payment of money out of the Treasury, on estimates or accounts, subject to the same adjustment or control now exercised on similar estimates or accounts by the Second Auditor and Second Comptroller of the Treasury.

This marked the termination of direct War Department control over the Indian problem.

<sup>15</sup> See Chapter 16, sec. 23D.

<sup>16</sup> 9 Stat. 495. See Chapter 2, sec. 1B.

<sup>17</sup> See J.

## SECTION 8 LEGISLATION FROM 1850 TO 1859

Throughout the decade of the 1850's treaties rather than legislation formed the growing pattern of Indian law, and little legislation of a general and permanent character was enacted. Three minor statutory provisions which date from this period deserve note.

Section 3 of the Appropriation Act of March 3, 1853<sup>18</sup> prohibits the payment to officers or agents of sums due to Indians or Indian tribes, and prohibits the executive branch of the Government from recognizing any contract between Indians and their attorneys or agents for the prosecution of claims against the United States.

The Act of March 27, 1854,<sup>19</sup> contained an important amendment of sections 20 and 25 of the Act of June 30, 1834<sup>20</sup> which had the effect of removing from the jurisdiction of the Federal courts Indians committing various offenses against non-Indians in the Indian country who have "been punished by the local law of the tribe." \* \* \*

Sections 4 and 5 of this act mark the beginnings of a rudimentary criminal code for the Indian country. It covered arson<sup>21</sup> and assault by a white man against an Indian or by an Indian against a white man, with a deadly weapon and with intent to kill or maim.<sup>22</sup>

A third statutory provision enacted in this decade was section 2 of the Appropriation Act of June 12, 1858.<sup>23</sup> This section,

<sup>18</sup> 10 Stat. 226, 280.

<sup>19</sup> C. 28, sec. 8, 10 Stat. 269.

<sup>20</sup> 4 Stat. 729. See sec. 6, *supra*.

<sup>21</sup> See Chapter 18, sec. 4.

<sup>22</sup> Sec. 4, 10 Stat. 280, 270, R. S. § 2113, 25 U. S. C. 212.

<sup>23</sup> Sec. 5, R. S. § 4142, 25 U. S. C. 218.

<sup>24</sup> 11 Stat. 829, 874, R. S. § 2149, 26 U. S. C. 222, repealed by Act of May 21, 1914, 42 Stat. 787.

symbolized the growing concentration of power in the hands of the Commissioner, declared that "it ought

\* \* \* remove from any tribal reservation any person found therein without authority of law, or whose presence within the limits of the reservation may, in his judgment, be detrimental to the peace and welfare of the Indians." \* \* \*

That aggrandizement of power by the administrative authorities was feared by Congress even at the time extreme powers were being conferred upon such administrative authorities is indicated by section 7 of the Act of February 23, 1850<sup>24</sup> authorizing the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, under the direction of the Secretary of the Interior,

to prepare rules and regulations for the government of the Indian service, and for trade and intercourse with the Indian tribes and the regulations of their affairs, and when approved by the President shall be submitted to the Congress of the United States for its approval. *Provided*, That such laws, rules, and regulations proposed shall not be in force until enacted by Congress.

It does not appear that this mandate was ever executed.

The same statute which carried the foregoing direction also contained a provision repealing prior legislation under which the United States had undertaken to indemnify whites suffering from Indian trespasses.<sup>25</sup>

Important legislation enacted during this decade relating to the pueblos is elsewhere discussed.<sup>26</sup>

<sup>25</sup> C. 68, 11 Stat. 389, 401.

<sup>26</sup> See R. S. § 2150, 25 U. S. C. 220, repealing sec. 17 of Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 723, 731-732.

<sup>27</sup> See discussion of Act of December 22, 1856, 11 Stat. 374, in Chapter 20, sec. 8A.

## SECTION 9 LEGISLATION FROM 1860 TO 1869

The decade of the 1860's is marked by an increasing volume of general Indian legislation, coincident with a decline in the use of Indian treaties as an instrument of national policy. These statutes for the most part strengthened or modified earlier provisions affecting Indian trade and intercourse. To a certain extent they mark new advance along the path of individualization of Indian property.<sup>181</sup>

The Act of February 13, 1862,<sup>182</sup> contains a comprehensive statement of the Indian liquor law.

The Act of June 14, 1862,<sup>183</sup> entitled "An act to protect the property of Indians who have adopted the habits of civilized life," included three sections which have remained law to this day. The first section provides that if when a member of a tribe has had a portion of tribal land allotted to him in severalty the superintendent "shall take such measures, not inconsistent with law, as may be necessary to protect such Indians in the quiet enjoyment of the land so allotted to him."<sup>184</sup> The second section of the act provides for punishment of any unallotted Indian who trespasses upon an allotment, through a deduction of damages from future annuities and payment thereof to the injured party.<sup>185</sup> The third section provides that if the trespasser is a chief or headman he shall be removed from office for 3 months.<sup>186</sup> This legislation is evidence of the resistance which the new allotment system was already encountering from tribal Indians, who did not wish to see tribal lands checker-boarded with private boundary lines.<sup>187</sup>

A proviso in the first section of the Appropriation Act of July 5, 1862,<sup>188</sup> authorizes the President,

"in cases where the tribal organization of any Indian tribe is in actual hostility to the United States, . . . to declare all treaties with such tribe to be abrogated by such tribe, if in his opinion, the same can be done consistently with good faith and legal and national obligations."

Section 6 of the same act deprives guardians appointed by the several Indian tribes of the right to receive "moneys due to incompetent or orphan Indians."<sup>189</sup>

<sup>181</sup> For history of allotment policy, see Chapter 11, sec 1. On treaty provisions on allotments see Chapter 4, sec 10.

<sup>182</sup> C 24, 12 Stat 298

<sup>183</sup> 12 Stat 427

<sup>184</sup> R S § 2119, 26 U S C 185

<sup>185</sup> R S § 2120, 26 U S C 186

<sup>186</sup> R S § 2121, 26 U S C 187

<sup>187</sup> See Chapter 2 sec 2 B, C, and D

<sup>188</sup> 12 Stat 512 528, R S § 2080, 26 U S C § 72

<sup>189</sup> R S § 2108, 26 U S C 189

"The Appropriation Act of March 3, 1867," contains, as do most of the appropriation acts enacted in this period, a number of provisions of substantive law which have little or no relation to appropriations. Sections 5 and 9, emanating no doubt from the disturbed conditions attending the conclusion of the Civil War and the reuniting of the widely divided tribes of the Indian Territory, provide:

SEC 5 That any person who any drive or remove, except as hereinafter provided, any cattle, horses, or other stock from the Indian Territory for the purpose of trade or commerce, shall be guilty of a felony, and on conviction be punished by fine not exceeding five thousand dollars, or by imprisonment not exceeding three years, or by both such fine and imprisonment.

SEC 9 That the agent of each tribe of Indians, lawfully residing in the said Indian Territory, be, and he is hereby, authorized to sell for the benefit of said Indians, any cattle, horses, or other live stock belonging to said Indians, and not required for their use and subsistence, under such regulations as shall be established by the Secretary of the Interior. *Provided*, That nothing in this and the preceding section shall interfere with the execution of any order lawfully issued by the Secretary of War, connected with the movement or subsistence of the troops of the United States.

Both these provisions are still law.

The Joint Resolution of March 3, 1867,<sup>190</sup> marked a step in the fulfillment of a promise made by President Lincoln that upon the conclusion of the Civil War, if he survived, the Indian system should be reformed.<sup>191</sup> This resolution directed a thoroughgoing inquiry into the treatment of the Indian tribes by the civil and military authorities. The results of this investigation are elsewhere discussed.<sup>192</sup>

The Act of July 27, 1868,<sup>193</sup> marks a final step in the consolidation of administrative control over Indian affairs in the Department of the Interior. Section 1 of this act<sup>194</sup> transfers to the Secretary of the Interior all "supervisory and appellate powers, and duties in regard to Indian affairs, which may now by law be vested in the said Secretary of the Treasury."

<sup>190</sup> 12 Stat 641 663

<sup>191</sup> See R S § 2138, amended by Act of June 30 1910, sec 1, 41 Stat 9, 26 U S C 214, sec 9 R S § 2127 26 U S C 102

<sup>192</sup> See 3V 12 Stat 672

<sup>193</sup> See II B Whipple, *Lights and Shadows of a Long Episcopate* (1899) p 147

<sup>194</sup> See Chapter 2, sec 18, fn 42 and sec 2C

<sup>195</sup> 15 Stat 228

<sup>196</sup> Embodied in part in R S § 464, 26 U S C 2

## SECTION 10 LEGISLATION FROM 1870 TO 1879

The 1870's marked the first decade in which the growth of federal Indian law was entirely a matter of legislation rather than of treaty. The decade is marked by a steady increase in the statutory powers vested in the officials of the Indian Service and by a steady narrowing of the rights of individual Indians and Indian tribes.<sup>197</sup> Nevertheless, as we have elsewhere noted, the termination of treaty making did not stop the process of treating with the Indians by agreement.<sup>198</sup>

The Appropriation Act of March 3, 1871, provided not only for the termination of treaty-making with Indian tribes,<sup>199</sup> but also,

(sec 3), for the withdrawal from noncitizen Indians and from Indian tribes of power to make contracts involving the payment of money for services relative to Indian lands or claims against the United States, unless such contracts should be approved by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs and the Secretary of the Interior. Since many of the grievances of the Indians were grievances against these officers, the Indians were effectually deprived by this statute of one of the most basic rights known to the common law, the right to free choice of counsel for the redress of injuries. These prohibitions were amplified by the Act of May 21, 1872.<sup>200</sup>

<sup>197</sup> See Chapter 2, sec 2C

<sup>198</sup> Chapter 8, sec 5 and 6, Chapter 2, sec 2C

<sup>199</sup> 16 Stat 544, 566, R S § 2079, 26 U S C § 71. See Chapter 8, sec 5

<sup>200</sup> 17 Stat 185, sec 1 R S § 2103 26 U S C 81, sec 2, R S § 2104, 26 U S C 82, and R S § 2108, 26 U S C 81, sec 1, R S § 2105, 26 U S C 83



The effect of this legislation upon the rights of Indians<sup>11</sup> and Indian tribes<sup>12</sup> is elsewhere discussed.

A remarkable enactment of this period was that requiring Indians in creditors of the United States to perform useful labor as a condition of receiving payments of money or goods which the United States was pledged to make. Such a provision, constituting important legislation, appears in section 3 of the Appropriation Act of June 22, 1871,<sup>13</sup> and again in section 3 of the Appropriation Act of March 3, 1875.<sup>14</sup>

An appropriation act of the following year consolidates, power over Indian affairs in the hands of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, in the following terms:

And hereafter the Commissioner of Indian Affairs shall have the sole power and authority to appoint Traders to the Indian Tribes, and to make such rules and regulations as he may deem just and proper specifying the kind and quantity of goods and the price at which such goods shall be sold to the Indians.<sup>15</sup>

<sup>11</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 7.

<sup>12</sup> See Chapter 11, sec. 5.

<sup>13</sup> 18 Stat. 146, 176. See Chapter 12, sec. 1, Chapter 15, sec. 234.

<sup>14</sup> 15 Stat. 420, 439.

<sup>15</sup> See 5 Act of August 19, 1866, 19 Stat. 176, 200, 215 U. S. C. 261.

During this period legislation was enacted requiring each agent having supplies to distribute

to make out, at the commencement of each fiscal year, rolls of the Indians entitled to supplies at the agency, with the names of the Indians, and of the heads of families or lodges, with the number in each family or lodge, and to give out supplies to the heads of families, and not to the heads of tribes or bands, and not to give out supplies for a greater length of time than one week in advance.<sup>16</sup>

While these successive grants of power were being made to the administrative officers of the Indian department, a series of complaints against the abuses of power was leading to the multiplication of specific prohibitions against various administrative practices. Most of these prohibitions are comparatively unimportant, but mention should be made of provisions prohibiting Government employees from having any personal interest in various types of Indian trade and commercial activities relating thereto.<sup>17</sup>

<sup>16</sup> See 4 Act of March 3, 1875, 15 Stat. 420, 440, 25 U. S. C. 184.

<sup>17</sup> See 30 Act of June 22, 1874, 19 Stat. 146, 177, 25 U. S. C. 87; 31 Stat. 60, 31 Stat. 61; Chapter 2, sec. 2P, pp. 141 and sec. 33, pp. 145.

## SECTION 11 LEGISLATION FROM 1880 TO 1889

The decade of the 1880's was marked by the rapid settlement and development of the West. As an incident to this process, legislation providing for reclamation of lands and resources from the Indians was demanded. Ethical justification for this was found in the theory of assimilation. If the Indian would only adopt the habits of civilized life he would not need so much land, and the surplus would be available for white settlers. The process of allotment and civilization was deemed as important to Indian welfare as for the welfare of non-Indians.

The first general statutory provision relating to disposition of Indian resources, other than land itself, is found in a paragraph of section 2 of the Act of March 3, 1883,<sup>18</sup> which declares:

The proceeds of all pasturage and sales of timber, coal, or other product of any Indian reservation except those of the five civilized tribes, and not the result of the labor of any member of such tribe, shall be turned into the Treasury for the benefit of such tribe under such regulations as the Secretary of the Interior shall prescribe, and the Secretary shall report his action in detail to Congress at its next session.

For some peculiar reason, this fund came to be known as "Indian moneys, proceeds of labor." The present status of funds so classified is dealt with elsewhere.<sup>19</sup>

A few years later this provision was supplemented by the Act of February 18, 1889,<sup>20</sup> authorizing the sale of dead timbers on Indian reservations under such regulations as the President might prescribe.

Meanwhile the process of assimilation, on its moral side, was demanding congressional attention. Shocked by the *Grosvonts* case,<sup>21</sup> Congress, appended to the Appropriation Act of March 3, 1885, a section<sup>22</sup> specifying seven major crimes over which the federal courts were henceforth to exercise jurisdiction, even though both the offender and the victim were Indians and these were subject only to tribal jurisdiction in the absence of congressional statute.<sup>23</sup>

<sup>18</sup> 22 Stat. 582, 590, 25 U. S. C. 135.

<sup>19</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 10, Chapter 15, sec. 28.

<sup>20</sup> 26 Stat. 875, 25 U. S. C. 196. See Chapter 15, sec. 15.

<sup>21</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 2.

<sup>22</sup> Sec. 9, 25 Stat. 992, 385, later incorporated, with amendments, in 18 U. S. C. 518.

<sup>23</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 6.

The same act that contained the "seven crimes" provision embodied a comprehensive attempt to deal with the problem of Indian depredations by providing for a general investigation by the Secretary of the Interior into depredation claims where treaties with Indian tribes authorized the United States to pay damages out of moneys due to the tribes.<sup>24</sup>

The most important statute of the decade is, of course, the General Allotment Act,<sup>25</sup> frequently referred to as the Dawes Act. The objectives of this legislation and the legal problems which it raised are elsewhere discussed.<sup>26</sup> For the sake of the general historical picture, a brief summary of the provisions of this act may be offered.

The first section authorizes the President to allot tribal lands in designated quantities to reservation Indians.<sup>27</sup> The second section provides that the Indian allottees shall, so far as practicable, make their own selections of land so as to enhance improvements already made.<sup>28</sup> Section 3 provides that allotments shall be made by agents, regular or special.<sup>29</sup> Section 4 allows "any Indian not residing upon a reservation, or for whose tribe no reservation has been provided" to secure an allotment upon the public domain.<sup>30</sup>

Section 5 provides that title in trust to allotments shall be held by the United States for 25 years, or longer if the President deems an extension desirable. During this trust period encumbrances or conveyances are void. In general, the laws of descent and partition in the State or territory where the lands are situated apply after patents have been executed and delivered. If any surplus lands remain after the allotments have been made, the Secretary is authorized to negotiate with the tribe for the purchase of such land by the United States, purchase money to be

<sup>24</sup> Act of March 3, 1885, 28 Stat. 862, 376. Authorization to continue the investigation is found in the Appropriation Act of May 15, 1886, 24 Stat. 25, 41.

<sup>25</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 388.

<sup>26</sup> See Chapter 11, sec. 1, and Chapter 18, sec. 3B.

<sup>27</sup> See 25 U. S. C. 341.

<sup>28</sup> 24 Stat. 388, 25 U. S. C. 382.

<sup>29</sup> 24 Stat. 388, 389, Sec. 35, 25 U. S. C. 388.

<sup>30</sup> 24 Stat. 388, 389, 25 U. S. C. 384.

held in trust for the sole use of the tribes to whom the reservation belonged but subject to appropriation by Congress, for the education and civilization of such tribe or its members. This section also contains an important provision for the preference of Indians in employment in the Federal Government.<sup>18</sup>

Section 6 of the act sets forth the nonpenalty benefits which the Indians were to receive in view of the destruction of tribal property and tribal existence which the act contemplates.<sup>19</sup>

Section 7 of the act provides the basic law upon which future rights to allotments have been measured.<sup>20</sup>

The remainder of the act contains sections which exempt from the allotment legislation various tribes of the Indian Territory, the reservations of the Seneca Nation in New York, and an Executive order reservation in the State of Nebraska, and which authorize appropriations for surveys. In addition, the act contains various saving clauses for the maintenance of their existing congressional and administrative powers.

<sup>18</sup> 24 Stat. 885, 890, 25 U. S. C. 44b. See Chapter 6, sec. 24, and Chapter 4, sec. 41(a), (b).

<sup>19</sup> 24 Stat. 885, 890, 25 U. S. C. 849. And see Chapter 8, sec. 2A(3).

<sup>20</sup> 24 Stat. 885, 890, 25 U. S. C. 351. See Chapter 11, sec. 1.

In the following year the process of amending the Allotment Act began. Section 2 of the Act of October 20, 1888,<sup>21</sup> authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to accept surrenders of patents by Indian allottees. A proviso permits the Indian allottee, if he so chooses, to make a then selection.

A critical point in the process of assimilation arose in the intermarriage of white men and Indian women. The so-called "quartermen" were in many cases individuals who took unto themselves at least a proportionate share of tribal property and tribal control. Section 1 of the Act of August 8, 1888,<sup>22</sup> provided, that, with the exception of the Five Civilized Tribes, intermarried whites should not by such marriage acquire "any right to any tribal property, privilege, or interest whatever to which any member of such tribe is entitled." Section 2 provided that an Indian woman married to a white man shall by such marriage become a citizen of the United States, without detriment to her rights of participation in tribal property.<sup>23</sup> The third section of the act<sup>24</sup> dealt with evidence required to show marriage.

<sup>21</sup> 25 Stat. 611, 612, 25 U. S. C. 150.

<sup>22</sup> 25 Stat. 304, 25 U. S. C. 181.

<sup>23</sup> 25 U. S. C. 182.

<sup>24</sup> 25 U. S. C. 183.

## SECTION 12. LEGISLATION FROM 1890 TO 1899

The decade of the 1890's shows no sweeping legislation comparable in scope to the General Allotment Act, but it rather embodies piecemeal development of earlier statutes. This development proceeds along four main lines: (1) Amendments to the Allotment Act, particularly for the purpose of permitting leases of allotments, (2) the development of a body of law governing Indian education, (3) increased protection for individual Indian rights, and (4) the clearing up of Indian depletion claims.

Under the first heading may be listed the Act of February 28, 1891.<sup>25</sup> The first two sections modified those provisions of the General Allotment Act relating to the amounts of land to be allotted. Section 2 of the act<sup>26</sup> permits the leasing of individual allotments, under rules prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior, whenever the Secretary finds that the allottee, "by reason of age or other disability," cannot "personally and with benefit to himself occupy or improve his allotment or any part thereof."

A proviso of this section permits leasing of tribal lands, where such lands are occupied by Indians who have bought and paid for them, "by authority of the Council speaking for such Indians," but "subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior."

Section 4 of the act supplements previous legislation on homestead allotments.<sup>27</sup> Section 5 of the act provides that for purposes of descent, "collateralization" according to the custom and manner of Indian life shall be considered valid marriage.<sup>28</sup>

Further amendments to the allotment system adopted during this decade include provisions extending leasing privileges,<sup>29</sup> conferring jurisdiction upon the federal courts to adjudicate suits for allotments,<sup>30</sup> and authorizing the Secretary of the Interior to collect claims in patents, and particularly in cases of "double allotment."<sup>31</sup>

Of the numerous statutes on Indian education enacted during the decade of the 1890's the earliest comes a large measure of

authority upon the administrative officials, and the later statutes proceed to limit their authority. The Appropriation Act of July 18, 1892,<sup>32</sup> includes a provision<sup>33</sup> authorizing the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to make and enforce regulations to secure the attendance of Indian children "at schools established and maintained for their benefit."

The Appropriation Act of March 3, 1893,<sup>34</sup> contains a provision<sup>35</sup> authorizing the Secretary of the Interior to

"... prevent the issuing of rations or the furnishing of subsistence either in money or in kind to the head of any Indian family for or on account of any Indian child or children between the ages of eight and twenty one years who shall not have attended school during the preceding year in accordance with such regulations."

This tactic apparently made considerable Indian and public resentment, and the parallel practice of taking children from their parents and sending them to distant nonreservation boarding schools.<sup>36</sup> Section 11 of the Appropriation Act of August 15, 1894,<sup>37</sup> prohibits the sending of children to school outside the title or territory of their residence without the consent of their parents or natural guardians, and forbids the withholding of rations as a technique for securing such consent. This provision is reenacted in the Appropriation Act of March 2, 1895,<sup>38</sup> and, again, the Appropriation Act of June 10, 1896,<sup>39</sup> provides "That hereafter no Indian child shall be taken from any school in any State or Territory to a school in any other State against its will or without the written consent of its parents."<sup>40</sup>

A further limitation upon the broad authority of administrative officers over Indian education is found in a provision of the Appropriation Act of June 7, 1897,<sup>41</sup> declaring it to be the

<sup>25</sup> 27 Stat. 120.

<sup>26</sup> 27 Stat. 120 143, 25 U. S. C. 284.

<sup>27</sup> 27 Stat. 612.

<sup>28</sup> 27 Stat. 612, 628, 25 U. S. C. 284.

<sup>29</sup> See Tuckman, *Measuring the Indians*, 1027, *American Indian Life* (October-November 1927 Supplement), 6, 9.

<sup>30</sup> 28 Stat. 286 814-814.

<sup>31</sup> 28 Stat. 870, 905, 25 U. S. C. 286.

<sup>32</sup> 29 Stat. 421, 446.

<sup>33</sup> 25 U. S. C. 287.

<sup>34</sup> 30 Stat. 62, 70, 25 U. S. C. 278. See Chapter 12, sec. 2D.

<sup>35</sup> 28 Stat. 774.

<sup>36</sup> See 25 U. S. C. 895.

<sup>37</sup> See 25 U. S. C. 895.

<sup>38</sup> 25 U. S. C. 871.

<sup>39</sup> Act of August 15, 1894, 28 Stat. 286, 805, 25 U. S. C. 402.

<sup>40</sup> Act of August 15, 1894, 28 Stat. 286, 805, 25 U. S. C. 404.

<sup>41</sup> Act of January 28, 1895, 28 Stat. 641, 25 U. S. C. 945.

policy of Congress to "make no appropriation whatever for education in any sectarian school."

The role which these various statutes on Indian education have had in the development of the present law governing that subject is elsewhere discussed.<sup>13</sup>

Concern for the protection of individual Indian rights was one of the most constitutive consequences of the allotment legislation. The Appropriation Act of March 3, 1891,<sup>14</sup> contains a provision, elsewhere discussed,<sup>15</sup> requiring United States district

attorneys to render legal services to Indians. Further concern for individual Indian rights is indicated by section 10 of the Appropriation Act of August 17, 1894,<sup>16</sup> requiring the Interior Department to employ Indians in all employments in the Indian Service whenever practicable.

The final subject of importance covered in the legislation of the 1890's is the subject of Indian depredations. The Act of March 3, 1891,<sup>17</sup> established a comprehensive basis upon which all pending depredation claims were, in a comparatively short time, disposed of by the Court of Claims.<sup>18</sup>

<sup>13</sup> 29 Stat. 286, 411, 23 U. S. C. 43. See Chapter 8, sec. 18.

<sup>14</sup> 26 Stat. 851.

<sup>15</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 1.

## SECTION 13 LEGISLATION FROM 1900 TO 1909

Legislation of the decade from 1900 through 1909, like that of the preceding decade, consists almost entirely of piecemeal additions to and modifications of past legislation. The center of activity is throughout the decade almost entirely in the problem of how Indian lands or interests therein may be transferred from Indian title to individual Indians or from individual Indians to individual white men.

Authorization for individual leasing of allotments is contained in the Appropriation Act of May 31, 1900.<sup>19</sup>

The Act of February 6, 1901,<sup>20</sup> amplifies prior legislation allowing the Indian a day in court to prove his right to an allotment.

The Appropriation Act of March 3, 1901, contains a provision authorizing the Secretary of the Interior to grant rights-of-way in the nature of easements across tribal and allotted lands for telephone and telegraph lines and offices.<sup>21</sup> The same section contains a provision subjecting allotted lands to condemnation under the laws of the state or territory in which they are located.<sup>22</sup>

The Appropriation Act of May 27, 1902, established a procedure whereby the adult heirs of a deceased allottee may convey lands in heirship status with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>23</sup>

The Appropriation Act of June 21, 1903, contains three important provisions of substantive law.<sup>24</sup> In the first place it permits the President to continue the first period or period of restriction during which allotted land is inalienable.<sup>25</sup> Another provision of this statute provides that:

No lands acquired under the provisions of this Act shall in any event, become liable to the satisfaction of any debt contracted prior to the issuing of the final patent in fee therefor.<sup>26</sup>

A third item of general legislation in this appropriation act deals,

That no money accruing from any lease or sale of lands held in trust by the United States for any Indian shall be come liable for the payment of any debt of, or claim against, such Indian contracted or arising during such trust period or, in case of a minor, during his minority, except with the approval and consent of the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>27</sup>

While a provision in the foregoing act had established an administrative power to continue restrictions on Indian land beyond

the point at which they were to have ceased a provision in the Appropriation Act of March 1, 1907,<sup>28</sup> extended administrative discretion and flexibility in the opposite direction. Under this legislation sale of restricted land was to be permitted prior to the time when such restriction was to have expired "under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe" and the proceeds might be used for the benefit of the vendee "under the supervision of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs."<sup>29</sup>

The Act of March 2, 1907,<sup>30</sup> entitled "An Act Providing for the allotment and distribution of Indian tribal funds," applies to the item of funds the principles applied to land in the General Allotment Act. Under section 1 of this act,<sup>31</sup> the Secretary of the Interior was authorized to designate Indians deemed capable of managing their own affairs, and to allot to such Indians a pro rata share of tribal funds, upon the application of the Indian. Section 2 of this act,<sup>32</sup> authorized payment, under direction of the Secretary of the Interior, of their pro rata share of tribal funds to Indians mentally or physically disabled.<sup>33</sup>

The Act of May 29, 1908, extended the authority to sell allotted lands, permitting the Secretary to make such sales upon the death of the original allottee and permitting and authorizing the issuance of a patent to the widow of such Indian heirship lands.<sup>34</sup>

The Appropriation Act of March 3, 1909, authorizes the grant of Indian lands to railroads for various designated purposes.<sup>35</sup>

The same statute authorizes leasing of allotted lands for mining purposes,<sup>36</sup> under terms approved by the Secretary of the Interior.

A third substantive item contained in this appropriation act authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to make such arrangements as he deems to be "for the best interest of the Indians" in connection with irrigation projects affecting Indian reservation lands.<sup>37</sup>

In general it may be said that these provisions introduce an element of administrative discretion and flexibility into a system which when originally proposed had been considered a means of releasing the Indian from dependence upon administrative authorities.

<sup>13</sup> 31 Stat. 221, 229. See in 164, *supra*.

<sup>14</sup> 21 Stat. 760.

<sup>15</sup> See 3 U. S. Stat. 1038, 1084, 29 U. S. C. 87.

<sup>16</sup> See 4 U. S. Stat. 1078, 1084, 29 U. S. C. 87.

<sup>17</sup> See 7 U. S. Stat. 245, 275, 25 U. S. C. 179. And see Chapter 13, sec. 60.

<sup>18</sup> 24 Stat. 925.

<sup>19</sup> 24 Stat. 428, 526, 25 U. S. C. 361.

<sup>20</sup> 24 Stat. 125, 327, 25 U. S. C. 364.

<sup>21</sup> 24 Stat. 826, 827, 25 U. S. C. 410.

<sup>22</sup> 34 Stat. 1015.

<sup>23</sup> 34 Stat. 1015, 1018, 25 U. S. C. 409.

<sup>24</sup> 34 Stat. 1221.

<sup>25</sup> 25 U. S. C. 110. See Chapters 10, sec. 4.

<sup>26</sup> See 25 U. S. C. 121.

<sup>27</sup> See Chapter 10, sec. 1.

<sup>28</sup> 35 Stat. 444, 25 U. S. C. 404. And see Chapter 5, sec. 11.

<sup>29</sup> 35 Stat. 781, 25 U. S. C. 380.

<sup>30</sup> 35 Stat. 781, 784, 25 U. S. C. 396. See Chapter 11, sec. 5.

<sup>31</sup> 35 Stat. 781, 788, 25 U. S. C. 382.

## SECTION 14 LEGISLATION FROM 1910 TO 1919

During the decade from 1910 through 1919, two trends dominated Indian legislation. In the first place, the allotment system is rendered more flexible and diminishes the power in connection with the allotment system are greatly expanded. In the second place, the attempt to wind up tribal existence reaches a new high point and various powers formerly vested in the tribes are transferred by Congress to administrative officials.

Except for the single act of June 23, 1910,<sup>1</sup> which constitutes a comprehensive revision of the allotment law,<sup>2</sup> all the significant general legislation of this period is tucked away in provisions of appropriation acts.

The first such measure is found in a proviso of the Appropriation Act of April 4, 1910,<sup>3</sup> which makes specific the powers conferred upon the Secretary of the Interior the year before,<sup>4</sup> with regard to migration projects on Indian reservations.<sup>5</sup>

The Act of June 23, 1910,<sup>6</sup> constitutes what is probably the most important revision of the General Allotment Act that has been made. Based on 30 years of experience in the administration of the act, it seeks to fill gaps and deficiencies brought to light in the course of that period. These relate particularly (a) to the administration of estates of allottees, (b) to the making of leases and timber contracts for allotted lands, and (c) to the cancellation of relinquishment of trust patents.

Section 1 of this act<sup>7</sup> sets forth a comprehensive plan for the administration of allottees' estates, conferring plenary authority upon the Secretary of the Interior to administer such estates and to sell heretofore lands. Section 2<sup>8</sup> authorizes testamentary disposition of allotments with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior and the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. Section 3<sup>9</sup> permits relinquishment of allotments by allottees in favor of unallotted children, who had been completely ignored in the original scheme of allotment to living Indians, and sale of surplus lands to whites.

Section 4 of the act<sup>10</sup> permits leasing of Indian allotments held by trust patent for periods not to exceed 5 years in accordance with regulations of the Secretary of the Interior, and confers upon the Secretary power to supervise or expend for the Indians' benefit the rentals thereby received. Section 5<sup>11</sup> makes it unlawful to induce an Indian to execute any conveyance of land held in trust, or interests therein, thus taking account of a practice which had resulted in large losses of Indian land through fraudulent or semifrudentious means. Section 6<sup>12</sup> contains various provisions for the protection of Indian timber against trespass and fire. Section 7<sup>13</sup> contains a general authorization for the sale of timber on unallotted lands under regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior. Section 8<sup>14</sup> contains a similar authorization for timber sales on restricted allotted lands.

Section 13 of the act<sup>15</sup> authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to reserve from entry Indian power and reservation sites,

and the following section<sup>16</sup> authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to cancel patents covering such sites upon making allotment of other lands of equal value and reimbursing the Indian for improvements on the cancelled allotment. Other sections contain minor amendments to the General Allotment Act and related legislation.<sup>17</sup>

The provision of this act relating to testamentary disposition of allotments is amended and amplified by the Act of February 14, 1911.<sup>18</sup> As implied, the privilege of testamentary disposition subject to departmental approval is extended not only to Indians possessed of allotments, but also to Indians having individual Indian in numerous or other property held in trust by the United States.

The Appropriation Act of June 30, 1913, declares:

No contract made with any Indian, whose such contract relates to the tribal funds or property in the hands of the United States, shall be valid, nor shall any payment for services rendered in violation thereof be made unless the consent of the United States has previously been given.

The Appropriation Act of August 1, 1914, contains provisions of substantive law authorizing quarantine of Indians afflicted with contagious diseases,<sup>19</sup> and gives recognition to the existence of agency jails by requiring reports of confinements therein.<sup>20</sup>

Continued in the Appropriation Act of May 18, 1916, is a provision authorizing the leasing of allotted lands susceptible of irrigation where the Indian owner, by reason of age or disability, cannot personally occupy or improve the land.<sup>21</sup>

The same appropriation act includes a mandate to the Secretary of the Interior to make a comprehensive report of the use to which tribal funds have been put by administrative authorities. A proviso to this mandate which has become an important part of existing Indian law declares that following the submission of such report, in December 1917—

no money shall be expended from Indian tribal funds, without specific appropriation by Congress except as follows: Equalization of allotments, education of Indian children in accordance with existing law, penitents and other payments, all of which are hereby continued in full force and effect. *Provided further*, That this shall not change existing law with reference to the Five Civilized Tribes.<sup>22</sup>

The Appropriation Act of May 25, 1918, contains a number of "economy" provisions, the most important of which is that prohibiting the use of appropriations, other than those made pursuant to treaties—

to educate children of less than one-fourth Indian blood whose parents are citizens of the United States and of the State wherein they live and where there are adequate free school facilities provided.<sup>23</sup>

Another provision of this appropriation act contains a reminder of the recent admission of the states of New Mexico and Arizona

<sup>1</sup> 36 Stat 855

<sup>2</sup> See Int Rept No 1, 135, 61st Cong, 2d sess, April 24, 1910, for a comprehensive outline of the purposes of the act (H R 24092)

<sup>3</sup> 36 Stat 298, 270

<sup>4</sup> Act of March 8, 1906, 34 Stat 781, 798 See Int Rept No 204, supra

<sup>5</sup> 36 Stat 298, 270, 271, 25 U S C 383-385 See Chapter 12, sec 7

<sup>6</sup> 36 Stat 855

<sup>7</sup> 36 Stat 855, 25 U S C 372

<sup>8</sup> 36 Stat 857, 856, 25 U S C 373

<sup>9</sup> 36 Stat 855, 856, 25 U S C 408

<sup>10</sup> 36 Stat 855, 856, 25 U S C 408

<sup>11</sup> 36 Stat 855, 857, 18 U S C 115

<sup>12</sup> 36 Stat 855, 857, 18 U S C 104, 107

<sup>13</sup> 36 Stat 855, 857, 25 U S C 407

<sup>14</sup> 36 Stat 855, 857, 25 U S C 408

<sup>15</sup> 36 Stat 855, 858, 48 U S C 148

<sup>16</sup> 36 Stat 855, 859, 25 U S C 852

<sup>17</sup> See sec 15, 36 Stat 855, 859 (incorporated in 25 U S C 812) (rights of way) sec 17, 36 Stat 855, 859 (incorporated in 25 U S C 351) (amending secs 1 and 4 of the original allotment act), sec 31, 36 Stat 855, 859, 25 U S C 857 (allotments within national forests)

<sup>18</sup> 36 Stat 678 See 25 U S C 374

<sup>19</sup> See Chapter 10, sec 19, Chapter 11, sec 8 See also Sen Rept

No 720 63d Cong 2d sess, May 9, 1912, on H R 1382

<sup>20</sup> 36 Stat 77, 97, 25 U S C 85 See Chapter 8, Sec 7

<sup>21</sup> 36 Stat 652, 654, 25 U S C 198

<sup>22</sup> 36 Stat 652, 654, 25 U S C 200

<sup>23</sup> 36 Stat 124, 125, 25 U S C 894 See Chapter 11, sec 5

<sup>24</sup> 36 Stat 123, 125-126, 25 U S C 123

<sup>25</sup> 40 Stat 651, 654, 25 U S C 297

to the Union, in the form of a prohibition against the executive creation of further Indian reservations in these two states.<sup>41</sup>

Section 26 of this act represents what is perhaps the culmination of the tendency to break up Indian tribes and tribal property. This section "authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to withdraw from the United States Treasury and segregate all tribal funds held in trust by the United States, apportioning a pro rata share of such funds to each member of the tribe. This provision for the dividing up of tribal funds required a final bill

<sup>41</sup> 40 Stat. 761, 370, 26 U. S. C. 211.

<sup>42</sup> 40 Stat. 761, 215 U. S. C. 362 repealed by Act of June 24, 1938, sec. 2, 52 Stat. 1937, so that in the former statute, unauthorized distribution of tribal funds. See Chapter 9 sec. 6, Chapter 10 sec. 4, Chapter 15, sec. 21.

of persons entitled to participate in the division. Such authorization is contained in the Appropriation Act of June 30, 1919.<sup>42</sup>

This same act included a comprehensive scheme for the granting of leases and prospecting permits on tribal lands of some far western states by the Secretary of the Interior, under such regulations as he might prescribe.<sup>43</sup> This statute probably stimulated by wartime demand for minerals completely disregards any tribal voice in the disposition of tribal property. It is of a piece with legislation, already noted, looking to the complete dissolution of the Indian tribes and the division of tribal funds, as well as tribal lands, among the members thereof.

<sup>43</sup> 41 Stat. 1, 2, 25 U. S. C. 103.

<sup>44</sup> See 26 Stat. 411, 25 U. S. C. 499, amended by Act of December 16, 1926, 44 Stat. 922, and Act of May 11, 1935, 49 Stat. 847, 25 U. S. C. 496a, 496b. See Chapter 15 sec. 14 and 10.

## SECTION 15 LEGISLATION FROM 1920 TO 1929

The decade from 1920 through 1929 is singularly devoid of basic Indian legislation. In fact, the decade marks a lull between the legislative activity in which the development of the allotment system was realized and the new trends towards corporate activity and the protection of Indian rights which were to take form in the following decade.

Seven statutes embodying permanent general legislation adopted during this decade deserve notice.

The Appropriation Act of February 14, 1920, contains a direction to the Secretary of the Interior to require owners of unallotted lands under Indian irrigation projects to make payments for costs of construction.<sup>44</sup> The same statute contains a proviso authorizing the Secretary of the Interior to make and enforce regulations to secure regular attendance of "eligible Indian children who are wards of the government" in federal or state schools.<sup>45</sup>

The Appropriation Act of March 3, 1921, contains general authorization for the leasing of restricted allotments for farming and grazing purposes, subject to departmental regulations.<sup>46</sup>

By the Act of May 26, 1924,<sup>47</sup> Congress authorized the execution of oil and gas leases "at public auction by the Secretary of the Interior, with the consent of the council speaking for such Indians," whenever such lands were subject to mining leases, under the Act of February 28, 1901.<sup>48</sup>

Perhaps the most significant legislation of the decade is the Act of June 2, 1921, which made "all non-citizen Indians born within the territorial limits of the United States" citizens of the United States.<sup>49</sup> The title of this act as given in the Statutes at Large, "An Act to authorize the Secretary of the Interior to issue certificates of citizenship to Indians" is the result of a clerical error which has been a source of considerable misunderstanding. The bill as originally introduced contemplated a procedure whereby the Secretary of the Interior was to issue such certificates. The act as finally passed, however, acted of its own force to confer citizenship upon the Indian and in fact as passed by both houses the title of the bill reads: "A bill granting citizenship to Indians, and for other purposes."<sup>50</sup> This act

<sup>44</sup> 41 Stat. 408, 409, 25 U. S. C. 386. See Chapter 12 sec. 7.

<sup>45</sup> 41 Stat. 408, 410. See Chapter 13, sec. 2.

<sup>46</sup> 41 Stat. 1228, 1229, 25 U. S. C. 893. See Chapter 11, sec. 5.

<sup>47</sup> 42 Stat. 244, 25 U. S. C. 808.

<sup>48</sup> 20 Stat. 704, 705, 25 U. S. C. 897.

<sup>49</sup> 42 Stat. 203, 2 U. S. C. 8. See Chapter 8, sec. 2.

<sup>50</sup> See H. Rept. No. 222, 66th Cong., 1st sess., February 22, 1920, on H. R. 9853 wherein the Committee on Indian Affairs said:

At the present time it is very difficult for an Indian to obtain citizenship without either being allotted and getting a patent in fee simple, or having the reservation and taking up the land allowance apart from any tribe of Indians. This legislation will

brought to completion a process whereby various classes of Indians had successively been granted the status of citizenship.<sup>51</sup>

By the Act of May 17, 1926,<sup>52</sup> Congress acted to regularize the handling of "Indian moneys, proceeds of labor," making such moneys

available for expenditure, in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior, for the benefit of the Indian tribes, agencies, and schools on whose behalf they are collected, subject, however, to the limitations as to tribal funds imposed by section 27 of the Act of May 18, 1916 (Thirty-ninth Statutes at Large, page 179).<sup>53</sup>

The status of these funds is elsewhere discussed.<sup>54</sup>

A comprehensive statute on oil and gas mining upon unallotted lands within Executive order reservations is the Act of March 8, 1927.<sup>55</sup> Section 1 of this act "extends to Executive order reservations the leasing privileges already applicable to other reservations, under the Act of May 20, 1924, noted above."

Section 2 of this act "provides for the deposit of rentals, royalties, and bonuses in the Treasury of the United States to the credit of the Indian tribe concerned such funds to be available for appropriation by Congress. This section contains a significant proviso indicating a new trend in Indian legislation:

Provided, That said Indians, or their tribal council, shall be consulted in regard to the expenditure of such money, but no per capita payment shall be made except by Act of Congress.

Section 3 of the act "subjects proceeds and operations under the act to state taxation." Section 4 contains general legislation not restricted to the matter of oil and gas leases:

\* \* \* hereafter changes in the boundaries of reservations created by Executive order, proclamation, or otherwise for the use and occupation of Indians shall not be

judged the present map and provide means whereby in Indians may be given citizenship without reference to the question of land tenure or the price of its purchase. \* \* \*

The Senate amended the bill so as to eliminate all departmental discretion in its application. See Sen. Rept. No. 441, 68th Cong. 1st sess. April 21, 1921, and see 65 Cong. Rec. 8621-8622, 7901-0904.

<sup>51</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 2.

<sup>52</sup> 44 Stat. 660. See 25 U. S. C. 161b.

<sup>53</sup> See H. Rept. No. 597, 69th Cong., 1st sess., April 16, 1926, on H. R. 11171.

<sup>54</sup> Chapter 5, sec. 10.

<sup>55</sup> 44 Stat. 1847.

<sup>56</sup> 44 Stat. 1847, 25 U. S. C. 808a.

<sup>57</sup> 45 Stat. 264. See in 23rd supra.

<sup>58</sup> 44 Stat. 1847, 25 U. S. C. 808b.

<sup>59</sup> 44 Stat. 1847, 25 U. S. C. 808c.

<sup>60</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 2.

made exempt by Act of Congress. *Provided That this shall not apply to temporary withdrawals by the Secretary of the Interior.*<sup>1</sup>

This limitation of basic executive power in the field of Indian Affairs is the precursor of a series of limitations upon executive authority enacted in the following decade.

The uniformity of comparisons drawn by the Meriam report<sup>2</sup> in 1928 between the service standards of the Indian Bureau and those of state agencies led to a series of statutes looking

<sup>1</sup> 44 Stat. 1447, 25 U. S. C. 196d. See also Rept. No. 1240, 69th Cong., 2d sess., January 13, 1927, on S. 4995.

<sup>2</sup> Meriam Problem of Indian Administration (1928). See Chapter 2, sec. 2F *supra*.

to the transfer of power over Indian Affairs from the Interior Department to the States. A first step in this devolution of power was taken by the Act of February 15, 1929,<sup>3</sup> which directed the Secretary of the Interior to permit the agents and employees of any State to enter upon Indian lands:

"For the purpose of making inspection of health and education facilities and enforcing sanitation and other future regulations or to enforce compulsory school attendance of Indian pupils, as provided by the law of the State, under such rules, regulations, and conditions as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe."

<sup>3</sup> 45 Stat. 1195, 25 U. S. C. 23.

<sup>4</sup> 45 H. Rpt. 2147, 70th Cong., 2d sess., January 17, 1929, on H. R. 15333.

## SECTION 16 LEGISLATION FROM 1930 TO 1939

The decade from 1930 to 1939 is notable in the history of Indian legislation as that of the 1880's or the 1890's. Through the series of general and permanent laws enacted in the field of Indian Affairs during this decade there runs the motif of righting past wrongs inflicted upon a nearly helpless minority. The sense of these wrongs owed much to the labors that went into the Meriam report,<sup>4</sup> much to the investigations conducted by the Senate,<sup>5</sup> and much to the volunteer labors of individuals and organizations willing to assume the thankless task of criticizing the workings of our governmental institutions.<sup>6</sup>

The first of these attempts to remedy past wrongs was the so-called Leavitt Act of July 1, 1932.<sup>7</sup> Both the Meriam report and the special subcommittee of the Senate Committee on Indian Affairs had made it clear that in the development of irrigation projects on Indian reservations, Indians had been charged with tremendous costs for construction work which they had never requested and which brought them little or no benefit. The Leavitt Act authorized the Secretary of the Interior

to adjust or eliminate reimbursable charges of the Government of the United States existing as debts against individual Indians or tribes of Indians in such a way as shall be equitable and just in consideration of all the circumstances under which such charges were made.<sup>8</sup>

Such action was to be subject to congressional reconsideration by concurrent resolution.

A further provision of this act deferred the collection of construction charges against Indian-owned lands until the Indian title thereto should have been extinguished. The place of the Leavitt Act in current Indian irrigation work is elsewhere discussed.<sup>9</sup> Legislation along similar lines was later extended to white users of water on Indian irrigation projects.<sup>10</sup>

The first legislative result of the depression in the field of Indian Affairs was an act designed to meet the problem of defaults on timber contracts. The Act of March 4, 1933, permitted the Secretary of the Interior, with the consent of the Indians involved, expressed through a regularly called general council, and of the purchasers, to modify the terms of uncompleted contracts of sale of Indian timber lands.<sup>11</sup> Similar provision was made with respect to allotted timber.<sup>12</sup> In all such modified contracts Indian labor was to be given preference.<sup>13</sup> The inmost

ence upon Indian contract marks a trend that was to continue through the remainder of the decade.<sup>14</sup>

General emergency legislation, such as the National Industrial Recovery Act,<sup>15</sup> with its public works provisions, and the Emergency Appropriation Act of June 19, 1934,<sup>16</sup> under which the Indian Division of the Civilian Conservation Corps was established, made a very significant impression upon the economic situation of the Indian reservations.

The most important item of general and permanent legislation was the so-called Johnson O'Malley Act<sup>17</sup> of April 30, 1934,<sup>18</sup> authorizing (see 1) the Secretary of the Interior to enter into contracts with States or territories—

"... for the education, medical attention, agricultural assistance, and social welfare, including relief of distress, of Indians in such State or Territory, through the qualified agencies of such State or Territory."

Federal moneys and federal facilities might be turned over to such State or territorial agencies.<sup>19</sup> This legislation constituted a response to the criticism made by the Meriam report that the standards of social service in the Indian Bureau were in large part inferior to those of parallel state agencies.<sup>20</sup>

Next in the list of Indian grievances to be corrected was the provision in the law governing sales of Indian heirship lands requiring the Indian to refund moneys paid by a defaulting purchaser. Fall of real estate values and widespread defaults on uncompleted contracts made this provision particularly onerous to the Indians. By the Act of April 30, 1934,<sup>21</sup> the usual rule of law that instruments on a defaulted contract return to the benefit of the vendor was applied to the Indians.<sup>22</sup>

The next attempt to right old wrongs was embodied in the Act of May 21, 1934,<sup>23</sup> an act which repealed 12 sections of the United States Code that laid peculiar restrictions upon civil liberties in the Indian country.<sup>24</sup> This statute marked the first step in a process of freeing the Indians and the Indian Service from the burden of obsolete laws enacted at far long-outgrown

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 2F.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 1, sec. 1. See also H. Rpt. No. 951, 72d Cong., 1st sess.

<sup>3</sup> See particularly American Indian Life, Bulletin 10 (1927) to 24 (1934).

<sup>4</sup> 47 Stat. 564, 25 U. S. C. § 392a.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 12, sec. 7.

<sup>6</sup> Act of June 22, 1936, 49 Stat. 1805, 25 U. S. C. § 399 et seq.

<sup>7</sup> Act of March 4, 1933, sec. 1, 47 Stat. 1568, 25 U. S. C. § 407a.

<sup>8</sup> Sec. 2, 47 Stat. 1568, 25 U. S. C. § 407b.

<sup>9</sup> See 8, 47 Stat. 1568, 1569, 25 U. S. C. § 107c.

<sup>10</sup> See H. Rpt. No. 1902, 72d Cong., 1st sess., May 13, 1929, Sen. Rpt. No. 1231, 72d Cong., 2d sess., February 21, 1933, on H. R. 6684.

<sup>11</sup> Act of June 19, 1934, 48 Stat. 107.

<sup>12</sup> Act of June 19, 1934, 48 Stat. 1021, 1056. For a continuous account of these activities see the publication of the Office of Indian Affairs, "Indians at Work."

<sup>13</sup> When originally introduced it was known as the Swann Johnson bill.

<sup>14</sup> 48 Stat. 596. See 25 U. S. C. § 452.

<sup>15</sup> See Sen. Rpt. No. 511, 74d Cong., 2d sess., March 20, 1934, on S. 2571.

<sup>16</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 2F, and Chapter 12, sec. 2 and 8.

<sup>17</sup> 48 Stat. 647. See 25 U. S. C. § 872 (Supp.).

<sup>18</sup> See H. Rpt. No. 835, 73d Cong., 2d sess., February 21, 1934, on H. R. 1075.

<sup>19</sup> 48 Stat. 787.

<sup>20</sup> For a discussion of the sections repealed see Chapter 8, sec. 10A(2).

countinous.<sup>37</sup> The statutes repeal or constitute only a small part of the mass of such obsolete laws.

The most comprehensive measure of the decade, probably equalled in scope and significance only by the legislation of June 40, 1881,<sup>38</sup> and the General Allotment Act of February 8, 1887,<sup>39</sup> is the Act of June 18, 1934.<sup>40</sup> Although the various provisions of this act are discussed in other chapters, an outline sketch of the entire act may show the context and perspective in which each of these provisions has to be viewed.

The general purposes of the legislation are set forth at length in the hearings before the House Indian Affairs Committee<sup>41</sup> and in briefs from its members before the Senate Indian Affairs Committee.<sup>42</sup> In a series of conferences held throughout the Indian country the purposes of the proposed legislation is envisioned by officials of the Interior Department and the views voiced by Indians which were embodied in the act is finally presented and set forth in some detail.<sup>43</sup>

More briefly the objectives of the legislation are summed up in the report presented by Senator Wheeler, one of the co-sponsors of the measure, on behalf of the Committee on Indian Affairs, of which he was chairman. The report recommending enactment of the measure<sup>44</sup> declared:

- The purposes of the bill, briefly stated, are as follows:
- (1) To stop the alienation, through action by the Government or the Indians, of such lands, belonging to ward Indians, as are needed for the present and future support of these Indians.
  - (2) To provide for the acquisition, through purchase, of land for Indians, now landless, who are industrious and fitted to make a living on such land.
  - (3) To stabilize the tribal organization of Indian tribes by vesting such tribal organizations with real, though limited, authority, and by prescribing conditions which must be met by such tribal organizations.
  - (4) To permit Indian tribes to equip themselves with the devices of modern business organization, through forming themselves into business corporations.
  - (5) To establish a system of financial credit for Indians.
  - (6) To supply Indians with means for collegiate and technical training in the best schools.
  - (7) To open the way for qualified Indians to hold positions in the Federal Indian Service.

Section 1<sup>45</sup> prohibits further allotment of Indian lands. This provision embodied a considered judgment that the allotment system was incapable of contributing to the economic advancement of the Indians. As was stated in the House report,<sup>46</sup>

The bill now under consideration definitely puts an end to the allotment system the operation of which the Indians have paid with 90,000,000 acres of their land in the last 50 years. (P 6)

<sup>37</sup> See Sen. Rept. No. 634, 73d Cong., 2d sess., March 28, 1934, on S. 2071, wherein it is stated: "It appears that the only use now made of these obsolete sections is as an excuse for arbitrary abuses by bureaucratic officials."

<sup>38</sup> See sec. 8, supra.

<sup>39</sup> See sec. 11, supra.

<sup>40</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 25 U. S. C. 461, et seq.

<sup>41</sup> Readjustment of Indian Affairs Hearings, II Comm. on Ind. Aff., on H. R. 7002, 73d Cong., 2d sess. (1934).

<sup>42</sup> Hearings, Sen. Comm. on Ind. Aff., on S. 2755 and S. 3645, 73d Cong., 2d sess. (1934).

<sup>43</sup> See, for example, Minutes of the Plains Congress, March 2-5, 1934 (Big Horn Indian School), Minutes of All-Plains Council, Santa Domingo Pueblo, March 16, 1934, Report of Southern Arizona Indian Council Service Phoenix, Arizona, March 15-16, 1934 (Phoenix Indian School), Proceedings of the Conference for the Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes of Oklahoma Muskogee, Oklahoma, March 22, 1934.

<sup>44</sup> Sen. Rept. No. 1080, 73d Cong., 2d sess. (May 10 (calendar day), May 22, 1934).

<sup>45</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 25 U. S. C. 461. See Chapter 11, sec. 1.

<sup>46</sup> H. Rept. No. 1804, 73d Cong., 2d sess., on H. R. 7002 (May 28, 1934).

Section 2<sup>47</sup> extends, until otherwise directed by Congress, existing periods of trust and restrictions on alienation placed on Indian lands.

Section 3<sup>48</sup> apart from the lengthy provisos relating to the Pipeline Reservation<sup>49</sup> authorized the Secretary of the Interior to restore to tribal ownership the remaining surplus lands of any Indian reservation heretofore acquired, or authorized to be acquired, to sale, or any other form of disposal.<sup>50</sup> Commenting on this section, the Senate Committee Report declares:

When allotment was carried out on various reservations, tracts of surplus or excess land remained unallotted and were placed with the Land Office of the Department of the Interior for sale, the proceeds to be paid to the Indians. Some of these tracts remain unsold and by section 3 of the bill they are restored to tribal use. (P. 2)

Section 4 of the act<sup>51</sup> constitutes a rather complicated amalgam of differing Senate and House drafts on the subject of alienation of Indian land. The scope and effect of this section are elsewhere explained.<sup>52</sup> In general, it may be said that the section prohibits *inter vivos* transfers of restricted Indian land except to an Indian in title and limits testamentary disposition of such land to the heirs of the decedent, to members of the tribe having jurisdiction over the land, or to the tribe itself.

Section 5<sup>53</sup> authorizes the acquisition of lands for Indians<sup>54</sup> and declares that such lands shall be tax exempt.

Section 6<sup>55</sup> directs the promulgation of various conservation regulations.

Section 7<sup>56</sup> gives the Secretary authority to add newly acquired land to existing reservations and extends federal jurisdiction over such lands.

Section 8<sup>57</sup> reserves restricted Indian homesteads on the public domain out of the scope of this measure.

The first eight sections of the law as finally enacted correspond to the provisions of the bills considered and reported by the House and Senate Committees. In the remaining sections of the measure as finally enacted, various combinations and compromises were made between two dissenting drafts which preceded the two houses and, therefore, the House and Senate debates and committee reports must be read with caution.

Section 9<sup>58</sup> authorizes an appropriation for the expenses of organizing Indian in chartered corporations and other organizations created under the act.

Section 10<sup>59</sup> authorizes the establishment of a \$10,000,000 revolving credit fund from which loans may be made to incorporated tribes. Loans had been made by the Indian Service for many years to individual Indians, but the experience with such loans had not been satisfactory. The individual Indian receiving money or goods from a federal official was apt to place the trans-

<sup>47</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 25 U. S. C. 462.

<sup>48</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 25 U. S. C. 463.

<sup>49</sup> Enrolled as amended by Act of August 28, 1937, 50 Stat. 862.

<sup>50</sup> See Chapter 16, sec. 1, 7, 21.

<sup>51</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 985, 25 U. S. C. 464.

<sup>52</sup> See Chapter 11, sec. 4, Chapter 15, sec. 18.

<sup>53</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 985, 25 U. S. C. 465.

<sup>54</sup> "The title to land thus acquired will remain in the United States. The Secretary may permit the use and occupancy of this newly acquired land by Indian Indians, he may loan them money for improvements and cultivation, but the continued occupancy of this land will depend on its beneficial use by the Indian occupant and his heirs." (H. Rept. No. 1804, 73d Cong., 2d sess. (May 28, 1934), p. 7.)

<sup>55</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 985, 25 U. S. C. 466.

<sup>56</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 25 U. S. C. 467.

<sup>57</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 985, 25 U. S. C. 468.

<sup>58</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 985, 25 U. S. C. 469.

<sup>59</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 985, 25 U. S. C. 470.

action in the context of goods received under treaty or agreement by way of charity, and the usage to repay them was slight. The new legislation precluded loans from the Federal Government to individual Indians. Henceforth the individual Indians were to be responsible in the matter of repayment to his own tribe.<sup>40</sup>

Section 11<sup>41</sup> authorized "loans to Indians for the payment of tuition and other expenses in recognized vocational and trade schools," and "loans to Indian students in high schools and colleges."<sup>42</sup>

Section 12<sup>43</sup> restricted the presence of Indians in employment which had been made in several critical statutes during the preceding century.<sup>44</sup> Specifically, it directed the Secretary of the Interior to establish a list of Indians in appointment who would be required to avail themselves, to the various positions in unattended, now at least, by the Indian Office, in the administration of functions on reserves affecting any Indian tribe,<sup>45</sup> and provided that Indians meeting such non-civil service standards "shall hereafter have the preference to appointment to vacancies in any such positions." The administration of this provision is elsewhere discussed.<sup>46</sup>

Sections 13,<sup>47</sup> 14,<sup>48</sup> and 15<sup>49</sup> of the act deal with the exemption of various tribes from all or some of the provisions of the act, provided for the continuance of "Special benefits,"<sup>50</sup> and put forward a promise

that no expenditures for the benefit of Indians made out of appropriations authorized by this Act shall be considered as offsets in any suit brought to recover upon any claim of such Indians against the United States.

Sections 16<sup>51</sup> and 17<sup>52</sup> deal with the problem of tribal organization and tribal incorporation. Since these sections were the work of a conference committee which took phrases from the bill that had passed the House and other phrases from the bill that had passed the Senate, the House and Senate committee reports and legislative history prior to the conference report must be used with extreme circumspection, in making the interpretation of these two sections. The scope of these two sections and the interpretations placed thereon are elsewhere discussed.<sup>53</sup>

Section 18<sup>54</sup> provided that the act as a whole should not apply to any reservation wherein a majority of the Indians voted against its application.<sup>55</sup>

<sup>40</sup> See Chapter 14.

<sup>41</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 989, 25 U. S. C. 471.

<sup>42</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 989, 25 U. S. C. 472.

<sup>43</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 48.

<sup>44</sup> See Chapter 8 sec. 48(b) (b).

<sup>45</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 989, 25 U. S. C. 478.

<sup>46</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 987, 25 U. S. C. 474.

<sup>47</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 987, 25 U. S. C. 473. This provision insofar as it promised that the special provisions dealing with the Papago Reservation, which had been in Indian claim since 1849, was later repudiated in private pay by a rider to the Appropriation Act of August 12, 1915, 40 Stat. 871, 995, 25 U. S. C. 476a.

<sup>48</sup> See Act of March 2, 1889, sec. 17, 25 Stat. 888, 894, Act of June 10, 1890, 29 Stat. 821, 884.

<sup>49</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 987, 25 U. S. C. 476.

<sup>50</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 989, 25 U. S. C. 477.

<sup>51</sup> See Chapter 7 sec. 3, Chapter 14 sec. 4.

<sup>52</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 988, 25 U. S. C. 478.

<sup>53</sup> For a holding that the right to reject the entire act included the right to reject the special provisions dealing with the Papago Reservation, see 88 Op. A. G. 131 (1904). Under the original act elections had to be called on the act within 1 year after its approval. By the Act of June 15, 1890, 49 Stat. 878, this period was extended another year. Under the original act a majority of all the Indians entitled to vote was required to render the act inapplicable to a particular reservation. Unreported Op. A. G., April 19, 1935. The amendment above referred to modified this rule so as to require only a majority of those voting in an election in which not less than 50 percent of those entitled to vote actually vote.

Section 19<sup>56</sup> of the act includes definitions of "Indians," "tribes," and "adult Indians." Of these definitions the definition of the term "Indian" is of particular importance.

The term "Indian" as used in this Act shall include all persons of Indian descent who are members of any recognized Indian tribe now under Federal jurisdiction, and all persons who are descendants of such members who were, on June 1, 1918, residing within the present boundaries of any Indian reservation, and shall further include all other persons of one-half or more Indian blood.

Although many provisions of the act as originally enacted did not apply to the Territory of Alaska or the State of Oklahoma, which together accounted for approximately one-half of the Indian population of the United States, experience in the administration of the act and intensive discussion of its provisions in the exempted areas led to the adoption of legislation extending the main provisions of the act, with minor modifications, to Alaska<sup>57</sup> and to Oklahoma.<sup>58</sup>

An analysis of the workings of the Act of June 18, 1894, was published in 1908 by a committee of students of Indian Affairs.<sup>59</sup> The conclusions reached by this committee after an analysis of concrete experiences on typical reservations are worth quoting:

... these concrete experiences point dramatically to the new world of opportunity that has been opened to all Indian tribes by the development of these cardinal principles of present day Indian administration: Indian self-government, the conservation of Indian lands and resources, and socially directed credit. On almost every reservation today, even on reservations that it voted to reject the Indian Reorganization Act, one finds a deep and growing concern for these basic principles, a conscious striving to secure their application to local problems, the beginnings of constructive achievement, and hope for the future which there was once only hopeless regret for the past.

#### INDIAN SELF-GOVERNMENT

The first major move of the present administration in the direction of Indian self-government was a provision in the Pueblo Relief Act of May 31, 1889, prohibiting the Secretary of the Interior from spending monies appropriated under that act for the various Pueblos "without first obtaining the approval of the governing authorities of the Pueblo affected."<sup>60</sup>

The same principle was established on a broader scale by the Indian Reorganization Act of June 18, 1934, which gave to all Indian tribes organizing under it the return of the full power of approval or veto over the disposition of all tribal assets.

<sup>54</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 988, 25 U. S. C. 479. For definition of Indians see Chapter 1, sec. 2.

<sup>55</sup> Act of May 3, 1889, 49 Stat. 1250, 48 U. S. C. 962, 958a, discussed in Chapter 21.

<sup>56</sup> Act of June 26, 1916, 49 Stat. 1967, 25 U. S. C. 501-509, discussed in Chapter 22.

<sup>57</sup> See the New Day for the Indians: A survey of the Working of the Indian Reorganization Act of 1934 (1935), edited by Jay B. Nash, Oliver LaFollette, and W. Carson Ryan, sponsored by Public Affairs: Louis Brandeis, Ruth Benedict, Bruce Bliven, Leonard Bloomfield, F. Roy Buss, Ray A. Brown, Ray Cooper Cole, John M. Cooper George P. Clement, Harold S. Colton, Byron Cummings, William A. Duiant, Ben Dwight, Herbert R. Edwards, Hiram Emerson, Edwin R. Embree, Howard S. Gane, Robert Gossner, Ben Philip Gordon, John P. Hannon, John P. Hinton, M. Raymond Harrington, Melville T. Haskett, Frederick W. Harshbarger, F. W. Hooper, Edgar Howard, Alvin Hildebrand, Albert Ernest Jones, A. V. Kidder, Charles L. Ke, Oliver L. Lange, Robert Landels, Ralph T. Linton, Charles T. Loran, John Towse Matthews, William Gibbs McAdoo, Maurice McElwaine, H. H. McElwaine, Jay B. Nash, William P. Ogburn, Nathan Boni Ventura Oshawa, Robert Redfield, W. Carson Ryan, Lester F. Root, Elizabeth Ripley Sargent, Ernest Thompson Seton, Guy F. Shipley, Frank G. Speck, Vilhjalms Stefansson, Fred M. Steig, Elston Thompson, George C. Vallentyne, Wilson D. Wells, James P. Warburton, and B. D. Wells.



The Indian Reorganization Act further authorized the Indians in tribes to take over, under positive control of their own resources, to carry on tribal enterprises, membership corporations under a gradually vanishing federal supervision.

The law as finally enacted left to the future many grants of power included in the original bill, for which it was felt that the Indians were not yet ready. Thus the power to remove undesirable employees from a reservation, the power to appropriate tribal funds held in the United States, the right and the power to take over services now rendered by Federal Government to individual Indians—such services, for instance, as are connected with education, health, the public and sale of allotments, and the handling of individual Indian money—all were deleted from the original bill.

What was perhaps more important than the specific powers which the act is finally passed, contained upon organized Indian tribes was the solemn pledge contained in the act that in no way would the Federal Government in its down the municipal and economic organizations that should establish themselves under the protection of the act, and that powers vested in the tribes under past laws and treaties would not be diminished without tribal consent.

The principle of Indian self government was carried to a new phase when the Indians themselves were asked to vote on whether or not the law establishing self-governing powers should apply to the different reservations. The great majority of the Indians, on the question voted in favor of the Indian Reorganization Act. In accordance with the expressed desires of tribes originally excluded from the act, its essential principles were extended to Alaska by the act of May 1, 1934, and to Oklahoma by the act of June 26, 1930. Indians numbering 222,211 are now under the act. They are grouped into tribes or bands numbering 206. They represent 88 per cent of the total of Indians in the United States and Alaska.

As of September 1, 1938, 87 tribes, with a population of 99,818 had already adopted constitutions and by-laws under the Indian Reorganization Act. Fifty nine of these have already received charters of incorporation. No tribe or group which adopted the act, or which was brought within the terms of the act without formal vote as in Oklahoma and Alaska, has asked by vote or by majority petition to be relieved of the terms of the act. On the other hand, a number of groups in tribes which once rejected the act have petitioned for a second chance to vote on the ground that their original adverse vote was influenced by misinformation. What the adoption of Indian constitutions has meant in the spiritual regeneration of the Indians, and in its practical more fostered by the concrete experiences related in the first part of this report than by any statistical figures.

One significant change in the direction of Indian self government can best be put in negative terms. During the century from 1840 to 1938 hundreds of laws affecting Indian tribes were enacted and a great part of those laws, perhaps a majority of them, in some way deprived the Indian tribes of rights or possessions they had once enjoyed. Since 1934 no law has been enacted which took from any Indian tribe, against its will, any of its liberties or any of its possessions.

#### CONSERVATION OF NATURAL RESOURCES

During the years from the passage of the General Allotment Act of 1887 until the beginning of the present administration, Indian land holdings were reduced from approximately 137,000,000 acres to less than 50,000,000 acres. Of the area that remained in Indian ownership a large part was desert or mountainside. The grazing land and farming land still owned by the Indians had seriously deteriorated as a result of overgrazing, the plowing of the soil, and the removal of timber, the plowing of the soil that should never have been broken, reckless timber-cutting and the emigration of the topsoil by various water and aerial forces to points east and west.

These figures represented stark tragedy for a people whose economy was based in the soil, whose reverence for the soil was so deep that they never fully grasped the white man's concept of buying and selling land. Little groups of Indians for whom the process of land loss had

went to its final end, the advance guard of an army moving towards Indian lands, could be found in rural shams and town garbage dumps, living in the depths of squalor and hopelessness.

Against this background the government's present conservation policies stand out in sharp relief. The loss of Indian lands through sales to whites was stopped, except for a few emergency cases, by an order of Commissioner Collier, approved by Secretary Ickes August 11, 1933, and by the general prohibition against further alienation and leasing of sales of restricted land which is contained in the Indian Reorganization Act. Guarantees against alienation of tribal lands have been written into every tribal constitution and charter.

Between March 1931 and December 1937 the total of Indian land holdings included by approximately 2,780, 000 acres. The Indian Reorganization Act authorized an appropriation of \$2,000,000 a year for land purchase. In the four years following the passage of the act a total of \$2,940,000 was actually appropriated and contracts involving an additional \$400,000 were authorized. This money was used to acquire 216,310 acres (as of December 1, 1937) for Indian use. During the same period an additional \$4,207,000 was added to Indian reservations, under the authority which the Indian Reorganization Act confers upon the Secretary of the Interior to restore lands which have been taken away from the Indian tribes as "surplus" lands wherever such lands are still held by the Federal Government. Restoration of total area of approximately 6,000,000 acres is under consideration. Special legislation enacted under the present administration amounts for the addition of another 1,208,808 acres to the Indian domain. An additional acre of approximately a million acres has been included in submarginal land purchases for Indians made by the Resettlement Administration in consultation with the Interior Department.

Meanwhile, vigorous measures were being taken to stop overgrazing. The soil of the Indian country was being rebuilt through an extensive program of water development and flood control, a program which was carried out by the Indians themselves on the basis of financial aid from the Public Works Administration, the Soil Conservation Service, the Civil Works Administration, and the Indian Division of the Civilian Conservation Corps. All timber cutting on Indian lands (except in a small problem area in Washington State) was being put upon a perpetual yield basis. Oil development on a scale of reservations where oil has been found was being strictly controlled in the interests of a national conservation policy. In short, the Indian estate that a few years ago was being dissipated and destroyed is being conserved, improved, and improved for the benefit of the Indian people today and for the unborn Indian generations.

#### ECONOMIC PLANNING

Economic planning is no new thing on Indian reservations. The Blackfeet adopted a five-year development plan in 1921, and it was later copied on many other reservations. What is new is the economic planning under the present administration—that whereas formerly the Indian Service planned for Indians and dealt with Indians as individuals, the Indian Service now yields to the tribes that have incorporated under the Indian Reorganization Act a large share of responsibility for developing and administering a reservation economic plan. On several reservations, new tribal enterprises, suited to the resources of the reservation and the interests of the Indians, form an integral part of the reservation plan. On several reservations, cooperative cattle associations, cooperative stores, and other forms of cooperative enterprise have been developed. On most reservations economic planning is still entirely in terms of individual programs, but even here the control of credit, upon which economic planning depends, has become a collective responsibility of the tribe.

Under the Reorganization Act \$4,000,000 has already been appropriated for loans to incorporated Indian tribes. These credit funds are being expended almost entirely for capital investment in the form of agricultural machinery, farm buildings, and other improvements, live-

stock, saw mills, and fishing equipment. This credit program, if it is not conducted by a sound land program, and if it does not become too deeply entangled in departmental red tape and remote control, is likely to establish for the first time a stable basis of economic independence for tribes many of which have lived in the depths of poverty, or at best kept alive on the edge of starvation by income from annuities, land sales, and leases of land.

#### WHAT REMAINS TO BE DONE

One who seeks to achieve a just appraisal of the record in the field of Indian affairs must conclude that substantial progress has been made in the removal of prejudices and in the achievement of a more nationalistic attitude in policy. The progress achieved is particularly creditable when one realizes the obstacles that were met: the opposition of vested interests, the well-earned suspicion or hostility among the Indians themselves in the face of new promises of better life, the entrenched habits of a civil service trained in disrespect for Indians and Indian ways, and the tremendous inertia which governmental institutions, in general legal and procedural, always offer against fundamental reforms.

Taking account of these obstacles and appreciating if their full value the gains achieved, we must nevertheless recognize that the administration of Indian affairs is not yet something of which white Americans can be proud. The achievement of the present policy represents only the beginning of a liberal Indian program.

Progress in the direction of Indian self-government has been striking. Unfortunately this progress remains far from the most part in its promissory stages. The vital question is: Will the promises of self-government embodied in the Indian Reorganization Act and in the tribal constitutions and charters actually be fulfilled or will these promises be treated like so many earlier promises of the United States, embodied in solemn treaties with the Indian tribes?

Already Congress has cut down the appropriations which the Indian Reorganization Act authorized for land purchase, for credit for land funds, and for the expense of tribal organization. Already Congress has shown a disposition to ignore the veto power which it conferred upon organized tribes in the expenditure of tribal funds.

Finally, it is important that the measures of self-government already achieved be regarded as a beginning and an earnest of good faith rather than as a final goal. The organized Indian tribes, in carrying through the program they have begun, will meet situations in which additional powers, legal and financial, are essential to success. They need sympathy and understanding in their struggle to achieve these further powers of self-government.

The problem of land is still the greatest unsolved problem of Indian administration. The condition of allotted lands in herdership status grows more complicated each year. Commissioner Collier supplied the House Appropriations Committee a year ago with examples showing probable and administrative expenditures upon herdership lands totaling four or five times the value of the land, and under existing law these costs are destined to increase indefinitely. Responsibility lies with Congress and the administration to work out a practical solution to this problem, either in terms of corporate ownership of lands, or through some modification of the existing allotment system. (Pp. 20-24)

Following the passage of the Wheeler-Howard or Indian Reorganization Act, Congress made another effort to remedy old wrongs in the Act of August 27, 1937<sup>42</sup> dealing with the problem of Indian arts and crafts. For decades the Indian Bureau had discouraged the practices and conditions out of which Indian

arts and crafts had emerged. The substitution of state products for native products, outside of the field of agricultural production, had been a continuing standard of Indian Service policy for more than a century. By the act establishing the Indian Arts and Crafts Board, Congress gave encouragement and protection to a movement already started by traders, artists, and Indians for the revival of native forms of artistic and craft production. The board established in this measure was authorized to engage in research and experimentation, to establish market contacts, to aid in securing financial assistance for the production and sale of Indian products, and to create government trade marks for Indian products. A full measure of control over the use of such trade marks was conferred upon the Indian Arts and Crafts Board, and criminal penalties were provided for those imitating or counterfeiting such marks, or advertising products as Indian products without justification.<sup>43</sup>

Another effort by Congress to remedy an established wrong is found in the Act of May 20, 1936.<sup>44</sup> This act exempted from taxation restricted Indian lands which had been purchased out of trust or restricted Indian funds, on the understanding that such funds would be nontransferable—an understanding which came to grief when either court decisions on the subject were reversed.<sup>45</sup>

The Act of May 11, 1938,<sup>46</sup> superseded earlier legislation which had given the Secretary of the Interior wide powers to dispose of minerals on Indian reservations to prospectors and lessees, and established a comprehensive system of mineral leasing on Indian tribal lands, giving primary power to leave to the Indian council or government, subject to departmental approval except where provision has been made, by the terms of tribal charters, for dispensing with requirements of departmental approval.<sup>47</sup>

Finally, the legislation already commented upon<sup>48</sup> looking to the break up and distribution of tribal funds in the United States Treasury was repealed by section 2 of the Act of June 24, 1938.<sup>49</sup> Section 1 of this act rescinded the laws under which tribal funds may be deposited by administrative officials.<sup>50</sup>

The foregoing summary of legislation enacted during the decade from 1930 to 1939 covers, of course, only the more important measures of general and permanent application. It is fair to say, however, that the principles embodied in these measures were at the same time applied in a much larger way of legislation dealing with particular tribes and areas.

<sup>42</sup> See Sen. Rept., No. 900, 74th Cong., 1st sess., May 14, 1936 and Rept. Comm. on Indian Affairs, and Chaffin to Hon. Harold L. Ickes on S. 2201, incorporated therein.

<sup>43</sup> 49 Stat. 1542, amended by Act of May 10, 1937, 60 Stat. 188, 27 U. S. C. 412a.

<sup>44</sup> See H. Rept., No. 2388, 74th Cong., 2d sess., April 18, 1936, on H. R. 7704. See also Sen. Rept. No. 844, 76th Cong., 1st sess., April 12, 1937, on S. 170, under the Act of June 30, 1936, wherein it is said:

The void net . . . was designed to bring tribal and Indian business to Indians, who by failure to pay taxes have lost or now are in danger of losing lands purchased for them under previous advice and guidance of the Federal Government; which losses were not the fault of the Indians, but were purchased with the understanding and belief on their part and induced by representations of the Government that the lands be nontransferable after purchase.

<sup>45</sup> See Chapter 13, sec. 3D.

<sup>46</sup> 52 Stat. 247, 25 U. S. C. 896 of arg. See Chapter 15, sec. 19.

<sup>47</sup> See Sen. Rept. No. 985, 76th Cong., 1st sess., July 22, 1937, on S. 2689.

<sup>48</sup> See sec. 16, supra.

<sup>49</sup> 52 Stat. 1037, 25 U. S. C. 102a.

<sup>50</sup> See Sen. Rept., No. 631, 75th Cong., 1st sess., May 10, 1937 on S. 2163.

## SECTION 17 INDIAN APPROPRIATION ACTS 1789 TO 1939

Appropriation legislation plays a prominent role in Indian law. Not only does one find a large part of the substantive law governing Indian affairs hidden away in the interstices of appropriation acts, but frequently the actual appropriations and the conditions prescribed for the expenditure of money are given considerable weight, at least administratively, in determining the rights and powers of administrative officials. Thus, for example, the fact that Congress has for many decades appropriated money for Indian judges and Indian policemen, has commonly been viewed as providing congressional authorization for the activities of these officials, although there is no substantive federal law expressly recognizing or conferring such authority.

We have already noted in the preceding sections of this chapter the more important of the provisions of general and permanent legislation which are found among the sections and provisions of appropriation laws. In other chapters attention is paid to the significance of appropriations in various specific problems of federal Indian law.<sup>21</sup> For the present it will be enough to offer a few suggestions as to a task for those who in looking down some problem of federal Indian law must go through the relevant appropriation acts.

Appropriations affecting Indian affairs are found in appropriation acts for the Interior Department, for the War Department, the Department of Commerce, the Treasury Department, the Department of Agriculture, the Department of State, the Department of Justice, and various other agencies. Among the regular departments, only those of Labor and Navy appear to be immune from provisions affecting Indians. However, the main stream of Indian appropriation legislation has followed a narrower course. It begins with appropriations "for defraying the expenses of the Indian department."<sup>22</sup> The first such general appropriation appears in the Appropriation Act of February 28, 1791,<sup>23</sup> entitled "An Act making appropriations for the support of Government for the year one thousand seven hundred and ninety three." A year later the item is repeated in "An Act making appropriations for the support of the Military establishment of the United States, for the year one thousand seven hundred and ninety four."<sup>24</sup> Thereafter the annual appropriation act for the military establishment, or in some cases, for the military and naval establishments, contains a regular appropriation, increasing year by year, "for the Indian department."

Apart from these appropriations for the Indian department, separate appropriations were made, from time to time, for the expenses of wars against Indians,<sup>25</sup> the expenses of treaties with

Indians<sup>26</sup> (which frequently included considerable gifts), and expenses of carrying into effect treaty provisions.<sup>27</sup>

At first these appropriation acts for the carrying out of treaty promises include permanent appropriations, either for a term of years or "forever."<sup>28</sup> Later, the practice of making annual appropriations to carry out the terms of Indian treaties was substituted.<sup>29</sup>

In 1826 Congress began to enter special appropriation acts for the Indian department.<sup>30</sup> This practice continued until 1909. After 1826 one finds in the appropriations for the military establishment only incidental references to expenses involved in the management of Indian affairs, such as, for example, the expense of maintaining Indian prisoners, the salaries of Indian scouts and other strictly military matters. The last regular appropriation act for the "Indian department" was the Act of March 3, 1899.<sup>31</sup>

In the following year the appropriation act<sup>32</sup> refers in its title to the "Bureau of Indian Affairs," a name which had indeed been used for nearly a century. Regular appropriation acts for the Bureau of Indian Affairs continued until the Act of March 3, 1921.<sup>33</sup> Since the Appropriation Act of May 24, 1922,<sup>34</sup> appropriations for Indian affairs have been made within the regular Interior Department appropriation act.

Although the practice of inserting the year's crop of Indian legislation at the end of annual Indian appropriation acts was abandoned during the first decade of the century,<sup>35</sup> and parliamentary efforts have been made to ban the inclusion of items of substantive permanent legislation in appropriation acts during recent years, such items continue to crop up from time to time.<sup>36</sup> Even when completely stripped of provisions of general substantive legislation, the Indian provisions of the current Interior Department appropriation acts present so complicated a picture of layers upon layers of amendments to the treaties and laws of the past that it is difficult to read one of these statutes intelligently without a comprehensive historical perspective upon the course of Indian legislation. Efforts in recent years to simplify the form of these appropriation acts have been vigorous but unavailing.<sup>37</sup>

<sup>21</sup> See, for instance, Act of August 20, 1789, 1 Stat. 64, Act of July 22, 1790, 1 Stat. 136, Act of March 4, 1793, 1 Stat. 438.

<sup>22</sup> See for example, Act of March 4, 1806, 2 Stat. 838.

<sup>23</sup> See for example, Act of March 4, 1806, 2 Stat. 389, Act of April 21, 1808, 2 Stat. 407, Act of March 4, 1817, 3 Stat. 808, Act of March 9, 1819, 3 Stat. 517, Act of May 20, 1826, 4 Stat. 181.

<sup>24</sup> See for example, Act of March 2, 1827, 4 Stat. 242, Act of May 24, 1828, 4 Stat. 300, Act of March 2, 1829, 4 Stat. 361.

<sup>25</sup> See for example, Act of March 25, 1826, 4 Stat. 150, Act of March 4, 1827, 4 Stat. 217, Act of May 9, 1828, 4 Stat. 207.

<sup>26</sup> 45 Stat. 781.

<sup>27</sup> Act of April 4, 1910, 36 Stat. 269.

<sup>28</sup> 41 Stat. 1235.

<sup>29</sup> 43 Stat. 552.

<sup>30</sup> See for example the Act of June 21, 1906, 34 Stat. 825.

<sup>31</sup> See, for example, 1909, 35 Stat. 819.

<sup>32</sup> See the Act of March 2, 1914, 17 Stat. 1422 (providing, for "alternate budget").

<sup>33</sup> See particularly Chapter 12.

<sup>34</sup> 1 Stat. 826, 326.

<sup>35</sup> Act of March 21, 1794, 1 Stat. 348.

<sup>36</sup> See, for instance, Act of February 11, 1791, 1 Stat. 190.

# CHAPTER 5

## THE SCOPE OF FEDERAL POWER OVER INDIAN AFFAIRS

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 Sources of federal power.....	59	Section 9 Administrative power—Tribal lands.....	103
Section 2 Congressional power—Treaty-making.....	91	<i>A</i> Acquisition.....	103
Section 3 Congressional power—Commerce with Indian tribes.....	91	<i>B</i> Leaving.....	104
Section 4 Congressional power—National defense.....	93	<i>C</i> Alienation.....	104
Section 5 Congressional power—United States territory and property.....	91	Section 10 Administrative power—Tribal lands.....	105
<i>A</i> Tribal lands.....	91	Section 11 Administrative power—Individual lands.....	107
<i>B</i> Tribal funds.....	97	<i>I</i> Appraisal of allotments.....	107
<i>C</i> Individual lands.....	97	<i>B</i> Release of restrictions.....	108
<i>D</i> Individual funds.....	98	<i>C</i> Probate of estates.....	110
Section 6 Congressional power—Alienage.....	96	<i>D</i> Issuance of rights-of-way.....	111
Section 7 Administrative power—Introduction.....	100	<i>E</i> Leaving.....	111
Section 8 The range of administrative powers.....	100	Section 12 Administrative power—Individual lands.....	113
		Section 13 Administrative power—Alienage.....	114
		<i>A</i> Authority over enrollment.....	114
		<i>B</i> Remedies.....	114

### SECTION 1 SOURCES OF FEDERAL POWER

Since the National Government derives its sovereignty from powers delegated to it by the states, the Constitution of the United States forms the basis of federal control of Indian affairs.

The principal sources of congressional authority over Indian affairs are summarized by a leading authority in these terms:

"What is the constitutional basis of the national authority over the Indians? The national government is one of powers delegated by the states, yet Indians are mentioned in the U. S. Constitution only twice—once to exclude 'Indians not taxed' (a phrase never made explicit, defined, but probably meaning, today, Indians resident on reservations, that is, on land not fixed by the states) from the count for determining representation in the lower house of Congress, and again to empower Congress to regulate 'commerce with foreign nations, among the several states, and with the Indian tribes.' This commerce power is in effect the constitutional basis for Congressional action concerning the Indians, as it is, also, so far as appropriations for Indians are concerned, the power of Congress to raise and spend money 'for the general welfare.' But the regulation of Indians from Washington has done much farther. Much power has been exercised because the whole Indian country, except the few eastern reservations, was formerly part of the national domain, with exclusive title and sovereignty (except to the extent it was recognized to be restricted by Indian occupancy) in the national government. In this respect, the reservations within the bounds of the original thirteen states, having a different history, are probably subject to a different legal regime. . . . The setting up of states in the territory once governed only from Washington has not affected the title of the nation to these lands. This ownership of the land supports a mass of Congressional and departmental regulations of land tenure on the reservations west of the

Alleghenies, but even this, added to the express powers of Congress already mentioned, does not sustain the full extent of the national control of Indians wherever they are finally organized. The chief foundation appears to have been the treaty-making power of the President and Senate with its corollary of Congressional power to implement by legislation the treaties made. The colonies before 1776 (and the original states thereafter) often dealt with the Indian tribes through political agreements. When in 1787 the Constitution made exclusive grant of treaty power to the national government, these precedents formed a strong basis for national dealings with Indian tribes, especially those beyond the bounds of any state. Indistinctly for nearly 100 years the nation treated with the Indians pursuant to the constitutional forms that were used in dealing with foreign states. And by a broad reading of these treaties the national government obtained from the Indians themselves authority to legislate for them to carry out the purpose of the treaties.

In view of the express grants of the commerce power and the expenditure for the general welfare power, and the fact that the greater Indian tribes lived on the national domain and not within any state (until the west was piecemeal admitted to statehood) and of the custom of dealing with Indian tribes by treaty, the United States Supreme Court has never found, so far as I can learn, that any Congressional regulation of Indians has been beyond the reach of national power. Indeed the net result is the creation of a new power, a power to regulate Indians."

(Pp. 80-81.)

In addition to the constitutional sources of authority over commerce with Indian tribes, expenditures for the general

<sup>1</sup> Rice, *The Portion of the American Indian in the Law of the United States* (1884), 10 *T Comp Leg* 78.

\*Art. I, sec. 8, cl. 1.

<sup>2</sup>This limitation upon federal power to situations involving the existence of a tribe is emphasized by the Supreme Court in the case of *United States v. Four Three Gallons of Whiskey*, 34 U. S. 158 (1870).

As long as these Indians remain a distinct people with an existing tribal organization, recognized by the political department



shackles imposed on this power in the confederation are discarded. (P. 519)

Whatever view be taken of the possibility or danger of federal power arising from "necessity," it is clear that the powers mentioned by Chief Justice Marshall proved to be so extensive that it was left the Federal Government's powers over Indian affairs are in fact the same powers over non-Indian, and therefore one is practically justified in characterizing such federal power as "plenary." This does not mean, however, that congressional power over Indians is not subject to express limitations upon con-

gressional power, such is the Bill of Rights.<sup>1</sup> In the pages that follow we shall attempt to survey the scope and limits of congressional power over Indian affairs. In later portions of this chapter we shall consider the secondary question of how far such power has been or may be, validly delegated to administrative officials.

<sup>1</sup>Chief Justice Fuller, of the Supreme Court in the case of *Stephens v. Block*, 190 U. S. 439, 475 (1903) said that Congress possesses plenary power of legislation in regard to Indians but "subject only to the Constitution of the United States."

## SECTION 2 CONGRESSIONAL POWER—TREATY-MAKING

The first and chief foundation for the broad powers of the Federal Government over the Indians is the treaty-making provision<sup>2</sup> which received its most extensive early use in the negotiation of treaties with the Indians in tribes. Beginning with an Indian treaty submitted to the Senate by President Washington on May 27, 1789, the President and the Senate entered into some thirty relations with nearly every tribe and band within the territorial limits of the United States.<sup>3</sup>

To carry out the obligations and execute the powers derived from these treaties became a principal responsibility of Con-

<sup>2</sup>Earlier treaties under the Articles of Confederation are discussed in Chapter 9, see 4B.

<sup>3</sup>See *Meritt v. United States*, 101 U. S. 297, 302 (1890).

<sup>4</sup>The United States assumed many obligations towards the Indians including the following:

"To secure them in the title and possession of their lands in the exercise of self-government and to defend them from domestic and foreign enemies and provide adequate

arms" which entered many statutes relating to or supplementing treaties.<sup>5</sup>

The scope of the obligations assumed and powers conferred upon Congress by treaties with Indian tribes has been discussed in Chapter 3 of this volume and need not be reexamined at this point.

In the fulfillment of these obligations the necessarily reserved (17 U. S. 171) and (18 U. S. 171) Comm. Ind. Aff. 23d Cong. 1st sess., May 20, 1834.

The view that tribal power has been contained upon the Federal Government in treaty is upheld in *United States v. Forty-Three Gallons of Whiskey*, 9 U. S. 145 (1803).

Act of January 9, 1797, 3 Stat. 137, 27 U. S. C. 172, 253, 277, 104, relative to the disposition of goods of Indians ceded to the United States by treaty with the Indians. Also see Act of January 17, 1800, 2 Stat. 6, Act of March 9, 1802, 2 Stat. 139, Act of May 24, 1800, 2 Stat. 431, Act of June 30, 1811, 1 Stat. 729. And see Chapter 1, sec. 1, 3. Numerous appropriations have been made to fulfill treaty stipulations with the various Indian tribes. See Chapter 4, sec. 17.

## SECTION 3 CONGRESSIONAL POWER—COMMERCE WITH INDIAN TRIBES

The power of Congress to regulate commerce with Indian tribes has for its field of action the entire nation, not just the Indian country. Commerce with tribal members anywhere, even wholly within a state, may be the subject of congressional regulation. While Congress has not usually exercised such sweeping regulation, its power has been completely demonstrated in the Indian liquor laws, which constituted one of the early examples of federal control over tribal Indians.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>5</sup>These laws are discussed in Chapter 37. One of the reasons for the drastic liquor prohibitions promulgated in sections 20 and 21 of the Trade and Intercourse Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 720, 712, 73d (R. S. § 2141, 26 U. S. C. 251, R. S. § 2170, 26 U. S. C. 223, amended by Act of May 21, 1834, 48 Stat. 787) was to enable administrative officials to prevent the manufacture of whiskey by Indians, who believed that they had the right to do as they pleased in their own country and acknowledged no restraint beyond the laws of their own tribe. 11 Rep. No. 474, Comm. Ind. Aff., 23d Cong., 1st sess., May 20, 1834, p. 103.

<sup>6</sup>In *United States v. Johnson*, 3 Wall. 407 (1837) the Supreme Court held that Congress could forbid the sale of liquor to an Indian in charge of an agent in a state and outside of an Indian reservation. The Court declared:

"Commerce," says Chief Justice Marshall in the opinion in *Gooden v. Ogden*, to which we so often turn with profit when this clause of the Constitution is under consideration, "commerce, undoubtedly is traffic, but is something more; it is intercourse." The law before us professes to regulate traffic and intercourse with the Indian tribes. It manifestly does both. It relates to buying and selling and exchanging commodities, which is the essence of all commerce, and it regulates the intercourse between the citizens of the United States and those tribes, which is another branch of commerce, and a very important one.

If the act under consideration is a regulation of commerce as it undoubtedly is, does it regulate that kind of commerce which is placed within the control of Congress by the Constitution? The words of that instrument are: "Congress shall have power to regulate commerce with foreign nations, and among the several States, and with the Indian tribes." Commerce with foreign nations, without doubt, means commerce between citizens of the

The commerce clause<sup>7</sup> is the only grant of power in the Federal Constitution which mentions Indians. The congressional power over commerce with the Indian tribes plus the treaty-making power is much broader than the power over commerce between states.

United States and citizens or subjects of foreign governments is individual. And so commerce with the Indian tribes, means commerce with the individual companies, those tribes. The act before us declares this power, kind of traffic or commerce, and therefore comes within the term.

Is there anything in the fact that this power is to be exercised within the limits of a state which renders it not a regulation of interstate commerce?

In the same opinion to which we have just before referred, Judge Marshall, in speaking of the power to regulate commerce with foreign states, says: "The power does not stop at the jurisdictional limits of the several States. It would be a very useless power if it could not pass those lines." "If Congress has power to regulate it, that power must be exercised wherever the subject exists." It follows from these propositions which seem to be incontrovertible that if commerce or traffic, or intercourse is carried on with an Indian tribe, or with a number of such tribe it is subject to be regulated by Congress, although within the limits of a State. The locality of the traffic can have nothing to do with the power. The right to exercise it in reference to any Indian tribe, or any person who is a member of such tribe, is absolute without reference to the locality of the traffic or the locality of the tribe, or of the member of the tribe with whom it is carried on. It is not, however, intended by these remarks to imply that this clause of the Constitution authorizes Congress to regulate any other commerce originated and carried within the limits of a single State than commerce with the Indian tribes. (Pp. 417-418).

Article I, sec. 8, of the Constitution empowers Congress "To regulate commerce with foreign nations, and among the several States, and with the Indian tribes." See Chapter 10 and 17.

See 1 Op. A. G. 645 (1894). *Privates and Men in the Commerce Clause of the Federal Constitution* (1898) describe the purpose of this commerce clause as follows:

"The purpose with which this power was given to Congress was not merely to prevent burdensome conflicting or dis-

Chief Justice Marshall in the case of *Cherokee Nation v. Georgia* said that it was the intention of the Constitutional Convention

to give the whole power of managing these affairs to the government about to be instituted, the convention conferred in explicit and omitted these qualifications which emphasized the exercise of it, is limited in the confederation. (P. 1-2)

In *United States v. Forty Three Gallons of Whiskey*,<sup>1</sup> the Supreme Court declared

Under the articles of confederation the United States had the power of regulating the trade and intercourse, all affairs with the Indians and members of any of the States, provided that the legislative right of a State within its own limits be not infringed or violated. Of necessity these limitations reduced the power of interference to this. This was seen by the convention which it made the constitution and Congress now has the exclusive and absolute power to regulate commerce with the Indian tribes—its power is broad and is free from restrictions as to the regulation of commerce with foreign nations. (P. 34)

The committee claims in the field of Indian affairs was for many decades broadly interpreted to include not only transactions by which Indians could be disposed of land or other property or exchange for money, liquor, munitions or other goods, but also aspects of intercourse which had little or no relation to commerce, such as travel, crimes by whites against Indians in

communities, State legislation but to prevent fraud and injustice upon the Indians, to protect an uneducated people from wrongs to uneducated whites, and to guard the whole population from the danger of savage attacks.

A grant made with such a purpose must convey a different power from one whose purpose was to insure the freedom of commerce. Congress has in the field of the Indians prohibited trade in certain articles, it has limited the right to trade to persons licensed under Federal law, and in many ways restricted a greater control than would be possible over other branches of commerce. (P. 112)

131 F. (1871)

1911 S. 188 (1871). Also see Article IX of the Articles of Confederation.

See Chapter 17 and Chapter 18, sec. 2. See also *United States v. Arce*, 211 U. S. 701 (1916). *Patterson v. United States*, 232 U. S. 478 (1914). *Mc Kinnon* has said

\* \* \* Commerce with the Indian tribes has been construed to mean particularly trade and intercourse with the Indians, either as to the tribes or individuals. (Federal Statutes of American Indians & the People, 1792-1914, P. 2, 212-213)

This regulation included the fixing of the prices of goods sold to the Indians. Act of April 19, 1796, sec. 4, 1 Stat. 322-323. Licensed traders were prohibited from purchasing from Indians or receiving in barter or trade from them certain articles such as gun or other articles commonly used in hunting, any instrument of husbandry or cooking, iron or the kind usually obtained by the Indians in their intercourse with white people, or any article of clothing, eyeglass, shoes or furs. \* \* \* or any horse. Act of May 19, 1796, sec. 9, 1 Stat. 401-402. But similar provisions were Act of April 21, 1906, sec. 7, 2 Stat. 402-404, Act of March 1, 1799, sec. 9, 1 Stat. 711-716. See 4 of the Act of July 26, 1856, 14 Stat. 277-280 which requires traders on Indian reservations to furnish money bond, is also applicable to Indians. *McKinnon* Vol. I, 21 November 20, 1914.

The Act of June 30, 1854, 1 Stat. 720 which forbids the liquor for the present to the localities authorized the President to prohibit trade with an Indian tribe "whenever, in his opinion the public interest may require." Act of 25 U. S. C. 263, R. 4, 211-212. The Chief Court for the Ohio District in *United States v. Evans*, 2 Fed. Cir. No. 24,792 (C. C. Ohio 1943) said,

\* \* \* The exercise of the power to prohibit any intercourse with the Indians, except under a license, must be considered with in the power to regulate commerce with them in such regulation could not be the result of a ban on intercourse thus restricted. (P. 421)

For example see Act of May 19, 1796, sec. 7, 1 Stat. 366, 470

Indians against white. Survey of land, trespass and settlement by whites in the Indian country, "the buying of boundaries," and the transacting of articles, services, and money by the Federal Government.

The admission of a new State was held not to affect laws for Indians, the sale of liquor to Indians living on the territory from which the State was formed.

The Federal Government may constitutionally forbid the sale of liquor in an Indian reservation, in Indian reservation in order that Indians will not be tempted by the close proximity of this forbidden beverage.

The Supreme Court in the case of *Dick v. United States*,<sup>2</sup> sustained Federal liquor statutes protecting against the introduction

— See Act of July 22, 1790, sec. 5, 1 Stat. 137-138. Act of March 1, 1791, sec. 1, 5 Stat. 11. 1 Stat. 129 of 1790. Act of May 19, 1796, sec. 4, 1 Stat. 400-470. Act of March 1, 1799, sec. 2, 5 Stat. 711-714. 1 Stat. 715. Act of March 1, 1802, sec. 4, 2 Stat. 139-141. Act of June 30, 1854, sec. 27, 1 Stat. 729, 730. Subsequent statutes, agents and subagents were empowered to punish the intent and first of the Indians, a class of committing any crimes and of other persons who may have committed crimes or offenses within a State or territory and fled into the Indian country. Act of June 30, 1854, sec. 19, 4 Stat. 729-732. The President was authorized to suspend other means of securing the arrest and trial of these Indians, including the employment of the military force on the United States.

— The survey of lands belonging to or reserved or granted by the United States to any Indian tribe was made a crime. Act of May 19, 1796, sec. 5, 1 Stat. 400-470. Also see Act of March 1, 1799, sec. 5, 1 Stat. 711-715. Act of March 1, 1802, sec. 4, 2 Stat. 139-141. 1 Stat. 400-470. Act of March 1, 1799, sec. 5, 1 Stat. 711-714. Act of March 1, 1802, sec. 4, 2 Stat. 139-141. The Act of March 10, 1843, sec. 2, 1 Stat. 730-731. 1 Stat. 417-418. 1 Stat. 419. 1 Stat. 420. The President was authorized to remove from the Indian country all persons found contrary to law, and authorized the President to direct the military force to be employed in such removal. The President was also authorized (see 21) to employ the military force to drive off persons making settlements on any lands belonging, secured or granted by treaty with the United States to any Indian tribe. 18 U. S. C. 2318-2319, 5 U. S. C. 150. On the removal of passengers to enter the Indian Territory see Chapter 1, sec. 1, in 17, Chapter 4, sec. 5 in 7.

With Trade and Intercourse Act of May 19, 1796, sec. 1, 20, 1 Stat. 401-474 provides for the making of the boundaries lines drawn in the acts and treaties between the United States and various Indian tribes. Also see Act of March 30, 1802, sec. 1, 2 Stat. 139.

"Money was often appropriated for allowances for agents and for the purpose of trading with the Indian nations. Act of April 18, 1790, sec. 7, 1 Stat. 452-453. Also see Act of March 1, 1790, 1 Stat. 443. Act of March 1, 1791, sec. 1, 2 Stat. 544. The President was empowered to furnish annually supplies of machinery and tools, and money to the Indians. Act of March 1, 1793, sec. 9, 1 Stat. 322-323. Act of March 30, 1802, sec. 1, 2 Stat. 139-141.

1. *See* *Part II* (1871) 225 U. S. 611 (1912). A decision by Indians may be qualified by a stipulation that the land shall continue to be under the liquor prohibition laws through various State boundaries. See *Plantation v. United States*, 227 U. S. 671 (1912).

*United States v. Forty Three Gallons of Whiskey*, 9 U. S. 188 (1871). The Supreme Court in the case of *Johann v. Hendrix*, 284 U. S. 122 (1914), said

"That it is within the constitutional power of Congress to prohibit the manufacture, introduction, or sale of intoxicants upon Indian lands, including not only lands reserved for them upon special occasions, but also lands outside of the reservations, in which they may occasionally visit, and that this may be done, even with respect to lands lying within the bounds of a State, in proportion to the thoroughly established and upon grounds so recently discussed, that the Government has the power to regulate the introduction of liquor into Indian lands. *United States v. Forty Three Gallons of Whiskey*, 9 U. S. 188-191, 197. *Dick v. United States*, 208 U. S. 340 (1902) 438-439."

— 208 U. S. 340 (1905). Congress has power to prohibit the sale of liquor to Indians living on land owned in fee by their tribe (*United States v. Sandborn*, 241 U. S. 25 (1911)), and the introduction into an Indian reservation from a point within the state in which the reservation

tion of intoxicants, for 25 years has been tried by, as well as funds allotted to, the Six Tribes Indians.

If Congress has the power in the case we have just cited decides, to punish the sale of liquor anywhere to an individual member of an Indian tribe who caused it also subject to forfeiture liquor introduced for an unlawful purpose into territory in proximity to that where the Indians live? There is no reason for the distinction and is there can be no divided authority on the subject and duty to them, one regard for their material and moral well being would require us to impose further legislative restrictions, should equally extend to their restrictions be used to curb on the liquor traffic with them. (P. 277)

The power over liquor traffic is not unlimited. The Supreme Court in *Perry v. United States*, said

It was suggested though interested Congress is not involved if used *Stevens v. Wright*, 229 U. S. 226 (1911). Also see *United States v. Holloman*, 216 U. S. 530 (1915). Robert C. Brown, The Privilege of Indian Property (1911), 15 Minn. L. Rev. 152. 222 U. S. 478 (1911).

## SECTION 4 CONGRESSIONAL POWER—NATIONAL DEFENSE

Although comparatively little has been written about the war powers of Congress,<sup>1</sup> and the Indian, these powers underlie much of the federal power exercised over Indian land and Indians during the early history of the Republic. In international law conquest brings legal power to govern.

At least 1,012 statutes, public and private, have been enacted by Congress to deal with matters arising out of Indian warfare.

When the Constitution was adopted, the chief mode of dealing with Indians was warfare. Accordingly Indian affairs were entrusted to the War Department by the Act of August 7, 1789,<sup>2</sup> the first law of Congress relating to Indians.

The Congressional power "To provide for the common defense" of the United States<sup>3</sup> was authorized by the Act of September 29, 1789,<sup>4</sup> which authorized the President to call into service from time to time such part of the militia of the states as he may judge necessary for the purpose of protecting the inhabitants of the frontiers of the United States from the hostile incursions of the Indians.<sup>5</sup> Many other early statutes indicate the seriousness with which Congress considered the danger of Indian invasion. Such laws authorize an appropriation for "preventing peace with the Indian tribes,"<sup>6</sup> the raising of three regiments which shall be discharged as soon as the United States shall be at peace with the Indian tribes,<sup>7</sup> and mustering the militia to repel "imminent danger of invasion from any foreign nation or Indian tribe."<sup>8</sup> Some early repres-

As the power is limited only by the presence of the Indians and their status as wards of the Government it must be conceded that it does not go beyond what is reasonably essential to their protection and that, to be effective, its exercise must not be purely punitive, but founded upon some reasonable basis. Thus a prohibition like that now before us, if covering an entire State when there were only a few Indian wards in a single county, undoubtedly would be condemned as arbitrary. And a prohibition valid in the beginning, doubtless would become nugatory when in recent times the Indians affected were completely emancipated from tribal kinship and control. A different view in cultural case would involve an impossible concentration upon a power obviously residing in the State. On the other hand, it must also be conceded that in determining what is reasonably essential to the protection of the Indians, Congress is invested with a wide discretion and its action unless purely punitive, must be accepted and given full effect by the courts. (P. 486)

sions of civil liberties sprang from attempts to interfere with the Indians.<sup>9</sup>

The Act of July 26, 1867,<sup>10</sup> authorizes the appointment of a commission composed of three general and four civilians to conclude peace with hostile Indian tribes in the path of the proposed railroads. Provision is made on the event of failure of the commission for the services of mounted volunteers, not exceeding 10,000, for the suppression of Indian hostilities.<sup>11</sup> Military campaigns were frequently waged against Indians, including expeditions of detachments of militia<sup>12</sup> to treatments carrying on wars against Indian tribes.<sup>13</sup>

The occupation of Florida by United States troops was justified on the basis of necessity to protect Georgia from hostile Indians from the peninsula.<sup>14</sup> Money<sup>15</sup> and ammunition<sup>16</sup> was supplied to territorial and state officials for defense against the Indians, and in 1816, August 5, 1817, a joint resolution was passed

information on disturbance from any other tribe or nation of Indians.

The Act of July 14, 1852 (1 Stat. 395) authorized the appointment by the President of three commissioners to treat with the Indians in order to obtain the protection promised the Indians in the previous Act see Act of May 21, 1786, § 8, Act of 42.

<sup>10</sup> Act of January 17, 1860, 2 Stat. 2 discussed in Chapter 9, see 10 (2) *supra* 111.

<sup>11</sup> 15 Stat. 27.

<sup>12</sup> In further post Civil War statutory evidence of hostility with the Indians see Act of March 3, 1871, 17 Stat. 566, 11 Stat. of July 4, 1870, 19 Stat. 214, Act of August 15, 1870, 19 Stat. 204, 21, Dec. August 5, 1870, 19 Stat. 216, Act of June 7, 1878, 20 Stat. 232. And see Chapter 14, *supra*.

<sup>13</sup> See Act of May 13, 1860, 2 Stat. 82, Act of April 10, 1812, 2 Stat. 704, Act of July 2, 1816, 7 Stat. 71.

<sup>14</sup> 8 Stat. Act of April 29, 1818, 4 Stat. 479. Act of May 4, 1822, 4 Stat. 676, Act of May 26, 1824, 4 Stat. 70.

<sup>15</sup> Joint Resolution of January 25, 1812, 2 Stat. 646, Joint Resolution of January 17, 1813, 3 Stat. 171, Act of February 12, 1814, 3 Stat. 172, Act of March 10, 1822, 3 Stat. 634. The Joint Resolution of March 3, 1818, 21 Stat. 520, deals with expenditures of the State of Florida in suppressing hostile Indians.

<sup>16</sup> Act of July 27, 1860, 14 Stat. 107. The State of California sold Indian war bonds. See Act of March 3, 1861, 11 Stat. 710. Act of June 27, 1863, 12 Stat. 213, Act of January 6, 1865, 23 Stat. 390.

<sup>17</sup> Act of April 7, 1866, 14 Stat. 26. Act of May 21, 1872, 17 Stat. 119. Act of January 16, 1880, 25 Stat. 646, Joint Resolution of December 8, 1890, 26 Stat. 1111.

<sup>1</sup> Act 1, see 9 Ch. 1, 14, 12, 17, 10, 17.

<sup>2</sup> *Id.* Joint, Course of Treaties on the Constitution of January 29, 1860, of the United States (1860) pp. 285-286, and

The powers to legislate commerce, declare war, make peace and conduct treaties, comprise all that is required for regulating our intercourse with the Indian tribes.

<sup>3</sup> Chapter 9, see 42 (4) (c).

<sup>4</sup> 1 Stat. 40.

<sup>5</sup> U. S. Constitution Art. I, see 8 at 1.

<sup>6</sup> 1 Stat. 95, 96.

<sup>7</sup> Act of July 22, 1790, 1 Stat. 116.

<sup>8</sup> Act of March 5, 1792, 1 Stat. 241, rejected Act of March 3, 1795, 1 Stat. 439.

<sup>9</sup> Act of May 2, 1792, 1 Stat. 264. A similar provision contained in the Act of February 26, 1793, 1 Stat. 424. Early protective duties against the Indians include Act of January 2, 1812, 2 Stat. 670. Act of March 3, 1813, 2 Stat. 390. The Act of May 25, 1830, see 6 Stat. 411, 412, authorized the President to protect migrating Indians "against all



authorizing the President to prohibit the sale of special medicine cartridges to hostile Indians.<sup>36</sup>

There are several statutes in force which illustrate the exercise of the war power in relation to the Indians. The Act of July 5, 1862,<sup>37</sup> authorizes the distribution of treaties with tribes engaged in hostilities. The Act of March 2, 1867,<sup>38</sup> authorizes the withholding of annuities from hostile Indians, the Act of Febru-

ary 14, 1873,<sup>39</sup> regulates the sale of arms to hostile Indians, and the Act of March 1, 1875,<sup>40</sup> forbids payments to Indian bands in war.

Apart from the specific statutes that mark the heritage of decades of military control, other less tangible relics of this control managed to persist long after the Indian Service was removed from the War Department.<sup>41</sup>

<sup>36</sup> 19 Stat. 216.

<sup>37</sup> See Chapter 1, § 1.

<sup>38</sup> 12 Stat. 512, 26 U. S. § 2080, 25 U. S. § 72.

<sup>39</sup> 18 Stat. 392, 51 U. S. § 2100, 25 U. S. § 125.

<sup>37</sup> 54 Stat. 437, 477, 490 U. S. § 467, 25 U. S. § 266.

<sup>38</sup> 15 Stat. 120, 419, 25 U. S. § 128.

<sup>39</sup> See Chapter 1, § 10, 10 U. S. § 100, also Chapter 2, § 2.

## SECTION 5 CONGRESSIONAL POWER—UNITED STATES TERRITORY AND PROPERTY

The principal Indian tribes lived on the national domain. By virtue of its control over the public domain and the United States' territories, the Federal Government was able to exercise broad dominion and control over the Indians, and to determine many Indian policies such as the concentration on westward removal, reservations and allotments.<sup>42</sup> Today the control over the Alaskan natives is partly based on this power.<sup>43</sup>

The control of land, water, and other property belonging to the United States is vested exclusively in Congress by the Constitution.<sup>44</sup> The Supreme Court has upheld a broad exercise of this power.

The power of Congress over a territory and its inhabitants is also exclusive and paramount, except as restricted by the Constitution,<sup>45</sup> and Congress can exercise all the sovereign and reserved powers of state governments subject to the provisions of the Constitution specifically restricting the power of the Federal Government.<sup>46</sup> The extent of this power of Congress over Indians is shown by many decisions of the Supreme Court. The Court in the case of *United States v. Kagama*<sup>47</sup> said:

But these Indians are within the geographical limits of the United States. The soil and the people within these limits are under the political control of the Government of the United States, or of the States of the Union. There exist within the broad domain of sovereignty but these two. There may be cities, counties, and other organized bodies with limited legal functions, but they are all

derived from, or exist in subordination to one or the other of these. The territorial governments owe all their powers to the statutes of the United States, conferring on them the powers which they exercise, and which are liable to be withdrawn, modified, or repealed at any time by Congress. What authority the State governments may have to enact criminal laws for the Indians will be presently considered. But this power of Congress to organize territorial governments, and in the law for their inhabitants, arises not so much from the clause in the Constitution in regard to disposing of and making rules and regulations concerning the Territory and other property of the United States, as from the ownership of the country in which the Territories are, and the right of exclusive sovereignty which must exist in the National Government, and can be found nowhere else. *Murphy v. Bransford*, 114 U. S. 17, 44 (1885).

"The Supreme Court, in the case of *United States v. Kagama*,<sup>48</sup> said:

"We think it too firmly and clearly established to admit of dispute that the Indian tribes residing within the territorial limits of the United States are subject to their authority, and where the country occupied by them is not within the limits of one of the States, Congress may by law punish an offense committed there, no matter whether the offender be a white man or an Indian (1772).

### A TRIBAL LANDS

The control by Congress of tribal lands has been one of the most fundamental expressions of, if not the major expression of, the constitutional power of Congress over Indian affairs,<sup>49</sup> and has provided most frequent occasion for judicial analysis of this power. From the wealth of judicial statement there may be

<sup>42</sup> For example, like acts of the public domain have been withdrawn for Indian reservations.

<sup>43</sup> See Chapter 2, § 1. Also see *Nelson v. United States*, 40 Fed. 112, 116 (C. C. O. 1887) and *Indefinite v. United States*, 80 Fed. 156 (11 A. 9 1898).

<sup>44</sup> See *Hallowell v. United States*, 221 U. S. 117 (1911). Since the time when the necessity for the exercise of the authority arose, there has been almost no question as to the absolute power of Congress to determine the form of political and administrative control to be exercised over the territories and to fix the extent to which their inhabitants shall be admitted to a participation in their own government. Both by legislative practice and by judicial sanction the principle has from the first been asserted that upon this matter the judgment of Congress is absolute. *Wahkiakum*, The Constitution of the United States (1920), p. 130.

The Congress still has power to dispose of and make all needful Rules and Regulations respecting the Territory or other property belonging to the United States, and nothing in this Constitution shall be so construed as to preclude the Congress of the United States, or of any particular State (Art. 4, sec. 3, cl. 2). Congress is authorized to Indian tribes, residing in various countries with a reservation (Op. Sol. 1, 2, 1878-79, 1880).

<sup>45</sup> See *Oklahoma v. T. & Santa Fe Ry. Co.*, 220 U. S. 277, 285 (1911).

<sup>46</sup> *Oklahoma v. M. I. Ry. Co.*, 219 Fed. 693 (C. C. A. 8, 1918).

<sup>47</sup> 115 U. S. 378 (1886).

<sup>48</sup> 115 U. S. 378 (1886).

The primary power over tribal relations and tribal property of the Indians has been frequently exercised by Congress. See *Reaffirmation*, 108 U. S. 218 (1887), *Cherokee Nation v. Georgia*, 187 U. S. 215 (1902), *Blackfeather v. United States*, 180 U. S. 168 (1906), *Cherokee v. United States*, 180 U. S. 665 (1906), *Cherokee v. United States*, 180 U. S. 665 (1906), *Cherokee v. United States*, 180 U. S. 665 (1906), *Cherokee v. United States*, 180 U. S. 665 (1906), *Cherokee v. United States*, 180 U. S. 665 (1906), *Cherokee v. United States*, 180 U. S. 665 (1906), *Cherokee v. United States*, 180 U. S. 665 (1906).

The Attorney General's opinion in *Op. A. 371* (1921).

The Indian property has been less successful in being recognized as complete and exclusive until terminated by Congress or treaty or in the exercise of this primary power of guardianship to this power of tribal property of the Nation's wards without their consent (P. 180).

The United States has power to legislate concerning the distribution of tribal land. *United States v. Boynton*, 260 Fed. 165, 171 (C. C. A. 2, 1920), *app. dismissed*, 267 U. S. 614, *Whitman v. United States*, 224 U. S. 418 (1912). Also see *United States v. Gaudin*, 271 U. S. 432 (1926), and *United States v. Gaudin*, 271 U. S. 432, 438 (1926), and Chapter 1, sec. 1.

derived the basic principle that Congress has a very wide power to manage and dispose of tribal lands.

Examples of Supreme Court statements of the principle are the following:

Justice Brandeis speaking for the United States Supreme Court in the case of *Worison v. Clark*,<sup>11</sup> declared:

It is admitted that, as regards tribal property subject to the control of the United States, is growth in Indians, Congress may make such changes in the management and disposition as it deems necessary to maintain their welfare. The United States is now exercising, under the claim that the property is tribal, the powers of a guardian and of a trustee in possession. (P. 485.)

<sup>11</sup>The Supreme Court said in the case of *Nadawac v. United Pacific Insurance Company*.<sup>12</sup>

It seems plain that, at least, tribal lands allotted in severalty (1861) the lands were but part of the domain held by the tribe under the ordinary Indian claim—the right of possession and occupancy—with fee in the United States. *Bethel v. Hitchcock*, 95 U. S. 517, 527. The power of Congress, as guardian for the Indians, to legislate in respect of such lands is settled. *Cherokee Nation v. Southern Railway Co.*, 147 U. S. 644, 645; *United States v. Rector*, 243 U. S. 461, 468; *United States v. Chase*, 333 U. S. 89, (1948) (445, 446).

A necessary corollary to this principle is that control of tribal land is a political function not to be exercised by the courts.<sup>13</sup>

The Supreme Court in the case of *Snow Indians v. United States*,<sup>14</sup> said:

\* Jurisdiction over them [the Indians] and their tribal lands was peculiarly within the legislative power of Congress and may not be exercised by the courts in the absence of legislation conferring rights upon them such as are the subject of judicial cognizance. See *Long Wolf v. Hitchcock*, supra, 187 U. S. 424; *Cherokee Nation v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 291; *Stephens v. Cherokee Nation*, 174 U. S. 445, 453. Thus the jurisdictional Act of April 11, 1910, plainly failed to do. (P. 137.)

In the case of *Cherokee Nation v. Hitchcock*,<sup>15</sup> the Supreme Court said:

"The power existing in Congress to administer upon and guard the tribal property and the power being

<sup>12</sup> 360 U. S. 491 (1947) aff., 290 Fed. 405 (App. D. C. 1924).

<sup>13</sup> 251 U. S. 432 (1920). The Attorney General wrote in 20 Op. A. G. 110 (1907).

It is unnecessary to go into any detailed discussion of the power of Congress, or indeed, of the provisions of the agreement with the Seminoles Nation ratified by the act of July 1, 1868, and the law thereunder, in relation to the tribal property and funds as provided by the act of April 26, 1906, inasmuch as the question has been conclusively settled in the decisions of the Supreme Court. *Stephens v. Cherokee Nation*, 174 U. S. 418; *Cherokee Nation v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 291; *Long Wolf v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 424; *Adams v. Long Wolf*, 187 U. S. 384, 388; *Wallace v. Adams*, 204 U. S. 415.

These decisions establish the plain authority of Congress to control the tribes and administer the property of the Five Civilized Tribes in the Indian Territory and other Indian tribes. (P. 146.)

<sup>14</sup> The courts have usually disclaimed this power as political and not subject to the control of the judicial department of the government. See *Long Wolf v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 371, 566 (1903) containing the disposal of a reservation of an Indian tribe on the ground that it was a legitimate exercise of congressional power over tribal Indians and their property. This case is discussed in *Oklahoma v. Texas*, 263 U. S. 674, 702 (1922). Also see *Cherokee Nation v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 294, 408 (1902).

<sup>15</sup> 277 U. S. 424 (1928). 287 U. S. 286, 102 (1921). Also see *Four v. Western Insurance Co.*, 221 U. S. 286, 112-122 (1911).

<sup>16</sup> 187 U. S. 294 (1902).

The Court acted with approval the following excerpt from *Stephens v. Cherokee Nation*, 174 U. S. 446 (1898):

It may be remarked that the legislation seems to recognize, especially the act of June 25, 1868, a distinction between claims as to citizenship merely and the distribution of property to be subsequently made. It may be observed that the allotment under which the right to a share in the latter would not necessarily follow from the concession of the former. But in any event, we are of opinion that the constitutionality of these acts in

political and administrative in its nature, the manner of its exercise is a question within the province of the legislature in which to determine, and is not one for the courts. (P. 306.)

The power of Congress extends from the control of the use of the lands, through the grant of adverse interests in the lands, to the outright sale and removal of the Indians' interests.<sup>17</sup> And this is true whether or not the lands are disposed of for public or private purposes.

To illustrate the power of Congress to grant rights-of-way across tribal land is clearly established.<sup>18</sup> To quote the Supreme Court:

In respect of the determination of citizenship cannot be successfully raised on the ground of the importance of the decision of vested rights. The lands and members of these tribes are public lands and public persons, and are not held in individual ownership and the resolution by any particular statute that has right therein is so vested as to preclude inquiry into its status in which a constitutional claim is made.

The Court concluded:

The holding that Congress had power to provide a method for determining membership in the five civilized tribes, and in determining the citizenship thereof preliminary to a division of the property of the tribe, among its members, necessarily involved the further holding that Congress was vested with authority to adopt measures to give effect to its policy in this line and within the territory in income to the benefit of the tribe. (P. 407.)

<sup>17</sup> See, for example, the act of June 18, 1934, sec. 8, 48 Stat. 981, 986, 25 U. S. C. 166.

<sup>18</sup> See rights-of-way. See Chapter 4, sec. 1d. And see in 7b, infra. Congress in dividing a tribe may also provide for the liquidation and distribution of tribal property. *United States v. Slocum*, 299 U. S. 417 (1937). See also *United States v. Yee*, 241 U. S. 391, 392 (1916). 14 Col. I. Rev. 757-791 (1911). But the court will not set aside the further holding that Congress is vested with authority to adopt measures to give effect to its policy in this line and within the territory in income to the benefit of the tribe. (P. 407.)

But the land so managed and disposed of must be tribal land. Indians have frequently been held to own the claim that the tribal property has become vested by previous act or treaty in individuals and is no more subject to congressional control than the private property of other individuals. The courts, however, tend to construe such previous acts and treaties wherever possible, against the vesting of private rights in tribal property. *Chippewa Indians of Minnesota v. United States*, 307 U. S. 386 (1937), aff., 80 C. C. 410 (1907). *United States v. Chase*, 333 U. S. 89 (1927), 102, 222, 445, 446 (C. C. 4, 5, 1913). Tribal property is allotted Congress possesses plenary power to deal with tribal lands and funds as tribal property. *Stephens v. Cherokee Nation*, 174 U. S. 441 (1902). Also see *United States v. Little Lake Chippewas*, 229 U. S. 499 (1911).

<sup>19</sup> *Nadawac v. United Pacific Ins. Co.*, 373 U. S. 432 (1940). Federal statutes provide for the taking of tribal lands by the United States. For example, the act of May 3, 1906, 34 Stat. 267, created a national forest upon lands held by the Federal Government as a trust for the Chippewa Indians of the Lake Superior Reservation. *United States v. United States*, 305 U. S. 470 (1934). For other cases on eminent domain see *Shoshone Tribe v. United States*, 269 U. S. 470 (1927). *United States v. Creek Nation*, 268 U. S. 103 (1925). 4, 102, 103, 104 (1914). See, for example, Act of March 3, 1907, 34 Stat. 1023, 1024, discussed in 49 L. D. 486 (1923).

The right of eminent domain may be exercised by the Federal Government over land held by an Indian nation in fee simple under patent from the United States without the consent of the tribe. *Cherokee Nation v. Kansas Ry. Co.*, 195 U. S. 641 (1900) which reported the contention that land was held by the Cherokees as a sovereign nation. Some treaties provided that railroads should have rights of way upon payment of just compensation to the Indian tribes. Treaty of June 6, 1864, with the Medicine Act, 30 Stat. 1061. See Chapter 16, sec. 1D.

The act of March 2, 1899, 30 Stat. 990, authorized any railroad company or telegraph and telephone company to take and condemn a right-of-way or through any lands which have been or may hereafter be allotted in severalty, but have not been conveyed to the allottee with full power of alienation. The act of February 28, 1902, sec. 23, 32 Stat. 48, discussed in *Oklahoma & M. I. Ry. Co. v. Boukang*, 240 Fed. 592 (C. C. 4, 5, 1918), made this statute inapplicable to the Indian Territory and Oklahoma Territory.

<sup>20</sup> *Worison v. Clark*, 221 U. S. 286, 112 (1911). Even though an Indian tribe has granted a purported exclusive license to a telephone company, Congress may issue a similar license to another



## B TRIBAL FUNDS

The power of Congress over tribal funds is the same as its power over tribal lands, and is historically speaking, a result of the latter power, since tribal funds arise principally from the use and disposition of tribal lands. The extent of congressional power has been expressed by the Attorney General as follows:<sup>1</sup>

Now, in these matters as to tribal funds, it can not be acquired or extended that Congress had and power to provide for their disbursement for such purposes, it is a matter for the best interest of the tribe. That power resides in the Government in the guardianship of the Indians, and the authority of the United States is such that it is not to be narrowly defined, but on the contrary is plenary.

Examples of the exercise of such power over the tribal property of Indians and decisions sustaining it, are found in many of the adjudicated cases, among them *Cherokee Nation v. United States*, 187 U. S. 294; *Lower Wolf v. United States*, 177 U. S. 573; *Griffith v. Fisher*, 221 U. S. 610; *Reimer v. Brady*, 237 U. S. 411; *Chase v. United States*, decided April 11, 1921 (21 Op.).

The congressional control over tribal funds was defined in Justice Van Devanter in the case of *Reimer v. Brady*.<sup>2</sup>

As in the case of lands Congress cannot divert tribal funds from tribal purposes in the absence of Indian consent or on responding benefit without being liable, when suit is brought, for the amount diverted. Thus there has been occasion, not infrequently, for judicial analysis of the manner of disposition of tribal funds. On the whole the tendency of the Court of Claims has been to uphold expenditures authorized by Congress as made in tribal purposes.<sup>3</sup>

## C INDIVIDUAL LANDS

The power of Congress on individual lands, while less sweeping than its power over tribal lands, is clearly broad enough to cover supervision of the alienation of individual lands.<sup>4</sup> In fact the exercise of congressional power over individual lands has been largely directed toward the lease, extension, or reimposition of restrictions surrounding their alienation, depending on whether the policy of concealing or of opening up Indian lands was dominant in Congress.

As "an incident to guardianship" Congress not only has the power to extend,<sup>5</sup> modify, or remove existing restrictions on the alienation of such lands,<sup>6</sup> but while the Indians are still the ward

<sup>1</sup> 31 Op. A. G. 60 (1921). Also see *Chickasaw Nation v. United States*, 87 C. Cl. 91 (1925) cert. den. 207 U. S. 640. Congress may appropriate tribal funds for the civilization and support of the Indian tribe. *Leah v. Brown*, 240 U. S. 214 (1915). See Chapter 12, sec. 2.

<sup>2</sup> 237 U. S. 441 (1914). See sec. 6, infra.

<sup>3</sup> The power of Congress over Native tribal funds is upheld in *Ne Leah v. United States*, 240 U. S. 214 (1915) (App. D. C. 1913) app. dismissed 206 U. S. 796 (1927).

<sup>4</sup> See *Griffith v. Fisher*, 221 U. S. 640 (1912).

<sup>5</sup> Congress has not extended authority over individual lands not in a trust or restricted category except in so far as to reimpose restrictions and restore them to the class of lands under its supervision.

<sup>6</sup> See *Leah v. United States*, 240 U. S. 214 (1915).

<sup>7</sup> *Tyus v. Western Union Co.*, 223 U. S. 286 (1911); *Indianan v. United States*, 224 U. S. 473 (1912). Also see *United States v. Jackson*, 280 U. S. 185-391 (1930) involving extension of trust period of homestead patent under Act of July 4, 1864, 23 Stat. 70, on the ground that the Indians possessed no vested right in the patent was issued, and *United States v. Piche*, 232 U. S. 442-447 (1914) involving congressional retention of trusteeship of land thrown open to settlement.

<sup>8</sup> For a list of reservations in which the trust or restricted period was extended, see 25 C. F. R., appendix to Chapter 1, pp. 489-493.

<sup>9</sup> *Good v. United States*, 224 U. S. 488 (1912); *Dominguez v. United States*, 224 U. S. 471 (1912); *Jones v. Platte Oak Co.*, 273 U. S. 198 (1927).

of the nation it may impose restrictions on property already freed from restrictions or delegate such power to its executive officer.

This power includes permitting alienation upon such terms as Congress or the Indian officer delegated with the power, deems advisable from the standpoint of the protection of the Indians.<sup>7</sup> Such restrictions must be expressed and are not implied merely because the owner of land is an Indian, but in such restrictions become restrictive so as to imply a conveyance made by an Indian before the restriction was imposed.<sup>8</sup>

Congress may lift the restriction on alienation of allotments to mixed blood Indians and continue the restrictions on full blood Indians, until the Secretary of the Interior is satisfied that such Indians are competent to handle their own affairs.<sup>9</sup> In decision, this question the Supreme Court said:

It is necessary to have in mind certain articles which are well settled by the previous decisions of this Court. The tribal Indians, in the words of the Government, are such under its guardianship. It rests with Congress to determine the time and extent of emancipation, citizenship, and not inconsistent with the continuation of such guardianship, for it has been held that even after the Indians have been made citizens the relation of guardian and ward for some purposes may continue. On the other hand Congress may relieve the Indians from such guardianship and control in whole or in part, and may, if it sees fit, clothe them with full rights and responsibilities concerning their property or care to them, a partial emancipation if it thinks that such better for their protection. *United States v. Ace*, 241 U. S. 791, 798, and cases cited (1915-1916).

The restrictions on alienation of land express a public policy designed to protect improvident people.<sup>10</sup> Hence under the statutes, despite the good faith or motives of a grantee of land conveyed in violation of the restrictions,<sup>11</sup> the conveyance is void.<sup>12</sup>

As in the case of private property generally, Congress cannot deprive an Indian of his land or any interest therein without due process of law or take such property for public purposes without just compensation. An outstanding decision on this subject is

<sup>1</sup> *London v. Jones*, 246 U. S. 58 (1918), cited with approval in *McClure v. United States*, 246 U. S. 26, 27 (1918).

<sup>2</sup> *Hall v. United States*, 224 U. S. 146 (1912). See *United States v. Noble*, 247 U. S. 74 (1917); *Smith v. United States*, 280 U. S. 228 (1924).

<sup>3</sup> *See v. Wilson*, 2, How. 487 (1793).

<sup>4</sup> *Wilson v. Wells*, 6 Wall. 81 (1867).

<sup>5</sup> *United States v. Waller*, 243 U. S. 452 (1917). From time to time Congress has by statute empowered the Secretary to remove restrictions or issue certificates of competency to Indians deemed capable of managing their own affairs. See Chapter 11, sec. 4.

<sup>6</sup> \* \* \* In adopting the restrictions, Congress was not imposing restrictions on a class of persons who were justly, but on Indians who were being converted from a state of dependent wardship to one of full emancipation and were to be safeguarded against their own improvidence during the period of transition. The purpose of the restrictions was to give the needed protection. (1915-1916) *Smith v. McCullough*, 270 U. S. 450 (1926).

<sup>7</sup> *United States v. Brown*, 8 F. 2d 704 (C. C. A. 9, 1925), cert. den., 270 U. S. 644 (1926).

<sup>8</sup> *Lockman v. United States*, 224 U. S. 11, (1912); *Good v. United States*, 224 U. S. 488 (1912); *Stacy v. Long*, 227 U. S. 614 (1913); *Monroe v. Bureau*, 221 U. S. 941 (1913), holding, that a deed by an Indian of an allotment subject to restrictions against alienation was absolutely void if made before final payment, even if made after payment of an act of Congress permitting the Secretary of the Interior to issue such a patent, and that the unenforced title subsequently acquired by the allottee under the patent does not accrue to the grantee. Also see *Miller v. McClean*, 249 U. S. 308 (1919); *United States v. Reynolds*, 250 U. S. 104 (1919); and *Smith v. Stevens*, 277 U. S. 321, 326 (1919), concerning the policy behind the restriction on sale of land in trust between Indians and Kansas Indians of June 4, 1825, 7 Stat. 244, 245, and the Act of May 26, 1860, 12 Stat. 21. Also see Chapter 11, sec. 411.



be distributed only to tribal members.<sup>111</sup> It may thus provide that all children born of a marriage between a white man and an Indian woman who was recognized by the tribe at the time of her death shall have the same rights and privileges to the property of the tribe to which the mother belonged as have members of the tribe.<sup>112</sup>

Congress may authorize an administrative body to make a roll descriptive of the persons therein so that they might be identified to take a census of the tribes and to adopt any other means deemed necessary by the commission. It may provide that such rolls, when approved by the Secretary shall be final, and that persons therein and their descendants from their wives and such persons are in future generations to tribal lands should those constitute the several tribes they represent.<sup>113</sup>

Enrollment does not ordinarily give a vested right in tribal property.<sup>114</sup> Congress has distributed the existing membership rolls of a tribe and direct that the principal distribution be made upon the basis of a new roll, even though such act may be inconsistent with prior legislation, treaties, or agreements with the tribe.<sup>115</sup> Thus the Supreme Court in the case of *Stamper v Brady*,<sup>116</sup> said

Take other tribal Indians, the Cheeks were wards of the United States, which possessed full power, if it deemed such a course wise to issue full control over them and then attempt to ascertain who were members of the tribe, to distribute the lands and funds among them, and to terminate the tribal government. (P. 147.)

The Supreme Court, in holding that Congress may add to a tribal roll even though it purports to be final, said:<sup>117</sup>

It is not proposed to disturb the individual allotments made to members living September 1, 1902 and enrolled under the act of 1902 and thereafter we are only concerned with whether children born after September 1, 1902, and living on March 1, 1906 should be excluded from the allotment and distribution. The act of 1902 required that they be excluded, and the legislation in 1906 as we have seen, provides for their inclusion. It is conceded, and properly so, that the later legislation is valid and controlling unless it impairs or destroys rights which the act of 1902 vested in members living September 1, 1902, and enrolled under that act. As has been indicated, then individual allotments are not affected. But it is said that the act of 1902 contemplated that they alone should receive allotments and be the participants in the distribution of the remaining lands and also of the funds of the tribe. No doubt such was the purport of the act. But this, in our opinion, did not confer upon

them any vested right such as would forbid Congress from thereafter making provision for admitting newly born members of the tribe to the allotment and distribution. The difficulty with the plaintiffs' contention is that it treats the act of 1902 as a contract, when "it is only an act of Congress and can have no contract effect." *Chester Intermarriage Cases*, 201 U. S. 76, 93. It was but an exercise of the administrative control of the Government over the tribal property of tribal Indians, and was subject to change by Congress at any time before it was carried into effect and while the tribal relations continued. *Stephens v Cherokee Nation*, 174 U. S. 445, 458; *Cherokee Nation v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 244; *Wallace v Adams*, 204 U. S. 418, 423. It is not to be overlooked that those for whose benefit the change was made in 1906 were not strangers to the tribe, but were children born into it while it was still in existence and while there was still tribal property whereby they could be put on an equal or approximately equal plane with other members. The Council of the tribe asked that this be done, and we cannot but doubt that Congress, in agreeing to the request, was well within its power. (Pp. 637-65.)

In the important case of *Wallace v Adams*,<sup>118</sup> the Supreme Court held that the Act of July 1, 1902,<sup>119</sup> creating the Cherokee-Chickasaw citizenship court and giving it power to examine the judgments of the Indian territorial courts and determine whether they should be annulled on account of irregularities, was a valid exercise of power. This and other cases in this hold are based on the theory of the ultimate power of Congress over matters of membership of the tribes and its power to adopt any reasonable measures to ascertain who are entitled to its privileges. It is the result of one of the methods which it adopts in exercising it, it may fit another.<sup>120</sup>

Congress may make the finding of an administrative commission, approved by the Secretary of the Interior, a final determination of tribal membership.<sup>121</sup> The Supreme Court in the case of *United States v. Wallace*<sup>122</sup> said:

\* \* \* There was thus constituted a quasi-judicial tribunal whose judgments within the limits of its jurisdiction were only subject to attack for fraud or such mistake of law or fact as would justify the holding that its judgments were voidable. Congress by this legislation evidenced an intention to put an end to controversy by providing a tribunal before which those interested could be heard and the rolls authoritatively made up of those who were entitled to participate in the partition of the tribal lands. It was to the interest of the Government that the beneficence of this provision should be ascertained. To this end the Commission was established and endowed with authority to hear and determine the matter.

A correct conclusion was not necessary to the quality and binding character of its decisions. It may be that the Commission in acting upon the many cases before it made mistakes which are now impossible of correction. This might easily be so, for the Commission passed upon the rights of thousands claiming membership in the tribe and ascertained the rights of others who did not appeal before it, upon the merits of whose standing the Commission had to pass with the best information which it could obtain.

When the Commission proceeded in good faith to determine the matter and to act upon information before it, not substantially, but according to its best judgment, we think it was the intention of the act that the matter, upon the approval of the Secretary, should be finally concluded and the rights of the parties forever settled, subject to such attack as could successfully be made upon judgments of this character for fraud or mistake.

We cannot agree that the case is within the principle decided in *Stote v McNeel*, 354 U. S. 34, and hundred

<sup>111</sup> See Chapter 9 sec. 3.

<sup>112</sup> *Yarns v United States*, 245 Fed. 411 (C. C. 5, 1917). And see Chapter 9 sec. 5.

<sup>113</sup> See *Stephens v Cherokee Nation*, 174 U. S. 445, 490, 491 (1899), Chapter 7 sec. 4.

<sup>114</sup> Congress may also provide that for the purpose of determining the quantum of Indian blood possessed by members of these tribes, and their capacity to alienate allotted lands, the rolls of citizenship approved by the Secretary of the Interior are conclusive.

Act of April 20, 1908, § 5, 35 Stat. 127 and Act of May 27, 1908, 35 Stat. 132 interpreted in *United States v. Ferguson*, 247 U. S. 175 (1918).

Accord *Cully v Mitchell*, 37 F. 2d 493 (C. C. 10, 1940).

It has been held that Congress is not bound by the tribal rule regarding membership and may determine for itself whether a person is an Indian from the standpoint of a federal criminal statute. *United States v. Rogers*, 4 How. 587 (1846).

<sup>115</sup> *Widish v United States ex rel Kadis*, 281 U. S. 306 (1930).

<sup>116</sup> See *Stephens v Cherokee Nation*, 174 U. S. 445, 489 (1899). Op. Sol. T. M. 27799 (January 22, 1898). Cf. *Doni Wolf v Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 695 (1903).

<sup>117</sup> 285 U. S. 441 (1914).

<sup>118</sup> *Gracie v Fisher*, 224 U. S. 640 (1912) discussed in Chapter 9, sec. 8. An example of "final" pro rata distribution of tribal assets is found in the Appropriation Act of May 31, 1900, § 1, 31 Stat. 271, 273 (Sales Revenue). Cf. Act of April 21, 1904, 38 Stat. 180, 201 (Otoe and Missouria, Stockbridge and others).

<sup>119</sup> 204 U. S. 415 (1907).

<sup>120</sup> 52 Stat. 841, 847.

<sup>121</sup> See *Stephens v Cherokee Nation*, 174 U. S. 445 (1899), and *Wallace v Adams*, 204 U. S. 415, 429 (1907). Also Chapter 18, sec. 4.

<sup>122</sup> *United States v. Adams*, 200 U. S. 320 (1922).

<sup>123</sup> 244 U. S. 111 (1917).

cases, in which it has been held that in the absence of a subject in title of jurisdiction in legislation that there was such as to convey and that a judgment based upon action without its proper subject being in existence is void. (Pp. 175-179)

We think the decision of such action, if, when not made void for its subject matter, is conclusive of the question of jurisdiction in the title when followed, as was the case here by the action of the Interior Department continuing the allotment and ordering the patents on certain lands, which were in fact issued. (P. 120)

## SECTION 7 ADMINISTRATIVE POWER—INTRODUCTION

By necessity Congress has delegated much of its power over the Indians to administrative officers. This power is dependent upon and supplementary to the legislative power. Although the use of figures of speech like "jurisdiction," have tended to blur the distinction between administrative and legislative powers it is important to distinguish between the problem of whether Congress possesses the authority to pass certain legislation and the problem of whether Congress has vested its power in administrative officers or department.

"We have no officers in this government," the Supreme Court said in the case of *The Plough Corporation*,<sup>1</sup> from the President down to the most subordinate agent, who does not hold office under the law with prescribed duties and limited authorities." (Pp. 176-177)

Therefore, in seeking to trace the scope of administrative power at the field of Indian law, our primary concern must be with the statutes and treaties that confer such power.

The integrity of the legislative and administrative branches of Government in Indian affairs has caused the frequent application of two rules of administrative law. The first is that if properly promulgated pursuant to law the rules and regulations of an administrative body have the force and effect of statutes and the courts will take judicial notice of them.<sup>2</sup> The Supreme Court in *Varigland Cattle Co. v. United States*,<sup>3</sup> said:

It is settled by many recent decisions of this court that a regulation by a department of government, if addressed to and reasonably adapted to the execution of an act of Congress, the administration of which is confided to such department, has the force and effect of law if it be not in conflict with express statutory provisions. *United States v. Chinand*, 220 U. S. 508; *United States v.*

*Byrdell*, 211 U. S. 231; *United States v. Smull*, 230 U. S. 107; *Wright v. United States v. Mowbray*, 243 U. S. 647. (P. 149)

The second principle is that courts and administrative authorities have equal weight in construction of a statute consistently given by an executive department charged with its administration,<sup>4</sup> especially if it is a rule affecting considerable property or a doubtful question.<sup>5</sup>

The Supreme Court has given great weight to an administrative interpretation even if not long continuing.<sup>6</sup>

These rules are based on the theory that the failure of Congress by subsequent legislation to change the construction of administrative bodies charged with the administration of a statute constitutes acquiescence in the practical construction of a statute.

<sup>1</sup> *United States v. Smith*, 188 U. S. 107 (1907), 1 Op. A. G. 75 (1942); *United States v. Jackson*, 240 U. S. 151 (1915).

When the law has been so construed by Government Departments during a long period as to present a course of action and Congress has not seen fit to interfere, the interpretation so given is strongly in evidence of the existence of the power. (P. 149, A. G. 75, 1942.)

The Supreme Court in *Cramer v. United States*, 261 U. S. 210 (1924), said:

In such individual occupancy [by a non-Indian Indian] is withheld to protect lands strong support in various rulings of the Interior Department to which in kind matters, this Court has thus given much weight [citing cases]. (P. 217)

<sup>2</sup> 4 Op. A. G. 75 (1942). Also see *Wagoner v. Hitchcock*, 201 U. S. 104 (1906); *Kendall v. The People*, 200 U. S. 522 (1912).

<sup>3</sup> The Supreme Court in *United States v. First National Bank*, 245 U. S. 247 (1914) said:

While departmental construction of the Chapp Amendment does not have the weight which such constructions sometimes have in long continued observance, nevertheless it is entitled to consideration the duly administration of that amendment showing the interpretation given it by the Department in doing so with its information. (P. 261)

A recent administrative interpretation will sometimes be given weight, though conflict with early interpretation. *United States v. Reynolds*, 290 U. S. 104 (1933). Departmental sponsorship of legislation is also considered. The Supreme Court in *Hawley v. Cady*, 290 U. S. 110 (1931) said:

• • • And there can be no doubt that the act was the suggestion of the Interior Department and its construction is in accordance with the administrative action of the Department and purpose of the act. *Boyd v. Baker*, 229 U. S. 187; *Jacobs v. Portland*, 224 U. S. 205; *United States v. Gavado Hernandez*, 209 U. S. 147. And the regulations of the Department are administrative of the act and part of its legal force. (P. 126)

## SECTION 8 THE RANGE OF ADMINISTRATIVE POWERS

The specific functions of officials of the Indian Service and of other federal officials dealing with Indian affairs are never fully discussed in various parts of this chapter and in other chapters.<sup>7</sup> It may be worth while, however, at this point, to indicate the scheme of authorities which Congress has conferred in this field.

See especially Chapter 2. Chapter 9 to 31 deal largely with administrative powers over property. Chapter 12 discusses administrative duties regarding federal services for the Indians, Chapter 16 deals with licensing of traders, Chapter 17, see 6, covers administration of liquor laws.

In general, administrative powers in the field of Indian Affairs have been conferred upon the President, the Secretary of the Interior, and the Commissioner of Indian Affairs.

Administrative powers of the President include the consolidation of agencies, and, with the consent of the tribes, the consolidation of one or more tribes on reservations created by Executive order.<sup>8</sup> The suspension with unnecessary agents,<sup>9</sup> or transferring

<sup>7</sup> Act of May 17, 1882, sec. 6, 22 Stat. 68, 88, 26 U. S. C. 68, Act of July 4, 1881, sec. 6, 22 Stat. 76, 97, 26 U. S. C. 65.

<sup>8</sup> Act of June 22, 1874, sec. 1, 18 Stat. 146, 147, 25 U. S. C. 84, Act of March 1, 1875, sec. 1, 18 Stat. 440, 421, 25 U. S. C. 81, interpreted in 18 Op. A. G. 105 (1877).

any agent from the place of tribe designated by law to such other place as the public service may require.<sup>3</sup>

"The Secretary of the Interior, who has been designated by a Solicitor of his Department as guardian of all Indian interests,"<sup>4</sup> acts on behalf of the President in the administration of Indian affairs. His acts are presumed to be the acts of the President.<sup>5</sup>

Administrative powers of the Secretary of the Interior include the establishing of superintendencies, agencies and subagencies by treaty or by legislative enactments,<sup>6</sup> the appointment of

members of the Indian Arts and Crafts Board,<sup>7</sup> and the appointment of various Indian Bureau employees.<sup>8</sup>

Other duties are expressly delegated to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, such as issuing title deeds,<sup>9</sup> and publishing statutory provisions relating to the duties of Indian Bureau employees.<sup>10</sup>

Provisions in many statutes<sup>11</sup> and occasional treaties confer on the President<sup>12</sup> or the Secretary of the Interior<sup>13</sup> or the Commissioner of Indian Affairs<sup>14</sup> or all three<sup>15</sup> power to make rules and regulations.<sup>16</sup> The wide range of regulations concerning Indians is shown by title 25 of the United States Code in relation to the Indian which are included in title 27 of the United States Code as discussed in various parts of this volume.<sup>17</sup> A brief description of the subject matter of some of them will therefore suffice to show the variety of statutes expressly conferring regulatory power on the Secretary of the Interior. It is authorized to make regulations governing the business of the Indian Arts and Crafts Board,<sup>18</sup> concerning the operation of various types of leases affecting restricted Indian lands<sup>19</sup> concerning service fees from individual Indians,<sup>20</sup> to secure attendance at school,<sup>21</sup> to admit white children to Indian day

<sup>3</sup> 16 U. S. C. § 709, 17 U. S. C. § 4, 48 Stat. 729, 737, 25 U. S. C. § 62, the power given in this section is not affected by the words here, in section 71 (19 U. S. C. § 405 (1877)). Also see *McIntosh v. United States*, 240 U. S. 436 (1916) (19 U. S. C. § 405 (1877)) which also discusses the power of the President over lands.

<sup>4</sup> The early treaties in place administered responsibility on the President is exemplified by the Act of May 24, 1791, 1 Stat. 217, and the Act of March 4, 1794, 1 Stat. 443, which authorized \$50,000 for the purchase of goods for the Indians and provided that the sale of such goods be made under the direction of the President or the United States.

<sup>5</sup> The President delegated to Indian superintendents and agents his duty to disburse funds. 17 Op. A. G. 66 (1876).

<sup>6</sup> Other Presidential powers of appointment are conferred by the Act of May 27, 1924, sec. 1, 43 Stat. 25, and the Act of July 20, 1907, 35 Stat. 17.

<sup>7</sup> See Act of May 20, 1926, 4 Stat. 158 providing for commissions to be paid to the Chiefs and Chickens Indians. Joint Resolution of May 7, 1872, 17 Stat. 495, to require title depositions. Act of January 12, 1891, 26 Stat. 712, to require title depositions of restrictions, the Alaska Indians in a certain area. See also Act of March 4, 1794, 1 Stat. 443, "Act of February 19, 1799, 1 Stat. 615, Act of May 1, 1876, 19 Stat. 41, Act of September 30, 1890, (Southern Utes), 26 Stat. 901, 724, Act of September 25, 1900, 26 Stat. 480, Act of April 30, 1906, sec. 1, 35 Stat. 70, 72, 25 U. S. C. § 709.

<sup>8</sup> Other statutory powers granted to the President include, the Indians are discussed in later sections of this Chapter. Also see 25 U. S. C. § 27, 16 U. S. C. § 712, 139, 140, 141, 151, 173, 174, 180, 265, 312-9, 317, examples of treaty powers see Chapter 3, see 817).

<sup>9</sup> 42 U. S. C. 493, 499 (1933).

<sup>10</sup> *Wolsey v. Chapman*, 301 U. S. 775, 779 (1879). The action of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs must be presumed to be the action of the President. *U. S. v. United States*, 10 U. S. C. § 2 (1879). The same rule has been applied for other departments. *Wentworth v. United States*, 49 U. S. C. 262, 274 (1914). The direction of the President's agents is presumed in institutions and acts issuing from competent federal departments. 7 Op. A. G. 45, (1873).

<sup>11</sup> In the absence of statutory authority subordinate officials have no power with respect to the duties of an office involving the exercise of judgment and discretion. *United States v. Roberts*, 302 U. S. 20, 42, (C. C. 10, 1939). See also *Robinson v. United States*, 295 Fed. 811 (App. D. C., 1923). *Turner v. Rice*, 107 Fed. 646 (C. C. B. U. Okla. 1904) mod. 179 Fed. 14 (Okla. 1st D. December 11, 1917).

<sup>12</sup> Administrative or ministerial functions may be delegated without statutory authorization. The Secretary of the Interior has delegated some of his regulatory power over Indians to other officials or bodies. For instance, he has delegated administrative authority to the judges of the Court of Indian Offenses, and to tribal courts.

<sup>13</sup> The Solicitor of the Department of the Interior, in an opinion dated September 29, 1921, 48 L. D. 435 (1921) wrote:

"During earlier times the Indians were practically confined on reservations and controlled by the strong arm of the Military. The President of the Great White Path was looked to as the protector of their interest and was charged with many responsibilities and duties in their behalf. Gradually, by specific statute in some cases, but more usually within certain permissive recent times by general legislation that responsibility and duty has been, lodged heretofore, solely in the Secretary of the Interior." (P. 477).

As late as 1895, the Attorney General asked whether the President must personally approve department claims. 21 Op. A. G. 131 (1897). Also see Chapter 4, see 9, 1 Op. A. G. 307 (1858) and 771 (1884). 6 Op. A. G. 49 (1854), 18 Op. A. G. 228 (1879), 17 Op. A. G. 258, 299, (1892), and 965 (1892), and Goodnow Administrative Law of the United States (1905).

<sup>14</sup> Act of June 30, 1884, 4 Stat. 775, amended by Act of March 4, 1847, 4 Stat. 202, 26 U. S. C. 40.

<sup>15</sup> Act of March 27, 1917, sec. 1, 40 Stat. 591, 25 U. S. C. § 65.

<sup>16</sup> Act of March 4, 1890, 26 Stat. 710, 25 U. S. C. § 274, Act of March 2, 1891, sec. 10, 25 Stat. 990, 100, 25 U. S. C. § 272, Act of March 1, 1906, sec. 1, 32 Stat. 774, 792, 25 U. S. C. § 41. Various special acts provide for agents for particular tribes. Act of May 25, 1924, 43 Stat. 25 (1904). Act of February 27, 1881, 4 Stat. 437 (Winnebago). Act of July 1, 1902, 32 Stat. 199 (Grand River and Winnebago).

<sup>17</sup> The Secretary of the Interior under the direction of the President has been authorized to discontinue the services of such agents who are inefficient and unbusinesslike as may from time to time be found in some instances in consequence of the complaints of the Indians or other causes. Act of July 9, 1912, sec. 7, 37 Stat. 764, amended by Act of February 27, 1917, sec. 1, 39 Stat. 240, 244, 25 U. S. C. § 67.

<sup>18</sup> See Chapter 10.

<sup>19</sup> Act of May 27, 1922, sec. 7, 42 Stat. 64, 48, 25 U. S. C. § 3.

<sup>20</sup> Act of July 31, 1914, 10 Stat. 115, Act of March 1, 1905, 33 Stat. 743, Act of May 8, 1872, 17 Stat. 95, Act of May 23, 1876, 19 Stat. 77, Act of February 24, 1891, sec. 1, 26 Stat. 791, interpreted in 15 L. D. 497 (1894) also see 40 L. D. 311 (1911), Act of August 1, 1914, 38 Stat. 792, 59, Act of February 14, 1920, 41 Stat. 409, 430, 25 U. S. C. § 242, Act of May 20, 1926, 4 Stat. 158, 25 U. S. C. § 41, Act of April 16, 1914, sec. 2, 38 Stat. 696, amended June 4, 1910, 39 Stat. 1485, 25 U. S. C. § 451, Act of June 7, 1917, 49 Stat. 311, also see special statutes. Act of March 3, 1861, 12 Stat. 519 (Sioux). Act of March 3, 1924, sec. 414, 46 Stat. 1497 (Crow). Act of February 14, 1913, 46 Stat. 1107 (Chippewa).

<sup>21</sup> Treaty of October 14, 1904, with the Klamath, 16 Stat. 707, Treaty of September 30, 1854 with the Chippewas, 10 Stat. 1106, 1101, unpublished treaty with the Cheyenne, Arapahoe, 17, August 7, 1790, Treaty of November 14, 1865, with the Cheyenne, 7 Stat. 96.

<sup>22</sup> Treaty of February 9, 1891, with the Menominee, 7 Stat. 942.

<sup>23</sup> Treaty of March 0, 1895 with the Omaha, 14 Stat. 667.

<sup>24</sup> Treaty of October 21, 1897 with the Kiowa and Comanches, 16 Stat. 791.

<sup>25</sup> Treaty of June 9, 1903 with the New Mexico, 31 Stat. 314, 317.

<sup>26</sup> The procedure adopted by the Office of Indian Affairs in drafting regulations is discussed in Memorandum 20, Attorney General's Committee on Administrative Procedure (1940).

<sup>27</sup> The subjects covered in this Code are noted in Chapter 2, see 3A.

<sup>28</sup> Chapter 2, 4, 8, 9, 10, 12, 15, 19.

<sup>29</sup> Act of March 27, 1915, sec. 1, 49 Stat. 491, 892, 25 U. S. C. § 400b.

<sup>30</sup> Act of May 11, 1908, sec. 4, 32 Stat. 347, 348, 25 U. S. C. § 3901, see Chapter 15, see 16.

<sup>31</sup> Act of March 3, 1918, sec. 1, 43 Stat. 201, 713 as amended by Act of July 10, 1919, sec. 1, 43 Stat. 097, 708, 25 U. S. C. § 301.

<sup>32</sup> Act of July 13, 1892, sec. 1, 27 Stat. 120, 148, 26 U. S. C. § 284, Act of March 3, 1891, sec. 1, 27 Stat. 615, 618, 26 U. S. C. § 288, Act of February 14, 1920, sec. 1, 41 Stat. 408, 410, 26 U. S. C. § 282, Chapter 15, see 2.





The scope of administrative powers raises problems of particular importance in five fields: (a) tribal funds,<sup>129</sup> (b) tribal funds,<sup>130</sup> (c) individual funds,<sup>131</sup> (d) individual funds,<sup>132</sup> and (e) tribal membership.<sup>133</sup>

In upholding the power of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to require bill collectors to remain away from the Indian agency on the days when payments were being made, Mr. Justice Van Dwyer, then on the Circuit Court of Appeals, wrote in *Brinbon v Young* 101 Fed 835 (C.C.A.S. 1905).

\* \* \* we turn to the statutes bearing upon the authority of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs and in considering them it is well to remember as was said in *United States v. Macdonald*

7171 P 12 & L Ed 887 that the action at the instigation of the duplicitous of the government must convince every person that the limit of a department in the distribution of its duties and responsibilities is limited to the extent of its powers by the law, but it does not follow that it must show satisfactory provision for everything that may be done. No other than the law is the limit of its power. To attempt to attribute by law the minimum movements of every person is the same as to attempt to attribute by law the maximum movements of every person. It is not possible to do so. The law must not unduly limit action on the subject. Whilst the great outbursts of the movements may be checked out and limitations may be put on the action, the law must not be so framed as to which must be done that this must be, interrupted and defined and which is essential to the proper action of the government.

[illegible]

We also United States ex rel West v. Lithkoek, 205 U S 80 (1907) Memo Col I D, February 28, 1985 which refers to United States v. Chapos 85 Fed 575, 577 (D C Ore 1888), Adams v. Freeman 50 Fm 135 138 (1897), Memo Col I D August 30 1985 Op Rel I D 25 97750 July 14 1944 32 Op I D 388 (1941).

<sup>1</sup> See sec 9, *infra*.

150 See sec 12, infra

199 Sep 500 11 *infra*

190 Fed. 289 (C.C.A. 8, 1911), 109 d.iss. *United States v. Leeow*.

<sup>174</sup> Derived from Act of March 3, 1849, 9 Stat. 1075, 5 U.S.C. 495.

<sup>276</sup> In *Lottery v. United States*, 274 U.S. 570 (1921), modified and affirmed.

226 E.D. 5 (11 C.A.S. 519), the Supreme Court upheld the validity of regulations covering the disposal of restricted funds which were subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior by the Act of June 28 1906 see 7 84 Stat. 539, on the ground that "The regulations appear to be consistent with the statute appropriate to its execution, and in themselves reasonable."

In *United States v. Brydson*, 233 U.S. 221 (1914) 1097 200 Fed. 815 (D. C. N. D. Iowa 1913), the regulation challenged and upheld dealt with the conduct of departmental employees and was authorized by Revised Statutes § 4054 26 U.S.C. § 31 derived from Act of June 30, 1914 sec. 7 1 Stat. 736, Act of June 7, 1870 sec. 4 9 Stat. 137 and Act of February 27 1861, sec. 5 9 Stat. 687.

<sup>1</sup> See notes 1-11 *supra*.

<sup>18</sup> Chief Justice Hughes (then associate justice), in describing the functions of the Office of Indian Affairs, said in *United States v. Bodanil*, 219 U.S. 223 (1914), 114 F.2d 818 (D.C.N.D. Iowa, 1913).

\* \* \* The object of the establishment of the office was to create an administrative agency with broad powers adequate to the execution of the policy of the Government, as determined by the acts of Congress with respect to the Indians under its guardianship. \* \* \* (P. 282)

\* \* \* In executing the powers of the Indian Office, there necessarily a wide range for administrative discretion and in determining the scope of official action regard must be had to the authority conferred, and thus, as we have seen embraced

## A ACQUISITION

Section 3 of the Wheeler Howard Act<sup>18</sup> provides

The Secretary of the Interior if he shall find it to be in the public interest, is hereby authorized to restore to tribal ownership the remaining surplus lands of any Indian reservation heretofore opened, or authorized to be opened, to sale, or any other form of disposal by Presidential proclamation, or by any of the public land laws.

<sup>200</sup> Act of June 18, 1934, 48 Stat. 984, 985, 25 U.S.C. 469.

of the United States. *Provided, however* That valid rights of claims of any persons to any lands so within are existing on the date of the withdrawal of shall not be affected by this Act. *Provided further*, That this section shall not apply to lands within any reservation except hereafter authorized in any law in reservation.

This provision was originally framed in mandatory language, but was amended to make the reservation a discretion on the part of the Secretary. The administrative determination of this question may be guided by the fact among others that the protection of the property rights of the tribes is a federal function in which the public interest is interested.<sup>17</sup>

A second method by which the Secretary of the Interior is authorized to acquire lands for Indian tribes is set forth in section 5 of the Wheeler Howard Act.<sup>18</sup> This section authorizes the Secretary

in his discretion, to acquire through purchase, relinquishment, gift, exchange or assignment any interest in lands, water rights or surface right in lands, within or without existing reservations including trust and otherwise restricted allotments, whether the allottee be living or deceased, for the purpose of providing land for Indians.

The procedure followed under this authority and the status of lands thereby acquired are elsewhere discussed.<sup>19</sup>

### B LEASING

The Secretary of the Interior has no power to enter into or approve a lease without authority from either a treaty or a statute.<sup>20</sup> A few statutes permit the Secretary alone to make tribal leases for land rights,<sup>21</sup> but the law covering the leasing of most tribal land permits the tribal council to lease the lands subject to the approval of the Secretary.<sup>22</sup> Some of these statutes have been recently summarized by the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior.<sup>23</sup> Under existing laws,<sup>24</sup> and under

many tribal charters<sup>25</sup> adopted pursuant to the Wheeler Howard Act,<sup>26</sup> the tribal council has a right to make leases and permits on its own initiative subject to the approval of the Department. Under most of the statutes it is held that the Secretary is in a quasi-judicial capacity in acting upon the recommendations of the superintendent and the actions of the tribal council regarding these leases, and hence cannot delegate this function to the superintendent.<sup>27</sup> It has been administratively held that the determination of the council should be conclusive upon the Department of the Interior if at least in the absence of evidence of mistake, fraud, or undue influence.<sup>28</sup>

### C ALIENATION

The general prohibition against alienation of tribal lands is elsewhere analyzed.<sup>29</sup> These restrictions upon alienation apply to tribal administrative officers, as well as to tribal individuals and to interests less than a fee as well as to conveyances in fee simple.<sup>30</sup> Thus in the absence of express statutory authorization, the Secretary of the Interior has no power to diminish the tribal estate by withdrawing a right of way for the construction of irrigation ditches.<sup>31</sup> Congress, however, has conferred upon administrative authorities various statutory powers to make interests in tribal land less than a fee, particularly easements and rights of way.<sup>32</sup> Generally these statutes do not make tribal consent a condition to the validity of the alienation but as a practical administrative matter tribal consent is frequently made a condition of the grant.<sup>33</sup>

179, 197, 198, and 402 violations covering the leasing of tribal lands for mining purposes approved April 11, 1939 section 2, note 114, *Indian Reservations and Allotments* 2:1975 section 6, note 75, *Department of Interior* 14 at pages 70-76.

The Secretary with departmental approval seems to have the right of tribal land to individual members of the tribe or to particular individuals. Such easements may be made for personal use and occupancy or they may permit leasing to outside individuals and agricultural operations.

The tribe has no right to let any part of the reservation without departmental approval. So too the individual Indian has no right to make a lease giving any part of the reservation without departmental approval.

The Secretary may withdraw any approval from any lease, permit or easement which does not do substantial justice to the Indians of the tribe as a whole and the individual Indians who may have been prejudicially in particular cases.

Also see Chapter 15, notes 19 and 20. On the power of the President to authorize the sale or other disposition of dead timber on reservations see Act of February 10, 1889, 25 Stat. 671, 25 U. S. C. 156.

18 Act of June 7, 1931, sec. 27, 46 Stat. 64. Act of May 29, 1904, 4 Stat. 244, 25 U. S. C. 198 interpreted in *British American Co. v. Board*, 290 U. S. 179 (1930).

19 See Chapter 15, notes 19 and 20. Some tribal charters require departmental approval of leases but not of permits. *Ibid.* see 20.

20 See Chapter 15, notes 19 and 20. Some permits like grazing permits for tribal lands are frequently issued by the superintendent and then approved by the governing body of the tribe.

21 See Chapter 15, note 22, 1937 containing a discussion of the principles which should guide administrative practice. Also see *White Iron v. Birch* 61 Mont. 422, 506 P. 717 (1931).

Although an official lease of tribal lands was signed by the Secretary and it was held that the Secretary cannot make such lease without securing the approval of the Indian tribe. *Memo Sol. I. D.*, July 19, 1937.

22 See Chapter 15, note 19.

23 See *Memo Sol. I. D.*, September 2, 1938, *Memo Sol. I. D.* September 6, 1934, and *Memo Sol. I. D.*, March 11, 1935. See also 25 C. F. R. 220.81.

24 See *Memo Sol. I. D.*, April 13, 1940 (Fairhead).

25 See 25 U. S. C. 11-122.

26 See 25 C. F. R. 250.24, 250.75, 250.88.

17 *Memo Sol. I. D.*, September 29, 1937, *Op. Sol. I. D.*, March 27, 1938, June 17, 1938. See also *Op. Sol. I. D.*, March 26, 1938, February 29, 1938.

18 This power to the power of this section the Secretary of the Interior has adequate authority to withdraw lands from the public domain for public purposes.

19 Act of June 25, 1910, 36 Stat. 836, 48 Stat. 1547 relating to "public lands." The authority to make temporary withdrawals was expressly preserved by sec. 4 of the Act of March 3, 1927, 44 Stat. 1547 which provides:

"That hereafter chapters in the boundaries of reservations are and by Executive order proclamation or otherwise for the use and occupancy of Indians shall not be made except by Act of Congress. *Provided* That this shall not apply to temporary withdrawals made by the Secretary of the Interior."

*Memo Sol. I. D.*, September 27, 1934.  
20 For discussion of tribal property see Chapter 15.  
21 48 Stat. 984, 985, 25 U. S. C. 165.

22 See Chapter 15, note 19. See also *Memo Sol. I. D.*, August 14, 1937, *Memo Sol. I. D.*, September 29, 1937.  
23 See 25 U. S. C. 214, 220 (1901).

24 18 U. S. C. 237 (1887), 19 U. S. C. 496 (1886). It has been customary to withdraw tribal lands from tribal lands which could not be leased under the statutes in order to preserve the value of the lands and to obtain a revenue from them either then allowing them to be sold.

25 *Memo Sol. I. D.*, February 12, 1937.  
26 Act of June 28, 1908, sec. 19, 30 Stat. 495 (Indian Text). Statutes of this nature concerning mining or leasing, are described in Chapter 15, note 19.

27 Act of February 28, 1891, 26 Stat. 794, sec. 9, 25 U. S. C. 897, as amended by Act of August 15, 1894, sec. 1, 28 Stat. 286, 29 U. S. C. 402. Also see Act of May 11, 1905, sec. 1, 32 Stat. 447, 25 U. S. C. 801 and Chapter 15, note 19.

28 *Memo Sol. I. D.*, October 27, 1938.

29 Leases in permits covering use of tribal lands, entry on residence, taxation or removal of resources therefrom may be executed through the concurrent action of the tribe and the Secretary of the Interior, or be directly authorized representative under the following statutes and regulations: United States Code, title 25, sections

Where statutory authority for the issuance of title of ways exists, it has been administratively held that such authority is not repeated by section 4 of the Act of June 18, 1934.<sup>10</sup> In thus construing the Act of June 18, 1934 the Solicitor for the Interior Department declared:<sup>11</sup>

"The only limitations which the Department has imposed upon the exercise of authority conferred by such specific acts of Congress are: (1) a tribe organized under section 16 may vote the title and under the broad powers given it by that section to prevent the sale, disposition, lease, or encumbrance of tribal lands, interests in lands, or other tribal assets without the consent of the tribe; and (2) a tribe incorporated under section 17 may be given the power to make such sale without restriction."

Although the intent of an enactment is held to be outside the prohibition of section 4 of the Act of June 18, 1934, it would appear that section 16 of the act<sup>12</sup> requires the consent of an organized tribe to any act of title of ways which the Secretary is authorized to make.<sup>13</sup> Tribal consent is likewise required

<sup>10</sup> 19 Stat. 961, 962, 27 U. S. C. 164.

<sup>11</sup> Memo Sol. I D September 2, 1936.

<sup>12</sup> 48 Stat. 960, 27 U. S. C. 476.

<sup>13</sup> See 27 C. F. R. 260.3.

## SECTION 10. ADMINISTRATIVE POWER—TRIBAL FUNDS<sup>14</sup>

In defining the scope of federal administrative power over tribal funds it is important to bear in mind certain distinctions between various classes of funds, all of which are, in some sense of the word, tribal.

Funds which an Indian tribe has derived from its own members or from third parties without the interposition of the Federal Government, as where tribal authorities hold title of dance and charge admission, etc., in a very real sense, "tribal," yet if it has never been held that federal administrative authorities have any control over such funds.<sup>15</sup>

A second class of funds which may be called "tribal" comprises those funds held in the treasury of a tribe which has become incorporated under section 17 of the Act of June 18, 1934,<sup>16</sup> or organized under section 16 of that act.<sup>17</sup> In both cases the scope of departmental power with respect to such funds is marked out by the provisions of tribal constitution or charter. Typically, departmental review is required where the financial transactions exceed a fixed level of magnitude or importance, but not in lesser matters. In the case of incorporated tribes, such departmental supervisory powers are generally temporary.<sup>18</sup>

<sup>14</sup> The Act of April 1, 1880, c. 41, 21 Stat. 70, provided:

"That the Secretary of the Interior is and he is hereby is authorized to deposit in the Treasury of the United States, any and all sums now held by him of which may hereafter be received by him as Secretary of the Interior and trust of various Indian tribes, on account of the redemption of United States bonds or other stocks and securities belonging to Indian tribe fund and all sums received on account of sales of Indian trust lands and the sales of stock lands purchased for temporary use, in trust whenever by so of the opinion that the best interests of the Indians will be promoted by such deposits in lieu of interest payments and the United States shall not interest from the date of deposit of any and all such sums in the United States Treasury at the rate per annum stipulated by treaties or agreements as each may become due without further appropriation by Congress."

Prior to the enactment of this law, the Secretary of the Interior invested tribal funds in various kinds of bonds, including at one time some of which were defaulted.

It has been suggested that the Federal Government might have suit on behalf of its funds in a name a legal distribution of such funds, but there is no decision on this point. See Memo Sol. I D November 18, 1930 (Alm Springs).

<sup>15</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 23 and 24.

<sup>16</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 23.

<sup>17</sup> See sec. 23 and 24.

287785-41—9

where the Secretary of the Interior seeks to set aside tribal funds for reservation purposes for an irrigation project.<sup>19</sup>

It is true that the United States in its sovereign capacity may condemn tribal land for certain purposes and may even appropriate tribal lands by act of Congress subject to constitutional requirements of compensation. But the rights and powers with respect to tribal property outlined in the Constitution and Charter of the Confederated Tribes and Reservations Tribes are effective against officers of the United States and in some cases direct in matters of Congress. Indeed, unless officers of the Department can be restrained by the tribe from disposing of tribal property all meaning has vanished from the provision in section 16 of the Indian Reorganization Act that in an organized tribe the power "to prevent the sale, disposition, lease, or encumbrance of tribal lands, interests in lands, or other tribal assets without the consent of the tribe." The only persons against whom this provision can be directed are officers of the United States. Private individuals may have had the power to sell tribal land or to dispose of tribal assets. If then, the restrictions contained in the above-quoted provision do not run against the United States, they are meaningless and the constitution in previous enacted in accordance therewith in a false promise.

<sup>19</sup> Memo Sol. I D July 5, 1936. And see 25 C. F. R. 266-44.

A third class of funds consists of monies held in the Treasury of the United States in trust for an Indian tribe. It is this class of funds which is customarily referred to under the phrase "tribal funds." These funds arise from two sources, in brief:

1. Payments promised by the Federal Government to the tribe for lands ceded or other valuable consideration, usually arising out of a treaty, and
2. Payments made to federal officials by lessees, land purchase, or other private parties in exchange for some benefit, generally tribal land or interests therein.<sup>20</sup>

In view of the fact that the land itself was subject to a considerable measure of control, it was not found to find a similar control placed over the funds into which tribal lands were transferred. Congress has in general, reserved complete power over the disposition of these funds, requiring that such expenditure of such funds be made pursuant to an appropriation act, although this restriction has been relaxed for certain favored purposes.<sup>21</sup> Thus it is disclosed that if administrative authority for any disbursement of "tribal funds," in the strict sense, must be derived from the language of some annual appropriation act or from the statutes which are, in effect, permanent appropriations of tribal funds for specified purposes.<sup>22</sup>

<sup>20</sup> See Chapter 1 sec. 1 Chapter 2 sec. 2, Chapter 3 sec. 3(c) (Chapter 15 sec. 23). The payment and distribution of such is a ministerial duty enforceable by mandamus if the Secretary is arbitrary or capricious. *Block v. United States* 19 F. 2d 820 (App. D C 1927); *Cliff United States v. Osborn v. Work* 15 F. 2d 822 (App. D C 1927); *United States v. Clifford v. Work* 15 F. 2d 822 (App. D C 1927).

<sup>21</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 24.

<sup>22</sup> The Act of May 18, 1918, sec. 27, 40 Stat. 1213, 158, 109 requires specific congressional appropriation for expenditures of tribal funds except as follows:

"... Reimbursement of allotments, education of Indian children in accordance with existing law, and capital and other payments, all of which are hereby continued in full force and effect."

See Chapter 15 sec. 24. Provisions relating to the deposit or investment of funds are numerous. For example the Secretary of the Interior is authorized to "invest in a manner which shall be in his judgment most wise, and beneficial for the fund, all moneys that may be received under treaties containing stipulations for the payment to the Indians, annually or infrequently upon the proceeds of the lands ceded by them, and he shall make no investment of such moneys, or of any portion, at a lower rate

Among the most important of the pertinent authorizations to the disbursement of tribal funds, the three statutes providing for the division and apportionment of tribal funds among the members of the tribe.<sup>11</sup>

While any administrative control over these funds must be based on statutory authority, it is not necessary, nor is it indeed possible, that every detail of the expenditure shall be expressly covered by statute.<sup>12</sup>

The Court of Claims in the case of *Creek Nation v. United States*<sup>13</sup> said

\* \* \* The Secretary of the Interior has only such authority over the funds of Indian tribes as is conferred in him by Congress. It cannot legally disburse and pay out Indian funds for purposes other than those authorized by law. This rule is the test by which the legality of the Secretary of the Interior to make the disbursements involved must be determined. The contention, however, that the Secretary of the Interior could legally pay the only such disbursements as were expressly authorized by Congress must be conceded. The authorities cited in plaintiff's brief in support of this contention, when considered in the light of the precise questions presented, do not sustain it.

of interest than 5 per centum per annum" (25 U. S. C. 178 ff. & 2000 derived from Act of June 14, 1834, 5 Stat. 617, as amended by Act of January 9, 1837, sec. 4, 5 Stat. 13.)

There is no such special statutory authority, in the disposition of tribal funds. See, for example, the Act of June 29, 1834, 49 Stat. 731, providing:

"That tribal funds now on deposit on loan paid to the credit of the Creek Tribe of Indians, hereinafter may be used for the benefit of the tribe in such other purposes as may be sanctioned by the tribal council and approved by the Secretary of the Interior."

The Comptroller General has distinguished between two types of tribal funds:

"There are several classes of trust funds provided for by law the monies in which are placed for the use and benefit of Indian tribes. The following may serve as examples:

(a) Section 7 of the Act of January 11, 1889, (25 Stat. 642) provides that the net proceeds of sales of lands ceded to the United States by the Chippewa Indians shall be placed in the "tribe fund" to the credit of said Indians, a permanent fund which shall draw interest at the rate of 5 per centum per annum principal and interest to be expended for the benefit of said Indians.

(b) Section 5 of the Act of June 17, 1880, (21 Stat. 204), in appropriation of funds ceded to the United States, provides:

"That the Secretary of the Interior may shell out or any monies in the Treasury that otherwise appropriated, if appropriated and held as a perpetual trust fund for said Indians, an amount of money sufficient to form a fund to provide annuities for their and their heirs, which interest shall be paid to them per capita in cash annually."

"In monies in the general fund and also those in special funds are available for public expenditures. There is, however, an important distinction between the two classes of funds. Monies in the general fund can only be withdrawn from the Treasury in payment of an appropriation made by law. Monies in special funds, having been dedicated by Congress for expenditure for special objects, before they were received into the Treasury, in which they have been placed for safe keeping only, are subject to be withdrawn from the Treasury for expenditure for those objects, with out an appropriation of Congress (see 20 Stat. 700). It is true that in some instances, as in that of the *perpetual fund* called the "annuity fund" (1 supra), Congress has used the term "appropriation" in connection with monies to be expended special funds, but as the term is so applied to the monies before they are disbursed it is obvious that the term is used in a technical sense only for which the term "dedicated" appears to be more appropriate.

"Monies in trust funds may not properly be used for expenditures of the Government. They are available to be put in the use of the beneficiaries only. The beneficiaries may be either a single person or a class of persons. In the first class, the class of trust funds are known as the *perpetual funds* in the first class (a) were received directly from the donors. In the second class (b) were collected as interest on the United States' claims with the trust. Those in the third class (c) were a gift of monies in the *general fund* of the Treasury in payment of a treaty. A treaty is not a gift for which the Comptroller Treasury has 305-106 (1907) )

<sup>11</sup> These statutes are discussed in Chapter 6, see 6, Chapter 10, sec. 8, Chapter 16, sec. 23.

<sup>12</sup> Act of May 18, 1928, sec. 27, 45 Stat. 122-128, together with a few exceptions specific congressional appropriation for tribal expenditures of tribal monies. The Act of May 27, 1918, sec. 27 and 28, 40 Stat. 681 authorizes the Secretary to invest restricted funds tribal or individual in United States Government bonds. Also see Chapter 15, sec. 21P.

<sup>13</sup> 73 C. Cls. 474 (1925). The lack of power of the Secretary to restore to the Creek Indian fund the funds erroneously expended for general benefit of tribe, see 10 Op. A. G. 31 (1878).

in it. The opinion of Attorney General Mitchell, October 5, 1928 (36 Op. Atty.-Gen. 185-190), in fact, reaffirms the contention, and in effect lays down the rule that the authority of the Secretary of the Interior over Indian property may arise from the necessary implication as well as from the express provisions of a statute. We think this is the correct rule, and will apply it in determining whether the Secretary of the Interior was authorized to make the payments in question. The authority of the Secretary of the Interior to make the payments, or his lack of authority to make them, must be found in the treaties between the United States and the Creek Nation, and the various acts of Congress dealing with Creek tribal affairs. (P. 485.)

Quite apart from the necessity of finding some statutory source for authority to expend funds held in the United States Treasury in trust for an Indian tribe, there are certain positive statutory limitations upon the ways in which such funds may be disbursed. These statutes, which are elsewhere listed, "limit the administrative authority derived from appropriation acts contained in conjunction with section 37 of the Act of June 30, 1834," which gave the President power to "prescribe such rules and regulations as he may think fit, for carrying into effect the various provisions of this act, and of any other act relating to Indian Affairs and for the settlement of the accounts of the Indian department."

Perhaps the most important of these statutory limitations in effect today is that imposed by section 16 of the Act of June 18, 1911,<sup>14</sup> which gives to organized tribes the right to prevent any disposition of its assets without the consent of the proper officers of the tribe. This includes the right to prevent disbursements of tribal funds by departmental officials, where the tribe has not consented to such disbursements. Unless in act of Congress authorizing disbursements of tribal funds expressly repeals relevant provisions of the Indian Reorganization Act, such an appropriation legislation does not nullify the power of the tribe to prevent such expenditure.<sup>15</sup>

There is a fourth category of funds which may be called "tribal funds" but which are subject neither to the uncontrolled (tribal power pertaining to the first class of funds discussed, to the defined tribal power of the second class, nor to the detailed congressional control pertaining to the third class. This fourth category includes funds which have accrued to administrative officials as a result of various Indian activities not specially recognized or regulated by act of Congress.

The Act of March 3, 1883,<sup>16</sup> as amended, provides:

"The proceeds of all pasturage and sales of timber, coal, or other product of any Indian reservation, except those of the five civilized tribes, and not the result of the labor of any members of such tribe, shall be covered into the Treasury in the benefit of such tribe under such regulations as the Secretary of the Interior shall prescribe, and the Secretary shall report his action in detail to Congress at its next session."

The Comptroller General in a report on Indian funds dated February 28, 1928,<sup>17</sup> stated:

\* \* \* The absolute control and almost indiscriminate use of these funds, through authority delegated to the several Indian agents by the Commissioner of Indian

<sup>14</sup> See Chapter 9, sec. 6, Chapter 10, sec. 5, Chapter 15, sec. 23.

<sup>15</sup> 44 Stat. 785, 788, 25 U. S. C. 5, continued to cover disbursement of tribal funds in 5 Op. A. G. 86 (1864).

<sup>16</sup> 48 Stat. 884.

<sup>17</sup> Memo. Sol. I. D. October 6, 1928.

<sup>18</sup> 22 Stat. 682, 690, amended Act of March 2, 1887, 24 Stat. 449, 405, Act of May 17, 1928, sec. 2, 44 Stat. 680, Act of May 20, 1928, sec. 68, 45 Stat. 985, 991, 25 U. S. C. 156.

<sup>19</sup> See, for example, 208 Congress. Rec. 41, 1928-29. For a discussion see American Indian Life, Bull. No. 14 (May 1929), American Defense Association, Inc., p. 19.

Affairs pursuant to section 463, Revised Statutes, is apparently timing complaint on the part of groups of Indians. (P 40)

The report also continued some evidence justifying the discontent of the Indians:

"Indian moneys, proceeds of labor were being used for such purposes as the purchase of adding machines and office equipment, furniture, rugs, dishes, etc., for employees' quarters, pepping and painting the Indian's tent, and the purchase of automobiles for the hold units. (P 40) "

The Comptroller General concluded that—

"... This condition has through the years of practice brought about a very broad interpretation of what constitutes "the benefit" of the Indian. (P 39) "

The Act of June 18, 1890,<sup>1</sup> provides

Sec 2 All tribal funds arising under the Act of March 3, 1883 (22 Stat 500), as amended by the Act of May 17,

<sup>1</sup> 26 Stat 500, 501

<sup>2</sup> Ibid

<sup>3</sup> 24 Stat 493, 40 Stat 544. There are 300 tribal "funds of principal held in trust by the United States in the Treasury (Department of the Treasury), Combined Statement of Receipts and Expenditures, Balance, etc.

## SECTION 11 ADMINISTRATIVE POWER—INDIVIDUAL LANDS

Administrative power over individual Indian lands is of particular importance at five points:

- (a) Approval of allotments,
- (b) Release of restrictions,
- (c) Probate of estates,
- (d) Issuance of rights of way,
- (e) Leasing

### A APPROVAL OF ALLOTMENTS

The statutes and treaties which confer upon individual Indians rights to allotments, as elsewhere discussed,<sup>1</sup> is the legislation governing jurisdiction over suits for allotments. "Within the fabric of rights and remedies thus defined there is a certain scope of administrative discretion" which is described in a recent ruling of the Solicitor for the Interior Department in these terms: "

"... The Secretary may for good reason refuse to approve an allotment selection, but he may not cancel his approval of an allotment except to correct error or to relieve fraud. Cf. *Onanese v. Kewac* (128 U S 430) (public land entry). It is very doubtful whether the Sec-

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 11 sec 2

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 19 sec 2

<sup>3</sup> The Act of March 3, 1885, sec 6, 23 Stat 840 (Cayuse and others) which authorizes the Secretary to determine all disputes and questions arising between Indians regarding their allotments, comprehends one of the many administrative powers over allotments. The Supreme Court in *Hy-Ya-Tee-Mi-Kin v. Smith*, 194 U S 401 (1904) said that if two Indians claim the same land, the allotment should be made in favor of the one whose priority of selection and residence and whose improvements on the land equitably entitle such person to the land (P 411)

The Court in the case of *Lo Roque v. United States*, 289 U S 62 (1915) said:

"... The regulations and decisions of the Secretary of the Interior, under whose supervision the act was to be administered, show that it was intended by that office as continuing the right of selection to living Indians and that he so instructed the allotting officers. While not conclusive, this construction given to the act in the course of its actual execution is entitled to great respect and ought not to be overruled without cogent and persuasive reasons. (P 64)

On the scope of discretion of the Secretary of the Interior in allotting see *Chase, Jr. v. United States*, 260 U S 1 (1922)

<sup>4</sup> Op Sol., I. D., M 28088, July 17, 1935. And see Memo Sol., I. D., September 17, 1934

1926 (44 Stat 560), now included in the fund Indian Money, Proceeds of Labor, shall, on and after July 1, 1930, be turned on the books of the Treasury Department in separate accounts for the respective tribes, and all such funds, with account balances exceeding \$500 shall bear simple interest at the rate of 4 per centum per annum from July 1, 1930

812-3 The amount held in any tribal fund account which, in the judgment of the Secretary of the Interior, is not required for the purpose for which the fund was created, shall be covered into the surplus fund of the Treasury, and so much thereof as is found to be necessary for such purpose may at any time be transferred to the account on books of the Treasury without appropriation by Congress

The extent to which funds which are still called "M P L" are subject to the statutory limitations applicable to tribal funds in the strict sense is an intricate problem upon which no opinion will be here ventured "

of the United States to Fiscal Year ended June 30 1930, pp 137-137, and 266 interest accounts which are created by the Treasury as general funds (Ibid pp 260-260) The Department of the Interior breaks down many of the principal funds into subsidiary classifications

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 17 sec 24A

policy would be privileged to retain allotment selections to tribal ownership—imply on the ground that the Wheeler-Howard Act possibly forbids the trust patenting of such selections

(2) Where the Secretary has approved an allotment, the ministerial duty arises to issue a patent. With approval his discretion is ended except, of course, for such reconsideration of his approval as he may find necessary (24 L D 264) Since only the routine matter of issuing a patent remains, the allottee after his allotment is approved is considered as having a vested right to the allotment as against the Government. *Rymond Ben Hill* (42 L D 689 (1923)) (Cf. Where a certificate of approval has issued, as in the *Pine Creek Tribe* case, *Beltinger v. Frost* (216 U S 240), and where right to a homestead is involved, *Stark v. Shaw* (6 Wall 402) ) And then the allottee may bring mandamus to obtain the patent. See *Truckee v. Richards-Osborne* (100 U S 120 Minn 806, 149 N W 288, 200 (1914)) *Of Lane v. Hoagland* (244 U S 174) *Butterworth v. United States* (112 U S 80), *Bancroft v. Dolph* (97 U S 602, 666)

(3) Where an allotment has not been approved, on the other hand, approval and the issuance of a patent cannot be compelled by mandamus. *West v. Hitchcock* (205 U S 80), *United States v. Hitchcock* (190 U S 316) But it is recognized that an allottee acquires rights in land with some of the incidents of ownership when the allotting agency have set apart allotments and he has made his selection. Until that time an Indian eligible for allotment is only a floating right which is personal to himself and dies with him. *La Roque v. United States* (240 U S 62) See *Philomme Smith* (44 L D 358, 327) The owner of an allotment selection, even before its approval, has an inheritable interest (*United States v. Chase* (245 U S 89), *Smith v. Bonifer* (166 Fed 848) (C C 8th, 1906)), which will be protected from the outside world (*Smith v. Bonifer*, *supra*) and which he can transfer within limits (*Henkel v. United States*, *supra*, *United States v. Chase*, *supra*), and which is sufficient to confer on him the privileges of State citizenship as granted to all "Indians" by the act of 24 Stat 388, 327 (*Smith v. Bonifer*, *supra*) Moreover, where the Government has issued an erroneous patent for the allotment selections, the owner of such selection will be protected in his right against the adverse interests possessing the patent (*Hy-Ya-Tee-Mi-Kin v. Smith* (191 U S 401), *Smith v. Bonifer* (182 Fed 889) (C C 10th 1904), 166 Fed 848 (C C 8th, 1906)), and against the Government itself (*Conroy v.*

<sup>120</sup> See Chapter 11, sec. 1.

embodied in various treaties<sup>10</sup> and statutes<sup>11</sup> that preceded the General Allotment Act.

At the present time restrictions upon alienation of allotments are in general of two kinds: (1) the "trust patent" and (2) the "restricted fee".

(1) Under the General Allotment Act and related legislation, the allottee receives what is called a "trust patent", the effect being that the United States retains legal title to the land. Alienation of the land, therefore, requires either the consent of the United States to the alienation or is ipso facto void and conveys no interest in the allottee.

Section 2 of the General Allotment Act<sup>12</sup> provided that if the expiration of 25 years in the trust should terminate and a fee patent should be issued.<sup>13</sup> The President, however, was given discretionary authority to extend this period,<sup>14</sup> and by the Act of May 8, 1906,<sup>15</sup> the Secretary of the Interior was given power to issue a patent in fee simple whenever he shall be satisfied that any Indian allottee is competent and capable of managing his or her affairs.<sup>16</sup> Finally, the Act of June 25, 1910,<sup>17</sup> authorized the Secretary to sell trust patented lands in fee simple.

The Act of May 8, 1906, did not in terms require the consent of the Indian allottee as a condition to the issuance of a patent in fee simple by the Secretary of the Interior. Undoubtedly the policy of postponing the "reversion" of the Indian in many fee patents was imposed without Indian application and even over Indian protest.<sup>18</sup> Many years later the courts held that the Act of May 8, 1906, had not been properly construed, that no patent could properly be issued prior to the expiration of the trust period without the consent of the Indian, and that fees paid by the Indians upon lands thus patented without Indian consent might be recovered.<sup>19</sup> In the case of *United States v. Perry County, Utah*,<sup>20</sup> the court declared, after reviewing numerous authorities:

The United States as trustee may not liquidate the trust without the consent of the allottee, and the Act of May 8, 1906, on which defendants rely must have so intended. *U. S. v. Benish County, Idaho*, 9 Oit., 290 F. 628 (P. 100).

Congress has taken cognizance of the error involved in the assumption by the Interior Department of power to issue fee

patents without Indian consent and has authorized appropriations to repay, to Indians taxes paid on such lands and to repay to county authorities judgments obtained in favor of Indians paying such taxes.<sup>21</sup>

The Secretary's authority to sell trust patented lands was revoked, except for sales to Indian tribes, and exclusive of patent of equal value by Section 4 of the Act of June 15, 1911, on those reservations to which that statute applies. The Secretary of the Interior, however, still has power to issue a fee patent to the holder of a trust patent in advance of the expiration of the 25 year period if he is satisfied that the allottee makes application therefor. Section 2 of the same Act extended the trust period "until otherwise directed by Congress."

A second form of restriction upon the alienability of allotments involves the holding of a fee patent by the allottee undivided which prevents alienation without the consent of some representative officer, usually the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>22</sup> Such tenure for instance, is provided by various statutes dealing with allotments among the Five Civilized Tribes.<sup>23</sup> The alienation of land by federal authorities for individual Indians has frequently been effected by means of the secretarial deeds.<sup>24</sup> Section 2 of the Act of June 15, 1911,<sup>25</sup> extends the period of such restrictions indefinitely until Congress shall otherwise provide, but does not prohibit the termination of such period by mutual agreement between the Indian and the appropriate administrative official. Alienation of allotments held in fee simple subject to restrictions on alienation may be authorized by the Secretary of the Interior, prior to the expiration of the statutory period, under the Act of March 3, 1907.<sup>26</sup> Issuance of a "certificate of competency" prior to the expiration of the statutory period is authorized by the Act of June 25, 1910.<sup>27</sup> As in the case of trust

<sup>10</sup> Act of June 11, 1910 (Pub. No. 790-76th Cong.). See, for a history of this enormous expenditure of multiple treaty and statutory provisions in the field of reservation, 14 Sept. No. 809, 76th Cong., 1st sess. (P. 1019).

<sup>11</sup> 55 Stat. 934, 25 U. S. C. 461.

<sup>12</sup> The power delegated to the Secretary of the Interior to approve the alienation of restricted property cannot generally be transmitted or delegated to any other governmental agency. Op. Sol. D. M. 27298, June 26, 1929. *United States v. White*, 102 F. 2d 128 (C. C. A. 10, 1936).

<sup>13</sup> See Chapter 21, sec. 85.

<sup>14</sup> The Secretary of the Interior may impose restrictions on land purchased by him for an Indian from restricted money. *United States v. House*, 8 B. 2d 561 (C. C. A. 9, 1913) (C. C. A. 10, 1913). See also *United States v. House*, 8 B. 2d 561 (C. C. A. 9, 1913) (C. C. A. 10, 1913). Money paid under a lease of allotted lands. In *United States v. House*, 8 B. 2d 561 (C. C. A. 9, 1913) (C. C. A. 10, 1913), the court held that the Secretary of the Interior has the power to invest them in land subject to the condition against alienation. A similar theory is advanced to justify the power of the Secretary in restricted lands purchased with money paid for allotted lands. See *Handland v. United States*, 266 U. S. 126 (1921) (money paid for allotted lands).

<sup>15</sup> On the problem of taxation under this theory see Chapter 19, sec. 80.

<sup>16</sup> 48 Stat. 181, 25 U. S. C. 482.

<sup>17</sup> 48 Stat. 1075, 1078, 25 U. S. C. 405. On the effective dates of Secretarial approval of a deed see 611 D. 412 (10-1-1911).

<sup>18</sup> See 1, 98 Stat. 885, 25 U. S. C. 372.

<sup>19</sup> The Circuit Court of Appeals in *Wash. Post*, 90 F. 2d 25 (C. C. A. 9, 1915), set aside 406 U. S. 641 (1940), in holding that the issuance of a certificate of competency under the Act of June 25, 1910, 88 Stat. 875, does not satisfy the requirement for the issuing of a patent in fee simple.

<sup>20</sup> The scope and expressed purpose of the Act of 1910 is narrow and definite. It reads: "The Secretary of the Interior is authorized to issue a certificate of competency to any Indian (or in case of his death to his heirs) to whom a patent in fee simple has been issued, and such certificate shall have the effect of removing the restrictions on alienation hereinafter provided in fee simple subject to the condition of one who has received a patent in fee simple 'under any law or treaty'." 88 Stat. 875. Since Congress expressly provided that the Secretary of the Interior is competent and capable of managing his own affairs, it is a condition precedent to the issue of a patent in fee simple, it would seem to be fatal, violence to legislative intent to this Court to substitute a certificate of competency for both

<sup>21</sup> Thus, for example, Article 9 of the Treaty of September 30, 1854, with the Chippewas of the Lake Superior, authorized the President to impose restrictions upon allotted lands. In *State v. Campbell*, 205 U. S. 827 (1908), it was held that these restrictions covered the disposition of timber.

<sup>22</sup> See Chapter 11, sec. 1.

<sup>23</sup> See Chapter 11, sec. 1. Also see Chapter 4, sec. 11.

<sup>24</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 388, 389, amended, Act of March 3, 1901, sec. 9, 48 Stat. 1038, 1067, 25 U. S. C. 468.

<sup>25</sup> No the effect that upon the expiration of the trust period there then results nothing to be done but the purely ministerial duty of making the legal title on the person or persons to whom such title belongs. See Op. Sol. D. M. 5279, July 14, 1921, Op. Sol. D. M. 7022, April 27, 1922, but of 80 U. S. 298 (1900).

<sup>26</sup> Act of June 25, 1910, 88 Stat. 885, 25 U. S. C. 391. In *United States v. Johnson*, 290 U. S. 183 (1934) the Supreme Court held that presidential powers under this provision extended to Indian public domain homesteads.

It has been held that when the trust period has expired it cannot be imposed in the guise of an "extension" without express statutory authority. *Reynolds v. United States*, 252 Fed. 67 (C. C. A. 9, 1915) (and see *United States v. Reynolds*, 250 U. S. 104 (1919) on another ground). Op. Sol. D. M. 27048, April 9, 1915. Cf. *McGuffy v. United States*, 240 U. S. 284 (1916). For an example of such a statute see Act of February 20, 1927, 44 Stat. 1247, 25 U. S. C. 302.

<sup>27</sup> 84 Stat. 182, 25 U. S. C. 849.

<sup>28</sup> See 1, 98 Stat. 875, amended Act of March 8, 1928, 45 Stat. 181, amended, Act of April 30, 1934, 48 Stat. 847, 25 U. S. C. 878.

<sup>29</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 87.

<sup>30</sup> See Chapter 18, sec. 33.

<sup>31</sup> 24 F. Supp. 409 (D. C. B. D. Wash. 1938).





land or restricted allotment, under regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior. (*Treaty States v. Boulton et al.*, 256 U. S. 484.) (Pp. 415-416.)

(2) *Will*—Prior to 1910 an Indian will could not by will devise his restricted land.

Section 2 of the Act of June 25, 1910,<sup>86</sup> as amended by the Act of February 14, 1915,<sup>87</sup> provides for the payment of restricted lands by will, in accordance with rules prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior, and the devise of allotments "prior to the expiration of the trust period and before the issue of a fee simple patent," but in order to be valid, the will must be approved by the Secretary either before or after the testator's death.<sup>88</sup>

If, for some reason, the will should not be approved by the Secretary, the property descends to those who are named by him to be heirs under the laws of the state where it is located. Death of the testator and approval of the will does not release the property from the trust. The Secretary may pay the money to the legatees either in whole or in part from time to time as he may deem advisable, or use it for their benefit.<sup>89</sup>

The decision in *Blount v. Cardin*<sup>90</sup> holds that if the will is approved by the Secretary of the Interior and such approval remains unrevoked by him, the state law of descent and distribution does not apply and the state law cannot control as to the portions the will converts or as to the objects of the testator's bounty.

#### D ISSUANCE OF RIGHTS-OF-WAY

Many statutes have granted the Secretary of the Interior various duties and powers in regard to rights of way through Indian lands. The Act of March 3, 1901,<sup>91</sup> authorized the Secretary to grant permission to the proper state or local authority for the establishment of public highways through any Indian reservation or through restricted Indian lands which had been allotted in severalty to any individual Indian under any law or treaty. The Act of March 2, 1899,<sup>92</sup> authorized the Secretary to grant rights-of-way for railway, telegraph, and telephone lines, and town-site stations.<sup>93</sup> It was required that the Secretary approve the surveys and maps of the line of route of the railroad and

(if compensation be made to each occupant or allottee for all property taken or damage done to his land, claim, or improvement, by reason of the construction of such railroad).<sup>94</sup> In the absence of suitable settlement with any such occupant or allottee, the Secretary was empowered to appoint three disinterested referees to determine the compensation.<sup>95</sup> An aggrieved party was permitted judicial review.<sup>96</sup> The Secretary was also authorized to grant a right of way in the nature of an easement for the construction of telephone and telegraph lines, to acquire lands for reservoirs or material for railroads,<sup>97</sup> and rights of way for pipe lines.<sup>98</sup>

The necessity for the consent of the Secretary has occasionally been a major point in judicial decisions. In such a case the Circuit Court of Appeals said:

The third question can be briefly disposed of. The United States, the holder of the title to the lands in question, was not made a party to the proceedings in the state court, and consequently is not bound by those proceedings had behind its back. (*Appalachian Electric Power Co. v. Smith* (U. S. 4th Cir. 67 F. (2d) 451, 106, *Wood v. Phillips* (U. S. 4th Cir. 120 F. (2d) 714, 717.) It is a roadway over the Indian lands, it is desired, applicable there should have been made to the Secretary of the Interior pursuant to provision of the Act of March 8, 1901, § 4, 31 Stat. 1078, 1084 (25 U. S. C. § 811). A right of way could no more be acquired over these lands by proceedings against the Indians, than it can in lands embraced in a government forest could be tried by suit against the forest, nor then post office property could be condemned for purposes of a street by proceedings against the postmaster. In *Hollins v. Eastern Land of Cherokee Indians*, 57 N. C. 249, it was held that if the courts of the state of North Carolina, without the consent of Congress, were without jurisdiction to entertain suit on contract against these Indians. A fortiori, the state courts, without such consent, have no jurisdiction of proceedings affecting land held by the United States in trust for the Indians. (Pp. 814-815.)

#### E LEASING

Approval of leases of restricted Indian lands is an important administrative function.<sup>99</sup> The Supreme Court said in *Miller v. McClinton*:<sup>100</sup>

By a course of legislation beginning in 1891 and extending to 1900, authority was conferred upon the Secretary of the Interior to sanction, when enumerated and exceptional conditions existed, leases of land allotted under the Act of 1887, and the power was given to the Secretary to adopt rules and regulations governing the exercise of the right

<sup>86</sup> 36 Stat. 876, interpreted in 40 L. D. 120 (1911), 40 L. D. 212 (1911), and 48 L. D. 468 (1922).

<sup>87</sup> 37 Stat. 678.

<sup>88</sup> To facilitate the adjudication of heirship Indians over the age of 21 may dispose of restricted property by will but the approval of the Secretary of the will is necessary before it is regarded as a valid testamentary act. The final approval of the will is not given until after the death of the decedent. 26 C. F. B. 81-84, 81-85. Prior to the death of the maker the Secretary only passes on the form of the will. Before and after the death of the testator the authority of the Secretary of the Interior is limited to the approval or disapproval of an Indian will, and he lacks authority to change its provisions. Act of June 25, 1910, 36 Stat. 876, amended Act of February 14, 1915, 37 Stat. 678. On Secretary's power to grant a rehearing, see *Yvond v. Jandron*, 24 F. 2d 613 (App. D. C. 1928).

<sup>89</sup> Act of June 25, 1910, as amended by Act of February 14, 1915, 37 Stat. 678.

<sup>90</sup> See *Blount v. Cardin*, 256 U. S. 819 (1921).

<sup>91</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>92</sup> On regulations relating to rights of way over Indian lands, see 26 C. F. B. pt. 266. On regulations relating to the construction and maintenance of roads on Indian lands, see 26 C. F. B. pt. 261. On regulations relating to establishment of roadless and wild areas on Indian reservations, see 26 C. F. B. pt. 261.

<sup>93</sup> See 4, 31 Stat. 1088, 1086, 25 U. S. C. § 811. For a statute requiring state authorities laying out roadless areas restricted Indian lands to secure consent of superintendent, see Act of March 4, 1915, 39 Stat. 1188.

<sup>94</sup> See 1, 30 Stat. 900, as amended by Act of February 28, 1902, sec. 28, 32 Stat. 48, 50, Act of June 25, 1910, sec. 16, 36 Stat. 885, 889, 25 U. S. C. § 812.

<sup>95</sup> The Secretary had also been given many powers and duties by numerous acts granting rights of way through Indian territory to specific railways. See e.g., Act of March 2, 1897, 24 Stat. 446.

<sup>96</sup> Act of March 2, 1899, sec. 3, 30 Stat. 900, 901, as amended by Act of February 28, 1902, sec. 28, 32 Stat. 48, 50, 25 U. S. C. § 814. The Secretary had power to authorize the construction of a railroad across an Indian reservation prior to the acquisition (and leasing) and payment of compensation as provided by statute. 19 Op. A. G. 100 (1888).

<sup>97</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>98</sup> *Ibid.* For the power of the Secretary in the event of the failure of the railroad to complete the road on time, see Act of March 2, 1899, sec. 4, 30 Stat. 900, 901, 25 U. S. C. § 815.

<sup>99</sup> Act of March 8, 1901, sec. 8, 31 Stat. 1088, 1088, 25 U. S. C. § 819, interpreted in *Boyd v. Washington Water Power Co.*, 226 U. S. 822 (1924), *City of Tulsa v. Southwestern Bell Telephone Co.*, 75 F. 2d 343 (C. C. A. 10, 1938), cert. den. 296 U. S. 744 (1938).

<sup>100</sup> Act of March 8, 1909, 35 Stat. 781, amended by Act May 6, 1910, 36 Stat. 849, 25 U. S. C. § 820.

<sup>101</sup> Act of March 11, 1904, sec. 1, 38 Stat. 65, amended by Act of March 2, 1917, sec. 1, 39 Stat. 900, 25 U. S. C. § 821.

<sup>102</sup> *United States v. Cohen et al.*, 80 F. 2d 512 (C. C. A. 4, 1937). An extended discussion of administrative control appears in *United States v. Minnesota*, 65 F. 2d 168 (C. C. A. 8, 1938) pp. 471-472. The Supreme Court, in affirming the decision, 406 U. S. 882 (1988), did not consider the question of administrative consent and affirmed the case on other grounds.

<sup>103</sup> The congressional delegation of this power to the Secretary of the Interior has been sustained. See *Bunch v. Scoy*, 268 U. S. 200 (1925).

<sup>104</sup> 249 U. S. 308 (1919).



In some cases Congress has laid down a policy requiring the consent of Indians to modifications of contracts affecting them.<sup>1</sup>

Some statutes<sup>2</sup> empower the Secretary to renew leases upon such reasonable terms and conditions<sup>3</sup> as he may prescribe. In continuation, a provision in such a statute, the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior said:<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Timber contracts, Act of March 1, 1915, 43 Stat. 1369, Chap. Soil I D M 27499, August 8, 1915.

<sup>2</sup> See, for example, Act of August 21, 1916, 39 Stat. 519 (Shoshone Indian Reservation).

<sup>3</sup> Memo. Sol. I D. June 1, 1918.

## SECTION 12 ADMINISTRATIVE POWER—INDIVIDUAL FUNDS

Statutes restricting the Indian in the use of his funds may provide for the investment of his funds under the direction of the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>5</sup> The statute may specify certain investments or may be more general, giving the official selective powers. In any case, he is bound strictly by the authority granted in the statute.

If the Secretary of the Interior is empowered to handle the Indian's money, he cannot create trusts transferring such property from his authority to a private agency without the specific authority of Congress.<sup>6</sup>

On this point Attorney General Mitchell ruled:<sup>7</sup>

"... while it has been the purpose of Congress to place the supervising control over Indian funds in the Secretary of the Interior, his control is not unlimited, but is based upon directions contained in the various statutes of Congress. I find no provision or implication in any statute to the effect that the Secretary of the Interior may delegate the control of these Indian funds, while held under instructions to outside agencies."

I regard the control and supervision over Indian funds so committed to the Secretary of the Interior and the Department of the Interior as an imposition of a specific duty by Congress, and am of the opinion that it cannot lawfully be transferred by the Secretary of the Interior to agencies outside of his Department. The suggested creation of a trust, in which the custody and control of the trust funds would be in a private trustee, would be an abdication on the part of the Secretary of the control of restricted Indian funds with which Congress has vested him. I believe that this would be improper in the absence of specific congressional authority to that end, and I do not think such authority has been given by Congress by existing statutes. (P. 100)

The Secretary is not authorized to make donations or gifts of Indian property,<sup>8</sup> nor to purchase single premium annuity policies, unless for a certain adult Indian capable of understanding the nature of the investment.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 10.

<sup>6</sup> Memo. Sol. I D. September 19, 1921. See also Op. Sol. I D. M 28288, June 28, 1920, 85 I D 800 (1920). The Act of January 27, 1933, 47 Stat. 777, placed under the jurisdiction of the Secretary of the Interior the funds and securities of Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes of one-half or more Indian blood until April 26, 1936. See 2 authorizes the Secretary to permit:

"... in his discretion and subject to his approval, any Indian of the Five Civilized Tribes, over the age of twenty-one years, having restricted funds or other property subject to the supervision of the Secretary of the Interior, to sell and dispose out of the restricted funds or other property, in whole or in part, to such Indian, his heirs or other beneficiaries designated by him, such funds to be cleared by contracts or agreements made and between the Indian and the designated party complete in all details as may be authorized by law to act as fiduciaries or trustees."

For a discussion of this Act see Chapter 28, sec 10.

<sup>7</sup> 46 Op. A. G. 98 (1920). If the Secretary, in violation of a statute, invests funds due to a certain class of Indians and a loss occurs, Congress and not the Secretary may provide for a reimbursement. 10 Op. A. G. 31 (1878).

<sup>8</sup> Act of June 25, 1910, 80 Stat. 876. *Mott v. United States*, 283 U.S. 747, 751-752 (1931).

<sup>9</sup> 46 Op. A. G. 98 (1920).

Such power obviously cannot be taken away by any act of the Executive through contract or otherwise. The only limitation to which the power is subject is that the conditions of new law must be reasonable. The authority to determine the reasonableness of the conditions is also committed to the Secretary and in its exercise he is necessarily invested with broad discretion. That this power and authority extend to the imposition is a condition for renewal, I recommend that the operating authority shall not extend to acquire to be determined by the Secretary to be the maximum economic totality, I have little doubt.

The Court of Appeals after quoting, with approval from the *Shoshone* and *Case* said:<sup>10</sup>

"If Congress, in the exercise of its authority, can go to the extent approved in the *Shoshone* and *Case*, we find no difficulty in applying the act here in question to the disposition of the funds in the possession of the Secretary. They came into his possession in the lawful course of his supervisory power over the funds in question and were still in his possession at the time the act of Congress was passed. Assuming, therefore, without deciding, that technically the jurisdiction over this fund passed to the Oklahoma Court with the transfer of the restrictions upon the land, the court had not acquired such jurisdiction as to place the fund beyond the control and power of Congress to further restrict it at the hands of the Secretary. (P. 1082)

The authority of the Interior Department over individual Indian monies is generally a derivative authority by virtue of the control which the Department exercises over the alienation of Indian lands and interests therein, conditions have been imposed upon the manner in which proceeds derived from such lands are to be handled. In some cases the statutes providing for the leasing or alienation of individual lands specify that the proceeds "shall be paid to the allottee or disposed of for his benefit under regulations to be prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior."<sup>11</sup> Other statutes do not refer specifically to the proceeds of transactions subject to the approval of the Interior Department, but contain broad language authorizing regulations covering the transaction which is construed to permit a comprehensive supervision of the proceeds derived therefrom.<sup>12</sup>

Ordinarily the method of disbursement of restricted individual Indian money is governed by the regulations issued by the Department of the Interior.<sup>13</sup> In a few instances Congress prescribes the method and permissible purposes of such disbursement.<sup>14</sup> For example, the Act of March 3, 1883,<sup>15</sup> regulating the disbursement of restricted individual money of members of the Five Civilized Tribes of Oklahoma was designed to direct the expenditures of the Indian monies so as to assure permanent improvements of other expenditures which will enable the Indians to become self-supporting. If also provided:

"That in cases of the aged, infirm, decrepit, or incapable, lands monies then values may be used for their proper maintenance and support in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior."

<sup>10</sup> *Shoshone v. United States*, 280 U.S. 8, 226 (1924).

<sup>11</sup> *King v. Iola*, 64 F. 2d 970 (App. D. C. 1919).

<sup>12</sup> Act of June 26, 1910, sec. 8, 80 Stat. 876, 887, 26 U.S.C. 407 (sale of timber on allotments). And see sec. 4, 80 Stat. 876, 886, 26 U.S.C. 103 (lease of trust allotments).

<sup>13</sup> See, for example, Act of March 3, 1899, 35 Stat. 781, 783, 26 U.S.C. 406 (mining leases).

<sup>14</sup> See Chapter 10, sec. 8.

<sup>15</sup> Memo. Sol. I D., September 12, 1884.

<sup>16</sup> 47 Stat. 1458.

<sup>17</sup> *Ind.*, p. 1450.

## SECTION 13 ADMINISTRATIVE POWER—MEMBERSHIP

## A. AUTHORITY OVER ENROLLMENT

At various times Congress has delegated to the Department of the Interior much of its sweeping power over the determination of tribal membership.<sup>111</sup> During the periods when the federal police was designed to link up the tribal organization, this power was one of the most important administrative powers, since the sharing in tribal property usually depended upon being placed upon a roll prepared by the Department or subject to its approval. At present, under the policy of recognizing tribal organization, tribal membership problems are not usually as crucial as formerly.<sup>112</sup> However, they may be important for other purposes, such as determining the right to vote in a tribal election. The most important limitation on the Secretary's power<sup>113</sup> when the tribe is still in existence is the principle that in the absence of express congressional legislation to the contrary an Indian tribe has complete authority to determine all questions of its own membership.<sup>114</sup>

The power of the Secretary to determine tribal membership<sup>115</sup> for the purpose of segregating the tribal funds was granted by section 164 of title 25 of the United States Code,<sup>116</sup> which reads as follows:

The Secretary of the Interior is authorized, whenever in his discretion such action would be for the best interest of the Indians, to cause a final roll to be made of the membership of any Indian tribe, such rolls shall contain the ages and quantities of Indian blood, and when approved by the said Secretary are declared to constitute the legal membership of the respective tribes for the purpose of

segregating the tribal funds \* \* \* and shall be conclusive both as to ages and quantum of Indian blood. *Provided*, That the foregoing shall not apply to the Five Civilized Tribes, or to the Osage Tribe of Indians, or to the Chippewa Indians of Minnesota, or the M'nominee Indians of Wisconsin.

The rolls often provide for the payment of money to an Indian of a tribe whose membership is ascertained by an administrative authority which shall examine and determine questions of fact concerning the identity of the members.<sup>117</sup> Statutes also impose such duty upon the Secretary<sup>118</sup> or a quasi-judicial tribunal<sup>119</sup> whose determinations are subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior. Such enrollments are presumptively correct,<sup>120</sup> and unless impeached by very clear evidence of fraud, mistake, or arbitrary action they are conclusive upon the courts.<sup>121</sup>

## B. REMEDIES

Where the determination of membership in a tribe is left to the Secretary of the Interior, his decision is final and cannot be controlled by mandamus unless his act is arbitrary and in excess of the authority conferred upon him by Congress.<sup>122</sup>

It has also been held that the duty imposed upon him to restore names to the tribal roll is not a mere ministerial act, but calls for the determination of issues of fact and interpretations of law, and that his decisions are not ordinarily subject to review or controlled by mandamus, even though he is wrong in any change his mind within the period allowed.<sup>123</sup>

For example, the Secretary of the Interior was empowered by section 2 of the Act of April 26, 1906,<sup>124</sup> to complete the rolls of the Creek Nation, and his jurisdiction to approve the enrollment ceased on the last day set by the statute. In *United States ex rel Johnson v. Peaine*,<sup>125</sup> the Secretary had approved the decision of the Commissioner of the Five Civilized Tribes and then reversed it and ordered the name of the petitioner stricken from the rolls. The Supreme Court said:

\* \* \* While the case was before him he was free to change his mind, and he might do so none the less that he had stated an opinion in favor of one side or the other. He did not lose his power to do the conclusive act, ordering and approving an enrollment. *Garffield v. Goldsby*, 211 U. S. 181, until the act was done. *New Orleans v. Faneu*, 147 U. S. 291, 295. *Wick v. Orlean*, 245 U. S. 225, 228. The petitioner's name never was on the rolls. The Secretary was the final judge whether they should be, and they cannot be ordered to be put on now, upon a suggestion that

<sup>111</sup> See Chapter 10, sec. 4.

<sup>112</sup> See Chapter 10, sec. 4.

<sup>113</sup> The limitations on administrative power over membership is indicated by an opinion of the Circuit Court of Appeals in *De la Pae Peo*, 99 F. 2d 28 (C. C. A. 7 1938).

\* \* \* Only Indians are entitled to be enrolled for the purpose of receiving allotment, and the fact of enrollment would be evidence that the enrollee is an Indian. But the refusal of the Department of Interior to enroll a certain Indian as a member of a certain tribe is not necessarily an administrative determination that the person is not an Indian. *Moore v. Mohr*, 104 Fed. 2d 104 (4th Cir. Cal. Ind. Dec. 1935), *aff'd*, 104 Fed. 2d 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000.

<sup>114</sup> See Chapter 7 sec. 4. In matters affecting the distribution of tribal funds and other property under the supervisory authority of the Secretary, tribal action as membership is subject to the supervisory authority of the Secretary. See Chapter 7 sec. 4, Sol. Memo October 12, 1937, Sol. Memo March 24, 1940. According to administrative practice in doubtful cases the tribal action is regarded as controlling.

The Circuit Court of Appeals in *Yates v. United States*, 246 Fed. 411, 415 (C. C. A. 8, 1917), said:

The law did not call for the consent of the Indians to the making up of the list for allotment. That power was solely vested in the Commissioner, but they wisely in the main decided to take the advice of an Indian council.

<sup>115</sup> Citizenship in a tribe and tribal membership are sometimes used synonymously. *Stemwell Yates v. United States*, 75 C. Cl. 455 (1908).

The agent has the duty of preparing certain statistics concerning Indians under his charge. Sec. 4 of the Act of March 8, 1875, 18 Stat. 420, 449, 26 U. S. C. 138, provides:

That hereafter for the purpose of properly distributing the supplies appropriated for the Indian service, it is hereby made the duty of each agent in charge of Indians and having supplies to distribute to make out, at the commencement of each fiscal year, rolls of the names of the Indians and of the heads of families or lodges, with the number in each family or lodge, and to give out supplies to the heads of families, and not to the heads of tribes or bands, and not to give out supplies for a greater length of time than one week in advance.

Sec. 9 of the Act of July 4, 1884, 28 Stat. 76, 68, 25 U. S. C. 268, provides that the Indian agent shall submit in his annual report a census of the Indians at his agency or upon the reservation under his charge, and the number of school children between the ages of 8 and 16, the number of school houses at his agency, and other data concerning the education of the Indians.

<sup>116</sup> Act of June 30, 1910, sec. 1, 41 Stat. 8, 9.

<sup>117</sup> 5 Op. A. G. 620 (1881).

<sup>118</sup> Act of June 4, 1920, 41 Stat. 761 (Crow). See *Only v. Mitchell*, 87 F. 2d 498 (C. C. A. 10, 1930). *United States v. Wildcat*, 244 U. S. 111 (1917).

<sup>119</sup> *United States v. Wildcat*, 244 U. S. 111 (1917).

<sup>120</sup> Unless Congress confer authority upon the Secretary to inquire into the validity of the enrollment of a person whose name appears on the final rolls, the rolls must be regarded as determinative of legal membership in the tribe at the time the rolls were completed and closed. See *Op. Sol. I. D. M. 27750*, January 22, 1935.

<sup>121</sup> *United States ex rel West v. Hitchcock*, 205 U. S. 80 (1907). The Secretary has been held not to have the power to strike names from the roll without giving notice and an opportunity to be heard. *Garffield v. United States ex rel Goldsby*, 211 U. S. 181 (1908). It has been held that he has power, since such notice and hearing to strike from the rolls names which have been placed thereon through fraud or mistake. *Love v. Fisher*, 228 U. S. 95 (1912).

Determinations of the Dawes Commission were subject to attack for extrinsic fraud or mistake. *Thor v. Feltz State Oil Co.*, 48 F. 2d 509 (C. C. A. 10, 1931).

<sup>122</sup> *Garffield v. United States ex rel Goldsby*, 211 U. S. 181 (1908). See *United States ex rel West v. Hitchcock*, 205 U. S. 80 (1907).

<sup>123</sup> *Stowley v. Fisher*, 58 F. 2d 532 (App. D. C., 1922).

<sup>124</sup> 24 Stat. 187.

<sup>125</sup> 228 U. S. 209 (1920).

The questions mooted before the Secretary and decided by him were whether the fund is a tribal fund whether the tribe is still existing and whether the annuities or the annuities is to be confined to members of the tribe with exceptions not including the relation. These are all questions of law the solution of which requires a construction of the act of 1880 and other related acts. A reading of the acts shows that they fall short of plainly requiring that any of the questions be answered in the negative and that in some aspects they gave color to the affirmative in view of the Secretary. That the construction of the acts insofar as

<sup>227</sup> *Garfield v. United States ex rel. Goldsby*, 211 U.S. 240 (1908).

# THE SCOPE OF STATE POWER OVER INDIAN AFFAIRS

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page	Section 1—Continued	Page
Section 1 Introduction .....	116	C Indian within Indian country engaged	
Section 2 Federal statutes on state power .....	117	in non-federal transaction.....	120
A General statutes.....	117	D Non-Indian outside Indian country en-	
B Special statutes.....	118	gaged in federal transaction .....	120
Section 3 Reserved state powers over Indian affairs.....	119	E Non-Indian in Indian country engaged	
A Indian outside Indian country engaged		in federal transaction .....	120
in non-federal transaction.....	119	F Non-Indian in Indian country engaged	
B Indian outside Indian country engaged		in non-federal transaction.....	121
in federal transaction.....	119	G Summary.....	121

## SECTION 1 INTRODUCTION

That state laws<sup>1</sup> have no force within the territory of an Indian tribe in matters affecting Indians is a general proposition that has not been successfully challenged at least in the United States Supreme Court, since that Court decided, in *Worcester v. Georgia*,<sup>2</sup> that the State of Georgia had no right to imprison a white man residing on an Indian reservation, with the consent of tribal and federal authorities, who refused to conform to white law governing Indian affairs. In that case the court declared, per Marshall, *J.*:

The Cherokee nation, then, is a distinct community, occupying its own territory, with boundaries accurately described, in which the laws of Georgia can have no force, and which the citizens of Georgia have no right to enter, but with the consent of the Cherokees themselves, or in conformity with treaties, and with the acts of congress (P. 560)

The State of Georgia never did carry out the mandate of the Supreme Court in this case,<sup>3</sup> and many other state courts and state legislatures since the decision in this case have likewise refused to acknowledge the implications of the decision. Nevertheless, when critical cases have been presented to the United States Supreme Court, the principles laid down in *Worcester v. Georgia* have been repeatedly reaffirmed.<sup>4</sup>

The reasons judicially advanced for this inactivity of the states to legislate on Indian affairs have been variously formu-

lated in different cases, although the actual decisions of the Supreme Court have followed a consistent pattern. One of the most persuasive considerations as to the lack of state power is the inclusion in enabling acts and state constitutions of express disclaimers of state jurisdiction over Indian lands. One of the most famous statements explaining the limitations upon state power in this field is the statement in *United States v. Kagame*,<sup>5</sup> a case which upheld the constitutionality of congressional legislation on offenses against Indians committed on an Indian reservation:

It seems to us that this is within the competency of Congress. These Indian tribes are the wards of the nation. They are communities dependent on the United States. Dependent largely on their daily food, dependent for their political rights. They owe no allegiance to the States, and receive from them no protection. Because of the local ill feeling, the people of the States where they are found are often their deadliest enemies. From their very weakness and helplessness, so largely due to the course of dealing of the Federal Government with them, and the treaties in which it has been promised, there arises the duty of protection, and with it the power. This has always been recognized by the Executive and by Congress, and by this court, when ever the question has arisen

<sup>1</sup> Specific bodies of state law are dealt with in other chapters of this work. Those state laws involving questions of discrimination against Indians, in the matter of franchise or in other respects, are dealt with in Chapter 8. State laws of inheritance are considered in Chapters 10 and 11. State laws on taxation are analyzed in Chapter 13. Those state laws which deal with Indian hunting and fishing rights are treated in Chapter 14 and 15. Chapter 16 touches upon state laws relating to recognition or protection of tribal property. Chapters 18 and 19 deal respectively with criminal and civil jurisdiction of state courts as well as federal and tribal courts.

<sup>2</sup> 6 U.S. 515 (1856).

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 2. Cf. Report and Remonstrance of the Legis- lature of Georgia, Jan. Dec. No. 76 21st Cong., 1st sess. (March 8, 1849).

<sup>4</sup> For an analysis of these cases see P. S. Cohen, *Indian Rights and the Federal Courts* (1940), 24 *MINN. L. REV.* 116.

"... said Indian lands shall remain under the absolute jurisdiction and control of the Congress of the United States." \* \* \* Act of July 10, 1894, c. 9, 28 Stat. 107, 108 (Utah). Accord: Act of June 20, 1910, c. 29, 36 Stat. 557 (New Mexico and Arizona). And of Act of Jan. 10, 1906, sec. 28, 34 Stat. 297, 298 (Oklahoma).

<sup>5</sup> 118 U.S. 475 (1886).  
<sup>6</sup> The omission of this comma in the official United States Report has created some confusion as to the meaning of this sentence. Without the comma the sentence seems to suggest that the weakness and helplessness of the Indians is due in part to treaties, and that it is because of the weakness and helplessness of the Indians that the Federal Government may exercise the power of protection. With the comma, the sentence suggests rather that the factual situation of weakness and helplessness is only part of the basis of legal power, the other, and legally more important, basis being the obligations assumed by the United States towards Indian tribes by treaty. This comma is found in the Supreme Court Report (1st edition of the opinion) (6 Sup. Ct. 1109).

The power of the General Government over these remnants of a once powerful, now weak and diminished in numbers, is necessary to their protection, as well as to the safety of those among whom they dwell. It must exist in that government, because it never has existed anywhere else, because the threat of its exercise is within the geographical limits of the United States, because it has never been denied, and because it alone can enforce its laws on all the tribes. (2p 353-357)

Insofar as this argument relies upon treaties it is legally unsatisfactory, for the treaties made between the Federal Government and the Indian tribes are part of the supreme law of the land<sup>12</sup> and, as we have already noted, these treaties quite generally promised the tribes, either expressly or by implication, that they would not be subject to the sovereignty of the individual states, but would be subject only to the Federal Government.

On the other hand, Insofar as the opinion in the *Kayman* case relies upon the factual helplessness of the Indians, the equality of the state populations, and the impossibility of state control, serious questions may be raised both as to the validity of the argument and as to its scope and application when the factual premises noted no longer correspond to the facts. It

would however be a digression at this point to analyze the various doctrines advanced in support of the conclusion that, within the Indian country in matters affecting Indians, federal law applies to the exclusion of state law.<sup>13</sup>

It is enough for the present to note that the domain of power of the Federal Government over Indian affairs marked out by the federal decisions is so complete that, as a practical matter, the federal courts and federal administrative officials now generally proceed from the assumption that Indian affairs are matters of federal, rather than state, concern, unless the contrary is shown by act of Congress or special circumstance. Thus, without questioning the constitutionality of state laws, possessory and complete sovereignty over their own territory, such as is such sovereignty is limited by the Federal Constitution, a sense of realism must compel the conclusion that control of Indian affairs has been delegated, under the Constitution, to the Federal Government and that state intervention in any matters affecting Indians can be upheld only if one of two conditions is met, either that Congress has expressly delegated back to the state, or recognized in the state, some power of government respecting Indians, or that a question involving Indians involves not failure to a degree which calls into play the satisfaction of a state government. Of these two situations the former is undoubtedly more definite and therefore simpler to analyze. Such an analysis requires a listing of the acts of Congress which confer upon the states, or recognize in the states, specific powers of government with respect to Indians.

<sup>13</sup> For further discussion of these doctrines see Chapter 4, sec. 2 and Chapter 5.

<sup>12</sup> *United States v. Forty Three Gallons of Whisky*, 93 U. S. 188 (1876).  
*Worcester v. Georgia*, 6 U. S. 518 (1823). *Blacksmith v. How*, 356 (1856). *United States v. New York Indians*, 178 U. S. 461 (1899). See *United States v. Winans*, 196 U. S. 371, 379, 394 (1905).  
*United States v. Rio Grande Dam and Irrigation Co.*, 274 U. S. 850, 708 (1899). *United States v. Shufeldt*, 158 U. S. 432, 177, 439 (1905). *United States v. Bonanza Station*, 209 U. S. 417, 425 (1917).  
<sup>13</sup> *Act*, entitled 200 U. S. 520, *Wallace v. Adams*, 204 U. S. 413 (1907).  
See Chapter 3, sec. 1.

## SECTION 2 FEDERAL STATUTES ON STATE POWER

It will be convenient to group the federal statutes which grant or recognize state power over Indian affairs into two categories: (a) Those that apply throughout the United States, and (b) those that apply only to particular tribes or areas.

### A. GENERAL STATUTES

The most important field in which state laws have been applied to Indians by congressional act is the field of inheritance. In the absence of federal legislation, it is established that all questions relating to descent and distribution of the property of individual Indians are governed by the laws and customs of the tribe to which the Indians belong.<sup>14</sup> A given tribe may, of course, adopt such state laws as it considers suitable, and it may do this either by ordinance,<sup>15</sup> or, in conjunction with the Federal Government, by treaty.<sup>16</sup> With out such action of the tribal or the Federal Government, state laws of inheritance have no application to Indians residing on an Indian reservation.

This situation, however, has been greatly changed by congressional legislation affecting Indians to whom reservation lands have been allotted in severalty. The most important por-

tion of this congressional legislation is contained in Section 5 of the General Allotment Act,<sup>17</sup> providing:

That upon the approval of the allotments provided for in this act by the Secretary of the Interior, he shall cause patents to issue therefor in the name of the allot-

<sup>14</sup> 24 Stat. 583-750, amended Act of March 3, 1901, sec. 9, 31 Stat. 1099-1097, 28 U. S. C. 719.

This section is actually quoted also provided.

That the law of descent and partition in force in the State or Territory in which such lands are situated shall apply thereto after patents therefor have been accepted and delivered, except in so far as otherwise provided, and the laws of the State of Kansas relating to the descent and partition of real estate shall so far as practicable, apply to all lands in the Indian Territory which may be allotted in severalty under the provisions of this act.

The General Allotment Act expressly exempted from its operation the territory occupied by the Five Civilized Tribes, and the Miamis and Pottawatomies and Foxes in the Indian Territory, now a part of the State of Oklahoma, and the reservation of the Seneca Nation of New York Indians in the State of New York in to which see *United States ex rel. Kaskaskia v. Potosi*, 260 U. S. 1 (1925). *Id.*, *United States ex rel. Potosi v. Widdon*, 291 Fed. 311 (D. C. W. D. N. Y. 1924). See also *New York v. Dobbin*, 21 How. 96 (1858).

The Confederated Wee Kaskaskia, Potosi, Pankashew and Western Miamis were allotted under the Act of March 2, 1889, 25 Stat. 1013 but by that Act the provisions of the General Allotment Act were extended to these tribes. The same is true as to other tribes allotted under special acts of Congress such as in reference to the Chippewas of Minnesota who were allotted under the Act of January 14, 1889, 25 Stat. 642 in accordance with the provisions of the General Allotment Act. The Quapaw Indians were allotted under the Act of March 2, 1889, 25 Stat. 876, 907, without reference to the General Allotment Act, and would seem to have been excluded from the provisions of that Act, so that the laws of Kansas did not apply to them.

The Seneca and Foxes were allotted under the Act of February 18, 1881, 26 Stat. 749, and under the provisions of that Act they became subject

<sup>14</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 6 and Chapter 11, sec. 6.

<sup>15</sup> See 65 U. S. D. 14, 42 (1904). See also Chapter 7, sec. 6.

<sup>16</sup> *Thum, v. g.*, Article 8 of the Treaty of February 27, 1867, with the Pottawatomie Indians, 15 Stat. 531, 534 provides:

Where allotments under the treaty of eighteen hundred and sixty-two shall have been or shall hereafter be made, if any dispute shall arise in regard to inheritance to their property, it shall be competent for the business committee to decide such questions taking full into view of action the laws of inheritance of the State of Kansas.



tees, which patents shall be of the legal effect, and declare that the United States does and will hold the land thus allotted, for the period of twenty-five years, in trust for the sole use and benefit of the Indian to whom such allotment shall have been made, or, in case of his decease, of his heirs according to the laws of the State or Territory where such land is located and that if the expiration of said period the United States will convey the same by patent to said Indian, or his heirs as aforesaid, in full discharge of such trust and free of all charge or incumbrance whatsoever. [Italics supplied.]

As will be readily perceived these provisions entirely with- draw from the operation of tribal laws and customs all matters of descent and partition concerning allotments made to Indians under the General Allotment Act, and the laws of the state in which the land is situated must govern such matters, except insofar as these matters are otherwise covered by tribal statutes.

The scope of state power in the matter of inheritance of allotments has been considered limited however, by legislation which confers upon the Secretary of the Interior full power to determine heirs and to partition allotments.<sup>14</sup> Thus, for example, the Supreme Court has held "that a will made by an Indian woman in accordance with departmental regulations, and approved by the Secretary of the Interior, devising her restricted land to others than her husband, is valid notwithstanding a provision in the Oklahoma law prohibiting a married woman from bequeathing more than two-thirds of her property away from her husband."

The Court said:

"The Secretary of the Interior made regulations which were proper to the exercise of the power conferred upon him and the execution of the act of Congress, and it would seem that no comment is necessary to show that § 831 [Oklahoma Code] is excluded from polence or operation (P 321)." \*

In a word, the act of Congress is complete in its control and administration of the allotment and of all that is connected with or made necessary by it, and is antagonistic to any right or interest in the husband of an Indian woman in her allotment under the Oklahoma Code (P 320).

In a later case approving this decision,<sup>15</sup> the Court sustained the validity of a lease made by an Indian on his family homestead which violated in Oklahoma statute requiring execution by both spouses. The Court said:

"Nor is the validity of the extension lease affected by the provision in the Oklahoma constitution that nothing in the laws of the United States shall deprive any Indian or other allottee of the benefit of the homestead laws of the State. Whether or not this provision was intended to do more than to protect the allottees from the enforced seizure of their homesteads, it is sufficient to say that, whatever its purpose, it can have no more effect than the Oklahoma statute in giving validity to laws of the State repugnant to the reserved power of the United States in legislation in respect to the lands of Indians."

to the laws of the Territory of Oklahoma. And the Congress was allotted under the Act of June 8, 1906, 34 Stat. 839, and under the provisions of that Act became subject to the laws of that Territory. See however, sec 6 of the Act of 1906, *supra*. See also sec 3 of the Act of 1916, 1915 (1916) subjecting the persons and property of Osage Indians to the jurisdiction of the county courts of Oklahoma in private matters. As to the Free Ceded Tribes of Oklahoma, see *Stewart v. Rogers*, 206 U. S. 403 (1907), *per* rehearing den., 209 U. S. 661 (1908).

<sup>14</sup> Act of June 23, 1910, 36 Stat. 855, 25 U. S. C. 871, Act of May 18, 1910, 36 Stat. 123, 127, 36 U. S. C. 821. See Chapter 10, sec. 10, Chap. 11, sec. 6, Chapter 5, sec. 10.

<sup>15</sup> *Blaneet v. Osawatomie*, 276 U. S. 319 (1921).

<sup>16</sup> *Sperry Oil Co. v. Osawatomie*, 204 U. S. 488 (1924).

Neither the constitution of a State nor any act of its legislatures, whatever rights it may confer on Indians or withhold from them, can withdraw them from the operation of an act which Congress passes concerning them in the exercise of its paramount authority. *United States v. Holliday*, 3 Wall. 407, 110 (P 497).

A second field in which state law has been extended to Indian reservations by congressional fiat is the realm of laws covering "inspection of health and educational conditions" and the enforcement of "moral and quarantine regulations" as well as "compulsory school attendance." By the Act of February 17, 1921,<sup>17</sup> Congress authorized the enforcement of such laws upon Indians in reservations by state officials "under such rules, regulations, and conditions as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe."

A third body of state laws is extended over Indian reservations by section 289 of the Criminal Code<sup>18</sup> which makes offenses by non-Indians against Indians and by Indians against non-Indians punishable in the federal courts in accordance with state laws existing at the time of the federal enactment in question.<sup>19</sup>

It will be noted that the foregoing statute is expressly made inapplicable to any offense committed by and against an Indian, by the terms of section 218 of title 25 of the U. S. Code.<sup>20</sup>

Apart from these three fields there has been no general congressional legislation authorizing the extension of state laws to Indians on Indian reservations.<sup>21</sup>

Within those three fields it is probable that any deviation of authority from Congress to the states may be evolved at such time as Congress sees fit.<sup>22</sup>

## B SPECIAL STATUTES

Apart from the general statutes noted in the preceding section, a number of acts of Congress dealing with particular tribes or acts confer various powers upon state courts, state legislatures, and state administrative officials. These statutes deal most commonly with such subjects as crimes,<sup>23</sup> taxation,<sup>24</sup> pro-

<sup>17</sup> 46 Stat. 1185, 28 U. S. C. 281. And see *Taylor Grazing Act of June 25, 1904*, 48 Stat. 1209, amended June 29, 1906, 40 Stat. 1970, discussed in § 11 D 18 (1930).

<sup>18</sup> 18 U. S. C. 468, derived from R. S. 1580, Act of July 7, 1808, sec. 2, 20 Stat. 717, Act of June 15, 1914, 48 Stat. 152.

<sup>19</sup> Congress has not attempted to give force to state laws later enacted, apparently having in mind the possibility that such legislation might be considered an unconstitutional delegation of power or a violation of Constitutional requirements of certainty in penal legislation. *See Weyman v. Southard*, 10 Wheat. 1 (1825); *Field v. Clark*, 148 U. S. 949 (1914); *Washita Railroad v. Public Utilities Com.*, 260 U. S. 848 (1922); *Harrison & Co. v. United States*, 270 U. S. 401 (1926); *Fennema Refining Co. v. Ryan*, 293 U. S. 288 (1934).

<sup>20</sup> R. S. 1246, amended by Act of February 18, 1876, 18 Stat. 310, 218. See Chapter 7, sec. 6, Chapter 19, sec. 8.

<sup>21</sup> Note, however, the legislation of state federal administrative cooperation by the Johnson O'Malley Act of April 16, 1934, 48 Stat. 696, amended Act of June 4, 1938, 49 Stat. 1468, 25 U. S. C. 402 *et seq.* And see Chapter 4, sec. 15, Chapter 12, sec. 1.

<sup>22</sup> *See T. W. v. Glessner*, 286 U. S. 228 (1915); *R. v. Mayhew*, 2 F. Supp. 609 (D. C. W. D. N. Y. 1988); *People v. United States v. Daly*, 212 N. Y. 183, 196-197, 106 N. Y. 1048 (1914).

<sup>23</sup> Act of February 21, 1863, sec. 5, 12 Stat. 878, 980 (Winnebago); Act of June 8, 1906, 34 Stat. 839 (Pub. No. 567 76th Cong.) (State of Kansas).

<sup>24</sup> Act of March 8, 1921, 41 Stat. 1249, 1251, authorizing title of Oklahoma to tax oil and gas production from Indian lands (upheld in *Sp. Op. A. G. 80* (1921) discussed in *Op. Sol. I. M.* 26872, September 22, 1931); Act of May 10, 1928, 46 Stat. 498, 499 (imposing mineral production from Free Ceded Tribes' lands in Oklahoma to state taxes). *Op. At. of June 28, 1938*, sec. 1, 49 Stat. 1967. See Chapter 18, sec. 2, 5, Chapter 28, sec. 9.

bate," acquisition of water rights," recording laws," and hence upon cut timber."

In Oklahoma there has been a particularly broad devolution of powers to the state government.<sup>1</sup> The organs of the state

Act of April 30 1888, 25 Stat. 94, 98 (Squaw); Act of March 2 1890, 25 Stat. 888, 891 (Squaw); Act of January 12 1901, 20 Stat. 712 (Mishew); Act of February 13 1901, 20 Stat. 749, 751 (Saw and Fox); Act of June 28 1900, 31 Stat. 539 (Osage); Act of April 18, 1902, 37 Stat. 80 (Osage); Act of June 11 1905, 40 Stat. 608 (Five Civilized Tribes); Act of February 27 1905, 41 Stat. 1011 (Osage). For a discussion of the provisions of these acts, see Op. Sol. T. D. M. 18008, December 18, 1925, Op. Sol. T. D. October 4 1929, Op. Sol. T. D. D-4020 September 30 1922, Op. Sol. T. D. M. 42038 June 10, 1928.

<sup>1</sup> Act of March 3 1900, 33 Stat. 1010, 1011 ("Shoshone") discussed in *re Parkins*, 18 F. 2, 642, 648 (D. C. Wyo. 1928).

<sup>2</sup> Act of February 10 1876, 18 Stat. 340, 341 (Sawnee).

<sup>3</sup> Act of March 17, 1883, 22 Stat. 36, 37 (Wisconsin).

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 23, *supra*, at 10-10.

government however, in exercising such powers have been considered federal agencies. Thus in *Pulley v. Richard*<sup>2</sup> the Supreme Court, in referring to the authority of the county courts of Oklahoma under section 9 of the Act of May 27, 1905,<sup>3</sup> said

"That the agency which is to approve or not is a state court is not material. It is the agency selected by Congress and the authority conferred to it is to be exercised in giving effect to the will of Congress in respect of a matter within its control. Thus in a practical sense the court in exercising that authority acts as a federal agency, and this is recognized by the Supreme Court of the State *Mayor v. Board of Commissioners* 35 Oklahoma 1 (P. 289)."

<sup>2</sup> 350 U. S. 287 (1910).

<sup>3</sup> 25 Stat. 812, 813.

### SECTION 3 RESERVED STATE POWERS OVER INDIAN AFFAIRS

While the general rule, as we have noted, is that primary authority over Indian affairs rests in the Federal Government to the exclusion of state governments, we have likewise noted two major exceptions to this general rule. First, where Congress has expressly declared that certain powers over Indian affairs shall be exercised by the states, and second, where the matter involves non-Indian questions sufficient to ground state jurisdiction.

In proceeding to analyze this latter exception to the general rule, we may note that in point of constitutional doctrine, the sovereignty of a state over its own territory<sup>4</sup> is plenary and therefore the fact that Indians are involved in a situation, directly or indirectly, does not *ipso facto* terminate state power. State power is terminated only if the matter is one that falls within the constitutional scope of exclusive federal authority.<sup>5</sup>

A case in which the factors of situs, person and subject matter all point to exclusive federal jurisdiction, as, for example, in a transaction involving a transfer of restricted property between Indians on an Indian reservation, the basis of exclusive federal power is clear. On the other hand, where all three factors point away from federal jurisdiction, the power of the state is clear. There exists, however, a broad twilight zone in which one or two of the three elements noted—situs, person and subject matter—point to federal power and the remainder to state power. These are the situations which require analysis, and the various combinations of these factors present six situations for consideration:

- (A) Indian outside Indian country engaged in non-federal transaction
- (B) Indian outside Indian country engaged in federal transaction
- (C) Indian within Indian country engaged in non-federal transaction
- (D) Non-Indian outside Indian country engaged in federal transaction
- (E) Non-Indian in Indian country engaged in federal transaction
- (F) Non-Indian in Indian country engaged in non-federal transaction

A brief discussion of these six type-situations is in order

<sup>4</sup> Ordinarily an Indian reservation is considered part of the territory of the state. *Wick and Northern Railway v. Fisher*, 115 U. S. 51 (1885). But in some cases, the enabling act or other congressional legislation, or the state constitution itself, declares that Indian reservations shall not be deemed part of the territory of the state. See, for example, *The Kansas Indians*, 5 Wall. 737 (1866), *Williams v. Hyde*, 96 U. S. 470 (1875), qualified in *Langford v. Montross*, 102 U. S. 145 (1880).

<sup>5</sup> See sec. 1, *supra*, and see Chapter 5.

#### A INDIAN OUTSIDE INDIAN COUNTRY ENGAGED IN NON-FEDERAL TRANSACTION

It is undoubtedly true, as a general rule, that an Indian who is "off the reservation" is subject to the laws of the state or territory in which he finds himself, to the same extent that a non-Indian citizen or alien would be subject to those laws.<sup>6</sup>

#### B INDIAN OUTSIDE INDIAN COUNTRY ENGAGED IN FEDERAL TRANSACTION

To the general rule set forth in the preceding paragraph, an exception must be noted. If the subject matter of the transaction is a subject matter over which Congress has asserted its constitutional power, the state must yield to the superior power of the nation.<sup>7</sup> For example, Congress has taken the position that its constitutional concern with Indian tribes requires a prohibition of sales of liquor to all "ward" Indians, even outside of Indian reservations, and the courts have upheld this exercise of power.<sup>8</sup> Under the circumstances, any state interference with this prohibition would undoubtedly be held invalid.

A second example may be found in the realm of restricted personal property of Indians. Where, for example, a herd of cattle is held by an Indian or an Indian tribe subject to federal restrictions upon alienation,<sup>9</sup> it seems clear that the removal of the property from the reservation would not free it from such federal restrictions, and any state laws or proceedings inconsistent with federal control would be clearly unconstitutional.<sup>10</sup>

The line between federal jurisdiction which the state cannot legislate in the matter and other transactions on which the state is permitted to legislate, is not always easy to draw. Where, for

<sup>6</sup> *Hunt v. State*, 4 Kan. 60 (1868) (murder of Indian by Indian); *In re Wolf*, 27 Fed. 608, 610 (D. C. Ark. 1886) (conspiracy by Indians to obtain money by false pretenses from Indian nation in D. C.); *State v. Williams*, 18 Mont. 847, 41 Pac. 15 (1896) (murder of Indian by Indian); *People v. People*, 25 Colo. 184, 46 Pac. 846 (1896) (murder of Indian by Indian); *State v. Spotted Hawk*, 22 Mont. 88, 58 Pac. 1026 (1890) (murder of white man by Indian); *State v. Little Whitehead*, 22 Mont. 426, 58 Pac. 820 (1890) (murder of white man by Indian); *Re parts Moore*, 26 S. D. 434, 158 N. W. 817 (1911) (murder of Indian by Indian on public domain allotment); commented on in Ann. Cas. 1914 B, 648, 652. And see state cases collected in Note 18, Ann. Cas. 1922, see Chapter 7, sec. 9, fn. 218, and see Chapter 14, sec. 2. *Of The Kansas Indians*, 5 Wall. 737, 755, 755 (1866). If under the control of Congress, then necessarily there can be no divided authority. \* \* \*

<sup>7</sup> There can be no question of State sovereignty in the case, \* \* \*

<sup>8</sup> See Chapter 17, sec. 8.

<sup>9</sup> See Chapter 10, sec. 12.

<sup>10</sup> *Of United States v. Cook*, 19 Wall. 691 (1876), *Pine River Logging Co. v. United States*, 18 U. S. 279 (1902) (timber illegally alienated), discussed in Chapter 15, sec. 15.

except hunting and fishing, rights of the reservation have been granted to Indians so the question has arisen whether such rights may be controlled by the reservation statutes. In the present state of the law, no single answer can be given to the question. Likewise, the question of whether title to land purchased for Indians, out of the reservation and held subject to federal restrictions upon their use, is immune from the state law of the state in which it is located to control the title.<sup>1</sup> In this situation, it can be said that the federal control in the subject matter of the title not leave property interests to the state subject but may not do so in the case of prohibitions such as taxation.<sup>2</sup>

#### C INDIAN WITHIN INDIAN COUNTRY ENGAGED IN NON-FEDERAL TRANSACTION

It is well settled that the state has no power over the conduct of Indians within the Indian country, whether or not the conduct is of special concern to the Federal Government.<sup>3</sup> Thus, Indian marriage and divorce officers between Indians and sales of personal property between Indians in matters over which the state cannot exercise control so long as the Indians continued to remain within the reservation.<sup>4</sup> The disability has generally been explained in terms of tribal sovereignty and a federal policy of protecting such tribal sovereignty against state action. Thus, in denying state jurisdiction over adultery among Indians on an Indian reservation the Supreme Court declared in *United States v. Quiver*,<sup>5</sup> per Mr. Justice, J.

At an early period it became the settled policy of Congress to permit the personal and domestic relations of the Indians, with each other to be regulated and affected by one Indian against the person or property of another Indian to be dealt with according to their tribal customs and laws. (Pp. 603-604)

Whether the local state laws may be applied to the Indians of a tribe with their consent, expressed through agreement or otherwise, is a question which the Supreme Court does not seem to have passed upon quickly.<sup>6</sup> There is no doubt that many tribes in the past have accepted state laws.<sup>7</sup> Indeed, in the early years of the Republic it appears that various treaties were made between Indian tribes and the various states.<sup>8</sup> The validity, however, of such formal or informal arrangements, has not been definitely established. If it would seem that if state laws are accepted by Indian tribes, they have effect as tribal laws and not simply as exercises of state sovereignty.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 7 and Chapter 15, sec. 21.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 13.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 7.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.* and see Chapter 11, sec. 5. And see Memo. Re: J. D. April 26, 1979, holding that the State of California is without jurisdiction to compel Indians residing in a Indian within the State to take out licenses for licenses owned by the state.

<sup>6</sup> 214 U.S. 602 (1910).

<sup>7</sup> *United States v. Knapik*, 269 U.S. 1, 15 (1925).

<sup>8</sup> See to exemplify the discussion of New York Indians in Chapter 22, and the comments on the *Western Cherokee* of North Carolina in Chapter 14, sec. 2.

<sup>9</sup> See *Cherokee Nation v. Georgia*, 5 Pet. 1 (1831); *Seneca Nation v. Christy*, 126 N.Y. 122, 27 N.E. 275 (1891); 2 Op. A.G. 110 (1826).

Thus, the position of the American Indian in the Law of the United States (1944), 16 T. Comp. Int. 75, 85. While the Constitution forbids a states making any new treaty, without a congressional act, 1, sec. 10 discussed in *Warwick v. Georgia*, 6 Pet. 515, 579 (1842), the position has been taken by at least one state court that this did not prevent treaties or compacts for the extinguishment of Indian title between states and Indian tribes. *Seneca Nation v. Christy*, *supra*.

<sup>10</sup> An Indian tribe may, if it so chooses, adopt as its own the laws of the state in which it is situated and may make such modification in these laws as it deems suitable to its peculiar conditions." 65 T. D. 14, 42 (1933).

#### D NON INDIAN OUTSIDE INDIAN COUNTRY ENGAGED IN FEDERAL TRANSACTION

Although ordinarily a non Indian outside of Indian country is in no way subject to federal law, certain Indian affairs, and is wholly subject to state law, there are certain subject matters in which the federal interest is so strong, that even with respect to non Indians outside the Indian country, federal law will supersede state law. Such a matter, for instance, is the transfer from one non Indian to another of restricted property unlawfully taken from an Indian reservation.<sup>1</sup> Another example may be found in the realm of transactions between an employee of the Indian Bureau and a third party, consummated outside of the Indian country, which involve a personal interest in Indian title.<sup>2</sup> This class of transactions in which non Indians outside of the Indian country must take account of federal Indian law, is extremely limited in scope, applying primarily to matters involving property in which the Federal Government has an interest,<sup>3</sup> and to the personnel of the Indian Service itself.

#### E NON INDIAN IN INDIAN COUNTRY ENGAGED IN FEDERAL TRANSACTION

It where the subject matter is of federal concern, a non Indian is subject to federal law rather than state jurisdiction, even if he is coming outside of an Indian reservation, a *fortiori* he is subject to federal jurisdiction for acts of federal concern committed within an Indian reservation. Indeed, there is a very broad trend of conduct in which non Indians on an Indian reservation are subject to federal law rather than state power. With respect to all offenses committed by whites against Indians on an Indian reservation, state jurisdiction yields to federal jurisdiction, although in fact the Federal Government has adopted state laws in providing for the punishment of such offenses by the federal courts.<sup>4</sup> Likewise, there are various reservation offenses for which Congress has prescribed penalties enforceable in federal courts, which are applicable to non Indians, and in some instances to Indians as well. It has been administered held that even a state officer cannot claim the protection of state law if he enters an Indian reservation without congressional authorization for the purpose of searching in Indian's home for property thought to be in the unlawful possession of the Indian.<sup>5</sup>

Although the federal constitutional jurisdiction over matters affecting Indian affairs on an Indian reservation has generally been viewed as an exclusive jurisdiction, excluding all state legislation, an exception to the general rule has been recognized where the state legislation supplements the protection of Indians provided by federal law. Such state legislation, which may be termed "ancillary" to federal law, is upheld in *State of*

<sup>1</sup> See fn. 3, *supra*.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 30.

<sup>3</sup> See *Quiver v. Hitchcock*, 202 U.S. 60, 68-69 (1906); *Knapik v. Hitchcock*, 262 U.S. 473 (1908); *Warwick v. United States*, 207 U.S. 501 (1908); *United States v. Warren*, 194 U.S. 5, 51 (1903); *Warren v. United States*, 181 U.S. 487-488 (1925); *United States v. Morrison*, 201 Fed. 304 (C. C. Colo. 1903).

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 48 and Chapter 18.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 5. There may be situations, however, in which a criminal jurisdiction may be exercised by the state to protect Indians against non Indians. *State of New York v. Piddie*, 112 U.S. 806 (1885), discussed in Chapter 15, sec. 10C.

<sup>6</sup> See sec. 24, *supra*.

<sup>7</sup> See Chapter 18, sec. 1.

<sup>8</sup> 66 T. D. 88 (1930).

*New York v. Doublet*<sup>1</sup> where the Supreme Court in upholding a state prohibition against trespass upon Indian lands declared:

The statute in question is a police regulation for the protection of the Indians from intrusion of the white people and to preserve the peace. It is the dictate of a prudent and just policy. Notwithstanding the peculiar relation which these Indian nations hold to the Government of the United States the State of New York had the power of a sovereign over their persons and property, so far as it was necessary to preserve the peace of the Commonwealth and protect their lands and rights from imposition and intrusion. The power of a State in such legal matters to preserve the peace of the community is absolute and has never been surrendered. The rule is therefore not contrary to the Constitution of the United States. (P. 370)

Other cases have applied this rule to state laws forbidding sale of liquor to Indians,<sup>2</sup> and to other protective and mollifying legislation.<sup>3</sup>

#### F. NON INDIAN IN INDIAN COUNTRY ENGAGED IN NON FEDERAL TRANSACTION

The mere fact that the locus of an event is on Indian reservation does not prevent the exercise of state jurisdiction where the parties involved are not Indians, and the subject matter of the transaction is not of federal concern. Thus, it has been held that murder of a non Indian by a non Indian on an Indian reservation, in the absence of express federal legislation to the contrary, is a matter of exclusive state jurisdiction.<sup>4</sup> Likewise the validity of state taxation of personality of a non Indian within Indian country has been sustained.<sup>5</sup>

#### G. SUMMARY

The rules applicable to each of the foregoing types of situations are not established beyond the possibility of doubt, and they leave much room for debate in defining the three factors in terms of which these rules have been formulated: "Indian,"<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 21 How. 408 (1858). See Chapter 17 sec. 10C.  
<sup>2</sup> *State v. Kennedy*, 145 Pic. 400 (Wash. St. Ct., State v. Mannell, 85 Wash. 671, 109 Pac. 17 (1910)).

<sup>3</sup> See *State v. Wolf*, 145 N. C. 440, 59 S. E. 10 (1907) (upholding state law requiring local attendance of Black-Chain Indians) commented on in Note, Ann. Civ. 1015D 371.

<sup>4</sup> *United States v. McBratney*, 104 U. S. 621 (1881), *Diaper v. United States*, 104 U. S. 240 (1879), and see Chapter 7 sec. 9 and Chapter 18, sec. 6.

<sup>5</sup> *Thomas v. Gay*, 109 U. S. 821 (1883). And see Chapter 13, sec. 4.

<sup>6</sup> The definition of "Indian" is contained in Chapter 1 sec. 2. On the question of the applicability of state laws, special importance should be assigned to the cases which suggest that when tribal custom once creates Indian status to be under federal jurisdiction and become subject to state control.

See opinion of Mr. Justice Johnson in *Pitcher v. Pitch*, 6 Cranch 87, 118 (1810), and opinion of Mr. Justice McLean in *Worcester v. Georgia*, 6 Pet. 515, 580 (1832). See also *Scott v. Sanford*, 19 How. 562 (1857), where the Supreme Court, with reference to the Indians, said:

\* \* \* and if an individual should leave his nation on trade, and take up his abode among the white population, he would be entitled to all the rights and privileges which would belong to an emigrant from any other foreign people. (P. 404)

See also dicta in *The Cherokee Trust Funds*, 117 U. S. 288, 309 (1885) to the effect, in it the so-called Statian Band of Cherokee Indians who separated themselves from the main body of the Cherokee Nation in its migration to the West, become "bound" to the state laws of North Carolina. See also and of *United States v. Boyd*, 83 Fed. 547 (C. C. A. 4, 1897), *United States v. Wright*, 83 F. 2d 300 (C. C. A. 4 1931), and *United States v. Coloured*, 89 F. 2d 312 (C. C. A. 4, 1897), to the

Indian country, and "in violation of federal concern."<sup>7</sup> That these are questions already decided and the views above expressed on the various combinations of factors necessary to support state jurisdiction on Indian matters are probably as close to the final decisions as any simple scheme can come. The foregoing sections may be summarized in two propositions:

- (1) In matters involving only Indians on an Indian reservation the state has no jurisdiction in the absence of specific legislation by Congress.
- (2) In all other cases the state has jurisdiction unless there is involved a subject matter of special federal concern.

And that these Indians having been recognized and treated by the Federal Government as a tribe need be regarded as such. For a more extended discussion of tribal existence and its termination see Chapter 14 sec. 1 and 2. On the right of expatriation see Chapter 8 sec. 10B(1).

Also see *La Paroix v. Kinnam*, 14 Fed. Cl. No. 7720 (C. C. W. D. Ark. 1978).

\* \* \* When the members of a tribe of Indians settle their selves among the citizens of the United States, and live among the people of the United States, they are treated as the citizens of the United States, and are subject to the laws of the United States, and are equally with the citizens of the United States one of the several tribes subject to the jurisdiction of the courts of the United States. *Requies* (1850 No. 1719) *United States v. Plim* 117 (1848) opinion in *Willing v. United States*, 13 How. 562 (1857) and *see* *La Paroix v. Kinnam*, 14 Fed. Cl. No. 7720 (C. C. W. D. Ark. 1978).

And see cases collected in Note 1, Ann. Civ. 1015D 191.

A major situation exists with respect to the Sac and Fox Indians of Iowa. The State of Iowa which had exercised jurisdiction over these Indians, and which held title to their land in trust for them transferred to the Federal Government exclusive jurisdiction of the Sac and Fox Indians residing in Iowa and retaining the tribal relation, and of all other Indians dwelling with them. (Act of February 14, 1886 Act, 25th General Assembly, p. 114.) The state however, having been such transfer jurisdiction of criminal actions the state laws committed within the reservation by Indians or others. In *Peters v. Meier*, 111 Fed. 244 (C. C. Iowa, 1901) it was held that this reservation of authority in the state did not affect the exclusive jurisdiction of the Federal Government over the relation of the Indians among themselves. *See*, on this question *Memo* vol. I, D. June 18, 1940.

Also see *In re Van der Pelt*, 60 How. 410, 70 Pet. 877 (1901), *State v. Big Horse*, 17 Mont. 210, 241 Pac. 1007 (1904), *State v. Williams*, 13 Wash. 235, 43 Pac. 15 (1895), *State v. Howard*, 11 Wash. 255, 142 Pac. 381 (1901), *State v. Minnow*, 10 S. D. 280, 134 N. W. 77 (1912). Indians residing in Minnesota, who have a communal organization for tenure of property and local affairs, as declared by the courts of the state to be without political organization and to be subject, like other individuals to the laws of the state. *State v. Neusch*, 84 Minn. 463, 24 Minn. 943 (1882).

It was held at one time that the grant of citizenship to individual Indians, whether by an act of Congress or by the provisions of a treaty had the effect of terminating tribal relations placing the Indians beyond the power of Congress and subjecting them to state jurisdiction. This view was taken by the United States Supreme Court in the famous case, *Martin v. Itasca*, 107 U. S. 486 (1885). Later, however, this ruling was limited in *Bradwell v. United States*, 221 U. S. 917 (1911) and *United States v. Bandolero*, 31 U. S. 28 (1918) and finally expressly overruled in *United States v. McFar*, 28 U. S. 601 (1910). *See*, in this connection, Chapter 8, sec. 2C and 10B(1).

\* See Chapter 1 sec. 4, Chapter 11 sec. 2.

\* See Chapter 14 sec. 11, Chapter 14 sec. 7. As noted in the discussion above the term "transaction of federal concern" is used to cover matters over which the power of the Federal Government has been exercised whether through legislation through authorized administrative action, or in any other valid manner. The content of the term is therefore to be found in the materials discussed in various other chapters, particularly Chapters 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, and 19.

\* See sec. 62, 63, and 64, *supra*.

THE SCOPE OF TRIBAL SELF-GOVERNMENT<sup>1</sup>

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
<i>Section 1</i> Introduction . . . . .	122	<i>Section 8</i> The taxing power of an Indian tribe . . . . .	112
<i>Section 2</i> The derivation of tribal power . . . . .	122	<i>Section 9</i> Tribal powers over property . . . . .	113
<i>Section 3</i> The form of tribal government . . . . .	126	<i>Section 9</i> Tribal powers in the administration of justice . . . . .	145
<i>Section 4</i> The power to determine tribal membership . . . . .	131	<i>Section 10</i> Statutory powers of tribes in Indian administration . . . . .	149
<i>Section 5</i> Tribal regulation of domestic relations . . . . .	137		
<i>Section 6</i> Tribal control of descent and distribution . . . . .	139		

## SECTION 1. INTRODUCTION

The Indians' right of self-government is a right which has been consistently protected by the courts, frequently recognized and infrequently ignored by treaty makers and legislators, and very widely disregarded by administrative officials. That such rights have been disregarded is perhaps due more to lack of acquaintance with the law of the subject than to any desire for increased power on the part of administrative officials.

The most basic of all Indian rights, the right of self-government, is the Indians' first defense against administrative oppression in a measure in which the States are powerless to govern and where Congress, occupied with more pre-occupied national affairs, cannot govern widely and well, there remains a large unoccupied land in which government can emanate only from officials of the Interior Department or from the Indians themselves. Self-government is thus the Indians' only alternative to rule by a government department.

Indian self-government, the decided cases hold, includes the power of an Indian tribe to adopt and operate under a form of government of the Indians' choosing, to define conditions of

tribal membership, to regulate domestic relations of members, to prescribe rules of inheritance, to levy taxes, to regulate property within the jurisdiction of the tribe, to control the conduct of members by municipal legislation and to administer justice.

Perhaps the most basic principle of all Indian law supported by a host of decisions heretofore unchallenged, is the principle that *those powers which are tacitly vested in an Indian tribe are not, in general, delegated powers granted by express acts of Congress, but rather inherent powers of a limited sovereignty which has never been extinguished.* Each Indian tribe begins its relationship with the Federal Government as a sovereign power, recognized as such in treaty and legislation. The powers of sovereignty have been limited from time to time by special treaties and laws designed to take from the Indian tribes control of matters which in the judgment of Congress these tribes could no longer be safely permitted to handle. The statutes of Congress, then, must be examined to determine the limitations of tribal sovereignty rather than to determine the limits of its positive content. What is not expressly limited remains within the domain of tribal sovereignty.

The acts of Congress which appear to limit the powers of an Indian tribe do not to be unduly extended by doubtful inference.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>2</sup> See *In re Yaffield, Petitioner*, 141 U. S. 107, 118, 119 (1901).

## SECTION 2 THE DERIVATION OF TRIBAL POWERS

From the earliest years of the Republic the Indian tribes have been recognized as "distinct, independent, political communities," and, as such, qualified to exercise powers of self-government, not in virtue of any delegation of powers from the Federal Government, but rather by reason of their original tribal sovereignty. This treaties and statutes of Congress have been looked to by the courts as limitations upon original tribal powers, or, at most, evidence of recognition of such powers, rather than as the direct source of tribal powers. This is but an application of the general principle that "It is only by positive enactment,

even in the case of conquered and subdued nations, that their laws are changed by the conqueror."

In point of form it is immaterial whether the powers of an Indian tribe are expressed and enacted through customs handed down by word of mouth or through written constitutions and statutes. In either case the laws of the Indian tribe owe their force to the will of the members of the tribe.

<sup>1</sup> *Wall v. Wallman*, 8 Ala. 48, 51 (1848), upholding tribal law of divorce. And see *Wharton, Conflict of Laws* (3d ed. 1908), vol. 1, sec. 9, *Wharton, Elements of International Law* (7th ed. by Philippon, 1916) 66-68.

<sup>2</sup> *Worcester v. Georgia* 6 Pet. 515, 550 (1832)

The earliest complete expression of these principles is found in the case of *Worcester v. Georgia*.<sup>16</sup> In that case the State of Georgia, in its attempts to destroy the tribal government of the Cherokees, had imprisoned a white man living among the Cherokees with the consent of the tribal authorities. The Supreme Court of the United States held that his imprisonment was in violation of the Constitution, that the State had no right to intrude upon the federal power to regulate intercourse with the Indians, and that the Indian tribes were, in effect, subjects of federal law, to the exclusion of state law, and entitled to exercise their own inherent rights of sovereignty so far as might be consistent with such federal law. The court declared, per Marshall, *et al.*:

The Indian nations have always been considered as distinct independent political communities. . . .  
(P. 579)

. . . and the settled doctrine of the law of nations is that a weaker power does not surrender its independent equality's right to self-government—in association, with a stronger, and taking its protection. A weak State, in order to provide for its safety, may place itself under the protection of one more powerful, without stripping itself of the right of government and control, to be a State. Examples of this kind are not wanting in Europe. . . . Tribes and territorial States, as it is said, "do not therefore cease to be sovereign and independent states, so long as self-government, and sovereignty and independent authority are left in the administration of the State." At the present day, more than one State may be considered as holding its right of self-government under the guarantee and protection of one or more allies.

The Cherokee nation then, is a distinct community, occupying its own territory, with boundaries actually described in which the laws of Georgia can have no force, and which the citizens of Georgia have no right to enter, but with the consent of the Cherokees themselves, or in conformity with treaties, and with the acts of congress. The whole intercourse between the United States, and this nation is by our constitution and laws vested in the government of the United States. The act of the State of Georgia, nullifies which the plaintiff in error was prosecuted, is, consequently void, and the judgment a nullity.  
(P. 580)

John Marshall's analysis of the laws of Indian self-government in the law of nations has been consistently followed by the courts for more than a hundred years. The doctrine set forth in this opinion has been applied to an unfolding series of new problems in scores of cases that have come before the Supreme Court and the inferior federal courts. The doctrine has not always been so highly respected in state courts and by administrative authorities. It was of the decision in *Worcester v. Georgia* that President Jackson is reported to have said, "John Marshall has made his decision, now let him enforce it!" As a matter of history, the State of Georgia, unsuccessful defendant in the case, never did carry out the Supreme Court's decision, and the "successful" plaintiff, a member of the Cherokee Nation, continued to languish in a Georgia prison, under a Georgia law which, according to the Supreme Court decision, was unconstitutional.

The case in which the doctrine of Indian self-government was first established has a certain prophetic character. Administrative officials for a century afterwards, continued to ignore the broad implications of the judicial doctrine of Indian self-government. But again and again, as cases came before the federal courts, administrative officials, state and federal, were forced to reckon with the doctrine of Indian self-government and to surrender powers of Indian tribes which they sought to usurp.

Finally after 100 years there appeared in administration that accepted the logical implications of Indian self-government.

The whole course of judicial decision on the nature of Indian tribal powers is marked by adherence to three fundamental principles: (1) An Indian tribe possesses, in the first instance, all the powers of its sovereign state. (2) Congress renders the tribe subject to the legislative power of the United States and, in substance, commutes the external powers of sovereignty of the tribe except its power to enter into treaties with foreign nations, but does not by itself alter the internal sovereignty of the tribe except its powers of local self-government. (3) These powers are subject to modification by treaties and by express legislation of Congress,<sup>17</sup> but, save in thus expressly qualified, full powers of internal sovereignty are vested in the Indian tribes and in their duly constituted organs of government.

A striking affirmation of these principles is found in the case of *Ballou v. Hallam*.<sup>18</sup> The question was presented in that case whether the Fifth Amendment of the Federal Constitution operated as a limitation upon the legislation of the Cherokee Nation. A law of the Cherokee Nation authorized a fine and jury of five persons to institute criminal proceedings. A person indicted upon this procedure and held for trial in the Cherokee courts sued out writ of habe corpus, alleging, that the law in question violated the Fifth Amendment to the Constitution of the United States, since "a grand jury of five, not a grand jury within the contemplation of the Fifth Amendment." The Supreme Court held that the Fifth Amendment applied only to the acts of the Federal Government, that the sovereign powers of the Cherokee Nation, although recognized by the Federal Government, were not created by the Federal Government, and that the judicial authority of the Cherokees was therefore, not subject to the limitations imposed by the Bill of Rights.

The question, therefore, is, does the Fifth Amendment to the Constitution apply to the local legislation of the Cherokee nation so as to require all prosecutions for offenses committed against the laws of that nation to be instituted by a grand jury organized in accordance with the provisions of that amendment? The solution of this question involves an inquiry as to the nature and origin of the power of local government exercised by the Cherokee nation and recognized to exist in it by the treaties and statutes before referred to. Since the case of *Ballou v. Hallam*, 7 Terr. 243, it has been settled that the Fifth Amendment to the Constitution of the United States is a limitation only upon the powers of the General Government, that is, that the amendment operates solely on the Constitution itself by qualifying the powers of the National Government which the Constitution called into being.  
1

The case in this regard, therefore, depend, upon whether the powers of local government exercised by the Cherokee

<sup>16</sup> The most comprehensive piece of Indian legislation since the Act of June 30, 1834, is 48 Stat. 717 is the Act of June 19, 1924, 48 Stat. 984, 27 U. S. C. 461-479, entitled "An Act to conserve and develop Indian lands and resources to extend to Indians the right to farm business and other opportunities, to establish a credit system for Indians, to grant certain rights of homestead to Indians, to provide for vocational education for Indians, and for other purposes, and commonly known as the Wheeler Howard Act on Indian Reorganization Act. Since its enactment, this statute has been amended in many particulars. (Act of June 15, 1947, 49 Stat. 474, 27 U. S. C. 478a, 478b; Act of August 12, 1947, sec. 2, 19 Stat. 571, 594, 26 U. S. C. 475a; Act of August 28, 1947, 50 Stat. 883, 23 U. S. C. 465-468a), and its more important provisions have been extended to Alaska (Act of May 1, 1986, 40 Stat. 1210, 48 U. S. C. 96a) and Oklahoma (Act of June 28, 1936, 10 Stat. 1907, 27 U. S. C. 501-509).

<sup>17</sup> "Certain external powers of sovereignty, such as the power to make war and the power to make treaties with the United States, have been recognized by the Federal Government." See Chapter 14, sec. 4.

<sup>18</sup> See, for example, *Ballou v. Hallam*, 7 Terr. 243, 48 Stat. 474 (C. C. A., 1904). And see Chapter 15, sec. 6.

<sup>19</sup> 108 U. S. 876 (1880).

<sup>16</sup> 6 Pet. 515 (1823).

<sup>17</sup> Govey, *American Conflict* (1884), vol. 1, p. 100.

nation the Federal powers created by and springing from the Constitution of the United States, and hence controlled by the Fifth Amendment to that Constitution in which the right of peaceful assembly is guaranteed by the Constitution, although subject to general provisions and the paramount authority of Congress. The repeated application of this constitutional principle answered the latter question in the negative. \*

True it is that many individuals of this country have been fully recognized that although possessed of these attributes of local self-government when exercising their tribal function, all individuals are subject to the supreme legislative authority of the United States. *Cherokee Nation v. Georgia*, 5 Pet. 58, 15 U.S. 511, where the cases are fully reviewed. But the existence of the right in Congress to regulate the manner in which the local powers of the Cherokee nation shall be exercised does not render such local powers federal powers, arising from and created by the Constitution of the United States. It follows that is the power of local self-government enjoyed by the Cherokee nation existed prior to the Constitution they are not operated upon by the Fifth Amendment which is as we have said, but for its sole object to control the powers conferred by the Constitution on the National Government. 1 \* (191 382-84.)

The decision in *Talton v. Mayes* does not mean that Indian tribes are not subject to the Constitution of the United States. It means that the Indian tribe is subject to the Federal Constitution in the same sense that the city of New Orleans, for instance, is subject to the Federal Constitution. The Federal Constitution prohibits slavery absolutely. This absolute prohibition applies to an Indian tribe as well as to a municipal government and it has been held that city holding within an Indian tribe become illegal with the passage of the Thirteenth Amendment.<sup>12</sup> It is therefore always proper to ask whether an ordinance of a tribe conflicts with the Constitution of the United States.<sup>13</sup> Where, however, the United States Constitution leaves pertinent restrictions upon federal courts or upon Congress, these restrictions do not apply to the courts or legislatures of the Indian tribes.<sup>14</sup> Likewise, particular restrictions upon the States are inapplicable to Indian tribes.

It has been held that the guaranty of religious liberty in the First Amendment of the United States Constitution does not protect a resident of New Orleans from religious oppression by municipal authorities.<sup>15</sup> Nowhere does it protect the Indian against religious oppression on the part of tribal authorities. As the citizen of New Orleans must write guarantees of religious liberty into his city charter or his State constitution, if he desires constitutional protection in this respect, so the members of an Indian tribe must write the guarantees they desire into tribal constitutions. In fact, many tribes have written such guarantees into tribal constitutions that are now in force.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>12</sup> *In re Bink Quah*, 31 Fed. 327 (D. C. Alaska, 1880).

<sup>13</sup> *Ex parte Bungey*, 108 U. S. 218 (1897) *disapproved infra* see 4.

<sup>14</sup> In *United States v. Benson* (Nation of New York Indians, 274 Fed. 916 (D. C. W. D. N. Y. 1923)) it was held that Indians courts have no power to set aside action of a tribal council allegedly contradictory of the property rights of a member of the tribe.

<sup>15</sup> That the First Amendment guaranteeing religious liberty does not limit the action of a tribal council is the holding of *Meunier* 801 U. S. 10, 100 U. S. 371 (Lower Bink Sioux).

<sup>16</sup> *Personal v. First Municipality*, 3 Iowa 689 (1845).

<sup>17</sup> A typical Indian bill of rights is the following taken from the constitution of the Mandan (Tribe approved December 19 1893, by the Secretary of the Interior, pursuant to sec 16 of the Act of June 18, 1874 (48 Stat. 984, 897, 26 U. S. C. 470).

#### ARTICLE VIII.—BILL OF RIGHTS

SECTION 1. SUFFRAGE.—Any member of the Blackfeet Tribe, twenty-one (21) years of age or over, shall be eligible to vote at

An extreme application of the doctrine of tribal sovereignty is found in the case of *Le Page (Cron Dog)*<sup>17</sup> in which it was held that the murder of one Sioux Indian by another upon an Indian reservation was not within the criminal jurisdiction of any court of the United States, but that only the Indian tribe itself could punish the offense.

The contention that the United States courts had jurisdiction in a case of this sort was based upon the language of a treaty with the Sioux, rather than upon considerations applicable generally to the various Indian tribes. The most important of the treaty clauses upon which the claim of federal jurisdiction was based provided:

And Congress shall, by appropriate legislation, submit to them in orderly government, they shall be subject to the laws of the United States, and each individual shall be protected in his rights of property, person, and life. (P. 368.)

Commenting upon this clause, the Supreme Court held:

It is equally clear, in my opinion, that the words can have no such effect as is claimed for them. "The pledge to secure to these people with whom the United States is contracting, is a distinct political body, and orderly government, by appropriate legislation, therefore to be framed and enacted, necessarily implies, having regard to all the circumstances attending the transaction, that among the acts of civilized life, which it was the very purpose of all these arrangements, to introduce and maintain, among them, was the highest and best of all, that of self-government, the regulation by themselves of their own domestic affairs, the maintenance of order and peace among their own members by the administration of their own laws and customs. These are reserved to be submitted to the laws of the United States, not in the sense of citizens, but as they had always been, as wards subject to a guardian, not as individuals, constituted members of the political community of the United States, with a voice in the selection of representatives and the framing

any election when in or the presence himself or herself at a public place within his or her voting district.

No. 2. *Economic rights*.—All members of the tribe shall be accorded equal opportunities to participate in the economic resources and privileges of the reservation.

No. 3. *Civil liberties*.—All members of the tribe may enjoy without hindrance freedom of worship, conscience, speech, press, race, and association.

No. 4. *Right of accused*.—Any member of the Blackfeet Tribe accused of any offense shall have the right to a bond upon bail and public hearing, with due notice of the charges to be specified, shall be permitted to summon witnesses on his own behalf for any may be discharged by any previous action of any offense punishable by more than thirty days' imprisonment. Excessive bail shall not be required and cruel punishment shall not be imposed.

Twenty-one other tribal constitutions adopted prior to June 1 1890 contain more or less similar guarantees as follows: Constitution of the Confederated Salish and Kootenai Tribes of the Flathead Reservation Article VII. Confederated Tribes of the Grand Ronde Community Article VIII, Hopi Tribe, Article IX, Lower Brule Sioux Tribe Article VII, Miksa Tribe Article VII. Muckleshoot Indian Tribe Article VII, Northern Cheyenne Tribe Article V, Papago Tribe Article VI, Pima Tribe Article VII, Quileute Tribe Article VII, San Carlos Apache Tribe Article VI. Shoshone-Bannock Tribes of the Fort Hall Reservation, Article VII, Shoshone-Paiute Tribes of the Duck Valley Reservation, Article VII, Snywamish Indians of the Snywamish Reservation Article VII, Tulip Tribes, Article VII, Ute Indian Tribe, Article VII, Sac and Fox Tribe of Indians of Oklahoma, Article IX, Pawnee Indians of Oklahoma, Article VII, Caddo Indian Tribe of Oklahoma Article X, Confederated Tribes of the Warm Springs Reservation of Oregon Article VII, Tonkawa Tribe of Indians of Oklahoma, Article IX, Slocum Indian Tribe of the Slocum Reservation Article VII. Absentee Shawnee Tribe of Indians of Oklahoma, Article IX, Alabama-Quapaw Tribal Town, Article X, Citizen Band of Potawatomi Indians of Oklahoma, Article X, Tishoblocho Tribal Town of Oklahoma, Article VII, Fort Gibson Indian Community of Washington, Article V, Pawnee Shawnee Tribe of Oklahoma, Article IX, Shawnee Band of Pawnee Indians of Shurtwell Reservation, Article VII.

<sup>18</sup> 100 U. S. 890 (1888) Also see Chapter 18.

of the laws, but is a dependent community who were in a state of pupillage, advancing from the condition of a savage tribe to that of a people who, through the discipline of law, and by other means, it was hoped might become a self-sustaining and self-governed society. (Pp. 565-569)

In fully rejecting the argument for federal jurisdiction the Supreme Court declared:

It is a case where, against an express exception in the law itself, that law, by argument and inference only, is sought to be extended over them and strings, over the members of a tribe separated by a wide, by tradition, by the instincts of race though savage life, from the authority and power which seeks to impose upon them the tests of an external and unknown code, and to subject them to the responsibilities of civil conduct, according to rules and penalties of which they could have no previous warning, which judges them by a standard made by others and not for them, which takes no account of the conditions which should exempt them from its exactions, and makes no allowance for their inability to understand it. (P. 571)

The force of the decision in *Prattle Crow Dog* was not weak and, although the scope of the decision was limited, by subsequent legislation which withdrew from the rule of tribal sovereignty a list of 7 major crimes, only recently extended to 10.<sup>1</sup> Over these specified crimes jurisdiction has been vested in the federal courts. Over all other crimes, including such various crimes as kidnapping, attempted murder, receiving stolen goods and forgery, jurisdiction resides not in the courts of nation or state but only in the Indian tribe itself.

We shall defer the question of the exact scope of tribal jurisdiction for more detailed consideration at a later point. We are concerned for the present only in analyzing the basic doctrine of tribal sovereignty. To this doctrine the case of *Prattle Crow Dog* contributes not only in affirmation of the vast and important content of criminal jurisdiction inherent in tribal sovereignty but also an example of the consistent manner in which the United States Supreme Court has opposed the efforts of lower courts and administrative officials to infringe upon tribal sovereignty and to assume tribal prerogatives without statutory justification. The legal powers of an Indian tribe, measured by the decisions of the highest courts, are far more extensive than the powers which most Indian tribes have been actually permitted by energetic officials to exercise in their own right.

The acknowledgment of tribal sovereignty or autonomy by the courts of the United States<sup>2</sup> has not been a matter of lip service

<sup>1</sup> See sec. 9, infra.

<sup>2</sup> The doctrine of tribal sovereignty is well summarized in the following passage in the case of *In re Shoshone*, 21 Fed. 827 (D. C. Alaska 1896):

From the organization of the government to the present time, the various Indian tribes of the United States have been treated as free and independent within their respective territories, governed by their tribal laws and customs in all matters pertaining to their internal affairs, such as contracts and the manner of their enforcement, marriage, descent and the punishment for crimes committed against each other. They have been exempted from all allegiance to the municipal laws of the whites to provide for or otherwise in relation to tribal affairs subject, however, to such restraints as were from time to time deemed necessary for their own protection and for the protection of the whites adjacent to them. *Cherokee, Yav. v. Georgia*, 5 Pet. 10 10 17, *Johnson v. M'Intosh*, 20 Johns 195. (P. 329)

And in the case of *Indians v. Matthews*, 174 Cal. 587, 188 Pac. 602, 606 (1917), it was said:

• • • The Indian tribes recognized by the federal government are not subject to the laws of the state in which they are situated. They are under the control and protection of the United States but they retain the right of local self-government, and they regulate and control their local laws and rights of persons and property, except as Congress has otherwise specially provided by law.

See, also, to the same effect, Story, *Commentaries on the Constitution of the United States* (1801), sec. 1049; Kent, *Commentaries on American Law* (14th ed., 1890), 888-889.

to a scrupulous but unimpaired theory. The doctrine has been followed through the most recent cases, and from time to time carried to new implications. Moreover, it has been administered by the courts in a spirit of wholehearted sympathy and respect. The justification, in view of the Supreme Court of tribal laws and constitutional provisions in the *Cherokee Intermarriage Cases*<sup>3</sup> is typical, and exhibits a degree of respect proper to the laws of a sovereign state.

The sympathy of the courts towards the independent efforts of Indian tribes to administer the institutions of self-government has led to the doctrine that Indian laws and statutes are to be interpreted not in accordance with the technical rules of the common law but in the light of the traditions and circumstances of the Indian people. An attempt in the case of *Hepanic Tiger*<sup>4</sup> to construe the language of the Creek Constitution in a technical sense was not by the appropriate judicial action.

If the Creek Nation desired its system of jurisprudence through the common law, there would be much plausibility in this reasoning. But there are strangers to the common law. They derive their jurisprudence from an entirely different source, and they are as unfamiliar with common law terms and definitions as they are with Sanskrit or Hebrew. With them, to "interpret" is to file a written accusation charging a person with crime.<sup>5</sup>

So, too, in the case of *Alcatraz v. Grady*,<sup>6</sup> the court laid occasion to note that:

The Cherokee constitution was not drawn by ecologists or by geologists or in the interest of science or with scientific accuracy. It was drawn by plain people, who have lived among themselves what meaning should be attached to it and the courts should give effect to that interpretation which its framers intended it should have.

The notion of tribal autonomy which has been so carefully respected by the courts has been implicitly confirmed by Congress in a host of statutes providing that various administrative acts of the President or the Interior Department shall be carried out only with the consent of the Indian tribe or its chiefs or council.<sup>7</sup>

The whole course of congressional legislation with respect to the Indians has been based upon a recognition of tribal autonomy, qualified only where the need for other types of governmental control has become clearly manifest. As was said in a report of the Senate Judiciary Committee in 1870:

Though right of self-government, and to administer justice among themselves, after their rude fashion, even to the extent of inflicting the death penalty, has never been questioned.

It is a fact that state governments and administrative officials have frequently trespassed upon the realm of tribal autonomy, attempting to govern the Indian tribes through state law or departmental regulation or arbitrary administrative fiat,<sup>8</sup> but these trespasses have not impaired the vested legal powers of local self-government which have been recognized again and again when these trespasses have been challenged by an Indian tribe. "Power and authority rightfully conferred do not nec-

<sup>3</sup> 20 U. S. 76 (1806). See also *Famous Smith v. United States*, 151 U. S. 80 (1894), 8 Op. A. G. 900 (1887).

<sup>4</sup> See sec. 9, infra.

<sup>5</sup> See *Walton v. United States*, 145 Fed. 418 (C. C. S. D. 1006).

<sup>6</sup> *Hepanic v. Johnson*, 249 Pac. 888 (1926).

<sup>7</sup> 12d T. 107, 88 S. W. 65, 71 (1896).

<sup>8</sup> See sec. 10, infra. 25 U. S. 130, 182, 190, 192, 184, 218, 226, 228, 871, 307, 308, 402. These provisions are discussed later under "Internal headings."

<sup>9</sup> See Rept. No. 298, 41st Cong. 3d sess. p. 10.

<sup>10</sup> See *Osborne, In Governing the Indian, Use the Indian* (1917), 25 Case & Comment 722.





members entrusted to the tribe by Congress.<sup>1</sup> Some statutes confer upon the President or the Secretary of the Interior supervisory powers over certain named tribal councils.<sup>2</sup> Numerous appropriation acts specify the tribal government, bodies or officers recognized by the Federal Government, in making provisions for tribal approval of various expenditures or in appropriating tribal or federal funds for salaries of Indian councils, councils or chiefs.<sup>3</sup> And treaties with Indian tribes frequently declare in express language or show by the manner of Indian ratification, the character of tribal government.<sup>4</sup> Other treaties guarantee that such tribal governments will not be subjected to state or federal law.<sup>5</sup> Other treaties guarantee to various Indian tribes

the right to establish their own form of government, appoint their own officers and administer their own laws, subject, however, to the legislation of the Congress of the United States relating to trade and intercourse with the Indians.<sup>6</sup> Various other powers, including the power to pass upon various federal expenditures, the power to manage schools supported by the Federal Government, the power to allot land and the power to designate missionaries to act in a supervisory capacity with respect to missionary distributions are conferred or confirmed by "special treaty provisions."

In accordance with the rule applicable to foreign treaties, the courts have repeatedly indicated that they will not go behind the terms of a treaty to inquire whether the representatives of the tribe accepted is such by the President and the Senate were proper representatives.<sup>7</sup>

Treaties must be viewed not only as sources of exercising tribal power but equally as forms of exercising tribal power.<sup>8</sup> And from the standpoint of tribal law, a treaty cannot mix supervisory authority, not is a treaty act of Congress may supersede a treaty, although in either case an infraction of tribal law may result.<sup>9</sup>

Recognition of tribal governments and tribal powers may be found not only in acts of Congress and in treaties but also in state statutes which, when adopted with the advice and consent of the Indians themselves, have been recorded special weight.<sup>10</sup>

Not only must the acts proceeding to act in the name of an Indian tribe show that their acts fall within their allotted function and authority, but likewise the procedure in form follows their tradition or ordinance require must be followed in exercising an act within the acknowledged jurisdiction of the officer or act of officers.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Stockbridge v. United States*, 1887, 101 U.S. 571, 23 L. Ed. 481, 1887, 101 U.S. 571, 23 L. Ed. 481.

<sup>2</sup> Art. IV of the Treaty of January 15, 1868, with the New York Indians, 7 Stat. 590, 591. Accord Art. 7 of the Treaty of June 22, 1865, with the Choctaw and Chickasaw, 13 Stat. 611, 612. Cf. 19 Op. A. G. 442 (1900) (holding establishment of national bank in Creek Nation unlawful). See Chapter 1, note 3.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of January 31, 1786, with the Shawnee Nation, 7 Stat. 28, Treaty of June 3, 1846, with the Kiowa Nation, 7 Stat. 244, Treaty of January 21, 1826, with the Chick Nation, 7 Stat. 280, Art. VIII of the Treaty of July 20, 1851, with the Shawnee and Seneca, 7 Stat. 451, Art. VI of the Treaty of March 2, 1836, with the Ottawa and Chippewa, 7 Stat. 401, 402, Art. III of the Treaty of April 29, 1846, with the Wyandott, 7 Stat. 504, Art. I of the Treaty of January 4, 1865, with the Creek, Choctaw and Chickasaw, 13 Stat. 621, Art. II of the Treaty of August 6, 1846, with the Choctaw, 9 Stat. 871, Art. VI of the Treaty of June 22, 1865, with the Chickasaw, 10 Stat. 974, 975, Art. IV of the Treaty of March 17, 1842, with the Wyandott Nation, 13 Stat. 653, 592, Art. VI and Art. VII of the Treaty of June 22, 1865, with the Choctaw and Chickasaw, 13 Stat. 611, 612, 613, Art. III of the Treaty of February 3, 1866, with the Chickasaw and Muscogee tribes, 13 Stat. 604, 605, Art. VI of the Treaty of August 7, 1846, with the Creek and Seminole Indians, 13 Stat. 609, 703-704, Art. V of the Treaty of September 24, 1867, with the Pottawatomie, 13 Stat. 729, 731, Art. VII of the Treaty of March 12, 1845, with the Ponca Tribe, 12 Stat. 997, 1000, Art. VII of the Treaty of May 7, 1864, with the Chippewa Indians, 13 Stat. 601, 604, Art. I of the Treaty of March 22, 1865, with the Menominee Indians, 13 Stat. 775, 776, Treaty of April 7, 1846, with the Box Point band of Chippewa Indians, 14 Stat. 705, Art. XXIV of the Treaty of April 29, 1846, with the Choctaw and Chickasaw Nations, 13 Stat. 709, 710-717, Treaty of June 14, 1860, with the Creek Nation, 14 Stat. 781, Treaty of July 14, 1866, with the Cherokee Nation, 14 Stat. 799, Treaty of February 19, 1867, with the Shawnee and Wapetaw bands of Dakota or Sioux Indians, 15 Stat. 607, Art. VIII of the Treaty of February 21, 1867, with the Shawnee Indians, 15 Stat. 615, 617.

<sup>4</sup> *United States v. New York Indians*, 178 U.S. 184 (1899), 31 *Indians v. United States*, 19 How. 289 (1856). See Chapter 1, note 1.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 1, note 3.

<sup>6</sup> *The Choctaw Nation v. United States*, 191 U.S. 115 (1904). See Chapter 1, note 1.

<sup>7</sup> *United States v. Kennedy v. Fylen*, 289 U.S. 18 (1933). And see Chapter 8, note 3.

<sup>8</sup> *United States v. Kennedy v. Fylen*, 289 U.S. 18 (1933). And see Chapter 8, note 3.

<sup>9</sup> *United States v. Kennedy v. Fylen*, 289 U.S. 18 (1933). And see Chapter 8, note 3.

<sup>10</sup> *United States v. Kennedy v. Fylen*, 289 U.S. 18 (1933). And see Chapter 8, note 3.

<sup>11</sup> *United States v. Kennedy v. Fylen*, 289 U.S. 18 (1933). And see Chapter 8, note 3.

<sup>1</sup> So Act of June 7, 1897, 30 Stat. 92, 44 (Fris. Tribes), Act of March 6, 1901, 11 Stat. 1035, 1077 (Trib. Tribes), Act of June 29, 1906, 34 Stat. 510, 545 (conflicting power to remove members of Ojibwa Council) upheld in *United States v. Evans*, 212 U.S. 508 (1914).

<sup>2</sup> Act of June 20, 1844, 4 Stat. 682, 685, Act of July 27, 1845, 13 Stat. 198, 210, 211, Act of July 16, 1870, 16 Stat. 998, 890, Act of March 8, 1871, 16 Stat. 944, 909, Act of May 29, 1872, 16 Stat. 307, 309, Act of June 14, 1874, 17 Stat. 147, 148, Act of June 22, 1874, 18 Stat. 146, 171, Act of March 3, 1875, 18 Stat. 434, 444, 445, Act of March 4, 1877, 19 Stat. 271, 240, Act of May 15, 1890, 24 Stat. 20, 92, Act of June 7, 1897, 30 Stat. 62, 94, 92, Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 1005, 1077, Act of March 6, 1901, 31 Stat. 1005, Act of June 29, 1906, 34 Stat. 510, 545, Act of March 6, 1909, 35 Stat. 751, 752, Act of March 4, 1911, 36 Stat. 1068, 1065, Act of March 10, 1914, 38 Stat. 77, Act of August 1, 1914, 38 Stat. 682, Act of May 18, 1910, 36 Stat. 124, Act of March 2, 1917, 40 Stat. 699, Act of May 20, 1918, 40 Stat. 691, Act of June 30, 1919, 41 Stat. 1, Act of February 14, 1920, 41 Stat. 409, Act of March 4, 1921, 41 Stat. 1245, 1246, Act of May 24, 1922, 42 Stat. 942, Act of January 24, 1923, 42 Stat. 1174, Act of March 3, 1924, 43 Stat. 880, Act of March 8, 1927, 43 Stat. 1141, Act of May 10, 1926, 44 Stat. 164, 484, Act of January 1, 1927, 44 Stat. 944, 984, Act of March 4, 1929, 45 Stat. 1502, 1500, 1504, Act of April 22, 1932, 47 Stat. 91, 94, 115, Act of February 17, 1934, 47 Stat. 820, 824, 830, Act of March 2, 1934, 48 Stat. 862, 866, Act of May 9, 1935, 49 Stat. 170, 192, 195, Act of June 22, 1936, 49 Stat. 1767, 1768, Act of May 9, 1938, 52 Stat. 201, 814, 815.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of August 7, 1780, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 85, Treaty of September 14, 1816 with the Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 148, Treaty of July 8, 1817, with the Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 150, Treaty of February 12, 1825, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 227, Treaty of September 23, 1842, with the Seneca and Fox Indians, 7 Stat. 174, Treaty of April 1, 1850, with the Wyandott Tribe, 7 Stat. 507, Treaty of May 10, 1856, with the Shawnee Indians, 10 Stat. 1068, Treaty of January 17, 1867, with the Choctaw and Chickasaw, 13 Stat. 674, Treaty of July 8, 1865, with the Ottawa and Chippewa Indians, 13 Stat. 621, Treaty of August 7, 1865, with the Chippewa Indians, 13 Stat. 633, Treaty of July 19, 1866, with the Choctaw Nation, 14 Stat. 709, Treaty of June 20, 1902, with the Creek Tribe, 43 Stat. 900, And see *United States v. Anderson*, 225 Fed. 626 (C. C. B. D. Wyo).

<sup>4</sup> Act IV of Treaty of September 27, 1830, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 884, 884, Art. XIV of the Treaty of March 24, 1862, with the





various Indian tribes, it did bring about the rationalization of the procedures of tribal government and a modification of the relations of the Interior Department to the activities of tribal government. Section 4 of the Act of June 18, 1934, established a basis for the adoption of tribal constitutions approved by the Secretary of the Interior, which could not thereafter be changed except by mutual agreement or by act of Congress. This section is explained in a circular letter of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs sent out shortly immediately after the approval of the Act of June 18, 1934 in the following terms:

*See The Tribal Organism*

Under this section, any Indian tribe that so desires may organize and establish a constitution and by law. It is the intention of its own for it to do so.

Such a constitution and by laws become effective when it is filed in triplicate of: (1) the adult members of the tribe,<sup>1</sup> (2) the adult lands now residing on the reservation of a special election, it will be the duty of the Secretary of the Interior to call such a special election when any responsible group of Indians has prepared and submitted to him a proposed constitution and by laws which do not violate any Federal law, and in any case the Indians concerned. When such a special election has been called, all Indians who are members of the tribe or residents on the reservation if the constitution is proposed for the tribe in question will be entitled to vote upon the adoption of the constitution. If a tribe of reservation adopts the constitution and by laws in this manner, such constitution and by laws may thereafter be amended or entirely revoked only by the same process.

The powers which may be exercised by an Indian tribe on tribal control include all powers which may be exercised by such tribe on tribal control at the present time, and also include the right to complete tribal control subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior with respect to the choice of council and the fixing of fees, the right to exercise veto power over any disposition of tribal funds or other assets, the right to negotiate with Federal, State, and local governments, and the right to be advised of all appropriation estimates affecting the tribe, before such estimates are submitted to the Bureau of the Budget and Congress.

The following Indian groups are entitled to take advantage of this section: (1) any Indian band, or pueblo in the United States (outside of Oklahoma), or Alaska, and also any group of Indians who reside on the same reservation, whether they are members of the same tribe or not.

The constitutions adopted pursuant to this section and those adopted pursuant to similar provisions of law applicable to Alaska and Oklahoma<sup>2</sup> may comply with respect to the

form of tribal government, customs, from ancient and primitive forms in tribes where such forms have been perpetuated, to models based upon progressive white communities.

The powers of self-government vested in these various tribes in exercise of its autonomy with the circumstances, experience, and resources of the tribe. The extent to which tribal powers are related to departmental review is again a matter on which tribal constitutions differ from each other.

The procedure by which tribal ordinances are reviewed, where such review is called for, is a matter which in nearly all tribal constitutions has been covered in substantially identical terms. A typical provision is that of the constitution of the Blackfeet Tribe, which reads as follows:

ARTICLE VI POWERS OF THE COUNCIL

Sec. 2. *Power of review*—Any resolution or ordinance which in the terms of this constitution is subject to review by the Secretary of the Interior shall be presented to the superintendent of the reservation who shall within ten (10) days thereafter, approve or disapprove the same. If the superintendent shall approve any ordinance or resolution, it shall thereupon become effective; but the superintendent shall transmit a copy of the same, together with his endorsement to the Secretary of the Interior, who may, within ninety (90) days from the date of enactment, rescind the said ordinance or resolution, on any terms; by notifying the tribal council of such decision. If the superintendent shall refuse to approve any resolution or ordinance submitted to him within ten (10) days after its enactment he shall advise the Blackfeet Tribal Business Council of his reason therefor. If these reasons appear to the council insufficient it may, by a majority vote, refer the ordinance or resolution to the Secretary of the Interior, who may, within ninety (90) days from the date of its enactment, approve the same or withhold approval; the said ordinance or resolution shall become effective.

Under the procedure thus established, positive action is required to vindict an ordinance that is subject to departmental review. Failure of the superintendent to act within the prescribed period operates as a veto.<sup>3</sup> Failure of the superintendent or other departmental employees to act promptly in transmitting to the Secretary an ordinance validly submitted and approved does not extend the period allowed for sectional veto.<sup>4</sup> On the other hand, where a superintendent vetoes an ordinance, failure of the tribe to act in accordance with the prescribed procedure of returning the ordinance, after a new vote, to the Secretary of the Interior, will preclude validation of the ordinance.<sup>5</sup>

Sectional review of tribal ordinances, like Presidential review of legislation, involves judgments of policy as well as judgments of law and constitutionality. Only a small proportion of such ordinances have been vetoed. The reasons most commonly advanced for such action by the Secretary of the Interior are:

- 1 That the ordinance violates some provision of the tribal constitution,<sup>6</sup>
- 2 That the ordinance violates some Federal law,
- 3 That the ordinance is unjust to a minority group within the tribe.

<sup>1</sup> It has been administratively determined that constitutions of groups not previously recognized as tribes in the political sense, cannot include powers derived from sovereignty, such as the power to tax, condemn land or members, and regulate commerce. Memo Sol I D, April 15, 1930. (Letter Sioux Indian Community, Pineau Indian Agency.)

<sup>2</sup> Approved December 13, 1935.

<sup>3</sup> Memo Sol I D, April 11, 1940 (Walker River Paiute).

<sup>4</sup> Memo Sol I D, October 21, 1938 (San Carlos Apache).

<sup>5</sup> See Memo Sol I D, April 11, 1940 (Walker River Paiute).

<sup>6</sup> See for example, Memo Sol I D, December 14, 1937 (Hopis).

<sup>1</sup> See Memo Sol I D, March 25, 1939. Undoubtedly the act had some effect upon the attitude of administrative agencies towards powers which had been the officially vested in Indian tribes, but frequently ignored in practice. See in instance decision of the Comptroller General 4-86299, June 29, 1937 upholding tribal power to collect rents from tribal land and dealing.

<sup>2</sup> \* \* \* having in view the broad purposes of the act as shown by its legislative history to extend to Indians the fundamental rights of political liberty and local self-government, and thus having been shown the fact that some of the powers so granted by the act are not subject to the use of tribal funds but are accomplished in doing so by the use of such powers, and the further fact that the act of June 25, 1936, 49 Stat. 1628, provides that section 25 of the Evans and Allen Appropriation Bill Act (48 Stat. 121) shall not apply to lands held in trust for individual Indians, associations of individual Indians, or for Indian corporations, chartered under the act of June 18, 1934, this office would not be required to object to the ordinance now given in your memorandum for the building of tribal funds of Indian tribes organized pursuant to the said act of June 18, 1934.

<sup>3</sup> 48 Stat. 981-987, 25 U. S. C. 478.

<sup>4</sup> This rule was modified by the Act of June 15, 1939, sec. 1 40 Stat. 978, 25 U. S. C. 478a which substituted the requirement of majority votes of those voting in an election where 90 percent of the eligible voters cast ballots.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 9.

<sup>6</sup> For a list of Oklahoma constitutions and charters, see Chapter 2, sec. 13.

During the 6 years following the enactment of the Act of June 18, 1931 Congress found no occasion to amend any tribal constitution or ordinance, although it undoubtedly has power to do so.<sup>1</sup> nor was any tribal constitution adopted by an Indian tribe selected by the Secretary of the Interior. During this period, perhaps the chief threat to the integrity of tribal government has been the willingness of certain tribal officers to relinquish responsibility vested in them by tribal constitutions. This tendency has been somewhat checked by rulings to the effect that the Interior Department will not approve or be party to such relinquishment of responsibility.<sup>2</sup>

An attempt to outline the probable future development of these Indian constitutions is made in a recent article on the subject *How Long Will Indian Constitutions Last?*<sup>3</sup>

Any answer to this question that is more than mere guesswork must square with the recorded history of Indian constitutions. Tribal constitutions, after all, are not a radical innovation of the New Deal. The history of Indian constitutions goes back at least to the Great Shogwag (Great Binding Law) of the Hoquens (Confederacy) which probably dates from the 17th century.<sup>4</sup>

So far we have the written constitutions of the Chick, Cherokee, Choctaw, Chickasaw, and Delaware nations, printed usually on tribal printing presses, which were in force during the decade from 1880 to 1900.

These constitutions, mostly historical records today, offer Indian constitutions, however, retain their vitality. A good many tribes have had Indian or written constitutions, which simply recorded the procedure of their general council meetings, the method of electing or removing representatives or "business" committees,<sup>5</sup> the powers and duties of the duties of officers. Other tribes, not governed by elaborate constitutions which have never been recorded. The difference between a written and an unwritten constitution should not be exaggerated. The rules concerning council procedure, selection of officers, and official responsibilities, which have been followed by the Chick towns or by the Rio Grande Pueblos without substantial alteration across four centuries, certainly deserve to be called constitutions. They do not lose their potency when they are reduced to writing; in the constitution of Laguna Pueblo was reduced to writing thirty years ago.

In all the recorded history of Indian constitutions, two basic facts stand out.

It is a fact of deep significance that no Indian constitution has ever been destroyed except with the consent of the government. Congress has never legislated a tribal government out of existence except by treaty, agreement or plebiscite. Even the wholesale destruction of the government of the Five Civilized Tribes in the old Indian Territory was accomplished only when the members of these tribes, by majority vote, had accepted the wishes of Congress. These governments ceased to exist as governments primarily because they had identified to citizenship, and to rights of occupancy in tribal lands, so many white men that the original Indian communities could no longer maintain a national existence apart from the white set-offs. The acts of Congress and the plebiscite votes of the

tribes which were dominated by the "squaw men" and mixed bloods reflected in existing fact. The constitution of the Hoquens is confidently likewise was broken only by the Indians themselves when the Secretary could not agree on the question of whether to support the American revolutionaries or the British.

The second basic fact that stands out in a survey of the life span of Indian constitutions is that the Indians themselves cease to want a constitution when that constituted government no longer satisfies important wants. When this happens, a tribal government, like any other government, either dissolves in chaos or yields place to some other governing agency that commands greater power or promises to satisfy in greater measure the significant wants of the governed.

It will be refreshing in seeking to answer the question, "How long will the new Indian Constitutions last?", we must first attention on the human wants that tribal governments under these constitutions are able to satisfy rather than on answers as to what future Congresses and future administrations may think of Indian self-government.

It is extremely likely that organized Indian tribes will continue to exist as long as American democracy exists and as long as the American people are unwilling to use the way to carry out Indian policies, provided that the Indians themselves feel that tribal governments satisfy important human wants.

What are the wants that a tribal government can help to satisfy?

## I

The most fundamental of the goods which a tribe may bring to its members is economic security. Few things hold men so closely as a common interest in the means of their livelihood. No tribe will dissolve so long as there are lands or resources that belong to the tribe or economic enterprises in which all members of the tribe in part participate. The young men who in the primitive days of adolescence go to the tribal government to obtain employment in a tribal lumber mill, cooperative store, hotel, mine, farm, or factory, gives the government the most fundamental kind of recognition. The returned student who applies to a committee of his tribal council for permission to build up his lands on tribal grazing land, or for the chance to establish a farm, or to build a home and garden upon tribal lands assigned to his occupancy, cannot ignore this tribal government.

It follows that governmental credit policies in making loans to Indian tribes are of critical importance. If, in such loans, special attention is given to encouraging tribal enterprises, a real basis of tribal solidarity is provided, all members of the tribe are interested in the success of the enterprise in the efficiency and honesty of its management. The development of a tribal enterprise becomes a course of adult education in economic and government in the other hand if credit operations are entirely confined to individual enterprises, no such common interest is created. The struggle for a lion's share of tribal loan funds may prove, on the contrary, a devastating and faction-producing drive. The tribal officials instead of being promoters will be hinders. And there is no reason to believe that the bankers of an Indian tribe will be less cautiously deterred by their debts than are bankers in any country of the world today.

Second in importance only to the reservation credit program is the reservation land acquisition program. A landless tribe can evoke no more respect, among farmers, than a landless individual. But more than paper ownership of tribal land is here in question. The issue is whether the tribe that "owns" land will be allowed to exercise the powers of a landowner, to receive rentals and fees, to regulate land use, to withdraw land privileges from those who flout its regulations, or whether the Federal Government will administer the tribal lands for the benefit of the Indians, as it administers National Monuments for instance, for the benefit of posterity, with the Indians having perhaps as much actual voice in the matter as posterity has in the latter.

As deep as tribal self-constitution are likely to be as deep as the tribe's actual control over economic resources.

<sup>1</sup>On federal review of legislation of the Five Civilized Tribes, see Chapter 28, see 6.

<sup>2</sup>Memo Sol I D May 24, 1938 (vote of Ogish House resolution delegating taxation powers to superintendent). See also Memo Actins, Sol I D, July 16, 1937 (disapproving proposal for indefinite review of actions of Business Committee of Chickasaw Creek Indians of the Rocky Boy's Reservation affecting federally financed business but approving controversial provision for review of such enterprises during period of independence). Memo Sol I D October 16, 1938 (renewal of loan to Lower Bule Shoar Tribe), Memo Sol I D, July 12, 1937 (PL Belknap delegation of leaving power to superintendent disapproved), Memo Sol I D, May 28, 1936 (PL Hall, same).

<sup>3</sup>P. S. Cohen, *How Long Will Indian Constitutions Last?* (1938) 6 *Indianist* at Work, No. 10. This essay has been quoted follow the cited publication except with respect to editorial abridgments and corrections made therein.

## II

It is doubtful that the possession of common property, but perhaps equally important in the continuity of a social group is the existence of common exposures. To community life is an intimate community of interest in the endless and enjoyable things of life: make for solidarity and loyalty.

Any governmental organization must do a good many unpleasant jobs. Among them, bookkeepers and collecting taxes are not activities that inspire enthusiasm and loyalty. Thus, government comes to be looked upon as a necessary evil at best, and, if actively sponsored, some of life's everyday exposures. An Indian tribe that encourages the retention of life of its members through the development of community recreational facilities is building for itself a solid foundation in human loyalty.

There is no doubt that the remarkable longevity of retention of government in the Pueblos of New Mexico derives in large part from the role which that government plays in the popular dances, communal feasts, and similar social activities. To reduce the functions of the law or one of the northern reservations is a task hardly less important than the reestablishment of the economic basis of life.

In the field much will depend upon the attitude of Indian Service officials, and particularly upon the attitude of teachers, social workers, and extension agents. It will be hard for them to surrender the huge measure of control that they now exercise over the recreational and social life of the reservation, but unless they are willing to yield control in this field to the tribal government, that government will find itself barred from the hearts of its people.

## III

Outside of Indian reservations, local government handles chief jurisdiction in the performance of municipal services and particularly in the maintenance of law, and order, the management of public education, the distribution of water rights, and effectively the maintenance of health and sanitation, the relief of the needy, and activities designed to afford crime prevention, crime law, and other criminal activities. On most Indian reservations, all of these functions, if performed at all, are performed not by the tribal council, but by employees of the Indian Service. Thus the usual reason for the maintenance of local government is lacking.

The one for these situations is, obviously, the progressive transfer of municipal functions to the organized tribe. Already some progress has been made in this direction in the field of law and order. Codes of municipal ordinances are being developed and existing codes, which are usually little, in some cases, by the Indians, to whom they are responsible, and the creative powers of the Superintendent in this field have been substantially abolished. In the other fields of municipal activity no such change has yet taken place.

Where Indian schools are maintained, the Indians generally have nothing to say about school curricula, the appointment or qualifications of teachers or even the programs to be followed in the commencement exercises. Many reasons will occur to the Indian Service employee why the tribal government should have nothing to say about Indian education. It will be said that the Federal Government pays for Indian education and should therefore exercise complete control over it—an ironic echo of the familiar argument that landless owners pay for public education and should therefore control it. It will be said that Indians are not competent to handle educational problems. It will be said that giving power to tribal councils will contaminate education with "politics."

None of these objections has any particular rational force. In several cases teachers are now being paid not out of Federal funds but out of tribal funds. So far as the law is concerned, an act of Congress that has been on the statute books since June 30, 1881, specifically provides that the direction of teachers, and other employees, even though they be paid out of Federal funds, may be given to the proper tribal authorities whenever the Secretary of the Interior (originally, the Secretary of War) considers

the tribe competent to exercise such direction. Indians are considered competent enough to serve on boards of education where public schools have been substituted for Indian's own schools. And there is no good reason why tribal politics deserves to be suppressed any more than national politics. If these common elements are with an national force they are nevertheless slightly out of place when they substitute the majority of those who live in poor positions and situations to jeopardize the status quo.

This is true not only in the field of education. It is true in the field of health, community planning, relief, and all other municipal matters. It is true of government outside of the Indians' view, and perhaps it is true of all human enterprise. The shift of control from a Federal bureau to the local community is likely to come not through efforts of delegated authority from the Federal Government, but rather is a result of insistent demands from the local community that it be entrusted with increasing control over its own municipal affairs.

Where this demand for local autonomy is found, there is ground to hope that a tribal constitution will prove to be a reality, for genuine institution in human institutions go. Where this demand is not found, there is reason to believe that the tribal government will not be taken very seriously by the Federal Government, that Indian Service control of municipal functions will continue until superseded by state control, and that the tribe will disappear as a political organization.

## IV

A fourth source of vitality in any tribal constitution is the community of consciousness which it reflects. Where many people think and feel as one, there is some ground to expect a stable political organization. Where, on the other hand, such unity is fractured either by factionalism within the tribe or by constant assimilation into a surrounding population, continuity of tribal organization cannot be expected.

## V

A fifth source of vitality in any tribal organization lies in the role which it may assume as protector of the rights of its members.

In most parts of the country, Indians are looked down upon and discriminated against by their white fellow citizens. They are denied many of the rights of citizenship, in several states even the right to vote—in a few states the right to marry with the white race or to attend white schools—in most states the right to use public facilities of relief, institutional care, etc. Discrimination against Indians in private employment is widespread. Social discrimination is almost universal. The story of Federal relations with the Indian tribes is filled with accounts of broken treaties, misdeeds, land steals, and practiced enslavement of independent tribes under their formal link by Indian agents.

It is not to be wondered at that this history of discrimination and oppression has left a bitter, rankling resentment in the hearts of most Indians. A responsible tribal government must express this resentment, and express it in more effective ways than are open to an individual, otherwise it is ruled in one of its chief functions. Where there is a popular consciousness of grievances, the governing body of the community must seek their redress, whether against state officials, Indian Service employees, white traders, or any other group. To be in the pay of any such group is, on most reservations, a black mark against a popular representative.

In this field of activity, tribal governments can achieve significant results. A council, for instance, that employs an attorney to enjoin the enforcement of an unconstitutional statute depriving Indians of the right to vote is likely to secure a final lien on the respect of its constituency and materially increase the life expectancy of the tribal constitution. A tribal council that makes a determined fight to secure enforcement of laws—some of them more than a hundred years old—granting Indians

preference in Indian Service employment will win Indian support even if it loses its much-talked light. So with many other common actions on which relief tax tribal is too is possible. A rubber stamp could that simply ticks what the Indian Office gives it is not likely to establish permanent foundations for tribal autonomy. Rubber is probably the most possible method and it gives off a hot smell when it does.

There is, then, no single answer that can be given to the question, How long will Indian constitutions last? We may be sure that different constitutions will perish at different rates. The doubt here has been still born. Such constitutions are in existence in the eyes of the law but not in the heart of the Indians, and at the first sign of official displeasure they will disappear. Other constitutions represent a direct denial of the fact that this is the United States of America in the City of St. Louis.

#### SECTION 4 THE POWER TO DETERMINE TRIBAL MEMBERSHIP<sup>20</sup>

The courts have consistently recognized that in the absence of express legislation by Congress, to the contrary, an Indian tribe has complete authority to determine all questions of its own membership.<sup>21</sup> It may thus by usage or written law, or by treaty with the United States or informal agreement, determine under what conditions persons shall be considered members of the tribe. It may provide for special formalities of recognition and it may adopt such rules as seem suitable to it, to regulate the abandonment of membership, the adoption of non-Indians or Indians of other tribes and the types of membership or citizenship which it may choose to recognize. The completeness of this power is clearly statutory recognition in a provision that the children of a white man and an Indian woman in blood shall be considered members of the tribe if, and only if, "said Indian woman was recognized by the tribe."<sup>22</sup> The power of the Indian tribes in this field is limited only by the various statutes of Congress defining the membership of certain tribes for purposes of allotment or for other purposes,<sup>23</sup> and by

One who seeks a mathematical formula can perhaps measure the life expectancy of various tribal constitutions in economic numbers. As to the factors we have discussed—the extent to which the organized tribe ministers to the common economic needs of the people, the degree in which the organized tribe satisfies recreation and cultural wants, the extent and character of municipal services which the tribe renders, the degree of social solidarity of the community, and the vision with which the tribal government expresses the distinct interests of the people and outlines a path of development along a national line. Most certainly one can say that a constitution is the structure of a polity that exists in human hearts. An Indian constitution will exist as long as there is unity in him in his community of individuals under of common interests, equal hope, and it is in terms of it and politics, work, and play.

the statutory authority given to the Secretary of the Interior to promulgate a final tribal roll for the purpose of dividing and distributing tribal funds.<sup>24</sup>

The power of an Indian tribe to determine questions of its own membership derives from the character of an Indian tribe as a distinct political entity. In the case of *Petitioners v. Council of Seneca Nation*<sup>25</sup> the Court of Appeals of New York reviewed the many decisions of that court and of the Supreme Court of the United States recognizing the Indian tribe as a "distinct political society, separated from others, capable of managing its own affairs and governing itself," and in reaching the conclusion that mandamus would not lie to compel the plaintiff's enrollment by the defendant council, declared:

Unless these expressions, as well as similar expressions many times used by many courts in various jurisdictions, are mere words of flattery designed to soothe Indian sensibilities, unless the last vestige of separate national life has been withdrawn from the Indian tribes by encroaching state legislation, then, surely, it must follow that the Seneca Nation of Indians has retained for itself that prerogative to their self preservation and integrity as a nation, the right to determine by whom its membership shall be constituted. (P. 788)

It must be the law, therefore, that, unless the Seneca Nation of Indians and the state of New York agree a relation into so peculiar to themselves, the enrollment of the petitioner, with its attending property rights, depends upon the law and usages of the Seneca Nation and is to be determined by that Nation for itself, without interference or dictation from the Supreme Court of the state. (P. 789)

After examining the constitutional position of the Seneca Nation and finding that tribal autonomy has not been impaired by any legislation of the state, the court concludes:

The conclusion is inescapable that the Seneca Tribe remains a separate nation, that its powers of self-government are retained with the sanction of the state, that the ancient customs and usages of the nation except in a few particulars, remain, unimpaired, the law of the Indian band, that in its capacity of a sovereign nation the Seneca Nation is not subversive to the orders and directions of

<sup>20</sup> For an analysis of congressional power over tribal membership, see Chapter 5 sec. 6. For an analysis of federal administrative power on the same subject, see Chapter 5, sec. 13.

<sup>21</sup> There is no dispute as to the plenary power of Congress over the field of tribal membership. See *Wyllie v. Adams*, 204 U.S. 416 (1907), and Chapter 5 sec. 6.

<sup>22</sup> It must be noted that property rights attached to membership are largely, if not entirely, the creation of the Interior rather than the tribe itself. See, see 8 infra, and see Chapters 7, 8 and 10.

<sup>23</sup> See *Delaware Indians v. Cherokee Nation*, 193 U.S. 127 (1904).

<sup>24</sup> 25 U.S.C. 184 declares:

"... all children born of a marriage heretofore solemnized between a white man and an Indian woman by blood and not by adoption where said Indian woman is at this time or was at the time of her death, recognized by the tribe shall have the same rights and privileges as to the property of the tribe to which the mother belongs or belonged at the time of her death by blood as any other member of the tribe, and no Indian woman in blood shall be considered as to deny such child of such right. (Act of June 7, 1897 c. 6, sec. 1, 30 Stat. 62, 90.)"

The phrase "recognized by the tribe" is construed in *Oates v. United States* 172 Fed. 808 (C.C.A. 8, 1900), *Faye v. United States*, 10 F. 2d 210 (C.C.A. 9, 1927), *United States v. Red Wolf*, 38 F. 2d 806 (C.C.A. 9, 1980), *reversed* 283 U.S. 788 (1931), 48 L. D. 146 (1911), 60 L. D. 671 (1924).

<sup>25</sup> Various enrollment statutes provide an enrollment by clerk, with departmental approval. Act of March 3, 1881, sec. 4, 21 Stat. 414, 147 (Mann), Act of March 2, 1889, 25 Stat. 1013 (United Peckas and Miami), construed in *L. L. D. 193* (1880), Act of February 14, 1891, 26 Stat. 749, 751 (Old and Fox and others). Of Act of June 18, 1896, 44 Stat. 1609 (appointing the Secretary to enroll for allotment a person adopted by the Kiowa tribe), Act of Jan. 28, 1898, sec. 21, 30 Stat. 492, 609 ("Cherokee"). It is lawfully admitted to citizenship by the tribal authorities, provided for enrollment by the Secretary of the Interior, with the assistance of clerk. Act of May 10, 1921, 48 Stat. 192 (Luc de Flambeau) and Act of June 15, 1948, 48 Stat. 906 (Memomono) acted by the Secretary after findings by the non-Indian Tribal Council.

Another procedure involves a commission including Indian members, acting with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior. See Act of

March 8, 1921, 41 Stat. 1795 (Fe Belapin) construed in *Stockey v. Yell*, 58 F. 2d 822 (1902). Still other statutes provide for enrollment by the Secretary of the Interior. See Chapter 5, sec. 6.

Even in these cases the Secretary sometimes utilized a roll prepared by officers of the tribe. See *Jump v. Mills*, 100 F. 2d 180 (C.A. 10, 1938), *act den* 406 U.S. 640 (1948).

Occasionally Congress has specifically required that the Interior Department recognize a tribal adoption. See Act of April 4, 1910, sec. 16, 36 Stat. 266, 290 (Kiowa).

<sup>26</sup> 35 U.S.C. 168 (June 30, 1916, c. 6, sec. 1, 41 Stat. 8, 9) See Chapter 5, sec. 12 and 13, Chapter 5, sec. 6, and Chapter 10, sec. 4.

<sup>27</sup> 245 N.Y. 458, 137 N.Y. 274 (1927).

<sup>28</sup> Marshall, C. J., in *Cherokee Nation v. Georgia*, 5 Pet. 1, 15 (1831).



the courts of New York State that there all the Seneca Nation retains for itself the power of determining who are Seneca, and in that respect is above interference and direction. (P. 78.)

In the case of *Holliday v. United States*, it appeared that a woman of sixteenth century Seneca Indian blood on her mother's side (her father being a white man) had been refused recognition as an Indian by the Interior Department although by tribal custom, since the woman's mother had been recognized as an Indian, the woman herself was so recognized. The court held that the decision of the Interior Department was contrary to law, declining

In this proceeding the court has been informed as to the usages and customs of the different tribes of the Seneca Nation and has found it that the common law does not obtain among such tribes as to determining the race to which the children of a white man married to an Indian woman belong, but that according to the usages and customs of such tribes the children of a white man married to an Indian woman take the race or nationality of the mother. (P. 119.)

In the *Cherokee Intermarriage Cases*, the Supreme Court of the United States considered the claims of certain white men, married to Cherokee Indians to participate in the common property of the Cherokee Nation. After carefully examining the constitutional articles and the statutes of the Cherokee Nation, the court reached the conclusion that the claims in question were invalid, since, although the claimants had been recognized as citizens for certain purposes, the Cherokee Nation had complete authority to qualify the rights of citizenship which it offered to its "naturalized" citizens, and had, in the exercise of this authority, provided for the revocation or qualification of citizenship rights so as to deny the claims of the plaintiffs. The Supreme Court acted *per Billie, C. J.*

\* 248 Fed. 413 (C. C. S. D. 1905). Also see chapter I sec. 2.

\* 720 the effect that tribal action on recognition of members in one capacity "as there was no treaty agreement or statute of the United States imposing upon any officer of the United States the power to make a complete roll and declaring that the acts of said officer should be conclusive upon the questions involved." see *Billie v. United States* 197 Fed. 113, 118 (C. C. S. D. 1912) (not for allotment).

The same view is maintained in 30 Op. A. G. 115 (1886) in a case in which exclusive power to determine membership was vested in the tribal authority by treaty.

\* \* \* It was the Indians and not the United States that were interested in the destruction of what was personally coming to them from the United States. It was proper then that they should be free for themselves, and finally, they were entitled to membership in the confederated tribe and to participate in the emoluments belonging to that relation.

The certificate of the state and counties is referred to, is possible as such a right of evidence can be procured of the fact of the determination by the chiefs of the right of membership under the treaty of January 31, 1867, and seems to be such as is warranted by the spirit and custom of the Government in its public dealings with the people and other similar tribes. (P. 110.)

See to the same effect, *In re William Davis*, 20 L. D. 71 (1898), *Black Tomahawk v. Warden*, 19 L. D. 811 (1894), 30 L. D. 649 (1907), 48 L. D. 128 (1914), 20 Op. A. G. 721 (1886), *Warden Cherokee v. United States*, 27 C. C. S. 151 (1891) mod. 215 U. S. 127, 24 C. C. 597, *United States v. Hayfren* (2nd circuit), 188 Fed. 904, 908 (C. C. Mont. 1907), *Memo Rel. I. D. May 13, 1895* (Re Lake Chippewas) and see *Memo Rel. I. D. December 18, 1897* (Kansas and Wisconsin Pottawatomie).

As was said in the last cited memorandum \* \* \* However, if the Prairie Band did refuse in the light of this information to accept the children into membership, the Department is not to be faulted for not taking the children into account, and the Bureau Committee should be so informed. While the Department may approve or disapprove additions into the tribe and expulsions therefrom made by the tribal authorities, no one holds that the Department, in the absence of express statutory authority, may prevent a tribal authority from making over the protest of the tribal authorities. Such action would be contrary to the intent enunciated in the census and to the position taken by the Department in the drafting of tribal constitutions.

\* 203 U. S. 78 (1906)

The distinction between different classes of citizens was recognized by the Cherokees in the differences in the tribal governmental law, is applicable to the whites, and to the Indians of other tribes. In the provision in the allotment law that a white man intermarried with an Indian by blood acquires certain rights is a citizen, but no provision that if he marries a Cherokee citizen and of Indian blood he shall be recognized as a citizen at all, and by the provision that if one having married an Indian by blood he marries the second time a citizen, that he himself loses all of his rights as a citizen. And the same distinction between citizens is such and citizens with property rights has also been recognized by Congress in numerous treaties and to other Indians that the Five Civilized Tribes. Act August 9, 1888, 25 Stat. 492 (C. S. 40 May 2, 1890), 20 Stat. 461, 152, 41 June 7, 1907, 30 Stat. 90, c. 3. (P. 88.)

The laws and usages of the Cherokees, their constitutional history, the fundamental principles of their national policy, their constitution and statutes, all show that citizenship rested on blood in marriage, that the man who would assert citizenship must establish marriage, that when marriage ceased (with a special exception in favor of widows or widowers) citizenship ceased; that when an intermarried white married a person having no rights of Cherokee citizenship by blood it was conclusive evidence that the tribe which bound him to the Cherokees people was severed and the very basis of his citizenship obliterated. (P. 97.)

An Indian tribe in its capacity various types of membership and quality not only the property rights but the voting rights of certain members. Similarly, an Indian tribe may invoke rights of membership which it has got into. In *Reff v. Bureau*,<sup>10</sup> the Supreme Court upheld the validity of an act of the Chickasaw legislature depriving a Chickasaw citizen of his citizenship, declining

The citizenship which the Chickasaw legislature could confer it could withdraw. The only restriction on the power of the Chickasaw Nation to legislate in respect to its naturalized citizens is that such legislation shall not conflict with the Constitution or laws of the United States, and we know of no provision of such Constitution or laws, which would be set at naught by the action of a political community like this in withdrawing privileges of membership in the community, once conferred. (P. 223.)

The right of an Indian tribe to make express rules governing the recognition of members, the adoption of new members, the procedure for abandonment of membership, and the procedure for re-adoption, is recognized in *Smith v. Baizer*.<sup>11</sup> In that case the plaintiffs' right to allotments depended upon their membership in a particular tribe. The court held that such membership was demonstrated by the fact of tribal recognition, declining

Indian members of one tribe can sever their relations as such and may form affiliations with another or other tribes. And so they may, after their relation with a tribe has been severed, regain the tribe and be again recognized and treated as members thereof, and tribal rights and privileges attach accordingly to the habits and customs of the tribe with which affiliation is presently cast. As to the manner of bringing off and reasserting tribal affiliations we are merely informed. It was and is a thing, of course, dependent upon the peculiar usages and customs of each particular tribe, and therefore we may assume that no general rule obtains for its regulation.

\* See to the same effect, 10 Op. A. G. 100 (1885)

\* Thus in 19 Op. A. G. 986 (1899) the view is expressed that a tribe may by law restrict the rights of tribal status, excluding white citizens from voting although by treaty they are guaranteed rights of "manhood." *Accord* 9 Op. A. G. 800 (1887)

\* 108 U. S. 218 (1897). And see *Memo Rel. I. D. February 18, 1898* to the effect that a tribal roll may be amended pursuant to a tribal constitution.

\* 151 Fed. 988 (C. C. Ore. 1907), *aff'd sub nom. Baizer v. Smith*, 106 Fed. 846 (C. C. A. 9, 1900), *see* 132 Fed. 889 (C. C. Ore. 1904)

Now, the first condition presented is that the mother of Phinno was a full blood Walla Walla Indian. She was consequently a member of the tribe of that name. Was her status changed by marriage to Taw down in Hoquas Indians? This must depend upon the tribal usage and customs of the Walla Walla and the Hoquas. It is said by Hon William A. Little, Assistant Attorney General, in an opinion rendered by the Department of the Interior in a letter involving this very controversy:

"That inheritance among these Indians is through the mother and not through the father, and that the true test in these cases is to ascertain whether parties claiming to be Indians are entitled to allotments have by their conduct, exhibited themselves as changed their citizenship."

But we are told that

"Among the Tetonian tribes, kinship is traced through the blood of the woman only. Kinship and its membership in a family, and thus in turn constitutes citizenship in the tribe, containing certain social, political, and religious privileges, duties, and rights which are denied to persons of other blood." *Indian Book of America* in Indian, cited by Frederick Webb Hodge, Smithsonian Institution, Government Printing Office, 1907

Marriage, therefore with Taw down would not at such constitute an affiliation on the part of his wife with the Hoquas tribe of which he was a member, and a termination of membership with her own tribe. (P. 884)

Considering a second marriage of the plaintiff to a white person, the court went on to declare:

\* \* \* But notwithstanding the marriage of Phinno to Smith, and her long residence outside of the limits of the reservation she was acknowledged by the chiefs of the contested tribe to be a member of the Walla Walla tribe. From the testimony adduced herein, read in connection with that taken in the case of *Huy-gu-lai-mah-hu v. Smith*, supra, it appears that Mrs. Smith was advised by Homily and Mow-a-way, chiefs, respectively, of the Walla Walla and Cayuse tribes, to come upon the reservation and make selections for allotments to herself and children; and that thereafter she was recognized by both these chiefs, and by Peo, the chief of the Umatilla, as being a member of the Walla Walla tribe. It is true that she was not so recognized at first, but she was finally, and by a general council of the Indians held for the special purpose of determining the matter. (P. 888)

Where tribal laws have not expressly provided for some certificate of membership,<sup>10</sup> the courts, in cases not clearly controlled by recognized tribal custom, have looked to recognition by the tribal chiefs as a test of tribal membership.<sup>11</sup>

The weight given to tribal action in relation to tribal membership is shown by the case of *Achie v. United States*.<sup>12</sup> In that case the jurisdiction of the Cherokee courts in a murder case, the defendants being Cherokee Indians, depended upon whether the deceased, a white man, had been duly adopted by the Cherokee Tribe. Finding evidence of such adoption in the official records of the tribe, the Supreme Court held that such adoption deprived the federal act of jurisdiction over the murder and vested such jurisdiction in the tribal courts.

A similar decision was rendered in the case of *Raymond v. Raymond*<sup>13</sup> in which the jurisdiction of a tribal court over an adopted Cherokee was challenged. The court declared, per Sanborn, J.

\* \* \* It is conceded that under the laws of that nation the appellee became a member of that tribe, by adoption,

through her intermarriage with the applicant. It is settled by the decisions of the Supreme Court that her adoption into that nation ousted the federal court of jurisdiction over her, and left her and any member of that tribe and vested the tribal courts with exclusive jurisdiction over every such action. *Thorpe v. U. S.*, 162 U. S. 599, 16 Sup. Ct. 864; *Agip v. U. S.*, 164 U. S. 637, 678, 17 Sup. Ct. 212. (P. 723)

It is of course recognized throughout the cases that tribal membership is a matter of relation, depending, for its existence, not only upon the action of the tribe but also upon the action of the individual concerned. Any member of any Indian tribe is at full liberty to terminate his tribal relationship whenever he chooses,<sup>14</sup> although it has been said that such termination will not be inferred from flight and trifling circumstances.<sup>15</sup>

Apart from the foregoing cases, there are a number of decisions excluding from rights of tribal membership persons claiming to be members who have been recognized neither by the tribal nor by the federal authorities.<sup>16</sup> Such cases, of course, cast little light on the scope of tribal power.

The tribal power recognized in the foregoing cases is not overthrown by anything said in the case of *United States ex rel. West v. Hitchcock*.<sup>17</sup> In that case in adopted members of the Wichita tribe was refused an allotment by the Secretary of the Interior because the Department had never approved his adoption. Since the Secretary, according to the Supreme Court, had unwarrantable discretionary authority to grant or deny an allotment even to a member of the tribe by blood, it was unnecessary for the Supreme Court to decide whether refusal of the Interior Department to approve the claimant's adoption was within the authority of the Department. The court, however, intimated that the general authority of the Interior Department under section 461 of the Revised Statutes<sup>18</sup> was broad enough to justify a regulation requiring departmental approval of adoptions, but added that since the latter would have no legal right of appeal even if his adoption without Department approval were valid, it hardly is necessary to pass upon this point.<sup>19</sup>

While the actual court decisions in the field of tribal membership are all consistent with the view that complete power over tribal membership rests with the tribe, except where Congress otherwise provides, the opinion in the West case appears to diverge from this view. Several alternative ways of reconciling the apparent conflict of judicial views in this field have been suggested. The Interior Department has expressed its view in these terms:

The power of an Indian tribe to determine its membership is subject to the qualification, however, that in the distribution of tribal funds and other property under the supervision and control of the Federal Government, the action of the tribe is subject to the supervisory authority of the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>20</sup> The original power to

<sup>10</sup> See Chapter 9, sec. 109(1). And see Chapter 14, sec. 1 and 2, on termination of tribal relations by groups.

<sup>11</sup> See *Yerna v. United States*, 245 Fed. 411, 420 (C. C. 8, 1917) (suit for allotment). Accord *Wan-pau-gua v. Adick*, 28 Fed. 480 (C. C. 10, 1898). But *See* and *Wan-gua v. United States*, 45 C. Cls. 287 (1915), 45 F. 226 (C. C. 8, 1915).

<sup>12</sup> See, for example, *Regan v. United States*, 203 Fed. 885 (D. C. S. D. 1918). *Oaks v. United States*, 172 Fed. 305 (C. C. 8, 1909), 20 L. D. 167 (1905), 42 L. D. 480 (1913).

<sup>13</sup> 203 U. S. 80 (1907).

<sup>14</sup> *Duty of Commissioners*—The Commissioner of Indian Affairs shall under the direction of the Secretary of the Interior, and agreeably to such regulations as the President may prescribe have the management of all Indian affairs and of all matters arising out of Indian relations. 25 U. S. C. 2.

<sup>15</sup> *Acme v. LaLieu v. United States*, 184 Fed. 128 (C. C. E. D. Wash. 1910) (declining to pass on necessity of departmental approval of adoption in allotment case).

<sup>16</sup> *Citing United States ex rel. West v. Hitchcock*, 205 U. S. 80 (1907), *Mitchell v. United States*, 22 F. 3d 771 (C. C. 9, 1927), *United*

<sup>9</sup> See 19 Op. A. G. 115 (1888).

<sup>10</sup> *Huy-gu-lai-mah-hu v. Smith*, 194 U. S. 401, 411 (1904), *United States v. Higgins*, 109 Fed. 848 (C. C. D. Mont. 1900).

<sup>11</sup> 194 U. S. 407 (1907).

<sup>12</sup> 88 Fed. 721 (C. C. 8, 1897). Accord 7 Op. A. G. 174 (1885). But cf. 2 Op. A. G. 402 (1880).

determine membership including the regulation of membership by adoption nevertheless remains with the tribe. \* \* \* (pp. 19-20)

An alternative formula for reconciling the cases in this field is suggested in the case of *Shaw v. United States*,<sup>131</sup> in which the distinction was drawn between adoption which is a tribal matter, and depending on action in recognizing such adoption. The court decided:

\* \* \* claimants, who cannot bring themselves within the provisions of the Act of 1882 by showing that when they were adopted they were residing on the reservation in the tribal relation, but who claim that they are Indians of fact, they were recognized by the tribe to be members thereof cannot rightfully expect that the courts will refuse to accept and follow the ruling of the department upon the question of such recognition. The results charged with the duty of making the Indians who visit the tribe have a much better knowledge of the relation taken by the Indian than can be gained by the court and their decision upon a fact of this nature, especially when duly informed by the officers of the national department, should ordinarily be accepted as conclusive. In the numerous reports of the Indian Agents introduced in evidence in these cases it is reported that some of the several claimants are recognized by the tribe as members entitled to allotments, and these findings of fact have been approved by the Secretary of the Interior, and they will, for the reasons stated, be accepted as final by this court in the further consideration of these suits. (p. 212)

Another basis, not really difficult from the two views above suggested, that would permit a reconciliation of all the cases and dicta, is the idea of tribal membership as a relative idea, existing in some cases for certain purposes, and not for others. President Van Dusen has been found in *United States v. Bow*,<sup>132</sup> where Chief Justice Taft held that although a white man, by arrangement with an Indian tribe, might become a member thereof, he could not thereby defeat the federal courts of jurisdiction over him as a "white man." On this view it might be said that for purposes in which the tribe has the last word, tribal adoption is valid without reference to departmental approval,<sup>133</sup> while for those purposes in which departmental action is authorized, the department may demand the right to approve or disapprove adoption.

Whatever may be the exact extent of departmental power in this field, in view of the broad provisions of the Wheeler Howard Act it has been administratively held that the Secretary of the Interior may define and confine his power of supervision in accordance with the terms of a constitution adopted by the tribe itself and approved by him.

The written constitutions of tribes which have organized under the Act of June 18, 1884, contain provisions on membership which vary considerably. Generally these constitutions provide that descendants of two parents, both of whom are mem-

bers of the tribe shall be deemed members of the tribe. With respect to the offspring of mixed marriages constitutions differ. Some make the membership of such offspring dependent upon whether his degree of Indian blood is more than one-half in one-quarter. Others make the membership of such offspring depend upon whether its parents maintain a residence on the reservation. Nearly all tribal constitutions provide for adoption through special action by the tribe subject to review by the Secretary of the Interior. The general trend of tribal enactments on membership is away from the older notion that rights of tribal membership run with Indian blood, no matter how diluted the strain. Instead it is recognized that membership in a tribe is a political relation rather than a racial attribute. Those who no longer take part in tribal affairs, who do not live upon the reservation, who marry non-Indians, may retain their claims upon tribal property, but most Indian tribes now deny such individuals the opportunity to claim a share of tribal assets for a child produced. The trend is toward making the share in tribal property coextensive with the obligations that fall upon the members of the Indian community.<sup>134</sup>

One conclusion is clear from the cases and developments above discussed: that a number of uncertainties in common currency on the subject of tribal membership must be severely qualified before they can be accepted as sound statements of law. For it is clear that such power rests in the tribes with respect to membership has been and is being exercised along widely divergent lines.

Typical membership provisions in tribal constitutions are the following:

Article III of the Constitution of the Jicarilla Apache Tribe, approved August 1, 1917

Membership in the Jicarilla Apache Indian Tribe shall extend to all persons of Indian blood who are members on the official census roll of the Jicarilla Apache Reservation of 1917, and to all children of one-fourth or more Indian blood not affiliated with another tribe born since the completion of the 1917 census roll to any member of the tribe who is a member of the Jicarilla Apache Reservation. Membership by adoption may be acquired by a three-fourths majority vote of the tribal council and the approval of the Bureau of the Interior.

Article II of the Constitution of the Hopi Tribe, approved December 10, 1916

Section 1 Membership in the Hopi Tribe shall be as follows: (a) All persons whose names appear on the census roll of the Hopi Tribe as of January 1st, 1917, but within one year from the time that this Constitution takes effect collections may be made up to the roll by the Hopi Tribal Council with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior.

(b) All children born after January 1, 1916, whose father and mother are both members of the Hopi Tribe.

(c) All children born after January 1, 1916, whose mother is a member of the Hopi Tribe, and whose father is a member of some other tribe.

(d) All persons adopted into the Tribe as provided in Section 2.

Section 2 Nonmembers of one-fourth degree of Indian blood or more, who are married to members of the Hopi Tribe, and adult persons of one-fourth degree of Indian blood or more whose father is a member of the Hopi Tribe, may be adopted in the following manner: Such person may apply to the Kikmongwi of the village in which it is to belong for acceptance. According to the way of doing established in that village the Kikmongwi may accept him, and shall tell the Tribal Council. The Council may then by a majority vote have that person's name put on the roll of membership in any other tribe.

Article III of the Constitution of the Seneca Cayuga Tribe of Oklahoma, ratified May 16, 1917

The membership of the Seneca Cayuga Tribe of Oklahoma shall consist of the following persons:

1. All persons of Indian blood whose names appear on the official census roll of the Tribe as of January 1, 1917.

2. All children born since the date of the said roll both of whose parents are members of the Tribe.

3. Any child born of a marriage between a member of the Seneca Cayuga Tribe and a member of any other Indian tribe who chooses to affiliate with the Seneca Cayuga Tribe.

4. Any child born of a marriage between a member of the Seneca Cayuga Tribe and any other person of such child is admitted to membership by the Council of the Seneca Cayuga Tribe.

Tribal constitutional provisions on membership are contained in Memo Sol I D, April 12, 1928 (Rosebud Sioux), and Memo Sol I D, July 12, 1928 (Rosebud Sioux).

<sup>131</sup>*Shaw v. Proctor*, 38 F. 2d 709 (C. C. A. 9, 1909), rev'd on other grounds, 233 U. S. 753 (1913). See also *Widow v. United States ex rel. Keadie*, 261 U. S. 8 (1920).

<sup>132</sup>65 F. D. 14, 49 (1924).

<sup>133</sup>118 Fed. 288 (C. C. D. Neb. 1902), app. dismissed 108 U. S. 614 (1904).

<sup>134</sup>4 Hon. 567 (1848). Accord *Weston v. United States*, 105 U. S. 545 (1900), *United States v. Ragsdale*, 12 Fed. Cl. No. 16,115 (C. C. Ark. 1847).

<sup>135</sup>This finds support in such cases as *Kickmongwi v. United States*, 225 Fed. 628 (C. C. A. 7, 1915), holding that for purposes of applying federal liquor laws application for adoption and approval by the tribe establish tribal membership. And *United States v. Haggins*, 110 Fed. 609 (C. C. Mont. 1901).

Theoretical justification for this view is offered by Wharton, *A Treatise on the Conflict of Laws or Private International Law* (8d ed. 1905), vol. 1, sec. 252.

Thus, for example, it is frequently said that a person cannot be a member of two tribes at once. This undoubtedly represents a well-established policy with respect to allotment and other distribution of tribal property or federal benefits.<sup>105</sup> It cannot, however, be validly inferred from this that two tribes could not formally recognize the membership of a single individual, for voting or other purposes. So too, the generalities to be found in several cases as to the tribal membership of offspring of mixed marriages fail to correspond to the realities of tribal

<sup>105</sup> See *Manitla v. United States*, 49 U.S. 203 (C.C. 10 1911), rehearing den., 52 U.S. 203 (C.C. 10 1913); 19 U.S. 429 (1904).

## SECTION 5 TRIBAL REGULATION OF DOMESTIC RELATIONS

The Indian tribes have been accorded the widest possible latitude in regulating the domestic relations of their members.<sup>106</sup> Indian custom marriage has been specifically recognized by federal statute, so far as such recognition is necessary for purposes of inheritance.<sup>107</sup> Indian custom marriage and divorce has been generally recognized by state and federal courts for all other purposes.<sup>108</sup> Where federal law or written laws of the tribe do not cover the subject, the customs and traditions of the tribe are accorded the force of law, but these customs and traditions may be changed by the statutes of the Indian tribes.<sup>109</sup> In dealing and punishing offenses against the marriage relationship, the Indian tribe has complete and exclusive authority in the absence of legislation by Congress upon the subject. No law of the state controls the domestic relations of Indians living in tribal relationship,<sup>110</sup> even though the Indians concerned are citizens of the state.<sup>111</sup> The authority of an Indian tribal council to appoint guardians for incompetents and minors is specifically recognized by statute,<sup>112</sup> although this statute at the same time deprives such guardians of the power to administer fed-

eration. One may find, in the decided cases, two principles which, between them, cover the field: *paritas sequitur ventrem* and *paritas sequitur patrem*.<sup>113</sup> This pair of principles is of course, totally useless when it comes to tracing or predicting particular decisions.

<sup>113</sup> *United States v. Sanders*, 27 Fed. Cls. No. 16220 (C.C. Ark. 1947); *Albion v. United States*, 162 U.S. 899 (1906).

<sup>114</sup> *La parte Hernandez*, 30 Fed. Cls. No. 11719 (U.S. D. Ark. 1879); *United States v. Ward*, 12 Fed. Cls. (C.C. S.D. Cal. 1890); *United States v. Hodge*, 99 Fed. Cls. 117 (C.C. Wash. 1900); *United States v. Higgins*, 110 Fed. Cls. 600 (C.C. Mont. 1901).

eral trust funds. Property relations of husband and wife, or parent and child, are likewise governed by tribal law and custom.<sup>114</sup>

The case of *United States v. Quire*<sup>115</sup> provided a critical test of the doctrine of Indian self-government in the field of domestic relations. The case arose through a prosecution for adultery in the United States District Court for South Dakota. Both of the individuals involved were Sioux Indians and the offense was alleged to have been committed on one of the Sioux reservations. The Department of Justice authorized prosecution on the theory that Congress had, in section 3 of the Act of March 3, 1887,<sup>116</sup> terminated the original tribal control over Indian domestic relations.

The question was: Did this statute, which applied to all areas within the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress, apply to the conduct of Indians on an Indian reservation? The Supreme Court held that it did not. The analysis of the subject by Mr. Justice Van Devanter is illuminating, not only on the immediate question of jurisdiction over adultery, but on the broader question of the civil jurisdiction of an Indian tribe:

At an early period it became the settled policy of Congress to permit the personal and domestic relations of the Indians with each other to be regulated, and offenses by one Indian against the person or property of another Indian to be dealt with, according to their tribal customs and laws. Thus the Indian Intercourse Act of May 10, 1796, § 1, 5 Stat. 489, and of March, 1802, c. 13, § 2, Stat. 130, provided for the punishment of various offenses by white persons against Indians and by Indians against white persons, but left untouched those by Indians against each other. And the Act of June 30, 1834, c. 104, Sec. 25, 4 Stat. 729, 731 while providing that "so much of the laws of the United States as provides for the punishment of crimes committed within any place within the sole and exclusive jurisdiction of the United States shall be in force in the Indian country," qualified its action by saying, "the same shall not extend to crimes committed by one Indian against the person or property of another Indian." That provision with its qualification was later carried into the Revised Statutes as Secs. 2145 and 2146. Thus, was the situation when this court, in *Ex parte Crow Dog*, 109 U.S. 806, held that the murder of an Indian by another Indian on an Indian reservation was not punishable under the laws of the United States and could be dealt with only according to the laws of the tribe. The first change came when, by the Act of March 3, 1855, c. 841, Sec. 9, 23 Stat. 362, 363, now Sec. 828 of the Penal Code, Congress pro-

<sup>106</sup> On the application of tribal custom in domestic relations to the natives of Alaska, see 54 U.S. 80 (1912). And see Chapter 21, sec. 6, § 5, Act of February 28, 1891, 26 Stat. 794-795 as embodied in 25 U.S.C. 371, provided:

Decent of land.—For the purpose of determining the descent of land to the heirs of any deceased Indian under the provisions of section 24 of this title, whenever any male and female Indian shall have cohabited together as husband and wife, according to the custom and manner of Indian life, the issue of such cohabitation shall be, for the purpose aforesaid, taken and deemed to be the legitimate issue of the Indians so living together.

And see Act of March 3, 1874, sec. 11, 17 Stat. 660, 670 (pensions to "widows of colored or Indian soldiers").

<sup>107</sup> See Note 1904) 18 Yale L.J. 270 and cases cited. It has been held that a tribal ordinance authorizing divorce by tribal action does not by implication abrogate tribal custom divorce. *Barnett v. Prairie Oil & Gas Co.*, 10 F.2d 804, 904 (C.C.A. 9 1947), aff'g sub nom. *Kuhel v. Barnett*, 10 F.2d 804, cert. den. 276 U.S. 661.

<sup>108</sup> *In re Littlepage*, 96 Fed. 429 (C.C.N.D. Iowa, 1899), holding title court without jurisdiction to appoint guardian of tribal Indian. See Chapter 12, sec. 2 of *Devotion v. Graham*, 56 Fed. 418 (C.C.A. 8, 1893), holding law of forum applicable to question of married woman's property if tribal law is not shown.

<sup>109</sup> *Yakima Int. v. Toiyah Nat. Park*, 101 Fed. 516 (C.C.D. Ore. 1910).

<sup>110</sup> U.S. 42108 23 U.S.C. 169.

Adoption on the Crow Reservation is governed by the Act of March 4, 1881, c. 414, 46 Stat. 1464.

Appointment of guardians among the Pottawatomies was governed by Art. 8 of the Treaty of February 27, 1807, 15 Stat. 581, among the Ottawas by Art. 8 of the Treaty of June 24, 1802, 12 Stat. 1247. And of Act of February 13, 1801, 26 Stat. 749-752 (Saus, Foxes, Tows), Act of March 2, 1800, c. 2, Stat. 280, 281 (Saus, etc.).

To the effect that state court action in the matter of adoptions is not entitled to departmental recognition if the tribe has set up its own procedure for adoption, see Memo. Sol. v. U. December 2, 1897.

The Interior Department has taken the position that guardians appointed by a Court of Indian Offenses are "legal Bowdians" within the meaning of such legislation as the Act of February 26, 1893, 47 Stat.

007 governing payments of funds by governmental agencies "to incompetent adult Indians or minor Indians, who are recognized wards of the federal government, for whom no legal guardians or other fiduciaries have been appointed." Memo. Sol. v. U. March 28, 1936.

<sup>111</sup> *Ward v. Barlick*, 12 Fed. Cls. No. 6468 (C.C.D. Kan. 1876).

<sup>112</sup> 241 U.S. 602 (1916).

<sup>113</sup> That section provides:

That whoever commits adultery shall be punished by imprisonment in the penitentiary not exceeding three years. (24 Stat. 688, 19 U.S.C. 216.)



It is, however, a matter of state law whether state courts will recognize the validity of such divorces. In the absence of reported decisions on this point it is not possible to say with any certainty how states are likely to treat such tribal divorces in cases that come up in state courts. So far as the Federal Government is concerned the validity of such divorces is conceded.<sup>1</sup> The current law and Order Regulations of the Indian Service, approved by the Secretary of the Interior on November 27, 1915,<sup>2</sup> recognize the validity of Indian custom marriage and divorce and leave it to the governing authorities of each tribe to determine what shall constitute such marriage and divorce.<sup>3</sup> These regulations

also authorize decrees by Courts of Indian Offenses compelling payment for support.<sup>4</sup> and judgments on the issue of paternity.<sup>5</sup>

The Constitution for tribes organized under the Act of June 25, 1938, generally provides for the exercise by the tribal council and tribal court of general jurisdiction over domestic relations.<sup>6</sup> Generally no departmental review of such tribal action is required.

A few of these tribal constitutions provide that all marriages shall be in conformity with state law.<sup>7</sup> Several tribes have adopted special ordinances governing domestic relations.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 11 C. I. 161-9. A superintendent may enforce such a judgment against the defendant's restricted funds. *Mingo*, 501 I. D. September 5, 1935.

<sup>2</sup> 25 I. B. 261-80.

<sup>3</sup> Thus for example the Constitution of the Fort Belknap Indian Community, Montana, approved on December 15, 1945 provides:

Article 4, Section 1. *Unsanctified parties*—The Council of the Fort Belknap Community shall have the following powers (the exercise of which shall be subject to popular referendum as provided hereafter):  
(a) to regulate the domestic relations of members of the community.

<sup>4</sup> See, e. g., the Constitution of the San Carlos Apache Tribe, approved January 17, 1936, which provides:

Article 4, Section XII. *Domestic relations*—The council shall have the power to regulate the domestic relations of members of the tribe, but all marriages in the future shall be in accordance with the state laws.

<sup>5</sup> The Code of Ordinances of the Gila River Pima Maricopa Indian Community (1946) provides:

CHAPTER 1 DOMESTIC RELATIONS  
Sec. 1. *Marriage*—The community court may issue marriage license, to tribal persons, both of whom are members of the community. Any tribal person marrying, not so licensed shall not be recognized as valid.

Sec. 2. *Divorce*—The community court may issue decrees of divorce for causes which it deems valid and where both parties are members of the community.

*Accord and Disaccord and Divorce*—All Indian marriages and divorces, whether consummated in accordance with the tribal law or in accordance with Community Ordinances, shall be recorded within thirty days at the agency.

court. All that need be decided at this time is that under the accepted divorce law a tribal man is not within a tribal divorce from a white spouse who has consented to the jurisdiction of the tribal court or who has himself and his tribal spouse and his marital domicile on the reservation. It might be doubted and that an unsanctified abductee is such an unsanctified consent to a divorce action by the abandoned spouse in the court of the latter's domicile. (See *Delaney v. Delaney*, supra, at 72.)

<sup>1</sup> The Comptroller General, however, ruled adversely in a case where a divorce action was pending in a state court. *Settlement Certificate* (Claim No. 63,185-125), January 24, 1936.

<sup>2</sup> See 37 I. D. 401 (1935).

<sup>3</sup> Chapter 1, sec. 2.

*Tribal Custom Marriage and Divorce*—The Tribal Council shall have authority to determine whether Indian custom marriage and Indian custom divorce for members of the tribe shall be recognized in the future as lawful marriage and divorce upon the reservation, and if it shall be so recognized, to determine what shall constitute such marriage and divorce and whether action by the Court of Indian Offenses shall be required. When so determined by voting, one copy shall be filed with the Court of Indian Offenses, one copy with the Superintendent of Indian Affairs. Abducted Indians who desire to become married as provided in the law shall consent to the jurisdiction of the Court of the tribe as determined. Indians who assume a tribal status as divorce by Indian custom shall not be entitled to marry until they have complied with the determined custom of their tribe, nor until they have recorded such divorce at the agency office. Finally, any determination by the Tribal Council on these matters, the validity of Indian custom marriage and divorce shall continue to be recognized as heretofore. 175 I. D. 401, 407 (1937).

## SECTION 6 TRIBAL CONTROL OF DESCENT AND DISTRIBUTION

It is well settled that an Indian tribe has the power to prescribe the manner of descent and distribution of the property of its members, in the absence of contrary legislation by Congress.<sup>1</sup> Such power may be exercised through unwritten customs and usages,<sup>2</sup> or through written laws of the tribe. This power extends to personal property as well as to real property. By virtue of this authority an Indian tribe may restrict the descent of property on the basis of Indian blood or tribal membership, and may provide for the escheat of property to the tribe where there are no recognized heirs. An Indian tribe may, if it so chooses, adopt its own laws of the state in which it is situated and may make such modifications in these laws as it deems suitable to its peculiar conditions.

The only general statutes of Congress which restrict the power of an Indian tribe to govern the descent and distribution of property of its members are section 6 of the General Allotment Act,<sup>3</sup> which provides that allotments of land shall descend "according to the laws of the State or Territory where such land is located," the Act of June 25, 1938,<sup>4</sup> which provides that the Sec-

retary of the Interior shall have unreviewable discretion to determine the heirs of an Indian in ruling upon the inheritance of individual allotments issued under the authority of the General Allotment Law, and section 2 of the same act, as amended by the Act of February 14, 1913,<sup>5</sup> which gives the Secretary of the Interior final power to approve and disapprove Indian wills devising restricted property.

These statutes abolished the former tribal power over the descent and distribution of property, with respect to allotments of land made under the General Allotment Act, and rendered tribal rules of testamentary disposition subject to the authority of the Secretary of the Interior, when the estate includes restricted property. They do not, however, affect successional disposition of unallotted property or intestate succession to personal property or to interests in land other than allotments (e. g., possessory interests in land to which title is retained by the tribe).<sup>6</sup> With respect to property other than allotments of land made under the General Allotment Act and similar special legislation, the inheritance laws and customs of the Indian tribe are still of supreme authority.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 5, see 11 Chapter 11, see 6.

<sup>2</sup> See Beaglehole, *Ownership & Inheritance in an Indian Tribe* (1936), 20 *L. Rev.* 804; Hagan, *Tribal Law of the American Indian* (1917), 20 *Case & Com.* 735, and see authorities cited *supra*, see 8 in 50.

<sup>3</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 885, 889, 25 U. S. C. 248.

<sup>4</sup> Treaties and special statutes occasionally stipulated that state laws were to apply to descent of allotments. See, for example, Article 8 of the Treaty of February 27, 1867, with the Potawatombes, 16 Stat. 551, 553.

<sup>5</sup> See 1, 86 Stat. 855, 25 U. S. C. 572.

<sup>6</sup> 37 Stat. 678. See 25 U. S. C. 878.

<sup>7</sup> See *Goodwin v. Watkins*, 142 Fed. 112 (C. C. A. 8, 1906). See Chapter 5, see 11 and Chapter 11, see 6.

<sup>8</sup> The foregoing general analysis is inapplicable to the Five Civilized Tribes and Osage, Congress having expressly provided that state probate courts shall have jurisdiction over the estates of allotted Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes leaving restricted heirs (Act of June 24, 1918, c. 104, see 1, 40 Stat. 600, 26 U. S. C. 876), and over the estates of Osage Indians (Act of April 18, 1912, see 8, 37 Stat. 80) See Chapter 23, sec. 9, 12.

The authority of an Indian tribe in the matter of inheritance is clearly recognized by the United States Supreme Court in the case of *Jones v. Meehan*.<sup>11</sup> It had been allotted to Chief Moose Dung. After his death, the Chief's eldest son, Moose Dung, the Younger, leased the land in 1891 for 10 years, to two white men; the plaintiffs on the assumption that he was by the custom of his tribe the sole heir to the property and entitled in his own right to dispose of it. Then after in 1891, a second lease of the same land was executed in favor of another white man, the defendant. The Secretary of the Interior took the view that the earlier lease was invalid. The Secretary of the Interior approved the second lease pursuant to a joint resolution of Congress specifically authorizing the approval of the second lease. Under the second lease the Secretary of the Interior held the rentals were to be divided among six descendants of the chief, Chief Moose Dung, and Moose Dung, the Younger was to receive only one-sixth share. Thus the Supreme Court was faced with a clear question: Did Moose Dung the Younger have the right in 1891 to make a valid lease which neither the Secretary of the Interior nor Congress itself could thereafter annul? Faced with this question, the Court declared, *per G. J. P.*

The Department of the Interior gave its view assumed that, upon the death of Moose Dung, the effect in 1872 the title in his land descended by law to his heirs, none of and not to his eldest son only.

But the eldest son, Moose Dung being a member of an Indian tribe whose tribal organization was still recognized by the Government of the United States, the right of inheritance in his land, at the time of his death, was controlled by the laws, usages and customs of the tribe, and not by the law of the State of Minnesota and by an action of the Secretary of the Interior. (P. 29.)

The title to the strip of land in controversy, having been acquired in the United States by the chief, Chief Moose Dung, by the treaty itself and having descended upon his death, by the law, customs and usages of the tribe, to his eldest son and successor, Chief Moose Dung the Younger, passed by the lease executed by the latter in 1891 to the plaintiffs for the term of that lease, and then falls under that lease could not be divested in any subsequent action of the lessee, or of Congress or of the Executive Departments. (P. 32.)

The opinion of the Supreme Court in *Jones v. Meehan* cites a long series of cases in Federal and State courts which likewise uphold the validity of tribal laws and customs of inheritance.<sup>12</sup> The upshot of the cases cited is summarized in the words of a New York court:

When Congress does not act in law runs on an Indian reservation save the Indian tribal law and custom.<sup>13</sup>

The decision of the Supreme Court in *Jones v. Meehan* is a clear reiteration of the theory that in the absence of law plainly governing Indian affairs rests with the Interior Department.<sup>14</sup> The case holds not only that power over inheritance, in the absence of congressional legislation, rests with the Indian tribe, but that Congress itself cannot disturb rights which have vested under tribal law and custom.

Other decisions confirm the rule laid down in the *Moose Dung* case.<sup>15</sup>

<sup>11</sup> 171 U. S. 1 (1899).

<sup>12</sup> *United States v. Rumspe* 17 Minn. 709 (1870). *Dole v. Frish*, 2 Barb. (N. Y.) 679 (1848). *Hendings v. Fennell* 4 N. Y. 279, 274 (1850). *The Kansas Indians v. Whit* 777 (1856). *Wren v. Meehan* 9 N. Y. 426, 38 Fed. 454 (C. C. Ind. 1864). *Roan v. Strick* 28 Kan. 672 (1886). *Rehn v. Smith* 5 Thom. 25, 102 72 (C. C. Kan. 1886).

<sup>13</sup> *Hood v. Kelly* 111 Minn. 207, 123 N. Y. Supp. 818 (1901).

<sup>14</sup> 36 Fed. 20, 12 177 (1895), mod. 29 12 628 (1900). See Chapter 6, sec. 7, 5.

<sup>15</sup> See Chapter 10, sec. 10. And see *Demille and Trites* (1886), vol. 1, p. 168.

In the case of *Gray v. Coffman*,<sup>16</sup> the court held that the validity of the will of a member of the Wyandot tribe depended upon its conformity with the written laws of the tribe. The court declared:

The Wyandot Indians before then removed from Ohio had adopted a written constitution and laws, and made other laws relating to descent and wills. These are in the record, and are shown to have been copied from the laws of Ohio and adopted by the Wyandot tribe, with certain modifications to adapt them to their customs and usages. One of these modifications is that only those children should inherit, excluding the children of deceased children or grandchildren. The Wyandot council, which is several times referred to in the treaty of 1875, was an executive and judicial body, and had power under the laws and usages of the nation to execute probate of wills, etc., and this has continued to it, at least to some extent after the treaty of 1875. Under the circumstances, the court must give effect to the well established laws, customs, and usages of the Wyandot tribe of Indians in respect to the disposition of property by descent and will. (1 Pa. 307, 308.)

In the case of *Obenry v. Hughes*,<sup>17</sup> it was held that a plaintiff in eminent domain could not recover without positive proof that under tribal custom he was entitled to the property in question. In the absence of such proof it was held that title to the land escheated to the tribe, and that the tribe might dispose of the land as it saw fit.

Third autonomy in the regulation of descent and distribution is recognized in the case of *Wooden v. Seiden*,<sup>18</sup> and in the case of *Patterson v. Council of Seneca Nation*.<sup>19</sup>

In the case of *P-Tai Tah Wah v. Robak*,<sup>20</sup> the plaintiff, a medicine man imprisoned by the federal Indian agent and county sheriff for practicing medicine without a license, brought an action of false imprisonment against these officials, and died during the course of the proceedings. The court held that the claims might be continued, not in an administration of the decedent's estate appointed in accordance with state law, but in the hands of the decedent in Indian custom.<sup>21</sup> The court declared, *per* Holmes, J.

It is true that, upon the death of a tribal Indian, his property, real and personal, becomes subject to the laws of the state directing the mode of distribution of estates of decedents, it is apparent that intangible claims of the Indian might be caused thereby in the illness of the Indians. (P. 265.)

In a case<sup>22</sup> involving the right of an illegitimate child to inherit property, the authority of the tribe to pass upon the status of illegimates was recognized in the following terms:

The Creek Council, in the exercise of its law full function of local self government, saw fit to limit the legal rights of an illegitimate child to that of sharing in the estate of his putative father, and not to confer upon such child

<sup>16</sup> 10 Fed. Cir. No. 7714 (C. C. Kan. 1911). Accord *Gooding v. Watkins* 142 Fed. 112 (C. C. 8 1905).

<sup>17</sup> 46 Kan. 1, 20 Pac. 428 (1891).

<sup>18</sup> 141 Me. 207, 263 N. Y. Supp. 818 (1901) discussed in Note (1912) 9 N. Y. L. Q. Rev. 408.

<sup>19</sup> 247 N. Y. 448, 167 N. Y. 781 (1927).

<sup>20</sup> 100 Fed. 287 (C. C. N. D. 1900).

<sup>21</sup> Compare, however, the decision of the Supreme Court of New Mexico in *Trujillo v. Prieto* 12 N. M. 287, 78 2d 146 (1888), holding that an administrator of a Pueblo Indian appointed by a state court was empowered to sue under a state wrongful death statute.

The behavior of the Indian Department and the Special Attorney for the Pueblo Indians supported the position which the Supreme Court of New Mexico finally adopted on the ground that the action was not an action over which the tribal courts would have jurisdiction, but was entirely a creature of state legislation operating on events that occurred outside of any jurisdiction. Memo Sol. I, 2, September 21, 1937.

<sup>22</sup> *Oklahoma Land Co. v. Thomas* 84 Okla. 681, 137 Pac. 8 (1912).

solely the status of a child born in lawful wedlock (P 133).<sup>1</sup>

In the case of *Dohy v. Dohy*,<sup>2</sup> it was held that a surrogate of the State of New York has no power to grant letters of administration to control the disposition of personal property belonging to a deceased member of the Seneca tribe. The Court declared:

I am of the opinion that the private property of the Seneca Indians is not within the jurisdiction of our laws respecting administration and that the letters of administration granted by the surrogate to the plaintiff beyond I am also of the opinion that the distribution of Indian property according to their customs passes a good title which our courts will not disturb and therefore that the defendant has a good title to the house in question and must have judgment on the special verdict. (Pp. 642-643)

In *United States v. Charles*,<sup>3</sup> the distribution of real and personal property of the decedent through the Iroquois custom of the "died first" is recognized as controlling all rights of inheritance.

In the case of *Marken v. Coker*,<sup>4</sup> the Supreme Court held that letters of administration issued by a Cherokee court were not entitled to recognition in another jurisdiction, on the ground that the status of an Indian title was in fact similar to that of a federal territory.

In the case of *Meyer v. Kachin*,<sup>5</sup> the court recognized the validity of tribal custom in determining the descent of real and personal property and indicated that the tribal custom of the Pineville band prescribed different rules of descent for real and for personal property.

The applicability of tribal law in matters involving determination of heirs<sup>6</sup> is recognized in the Law and Order Regulations of the Indian Service.<sup>7</sup> These regulations provide that when any member, of a tribe dies,

leaving property other than an allotment or other trust property subject to the jurisdiction of the United States, any claimant claiming to be in line of the decedent may bring a suit in the Court of Indian Offenses to have the Court determine the heirs of the decedent, and to divide among the heirs such property of the decedent.<sup>8</sup>

In such suits, the regulations provide

In the determination of heirs the Court shall apply the custom of the tribe as to inheritance if such custom is proved. Otherwise the Court shall apply State law in deciding what relatives of the decedent are entitled to be his heirs.<sup>9</sup>

A special provision covers the situation where the statutory jurisdiction of the Department attaches to part of an estate that is otherwise subject to tribal jurisdiction:

Where the estate of the decedent includes, any interest in restricted allotted lands or other property held in trust by the United States over which the Examiner of Indian Inheritance would have jurisdiction, the Court of Indian

Offenses may distribute only such property as does not come under the jurisdiction of the Examiner of Indian Inheritance and the determination of heirs by the court may be reviewed on appeal and any appeal of the court modeled on set aside by the said Examiner of Indian Inheritance, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, if law and justice so require.<sup>10</sup>

The Law and Order Regulations of the Indian Service further provide that Courts of Indian Offenses shall have jurisdiction to provide the wills of tribal Indians:

disposing only of property other than an allotment or other trust property subject to the jurisdiction of the United States.<sup>11</sup>

Tribal custom is recognized in the provision:

If the Court determines the will to be validly executed it shall order the property described in the will to be given to the persons named in the will or to their heirs, but no distribution of property shall be made in violation of a proved tribal custom which restricts the privilege of tribal members to distribute property by will.<sup>12</sup>

Indian Service regulations concerning the determination of heirs and approval of wills<sup>13</sup> provide that the activity of examiners of inheritance in cases of interest succession shall not extend to unallotted reservations.

Tribal constitutions generally provide that the governing body of the tribe shall have power—

to regulate the inheritance of real and personal property, other than allotted lands, within the Territory of the Community.<sup>14</sup>

A type of tribal inheritance law adopted by the Gila River Pima-Maricopa Indian Community on June 4, 1936, is set forth in the footnote below.<sup>15</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid*

<sup>2</sup> 25 C F R 16182

<sup>3</sup> 25 C F R 16132

<sup>4</sup> Approved by Secretary of the Interior May 1, 1947 25 C F R Part 11

<sup>5</sup> 25 C F R 8113 8112

<sup>6</sup> Constitution of the Fort Belknap Indian Community of the Fort Belknap Reservation Mont. approved December 14, 1936, Art. V, Sec. 1(a)

<sup>7</sup> Sec. 6 Approval of Wills—When any member of the tribe dies leaving a will disposing of property other than an allotment or other trust property subject to the jurisdiction of the United States, the Court shall at the request of any member of the tribe named in the will or any other interested party determine the validity of the will after giving notice, and full opportunity to appear in court to all persons who might be heirs of the decedent. A will shall be deemed to be valid if the decedent had a sane mind and understood what he was doing when he made the will and was not subject to any undue influence of any kind from another person and if the will was made in writing and signed by the decedent in the presence of two witnesses who also signed the will. If the Court determines the will to be validly executed it shall order the property described in the will to be given to the persons named in the will or to their heirs, if they live dead.

<sup>8</sup> 7 Determination of Heirs—Property of members of the Community other than allotted lands, if not disposed of by will shall be inherited according to the following rules:

- 1 The just debts and funeral expenses of the deceased shall be paid before the heirs take any property.
- 2 If the decedent leaves a surviving spouse all the property shall go to the surviving spouse, who shall make such disposition of the property as he may desire.
- 3 If the decedent leaves children or grandchildren but no spouse all the property shall go to them.
- 4 If the decedent leaves no spouse nor descendants, all the property shall go to his or her parents if either or both is alive.
- 5 In any other case the nearest relatives shall inherit.

Where there is more than one but all the heirs shall meet and agree, among themselves, upon the division of the property.

If no agreement can be reached among the interested parties any party may upon depositing a fee of five dollars in the Community Court, require the Court to pass on the distribution of the estate.

Where the interested parties agree among themselves on the division of the estate, they shall file a report of such distribution with the Community Court.

<sup>16</sup> Accord *Butler v. Wilson*, 14 Okla. 220 195 P. 828 (1917)

<sup>17</sup> 2 Burd. (N. Y.) 696 (1848)

<sup>18</sup> 28 Y Supp. 846 (D. C. W. D. N. Y. 1908), accord *George v. Price*, 148 N. Y. Supp. 240 (1914)

<sup>19</sup> 18 How. 100 (1855) See Chapter 14 sec. 3

<sup>20</sup> 173 Fed. 216 (C. C. W. D. Wash. 1900)

<sup>21</sup> Recognition of tribal rules of descent as found in such special legislation as the Act of February 19, 1877 18 Stat. 980 dealing with leases of Indian lands and the Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 981, dealing with Choctaw allotments.

<sup>22</sup> To the effect that inheritance of a house on tribal land is governed by tribal laws than state law see Memo. Sol. I. D., November 18, 1938 25 C F R 16181-16182

<sup>23</sup> Law and Order Regulations, approved November 27, 1935, c. 3, sec. 3, 25 C F R 16141

<sup>24</sup> *Ibid*



## SECTION 7 THE TAXING POWER OF AN INDIAN TRIBE

One of the powers essential to the maintenance of any government is the power to levy taxes. "That this power is an inherent attribute of tribal sovereignty which continues unless withdrawn or limited by treaty or by act of Congress" is a proposition which has never been successfully disputed.

A landmark in this field is the case of *Baxter v. Wright*.<sup>111</sup> The Creek Nation, one of the Five Civilized Tribes, had imposed a tax of license fee upon all persons not citizens of the Creek Nation, who traded within the borders of that nation. The Interior Department sought the advice of the Attorney General as to the legality of this tax and was advised that the tax was legal and that the Interior Department was under an implied duty to assist in its enforcement.<sup>112</sup> Thereupon the Interior Department promulgated appropriate regulations to assist the tribe in making collections of license fees. The plaintiffs in the case of *Baxter v. Wright* were traders doing business on town sites within the boundaries of the Creek Nation, who sought to enjoin officers of the Creek Nation and of the Interior Department from closing down their business and ordering them for imposition of taxes. On demurrer the plaintiffs' bill was dismissed by the trial court. The decision of the trial court was affirmed by the Court of Appeals of the Indian Territory,<sup>113</sup> again by the Circuit Court of Appeals for the Eighth Circuit,<sup>114</sup> and finally by the United States Supreme Court.<sup>115</sup> The learned opinion of Judge Sanborn in the Circuit Court of Appeals illuminates the entire subject.

The authority of the Creek Nation to prescribe the terms upon which noncitizens may transact business within its borders, did not have its origin in act of Congress, treaty, or agreement of the United States. It was one of the inherent and essential attributes of its original sovereignty. It was a natural right of that people indispensable to its autonomy as a distinct tribe or nation, and it must remain an attribute of its government until by the agreement of the nation itself or in the superior power of the republic it is taken from it. Actual authority

was the power of the United States to license its citizens to do trade in the Creek Nation with or without the consent of that tribe, as it was in this case, because the complainants have no such license. The plenary power and lawful authority of the government of the United States by license by treaty, by act of Congress to take from the Creek Nation every vestige of its original or acquired government authority and power may be admitted, and for the purposes of this decision have been conceded. The fact remains nevertheless that every original attribute of the government of the Creek Nation still exists in fact which has not been destroyed or limited by act of Congress or by the contracts of the Creek tribe itself.

Originally in independent tribe the superior power of the republic with reduced this Indian people to a "do as the dependent nation" (*Cherokee Nation v. State of Georgia*, 5 Pet. 2-20, 8 T. 381, 27) yet left it a distinct political entity clothed with ample authority to govern its internal affairs and to manage its domestic affairs through officers of its own selection who under a Constitution modeled after that of the United States exercised legislative executive and judicial functions within its territorial jurisdiction for more than half a century. The government of this nation was undisturbed and undisturbed not limited by the original title to the territory in the hands, without its consent. Founded on its original national sovereignty, and secured by these treaties, the governmental authority of the Creek Nation, subject always to the superior power of the republic, remained practically unimpaired until the year 1899. Between the years 1883 and 1901 the United States by various acts of Congress deprived this tribe of all its judicial power, and curtailed its remaining authority until its power of government have become the mere shadow of that former selves. Nevertheless its authority to fix the terms upon which noncitizens might conduct business within its territorial boundaries remained by the treaties of 1832, 1856, and 1866, and sustained by repeated decisions of the courts, and opinions of the Attorney General of the United States, remained undisturbed.

It is said that the sale of these lots and the incorporation of cities and towns upon the sites in which the lots are found authorized by act of Congress to collect taxes for municipal purposes segregated the town sites and the lots sold from the territory of the Creek Nation, and deprived it of governmental jurisdiction over this property and over its occupants. But the jurisdiction to govern the inhabitants of a community is not conditioned or limited by the title to the land which they occupy in it or by the existence of municipalities therein endowed with power to collect taxes for city purposes, and to create and enforce municipal ordinances. Neither the United States nor a state, nor any other sovereignty loses the power to govern the people within its borders by the existence of towns and cities therein endowed with the usual powers of municipalities, nor by the ownership and occupancy of the land within its territorial jurisdiction by citizens or foreigners. (Ep 900-062.)

The case of *Baxter v. Wright* dealt with what may be called a license or privilege tax, but the principles therein affirmed are equally applicable to a tax on property. Such a tax was upheld in *Wong v. City of Los Angeles*.<sup>116</sup> This case dealt with a tax levied by the Chickasaw Nation on cattle owned by noncitizens of that nation and grazed on private land within the national boundaries. The opinion of the United States Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia declares

A government of the land necessarily has the power to maintain its existence and effectiveness through the exercise of the usual power of taxation upon all property within its limits, save as may be restricted by its organic law. Any restriction in the exercise of this power is an ordinary power of taxation, and the property subject

<sup>110</sup> No treaty provisions or special statutes dealing with tribal taxation have been found. But *Act of August 2, 1852*, 22 Stat. 381 empowering Congress to fix certain tribal rights of way for the benefit of the United States.

<sup>111</sup> 195 Fed. 817 (C. C. S. 8 1905), app. dismissed 204 U. S. 829.

<sup>112</sup> \* \* \* the legal right to license and within an Indian nation given to the purchase, no right of exemption from the laws of such nation nor does it authorize him to do any act in violation of the laws of that nation with such nation. These laws afford a permit to license in favor of business in the Indian country, existing long before and at the time this act was passed. And it is not surprising that, in this case, a town site within the limits of the Creek Nation, he did so with full knowledge that he could occupy it for license or license only by permission from the Indian.

The treaties and laws of the United States make all persons with a few specified exceptions who are not citizens of an Indian nation members of an Indian tribe and are found within an Indian nation without permission, intrusion, their removal there is imposed by the United States. This closes the whole matter absolutely exclusive of any other claims and fully authorizes these nations to absolutely exclude out of its territory or to permit their residence on homes upon such terms as they may choose to impose, and it must be here in mind that citizens of the United States have, as such, no more right to business in the tribe than they have in any foreign nation, and are not lawfully to be there at all only by Indian permission and that if it is held to be in violation of any law or ordinance they do so, they are liable to punishment under the laws of the United States.

As to the power of duty of the Department in the premises, there can hardly be a doubt. Under the treaties of the United States with these Indian nations, this Government is under the most solemn obligation, and for which it has received ample consideration to remove and keep removed from the territory of these tribes all this class of foreigners who are they without Indian permission. This performance of this obligation is in other matters concerning the Indians and their affairs, has long been derived upon the Department of the Interior.

<sup>113</sup> *Wright v. Baxter*, 204 U. S. 829 (1906), app. dismissed without opinion.

<sup>114</sup> *Baxter v. Wright*, 82 S. W. 835 (1904).

<sup>115</sup> 204 U. S. 829 (1906), app. dismissed without opinion.

<sup>116</sup> 21 App. D. C. 605 (1903), aff'd 194 U. S. 384 (1904).

therein could be applied by express provision or necessary implication. *Board of Trustees v. Indiana* 11 How. 265 272. *Talbot v. Sullivan Box Co.* 139 U. S. 438 448. Where the restriction upon this exercise of power by a recognized government, is claimed under the stipulations of a treaty with another, whether the former be dependent upon the latter or not it would seem that its existence ought to appear beyond a reasonable doubt. We discover no such restriction in the clause of Article 7 of the Treaty of 1839 which excepts white persons from the reservation of the unrestricted right of self government by the Chickasaw Nation and its full jurisdiction over persons and property within its limits. The conditions of that exception may be fairly and honestly going to the extreme of saying that it was also intended to prevent the exercise of the power to consent to the entry of non citizens on the location of property actually within the limits of that government and enjoying its benefits.<sup>15</sup> (P. 794)

The power to tax does not depend upon the power to remove and has been upheld where there was no power in the tribe to remove the taxpayer from the tribal jurisdiction.<sup>16</sup> Where, however, the tribe does have power to remove a person from its jurisdiction, it may impose conditions upon his remaining within tribal territory including the condition of paying license fees. An opinion of the Attorney General dated September 17, 1900, quoted with approval in *Morris v. Mitchell*,<sup>17</sup> declares:

"Under the treaties with the Five Civilized Tribes of Indians, no person but a citizen or member of a tribe, or belonging to the exempted classes, can be lawfully within the limits of the country occupied by these tribes without their permission, and they have the right to impose the terms upon which such permission will be granted." (P. 391)

It is therefore pertinent, in analyzing the scope of tribal taxing powers to inquire how far an Indian tribe is empowered to remove nonmembers from its territory. This question is the more important in that it has used statutes authorizing the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to remove "undesirable" persons from Indian country were repealed at the urging of the present administration, in the interests of civil liberty.<sup>18</sup> Because of its proin jurisdictional status, an Indian reservation is sometimes infested with white criminals or simple trespassers, and the problem of what effective legal action can be taken by a tribe to remove such persons from its reservation is a serious one.

The law is to the power of a tribe to exclude nonmembers from its territory is clearly stated in a series of authorities running back to the earliest days of the Republic. We find in the first volume of the Opinions of the Attorney General the following answer to a question raised by the Secretary of War:

<sup>15</sup> Other authorities supporting the power of an Indian tribe to levy taxes on license fees are *Cherokee v. Madden* 43 Fed. 426 (C. C. A. 8, 1897); *Murray v. Wright* 3 Ind. T. 248 94 S. W. 807 ind 305 Fed. 1003 (C. C. A. 8, 1900); 18 Op. A. G. 34 18 (1884); 23 Op. A. G. 211 239, 220 (1900), *id.* p. 528 (1901).

<sup>16</sup> *Burdett v. Wright*, *supra*.

<sup>17</sup> 194 U. S. 381 (1904).

<sup>18</sup> Act of May 21, 1934, 46 Stat. 787, repealing 25 U. S. C. 220 et seq.

is to the right of the Senate Nation to exclude trespassers from its lands.

No longer is a tribe exists and remains in possession of its lands, its title and possession are sovereign and exclusive, and there exists no authority to enter upon their lands, for any purpose whatever without their consent.<sup>19</sup>

The present state of the law on the power to remove nonmembers is thus summarized in the Solicitor's Opinion of October 27, 1914, on Powers of Indian Tribes.<sup>20</sup>

Over tribal lands, the tribe has the rights of a landowner as well as the rights of a local government, dominant as well as sovereignty. But over all the lands of the reservation whether owned by the tribe by its members thereof or by off-idees, the tribe has the sovereign power of determining the conditions upon which persons shall be permitted to enter its domain, to reside therein, and to do business provided only such determination is consistent with applicable Federal laws and does not infringe any vested rights of persons now occupying its tribal lands under lawful authority.<sup>21</sup>

The power of an Indian tribe to levy taxes upon its own members and upon nonmembers doing business within the reservation has been affirmed in many tribal court judgments approved under the Wheeler Howard Act. It has the power to remove nonmembers from land over which the tribe exercises jurisdiction. The following clauses are typical statements of these tribal powers:

(c) To levy taxes upon members of the tribe and to require the performance of reservation labor in return therefor, and to levy taxes on license fees, subject to review by the Secretary of the Interior upon nonmembers doing business within the reservation.

(d) To exclude from the restricted lands of the reservation persons not legally entitled to reside therein, under ordinances which shall be subject to review by the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>22</sup>

Under such provisions, tribal tax ordinances imposing poll taxes, shack and other license taxes on members of the tribe, and permit and license taxes on nonmembers occupying tribal property have been held valid by the Interior Department.<sup>23</sup> And as the payment of a tax or license fee may be made a condition of entry upon tribal land, it may also be made a condition to the grant of other privileges, such as the acquisition of a tribal lease.<sup>24</sup>

It has been held that the Fifth Amendment does not restrict tribal taxation of tribal members,<sup>25</sup> but tribal constitutional requirements were held violated when a tribal council tried to delegate its taxing powers to a reservation superintendent.<sup>26</sup>

<sup>19</sup> 1 Op. A. G. 165 466, (1821). Accord *United States v. Rogers*, 23 Fed. 638 (D. C. W. D. Ark. 1896). And see Chapter 16, sec. 10.

<sup>20</sup> 95 U. S. 11 50 citing *Morris v. Mitchell* 194 U. S. 384 (1901), and other cases. See also *Memo Sol. I. D.* August 7, 1917.

<sup>21</sup> Constitution of the Washoe Shoshone Tribe, approved December 20, 1916, Art. IV, sec. 1.

<sup>22</sup> *Memo Sol. I. D.*, February 17, 1919 (Rosebud Sioux).

<sup>23</sup> *Memo Sol. I. D.*, March 28, 1919.

<sup>24</sup> *Memo Sol. I. D.*, February 17, 1919 (Rosebud Sioux).

<sup>25</sup> *Memo Sol. I. D.*, May 14, 1918 (Ojibwa Sioux).

## SECTION 8 TRIBAL POWERS OVER PROPERTY

The powers of an Indian tribe with respect to property derive from two sources. In the first place, the tribe has, with respect to tribal property, certain rights and powers commonly incident to property ownership. In the second place, the Indian tribe has, among its powers of sovereignty, the power to regulate the use and disposition of individual property among its members.

While the distinction between these two sorts of power must remain largely conventional,<sup>27</sup> and, in most concrete situations, even academic, those rights and powers which Indian tribes

<sup>27</sup> M. R. Cohen, *Property and Sovereignty*, in *Law and the Social Order* (1934), 41.







Although the right of an Indian tribe to inflict the death penalty had been recognized by Congress,<sup>1</sup> so much construction was created by the Supreme Court's decision in *Ex parte Crow Dog* that within a year Congress had enacted a law making it a Federal crime for one Indian to murder another Indian on an Indian reservation.<sup>2</sup> This law also prohibited manslaughter, the result with intent to kill, with burglary and larceny. In later years numerous cases of robbery, incest, and assault with dangerous weapons resulted in the piecemeal addition of these three offenses to the Federal code of Indian crimes.<sup>3</sup> There are, thus, if the present truth, 10 major offenses for which Federal jurisdiction has been declared by Congress. Federal courts should have jurisdiction over the ordinary Federal crimes applicable throughout the United States (such as counterfeiting, smuggling, and offenses relative to the mails), exceptions of special jurisdiction for the Federal Government and other offenses committed by Indians against a member of the same Indian band or in Indian territory, a member of the same band accused in Indian when still within the special code of offenses for territory without the exclusive jurisdiction of the United States.<sup>4</sup> All offenses other than these remain subject to tribal law and custom and to tribal courts.

Although the statute covering the 10 major crimes does not expressly terminate tribal jurisdiction over the enumerated crimes and may be interpreted as conferring only a concurrent jurisdiction upon the federal courts, it is arguable that the statute removes all jurisdiction over the enumerated crimes from the Indian tribal authorities.

Some support is given this argument by the decision in *United States v. Whaley*.<sup>1</sup> In this case, which arose somewhat after the passage of the statute in question, it had appeared fitting to the trial counsel of the Tule River Reservation that a mechanic in who was believed to have poisoned some 21 diseased patients should be executed, and he was so executed. The four trial executioners were found guilty at manslaughter, in the federal court, on the theory, apparently, that the Act of

<sup>1</sup> See report cited above, fn. 27.

Act of March 4, 1865, 21 Stat. 462 890 18 U. S. C. 549

Efforts attempts to extend federal criminal laws to crimes by Indians against Indians (e.g. Latimer from Secretary of the Interior March 11 1871 Sen. Misc. Doc. No. 95 (3d Cong., 1st sess.) but failed. On May 20 1871, the Senate Committee on Indian Affairs, rejecting the proposed bills declared:

\* \* \* The Indians while their tribal relations subsist generally maintain laws customs and usages of their own for the punishment of offenses. They have no knowledge of the laws of the United States and the attempt to enforce their own ordinances might bring them in direct conflict with existing statutes and subject them to prosecutions for their violation. (Sen Rept No 367 33d Cong. 1st Sess vol 2)

This same report condemned other provisions of the proposed bill as vesting in Indian agents "a very dangerous and formidable discretion" (Chapter 2, sec. 2C).

- Act of March 4 1909 - 323 97 Stat 1048 1151, Act of June 28 32, 47 Stat 336, 837

<sup>104</sup>See *Basley v United States* 17 F.2d 702 (C.C. 1911), concerning conviction of tribal Indian for offense of smuggling.

\* See IS U R C 104 (Tomb; depictions on Indian lands), 107 (Starting fires on Indian lands), 110 (Building fences on divine, etc. land on unceded public lands), 116 (Injuries, conveniences by Indians of certain interests in land), 117 U R C 83 (Breach of treaty made by Indians), 118 (Selling land to Indians), 119 (Driving stock to feed on Indian lands), 180 (Settling on or conveying lands belonging to Indians by treaty), 106 (Sale of cattle purchased by Government to nontribal members), 212 (Assault), 213 (Assault with intent to kill), 214 (Dispossession of removing cattle), 215 (Surrender on Indian lands), 241 (Intoxication heinous, sale to Indians or introducing, race Indian), 241a (Sale, etc., of liquor to Indians), 242 (Selling liquor to Indians), 243 (Selling liquor to Indians), 251 (Selling up and down districts), 246 (Trading without license), 285 (Prohibited purchases and sales), 300 (Sale of arms).

<sup>2</sup> See 18 U.S.C. chaps. 11 and 18.

<sup>207</sup> 27 Fed 145 (C C S D Cal 1888). See also dictum in *United States v. Gaidash*, 145 Fed 242 (D C E D Wis 1908).

Much of 1887 had terminated tribal jurisdiction over murder cases. Whether tribal authorities may still inflict the death penalty for offenses other than the enumerated 10 major crimes is a matter of some doubt.

In opposition to the argument that the 2885 act limits tribal jurisdiction over crimes, it may be said that concurrent jurisdiction of federal and tribal authorities is clearly recognized by section 214 of title 25 of the United States Code, more so forth, which exempts from federal punishment otherwise merited persons who have been punished by the local law of the tribe, and that the current Indian Law and Order Regulations recognize concurrent federal tribal jurisdiction over crime.

The theme in this last command code of 30 commandments is serious and indicate the importance of trial jurisdiction in the field of law and order.

"Assault" cases that do not involve a dangerous weapon or where "intent to kill" is not to be proven, cannot be prosecuted in the federal court, no matter how brutal the attack may be, or how new the victim is placed, if death does not actually ensue, men hardly being their wives and children are, therefore, exempt from prosecution in the federal courts, and as above shown, the state courts do not have jurisdiction. Even assault with intent to commit rape or great bodily injury is not punishable under any federal statute.

Aside from rape and incest, the various offenses involving the relation of the sexes (i.e., adultery, seduction, bigamy, and so on), as well as those involving the responsibility of a man for the support of his wife and children, are not within the class of crimes that can be prosecuted in federal courts.<sup>10</sup>

Other offenses which may be mentioned, to which no State or Federal law now has jurisdiction, are kidnapping, receiving stolen goods, poisoning (if the victim does not die), obtaining money under false pretenses, embezzlement, blackmail, libel, forgery, fraud, trespass, mayhem, bribery, killing of another's livestock, setting fire to private or timber, use of false weights and measures, carrying concealed weapons, gambling disorderly conduct, malicious mischief, pollution of water supplies, and other offenses against public health.<sup>1</sup>

The difficulties of this situation have prompted agitation for the extension of federal or state laws over the Indian country, which has continued for at least five decades, without success. The propriety of the objective *sanghi* is not here in question, but the agitation itself is evidence of the huge area of human conduct which must be left in anarchy if it be held that tribal authority to deal with such conduct has disappeared.

Fortunately, such tribal authority has been repeatedly recognized by the courts, and although it has not been actually exercised always and in all tribes, it remains a proper legal basis

<sup>-3</sup> Memo Sol I 1) November 17, 1980 (Ft Hall)

<sup>10</sup> *United States v. King*, 81 Fed. 625 (D. C. E. D. Wis. 1897).

<sup>100</sup> See *United States v. Quinn*, 211 U.S. 602 (1916), discussed above under sec. 5.

<sup>21</sup> Of statements of Assistant Commissioner Melitt, before House Committee on Indian Affairs 69th Cong, on H R 7826 Hearings (Restoration Grants of Indian Offenses), p. 81.

*Nation Congress of Indian Orphans?* p. 91

See *Indian Affairs*, 1870-1871, 1872-1873, 154 N A Rev, 272.

The People Without Law (1891), 68 All Month 540, 870, Antia Abbott, Indians and the Law (1889), 2 Harv Law Rev 107, Hainbohn Legal Status of Indians (1891), 14 A B A Rept 261 Report of Comm on Law and Courts to Indians (1892), 15 A B A Rept 423, Bond, Nationals Without a Nation (1922), 22 Col L Rev 97, Meilan and Associates, Problem of Indian Administration (1928), chp. 19, Ray A Brown, The Indian Trust Lands and Law (1906).

See also *Indian Affairs*, 1870-1871 ("Clouds of Misadventure" and Order on Indian Reservations of the Northwest") Hearings See Subcomm of Comm on Ind Affs 72d Cong, 1st sess., pt. 26, p. 14397, et seq (1924).

for the tribal administration of justice whenever an Indian tribe desires to make use of its legal powers.

The recognition of tribal jurisdiction over the offenses of Indian Indians is accorded in the Supreme Court in *Dr. Paul Cron Dog, supra* and *United States v. Quire, supra* indicates that the criminal jurisdiction of the Indian tribes has not been entitled by the failure of certain tribes to exercise such jurisdiction, or by the inaction of its attempted exercise or by any historical changes that have come about in the habits and customs of the Indian tribes. Likewise it has been held that a gap in a tribal criminal code does not confer jurisdiction upon the federal courts.<sup>17</sup> Only specific legislation terminating or transferring such jurisdiction can limit the force of tribal law.

A recent writer,<sup>18</sup> after carefully analyzing the relation between federal and tribal law concludes:

"This gives to many Indian tribes a large measure of continuing autonomy, for the federal statutes are only a fragment of law, principally providing some educational, hygienic, and economic assistance, regulating land ownership, and punishing certain crimes committed by or upon Indians on a reservation. Where these statutes do not reach, Indian custom is the only law. As a matter of convenience, the federal courts (which means courts) tacitly assume that the general law of the community is the law in civil cases between Indians, but these courts will apply Indian custom whenever it is proved. (P. 90)

A careful analysis of the relation between a local tribal government and the United States is found in an early opinion of the Attorney General,<sup>19</sup> in which it is held that a court of the Choctaw Nation has complete jurisdiction over a civil controversy between a Choctaw Indian and an adopted white man, involving rights to property within the Choctaw Nation.

On the other hand, it is argued by the United States Agent, that the courts of the Choctaws can have no jurisdiction of any case in which a citizen of the United States is a party.<sup>20</sup>

In the first place, it is certain that the Agent puts in assuming the legal impossibility of a citizen of the United States becoming subject, in civil matters, or criminal either, to the jurisdiction of the Choctaws. It is true that no citizen of the United States can, while he remains within the United States, escape their constitutional jurisdiction either by adoption into a tribe of Indians, or any other way. But the error in all this consists in the idea that any man, citizen or not citizen, becomes divested of his allegiance to the United States, or throws off their jurisdiction or government, in the fact of becoming subject to any local jurisdiction whatever. This idea misconceives entirely the whole theory of the Federal Government, which theory is, that all the inhabitants of the country are, in regard to certain limited matters, subject to the federal jurisdiction, and in all others to the local jurisdiction whether political or municipal. The citizen of Mississippi is also a citizen of the United States, and he owes allegiance to, and is subject to the laws of, both governments. So also an Indian, whether he be Choctaw or Chickasaw, and while subject to the local jurisdiction of the councils and courts of the nation, yet is not in any possible relation or sense divested of his allegiance and obligations to the Government and the laws of the United States. (Op. 37-178)

In effect, then, an Indian tribe bears a relation to the Government of the United States, similar to that which a territory bears to such government, and similar again to that relationship which a municipality bears to a state. An Indian tribe may exercise a complete jurisdiction over its members and

within the limits of the reservation, "subordinate only to the expressed limitations of federal law."

Some tribes have exercised a similar jurisdiction under express departmental authorization, over Indians of other tribes found on the reservation.<sup>21</sup> This has been justified on the ground that if the original tribal sovereignty extends over visiting Indians and also on the ground that the Department of the Interior may transfer the jurisdiction vested in the Councils of Indian Offenses to third parties, so that it concerns jurisdiction over members of recognized tribes.<sup>22</sup>

On the other hand, attempts of tribes to exercise jurisdiction over non Indians, although permitted in certain early treaties,<sup>23</sup> have been generally condemned by the federal courts since the end of the treaty-making period, and the writ of habeas corpus has been used to discharge white defendants from tribal custody.<sup>24</sup>

Recognition of tribal authority in the administration of justice is found in the statutes of Congress, as well as in the decisions of the federal courts.

U. S. Code, title 25, section 229 provides that redress to a civil injury committed by an Indian shall be sought in the first instance from the Nation or tribe to which such Indian "shall belong."<sup>25</sup> This provision for collective responsibility evidently assumes that the Indian tribe or nation has its own resources for exercising disciplinary power over individual wrongdoers within the community.

We have already referred to title 25, section 216, of the United States Code, with its express assurance that persons "punished by the law of the tribe" shall not be tried again before the federal courts.

What is even more important than these statutory recognitions of tribal criminal authority is the persistent silence of Congress on the general problem of Indian criminal jurisdiction. There is nothing to justify an alternative to the conclusion that the Indian tribes retain sovereignty and jurisdiction over a vast area of ordinary offenses over which the Federal Government has never presumed to legislate and over which the state governments have not the authority to legislate.

Attempts to administer a rough and ready sort of justice through Indian courts commonly known as "Councils of Indian Offenses," or directly through superintendents, cannot be held to have impaired tribal authority in the field of law and order. These agencies have been characterized, in the only reported case squarely upholding their legality, as "mere educational and disciplinary instrumentalities by which the Government

<sup>17</sup> "The jurisdiction of the Indian tribe ceases at the border of the reservation (see 18 Op. A. G. 440 (1886)) holding that the authority of the Indian police is limited to the territory of the reservation), and Congress has never authorized appropriate extradition procedure whereby an Indian tribe may secure jurisdiction over fugitives from its justice. See *Dr. Paul Cron Dog, supra*, 20 P. d. 298 (D. C. W. D. Ark., 1888).

<sup>18</sup> See Memo. Sol. I. D. February 17, 1909 (Rocky Boy's Blackfeet). But of Memo. Sol. I. D. October 15, 1918 (Pi. Belthold). For a fuller discussion of the question of jurisdiction of the person raised in such cases as *Dr. Paul Cron Dog*, 11 Fed. Civ. No. 7720 (C. C. W. D. Ark., 1878), see Chapter 18.

<sup>19</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>20</sup> See Chapter 1, sec. 3.

<sup>21</sup> See *Dr. Paul Cron Dog*, 14 Fed. Cas. No. 7720 (C. C. W. D. Ark., 1878), and see Chapter 18.

<sup>22</sup> This provision was apparently first enacted in sec. 14 of the Trade and Intercourse Act of May 19, 1790, 1 Stat. 469, 472, reprinted as sec. 14 of the Trade and Intercourse Act of March 3, 1799, 1 Stat. 743, 747, reprinted as sec. 14 of the Trade and Intercourse Act of March 30, 1802, 2 Stat. 300, 344, and finally embodied in sec. 17 of the Trade and Intercourse Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 740, 741.

<sup>23</sup> Of a similar character are treaty provisions in which tribes undertake to punish certain types of Indian offenders. See, e. g., Art. 7 of Treaty

<sup>17</sup> *In re Mayfield*, 145 U. S. 107 (1901).

<sup>18</sup> Rice, The Position of the American Indian in the Law of the United States (1884), 16 F. Comp. Leg. (4d series), pt. 1, 78.

<sup>19</sup> Op. A. G. 374 (1906).

of the United States is endeavoring to improve and elevate the condition of these dependent tribes to whom it sustains the relation of guardian.<sup>1</sup> Perhaps a more satisfactory defense of their legitimacy is the doctrine put forward by a recent writer that the Courts of Indian Offenses "derive their authority from the tribe, rather than from Washington."<sup>2</sup>

Whichever of these explanations be offered for the existence of the Courts of Indian Offenses, their establishment cannot be held to have destroyed or limited the powers vested by existing law in the Indian tribes over the province of law and order and the administration of civil and criminal justice.

Today the administration of law and order is being taken over as a local responsibility by most of the tribes that since the enactment of the Wheeler Howard Act of June 18, 1934, have adopted constitutions for self government.<sup>3</sup>

Faced with a tremendous problem the Indian tribes have done an admirable job of maintaining law and order wherever they have been permitted to function.<sup>4</sup> There are some reservations in which the moral sanctions of an integrated community are so strong that crime from occasional drunkenness and accompanying violence, crime is unknown. Crime is more of a problem

on reservations where the social sanctions based on tribal control of property have been broken down through the allotment system, and the efforts of these tribes to meet their law and order problem through tribal codes, tribal courts, and tribal police are worthy of serious attention.

The earliest codes adopted by tribes which have organized under the Act of June 18, 1934, generally differ from comparable state penal codes in the following respects:

1 The number of offenses specified in a tribal code generally runs between 40 and 50, whereas a state code (exclusive of local municipal ordinances) generally specifies between 800 and 2,000 offenses.<sup>5</sup>

2 The maximum punishment specified in the Indian penal codes is generally more humane, seldom exceeding imprisonment for 6 months, except for offenses like kidnapping, for which state penal codes impose imprisonment for 20 years or more, or death.

3 Except for fixing a maximum penalty, the Indian penal codes leave a large discretion to the court in adjusting the penalty to the circumstances of the offense and the offender.

4 The form of punishment is typically forced labor for the benefit of the tribe or of the victim of the offense, rather than imprisonment.

5 The tribal penal codes, for the most part, do not contain the usual catch all provisions to be found in state penal codes (such as, conspiracy, criminal syndicate, etc.), under which almost any unpropitious individual may be convicted of crime.

6 The tribal penal code is generally put into the hands of every member of the tribe, and widely read and discussed, which is not the case with state penal codes.

On the basis of this comparison it seems best to say that the confidence which the United States Supreme Court indicated, in the *Crane Dog* case,<sup>6</sup> in the ability of Indian tribes to master "the highest and best of all . . . the arts of civilized life . . . that of self government . . . the maintenance of order and peace among their own members by the administration of their own laws and customs" is well justified in the half century that has passed since that case was heard.

<sup>1</sup> November 15, 1905, with Confederated Tribes of Middle Oregon, 14 Stat. 751, 752; Act of February 8, 1889, with Stockbridge and Muncie, 11 Stat. 661, 666.

<sup>2</sup> Tribal responsibility for surrender or extradition of Indian horse thieves, murderers, or "bad men" generally was imposed by various treaties. Treaty of January 21, 1787, with Winnebago Indians, and others 7 Stat. 10; Treaty of January 10, 1790, with the Chickasaws 7 Stat. 24; Treaty of January 9, 1793, with Winnebago Indians and others 7 Stat. 28; Treaty of August 7, 1790, with the Creek Nation 7 Stat. 9; Treaty of July 2, 1792, with Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 39; Treaty of November 1, 1804, with Sacs and Foxes 7 Stat. 81; Treaty of November 10, 1805, with Creek and Little Osage Nations 7 Stat. 107; Treaty of September 10, 1809, with Delaware and others 7 Stat. 112; Treaty of May 15, 1846, with Comanches and others 9 Stat. 844.

<sup>3</sup> *United States v. Chapow*, 45 Ind. 771 (U. S. Ct. 1889), and *See note Cr. 10, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000.*

<sup>4</sup> *Rice, The Position of the American Indian in the Law of the United States* (1914) 10 *T Comp. L.* (9d Ser.) pt. 1, pp. 78, 93.

<sup>5</sup> *Rice* for example, (note of Ordinances of the Gila River Pima Maricopa Indian Community adopted June 1, 1916, and approved by the Secretary of the Interior on August 21, 1920, Revised Code of Offenses adopted April 4, 1927, and approved by the Secretary of the Interior July 7, 1927).

<sup>6</sup> *See Meriam on art. p. 17* (" . . . on the whole they work well . . ."). On tribal police organization, see *McClure, Police and Punishment among the Navaho Indians of the Plains* (1927) 28 *Trim. Law and Criminology* 181.

## SECTION 10 STATUTORY POWERS OF TRIBES IN INDIAN ADMINISTRATION

Within the field of Indian Service administration various powers have been conferred on Indian tribes by statute. These powers differ, of course, in derivation from those tribal powers which spring from tribal sovereignty. They are a matter of federal origin, and no doubt subject to constitutional doctrines applicable to the exercise of delegation of federal governmental powers.

Potentially the most important of these statutory tribal powers is the power to supervise regular Government employees, subject to the findings of the Secretary of the Interior as to the competency of the tribe to exercise such control. Section 9 of the Act of June 30, 1884,<sup>1</sup> now embodied in U. S. Code, title 25, sec. 48, provides:

*Right of tribes to discontinue employment of persons engaged for them—Where any of the tribes are, in the opinion of the Secretary of the Interior, competent to direct the employment of their blacksmiths, mechanics, teachers, farm*

*ers, or other persons engaged for them, the direction of such persons may be given to the proper authority of the tribe.*

Under the terms of this statute it is clearly within the discretionary authority of the Secretary of the Interior to grant to the proper authorities of an Indian tribe all powers of supervision and control over local employees, which may now be exercised by the Secretary, *e. g.*, the power to specify the duties, within a general range set by the nature of the employment, which the employee is to perform, the power to prescribe standard aids for appointment, promotion and continuance in office, and the power to compel reports, from time to time, of work accomplished or begun.

It will be noted that the statute in question is not restricted to the cases in which a federal employee is paid out of tribal funds. Senators are responsible to their constituents regardless of the source of their salaries, and therefore most Indian Service employees have been responsible only to the Federal

<sup>1</sup> 48 Stat. 785, 787, U. S. § 2072



Government, though their salaries might be paid from the lands of the tribe.

In directing the employment of Indian Service employees, an Indian tribe may impose upon such employees the duty of enforcing the laws and ordinances of the tribe, and the authority of Federal employees so acting has been repeatedly confirmed by the courts.<sup>11</sup>

The section in question has not, apparently, been extensively used by the Interior Department, and that Department at one time recommended its repeal. This recommendation was later withdrawn.<sup>12</sup>

Various other statutes make Indian Service administration dependent, in several respects, upon tribal consent.

Thus, U. S. Code, title 25, section 63, "provide[s] that the President may 'consolidate one or more tribes, and abolish such agencies as are thereby rendered unnecessary,' but that such action may be undertaken only 'with the consent of the tribe to be affected thereby, expressed in the usual manner.'"

Section 111 of the same title "provides that payments of moneys and distribution of goods for the benefit of any Indians of Indian tribes shall be made either to the heads of families and individuals directly entitled to such moneys or goods, or else to the chiefs of the tribe, for the benefit of the tribe, or to persons appointed by the tribe for the purpose of receiving such moneys

or goods. This section further provides that such moneys or goods, by consent of the tribe, may be applied directly by the Secretary to purposes conducive to the happiness and prosperity of the tribe.

Section 117 of the same title "provides:

The President may, at the request of any Indian tribe, to which no munity is payable in money, cause the same to be paid in goods, purchased as provided in section 91.

Section 146 "of the same title provides that specific appropriations for the benefit of Indian tribes may be diverted to other uses 'with the consent of said tribes expressed in the usual manner.'"

Perhaps the most important provision for tribal participation in Federal Indian administration is found in the first sentence of section 16 of the Act of June 18, 1934, which, applying to all tribes adopting constitutions under that act, declares:

The Secretary of the Interior shall advise such tribe or its tribal council of all appropriation estimates or Federal projects for the benefit of the tribe prior to the submission of such estimates to the Bureau of the Budget and the Congress.

Under this section each organized tribe has the right to present its comments and criticisms on the budgetary plans of the Interior Department covering its own reservation prior to the time when such plans are considered by the Bureau of the Budget or by Congress. This is a power quite distinct from the tribal power to prevent the disposition of tribal funds without tribal consent, a power elsewhere discussed.<sup>13</sup>

While this provision imposes a legal duty upon administrative authorities, it is, of course, purely advisory so far as Congress is concerned.

<sup>11</sup> Act of June 30, 1884, sec. 11, 4 Stat. 793, 737; amended Act of March 3, 1877, sec. 8, 9 Stat. 203; amended Act of July 15, 1870, sec. 2, 16 Stat. 815, 860. See Chapter 16, note 22, 28.

<sup>12</sup> Act of June 30, 1884, sec. 12, 4 Stat. 793, 737.  
<sup>13</sup> Act of March 3, 1907, ch. 51, tit. 1016.  
 48 Stat. 981, 987, 25 U. S. C. 470.

<sup>14</sup> See Chapter 6, sec. 75 and Chapter 18, sec. 24.

<sup>10</sup> *Morris v. Mitchell*, 194 U. S. 381 (1901), *Luster v. Wright*, 115 Fed. 947 (C. C. 9, 1905), 100 Fed. 203 (U. S. 500), *Morris v. Wright*, 1 Ind. T. 213, 74 S. W. 507 (1900) and 100 Fed. 100 (1900), *Wright v. Morris*, 5 Ind. T. 616, 82 S. W. 941 (1904), 21 Op. A. G. 528.

<sup>11</sup> See annotations to 25 U. S. C. 48 in various annual supplements to U. S. C. A.

<sup>12</sup> Act of May 17, 1882, sec. 86, 22 Stat. 68, 88; amended Act of July 4, 1883, sec. 23, Stat. 70, 97.

<sup>13</sup> Act of June 30, 1884, sec. 11, 4 Stat. 793, 737; amended Act of March 3, 1877, sec. 8, 9 Stat. 203; amended Act of July 15, 1870, sec. 2, 16 Stat. 815, 860. See Chapter 16, note 22, 28.

## PERSONAL RIGHTS AND LIBERTIES OF INDIANS

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 Introduction.....	151	Section 8—Continued	
Section 2 Citizenship.....	153	B Restricted meanings—Continued	
1 Method of acquiring citizenship.....	153	(2) Inability to receive or spend	
(1) Treaties with Indian tribes.....	153	Junds.....	169
(2) Special statutes.....	153	Section 9 The meanings of "wardship".....	169
(3) General statutes naturalizing		1 Wards as domestic dependent nations.....	170
allottees.....	151	B Wards as tribes subject to congressional	
(4) General statutes naturalizing		power.....	170
other classes of Indians.....	151	C Wards as individuals subject to con-	
B Noncitizen Indians.....	154	gressional power.....	171
C Effect of citizenship.....	156	D Wards as subjects of federal court juris-	
Section 3 Suffrage.....	157	diction.....	171
A Indian disenfranchisement.....	157	E Wards as subjects of administrative power.....	171
B Constitutional protection of Indian		F Wards as beneficiaries of a trust.....	172
voting rights.....	158	G Wards as noncitizens.....	172
Section 4 Eligibility for public office and employment.....	159	H Wardship and restraint on alienation.....	172
A Public office.....	159	I Wardship and inequality of bargaining	
B Privilege in Indian and other govern-		power.....	172
mental service.....	159	J Wards as subjects of federal bounty.....	173
(1) Right of employment.....	159	Section 10 Civil liberties.....	173
(2) Civil service.....	159	A Discrimination.....	173
(3) Treaties and statutes.....	160	(1) Discriminatory state laws.....	173
(a) Treaties.....	160	(2) Discriminatory federal laws.....	171
(b) General statutes.....	160	(3) Oppressive federal adminis-	
(4) Statutes of limited application.....	160	trative action.....	175
(a) Construction work on		(a) Concentration of ad-	
reservation.....	160	ministrative power.....	175
(b) Purchase of Indian		(b) Confinement on re-	
products.....	161	evocations.....	176
(c) Military service.....	161	Section 11 Remedies.....	177
(d) Youth.....	161	(1) The right of expatriation.....	177
Section 5 Eligibility for state assistance.....	162	(2) Antidiscrimination statutes	
Section 6 Right to sue.....	162	and to enforce.....	178
Section 7 Right to conduct.....	164	(a) Federal statutes af-	
A Power of attorney.....	164	fecting Indians	
B Corporations and business organiza-		only.....	178
tions.....	165	(b) Federal statutes af-	
C Rights of creditors.....	165	fecting all races.....	179
Section 8 The meanings of "incompetency".....	167	(c) State statutes affect-	
A General lack of legal capacity.....	167	ing all races.....	179
B Restricted meanings.....	167	(d) Treaties affecting all	
(1) Inability to alienate land.....	167	races.....	179
(a) Statutes.....	168	(5) Constitutional protection.....	179
(b) Treaties.....	169	Section 11 The status of freedmen and slaves.....	181

## SECTION 1 INTRODUCTION

To analyze the personal rights and liberties of Indians is to assume that Indians are persons. This proposition has not always been universally accepted. The first authoritative determination that Indians are human beings is to be found in the

Bull *Sublimus Deus* of Pope Paul III, issued June 4, 1537. This Bull declared

The enemy of the human race, who opposes all good deeds, in order to bring men to destruction, beholding

and ending, this, untried means never before heard of, by which he might hinder the preaching of God's word of salvation to the people. He inspired his satellites who, to please him have not hesitated to publish abroad that the Indians of the West and the South, and other people of whom We have recent knowledge should be treated as dumb brutes created for our service, justifying that they are incapable of receiving the Catholic faith.

We who though unworthy to exercise on earth the power of our Lord and seek with all our might to bring those sheep of His flock who are sold into the fold committed to our charge, consider, however that the Indians are truly men and that they are not only capable of understanding the Catholic faith but according to our information they desire exceedingly to receive it. Desiring to provide ample remedy for these evils, we desire and desire by these our letters, or by any translation thereof signed by any notary public and sealed with the seal of any ecclesiastical dignitary, to which the same credit shall be given as to the originals, that unchristian slanders which may have been or may be said to the contrary, the said Indians and all other people who may later be discovered by Christians, not by any means to be deprived of their liberty or the possession of their property, even though they be and take the faith of Jesus Christ, and that they may and should, freely and legally enjoy their liberty and the possession of their property, nor should they be in any way enslaved, should the contrary happen, it shall be null and of no effect.

Despite this pronouncement, doubts as to the human character of Indians have persisted until fairly recently. particularly among those charged with the administration of Indian affairs. These doubts are reflected in the statement on "Policy and Administration of Indian Affairs" contained in the "Report on Indians Taxed and Indians Not Taxed, at the Eleventh Census, 1900," which declares:

An Indian is a person within the meaning of the laws of the United States. This decision of Justice Brandeis, of the United States district court for Nebraska, has not been received, still, by law and the Interior Department, the Indian is considered a ward of the nation and is so treated.<sup>18</sup>

The doubts that have existed as to whether an Indian is a person or something less than a person have interfered with our certainty much of the discussion of Indian personal rights and liberties. Great thinking on the subject has been sacrificed in the effort to find ambiguous terms which will permit us, by untopical juggling, to maintain three basic propositions:

- (1) that Indians are human beings,
- (2) that all human beings are created equal with certain inalienable rights, and
- (3) that Indians are an "inferior" class not entitled to these "inalienable rights."

Experience shows that it is possible to pay due deference to these three propositions, inconsistent though they are with each other, by means of a skillful juggling of words of many meanings, such as "wardship" and "incompetency."

In 1842, Attorney General Larnie wrote:<sup>19</sup>

There is nothing in the whole compass of our laws so anomalous—so hard to bring within any precise definition, or any logical and scientific arrangement of principles, as the condition in which the Indians stand towards this government, and those of the States. (P. 76)

Eight decades later, when the current period, Judge Chief Justice Pound, wrote of "Nationals without a Nation," the anomalies attendant upon the legal status of the Indian had not disappeared.

In part, the difficulties of the subject derive from the unique international relationship existing between the United States and Indian tribes, treated as domestic, dependent nations, with which we entered into treaties that continue in force to this day.

The complexity of the problem has been very much aggravated by the host of special treaties and special statutes, assigning rights and obligations to the members of particular tribes, all of which creates a complex diversity that can be simplified only at the risk of ignoring facts and violating rights. Attempts have been made, of course, in some judicial opinions, as well as in less authoritative writings, to ride roughshod over the facts and to lay down certain simple rules of alleged universal applicability, most of which have turned out to be erroneous.

Whatever the causes of this confusion may be the fact remains that erroneous notions on the legal status of the Indian are widely prevalent. Large sections of our population still believe that Indians are not citizens, and recent justices have been reported as Indians being denied the right to vote because the electoral officials in charge were under the impression that Indians have never been made citizens. Indeed, some people have persuaded Indians themselves that they are not citizens and can achieve citizenship only by selling their land, by leaving the Indian Office abolished, or by performing some other act of heathen to the contrary of what they have volunteered and in the achievement of American citizenship.

Another prevalent misconception is the notion that "ward Indians," whenever that term may mean, have no capacity at law to make contracts or to bring or defend law suits.

There are but two examples among a host of more or less widespread misconceptions that are woven about such terms as citizenship, "wardship," and "incompetency."

We shall be concerned in this chapter to analyze the legal position of the Indian with respect to ten matters:

- (a) Citizenship (see 2)
- (b) Suffrage (see 4)
- (c) Eligibility for public office and employment (see 4)
- (d) Eligibility for state assistance (see 5)
- (e) Right to sue (see 6)
- (f) Right to contract (see 7)
- (g) Incompetency (see 8)
- (h) Wardship (see 9)
- (i) Civil liberties (see 10)
- (j) Status of freedmen and slaves, (see 11)

<sup>18</sup> Translation from F. A. MacNutt, *Bethlehem v. de Ties-Cresc. Inc.*, 1st Nat. Apostolate and His Writings, (1009), pp. 429, 431.

<sup>19</sup> F. R. Misc. Doc. No. 460, 52d Cong., 1st sess., part 16 (1894), p. 64.

<sup>20</sup> 1 Op. A. G. 75 (1842).

(1922) 22 Cal. L. Rev. 97.

<sup>21</sup> Op. Sol. I. D. M. 25860, February 13, 1897.

## SECTION 2 CITIZENSHIP

Since June 2, 1924 all Indians born within the territorial limits of the United States have been citizens by virtue of the act of that date.<sup>1</sup> This act provides:

"That all non citizen Indians born within the territorial limits of the United States be, and they are hereby, declared to be citizens of the United States. *Provided* That the granting of such citizenship shall not in any manner impair or otherwise affect the right of any Indian to tribal or other property."

The substance of this section was incorporated in the Nation City Act of October 3, 1910.<sup>2</sup>

Prior to the Citizenship Act of 1924 approximately two thirds of the Indians of the United States had already acquired citizenship in one or more of the following ways:

- (a) Treaties with Indian tribes.
- (b) Special statutes naturalizing named tribes or individuals.
- (c) General statutes naturalizing Indians who took allotment.
- (d) General statutes naturalizing other special classes.

A brief analysis of each of these methods of acquiring citizenship may suffice to explain those current misconceptions on the subject of Indian citizenship which are a survival of what was once actual law.

## A METHODS OF ACQUIRING CITIZENSHIP

(1) *Treaties with Indian tribes*—Some early treaties between the United States and Indian tribes provided for the granting of citizenship. In some cases, citizenship was made dependent upon receipt of an allotment of land in severalty.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 43 Stat. 25, 8 U. S. C. 1. This act naturalized 125,000 native born Indians. But the Position of the American Indian in the Law of the United States (1914) 107, 7 Comp. Pl. 78, 36 Ann. Impt. Work. Secretary of the Interior. Indian Policies. Committee on Resolutions of the Advisory Council on Indian Affairs (U. S. Gov. Printing, office 1921 p. 6), of Fifty-fifth Annual Report of Board of Indian Commissioners (1924) pp. 1 and 2. In the legislative history of this act see Chapter 1, sec. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Pub. No. 951 76th Cong., sec. 207 of which declares:

"The following shall be nationals and citizens of the United States, to-wit:

(b) A person born in the United States to a member of an Indian, Eskimo, Aleutian or other aboriginal tribe.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of September 27, 1810 with Choctaws, Art. 24, 7 Stat. 241, 45. For illustrations of treaties conferring citizenship on heads of families, see Treaty of July 9, 1817, with Choctaws, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 166, 170, Treaty of February 27, 1819, with Choctaws, Art. 2, 7 Stat. 109, 108.

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of June 25, 1862, with Kickapoo, Art. 1, 13 Stat. 621, 624. Treaty of July 4, 1866, with Delaware, Arts. 7 and 9, 14 Stat. 791, 794, 798. Treaty of February 2, 1867, with Senecas and others, Art. 18, 18 Stat. 513, 516 interpreted in *Wagon v. Connolly*, 161 U. S. 56 (1896). Treaty of February 27, 1867, with Potawatomes, Art. 6, 15 Stat. 715-717; Treaty of April 29, 1869, 1869, with Menominee, Art. 6, 15 Stat. 671, 677. Act of March 3, 1873, 17 Stat. 627 (Algonquies). Also see Appropriation Act to execute this provision, Act of June 22, 1874, 16 Stat. 140-177, and 2 Op. U. S. G. 62 (1874). It was hoped to terminate reservations and to save the discrimination of the land. *Yukon: The Indian Bureau in New England*, (1903), 13 *Am. Ind. B.* 99, 102-102. *Thawley, A People Without Law* (1901), 68 *Am. Month.* 740, 746-747. *Kyle: How Shall the Indians Be Educated* (1904), 179 *N. Y. Rev. L.* 14, *Koyser: Principles of the Indian Law* and the *Act of June 18, 1911* (10, 1911), 4 *Geo. Wash. L. Rev.* 279, 295. *United States v. Rulien*, 185 U. S. 432, 447 (1905), *Choteau v. Bruner*, 288 U. S. 691 (1913), *Oakes v. United States*, 172 Fed. 705 (C. C. V. 1909).

and sometimes the alternative to accepting an allotment was removal with the tribe to a new reservation.

Implicit in this arrangement was the thought that citizenship was incompatible with continued participation in tribal government or tribal property. This supposed incompatibility, removed from its specific treaty context and generalized, has become one of the most fundamental sources of contemporary confusion on the question of Indian citizenship.

The later treaties usually require the submission of evidence of fitness for citizenship and empower an administrative body or official to determine whether the applicant for citizenship conforms to the standard in the treaty. To illustrate: the Treaty of November 15, 1861<sup>5</sup> with the Potawatomes requires the President of the United States to be satisfied that the individuals of families are "sufficiently intelligent and prudent to conduct their affairs and interests" and the Treaty of February 23, 1867,<sup>6</sup> forbids tribal membership to Wyandottes who had consented to become citizens under a prior treaty, unless they were found unfit for the responsibilities of citizenship.<sup>7</sup>

(2) *Special statutes*—Before and after the termination of the treaty making period the members of several tribes were naturalized collectively by statute.<sup>8</sup> The tribe was in a few cases dissolved at the same time and its land distributed to the members.<sup>9</sup> Sometimes other conditions were included in the statute, such as adopting the habits of civilized life, becoming self-supporting, and learning to read and speak the English language.<sup>10</sup>

After the ratification of the Fourteenth Amendment, several acts were passed naturalizing Indians of certain tribes. Most of these statutes were small in the Act of July 15, 1870.<sup>11</sup> By section 16 of this law a Winnebago Indian in the State of Maine could apply to the Federal District Court for citizenship. He was required to prove to the satisfaction of the court that he was sufficiently intelligent and prudent to control his affairs.

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of September 27, 1861, with Choctaws, Arts. 14 and 16, 7 Stat. 111, 9-10, 36.

<sup>6</sup> Act of March 1, 1867, 15 Stat. 1191, 1192.

<sup>7</sup> Art. 14, 15 Stat. 714, 716 (Senecas and others). Also see Arts. 37, 29, 31 on other provisions regarding citizenship.

<sup>8</sup> Also see Treaty of July 4, 1866, with Delaware, Arts. 7 and 9, 14 Stat. 791, 794, 798. Act of March 1, 1867, 15 Stat. 1191, 1192. Other acts providing for the termination of the Treaty of February 27, 1867, with Potawatomes, Arts. 3 and 6, 15 Stat. 715-717, which permits women who are heads of families or single women of adult age to become citizens in the same manner as males, and authorizes the Tribal Business Committee and the agent to determine the competency of an Indian to manage his own affairs. By the Treaty of June 25, 1862, Art. 1, 12 Stat. 1237, 1246 the Ottawa tribe, which was to be dissolved after 5 years, was given money to assist the members in establishing themselves in agricultural pursuits, and thus gradually increase their preparation for assuming the responsibilities and duties of citizenship. Also see Treaty of July 11, 1877, with Ottomaw and Chippewas, Art. 7, 11 Stat. 621.

<sup>9</sup> Act of March 1, 1867, 15 Stat. 349, 351 (Brothertown), Act of March 3, 1869, sec. 7, 15 Stat. 645, 647 (Stockbridge). Act of March 3, 1871, sec. 5, 41 Stat. 1249, 1250 (Ojibwa). The right of the Choctaws to be paid therefor was discussed in *Bogardus v. Hayward*, 1 Ind. T. 434 (1896) reviewed in 87 Fed. 721 (C. C. V. 1897).

<sup>10</sup> Act of March 1, 1867, sec. 7, 15 Stat. 349, 351 (Brothertown), Act of March 3, 1869, sec. 7, 15 Stat. 645, 647 (Stockbridge).

<sup>11</sup> Act of March 1, 1870, sec. 14, 16 Stat. 511, 512 discussed in *Oakes v. United States*, 172 Fed. 705 (C. C. V. 1909). Act of August 6, 1810, 6 Stat. 695 (Stockbridge).

<sup>12</sup> Dec. 10, 1816, 1816, 1816, 1816-1816. By the Act of March 1, 1870, sec. 14, 16 Stat. 511, 512 similar provision was made for the naturalization of adult members of any of the Miami Tribe of Kansas and then minor children.

and interests that he had adopted the habits of civilized life and for the preceding 5 years supported himself and his family. If satisfied with the proof the court would declare him a citizen and give him a certificate which would enable the Secretary of the Interior to issue a patent in fee with powers of alienation of the land already held by the Indian in severalty and to pay to him his share of tribal property.<sup>1</sup> Thereafter the Indian ceased to be a member of the tribe and his land was subject to levy taxation and sale the same as that of other citizens. Again the statutory formula seems to rest on the assumed incompatibility between tribal membership and United States citizenship. The same idea implicitly the Indian Territory Naturalization Act,<sup>2</sup> which provided:

"That any member of any Indian tribe or nation residing in the Indian Territory may apply to the United States court therein to become a citizen of the United States, and such court shall have jurisdiction thereof and shall hear and determine such application as provided in the statutes of the United States. . . . Provided That the Indians who become citizens of the United States under the provisions of this act do not forfeit or lose any rights or privileges they enjoy or are entitled to as members of the tribe or nation to which they belong."

(8) General statutes naturalizing allottees.—Prior to the Citizenship Act, the General Allotment Act,<sup>3</sup> generally known as the Dawes Act was the most important method of acquiring citizenship.<sup>4</sup> This law conferred citizenship upon two classes of Indians born within the limits of the United States:

- (1) An Indian to whom allotments were made in accordance with this act, or any law or treaty.
- (2) An Indian who had voluntarily taken up within said limits, residence separate and apart from any tribe

<sup>1</sup> Beginning with the Act of March 3 1907 see 1 Stat. 711, 762 the statutes granting citizenship to Indians abandoning their tribal relationships safeguarded their rights in tribal property. Act of February 8 1887 sec. 6, 24 Stat. 488; 30 Stat. 6 C. 349, amended by Act of May 8 1900 34 Stat. 182. Act of August 9 1888 sec. 2 27 Stat. 799 25 U. S. C. 182 also see *United States v. United States* 172 Fed. 308, 308-309 (C. C. S. 1909), *United States v. United States* 172 Fed. 308, 308-309 (C. C. S. 1909), *United States v. United States* 172 Fed. 308, 308-309 (C. C. S. 1909).

<sup>2</sup> Act of May 2 1906 sec. 14 34 Stat. 81 99-100. This section also grants citizenship to the Consolidated Pottawatomie Indians residing in the Quapaw Indian Agency who accept land in severalty.

<sup>3</sup> Act of February 9 1887 sec. 1 24 Stat. 388 389 amended Act of February 28 1891, 26 Stat. 794. Prior thereto allotment acts see Act of February 28 1891 sec. 1 24 Stat. 388 389 amended Act of March 3 1907 34 Stat. 1375 (Fort Belknap), Act also Chapter 12 In the Act of June 4 1894 41 Stat. 876 (Cheyenne of North Platte) providing for the allotment of land which was ceded into the Citizenship Act there was a provision in accordance with the old formula that each allottee shall become a citizen of the United States and of the state where he resides with all the privileges of citizenship sec. 10 p. 480). The Act of January 21 1929 sec. 101 45 Stat. 1094 stated that it was not the purpose of the former act to abridge or modify the Citizenship Act. Also see *Montgomery v. Simpson* 281 U. S. 941 (1914), *United States v. Bulkley* 188 U. S. 452 (1903), 42 L. D. 489 (1913), 7 Yale L. J. 281 (1898). On policy of Dawes Indian Allotment Act Act of June 29 1906 34 Stat. 539, see *Lewis and Clark v. Foreman* 241 U. S. 432 (1916) and Chapter 28 sec. 121.

<sup>4</sup> Senator Orville H. Platt of Connecticut wrote "Modern observation and thought have reached the conclusion that allotment of land in severalty and the consequent conditions of Indian progress." Problems in the Indian Territory (1895) 160 N. Am. Rev. 195 204. See also Thayer A People Without Law (1891) 68 Am. Rev. 176 680. Usually the children of tribal members who elected citizenship received a smaller allotment. The Treaty of July 4 1866 with the Delaware Indians 14 Stat. 791 798 contained an unusual provision permitting a child reaching majority to elect whether he desired to become a citizen.

The Act of June 29 1874, 18 Stat. 146, 175 appropriated money to enable the Secretary of the Interior to pay to the children of the Delaware Indians who had become citizens of the United States their share of the tribal funds.

of Indians thereon and adopted the habits of civilized life.

President Theodore Roosevelt described this important law in his message to Congress of December 3 1903 as a mighty policy, engine to break up the tribal mass whereby some sixty thousand Indians have already become citizens of the United States.<sup>5</sup>

By an amendment adopted May 5 1906, known as the Burke Act the Indian became a citizen after the patent in fee simple was granted instead of after the completion of his allotment and the issuance of a trust patent.<sup>6</sup> It has been administratively held that an Indian to whom an allotment was made subsequent to the Burke Act is a citizen upon the issuance of a patent in fee for part of his allotment,<sup>7</sup> but use the converse was also an adjudication that the Indian allottee is incompetent and capable to manage his own affairs.

The Supreme Court in the case of *United States v. Chisholm*<sup>8</sup> suggested "that Congress in granting full rights of citizenship to Indians, believed that it had been too hasty." The purpose of the Burke Act was stated by the court in the case of *United States v. Phelan*<sup>9</sup> "distinctly to postpone to the expiration of the trust period the subjection of allottees under that act to state laws."

(4) General statutes naturalizing other classes of Indians.—Indian women marrying citizens became citizens by the Act of August 9 1888,<sup>10</sup> and Indian men who enlisted to fight in the World War could become citizens under the Act of November 8 1918.<sup>11</sup>

## B. NONCITIZEN INDIANS

Until the Citizenship Act of 1924 those Indians who had not acquired citizenship by marriage to white men, by military service, by receipt of allotments, or through special treaties or special statutes, occupied a peculiar status under Federal law. Not only were they noncitizens but they were barred from the ordinary processes of naturalization open to foreigners. Such remained the status of Indians living in the United States who were born in Canada, Mexico, or other foreign lands, since the 1924 Act referred only to "Indians born within the territorial limits of the United States."<sup>12</sup>

<sup>5</sup> 19 Congressional Record 11 1 57th Cong. 1st sess. (1901) p. 80. ("Y. K. H. How Shall the Indians be Educated? (1894) 109 N. Am. Rev. 444 447. According to Wise Indian Law and Modern Times (1920) 22 A. B. A. Jour. 47 there were about 150,000 Indians holding tribal lands not yet allotted.

<sup>6</sup> 34 Stat. 182.

<sup>7</sup> This change was due largely to a misunderstanding as to the legal significance. At that time it was the belief that wardship and citizenship were incompatible. Pickens v. A. Lawyer Looks at the American Indian Past and Present (1919) 6 Indians in Jour. No. 9 pp. 24 26.

<sup>8</sup> 191 U. S. 218 291 (1903).

<sup>9</sup> 228 U. S. 442 450 (1914).

<sup>10</sup> 26 Stat. 482 25 U. S. C. 182.

<sup>11</sup> 41 Stat. 737. This statute was evolved by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. Only a few Indians acquired citizenship in this way. Annual Reports of Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1920) pp. 10-11, (1921) p. 88. Of special provision relating to honorably discharged alien veterans of foreign birth Act of July 19 1919 41 Stat. 161, 222. See *Johnson v. California*, 261 U. S. 82, 95 (1923). This restriction was eliminated by sec. 302 of the Nationality Act of October 14 1940 (Public No. 889 70th Cong.), which declares:

"The right to become a naturalized citizen under the provisions of this Act shall extend only to white persons persons of African nativity or descent, and descendants of races indigenous to the Western Hemisphere."

The naturalization laws applied only to free white persons and did not include Indians "who were regarded as domestic subjects or nationals." As members of domestic dependent nations owing allegiance to their tribe, they were analogized to children of foreign diplomats born in the United States.<sup>6</sup>

Thus noncitizen Indians were not able to secure passports, but were sometimes granted documents specifying that they were not citizens but requesting protection for them.<sup>7</sup>

Caleb Cushing, Attorney General of the United States, formulated the following theory of the status of Indians:<sup>8</sup>

The fact therefore, that Indians are born in the country does not make them citizens of the United States. The simple truth is plain that the Indians are the subjects of the United States, and therefore are not, in mere fact of home birth, citizens of the United States.

But they cannot become citizens by naturalization under existing general acts of Congress. In Kent's *Commentaries* 72.

Those acts apply only to foreigners subjects of another allegiance. The Indians are not foreigners and they are in our allegiance without being citizens of the United States. Moreover, those acts only apply to "white" men.

Indians, of course, can be made citizens of the United States only by some competent act of the General Government either a treaty or an act of Congress. (Pp. 749-750)

This theory was reiterated after the adoption of the Fourteenth Amendment, which had defined federal citizenship. At the time of its adoption, common lawyers differed on its effect on the Indians.<sup>9</sup> Those that a liberal interpretation would make Indians citizens was shattered by an early case,<sup>10</sup> holding that the amendment was merely declaratory of the common-law rule of citizenship by birth and that Indians born in tribal allegiance were not born in the United States and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, because

To be a citizen of the United States by reason of his birth a person must not only be born within its territorial limits, but he must also be born subject to its jurisdiction—that is, in its power and obedience.

But the Indian tribes within the limits of the United States have always been held to be distinct and independent political communities, retaining the right of self government, though subject to the protecting power of the United States. (170-165, 166)

This view was sustained by two leading naturalization opinions of the Supreme Court of the United States, the holding of *Hill v. Williams*<sup>11</sup> and the dictum of *United States v. Wong Kim*<sup>12</sup>

\* An Indian was not regarded as "a white person" within the naturalization laws. *In re Camille* 6 Fed 276 (C. Ct. 1860) *In re Burton*, 1 Alaska 111 (1900) 13 Ark L. 270 252 (1904). In 1870 these laws were extended to include aliens of African lineage and to persons of Indian descent. Act of July 11 1870 sec 7 to 16 51st 25th 27th.

\* 7 Op. A. G. 740 (1870)

\* Pound Nationalism Without a Nation (1922) 22 Col. L. Rev. 97 99, *Lit. v. Williams* 112 F. 5 94 102 (1884) cf. *United States v. Jim* 25 Fed. Cir. No 7048 (D. C. N. Y. 1877)

\* Thayer, *The American President* (1908) pp. 146-148. Manuscript instructions of the Department of State provided

Even if he [an Indian] has not acquired citizenship he is a ward of the Government and entitled to the consideration and assistance of our diplomats and consular officers. (P. 147)

\* 7 Op. A. G. 740 (1870)

\* To clarify the effect the Senate Indian Committee filed a report pursuant to Senate Resolution of April 7 1870, concluding, that the Indians did not attain citizenship by the Fourteenth Amendment. Sen. Rep. No 246 41st Cong. 2d sess. (1870), pp. 1-31.

\* McGeary v. Campbell, 36 Fed. Cir. No 8840 (D. C. Ore. 1873)

\* 112 U. S. 84 (1884). The Court also held that citizenship was not acquired by abandonment of tribal membership. Also see *United States*

*lik* "which excepted from its doctrine of citizenship by birth children of Indian tribes owing direct allegiance to their several tribes.

Other theories have been advanced as additional justification for this unique status of the Indians which departed from the common-law doctrine of *ius soli*.<sup>13</sup> One writer<sup>14</sup> believes that the economic interests of the land granters and Indian traders caused their opposition to citizenship for the Indians. They feared the destruction of their business with the coming of Indian suffrage, which was expected to accompany citizenship. Other writers maintained that citizenship should be denied Indians because they were strangers to our laws, customs and privileges,<sup>15</sup> because they would add to burdens imposed by naturalization of others,<sup>16</sup> and because they enjoyed special privileges, such as exemption from taxation.<sup>17</sup>

The Indian question, which had been overshadowed after the Civil War in discussion of the economic well-being, freedom and citizenship of the Negro became a live issue toward the close of the nineteenth century. Many writers rethrew the incompatibility of disfranchisement and noncitizenship of Indians in a country founded on the principle of the equality of man and agreed that the ultimate objective point to which all efforts for progress should be directed is to fit upon the Indian the same personal, legal and political status which is common to all other inhabitants.<sup>18</sup>

The Indians, however, hesitated and did not welcome federal citizenship.<sup>19</sup> They often chose to leave their homes in order to retain their tribal membership.<sup>20</sup> A report of the Bureau of Municipal Research submitted in 1915 to a Joint Commission of Congress which investigated its population, stated that "the Indian (except in rare individual cases) does not desire citizenship."<sup>21</sup>

The delegates at the Five Civilized Tribes opposed the grant of federal citizenship to their people because they feared it would terminate their tribal government.<sup>22</sup> Indians were often un-

ship upon citizenship see *Kataebner v. United States*, 225 Fed 323 (C. C. A. 7 1915)

\* 100 U. S. 649 668 (1880)

\* *Kilgus*, Principles of the Indian Law and the Act of June 18 1934 (1936) 8 Geo. Wash. L. Rev. 279 283-284

\* Abel, *The Statehoods*, Indiana (1915) vol. 1 p. 170

\* Russell, *The Indian Before the Law* (1909) 18 Ark. L. 7 42b. Canfield, *Legal Position of the Indian* (1881) 15 Ark. L. Rev. 41 47-48, 197, of *Lamberton Indian Citizenship* (1886), 20 Am. L. Rev. 184 189, *Eschsch Law for the Indians* (1882) 184 Am. L. Rev. 272, Blackmer, *Indian Education* (1892) 2 Am. Acad. Pol. & Soc. Sci. 813 838 *Leahrie v. United States*, 6 Okla. 400 31 Pac. 666 (1897)

\* *Kilgus*, Principles of the Indian Law and the Act of June 18 1934 (1936) 8 Geo. Wash. L. Rev. 279 286 *Lamberton Indian Citizenship* (1886) 20 Am. L. Rev. 188 187-189

\* *Lamberton Indian Citizenship* 20 Am. L. Rev. (1886) 188 188 For a discussion of the discrimination against Indians because of exemption from taxation see sec 10 on tax exemption generally see Chapter 11

\* *Abbot*, Indians and the Law (1885) 2 Harv. L. Rev. 167, 174. Also see *Hivins Law for the Indians* (1882) 184 Am. L. Rev. 272, Blackmer, *Indian Education* (1892) 2 Am. Acad. Pol. & Soc. Sci. 813 834 U. S. Senator J. H. Kyle contended that the Indians have a good character for citizenship. *How Sh. ill the Indians be Educated?* (1894) 169 N. A. Rev. 434 441 *United Church of L. L. Position of the Indian* (1881)

17 Am. L. Rev. 21 26-37

\* *Temp. The Indian and His Problem* (1910) p. 45. Sometimes Indians were made citizens with little Willingham, *the Constitutional Law of the United States* (1929) pp. 490-491

\* See Chapter 11 sec 428, 43

\* Administration of the Indian Office (Bureau of Municipal Research Publication no. 60) (1915), p. 17

\* Memorial relating to the Indians, Choctaw delegates, Sen. Mus. Doc. No. 7 46th Cong., 2d sess. December 10, 1877, vol. I, Memorial signed by the Indian tribes to become citizens, Sen. Misc. Doc. No. 14 46th Cong., 2d sess. January 14, 1877 vol. I. The Five Civilized Tribes were excluded from the General Allotment Act of February 8 1887,

familiar with the significance of federal citizenship and some times resented choosing it.<sup>11</sup>

### C EFFECT OF CITIZENSHIP

Many people who know that Indians are citizens are unaware of the legal consequences of citizenship.<sup>12</sup> The main common errors in this field may be disposed of briefly.

1. By virtue of the Fourteenth Amendment to the Federal Constitution Indians are citizens of the United States, automatically as citizens of the state of their residence.<sup>13</sup>

2. Except when a special statute or treaty has provided otherwise, citizenship does not impair the force of tribal law<sup>14</sup> or affect tribal existence.<sup>15</sup> Statutes affecting the managing Indians often expressly permit those who become citizens to retain their tribal rights. Citizenship and tribal membership are not incompatible.<sup>16</sup>

3. Citizenship, though it is today usually a prerequisite of suffrage, does not confer the right.<sup>17</sup> Before securing the franchise, a voter must comply with the requirements of the state law, which regularly include attainment of the age of majority and residence in the state for a specified period and sometimes include payment of poll tax, literacy, or other special requirements.<sup>18</sup>

4. Citizenship is not incompatible with federal powers of guardianship.<sup>19</sup>

<sup>11</sup> This is shown by Art. 13 of the Treaty of February 23, 1867, with the Seminoles and others, 15 Stat. 513-516, which provides that a member who changes his mind after becoming a citizen shall not be allowed to return to the tribe unless the agent shall signify that he is, through poverty or incapacity, unable to continue in the exercise of the responsibilities of citizenship of the United States and likely to become a public charge.

<sup>12</sup> Op. Sol. I. D. M. 28999 February 16, 1907, p. 5. When the Citizen Ship Act was passed in 1924 many law officials in New Mexico thought that all Indians were subject to taxation. *Goodly v. The Legal Statute of the (Arizona Indian) (1928)*, 14 Calif. L. Rev. 93, 157, 180-183. On taxation of Indians see Chapter 18.

<sup>13</sup> *Deery v. State of New York*, 22 F. 2d 851, 882 (D. C. N. D. N. Y. 1927). Also see *Parker v. Hall*, 15 Amr. 808 271 Pac. 411 (1929).

<sup>14</sup> *Johnson v. Township*, 191 Fed. 916 (C. C. Ore. 1910). Also see Chapter 17.

<sup>15</sup> See *Cherokee Nation v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 291, 408 (1902); *United States v. Cherokee*, 215 U. S. 278, 288-289 (1909); *Hallowell v. United States*, 221 U. S. 817, 824 (1911); *Thur v. Western Investment Co.*, 223 U. S. 280 (1911); *United States v. Bandoway*, 231 U. S. 28, 38 (1913); *United States v. Noble*, 287 U. S. 74 (1917); *Williams v. Johnson*, 290 U. S. 414 (1935); *United States v. Rice*, 243 U. S. 679 (1916); *Winton v. Ames*, 285 U. S. 874 (1921). Also see *Knapp's Legal Status of American Indian and His Property* (1922), 7 Ia. L. Rev. 240-261 and Chapter 14, see J.

<sup>16</sup> Act of May 2, 1890, sec. 43, 26 Stat. 81, 90 provides for the maintenance of the Indian tribes in the Indian Territory and states that Indians who become citizens retain their rights as tribal members.

<sup>17</sup> *United States v. Rice*, 243 U. S. 691 (1916); *Hallowell v. United States*, 221 U. S. 785, 792-793 (1911); *rev'd*, *United States v. Hallowell*, 98 F. 2d 795 (C. C. 9, 1900) *aff'd*, 282 U. S. 818, *United States v. Bowley*, 285 Fed. 168, 171 (C. C. 2, 1920), *aff'd*, 258 Fed. 468 (D. C. N. D. N. Y. 1919) *app'd*, 287 U. S. 614 (1921), *Forrell v. United States*, 110 Fed. 942 (C. C. 8, 1901).

<sup>18</sup> See sec. 2 *infra*. Also see Act of June 29, 1900, 19 Stat. 787, 8 U. S. C. An. (Cherokee Indians resident in North Carolina).

<sup>19</sup> *United States v. Johnson*, 188 U. S. 432, 445 (1908), 8 Op. A. G. 406 (1897). In some states citizenship is the only qualification. *Chief Const. (Oregon)*, Art. II, sec. 1, "Every native citizen of the United States . . . shall be entitled to vote at all elections . . ."

<sup>20</sup> The contrary opinion of the United States Supreme Court in *Mar. ter of Hoff*, 197 U. S. 488 (1905) holding that Congress could not regu-

The United States Supreme Court has said:

It is thoroughly established that Congress has plenary authority over the Indians and all their tribal relations, and full power to legislate concerning their tribal property. The citizenship arises from their condition of tribal dependence, and it rests with Congress to determine when the citizenship shall cease, the mere attainment of rights of citizenship not being sufficient to terminate it. (17p. 481-492.)

Citizenship does not affect the rights of the United States Government over the Indian. It retains jurisdiction over a citizen Indian for offenses committed within the reservation.<sup>21</sup> Citizenship does not impair the government's right to sue on behalf of a citizen allottee to protect his restricted lands,<sup>22</sup> nor affect its power to prevent sale, taxation of his property while he is living on the reservation,<sup>23</sup> or to exercise control over tribal property,<sup>24</sup> or to exclude bill collections from coming on the reservation on days when payments are made to the Indians,<sup>25</sup> or to exempt unrestricted property from levy, sale, or forfeiture.<sup>26</sup> Many rights, such as the right to sue or contract, are not derived from or dependent on citizenship.<sup>27</sup>

It has been held that the citizenship of the Pueblos and many of the Alaskan Indians did not terminate their subjection to federal jurisdiction.<sup>28</sup> The continuing of citizenship does not

lose the sole of liquor to Indians who were citizens was expressly so ruled by *United States v. Rice*, 231 U. S. 702, 709 (1913) which held:

"Citizenship is not incompatible with tribal existence or continued citizenship, and so is not considered without capacity to exercise the rights of citizenship. The Indians on paying their taxes beyond the reach of congressional regulations adopted for their protection."

*Ridgely Indian Land*, 179 Fed. 42 (1913) though recommending that citizenship does not remove the restrictions on allotments pp. 11, 46, does not share this view pp. 1-31.

See Op. Sol. I. D. M. 28901 February 15, 1907, p. 7, 20, 21, 237, 199 (1897), 21 L. D. 4-9 (1902), and 95 I. D. 34, 29 (1911). In *Williams v. Johnson*, 290 U. S. 414 (1935), the Supreme Court, in *United States v. Hoffman*, 265 Fed. 165 (C. C. 2, 1920) and 276 Fed. 165 (D. C. N. D. N. Y. 1919) *app'd*, 277 U. S. 634 (1921) said:

" . . . even a grant of citizenship does not terminate the reservation subject of the Indian from the guardianship of the government." (p. 171.)

*United States v. Johnson*, 231 U. S. 92 (1913) and 231 U. S. 847 (1913) and *United States v. Noble*, 287 U. S. 74, 79 (1917), *Hallowell v. United States*, 221 U. S. 817 (1911). Also see *Williams v. Johnson*, 290 U. S. 414 (1935); *United States v. Bandoway*, 231 U. S. 28, 49 (1913), *rev'd*, 198 Fed. 999 (D. C. N. M. 1922); *Purcell v. United States*, 130 Fed. 942 (C. C. 8, 1901); *Boyd v. United States*, 108 U. S. 161, 41 Pac. 98 (1896). The first sentence of the Citizenship Act clearly shows the congressional intention to continue federal jurisdiction despite the conferring of citizenship. *United States v. Hoffman*, 265 Fed. 165 (C. C. 2, 1920) p. 17 estimates the dual citizenship of citizenship and tribal membership.

<sup>21</sup> *Winton v. Ames*, 285 U. S. 874 (1921).

<sup>22</sup> Chapter 14. Also see *United States v. Johnson*, 231 U. S. 275 (1911); *Boyd v. United States*, 130 U. S. 244 (1901); *Boyd v. United States*, 130 U. S. 244 (1901); *United States v. Bowley*, 285 Fed. 168, 171 (C. C. 2, 1920); *United States v. Johnson*, 231 U. S. 275 (1911); *United States v. Johnson*, 231 U. S. 275 (1911); *United States v. Johnson*, 231 U. S. 275 (1911).

<sup>23</sup> See Chapter 15, see J.

<sup>24</sup> *Cherokee Nation v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 294, 309 (1902).

<sup>25</sup> *Boyd v. Young*, 101 Fed. 985 (C. C. 8, 1900) *rev'd*, 174 Fed. 489.

<sup>26</sup> The Congressional intent must be clear. *Goodly v. Meeker*, 201 U. S. 146 (1906).

<sup>27</sup> See sec. 6, 7. Examples in this rule are cases in the federal courts dependent upon diversity of citizenship.

<sup>28</sup> For discussion of the status of Pueblos of New Mexico, see Chapter 20, and of the Alaskan Indians, see Chapter 21.

necessarily end the right or duty of the United States to protect them and their interest as a dependent people."<sup>10</sup>

3 Citizenship is not inconsistent with restrictions on property and does not confer on incompetent persons, like minors, the right to control or dispose of their property.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>10</sup> *Hall v. United States*, 221 U. S. 517, 524 (1911). Even though the members of the Choctaw Nation were citizens of the United States and of the State of Mississippi Congress in a series of acts from 1891 to 1909 cited in *Hall*, then, The *United States of Indian Suffrage*, in the United States (1914) 19 (4d) L. Rev. 567-575 in "I second them from dissolution removed them to the Indian Territory and equipped them with tools and land to 181 in 18 months."

<sup>11</sup> The Supreme Court in *Pope v. Western Federation of Miners*, 221 U. S. 296 (1911) said:

"The child is not a member of a Federal citizen body and has never been held to possess constitutional authority from placing such restrictions upon the control of property as citizens, as he is necessary for the welfare of the community (citizens), though citizens may not have the right to control their persons and property. The privileges and immunities of citizenship were said in the *Slaughterhouse Cases* (16 Wall. 36) to be conferred

Although prior to the Citizenship Act.<sup>12</sup> Indian citizenship was often associated with the possession of unrestricted property, there is no intrinsic relation between the two. It does not detract from the dignity of citizenship when a person possessed of an estate is deprived of the right of alienation.<sup>13</sup>

Protection by the Government with the right to acquire and possess property of every kind and to pursue and enjoy his happiness and safety subject only to the laws in such respect made as the Government may prescribe for the general good of the whole. (Pp. 375-376.)

Also see *Bradley v. James*, 246 U. S. 88 (1918); *United States v. Neal*, 241 U. S. 504 (1916); *United States v. Lozon*, 107 Fed. 240 (C. C. Okla. 1902); *United States v. Goodrich*, 811 U. S. 28 (1911); *see* *supra* 149 (1) C. N. M. 1912; *Brick v. Flanagan Live Stock and Real Estate Co.*, 15 Fed. 30 (C. C. A. 8 1894) app. dism. 163 U. S. 686; *Conte v. Territory of New Mexico v. Delanoque*, 229 U. S. 12 N. 139 (1904).

<sup>12</sup> Act of June 2, 1924, 43 Stat. 258, 8 U. S. C. § 4.  
<sup>13</sup> *Williams v. Blevins*, 16 Okla. 104, 82 P. 886 (1905); *Mechem Problem of Indian Administration* (1929) p. 793.

### SECTION 3 SUFFRAGE

In a democracy suffrage is the most basic civil right, since its exercise is the chief means whereby other rights may be safeguarded.<sup>14</sup> The enfranchisement of the Indians has been a slow and is still in incomplete process. In most states Indians meeting the ordinary suffrage requirements can and do vote. In some of the sparsely settled western states where they form a large proportion of the population their vote is considerably important in close primaries and elections.<sup>15</sup> While it has not yet been reached that non-qualified citizens could control the vote of the community, many Indians are becoming civic leaders in one of their political power and responsibility and are directing considerable attention to matters directly affecting them such as tribal claims and water rights.<sup>16</sup>

#### A INDIAN DISENFRANCHISEMENT

The term "Indians not taxed" has been frequently used in statutes excluding Indians from voting. It appears in one of the two places in the original Constitution relating specifically to the Indians, viz. Article I, section 2, which declares that Indians not taxed shall not be counted as "free persons" in determining the representations of any state in Congress or in computing direct taxes to be levied by the United States. This phrase is used in the Act of March 1, 1790 providing for the first census,<sup>17</sup> reappears in section 2 of the Fifteenth Amendment and the Civil Rights Act of April 9, 1866,<sup>18</sup> declaring who shall be federal citizens, and was used to exclude Indians in the appointment of representatives to a territorial or state legislature,<sup>19</sup> or constitutional convention, or from participation in a referendum to determine whether the inhabitants of a territory desired statehood.<sup>20</sup>

<sup>14</sup> See *Phryer v. People Without Law* (1891), 68 At. Month 840, pp. 570, 612-616.

<sup>15</sup> Where there is a substantial element of the population, candidates for state office have found it worth while to hold irregular and halcyon Democratic Republic in and Progressive on the reservations. (Hendrix *The Tribal Status of the California Indians* (1926) 14 Calif. L. Rev. 5, 177-179.)

<sup>16</sup> *Tupac The Indian and His Problem* (1910), pp. 85, 64, also see pp. 378, 380.

<sup>17</sup> *Mechem Problem of Indian Administration* (1928) pp. 705-707. 13 Stat. 101. Also in subsequent census statutes. See Act of June 18 1920 sec. 22 16 Stat. 21-25.

<sup>18</sup> See 1, 11 Stat. 27.

<sup>19</sup> Act of June 19 1878 20 Stat. 178, 193, Act of March 4, 1897, sec. 22 34 Stat. 635, 636, Act of March 1, 1891 26 Stat. 709, 730. Act of July 16 1894 28 Stat. 107. For other forms of exclusion see Act of March 1, 1849 sec. 4 9 Stat. 101, 404, Act of September 9, 1850, 9 Stat. 410, Act of June 9, 1880, sec. 5 21 Stat. 174.

<sup>20</sup> Act of May 4, 1878, sec. 5, 11 Stat. 209, 271, Act of June 19, 1878, 20 Stat. 178, 193.

Nations state and federal laws enacted from the beginning of the nineteenth century to the early part of the twentieth decade included "Indians not taxed," or limited voters to white citizens.<sup>21</sup>

Though permitted to vote in their former country, Mexico, the California Indians were disenfranchised by the constitutional convention which established a government for the State of California.<sup>22</sup> In order to leave a loophole for compliance with the spirit of the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo the new constitution restricted the legislatures, by a two-thirds concurrent vote, to limit to the right of suffrage "Indians, of the descendant of Indians, in such special cases as such a proportion of the legislative body may deem most proper." As was expected, the first legislature restricted the vote to white citizens.<sup>23</sup>

Some state constitutions and statutes still reflect early legal theory that "Indians not taxed," being generally identified as persons born subject to the jurisdiction of the tribe or which they are members, were not citizens of the United States. The limited cases of such racial discrimination are found in the constitutions of the States of Idaho,<sup>24</sup> New Mexico,<sup>25</sup> and Wash-

<sup>21</sup> See *United States v. Kagame*, 118 U. S. 475, 478 (1886); *Flk v. McGee*, 112 U. S. 94, 99 (1884); Act of June 18 1900 sec. 25 31 Stat. 257, 289. New Mexico still excludes Indians on this ground. This state was admitted to statehood under a special compact with the United States exempting Indian lands from taxation, and with a constitution excluding "Indians not taxed" from the electorate. New Mexico Constitution, Art. XII, sec. 1.

<sup>22</sup> Act of October 25 1914, 3 Stat. 141, Act of March 4, 1850 sec. 4, 1 Stat. 165, 400, Act of April 20, 1850 sec. 5 5 Stat. 30, 12 U. S. C. 2242, 2243, sec. 5, 12 Stat. 207, 211, Act of May 4, 1867, sec. 2 24 Stat. 635, 687. By the Act of February 28, 1891 sec. 5, 12 Stat. 172, 173, whites and citizens recognized by Treaty with Mexico were eligible to vote and hold office.

<sup>23</sup> Goodrich, *The Legal Status of the California Indian* (1920), 14 Calif. L. Rev. 58-59.

<sup>24</sup> *Supra*, February 12, 1948, ratification exchanged May 12, 1848, Treaty proclaimed July 4, 1848 9 Stat. 922, discussed in Chapter 29, *supra*.

<sup>25</sup> See *United States v. Zoloth*, 17 How. 525 (1854).

<sup>26</sup> Goodrich, *op. cit.*, p. 91.

<sup>27</sup> *Id.*  
<sup>28</sup> Idaho Constitution Art. 8 sec. 4. This restriction is applicable to "Indians not taxed," who have not severed their tribal relations and adopted the habits of civilization.

<sup>29</sup> Art. 7 Of Act of June 30, 1910, sec. 2 40 Stat. 577 providing that the Constitution of New Mexico shall make no distinction in civil or political rights on account of race or color and shall not be interpreted to the "Constitution of the United States and the Declaration of Independence. Also Provision Fifth providing that the State shall not restrict the right of suffrage on account of race, color, or previous condition of servitude.





States who are entitled to vote under the Federal Constitution, doing similarly with the right to hold office.<sup>100</sup> There are also many general civil rights laws which are applicable to the disenfranchisement of Indians because of their race. In 1906 the Enabling Act for the State of Oklahoma expressly permitted

<sup>100</sup> Act of February 26 1870 16 Stat. 62-63. Act of February 23 1870 16 Stat. 67. Act of March 30 1870 16 Stat. 90.

members of an Indian nation or tribe in the Indian Territory in Oklahoma to vote by delegates<sup>101</sup> and prohibited any law restricting the right of suffrage because of race or color.<sup>102</sup>

<sup>101</sup> Act of June 16 1906 sec. 2 34 Stat. 267-268. Also see Act of June 20 1906 sec. 2 and 34 Stat. 577-579 580 (R. 34).

<sup>102</sup> Act of June 16 1906 sec. 2 and 34 Stat. 267. Cf. sec. 25 p. 279 applying to New Mexico and prohibiting discrimination against Indians not taxed.

## SECTION 4 ELIGIBILITY FOR PUBLIC OFFICE AND EMPLOYMENT

### A PUBLIC OFFICE

The fact that one is an Indian is not, generally speaking, a disqualification for public office. Exclusionary statutes based on race are probably unconstitutional.<sup>103</sup> General Parker, a Senator of Indian, was qualified, according to an opinion of the Attorney General of the United States, to hold the office of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs.<sup>104</sup>

Many civil statutes disqualified noncitizen Indians from holding public offices by limiting nominations to citizens of the United States<sup>105</sup> or to whites.<sup>106</sup> After the Civil War the acts admitting the Confederate states to the Union prohibited the exclusion of elected officials because of race, color, or previous condition of servitude.<sup>107</sup> These acts were implemented by the Act of April 20 1871.<sup>108</sup> A number of Indians were elected as delegates to the Constitutional Convention of the Territory of Oklahoma.<sup>109</sup> Nevertheless, even now a few states still bar Indians from public office, by provisions which are probably unconstitutional. Idaho<sup>110</sup> prohibits from holding any civil office Indians not taxed who have not severed their tribal relations and adopted the habits of civilization. The law of South Dakota<sup>111</sup> excludes Indians while maintaining tribal relations.<sup>112</sup>

### B PREFERENCE IN INDIAN AND OTHER GOVERNMENTAL SERVICE

(1) *Extent of employment*—Congress has frequently manifested its intention to grant preferences to Indians in certain positions. Unfortunately, many such preferential statutes have become "dead letters," or been only partially fulfilled.<sup>113</sup> Officials have sometimes justified their failures in this respect by maintaining the impossibility of securing competent Indians, especially for the more important positions.<sup>114</sup> Some critics have

<sup>103</sup> See *Union v. Haydon* 271 U. S. 236 (1927).

<sup>104</sup> 13 Op. & G. 27 (1869). A later opinion held that an Indian while a member of a tribe and subject to tribal jurisdiction and residing in the Indian Territory was not competent to take the official oath as postmaster. The basis for this ruling was that the government could not enforce the required bond because the Indian would be immune to suit. 13 Op. & G. 181 (1869).

<sup>105</sup> Act of September 9 1850 sec. 6 9 Stat. 446-449, Act of May 30 1861 sec. 7 10 Stat. 277-279, Act of August 28 1870 sec. 21 11 Stat. 52-60 provided that noncitizens holding office in the Department of State shall not be paid.

<sup>106</sup> Act of August 14 1848 sec. 5, 9 Stat. 823, 326, Act of March 3 1849 sec. 5, 9 Stat. 403, 406, Act of March 2 1863, sec. 7 10 Stat. 172-174, Act of December 22 1866, sec. 6 16 Stat. 89.

<sup>107</sup> Act of March 30 1870 16 Stat. 90-91, admitting Texas to the Union.

<sup>108</sup> Act of April 20 1871 sec. 2 17 Stat. 85.

<sup>109</sup> Leupp, *The Indian and His Problem* (1910) pp. 941-942.

<sup>110</sup> Constitution of Idaho Art. 6 sec. 3.

<sup>111</sup> Compiled Laws of S. D. c. 82 (1920).

<sup>112</sup> See 3(b) *infra*.

<sup>113</sup> \* \* \* the policy of all administrative since Commissioner Marmion took office has been to give educated Indians every practicable chance to vote their people but \* \* \* the experiment of putting them into the places of highest responsibility has except in rare instances not worked so successfully. \* \* \* Leupp, *The Indian and*

his Problem (1910) p. 110. Also see Schuchhaber, *The Office of Indian Affairs: Its History Activities and Organization* (1927) pp. 296-298, and 7 Indians at Work (September 1939) No. 2 p. 12.

<sup>114</sup> Leupp, *The Indian and His Problem* (1910) pp. 94-99. <sup>115</sup> Administration of the Indian Office (Bureau of Municipal Research Publication No. 63) (1917) pp. 24-25. <sup>116</sup> Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1937) pp. 243-245. In 1930 there were about 200 Indians in the Office of Indian Affairs. Leupp, *The Indian and His Problem* (1910) p. 99.

<sup>117</sup> The Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior for 1918 states: On July 1 1917 there were authorized in the Indian field service and Alaska 9 945 permanent overseas positions. On April 30 1918 there were 7016 Indians employed in the Indian service of whom 1627 were in Indian reservation positions (approximately one half of the regular employees of the Indian service are Indians. Slightly more than 40 percent of the Indians employed are full bloods. (P. XIV). Slightly more than 70 percent of the Indians employed were of one half or more degree Indian blood. (Ibid. p. 277.) The personnel records do not classify as Indians those with a smaller amount of Indian blood than one-fourth.

Between July 1 1914, and May 1 1917 the number of Indians in the Washington office increased from 12 to 84. 4 Indians at Work No. 20 (June 1 1937) p. 30. According to data submitted by the Indian Office on November 7 1939 100 of the 884 employees of the Washington office were Indians.

<sup>118</sup> Administration of the Indian Office (Bureau of Municipal Research Publication No. 63) (1917) p. 24.

<sup>119</sup> Also see some aspects of the personnel problem of the Indian Service in the United States in Indians of the United States: Contributions by the delegation of the United States First Inter-American Conference on Indian Labor, Palestrina, Mexico published by Office of Indian Affairs (April 1940) pp. 61-64. Also see subsection 4(b) *infra*.

<sup>120</sup> There have been numerous Executive orders affecting the employment of Indians: e. g. Executive orders of August 14 1928, July 2 1930, April 14 1934, July 26 1936.

of Indian Affairs on February 1, 1889 who met certain requirements were given a classified civil service status.

(c) *Treaties and statutes.*—With a few exceptions throughout the history of the United States Indians have generally been granted preference in the actual hiring of employees for public positions in the Indian Service which require little or no skill in which like the post of interpreter can be filled only by them or by the Agency without income of their personal qualifications<sup>11</sup> or in "laboring positions". These positions which were often created by appropriation acts, usually paid low wages,<sup>12</sup> and were sometimes supported by tribal funds.<sup>13</sup> Similarly today most Indians in the Government Service are employed in class of stenographic or laboring work though a few hold supervisory positions.<sup>14</sup>

(d) *Treaties.*—Tribes occasionally provided for preference in employment of Indians.<sup>15</sup> The Treaty of April 28, 1866<sup>16</sup> between the United States and the Choctaw and Chickasaw Nations contains an interesting provision:

And the United States agree that in the appointment of marshals and deputies, preference shall be given to Indians being

capable shall be given to competent members of the said nations the object being to create a fundable ambition to acquire the experience necessary for public offices of importance in the respective nations.

(1) *General Statutes.*—The Act of June 30, 1884, the first important employment statute for Indians, gave them preference for positions as "interpreters or other persons employed for the benefit of the Indians" if properly qualified for the execution of the duties.<sup>17</sup> Section 5 of the Act of March 3, 1875<sup>18</sup> provided that where Indians can perform the duties they shall be employed<sup>19</sup> in Indian agencies. Again in the Act of March 3, 1883<sup>20</sup> Congress manifested its desire to increase the employment of Indians in the Indian Service, by providing that "preference shall at all times, as far as practicable be given to Indians in the employment of clerical, mechanical, and other labor on reservations and about agencies."

A broader provision, which also includes positions outside the Indian Bureau, appears in the General Allotment Act.<sup>21</sup> Offered is an additional inducement to the abandonment of tribal relations it provides:

And hereafter in the employment of Indian police or any other employees in the public service among any of the Indian tribes or bands affected by this act and where Indians can perform the duties required of those Indians who have become citizens of the United States shall be preferred.

Seven years later a law provided for preference for "herders, teamsters, and laborers," and where practicable in all other employments in connection with the agencies and the Indian Service.<sup>22</sup>

Section 12 of the Wheeler Howard Act<sup>23</sup> the sixth major attempt in the space of a century, to give preference to Indians in the Indian Service, provides:

The Secretary of the Interior is directed to establish standards of health, age, character, experience, knowledge, and ability for Indians who may be appointed, without regard to civil service laws, in the various positions established, now or hereafter, by the Indian Office, in the administration of functions or services affecting the Indian title. Such qualified Indians shall hereafter have the preference to appointments to vacancies in any such positions.

This provision contemplates the establishment within the Interior Department of a special civil service for Indians alone. The failure of the Interior Department to complete such a system has been ascribed to lack of adequate appropriations.<sup>24</sup>

#### (1) Statutes of limited application —

(a) *Construction work on reservation.*—Agreements with Indian tribes<sup>25</sup> or statutes appropriating money for the con-

<sup>11</sup> For a discussion of the policy of preference, Indians in employment in the Indian Service see Meritt and Associates, *Indian of Indian Administration* (1928), pp. 176-179.

<sup>12</sup> Act of April 27, 1904, 33 Stat. 52, 71 (Crows); "with no income continued shall be considered to prevent the employment of such employees in other skilled employments or to prevent the employment of white labor where it is found feasible for the time to perform the same." Also see Act of June 7, 1924, c. 18, 43 Stat. 1616 (Navajo); Act of March 1, 1926, 43 Stat. 1,355 (Comanche); Act of April 19, 1926, 43 Stat. 41, (Chippewas); Act of July 1926, 43 Stat. 888 (Chippewas); Act of May 12, 1928, c. 51, 45 Stat. 701 (Zuni); Act of May 27, 1910, c. 41, 36 Stat. 140 (Wind River); only Indian labor shall be employed except for engineering and supervision as amended by Act of April 22, 1902, c. 12, 32 Stat. 88.

<sup>13</sup> See § 9 of the Act of June 30, 1881, 13 Stat. 717 provides that the pay of an agency interpreter shall be \$400 annually (commissaries' salaries regarding the pay of interpreters are discussed in *United States v. Atchafalaya*, 209 U.S. 5, 146 (1908)) while the Act of February 23, 1891, 26 Stat. 751-754 provides for the employment of Indian scouts and guides without pay. In one of the treaties relating to the peace-making of Indians the Treaty of September 27, 1850 with the Choctaw Act 21, 7 Stat. 333, 48 Indian persons of 25 or over were granted to a few annuities, Choctaw Warriors not exceeding 20, who might not remain in the service with their families. This provision was made for one of the few comparatively high-valued Indians in the Treaty of August 7, 1790 unpublished treaty. Art. Archives No. 17 which appears. McGilchrist, Chief of the Creek Nation is agent of the United States in and in relation with the Creek Indians, general and the annual salary of \$1,200. Treaty of January 21, 1795 with the Winnebago, Delaware, Chippewa and Ottawa Nations 7 Stat. 16. Separate article following Art. 10 which provides that two following chiefs, who took up the battle for the United States is lieutenant colonel and captain shall be considered to rank in the Delaware Nation as before the Revolution. Will. Also see Treaty of September 27, 1850, Art. 17, 7 Stat. 334-335-336 providing that one chief of the Choctaw Nation when on military service shall receive the pay of a lieutenant colonel and other chiefs the pay of majors and captains in the United States Army.

<sup>14</sup> See Act of April 27, 1904, 33 Stat. 52, 73 (Crows), Act of March 1, 1907, Art. 13, 34 Stat. 1017 (Shoshones), Act of June 7, 1924, c. 43, 43 Stat. 136 (Quinnah), Act of April 19, 1926, c. 105, 44 Stat. 307 (Port Peck and Jackknife); Act of July 3, 1920, 44 Stat. 888 (Chippewas).

<sup>15</sup> Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior (1917), p. 211.

<sup>16</sup> Article 11 of the Treaty of March 11, 1866 with the Chippewas 36 Stat. 1239, 1241 "wherever the services of Indians are required upon the reservation preference shall be given to full or mixed bloods, if they shall be found competent to perform them." Also see Treaty of May 7, 1866 with the Chippewas, Art. 11, 35 Stat. 693. Article 13 of the Treaty of October 21, 1867 with the Chippewas, a farmer, blacksmith miller and other employees herein provided for qualified Indians being equal shall give the preference to Indians."

<sup>17</sup> Act 8, of 12, 14 Stat. 768.

<sup>18</sup> Act of June 30, 1884, c. 9, 4 Stat. 717, 737.

<sup>19</sup> 19 Stat. 402, 440.

<sup>20</sup> See c. 62 Stat. 432, 471.

<sup>21</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, c. 3, 24 Stat. 388, 69 Stat. The Act of February 14, 1921, 42 Stat. 1246 (Harris) extended the provisions of this act as amended to lands purchased for Indians.

<sup>22</sup> Act of August 15, 1891, sec. 10, 25 Stat. 286, 311, 27, 31, c. 44. Also see Act of May 17, 1882, 22 Stat. 68, 88, Act of July 1, 1883, 2 Stat. 70, 97.

<sup>23</sup> June 15, 1910, c. 32, 36 Stat. 984, 986, 251, c. 472.

<sup>24</sup> See Indians at Work No. 1, pp. 41-42 (1980) and 7 No. 7 p. 2 (1940).

<sup>25</sup> Act of June 10, 1886, Art. 5, 29 Stat. 321, 377. "It is agreed that in the employment of all agency and school employees preference in all cases be given to Indians willing on the reservation who are well qualified for such positions." Also see Act of April 27, 1904, Art. 2, 34 Stat. 52, 53, 4 (Crows). Act of March 7, 1905, Art. 1, 34 Stat. 1016, 1017 (Shoshones).



mations and Indian boys in farms and industrial facilities in all Indian schools when it is practicable to do so.<sup>117</sup>

Sections 1 and 9 of the Act of June 28, 1947<sup>118</sup> which establish a permanent Civilian Conservation Corps provide that

"1570 Stat. 919, 920. The original law Act of March 4, 1934, c. 17, 48 Stat. 22 did not contain such a provision.

## SECTION 5. ELIGIBILITY FOR STATE ASSISTANCE<sup>119</sup>

Some state administrators are unaware that Indians maintaining tribal relations on living on reservations are citizens<sup>120</sup> or mistakenly assume that they are supported by the Federal Government,<sup>121</sup> and deny them relief. This discrimination in itself and has made more acute the economic distress of many Indians who are poor and live below any reasonable standard of health and decency.<sup>122</sup>

It has been administratively held that Indians are entitled to share in the aids and services provided by state laws, subdivided by federal grants-in-aid under the Social Security Act<sup>123</sup> or direct or work relief statutes.<sup>124</sup>

<sup>119</sup> For a discussion of their right to federal assistance see Chapter 12, sec. 4, on right to income, clothing, etc., under the law, see Chapter 15, sec. 12, on a discussion of status, see Schmeckebier, *The Office of Indian Affairs Its History Activities and Organization* (1927), pp. 66-70, for a discussion of support of Indians see pp. 262-270.

Often it is provided that the United States would give to Indians title provisions and clothing. See Chapter 1, sec. 4(c)(1). This was generally a partial consideration for the cession of land by the Indians and sometimes a recognition of a moral obligation to grant them. Some times Congress provided food and clothing in lieu of annuities. For an example of a statute providing subsistence to Indians see Act of April 27, 1902, 32 Stat. 377 (Cheyenne and Arapaho). On regulations regarding the operations of the Indian Division of the Civilian Conservation Corps see C. P. R. 181-18-21.

<sup>120</sup> Op. 54, I. D. 28980, February 18, 1937, p. 5.

<sup>121</sup> See Chapter 12, sec. 4.

<sup>122</sup> Annual Report of Secretary of Interior (1928) p. 237. In an example of the typical Indian family as low and the earned income extremely low. Melem, *Problem of Indian Administration* (1928), p. 4, for a discussion of the general economic condition of the Indian see pp. 4-8 and pp. 450-454, on health conditions, pp. 180-185, also see Schmeckebier, *op. cit.* pp. 277-278.

<sup>123</sup> Memo. Sol. I. D. April 22, 1938. Act of August 13, 1945, 49 Stat. 612, 650, amended August 10, 1949, Public Law 479, 76th Cong. 1st sess. See Chapter 12, sec. 5.

<sup>124</sup> Act of May 12, 1944, 48 Stat. 17. Revolution of April 6, 1947, 49 Stat. 115, Letters of July 17, 1934 and November 1, 1934, of the

camps may be established for a maximum of 10,000 Indian enrollees, who need not be unemployed or in need of employment and who may be exempted from the requirement that part of the wages shall be paid to dependents.<sup>125</sup>

<sup>125</sup> See 70 Stat. 187. The regulations relating to operations of Indian Division of C. P. R. c. 25, C. P. R. 19-1-18-20.

The Solicitor for the Department of the Interior in a memo undated April 22, 1936, holding that the Social Security Act was applicable to Indians, stated:

" \* \* \* An Indian valid votes or is entitled to vote *United States v. Denver County Supra, Anderson v. Mathews*, 174 Cal. 387, 108 Pac. 902, *Smith v. Leach*, 45 N. D. 137, 178 N. W. 457. His children are entitled to attend public schools even though a Federal Indian school is available. *Ladnick v. Helin supra, United States v. Denver County Supra, Piper v. Big Pine School Dist.* 189 Cal. 664, 226 Pac. 926. He may own and be taxed in State courts. In *re Celestine* 114 Fed. 551 (D. Wash. 1902), *Smith v. Leach, supra, Beaton v. Indian* 61 Okla. 138, 100 Pac. 724. His ordinary contracts and engagements are subject to State law, *Long Moccie and Caffie Co. v. Rows*, 14 P. (2) 195 (Cal. 1934), and his personal estate is subject to State law except upon reserved land. *State v. Morris* 136 Wis. 972, 117 N. W. 1060. He must pay State taxes on all non-trust property which he may own and all fees and taxes for the enjoyment of State privileges, such as driving on State highways, and all taxes, such as sales taxes which reach the entire population. Where the taxes paid by the Indians are insufficient to provide necessary support for State schools, hospitals, and other institutions caring for Indians, the Federal Government often pays for such services with trust or tribal funds or with its own appropriations. (See e. g. act of April 16, 1934, 48 Stat. 606). 17 De. actions of the Commissioner of the Treasury 678. And Indians were also consistently receiving care in State institutions either without charge or with payment from their unvested resources. Furthermore, the United States has not provided any old-age pension system for the Indians nor has it made any general provision for the types of services which it is assisting the States to render under the Security Act. (Pp. 5-6.)

Federal Relief Administration to State Burial and Aid Administration

## SECTION 6 RIGHT TO SUE

Even before attaining citizenship, Indians had the capacity to sue and be sued in state and federal courts.<sup>126</sup> Though some

writers<sup>127</sup> have sought to deny the right of reservation Indians to sue,<sup>128</sup> this view is rejected by the weight of authority.<sup>129</sup>

<sup>126</sup> Ray A. Brown, *The Indian Problem & the Law* (1940) 49 Yale L. J. 416. In *Helin v. Patrick* 145 Ill. S. 417, 432 (1894), the court held that there was no doubt that before he became a citizen the Indian was capable of suing in the state courts which were open to all persons irrespective of race or color, and that upon becoming a citizen he could also sue in the federal courts. See also *Helin v. Patrick*, 118 U. S. 376, 387 (1886) and holding that aliens had access to the courts for the protection of their person and property and a redress of their wrongs. Accord *Heere v. St. Lawrence River Power Co.*, 82 F. 2d 950 (C. C. A. 2, 1929). *Heere v. Pacific Power Co. v. Collins* 81 Tex. 482, 17 S. W. 19 (1891), disapproved in 15 L. R. A. 842 (1901). *Johnson v. Pueblo County* 8 S. O. 2, 2 Alvaiz 224, 229 (1904). *Krolok v. Ulum* 4 Okla. 5 (1885). *Canfield Legal Position of the Indian* (1881), 10 Am. L. Rev. 21, 85. Also see Chapter 12, sec. 4.

Indians may sue out a writ of habeas corpus. *United States ex rel. Standing Bear v. Crook*, 25 Fed. Cas. No. 14801 (C. C. N.D. 1879). Also see *United States ex rel. Kennedy v. Taylor*, 289 U. S. 18 (1933), and *Ind. v. Perry*, 129 Fed. 472 (C. C. Wash. 1904), app. denied 129 Fed. 972 (C. C. A. 9, 1904). A judgment may be obtained against an Indian for breach of contract even though unenforceable because his property is restricted. *Stacy v. La Belle*, 90 Wyo. 320, 75 N. W. 60 (1898).

<sup>127</sup> Canfield contended that the common law did not prevail on the reservations, and that since Indian tribes were distinct political entities, Indians should not be able to enforce in state courts rights acquired under Indian laws or customs. *Legal Position of the Indian* (1881) 10 Am. L. Rev. 22, 82, 88.

<sup>128</sup> Smith and against tribes are elsewhere analyzed. See Chapter 14, sec. 6. *Op. v. Johnson v. Iowa Indian Railroad Company* 164 N. Y. 492, 68 N. E. 992 (1900). Plaintiff, a member of the Montana tribe, brought an action of ejectment on behalf of himself and any members of the tribe who would come in and contribute to the expenses. The court held (two judges dissenting) that Indian tribes are wards of the state and are only possessed of such rights to litigate in courts of justice as are conferred on them by statute. Accord *Grandson Nation v. Phoenix*, 189 N. Y. 654, 62 N. E. 1068 (1901), aff'd 78 App. Div. 781, 65 N. Y. Supp. 104 (1900). A New York statute giving Indians such powers was not questioned. *McKinnon v. New York (Invol. Laws)* (1917) book 29, sec. 8, *George v. Pierson*, N. Y. Sup. Ct. 85 Misc. 107, 148 N. Y. Sup. 285 (1914).

<sup>129</sup> Pound, *Nationalism without a Nation* (1922) 22 Col. L. Rev. 97, 101, 102.

on the ground that Indians are not extrajudicial but only subject to special rules of substantive law.<sup>100</sup> An Indian has the same right as anyone else to be represented by counsel of his own selection, who may not be substituted to counsel appointed by the court.<sup>101</sup> As an additional protection the United States District Attorney has the duty to represent him in all suits at law or in equity.<sup>102</sup>

As a practical matter the Indians have frequently been at a decided disadvantage in vindicating their legal rights.

The courts were often at such a distance that the Indians could not avail themselves of their right to sue.<sup>103</sup> Their ignorance of the language, customs, usages, rules of law and forms of procedure of the white man, the disparities of race, the amenities caused by hostilities frequently deprived them of a fair trial in any.<sup>104</sup> They were sometimes barred by state statutes from serving as jurors,<sup>105</sup> and deemed incompetent as witnesses.<sup>106</sup>

The Committee on Indian Affairs of the House of Representatives, in a report<sup>107</sup> on the Trade and Intercourse Act of 1834 said:

Complaints have been made by Indians that they are not admitted to testify as witnesses, and it is understood that they are in some of the States excluded by law. These laws, however, do not limit the courts or tribunals of the United States. The committee have made no provision on the subject believing that none is necessary, that the rules of law are sufficient if properly applied, to remove every ground of complaint. [P. 13.]

Even at the present time, many Indians, particularly the older people, do not know any language but their native Indian tongue, and lack familiarity with most of the customs and ideas of the white people.<sup>108</sup> Most of the Indians live far from the

county seats and cities where courts meet and legal business is transacted.<sup>109</sup> Prejudice,<sup>110</sup> lack of education,<sup>111</sup> of money,<sup>112</sup> and of a sufficient number of lawyers of their race who have their confidence also hamper them in securing adequate legal advice and enforcing their rights. Peter B. A. Brown an eminent authority on Indian Law, has written: "The majority of these people are not able either in understanding or financial ability to take advantage of the courts of justice."<sup>113</sup>

In order to minimize the foregoing disadvantages a number of statutes have been enacted, establishing a separate administrative procedure to safeguard the rights of the Indians. One of the most important laws of this nature is the Act of June 25, 1910<sup>114</sup> which vests in the Secretary of the Interior conclusive power to ascertain the heirs of a deceased allottee.

During the era of the westward expansion of railroads, state legislatures authorizing the construction and operation of railways through the Indian Territory usually provided that in case of the failure of the railroad to make annual settlements with the Indian occupants of the land a commission of three disinterested referees should be appointed as appraisers the chairman by the President, one by the chief of the nation to which the occupied territory, and the other by the railway.<sup>115</sup>

In the absence of statute, Indian litigants are subject to the same defenses as other people. Except with respect to restricted property,<sup>116</sup> they may lose their rights because of laches, and the running of the statute of limitations.<sup>117</sup> They are also subject to the restrictions against suing sovereigns without their consent.

<sup>100</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 713-714.

<sup>101</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 776.

<sup>102</sup> *Ibid.* pp. 346-349.

<sup>103</sup> *Ibid.* p. 776.

<sup>104</sup> 72nd Indian Problem and the Law, 9 Yale L. J. 907, 31 (1901).

<sup>105</sup> 86 Stat. 825 amended March 3, 1918, 45 Stat. 301 April 30, 1931.

<sup>106</sup> 49 Stat. 817 25 U. S. C. 742 discussed in *Halliday v. Thompson*, 29 U. S. 706 (1910) aff'd 230 Fed. 791 (C. C. 8, 1914). *Knappier v. Little*.

<sup>107</sup> Status of American Indian & His Property (1922) T. 11 L. B. 242.

<sup>108</sup> 247 248, *Native Problem of Indian Administration* (1928) pp. 787-795, Schuchmacher, *The Office of Indian Affairs, Its History, Activities and Organization* (1927) pp. 168-175.

<sup>109</sup> But see example of such a provision (see text at September 26, 1890).

<sup>110</sup> 20 Minn. 485, 488. The Act of May 31, 1918, 45 Stat. 787, repealed.

<sup>111</sup> See, e.g., title 25 U. S. C. 565 derived from sec. 2 of the Act of June 11, 1862, 12 Stat. 427 which empowered the superintendent or agent to ascertain the damages caused by a tribal Indian litigating upon the allotments of an Indian, to deduct from the moneys due to the trust passing Indian the amount ascertained and with the approval of the Secretary to pay it to the party injured.

<sup>112</sup> See Chapter 11, Chapter 19, sec. 1.

<sup>113</sup> *Peter v. Patrick*, 145 U. S. 317, 311 (1902) discussing *Indian Affs.*

<sup>114</sup> 36 Stat. 487 discussing the statute of limitations. Also see *Leona v. United States*, 16 F. 2d 518 (C. C. 8, 1928) cert. den. 274 U. S. 740, 14 Cal. J. Int. 367-369 (1914). Also see *Bliss v. United States*, 32 Stat. 281, 21 U. S. C. 347 which provides for the application of the state statute of limitations in certain suits involving lands patented in severalty under treaties. While a deed of an Indian who received patent prohibiting alienation of property without the approval of the Secretary of Interior is void and the statute of limitations does not run against him and his heirs so long as the condition of incompetency remains when by treaty subsequent to the issuance of the deed all restrictions were removed and the Indian became a citizen the statute of limitations began to run against the grantor and his heirs.

<sup>115</sup> *Behrens v. Behrens*, 183 U. S. 290 (1902). Also see *Bliss v. United States*, 265 Fed. 822 (C. C. 8, 1920) aff'd in part and rev'd in part, 259 U. S. 129 (1922) (C. C. 9, 1914) M. 209-8 (January 11, 1927).

<sup>116</sup> 2 to the effect that in view of the quasi-indian relation existing between the Government and the Indians, and the fact that so long as they maintain tribal relations they are prohibited from changing with which the Department (or Interior) has been slow to establish a definite rule limiting the reopening of Indian proceedings on grounds of the maximum of *res adjudicata* and *stare decisis*.

<sup>100</sup> *Bliss v. United States*, 16 F. 2d 518 (C. C. 8, 1928) cert. den. 274 U. S. 740, 14 Cal. J. Int. 367-369 (1914).

<sup>101</sup> *Roberts v. Anderson*, 60 F. 2d 974 (C. C. 4, 1914).

<sup>102</sup> Act of March 9, 1889, 27 Stat. 612, 621 25 U. S. C. 375, 378. On the interpretation of this law see Chapter 12, sec. 8.

<sup>103</sup> *And* vol. 1 op. cit. p. 24 fn. 14. Toward the close of the nineteenth century many whites criticized the government for not giving the Indians courts for the redress of their wrongs, especially the arbitrary action of administrators. *Thatcher v. People Without Law* (1891) 68 All. Month, 510 512 670, 681.

<sup>104</sup> This law describes the disadvantages under which we, with the Federalist, the common Indian Law and needed reforms (1926) 12 A. B. J. 47, 40-45.

<sup>105</sup> *Abbott, Indians and the Law* (1888) 2 *Int. L. Rev.* 307 375-376, *Harsha, Law to the Indians* (1882) 114 N. A. Rev. 272 274-275 831, *How Shall the Indians be Educated* (1894) 170 N. A. Rev. 434.

<sup>106</sup> See *Const. Idaho Art. 2 sec. 2 Act v. United States*, 27 Fed. 361 377-388 (C. C. Oct. 1890), *People v. Howard*, 17 Calif. 64 (1890).

<sup>107</sup> For only texts discussing their incompetency as witnesses, see *Rapelle v. Treatise on the Law of Witnesses* (1887) p. 28 *Appellate Rules of Evidence*, (1890) pp. 271-272, *Punahy v. Hunt*, 94 N. W. 890 (12 N. W. 39 (1909)).

<sup>108</sup> Sometimes their incompetency as witnesses was restricted to cases where white were parties. *People v. Hall*, 4 Calif. 309 (1854), aff'd by *Spec. v. Rev. Sup. Ct.* 13 Cal. 73 (1860) held that the term "Indian" as used in section 94 of the Civil Practice Act (Calif. Stat. 1860) p. 240 (subsequently re-enacted) excluded a Chinese from testifying as a witness. See *Goodrich, The legal status of the California Indians* (1928) 14 Calif. L. Rev. 88, pp. 166 and 174, *Osier v. United States*, 1 Ind. T. 312 (1890) *Evans* when competent, prejudice against their testimony was not infrequent. See *Ship v. United States*, 81 Fed. 604 (C. C. 9, 1897). The Confederate States signed treaties with many of the southern tribes giving the members the right to be competent as witnesses in state courts and if indicted to subpoena witnesses and employ counsel. *And* vol. 1 *The American Indian as Slaveholder & Slaveowner* (1913) pp. 173-178. The Act of March 1, 1869, sec. 15, 25 Stat. 783 limited juries in criminal cases in the United States courts in which the defendant is a white and the defendant is a citizen to citizens and thus excluded most Indians.

<sup>109</sup> 228d Cong. 1st sess., Repts. of Committees, No. 474, May 20, 1884.

<sup>110</sup> *Mechem, Problem of Indian Administration* (1928), pp. 777, 788, 790.

The right to sue is not conferred upon an individual member by a statute granting to a tribe the right to sue to recover tribal property.<sup>104</sup> In the absence of congressional legislation bestowing upon individual Indians the right to litigate in the federal courts informal questions relating to tribal property the courts will not assume jurisdiction.<sup>105</sup>

<sup>104</sup> *Black Panther v. United States*, 700 F.2d 848 (9th Cir. 1983), cert. den., 469 U.S. 1101 (1984).  
<sup>105</sup> *United States v. Koonau Nation of New York Indians*, 274 F.2d 946 (D.C. W.D.N.Y. 1952). Also see *Isaac v. Pueblo of Santa Rosa*, 249 D.C. 110 (1919).

## SECTION 7 RIGHT TO CONTRACT

Indians may make contracts in the same way as any other people,<sup>106</sup> except where prohibited by statutes which primarily regulate contracts affecting tribal property.<sup>107</sup>

The contractual capacity of Indians is discussed in the case of *Gho v. Jullis*.<sup>108</sup>

We are unable to see why in Indian law preserving his tribal relations, is not as capable of making a binding contract as fellow tribesmen such as we have assumed to be (old by statute), as an Englishman or a Spaniard, or a Dane who while still retaining his native allegiance makes contracts here. (P. 428)

Similarly, a more recent opinion<sup>109</sup> holds:

The fact that one of the parties to the contract was a full blood Indian did not make the law or impair his right to enter into this contract. He had the same right in other persons, to make contracts generally. The only restriction on this right peculiar to Indians was in regard to contracts affecting his allotment. Thus he could not make without the consent and approval provided by law. . . . (P. 156)

Some treaties contained contractual restrictions.<sup>110</sup>

<sup>106</sup> An Indian may contract freely concerning non-tribal real and personal property. *Juris v. Marlow*, 375 U.S. 1 (1963), also see *United States v. Prince Laumie*, 300 U.S. 447 (1937). Accord, *Ashe v. Main*, 422 U.S. 213 N.E. 1040 (1969).  
<sup>107</sup> *Blau v. La Brie*, 99 W. 420, 77 N.W. 60 (1898). Recognition of this capacity was contained in the Act of May 2, 1890, sec. 29, 26 Stat. 81, 93 which gave to the United States Courts in the Indian Territory jurisdiction of all contracts between citizens of Indian nations, and citizens of the United States, provided such contracts were made in good faith and in accordance with the laws of such tribe or nation. As to individual Indians in restricted personality see Chapter 10.

<sup>108</sup> *Op. Sol. I D. M. 2880*, February 14, 1917, p. 8. It should be pointed out that an Indian although a tribal member and a ward of the Government, is capable of making contracts and that these contracts require enforcement only insofar as they may deal with the disposition of property held in trust in the United States. *Op. Sec. v. Dudley*, 217 U.S. 5, 488 (1910). Questions frequently arise as to whether property is restricted. For example, crops growing on Indian trust land are considered trust property. *United States v. Fort M. Hottel Bank*, 265 Fed. 330 (D.C. S.D. Wash. 1922) regarding the case of *Eden v. La Gato*, 77 Wash. 148, 139 P. 4 (1914), which held that Indians could mortgage crops growing on allotments without the Government's consent. Also see Act of May 12, 1870, sec. 16, 16 Stat. 140, 144, giving the right to enforce contracts to all persons "within the jurisdiction of the United States." The Act of February 7, 1922, sec. 6, 42 Stat. 1005, 1011, exemplifies a restriction of the right to contract. It requires the approval of the Secretary of the Interior for contracts of debts of Osage tribesmen not having a certificate of competency. And see Act of February 21, 1908, 34 Stat. 698 (Winnipeg).

<sup>109</sup> 1 Wash. Ter. (new edition) 825 (1872).

<sup>110</sup> *Porter v. Lee*, 46 Okl. 477, 142 Stat. 175 (1915).

<sup>111</sup> Section 25 of the Treaty of March 8, 1804, 12 Stat. 919, 820 provided that the Story Indians shall be incapable of making any valid civil contracts with anyone other than a native member of their tribe without consent of the President. The Cherokee obtained an inherent provision in Article V of the Treaty of July 19, 1800, 14 Stat. 799,

The judgment entered in a suit against an Indian may be enforced against any non-tribal property which the Indian judgment debtor may own free from federal control. The restricted property of the Indian debtor is exempt from levy and sale under such a judgment.<sup>111</sup>

The Secretary of the Interior has authority to make payment of a judgment obtained in a state court against a restricted member of the Osage tribe of Indians on his estate.<sup>112</sup>

<sup>112</sup> *Hoffa v. Bureau*, 241 U.S. 192 (1914).

<sup>113</sup> Act of February 27, 1925, 41 Stat. 1006 (1925).

The most important limitation on the alienability of land is found in the Allotment Act of February 8, 1887,<sup>114</sup> which prevents an Indian allottee from making a binding contract in respect to land which the United States holds for him as trustee.<sup>115</sup>

The Act of May 21, 1872,<sup>116</sup> imposing restrictions on the contractual rights of non-citizen Indians which has lost most of its importance because of the passage of the Citizenship Act, voids any contract with a non-citizen Indian (or an Indian tribe) for services concerning his lands or claims against the United States, unless it is executed in accordance with prescribed formalities and approved by the Secretary of the Interior.

An important statute restricting the contractual power of Indians with respect to certain types of property is the Act of June 30, 1913,<sup>117</sup> which provides:

No contract made with any Indian, while such contract relates to the tribal funds or property in the hands of the United States, shall be valid nor shall any payment for services rendered in relation thereto be made unless the consent of the United States has previously been given.

## A POWER OF ATTORNEY

Though an Indian may grant a power of attorney to another, such grants of power have been extensively used in the regard of granting permits in allotted lands "such a power will not ordinarily be implied." If there is any doubt about the method of exercising the power, it will be resolved in favor of the grantors of the power.<sup>118</sup>

The government examines closely the circumstances surrounding the issuance and exercise of a power of attorney in order

and, permitting then, usually, and without hesitancy to sell their lands or manufactured products and to ship and drive them to market without restraint.

<sup>114</sup> Sec. 5, 24 Stat. 388, 389. Also see Act of June 25, 1910, 36 Stat.

<sup>115</sup> 25 Stat. 387, 388.

<sup>116</sup> See Chapter 11. A few treaties also restrict the alienability of

<sup>117</sup> The Treaty with the Nez Perce of June 9, 1855, Act July 11, 1854,

<sup>118</sup> 47 Stat. 1084. The Act of April 29, 1874, 18 Stat. 95 contains similar

provisions for lands belonging to individual Indians as well as to

tribes without the permission of the President and shall be subject

to regulations of the Secretary of the Interior.

<sup>119</sup> 47 Stat. 146, 25 U.S.C. 81. Amended by Act of June 26, 1938, sec.

<sup>120</sup> 47 Stat. 1084. The Act of April 29, 1874, 18 Stat. 95 contains similar

provisions for lands belonging to individual Indians as well as to

tribes without the permission of the President and shall be subject

to regulations of the Secretary of the Interior.

<sup>121</sup> 47 Stat. 146, 25 U.S.C. 81. Amended by Act of June 26, 1938, sec.

<sup>122</sup> 47 Stat. 1084. The Act of April 29, 1874, 18 Stat. 95 contains similar

provisions for lands belonging to individual Indians as well as to

tribes without the permission of the President and shall be subject

to regulations of the Secretary of the Interior.

<sup>123</sup> 47 Stat. 146, 25 U.S.C. 81. Amended by Act of June 26, 1938, sec.

<sup>124</sup> 47 Stat. 1084. The Act of April 29, 1874, 18 Stat. 95 contains similar

provisions for lands belonging to individual Indians as well as to

tribes without the permission of the President and shall be subject

to regulations of the Secretary of the Interior.

<sup>125</sup> 47 Stat. 146, 25 U.S.C. 81. Amended by Act of June 26, 1938, sec.

<sup>126</sup> 47 Stat. 1084. The Act of April 29, 1874, 18 Stat. 95 contains similar

provisions for lands belonging to individual Indians as well as to

tribes without the permission of the President and shall be subject

to regulations of the Secretary of the Interior.





Often the United States would agree to pay creditors<sup>1</sup> of the Indians for some consideration or partial consideration, such as the cession of land, reduction or omission of annuities,<sup>2</sup> or relinquishment of claims against the United States<sup>3</sup> or described services and goods.<sup>4</sup>

The names of the creditors were often enumerated in an attached schedule<sup>5</sup> or separate schedule,<sup>6</sup> but sometimes they were listed in the body of the treaty.<sup>7</sup>

Other provisions included an acknowledgment of special services and a provision for their payment. One, for example, provided that money should be paid to a designated captain to repay him for expenditures in defending Chickasaw towns against the invasion of the Choctaws.<sup>8</sup>

Sometimes claims already brought against the Indians were acknowledged as due and the United States agreed to make payments for them.<sup>9</sup> Occasional provisions include a prohibition against the payments of debts of individuals<sup>10</sup> or payments for depreciated claims,<sup>11</sup> a requirement that the superintendent shall pay the debts,<sup>12</sup> a prohibition against the sale of land for prior debts.<sup>13</sup>

The limitation of the rights of creditors is in accordance with the well-established policy of the Federal Government to protect Indians from their own improvidence.<sup>14</sup>

<sup>1</sup> For early opinions on method of determining amount of claims against Indians see 5 Op. U. S. 294 (1871) and 772 (1872). Treaties of October 27 1822 with the Potawatamies Art. 4 7 Stat. 399-401.

<sup>2</sup> Treaty of August 20 1831 (articles of agreement and convention) with Ottawa Indians Arts. 1 and 8 7 Stat. 391 100-101. Treaty of October 27 1822 with the Potawatamies Art. 4 7 Stat. 399-401. Art. of February 21 1803 Art. 4 22 Stat. 658-659 (Winnebago).

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of May 14 1833 (articles of agreement) with the Quapaw Indians Art. 4 7 Stat. 424, 425-426.

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of January 20 1825 (articles of a convention) with the Choctaw Nation Art. 5 7 Stat. 484 245. Treaty of October 16 1826 with the Seminole Tribe Art. 4 7 Stat. 285 296. Treaty of October 21 1826 with the Miami Tribe Art. 4 7 Stat. 300 301.

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of July 23 1805 with the Chickasaw Nation Art. 2 7 Stat. 90-90. Treaty of February 11 1828 with the Bel River or Shawnee party of Miami Indians Art. 9 7 Stat. 109-110. Treaty of March 24 1812 with the Creek Tribe Art. 9 7 Stat. 886-887.

<sup>6</sup> Treaty of October 11 1842 with the Sac and Fox Indians Art. 2 7 Stat. 598.

<sup>7</sup> Treaty of October 16 1826 with the Potawatamie Art. 5 7 Stat. 395 397.

<sup>8</sup> Treaty of July 23 1805 with the Chickasaw Nation Art. 2 7 Stat. 89-90. Treaty of October 19 1818 with the Chickasaws Art. 3 7 Stat. 192 193. Treaty of February 11 1828 with the Bel River or Shawnee party of Miami Indians Art. 3 7 Stat. 800, 710.

<sup>9</sup> Treaty of October 19 1818 with the Chickasaws Art. 3 7 Stat. 192 193. Also see Treaty of July 21 1805 with the Chickasaw Nation Art. 2 7 Stat. 89-90.

<sup>10</sup> Treaty of July 29 1829 with the United Nations of Chippewa (Ojibwa) and Potawatamie Art. 6 7 Stat. 820 821. Treaty of August 1 1829 with the Winnebago Art. 4 7 Stat. 323 324.

<sup>11</sup> Treaty of October 17 1856 with the Blackfoot Art. 15 11 Stat. 677-680.

<sup>12</sup> Treaty of November 1 1837 with the Winnebago Nation Art. 4 7 Stat. 544 545.

<sup>13</sup> Treaty of October 26 1832 with the Shawnee and Delaware Art. 5 7 Stat. 907, 938.

<sup>14</sup> See of June 1 1872, Art. 4 17 Stat. 213 214 (Miami).

<sup>15</sup> *Knapfield, Legal Status of American Indian & His Property* (1922) 7 La. B. 232 245. On creditor's rights against restricted money and estates of allottees see Chapter 11 §§ 6 and 25 C. F. R. 81 24 81 46-51 19 221 1-221 39.

A number of restrictive statutes hamper creditors from enforcing on their judgments.<sup>15</sup> An important general provision of this type is contained in the Appropriation Act of June 21 1906,<sup>16</sup> which amended the General Allotment Act<sup>17</sup> by adding the following:

No funds acquired under the provisions of this Act shall in any event become liable to the satisfaction of any debt contracted prior to the issuing of the final patent in fee therefor.

The same principle is also applicable to restricted money.<sup>18</sup>

The United States cannot restrict the allotment in satisfaction of claims against property of Indian allottees for which they had received patents in fee,<sup>19</sup> but it can restrict a state receiver from disposing of the proceeds of a lease of restricted lands,<sup>20</sup> and of a growing crop on allotted lands.<sup>21</sup>

In holding that a mortgage by an allottee of growing crops is void the District Court said:<sup>22</sup>

The crops grown upon an Indian allotment are a part of the land and are held in trust by the government. The same is the allotment itself at least until the crops are severed from the land. The use and occupancy of these lands by the Indians together with the crops grown thereon are a part of the means which the government has employed to carry out its policy of protection, and I am satisfied that a mortgage of any of these means by the Indian without the consent of the government is necessarily null and void. If the Indians did it carries with it all the incidents of a valid loan including the right to appoint a receiver to take charge of and sell the crops if necessary, and the right to send an officer upon the allotment armed with process to seize and sell the crops without the consent and even over the protest of the government and its agents. That this cannot be done does not, in my opinion, admit of question. (P. 192.)

Though an Indian may be a bankrupt land allotted to him does not pass to a trustee in bankruptcy.<sup>23</sup> This decision is based on the fact that it is not the policy of the Bankruptcy Act to interfere with congressional statutes relating to the disposition and control of property which is set apart for the benefit of the bankrupt, and that a man presumably deals with an Indian with full knowledge of his disability, and does not give credit on his allotments,<sup>24</sup> or his other restricted property.

<sup>15</sup> Act of May 2 1890 26 Stat. 91-94 (Indian Territory) discussed in *Cochran v. Jones*, 4 Ind. 1 36 (1901) and 4 Ind. 1 148 (1902). Also see *In re Graham* 9 Ind. T. 497 (1901) concerning foreclosure of mortgage.

<sup>16</sup> 34 Stat. 125 127.

<sup>17</sup> Act of February 8 1887 24 Stat. 188.

<sup>18</sup> See Chapter 5 §§ 5B and D.

<sup>19</sup> *United States v. Paulinus Davis Co.*, 176 U. S. 317 (1900).

<sup>20</sup> *United States v. Tuba*, 291 Fed. 436 (D. C. F. D. Wash. 1924).

<sup>21</sup> On the right of the United States to sue on behalf of Indians see Chap. 11 § 19 sec. 2A(1).

<sup>22</sup> See *United States v. First Nat. Bank*, 252 Fed. 130 (D. C. E. D. Wash. 1922). On the liability of convicts of allotted lands see Chap. 11 § 4E.

<sup>23</sup> *Ind. Fed.* For a decision holding invalid a mortgage executed by a tribal member on his interest in the tribal lands see *United States v. Bagley*, 205 Fed. 165 (C. C. A. 2 1920).

<sup>24</sup> *In re Revell*, 90 D. C. 809 (D. C. Cir. 1899). See Chapter 11 § 4A.

<sup>25</sup> State laws relating to restriction of the benefit of creditors were extended to the Indian debtor by the Act of May 2 1890 26 Stat. 81 (Indian Territory), discussed in *Feinstein & Co. v. Bell*, 187 U. S. 41 (1902); aff'd 100 Fed. 719 (C. C. A. 9 1900).

<sup>26</sup> *In re Revell*, 90 Fed. 809 (D. C. Cir. 1899).

## SECTION 8 THE MEANINGS OF "INCOMPETENCY"

The word "incompetency" has varied applications in many branches of law. This person may be incompetent to serve on a jury, or evidence may be inadmissible as incompetent. Perhaps the most common meaning of the term is lack of capacity to enter into legally binding contracts.<sup>100</sup>

In addition to its ordinary legal meaning, the term "incompetency," as used in Indian law, has several special or restricted meanings, relating to particular types of transactions, such as land alienation.

A GENERAL LACK OF LEGAL CAPACITY<sup>101</sup>

Treaties and statutes contain innumerable illustrations of the ordinary use of the term "incompetency," and various provisions to safeguard the interests of Indians who are deemed unfit to manage their own affairs. They empower guardians or other persons authorized by the Department of the Interior,<sup>102</sup> parents or guardians,<sup>103</sup> heads of families,<sup>104</sup> chiefs,<sup>105</sup> collectors of customs,<sup>106</sup> and agents,<sup>107</sup> and superintendents or other headed officers of the Indian Service,<sup>108</sup> to select allotments,<sup>109</sup> or home stead entries,<sup>110</sup> receive payments due,<sup>111</sup> appraise property in condemnation proceedings, or perform other functions for minors or persons *non compos mentis*.<sup>112</sup>

Special provisions were often made for minor orphan children, as in making the chiefs responsible for the school in

attendance of orphan children between 7 and 18 who had no guardians.<sup>113</sup>

Congress has conferred on parents certain rights with respect to the property of minor children.<sup>114</sup> The administrative practice of the Department at the Interior requires that a minor be represented in some cases, such as the relinquishment of inheritance of Indian trust lands.<sup>115</sup>

## B RESTRICTED MEANINGS

(1) *Inability to alienate land*—Perhaps the most frequent special use of the term "incompetency" is to describe the status of an Indian incapable of alienating some or all of his real property. Such an Indian may be competent in the ordinary legal sense. An outstanding example is Charles Chisus, who though he became Senator and Vice President of the United States, remained all his life an incompetent Indian, incapable of disposing of his trust property by deed or devise, without securing the approval of the Secretary of the Interior.

This striking example indicates that a determination of general competency is not always sufficient to cause the Secretary to issue a certificate of competency permitting the Indian to dispose of his restricted property. In determining whether to remove restrictions, the Secretary must decide, not only the "competency" of the Indian, but also whether such removal would be for the best interest of the Indian.<sup>116</sup>

<sup>100</sup> See *In re Blockholtz Guardianship*, 115 Nch 163 169 280 N W 438, 441 (1928). *In re Mathews*, 174 Cal 679 184 Pac 9 (1917).

<sup>101</sup> See *Stewart v. Kuka*, 295 U S 463 (1935). 194 for including den 280 U S 901 (1931).

<sup>102</sup> Act of March 3, 1867, 21 Stat 440 441 (Unassigned Reservation).

<sup>103</sup> Treaty of April 28, 1850, with the Cheyenne and Chickasaw, Art 15, 14 Stat 700, 777, Treaty of July 4, 1866 with the Delaware, Art 3, 14 Stat 791, 794, Act of February 13, 1891, Art 2, 26 Stat 749 750 771 (Sai and Fort).

<sup>104</sup> Act of April 11, 1882, 22 Stat 12 (Crow), Act of August 7, 1882, sec. 5, 22 Stat 141, 142 (Omaha).

<sup>105</sup> Act of March 2, 1889, sec. 2, 25 Stat 1011 1015 (Poncha and Mamie).

<sup>106</sup> Act of June 10, 1872, sec. 6, 17 Stat 381, repealed by Act of March 3, 1879, 47 Stat 1428.

<sup>107</sup> The agent or on made, with the onphans Act of March 2, 1869, sec. 9, 20 Stat 888, 901 (Shaw).

<sup>108</sup> Act of February 21, 1894, Art 2, 28 Stat 1894, Art 4, 28 Stat 687 688 (Shoshone and others).

<sup>109</sup> Act of February 25, 1933, 47 Stat 907 25 U S C 14.

<sup>110</sup> Treaty of April 28, 1850 with the Cheyenne and Chickasaw, Art 15, 14 Stat 700, 776.

<sup>111</sup> Act of June 10, 1872, sec. 6, 17 Stat 381.

<sup>112</sup> Act of July 5, 1882, sec. 6, 22 Stat 142 143 929 B S, 4, 2109, 25 U S C 179, providing for payment to persons appointed by Indian councils to receive money due to incompetent or orphan Indians.

<sup>113</sup> Allotments to minors were sometimes not selected until their majority or marriage. Treaty of June 19, 1875 with the Sioux, Art 1, 22 Stat 1097.

<sup>114</sup> Treaty of May 10, 1874 with the Shawnee, Art 2, 20 Stat 1063, providing that the relations for incompetent and minor orphans shall be made as near as practical to their friends, by some disinterested person appointed by the council and approved by the United States agent.

<sup>115</sup> See Treaty of January 11, 1867 with the Wyandotté, 10 Stat 1150.

<sup>116</sup> Treaty of August 2, 1865 with the Cheyenne, Art 1, 11 Stat 634, Art 4, 28 Stat 1898 190 Stat 493 513 (Indian Territory), Act of April 11, 1882, 22 Stat 142 (Crow), Act of August 7, 1882, sec. 5, 22 Stat 141, 142 (Omaha-Tribe).

<sup>117</sup> The Act of March 2, 1889, sec. 2, 25 Stat 1011 1015 (Poncha and Mamie), empowers the father to make *guardians* lease not exceeding 4 years for minors, and chiefs, for orphans. No allotment to orphan until 21 or married. Act of February 18, 1891, Art 8, 26 Stat 749, 751 (Sai and Fox Nation and Iowa Tribe). Heads of family choose lands for minor children, but agent chooses lands for orphans and persons of unsound mind. Treaty of November 10, 1861, with the Potawatamies, Art 2, 12 Stat 1161 1162, Treaty of October 18, 1864, with the Cheyenne, Art 8, 11 Stat 937 938, Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat 888.

<sup>117</sup> Act of September 24, 1867 with the Pawnee, Art 1, 11 Stat 729 730.

<sup>118</sup> See Act of June 28, 1906, sec. 7, 34 Stat 839 745 (Omaha) which confers on parents of minor numbers of the tribe the control and use of their lands together with its proceeds until the minors reach majority.

<sup>119</sup> Allotments to minor children under sec. 4 of the General Allotment Act as amended are made when the parent has acted upon the public lands, is himself entitled to an allotment and is a recognized member of an Indian tribe or entitled to such recognition according to the tribal laws and usage. 49 L D 649 (1907) 40 L D 148 (1911), 41 L D 626 (1913), 42 L D 149 (1914).

<sup>120</sup> An administrative finding, that an Indian had reached majority is not conclusive upon a determination of whether a deed of land made by him after the issuance of a patent was subject to a state law permitting divestiture of a contract made in infancy. *Johnson v. Luck Land Co.*, 312 U S 971 (1937).

<sup>121</sup> The rights of minors are discussed in 15 L D 318 (1891) 80 L D 512 536 (1901) 35 L D 115 (1906) 38 L D 122 (1910) and 41 L D 125 (1914).

<sup>122</sup> The rights of heirs upon death of allottee before expiration of trust period and before issuance of fee simple patent without having made will are discussed in 10 L D 120 (1911) Also see, 49 L D 422 (1910) 38 L D 427 (1910).

<sup>123</sup> For interpretation of sec. 4 of the General Allotment Act authorizing the allotment of public lands on behalf of minor children where the parent is dead and made his home on public domain, see 40 L D 148 (1911), 41 L D 125 128 (1914). This section includes step children and all other children to whom the statute makes no *in loco parentis*, 41 L D 626 (1913) 41 L D 149 (1914). 44 L D 740 (1916), who also recognized members of the tribe or entitled to be recognized. 35 L D 549 (1907) but orphan children under 18 are not entitled to benefits. 8 L D 647 (1893), not children of parents, who are disqualified from benefits, 44 L D 128 (1915). For interpretations of other allotment acts affecting minors, see 15 L D 287 (1891) 24 L D 711 (1897) 40 L D 4, 9 (1911), 48 L D 123, 139, 904 (1914).

<sup>124</sup> This practice has been upheld by the courts. *Hendel v. United States*, 287 U S 48 (1917), affg 186 Fed 946 (C O A 9, 1912).

<sup>125</sup> On restrictions on alienation, see Chapter 1, sec. 4, on landing sec. 5 and *Smith v. McCullough*, 270 U S 493 (1926).

<sup>126</sup> The Act of April 18, 1912, sec. 9, 37 Stat 96, defined "competent" as used therein to "marry a person to whom a certificate has been issued authorizing alienation of all the lands comprising his allotment except his homestead."

<sup>127</sup> *Williams v. Johnson*, 219 U S 414 418, 419, (1915). While the Secretary may permit the sale of trust lands, he may retain control

An Indian may be declared incompetent to manage his land and then having become landless, may inherit property in a restricted estate and thus become incompetent again.<sup>1</sup>

An administrative finding involves the material difference between the removal of restrictions against alienation and the issuance of a certificate of competency.

\* \* \* At times and under given circumstances restrictions against alienation is applied to lands allotted to the Indians since treaty of covenants running with the land. Competency of person is a personal attribute or condition. These two competency and the power to declare certain lands are not synonymous or even co-existent factors in all cases. Frequently they go hand in hand but not necessarily always so. Congress itself, at times has lifted restrictions against alienation, in mass, without special regard to the competency of the individual Indian land owners. With respect to the Osages, it is previously shown, under the act of 1906 the issuance of a certificate of competency did not remove the restrictions against alienation of the homestead and under other legislation dealing with these people the Secretary of the Interior is empowered to lift the restrictions against alienation on part or all of their allotted lands including the homesteads even in the hands of incompetent members of the tribe. act of March 3 1909 (35 Stat. 778) act of May 23 1919 (40 Stat. 947-979). This last again emphasizes the fact that removal of restrictions against alienation is not synonymous with competency on the right to a certificate of that character. (Pp. 4-9)

(a) *Statutes*.—The following provision of the Act of May 8, 1906,<sup>2</sup> illustrates this use of the term

\* \* \* *Provided*, That the Secretary of the Interior may, in his discretion and he is hereby authorized whenever he shall be satisfied that any Indian allottee is competent and capable of managing his or her affairs, at any time to cause to be issued to such allottee a patent in fee simple, and thereafter all restrictions as to sale, encumbrance, or taxation of said land shall be removed and said land shall not be liable to the satisfaction of any debt contracted prior to the issuing of such patent \* \* \*

The Circuit of Appeals,<sup>3</sup> in construing this provision, said that the Indian "shall have at least sufficient ability, knowledge, experience, and judgment to enable him to conduct the negotiations for the sale of his land and to accept, manage, invest, and dispose of its proceeds with such a reasonable degree of prudence and wisdom as will be likely to prevent him from losing the benefit of his property or its proceeds."

over the investment of the proceeds. *Sunderland v. United States*, 200 U. S. 226 (1921), 183 U. S. 287 Fed. 468 (C. C. A. 8 1921). Also see Chapter 1 sec. 11.

<sup>2</sup> Indian Land Revenue, Economic Status and Population Trends, by R. X. of the Department of the Interior, and the Land Planning Committee to the National Resources Board (1935), p. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Op. Sol. I. D. M. 10190 June 2 1928.

<sup>4</sup> 131 Stat. 182, 183 26 U. S. C. 949. For regulations regarding this statute see 25 C. F. R. 241.1-241.2.

*United States v. Debell* 227 Fed. 770 (C. C. A. 8 1915).

This case held that the Secretary may not determine such competency by an arbitrary test, such as the Indians' avowal of the effect of his pending restricted property, saying " \* \* \* a person might know he was making a deal to his property and that after he made and delivered the deed he could not regain his property and yet be utterly incapable of managing his affairs the sale of his property on the one or disposition of the proceeds \* \* \* (P. 770). Also see *Waller v. United States*, 57 F. 2d 997 (C. C. A. 10, 1932).

The same court in another case,<sup>5</sup> said

\* \* \* The chief purpose and main object of the restriction upon alienation is not to prevent the incompetent Indian from selling his land for a price too low, but to prevent him from selling it at all, to the end that he shall be prevented from losing, giving away, or squandering its proceeds and thus be left dependent upon the government or upon charity for his support \* \* \* (P. 776).

Another important act illustrating a somewhat similar concept of incompetency is the Act of March 1, 1907,<sup>6</sup> which provides

That any noncompetent Indian to whom a patent containing restrictions against alienation has been issued that in allotment of land in severalty under any law or treaty or who may have an interest in any allotment by inheritance may sell or convey all or any part of such allotment or such inherited interest on such terms and conditions and under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe, and the proceeds derived therefrom shall be used for the benefit of the allottee or he is so disposing of his land or interest, under the supervision of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs.

A federal district court,<sup>7</sup> in construing this provision at least limited the term noncompetent is equivalent to incompetent," and as implying the ordinary legal meaning of incompetency based on insanity due to mental deficiency, or insanity.<sup>8</sup> Upon reconsideration the court thought such restriction of its meaning was too narrow. It also discussed the provisions of section 1 of the Act of June 25, 1910,<sup>9</sup> which authorizes the Secretary of the Interior

\* \* \* in his discretion to issue a certificate of competency upon application therefor, to any Indian, or, in case of his death, to his heirs, to whom a patent in fee containing restrictions on alienation has been or may hereafter be issued, and such certificate shall have the effect of removing the restrictions on alienation contained in such patent. (P. 497)

The court concluded

\* \* \* while it is applied to Indians the terms "competency" and "noncompetency" or "incompetency" are used in their ordinary legal sense, there is a presumption, conclusive upon the courts, that until the restriction against alienation is removed in the manner provided by law, either through the lapse of time or the positive action of the Secretary of the Interior, the allottee continues to be an "incompetent" Indian, at least in so far as concerns the land to which the restriction relates. (Pp. 497-498)

Under the 1910 act the determination of competency and the issuance of a patent in fee simple were both conditions precedent to the removal of restrictions on alienation and "the issuance of a patent in fee simple by the Secretary is not mandatory upon him, it is said that a first allottee is competent and capable of managing his own affairs."<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *United States v. Debell* 227 Fed. 773 (C. C. A. 8 1915).

<sup>2</sup> 44 Stat. 1017, 1018 25 U. S. C. 405.

<sup>3</sup> *United States v. Van Pelt County Indian* 207 Fed. 493 497 (D. C. D. Idaho 1917).

<sup>4</sup> 6 Stat. 874 27 U. S. C. 872. For regulations regarding certain acts of competency see 25 C. F. R. 241.3-241.7.

<sup>5</sup> *See ante* *Para* 99 F. 2d 28 31 (C. C. A. 7, 1936), *cert. den.* 306 U. S. 648.

Statutory<sup>1</sup> and administrative distinction in the determination of competency to alienate treaty office lands on the question of the Indian blood of the allottee.<sup>2</sup>

(b) *Treaties*.—Many treaties contain special provisions for aiding for the separation of competent and incompetent In-

\* For example the Act of February 27, 1925, 43 Stat. 1006 (Osage) distinguishes between a number of the Osage tribe of more than one half blood and one with less. Also see Act of March 1, 1907, 34 Stat. 1015 and *United States v. Mitchell*, 255 U. S. 72 (1921) aff'd 20 Fed. 110 (C. C. A. 8, 1913) and *Wahkiakum v. Campbell*, 229 U. S. 249 (C. C. A. 10, 1917). And see *Wahkiakum v. Campbell*, 17 Fed. Supp. 244 (D. C. Ore., 1916). Act of June 21, 1906, 4 Stat. 125, 35, interpreted in *United States v. Pass, National Bank*, 245 U. S. 217 (1917) aff'd 208 Fed. 958 (C. C. A. 8, 1914). Act of June 27, 1910, sec. 1, 6 Stat. 875, 251 S. C. 77, interpreted in *United States v. Shickman*, *McConnell*, 68 U. S. 2d 179 (C. C. A. 9, 1911).

The courts have repeated these distinctions. The court in *United States v. Black*, 187 Fed. 442 (C. C. D. 11, 1911) said:

\* \* \* The varying degrees of blood mix naturally become the line of demarcation between the different classes because experience shows that generally speaking, the larger percentage of Indian blood a given individual has, the less capable he is by natural qualification and experience to manage his property. \* \* \* (P. 570.)

Also see *Two v. Western Investment Co.*, 221 U. S. 246, 66, 308 (1911) and *United States v. Black*, 187 Fed. 442 (C. C. D. 11, 1911). *United States v. Johnson*, 247 U. S. 175 (1918) aff'd 275 Fed. 974 (C. C. A. 8, 1917). 5 Op. A. G. 275, 281 (1924).

Annual Report of Commissioner of Indian Affairs, p. 3 (1937).

While ethnologically a dependence on white blood does not necessarily mean a criterion of competency, one can now see it in the very title. It is almost as if one were to say that an Indian who has a large proportion of white blood in his Indian qualities more of the characteristics of the former than of the latter. In thought and action so far as the former is said is concerned, in proportion more closely to the white blood mixture.

\* The determination of competency is often a difficult administrative decision. Leupp, *The Indian and His Problem* (1910), pp. 67-78. Also see Weinmann, *The Office of Indian Affairs and Its History, Activities and Organization* (1927), p. 29. During some periods, the Indian Service was desirous of delaying Indian competency. Annual Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1918), pp. 22-27, of (1927), p. 11. Congress sometimes authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to appoint a commission to classify the competent and incompetent Indians of an

tribe. The Treaty of October 18, 1864, between the United States and the Cheyenne provides that the agent shall divide the Indians who have selected lands into two classes:

"Those who are intelligent and have sufficient education and are qualified by business habits to prudently manage their affairs, shall be set down as 'competent,' and those who are uneducated or unqualified in other respects to prudently manage their affairs or who are of idle wandering, or dissolute habits, and all others, shall be set down as 'those not so competent.'"

The United States agreed to issue patents to the competent Indians, but the incompetents could not then (then) find and with out the consent of the Secretary of the Interior.

(2) *Inability to receive or spend funds*.—Another special meaning of 'incompetency' is inability to control funds, illustrated by the Act of March 2, 1907,<sup>3</sup> which authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to designate any individual Indian belonging to any tribe whom he deems capable of managing his affairs to be appointed his personal guardian of his funds.<sup>4</sup>

Indian lands (Act of June 4, 1920, sec. 12, 41 Stat. 753). For further discussion see Chapter 5, sec. 11 and Chapter 22, sec. 2. The Court of Appeals in *Wells v. Mitchell*, 37 F. 2d 495 (C. C. A. 10, 1910) wrote:

"If Congress were concerned alone with incompetency in fact some intelligent Indians would have been made appropriate. For Indians like whites, when in mental stringency, and some full-bloods are actually more competent than others are bloods." (P. 496.)

Also see *United States v. First National Bank of Detroit*, 291 U. S. 245 (1934).

\* Treaty of May 24, 1864, with the Cheyenne, Art. 7, Sec. 190. Treaty of January 1, 1875, with the Winnebago, Art. 4, Sec. 1259, interpreted in 11 Op. A. G. 196 (1875). Treaty of October 18, 1864, with the Cheyenne, Art. 1, Sec. 187, 695. Treaties providing for restrictions on alienation: Treaty of July 20, 1870, with the Snywa Creek and Black River Cheyenne and the Arapaho or Cheyenne Indians, 12 Stat. 1107. Treaty of October 9, 1879, with the Kiowa Tribe, Art. 4, Sec. 1111, 1112. Treaty of February 18, 1881, with the Arapaho and Cheyenne Indians, Art. 1, Sec. 841, 1161.

\* 14 Stat. 687, 688.

\* 34 Stat. 1221.

\* Another use of the term is to describe the legal incapacity of an Osage to expend his funds. See Chapter 21, sec. 12B. *See Part: Part, 99 P. 2d 23, 14 (C. C. A. 10, 1918)* (cit. den. 900 U. S. 641). Also see *Davis v. Jones*, 69 F. 2d 213 (App. D. C. 1911), *Barrett v. United States*, 82 F. 2d 763 (C. C. A. 9, 1946) (cit. den. 299 U. S. 516) (reaching den. 299 U. S. 620).

## SECTION 9 THE MEANINGS OF "WARDSHIP"

The relationship of wardship and ward, at common law, is a relation under which, typically, the guardian (a) has custody of the ward's person and can decide where the ward is to reside, (b) is required to educate and maintain the ward, out of the ward's estate, (c) is authorized to manage the ward's property, for the benefit of the ward, (d) is precluded from profiting at the expense of the ward's estate, or acquiring any interest therein, (e) is responsible to the court, and to the ward, at such time as the ward may become sui juris, for an accounting with respect to the conduct of the guardianship.<sup>5</sup>

It is clear that this relationship does not exist between the United States and the Indians, although there are important similarities and suggestive parallels between the two relationships. The relationship of the United States to the Indian tribes and their members is analyzed in many other sections, and chapters of this work, and it would be futile to treat under

the heading of "wardship" the many aspects of that relation which are analyzed elsewhere under many proper topical headings. Rather we shall attempt in the present section to clarify and separate the various questions that have frequently been fused or confused under the term "wardship."

The term "ward" has been applied to Indians in many different senses and the failure to distinguish among these different senses is responsible for a considerable amount of confusion. Today a careful draftsman of statutes will not use the term "ward Indian" or, if he uses the term at all, will expressly define it for the purposes of the statute. The fact remains, however, that the term "ward Indian" has been used in several statutes,<sup>6</sup>

\* 1 See *Seaboard, Maritime, Divorce Separation, and Domestic Relations* (6th ed., 1921), pt. IV.

\* See, for example, Act of June 10, 1938, sec. 1, 52 Stat. 696, 25 U. S. C. 211 amending R. H. sec. 2119, Act of May 27, 1908, 35 Stat. 132 (Pawnee Cheyenne Tribes). The Act of February 25, 1914, 47 Stat. 907, 25 U. S. C. 24, refers to Indians who are recognized wards at the Federal Government and the Act of February 14, 1920, 41 Stat. 408, 410, 25 U. S. C. 282 refers to "Indian children who are wards of the Government."

a few treaties," and many individual opinions. \* It may help us to avoid some of the fallacies that result from a shuffling of the different meanings of the term "wardship" to survey these various meanings. We shall find it best to distinct connotations of the term in various contexts. "

### A WARDS AS DOMESTIC DEPENDENT NATIONS

Like so many other concepts in Indian law the idea of 'wardship' appears to have been first utilized by Chief Justice Marshall. "In fairness to the great Chief Justice, however, it must be said that if he used the term with more respect for its accepted legal significance than some of his successors have shown, he did not apply the term 'ward' to individual Indians, he applied the term to Indian tribes. He did not say that Indian tribes were wards of the Government but only that the relation to the United States of the Indian tribes within its territorial limits resembles that of a ward to his guardian. " The Chief Justice hesitated to explain this sentence by adding a bill of particulars (pp 17-18)

They look to our government for protection, rely upon its kindness and its power, appeal to it for relief to their wants, and address the president as their great father. They and their country are considered by foreign nations, as well as by ourselves, as being so completely under the sovereignty and dominion of the United States, that any attempt to acquire their lands, or to form a political connection with them would be considered by all as an invasion of our territory and an act of hostility.

The court went on to say (p 18)

The considerations go far to support the opinion, that the framers of our constitution did not the Indian tribes in view, when they opened the courts of the Union to controversies between a state and the citizens thereof and foreign states.

The question in the case was whether the Supreme Court had jurisdiction to entertain a suit by the Cherokee Nation against the State of Georgia under that provision of the Constitution (Art. III, sec. 2) which provides for the extension of the federal judicial power "to controversies . . . between a State . . . and foreign States . . ." To that question the following answer was given:

The Court has bestowed its best attention on this question, and, after a full deliberation, the majority is of opinion that an Indian tribe or nation within the United States is not a foreign state, in the sense of the constitution, and cannot maintain an action in the courts of the United States. (P 20)

"Art. 10 of the Treaty of April 1, 1860 with the Wyandots, 9 Stat. 887, which provides that 'persons admitted to be incompetent to take title of their property . . . shall become the wards of the United States . . . ' "

"From the courts have described specific tribes of Indians as wards. See *Ojibwa v. Littleport*, 302 U.S. 60, 70 (1930) (Klamath); *See also* *Ward*, 225 U.S. 863, 884 (1912) (Pine Chippewas); *LaMotte v. United States*, 254 U.S. 770, 875 (1921) (Ojibwa); *Jaybird Mining Co. v. Weir*, 271 U.S. 609, 619 (1926) (Quapaw); *United States v. Dandelion*, 271 U.S. 42, 44 (1926) (Tutut); *British American Co. v. Bond*, 293 U.S. 170, 180 (1936) (Blackfoot).

"The number of ways in which the 10 meanings can be combined is due to the tenth power minus one, that is to say 1,024. It would be obviously impossible to analyze all of these combinations within the confines of this work.

"Analogous to the common law concept of wardship may be found in the early Spanish and French recognition that the Indians were not able to deal with the whites on an equal footing and required special governmental protection. See *Chateau v. Molony*, 16 How. 207 (1851). Also see *United States v. Douglas*, 190 Fed. 498 (C.C.A. 8, 1911), for a theory of the origin of guardianship.

"*Cherokee Nation v. Georgia*, 5 Pet. 1, 17, 18 (1831)

"This in its original and most precise signification the term 'ward' was applied (a) to tribes, (b) rather than to individuals, (c) is a suggestive analogy rather than is an exact description, and (d) to distinguish an Indian tribe from a foreign state.

It should be noted that the basis upon which the Supreme Court applied the concept of wardship was the acceptance of that status, in effect, by the Indian tribes themselves. 'They look to our government for protection . . . ' For many years after the decision in *Cherokee Nation v. Georgia*, the Indian tribes continued to emphasize, in their treaties with the United States, their dependence upon the protection of the Federal Government."

### B WARDS AS TRIBES SUBJECT TO CONGRESSIONAL POWER

In a natural extension of the term, 'wardship' came to be commonly used to connote the submission of Indian tribes to congressional legislation. The power of Congress to legislate in matters affecting the Indian tribes was expressly recognized by the tribes themselves in many early treaties. " Thus, quite apart from the specific power given by the Constitution to Congress to regulate commerce with the Indian tribes, there came to be recognized, as an outgrowth of the federal treaty-making power and the power of Congress to legislate for the effectuation of treaties, a broad and vaguely defined congressional power over Indian affairs. " By virtue of this power, congressional legislation that would have been unconstitutional if applied to non Indians was held to be constitutional when limited in its application to Indians. In this sense, 'wardship' was still a concept applicable primarily to the Indian tribe, rather than to the individual members thereof, and it was the tribe as such that entered into treaties. As with the original meaning of the term 'wardship,' the justification of the result reached, in this case, the extension of congressional power, was found in a source of action to which the Indian tribes themselves had expressly consented.

The effective meaning of the term 'wardship' in the sense of special submission to congressional power, is to be found entirely in the realm of constitutional law. The extent of this constitutional power is a matter dealt with in other chapters. For the present it is enough to note that this power is utilized in the general ways: (1) as a justification for congressional legislation in matters ordinarily within the exclusive control of the states, " and (2) as a justification for federal legislation which would be considered "confiscatory" if applied to non Indians. "

In upholding the power of Congress to confer jurisdiction upon the federal courts over certain crimes committed on Indian reservations within a state the Supreme Court of the United States said: "

" 4 These Indian tribes are the wards of the nation. They are communities dependent on the United States. Dependent largely for their daily food. Dependent for their political rights. They owe no allegiance to the States, and receive from them no protection. Because of the local ill feeling, the people of the States, where they are found are often their deadliest enemies. From their

" See Chapter 8, sec. 1B(1)

" See Chapter 3, sec. 3B(4) and Chapter 5, sec. 2

" See Chapter 5, sec. 2

" See Chapter 5 and 6

" See Chapter 5 sec. 1

" *United States v. Kagone*, 118 U.S. 375 (1886), also see *United States v. McBratney*, 104 U.S. 821 (1881). See Introduction, footnote 22.

very weakness, and helplessness, so largely due to the want of dealing of the Federal Government with them, and the facilities in which if it has been promised, there arise the duty of protection and with it the power. This has also been recognized by the Executive and by Congress, and in this context whenever the question has arisen (Op. 383-384).

Though state courts have justified the regulation of Indian tribes by the doctrine of strict wardship,<sup>8</sup> it is settled that federal guardianship does not terminate with the admission of a state into the Union.<sup>9</sup> Although the power incident to wardship is not unlimited and is subject to constitutional restrictions,<sup>10</sup> the practical significance of the wardship concept in these cases is to justify certain types of legislation that would otherwise be held unconstitutional. There is thus not only an important difference but indeed a striking contrast between the use of the wardship concept in relation to Indian tribes and the use of the concept in private law. In private law, a guardian is subject to strict control in the administration of the ward's affairs and property. In constitutional law the guardianship relation has generally been invoked as a reason for retaining federal control over the action of the "guardian."<sup>11</sup>

#### C WARDS AS INDIVIDUALS SUBJECT TO CONGRESSIONAL POWER

When Congress legislates with reference to tribal rights and duties it necessarily affects, indirectly, the rights and duties of the individual members of the tribes. Thus the courts in holding that Congress had extraordinary powers over Indian tribes as "wards," were actually holding that Congress had extensive powers in dealing with the members of such tribes in matters affecting their tribal relations. The courts soon made this logical implication explicit and came to apply the term "wards" to individual Indians, emphasizing the susceptibility of individual Indians to an extraordinary measure of congressional control in matters affecting their tribal relations.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>8</sup> For a case holding that the New York Indians are under the wardship of New York State see *Oswayo v. Pierce*, 85 Misc. 105, 148 N. Y. Supp. 240 (1911). Also see *John v. Sabatini*, 69 Me. 178 (1870).

<sup>9</sup> The wandering, and impoverished habits of the remnants of Indian tribes within our borders led our legislators at an early period to make them in a manner wards of the state and especially to take the control and regulation of their lands (Op. 370).

and *Moss v. Tarsney*, 52 Me. 343 (1850) and on other grounds, 55 U. S. 767 (1852).

By the agreed statement it appears that the Protectors of the Indians "always have been and now are under the jurisdiction and guardianship of the State. This tribe cannot therefore be one of those referred to in the constitution of the United States" (Op. 368).

Also see *Williams v. Lane*, 10,250, 43 Supp. 291 p. 905, 17 Yale L. J. (1904) 270; *Rice*, The Position of the American Indian in the Law of the United States, 16 U. Comp. Int. (1911) pp. 74-80 and memorandum filed by the Attorney General of the United States in *United States v. Hamilton*, 215 Fed. 686, 696-698 (D. C. W. D. N. Y. 1915).

<sup>10</sup> *United States v. Kagans*, 271 U. S. 467 (1926). *Amplex Trading Co. v. Cook*, 281 U. S. 647, 651 (1930).

<sup>11</sup> *Choate v. Trapp*, 224 U. S. 667 (1912). Also see Chapter 5, sec. 1.

<sup>12</sup> Consider the significance of the word "although," in the following sentence referring to the Fifth Civilized Tribes, taken from the opinion of the Supreme Court in *Ex parte Neesh*, 227 U. S. 667 (1912). "Although those tribes had long been treated more liberally than other Indians, they remained none the less wards of the Government, and in all respects subject to its control." (Op. 664).

<sup>13</sup> In *Wick v. Wright*, 213 U. S. 94, 100 (1884), the Court said:

"... But the question whether any Indian tribe or any members thereof have become so far advanced in civilization, that they should be let out of a state of pupillage, is a question to be decided by the nation whose wards they are." \*

6 Op. A. G. 36, 40 (1848).

\* \* \* The government deals directly not only with the tribe but with the individuals of the tribe. It exercises a parental or

The use of the concept of wardship to justify a very broad exercise of power is also exemplified by judicial utterances to the effect that state control is superseded because of federal wardship.<sup>13</sup>

#### D WARDS AS SUBJECTS OF FEDERAL COURT JURISDICTION

The term "wards of the United States" has been applied to Indians in still a fourth sense, as equivalent to the phrase "subject to the jurisdiction of the federal courts."<sup>14</sup> Certain federal laws are, in terms applicable only to Indians. By such laws, and by treaties, Indians have been subjected to federal court jurisdiction in many respects where non-Indians are amenable only to courts of the states. It would be foolish to quarrel with this use of the term "wardship" to express a jurisdictional relationship but it is important to recognize that "wardship" in this sense has no necessary connection with the other senses of the term that have been examined. A group of individuals, whether identified by race or in any other manner, may be subjected to a particular set of laws administered by federal courts, and in this sense they might be considered "wards of the Federal Government." This might be the case even though the extent of constitutional power vested in Congress over the group in question were no greater than the extent of the power which Congress could exercise, but has not exercised, over other groups. Thus the fact that certain individuals are "wards" in the jurisdictional sense does not mean that they must be "wards" in the constitutional sense. Conversely, individuals may be "wards" in the constitutional sense, yet if Congress has not actually exercised its powers over that group but has allowed them to be dealt with by the states, the individuals concerned would not be "wards" in the sense of "subjects of federal jurisdiction."

#### E WARDS AS SUBJECTS OF ADMINISTRATIVE POWER

Still another distinct sense of the term "wardship" involves the concept of administrative power. To say that the United States has certain extraordinary powers over Indians is to say that the President and the Senate, by treaty, and that Congress, by statute, may exercise certain extraordinary powers over the Indians, powers which could not constitutionally be exercised over non-Indians generally, and it is to say that courts and administrators may thereupon enforce such measures. It is, however, another thing entirely to say that administrations, in the absence of such laws or treaty provisions, may in their wisdom govern Indians by issuing and enforcing administrative regulations. There is, therefore, an important distinction between the concept of an Indian tribe or an individual Indian as a "ward of the United States," and the concept of an Indian tribe or individual as a "ward of the Interior Department." To identify these concepts is to identify the United States with the Interior Department, which is its government and to assume that the powers of the Interior Department over the Indians, in the absence of treaty or statutory authorization, are as broad as the powers of Congress. The error of this assumption is obvious.

judicial authority over them as independent people in a state of pupillage. \* \*

See also *United States v. Polcan*, 252 U. S. 442 (1914), 19 Op. A. G. 105 (1880).

<sup>14</sup> *United States v. Kagans*, 271 U. S. 475, 383 (1880), *Ward v. Love County*, 273 U. S. 17 (1926), but see *United States ex rel. Kennedy v. Tule*, 260 U. S. 33 (1928). On the sharp difference of opinion among Indians on the question of termination of guardianship see *Mosier*, op. cit. pp. 300, 305.

<sup>15</sup> See *United States v. Thomas*, 151 U. S. 877, 687 (1893), and see Chapters 5, 6, 18 and 19.

vious and the implications of this error have elsewhere been analyzed.<sup>60</sup>

### F WARDS AS BENEFICIARIES OF A TRUST

The term "ward" has sometimes been loosely used in a synonym for beneficiary of a trust or "cestui que trust." Thus when land is held by the United States in trust for an Indian tribe or in trust for an individual or group of individuals, it is sometimes said that this creates a wardship relation by virtue of which Indians are unable to alienate the land. The fallacy of this method of argument is shown by the fact that even where no trust relationship is found and the land of an Indian tribe is vested in the tribe itself, the land is nevertheless inalienable (except in certain special cases) in virtue of general federal legislation.<sup>61</sup> There is thus no practical justification for the use of the term "ward" as synonymous with "cestui que trust." Obviously property, real or personal, may be held in trust for a perfectly competent individual who is nobody's ward, and on the other hand perfect title to land or any other property may be vested in a lunatic or a minor whose every act is subject to a guardian's physical and legal control.

### G WARDS AS NONCITIZENS

Occasionally the term "ward Indian" has been used as synonymous with "noncitizen" Indian. This appears to be the case, for instance in the following sentence from the opinion of the Supreme Court (per Harlan, J.) in the case of *United States v. Barker*:<sup>62</sup>

" \* \* \* It is for the legislative branch of the Government to say when these Indians shall cease to be dependent and assume the responsibilities attaching to citizenship."

The frequent confusion regarding the supposed incompatibility of the terms "wardship" and "citizenship" has already been discussed in this chapter. It has been seen that the extent of congressional power over Indians is not diminished by the grant of citizenship. As was said by the United States Supreme Court in *United States v. Haller*:<sup>63</sup>

" \* \* \* The tribal Indians are wards of the Government, and as such under its guardianship. It rests with

<sup>60</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 8. Cf. comment of court in *Beauvais v. Smith*, 100 Pac. 450 (Ariz. 1900).

Indians are not wards of the executive officials but wards of the United States acting through executive officers. It is true, but expressing its fostering will by legislation. (P. 461.)

<sup>61</sup> See Chapter 16, sec. 18, Chapter 20 sec. 7.

<sup>62</sup> 188 U. S. 432, 445 (1903).

<sup>63</sup> 218 U. S. 405, 408-09 (1917). In *United States v. Nue* 241 U. S. 501 (1915), the court said:

"Of course, when the Indians are prepared to assume the privileges and bear the burdens of one *vis juris*, the tribal relation may be dissolved and the national guardianship brought to an end, but it rests with Congress to determine when and how this shall be done and whether the emancipation shall at first be complete or only partial. Citizenship is not incompatible with tribal existence or continued guardianship, and so may be conferred without completely emancipating the Indians or placing them beyond the reach of congressional legislation adopted for their protection. (P. 508.)"

Congress has the exclusive power to determine when a guardianship shall terminate. *Thayer v. Western Investment Co.* 221 U. S. 288, 315 (1911). Accord *Swaps v. Pender Co.*, 281 U. S. 647, 651 (1930); *Deery County, S. D. v. United States* 26 P. 2d 434 (C. C. S. 1928), aff'g sub nom. *United States v. Deery County, S. D.*, 14 F. 2d 764 (D. C. Dak. 1928), cert. den. 278 U. S. 649 (1928). *Kutermeyer v. United States*, 225 Fed. 828 (C. C. T. 1917). *Long Wolf v. Hutschbach*, 187 U. S. 568 (1903). Also see Chapter 6.

Congress to determine the time and extent of emancipation. Conferring citizenship is not inconsistent with the continuation of such guardianship, for it has been held that even after the Indians have been made citizens the relation of guardian and ward for some purposes may continue. On the other hand, Congress may relieve the Indians from such guardianship and control, in whole or in part and may, if it sees fit, clothe them with full rights and responsibilities concerning their property or give to them a partial emancipation if it thinks it can do so better in their protection. *United States v. Nue* 241 U. S. 501, 508, and cases cited. (Pp. 450-460.) [Italic added.]

### H WARDSHIP AND RESTRAINTS ON ALIENATION

The term "ward" has sometimes been applied to an Indian allottee who holds land subject to reversion upon alienation. According to this usage, when the Indian has received a fee patent, or has been indicated "competent" to make his own affairs and his property has been relieved from the protection of the Federal Government, he ceases to be a "ward." The distinction between this use of the term "ward" and the constitutional sense of the term discussed above becomes apparent in the situation in which Congress imposes a restriction on alienation which has already expired. The individual allottee ceased to be a "ward," in the sense that he was freed from restrictions upon alienation but the courts say that Congress can impose those restrictions because the Indian is a "ward" of the Federal Government.<sup>64</sup> It is obvious that in this situation the term "wardship" is being used in two distinct senses.

### I WARDSHIP AND INEQUALITY OF BARGAINING POWER

Doubtful clauses in treaties or agreements between the United States and Indian tribes have often been resolved by the courts in a nontechnical way, as the Indians would have understood the language and in their favor. The Supreme Court of the United States stated, per Justice Matthews, in the case of *Cherokee Nation v. United States*:<sup>65</sup>

"The recognized relation between the parties to this contract is, therefore, is that between a superior and an inferior, whereby the latter is placed under the care and control of the former, and which, while it authorizes the adoption on the part of the United States of such policy as their own public interests may dictate, recognizes, on the other hand, such an interpretation of their acts and promises as justice and reason demand in all cases where power is exacted by the strong over those to whom they owe care and protection. (P. 28.)"

The principle of construction in favor of the Indians is also applicable to congressional statutes.<sup>66</sup>

<sup>64</sup> Cf. *Brader v. James*, 240 U. S. 88 (1915), *Thayer v. Western Investment Co.* 221 U. S. 288 (1911).

<sup>65</sup> 119 U. S. 1 (1886), rev'g 21 C. Cls. 50 (1885). Also see Chapter 3, sec. 2, *United States v. Benfit Bros. Co.*, 219 U. S. 104 (1910), aff'g sub nom. *United States v. Benfit Williams v. Benfit Bros. Co.*, 293 Fed. 779 (D. C. Ore. 1916). \* \* \* There is no rule that the language of Congressional statutes giving rise to a controversy between the Indians and the states should likewise be construed in favor of the Indians. (Brown The Taxation of Indian Property (1931), 17 Minn. L. Rev. pp. 154, 195, referring to *Gandy v. Meath*, 209 U. S. 146 (1909).) Justice Brandeis, while dissenting, referred to the "usual" discrimination to invoke technical rules of law to the prejudice of Indians when on members thereof. \* \* \* 34 Op. A. G. 302, 404 (1924).

<sup>66</sup> Legislation of Congress is to be construed in the interest of the Indian. *United States v. Collector*, 216 U. S. 278, 290 (1909). *Red*





a certain cost of human values. It was the Indian who paid the price.<sup>14</sup> (P 94)

Although laws of this type are less frequently passed today than in the early state history, some have never been repealed.

A more recent prime of discrimination is given in the case of *United States v. Wright*,<sup>15</sup> dealing with the Eastern Cherokees.

"... the State of North Carolina has afforded them few of the privileges of citizenship. It has not permitted them schools and funds, their attendance upon schools maintained by the white and colored people of the state. It will not receive their unfortunate issue or their debt, dumb or blind in state institutions. It makes no provision for their sustenance in the case of hardship or for the cure of their sick or destitute. It imprisons their lands, but until comparatively recent years these were maintained by their own labor.... Politically they have been subject to the laws of the State, but economic rights have been warded off the federal government and need not be such under the provisions of its laws. (Pp 304-307)

(2) Discriminatory federal laws—During much of the history of the United States, the original occupants of the continent were imprisoned on reservations.<sup>16</sup> As late as May 5, 1890 Congress provided that the Spokane Falls and Northern Railway Co. should prohibit the riding by the Indians of the Colville Indian Reservation upon any of its trains unless they were provided with passes signed by the Indian agent.<sup>17</sup>

The statute admitting Utah to statehood<sup>18</sup> illustrates a comprehensive system of discrimination.

The constitution shall be applicable in its form, and make no distinction in civil or political rights on account of race or color, except as to Indians and not to be repugnant to the Constitution of the United States and the principles of the Declaration of Independence.

Early laws, only recently repealed by the Act of May 21, 1934,<sup>19</sup> hampered freedom of speech, empowered the Commis-

<sup>14</sup> Schmeckebier in *The Office of Indian Affairs Its History Activities and Organization* (1927) writes:

"... a public opinion on the frontier justified practically any action taken by the whites against the Indians, regardless of law or equity (P 23)

The Government was powerless to prevent constant violation of the rights of the whites. *Id.*, p. 62. Also see *United States v. Kagawa*, 218 U.S. 976 (1888), and 19 Op. A. G. 511 (1880). The present attitude towards the Indian is described as follows:

"In the generation that has passed.... the white man has not only been a deadly enemy in the physical sense but in the moral and political sense as well. He has taken the Indian's property. It is not true that all communities now treat the Indian as indifferent to his welfare but it is an unfortunate fact that the Indian is too often regarded as a legitimate prey and that public opinion is indifferent to the wrong perpetuated upon him.... (Schmeckebier *op. cit.* p. 11)

Also see 9 Op. A. G. 110, 111 (1897).

<sup>15</sup> Conviction of discrimination still exists against Indians in several states. *See The Position of the American Indian in the Law of the United States* (1934) 16 J. Comp. Leg. 70.

<sup>16</sup> 18 P. 26-300 (C. C. A. 10, 1931).

<sup>17</sup> Kinney, *A Continent Lost—A Civilization Won* (1937), pp. 108-170, 209, 281, 811-114.

<sup>18</sup> See 8 20 Stat. 102, 103. A review of treaties in 1895 restricted the freedom of the Indians to leave the reservation without the written consent of the agent or superintendent. Treaty of August 12, 1868 with the Snake, Art. 5, 14 Stat. 683. Treaty of October 14, 1865 with the Cheyenne and Arapahoes, Art. 2, 14 Stat. 708, 704. Treaty of February 18, 1866 with the Comanches and Kiowas, Art. 2, 14 Stat. 717, 719.

<sup>19</sup> Act of July 18, 1894, sec. 8, 28 Stat. 107, 108. A similar provision is found in the act providing for the division of Dakota into two states and enabling the people of North Dakota, South Dakota, Montana, and Washington to form constitutions and state governments, Act of February 22, 1889, sec. 4, 26 Stat. 676.

<sup>20</sup> 65 Stat. 787, repealing secs. 171-173, 186, 219-220 of title 25 of U. S. C. Some of these provisions act interpreted in 18 Op. A. G. 805 (1887).

agent of Indian Affairs to remove from an Indian reservation "dormant" persons, and included various measures of military control within the boundaries of the reservations.

A summary of these repealed laws conveys an excellent insight into early congressional disregard of the civil liberties of Indians.

Sections 171, 172, and 173 of the United States Code were derived from the Trade and Intercourse Act.<sup>21</sup> They prohibited the sending or carrying of seditious messages to Indians and correspondence with foreign nations to excite Indians to war.<sup>22</sup> Like many other Indian espionage laws, they were broad, unambiguous, and liable to be applied to situations beyond the contemplation of the Congress,<sup>23</sup> as when the Federal Government arrested an individual who conferred with the Santa Pueblo in order to join in opposing a Government engineering project in the Pueblo.<sup>24</sup>

Section 219 required foreigners<sup>25</sup> entering the Indian country to secure a passport from the Department of the Interior or officers of the United States commanding the nearest military post on the frontier.

Section 220<sup>26</sup> empowered the superintendent of Indian affairs and the Indian agents and subagents to remove persons illegally in the Indian country and authorized the President to direct the military force to be employed in such removal.

Section 241<sup>27</sup> provided that a person remaining after removal from the Indian country would be liable to a penalty of \$1,000.

Section 242 authorized the Commissioner of Indian Affairs with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior to remove any person from a reservation whose presence in his judgment may be "detrimental to the peace and welfare of the Indians."

In an opinion of the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior discussing this section, it was said:

"The power of removal under this section has been held to cover not only collectors, but even an alien agent of an incorporated town in a Territory. The alien in this case was not a State official, since the reservation was not then included within a State but the decision would be equally applicable if he were *de jure* *de facto* (1903 70 S. W. 102, 4 I. T. 57). The question of whether the presence of any person in Indian country is detrimental to the welfare of the Indians is one for the Commissioner of Indian Affairs and the Secretary of the Interior, and the courts will not review their decision. *United States v. Skutumpah* (1879, Fed. Civ. No. 10, H. D. D. No. 1). See *United States v. Mullin* (1895, 71 Fed. 682, 684, D. C. Neb.)."

The Attorney General held that the Commissioner and his agents have full discretion to remove from an Indian reservation any person not of the tribe entitled to remain thereon, and that they could not be interfered with by mandamus or injunction of any court.<sup>28</sup>

<sup>21</sup> Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 726, 731. See Chapter 4, sec. 3, 6.

<sup>22</sup> A similar law Act of February 17, 1800, 2 Stat. 6, expired by its terms (Act of June 7, 1800).

<sup>23</sup> *See In re Zela Fae Xa Chee*, 94 Fed. 429, 433 (D. C. N. D. Iowa, 1899).

<sup>24</sup> American Indian Life Bull. No. 16, American Indian Defense Association, Inc. (1930) pp. 36-37.

<sup>25</sup> Derived from sec. 6 of the Act of October 10, 1884, c. 101, 1 Stat. 729, 730 R. S. 1, 2284. See Chapter 4, sec. 6.

<sup>26</sup> For the interpretation of "foreigner" see 18 Op. A. G. 675 (1887).

<sup>27</sup> Derived from sec. 10 of the Act of June 30, 1834, c. 101, 4 Stat. 730, 730 R. S. 1, 2147. See Chapter 4, sec. 8.

<sup>28</sup> Derived from sec. 2 of the Act of August 18, 1868, c. 129, 11 Stat. 60, 90, R. S. 1, 2143.

<sup>29</sup> Derived from sec. 2 of the Act of June 12, 1858, c. 175, 11 Stat. 328, 333, R. S. 1, 2149. See Chapter 4, sec. 8.

<sup>30</sup> 161 Fed. 886 (C. C. A. 8, 1908).

<sup>31</sup> 20 Op. A. G. 216 (1891).

Sections 223, 224, 225 empowered the President to employ military forces for the enforcement of various laws, and in the arrest of rebellious Indians.<sup>19</sup>

Section 226 authorized the marshal in executing process in Indian country to employ a posse comitatus, not exceeding three persons in any of the states respectively, to assist in executing process by arresting and bringing in prisoners from the Indian country.<sup>20</sup>

(3) *Oppressive federal administrative action*—Administrative oppression has often infringed on the civil liberties of Indians. The oppression depended upon two main factors: (a) The great concentration of power in administrative officials, (b) the practice of continuing Indian tribes on reservations. Both of these conditions were described by the Court of Claims in the case of *Cherokee v. United States*,<sup>21</sup> involving Indians of the Cherokee Reservation.

These Indians, indeed, in 1878 occupied an anomalous position, unknown to the common or the civil law or to any system of municipal law. They were neither citizens nor aliens; they were neither free persons nor slaves; they were the wards of the nation and yet, on a reservation under a military guard, were little else than prisoners of war while war did not exist. Dull Knife and his daughters could be invited guests at the table of officers and gentlemen, behaving with dignity and propriety, and yet could be confined for life on a reservation which was to them little better than a dungeon, on the mere order of his executive officer.

(a) *Concentration of administrative power*—"All persons living in civilized societies are subjected to the orders of municipal officers and to employees in Indian, policeman, tax collectors, judges, and administrative boards and numerous private agencies and individuals, such as employers, creditors, utility companies and landlords. Up to a few years ago the 200,000 reservation Indians were subjected to perhaps the greatest concentration of administrative domination in our governmental structure. At this time the Indian Bureau, represented by the superintendent, combined for these Indians the functions of an employer, landlord, policeman, judge, physician, banker, teacher, relief administrator and employment agency. According to the report of the Bureau of Municipal Research, the Indian superintendent is "even within the territorial jurisdiction prescribed for him. He is ex officio both guardian and trustee. In both of these capacities he acts while deciding what is needed for the Indian and while disbursing funds."<sup>22</sup>

As early as 1834 the great power of Indian agents was commented upon by the House Committee of Indian Affairs in a report,<sup>23</sup> which stated:

The tribes are placed at too great a distance from the Government to enable them to make their complaints against the arbitrary acts of our agents heard and if it is believed that they had much chance of complaint

thither to they have suffered in silence. The agents, being subject to no immediate control, have acted under such arbitrary responsibility that that of accountability for monies received. Although much is expected from the personal character of the agents, yet it is not deemed safe to depend entirely upon it. (P. 8)

Since 1881, Indian Service officials and judges chosen and removable by the superintendent of the reservation could arrest, try and imprison reservation Indians. This system has been subjected to continued criticism by Congressmen, Indians, and Indian welfare societies. Prior to the election of President Franklin D. Roosevelt, several other administrations initiated studies to reform this condition but few substantial changes resulted.<sup>24</sup>

On November 27, 1935 the Secretary of the Interior revoked the regulations of the office, in force since 1884,<sup>25</sup> which empowered the superintendent of an Indian reservation to act as judge, jury, prosecuting attorney, police officer, and jailer. A judicial system was established giving the defendents the right to formal charges, jury trial, power to summon witnesses and the privilege of bail.

John Coffee, Commissioner of Indian Affairs, has described the revised Law and Order Regulations in these terms:<sup>26</sup>

Indian Service Officials are prohibited from interfering, obstructing or interfering with the members of the Indian community. The appointment and removal of Indian judges on these reservations, where courts of Indian officials are now in use, are made subject to confirmation by the Indians of the reservation. Indian defendants will hereafter have the benefit of formal charges, the power to summon witnesses, the privilege of bail, and the right to trial by jury. The offenses for which punishment may be imposed are specifically enumerated, the maximum of 6 months or \$500 fine being imposed for such offenses as assault and battery, abduction, embezzlement, fraud, forgery, misbranding and bribery.

The revision of law and order regulations is one step in the program of the present administration to eliminate obsolete regulations and bureaucratic procedures governing the conduct of Indians, and to endow the Indian tribes themselves with increased responsibility and freedom in local self government.

These regulations are subject to modifications in the light of local conditions in each tribe organized under the Indian Reorganization Act.

Administrative control of Indian life, until recently, rested in the right of religious freedom.

Administrators who identified civilization with a particular sect infringing the religious liberty of the Indians and interfered, on the ground of immorality, with many of the dances and other cherished customs of some of the tribes.<sup>27</sup> On January 4, 1931,

<sup>19</sup> Annual Report of Secretary of the Interior (1938), pp. 127-130.  
<sup>20</sup> Rights modified in 1901. *28 F. Indian Rights*, and the Federal Courts (1940), 24 Mann L. Rev. 155, 194.

<sup>21</sup> Annual Report of Secretary of the Interior (1941), p. 166. For a history of Courts of Indian Officials, see Leupp, *The Indian and His Tribes* (1910), pp. 241-247.

<sup>22</sup> Office of Indian Affairs, Circular No. 1667, August 20, 1941, reids in part.

The sun dance and all other similar dances, so called religious ceremonies are considered "Indian Officers" under existing regulations, and restrictive penalties are provided. I repeat such restriction as applicable to any (illegitimate) dance which involves: (a) the religious giving away of property; (b) frequent or prolonged periods of celebration; (c) in fact any disorderly or plainly excessive performance; (d) dances which are held, conducted, or conducted in a manner which is harmful, and shrewd, indifference to family welfare.

In all such instances the regulations should be enforced. The Superintendent to this Council in February 14, 1929, contained recommendations presented by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs including the following:

That the Indian dances be limited to one in each month in the daylight hours of one day in the middle, and at one center in

<sup>23</sup> Section 221 is derived from sec. 21 and 22 of the Act of June 30, 1934, c. 161, 4 Stat. 729, 742, 733. R. 9, 4, 213. Section 224, from sec. 22 of the same act. R. 9, 4, 213. Section 225 from sec. 19 of the same act, R. 9, 4, 213. See Chapter 4, sec. 6.

<sup>24</sup> Derived from sec. 4 of the Act of June 14, 1898, c. 161, 11 Stat. 102, 164, R. 5, 4, 213. An absolute provision, which is still inoperative. See 187, 29 U. S. C. which permits the Superintendent of Indian Affairs to suspend a chief or headman of a band or tribe for transgressing on allotments. See Chapter 4, sec. 9.

<sup>25</sup> 28 C. Stat. 317, 12-324 (1895).

<sup>26</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 7-13.

<sup>27</sup> Administration of the Indian Office (Bureau of Municipal Research Publication No. 67) (1916), p. 21. "All officers," wrote in Indian agent to the commissioners in September, 1890, "are punished as I deem expedient, and the Indians offer no resistance." Treaty, *A People Without Law* (1891) OR All Month 640, 751.

<sup>28</sup> 28d Cong., 1st sess., Reports of Committee, No. 476, May 20, 1884.



ushed forth into the night. The troops pursued during upon them as upon enemies in war, those who escaped the sword perished in the storm. Twelve days later the remaining captives upon the command of the band in a ravine 70 miles from Fort Robinson. The troops encircled the Indians, leaving no possible avenue of escape. The Indians fired on them killing a lieutenant and two privates. The troops advanced, the Indians, then without ammunition, rushed in desperation toward the troops with their hunting knives in hand, but before they had advanced many paces a volley was discharged by the troops and all was over. "The bodies of 24 Indians were found in the ravine—17 bucks, 5 squaws, and 2 papooses." Nine men, some were taken—1 wounded man and 8 women, 5 of whom were wounded. The officer in command maliciously wrote the epitaph of the slain in his dispatch announcing the result. The Cheyennes fought with extraordinary courage and firmness, and received all terms but death." The final result of the 1st Cheyenne war was, that of the 320 who broke away in September, 7 wounded Cheyennes were sent back to the reservation. (Pp 322-323)

Although there never was any judicial authority for confining Indians on reservations, administrators relied upon the magic solving word "wardship" to justify the seclusion of such Indians. Thus the statement on "Policy and Administration of Indian Affairs" which appears in the "Report on Indian Taxed and Not Taxed, at the Eleventh Census, 1890" declares:

"The Indian not being considered a citizen of the United States, but a ward of the nation, he can not even leave the reservation without permission."<sup>12</sup>

It is now recognized that there is no legal authority for confining any Indian within a reservation.

### B REMEDIES

The courts have pointed to two ways in which an Indian may meet misdeeds directed at him as an Indian. One way is to give up the status that subjects him to oppression. If he is a member of an oppressed tribe, he may give up his citizenship in that tribe. The other way is to attack the oppressive measure itself.

The former alternative is based upon the individual right of expatriation. The latter is based upon the right of a racial minority to be immune from racial discrimination. This latter right our Indian population shares with every other minority group in the United States and since all the minority groups that have reason to fear discriminatory legislation make up together a great majority of our population, the asserted right to be immune from racial discrimination lies at the heart of our democratic institutions.

(1) *The right of expatriation*.—Oppression against a racial minority is more terrible than most other forms of oppression, because there is no escape from one's race. The victim of economic oppression may be moved up in the struggle by the hope that he can improve his economic status. The victim of religious oppression may embrace the religion of his oppressors. The victim of political oppression may change his political affiliation. But the victim of racial persecution cannot change his race. For these victims there is no sanctuary and no escape.

<sup>12</sup> 11 R. Misc. Doc. No. 340 92d Cong. 1st sess., pt. 15 (1894), p. 68.

<sup>13</sup> Expatriation is the voluntary act of changing one's residence from one country to another. In Indian law it connotes the giving up of membership in a tribe. On the general subject of expatriation see 3 Moore International Law Digest (1906) pp. 762-779, Hunt, *The American Passport* (1890), pp. 127-144, Moore, *American Diplomatic Law* (1918), c. VII.

If special legislation governing Indians refers to a racial group "there is no way in which the individual Indian can avoid the impact of such laws. If on the other hand he we have elsewhere suggested such laws refer primarily to persons living in a certain social or political status then presumably the oppressed Indian, by changing that status, can escape the force of such legislation.

This issue never has been squarely raised before the United States Supreme Court, but the viewpoint here put forward is confirmed by the only statement the Supreme Court has made upon the question, the dictum of the majority opinion in the *Dred Scott Case*:

"it an individual should leave his nation or tribe, and take up his abode among the white population he would be entitled to all the rights and privileges which would belong to an immigrant from any other foreign people."

There is one federal case which squarely raised the question whether Indians can avoid oppression at the hands of the Federal Government by renouncing their allegiance to their tribe and abandoning the reservation assigned to them: *U.S.*

*The case of United States v. Chief Standing Bear v. Crook* arose out of an attempt of a band of Ponka Indians led by Chief Standing Bear to escape from a reservation in Indian Territory to which they had been removed by the Indian Department. After a few months on their new reservation they succeeded in escaping to Nebraska, where they took up a residence with friendly Omaha Indians. Brigadier General Crook, Commander of the Military Department of the Platte, was ordered to arrest Standing Bear and his followers, and to return them to the Ponka Reservation in Indian Territory. Standing Bear managed to secure attorneys, who sued out a writ of habeas corpus against General Crook. The principal ground of the writ was the claim that Standing Bear and his followers had renounced their membership in the Ponka tribe. Since they were no longer members of the tribe, it was argued that neither the Indian Department nor the United States Army could force these Indians to live upon the Ponka Reservation.

The issue of fact was thus formulated by the court per Dundy, J.

"It is claimed upon the one side, and denied upon the other, that the relatives had withdrawn and seceded, for all time, from their connection with the tribe to which they are longed, and upon this point alone was their new testimony produced by either party hereto." (P. 666)

On the issue of fact the court found as follows:

Standing Bear, the principal witness, states that out of five hundred and eighty-one Indians who went from the reservation in Dakota to the Indian Territory, one hundred and fifty died within a year or so, and a great proportion of the others were sick and disabled, caused

<sup>14</sup> The thesis that our law governing Indians is "racial law" is denuded by Heinrich Krieger of the *Notgemeinschaft der Deutschen Wissenschaft* in an article, *Principles of the Indian Law in the Act of June 18, 1934* (1935) 3 Geo. Wash. L. Rev. 270 (announced as part of a dissertation on "American Racial Law").

<sup>15</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 1.

<sup>16</sup> *Dred Scott v. Sandford* 10 How. 404 (1856). A tribal council cannot prevent a member from expatriating himself. *Memo. Sol. J. D. March 19 1926*.

<sup>17</sup> 25 Fed. Cl. No. 14891 (C. C. Neuh. 1879). See Canfield, *The Legal Position of the Indian* (1881) 15 Am. J. Rev. 21, 93. *U.S. v. United States v. United States*, 40 C. Cls. 418, 430 (1907), and *United States v. Bear*, 17 Fed. Cl. 76 (C. C. Ore. 1888), holding that an Indian who abandoned himself from the reservation to obtain liquor, did not expatriate himself.

<sup>18</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 696. *United States v. Chief Standing Bear v. Crook*, supra.

in a great measure, no doubt, from change of climate and to save himself and the survivors of his wasted family, and the feeble remnants of his household of followers, he determined to leave the land in *Driftwood* and return to his old home, where, to use his own language, "he might live and die in peace, and be buried with his fathers." It also states that he informed the agent of their final purpose to leave and return to their old home, and that he and his followers had finally decided, and forever severed his and their connection with the Ponca tribe of Indians and had resolved to disband as a tribe, or band, of Indians, and to cut loose from the government, go to work, become self-sustaining, and support the habits and customs of a higher civilization. To accomplish what would seem to be a desirable and laudable purpose all who were this so to do went to work to earn a living. The Omaha Indians, who speak the same language, and with whom many of the Ponca have long continued to intimately share their employment and planned to cultivate so as to make them self-sustaining. And it was when it was the Omaha reservation and when this employment that they were attacked by order of the government for the purpose of being taken back to the Indian Territory. They claim to be unable to see the justice, or reason or wisdom or necessity, of removing them by force from their own native plains and blood relations to a far off country, in which they can see little but new made graves, opening to their reception. The land from which they fled in fear has no attractions for them. The love of home and native land was strong enough in the minds of these people to induce them to have every peril to return and live and the whole they had been rejected. The bones of the dead son of Standing Bear were not to repose in the land they hoped to be leaving forever but were carefully preserved and protected, and found a pit of what was to them a melancholy procession homeward.

(Ep 936, 938)

In view of the foregoing facts the court reached the conclusion that the Indian relations

\* \* \* did all they could to separate themselves from their tribe and to sever their tribal relations for the purpose of becoming self-sustaining and living without support from the government. This being so, it presents the question as to whether or not an Indian can withdraw from his tribe, sever his tribal relation therewith and terminate his allegiance thereto, for the purpose of making an independent living and adopting an own civilization.

If Indian tribes are to be regarded and treated as separate but dependent nations, there can be no serious difficulty about the question. If they are not to be regarded and treated as separate, dependent nations, then no allegiance is owing from an individual Indian to his tribe, and he could therefore, withdraw therefrom at any time. The question of expatriation has engaged the attention of government from the time of its very foundation. Many heated discussions have been entered on between our own and foreign governments, on this great question, until diplomacy has triumphantly secured the right to every person found within our jurisdiction. This right has always been claimed and admitted by our government, and it is now no longer an open question. It can make little difference, then, whether we accord to the Indian tribes a national character or not, as in either case I think the individual Indian possesses, the alien and God given right to withdraw from his tribe and live away from it, as though it had no further existence. If the right of expatriation was open to doubt in this country down to the year 1869 certainly since that time no sort of question as to the right can now exist. On the 27th of July of that year congress passed an act, now appearing as section 1999 of the Revised Statutes, which declares that "Whereas, the right of expatriation is a natural and inherent right of all people indispensable to the enjoyment of the rights of life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness; and, whereas, in the recognition of this principle the government has freely received emigrants from all nations, and invested them with the rights of citizenship \* \* \* Therefore, any declaration, insti-

tution, opinion, order, or decision of any officer of the United States which denies, restricts, impairs, or questions the right of expatriation is declared inconsistent with the fundamental principles of the Republic."

This declaration must forever settle the question until it is repealed by other legislation upon the same subject (P 606)

The federal court, in granting a writ of *habeas corpus* to Standing Bear against General Crook established a precedent which many Indians, since Standing Bear have followed, and which many administrations since General Crook have recognized. In the closing decades of the nineteenth century and down to very recent times, the trend of legislation and of administration with respect to Indian affairs was to decrease the area of tribal land and the authority of tribal councils, to multiply the restrictions upon the use that Indian tribes might make of their remaining property, and to break down tribal governments, tribal customs, and tribal social life. But this one door to freedom was left open, the individual Indian might accept an allotment of land, have the restrictions upon his land tenure removed, adopt "the habits of civilized life," abandon his tribal relations, attain citizenship and thus achieve freedom from the oppression of Indian Bureau control. This was the way in which the Indian Bureau was to dissolve the Indian problem. The more intelligent the oppression of the Bureau upon the life of the tribe the more successful was the Bureau in achieving its objective. The very quota of spiritual releases from the tribal life was on each reservation, the criterion of the Indian superintendent's success. It did not matter much that those who grasped at freedom through immigration of tribal relations and federal property frequently carried their goal broken in spirit and smothered of their lands. To many Indians, as well as to many Indian administrators, this was an advance from servitude to freedom, from barbarism to civilization.

The right of expatriation established by the Standing Bear case remains a significant human right, even where Indian tribes are actually moving in an organized way toward the idea of freedom from Indian Bureau supervision. The right of expatriation is an answer not only to federal oppression but to tribal oppression as well. It would be remarkable if the development of Indian self government failed to give rise to dissatisfied individuals and minority groups who considered their tribal status a misfortune. History shows that virtuous loss in strength when they seek to present such unwilling subjects from renouncing allegiance.

(2) Antidiscrimination statutes and treaties—Against the complex background of discriminatory state and federal statutes, administrative oppression, and public discrimination, prejudice and mistreatment, and treaties, state and federal statutes and administrative things prohibiting discrimination against Indians of any race.

Treaties ceding Louisiana, New Mexico, and Alaska to the United States contained guarantees of civil liberties to all the inhabitants of the ceded territory. Later, federal statutes provided for equality of treatment between Indians and whites. Many recent statutes prohibit discrimination against the Indians or against any race.

(a) *Federal statutes affecting Indians only*—The Act of March 4, 1875,<sup>1</sup> granting bounty lands to soldiers, provided that Indians shall be granted lands on the same terms as white men. Recent statutes appropriating money or ceding land from a reservation for school purposes, often contain a condition that the

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 3

<sup>2</sup> On legislative attempts to eliminate racial and religious discrimination see 89 Col. L. Rev. 986 (1938)

<sup>3</sup> See 7, 10 Stat. 701, 702

schools shall be available to Indian children on an equality with white children."

(b) *Federal statutes affecting all races*—Civil rights laws protect Indians as well as other races against various forms of governmental and public discrimination.<sup>10</sup> Some recent laws expressly prohibit discrimination against any race. An excellent illustration is a clause in section 9 of the Act of June 28, 1917,<sup>11</sup> establishing the Civilian Conservation Corps, which provides: "No person shall be excluded on account of race, color, or creed." A frequent provision is a condition on grants of land to the State that its institutions shall be open to all races.<sup>12</sup>

Other statutes which do not contain express guarantees of equality have been administratively interpreted to prohibit discrimination against Indians. A recent administrative ruling of this kind by the Solicitor of the Department of Agriculture on February 17, 1937, declared unlawful the exclusion of Indians and Indian lands from soil conservation benefit payments.<sup>13</sup>

(c) *State statutes affecting all races*—Over one third of the States have enacted civil rights statutes prohibiting various kinds of racial discrimination.<sup>14</sup>

(d) *Treaties affecting all races*—The civil liberties of the Indians of the Territories of Louisiana and New Mexico and the Alaskan natives were protected by treaty guarantees until they became citizens.

Article 3 of the Treaty of April 30, 1804,<sup>15</sup> whereby the United States purchased the Territory of Louisiana from the French Republic, provides:

The inhabitants of the ceded territory shall be incorporated in the Union of the United States, and admitted

<sup>10</sup> Act of August 21, 1916, 40 Stat. 524 (City of Blandfeen v. D.); Act of May 31, 1919, 40 Stat. 792 (Fort Hall Indian Reservation); Act of January 7, 1919, 40 Stat. 1033; Act of April 1, 1920, 41 Stat. 849 (Blackfeet); Act of June 1, 1920, 41 Stat. 771 (Crow); Act of March 1, 1921, 41 Stat. 1375 (Fort Tolkamp); Act of May 15, 1920, 41 Stat. 131 (Blackfeet); Act of February 11, 1911, 40 Stat. 1105 (Klamath); Act of February 11, 1911, 40 Stat. 3106 (Fort Peck); Act of June 7, 1916, 40 Stat. 188; Act of June 27, 1917, 40 Stat. 340; Act of June 7, 1918, 40 Stat. 451; Act of June 7, 1917, 40 Stat. 199; Act of May 1917, 40 Stat. 191.

<sup>11</sup> Sec. 1 of the Act of April 20, 1871, 17 Stat. 13 provides for recovery in tort against any person depriving another person of civil rights guaranteed by the Constitution and laws. Other federal statutes, such as the terms, civil rights include: Act of May 31, 1910, sec. 1, 16 Stat. 140, R. S. § 629, 2004, Act of March 4, 1890, sec. 19-20, 51 Stat. 1088, 1092.

<sup>12</sup> 70 Stat. 217, 120 extended until July 1, 1941 by Act of August 7, 1919, 41 Stat. 1284, 10 U. S. C. § 984a. The original law creating a temporary Civilian Conservation Corps contains a similar provision. Act of March 31, 1931, c. 17, sec. 3, 45 Stat. 22, 23.

<sup>13</sup> Act of February 19, 1917, 40 Stat. 353; Act of May 31, 1914, 48 Stat. 780. And cf. Act of October 1, 1890, sec. 10, 26 Stat. 665 (Indian Territory). R. S. § 2114.

<sup>14</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 10, fn. 511.

<sup>15</sup> Colorado Statutes Annotated (1935) c. 25, Connecticut Supplement to General Statutes (1937) c. 519, sec. 1070c. General Statutes (Revision of 1910), c. 413, sec. 6060-6061. Illinois Revised Statutes (1919) c. 28, sec. 125-128, Indiana Bureau Annotated Statutes (1934) c. 10-101, 10-102, Iowa Code (1919), c. 602, sec. 18251-18292. Kansas General Statutes (1935) c. 21, sec. 2124-2426, Louisiana Davis's General Statutes (1935), title 13, sec. 1070-1073, Massachusetts, Acts and Resolves (1934) c. 117 (1934) c. 140, Michigan Compiled Laws (1929) sec. 16809-16811, Minnesota, Mason's Minnesota Statutes (1927) c. 53, sec. 7321, Nebraska Compiled Statutes (1929), c. 28, sec. 101-102, New Jersey Revised Statutes (1937) title 10, c. 1, sec. 1-9. New York, Thompson's Laws of New York (1936), sec. 40, amended c. 810. Laws of 1919 and sec. 40, c. 41 and 42, Ohio, Thompson's Ohio Code Annotated (Ridgway's) (1936), sec. 12940-12942, Pennsylvania, Laws of Pennsylvania (1937) Act No. 132, Rhode Island General Laws (1918) c. 604, sec. 28, Washington, Remington's Revised Statutes (1932), title 14, c. 10, sec. 2858, Wisconsin Statutes (1937), sec. 810.75.

<sup>16</sup> 8 Stat. 200, 202.

is soon as possible, according to the principles of the Federal constitution, to the enjoyment of all the rights, advantages, and immunities of citizens of the United States, and in the mean time they shall be maintained and protected in the free enjoyment of their liberty, property, and the religion which they profess.

A provision along the same lines is contained in the treaties whereby the Territories of New Mexico<sup>16</sup> and Alaska<sup>17</sup> were added to the United States.

(3) *Constitutional protection*—The right of the Indian to be immune from racial discrimination by Government officials is protected by the Fifth, Fourteenth, and Fifteenth Amendments of the United States Constitution.<sup>18</sup>

Although the Fourteenth and Fifteenth Amendments were primarily passed to protect the Negroes, they have been successfully invoked to protect the civil liberties of other races.

While the reasons for discrimination against Indians include economic competition and ignorance, the exemption of some of the Indians from property taxation perhaps constitutes the most common avowed reason for this discrimination.<sup>19</sup> Obviously this argument is inapplicable to the many Indians who do not possess exempt property.<sup>20</sup>

It is also possible to avail as to other Indians. Until recently state and federal officials were exempt from the income tax of the federal and state governments respectively. The possession of tax-exempt securities has never been considered a justification for denying a wealthy citizen possessing such securities the right to vote.

Another justification for discrimination the grant of special federal benefits to the Indians, sometimes sprung from the erroneous impression that the Government supports most Indians. The majority of the Indian population supports itself and does not receive direct and continuous federal aid.<sup>21</sup> This argument is clearly invalid in so far as it is applied to discrimination against political rights, unless it be applied equally to non-Indian beneficiaries of federal subsidies such as shipowners, farmers, beneficiaries of tariffs, and relief recipients. On the other hand, it may be argued a little more truthfully that special Government assistance and facilities rendered tribal Indians may have legal validity to a state law on regulation discriminating against such Indians in the dispensing of similar state benefits and services.

Indians, like other races, are constitutionally protected against legislative or administrative racial discrimination because of color or race.<sup>22</sup> In a leading early case, *Strader v. West Virginia*,<sup>23</sup> the Supreme Court of the United States, in discussing the Fourteenth Amendment, said:

" \* \* \* The words of the amendment, it is true, are prohibitive, but they contain a necessary implication of a

<sup>17</sup> Treaty of Gadsden, Mexico signed February 2, 1848, 9 Stat. 922.

<sup>18</sup> Act of May 15, 1870, 17 Stat. 599. See Chapter 21, sec. 3 for the text of this article.

<sup>19</sup> F. S. Cohen, Indian Rights and the Federal Courts (1940), 24 Minn. L. Rev. 145, 191.

<sup>20</sup> See, Under Tax American (1915), p. 290.

<sup>21</sup> It is estimated that approximately 100,000 Indians are totally landless and in many cases homeless. Indian Land Tenure Economic Status and Population Trends, Part X of the Supplementary Report of the Land Planning Committee to the National Resources Board (1938), p. 2.

<sup>22</sup> Indian Land Tenure Economic Status and Population Trends, Part X of the Supplementary Report of the Land Planning Committee to the National Resources Board (1938), p. 2, 11.

<sup>23</sup> 10 U. S. 301 (1837).

<sup>24</sup> See *Nixon v. Hurd*, 273 U. S. 570 (1927) and see sec. 2 supra. The Court in *Buchanan v. Wemy*, 247 U. S. 80 (1917) said that while a principal purpose of the Fourteenth Amendment "was to protect persons of color the broad language used was deemed sufficient to protect all persons, white and black against discriminatory legislation by the States. This is now the settled law." (P. 70.)

positive immunity, or right most valuable to the colored race—the right to exemption from military legislation against them exclusively as colored—exemption from local discrimination implying inferiority in civil society, lessening the security of their enjoyment of the rights which others enjoy, and discriminations which are steps towards reducing them to the condition of a subject race. (Pp. 307-308.) \* \* \* It is an absurd discrimination to exclude a race of color. (P. 310.)

In this case the court held that discrimination by any state agency in selection for jury service because of race is a denial of equal protection of law. The court has subsequently reaffirmed this doctrine in many cases, mostly involving a Negro the most recent being *Swain v. Alabama* \* and *Hunt v. McIntosh* \*\*.

While segregation per se is not held to be discrimination, "the facilities offered must be substantially equal." This doctrine was reaffirmed in the case of *Missouri ex rel. Thomas v. Canaday* \*\*\*. The petitioners, a Negro, was denied a seat of Indians compelling the board of trustees of the University of Missouri to admit him to the law school of the university. The qualifications of Gaines for admission apart from race, were admitted. In holding that this discrimination constituted a denial of the Negro's constitutional right (Chief Justice Hughes, speaking for the majority of the court, said

\* \* \* The basic consideration is \* \* \* what opportunities Missouri itself furnishes to white students and denies to negroes solely upon the ground of color. The admissibility of laws separating the races in the enjoyment of privileges afforded by the State rests wholly upon the equality of the privileges which the laws give to the separated groups within the State. The question here is not of a duty of the State to supply legal facilities of the quality of the training which it does supply, but of its duty when it provides such training to furnish it to the residents of the State upon the basis of an equality of rights. By the operation of the laws of Missouri a privilege has been conferred upon white law students, which is denied to negroes in reason of their race. The white student is afforded legal education within the State, the negro resident having the same qualifications is refused it and must go outside the State to obtain it. That is a denial of the equality of legal rights to the enjoyment of the privilege which the State bestows upon, and the provision for the payment of tuition fees in another State does not remove the discrimination. (Pp. 349-350.)

As in the case of the Negro, one of the principal battle grounds regarding discrimination against the Indian is exclusion from public schools. The only case which has squarely considered the Indian's right to state education held that the Fourteenth Amendment requires a state to grant equal educational opportunities to persons of the Indian race \*\*.

In 1924 admission to a state public school was sought by Alice Papp, a full blooded Indian, a citizen of the United States and of

California who had never lived in tribal relations with any tribe of Indians, nor owned or acknowledged allegiance to any tribe of any kind in any tribe or "nation" of Indians, nor lived on an Indian reservation. A law of California declared that the governing body of the public school could exclude Indian children from attending provided the United States Government maintained a school for Indians within the school district. Refused admission she sought a writ of mandamus to compel the board to admit her. The Supreme Court of California granted the writ and held that the law violated the state and federal constitutions, saying:

The privilege of receiving an education at the expense of the state is not one belonging to those upon whom it is conferred as citizens of the United States. The federal Constitution does not provide for any general system of education to be conducted and controlled by the national government. It is distinctly a state affair. \* \* \* But the denial to children whose parents as well as themselves, are citizens of the United States and of this state, admission to the common schools solely because of color or racial differences without having made provision for their education equal in all respects to that intended persons of any other race or color is a violation of the provisions of the Fourteenth Amendment of the Constitution of the United States. \* \* \* (Pp. 928-929.)

The following, dicta in the *Papp* case indicate that it is in the case of Negroes a state law segregating Indian pupils from white pupils are constitutionally so long as there is no disparity between the education that white pupils are offered to both races. The California Supreme Court said:

The establishment by the state of separate schools for Indians, as provided by the statute does not offend against either the federal or state constitutions. Questions of racial differences have arisen in various forms in the several states of the Union and it is now fairly settled that it is not in violation of the constitutional law of the state or nation, under the authority of a statute so providing, to require Indian children or others in whom a racial difference exists, to attend separate schools provided such schools are equal in every substantial respect with those in which the children of the white race \* \* \* "Equality and not identity of privileges and rights is what is guaranteed to the citizen." \*\*

Since the Papp case dealt with an Indian who was not a member of any tribe, the scope of the decision is not entirely certain.

Indian children are entitled to state educational benefits financed by federal grants and with the proviso that there shall be no discrimination against Indian children \*\*\*. A federal statute disposing of Indian lands upon which schools are to be established in any provide that Indian children shall be allowed to attend the schools \*\*.

\*\* 294 U. S. 897 (1935). On discrimination in housing see *Beckham v. Barker* 243 U. S. 80 (1917) and *Herman v. Turner* 318 U. S. 803 (1943). On billing Negroes from party primaries see *Nease v. Hendon* 278 U. S. 516 (1929). Also see *Yick Wo v. Hopkins* 118 U. S. 356 (1886) and the *Hauptstadt v. Giese* 100 U. S. 744 (1872). On discrimination against voting see see 9 Supp. 2d 103 U. S. 937 (1896), *McClure v. Johnson* 278 U. S. 816 (1929). *Ch. Cummings v. Board of Education* 178 U. S. 528 (1900).

\*\* 305 U. S. 927 (1938).

\*\* *The Courts and the Negro Separate School* (1934). 4 *Journal of Negro Education*, pp. 239 et seq. especially pp. 391-441.

\*\* *Papp v. Big Pine School Dist. of Inyo County* 194 Cal. 661, 226 P. 928 (1924). For a subsequent law prohibiting the segregation of Indians see Cal. School Laws, 1941 (2d. Ed. c. 1 Art. 7, sec. 17-34, (created by Act of June 15, 1934. Session Laws 1938, pp. 1762-1765. Also see District of Columbia Laws of 1936, Act of April 17, 1936, p. 700.

\*\* *The Courts and the Negro Separate School* (1934). 4 *Journal of Negro Education*, pp. 239 et seq. especially pp. 391-441.

\*\* *Papp v. Big Pine School Dist. of Inyo County* 194 Cal. 661, 226 P. 928 (1924). For a subsequent law prohibiting the segregation of Indians see Cal. School Laws, 1941 (2d. Ed. c. 1 Art. 7, sec. 17-34, (created by Act of June 15, 1934. Session Laws 1938, pp. 1762-1765. Also see District of Columbia Laws of 1936, Act of April 17, 1936, p. 700.

\*\* *The Courts and the Negro Separate School* (1934). 4 *Journal of Negro Education*, pp. 239 et seq. especially pp. 391-441.

\*\* *Papp v. Big Pine School Dist. of Inyo County* 194 Cal. 661, 226 P. 928 (1924). For a subsequent law prohibiting the segregation of Indians see Cal. School Laws, 1941 (2d. Ed. c. 1 Art. 7, sec. 17-34, (created by Act of June 15, 1934. Session Laws 1938, pp. 1762-1765. Also see District of Columbia Laws of 1936, Act of April 17, 1936, p. 700.

\*\* *The Courts and the Negro Separate School* (1934). 4 *Journal of Negro Education*, pp. 239 et seq. especially pp. 391-441.

\*\* *Papp v. Big Pine School Dist. of Inyo County* 194 Cal. 661, 226 P. 928 (1924). For a subsequent law prohibiting the segregation of Indians see Cal. School Laws, 1941 (2d. Ed. c. 1 Art. 7, sec. 17-34, (created by Act of June 15, 1934. Session Laws 1938, pp. 1762-1765. Also see District of Columbia Laws of 1936, Act of April 17, 1936, p. 700.

Many important prohibitions, including the Bill of Rights<sup>10</sup> of the Federal Constitution, are limited only on the power of the Federal Government. Other provisions limit the activities of state governments only,<sup>11</sup> or of the federal and state governments,<sup>12</sup> and hence are inapplicable to Indian tribes, which are not creatures of either the federal or state governments.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>10</sup> Amendments I to X inclusive.

<sup>11</sup> Articles 13 and 14.

<sup>12</sup> Amendment 10.

<sup>13</sup> *Talton v. Maestri*, 135 U.S. 376 (1910), and *Op. Patterson v. Council of State of Alaska*, 245 U.S. 1, 237 N. E. 734 (1925). *Houderman v. Levesque*, 6 Fed. 515 (1862). *United States v. Kagawa*, 115 U.S. 9, 375

The provisions of the Federal Constitution protecting personal liberty and property rights do not apply to tribal action.<sup>14</sup> In *Talton v. Maestri*<sup>15</sup> the Court held that the Fifth Amendment of the Federal Constitution, requiring indictment by a grand jury in most serious crimes, does not apply to the acts of a tribal government.

(1896). *Twine v. United States*, 215 U.S. 374 (1919), aff'd 51 C. Cl. 125 (1916), and *Aug. v. Bureau*, 166 U.S. 218, 222 (1917).

<sup>14</sup> *Op. Hol. I. D. M. 27910* October 23, 1914. *Op. Hol. I. D. M. 27910* December 13, 1911. See Chapter 7, sec. 2.

<sup>15</sup> 163 U.S. 376 (1896), discussed in Memo. Sol. I. D. August 8, 1948.

## SECTION II. THE STATUS OF FREEDMEN AND SLAVES

Although a minority included as Indians some of the members of the southern tribes, especially the plantation owners of mixed blood, possessed slaves.<sup>16</sup> Among some of the tribes, particularly the Choctaws, Chickasaws, and Seminoles, the slaves and freedmen<sup>17</sup> numbered from one-fourth to one-third of the population.<sup>18</sup>

The agents with the Choctaws, Chickasaws, and Creeks went over to the Confederacy.<sup>19</sup> After the Union troops withdrew despite treaty obligations to protect them,<sup>20</sup> their friendship was cultivated by Albert Pike acting for the Confederate State Department because of the strategic importance of the Indian country from a military and economic view.<sup>21</sup> The success of the southern troops in Arkansas owed its diplomacy.<sup>22</sup>

Although many of their members remained loyal to the Union and in consequence suffered great privation,<sup>23</sup> most of the southern tribes supported the Confederacy,<sup>24</sup> largely because of economic considerations.

Influenced by the Emancipation Proclamation, the Choctaw Nation, when severing its connection with the Confederacy,

abolished slavery in February of 1863.<sup>25</sup> The exact date when the slaves of other Indians were emancipated is doubtful. Some contend that they were freed by the Emancipation Proclamation prior to the Thirteenth Amendment of the Constitution of the United States,<sup>26</sup> which prohibits slavery within the United States in any place subject to their jurisdiction. Others<sup>27</sup> more accurately point out that the Emancipation Proclamation referred only to the states and did not extend to the Indian Territory. Although it has been suggested that the reasoning in *Wilkins v. Wilkins*<sup>28</sup> and *Jackson v. United States*,<sup>29</sup> holding that the Fourteenth Amendment to the United States Constitution did not grant citizenship to the Indians might also be applied in interpreting the Thirteenth Amendment, it is now established that the Thirteenth Amendment freed the slaves of the United States,<sup>30</sup> and its incorporated territories,<sup>31</sup> of African, Indian or mixed descent.<sup>32</sup>

The year following the adoption of the Fourteenth Amendment and 4 months after the end of the Civil War a convention of the principal southern tribes was held at Fort Smith.<sup>33</sup> Treaties were effected with each of the tribes, which provided for peace and recognized the abolition of slavery.<sup>34</sup>

Treaties containing provisions freeing slaves were also consummated with several northwestern tribes,<sup>35</sup> both before and after the Civil War.

<sup>16</sup> The Act of July 10, 1952, c. 70, 10 Stat. 74, authorized payment to legal representative of a federal or foreign firm purchasing captured slaves from Creek warriors while the war raged between the United States against the Seminole Indians in Florida.

<sup>17</sup> The freedmen were persons of African descent embracing free slaves and their descendants who had been admitted to the rights of citizens. *Gov't v. United States*, 224 U.S. 488 (1912). See Abel, *The Slaveholders*, Indiana, vol. 3, p. 201 of text.

<sup>18</sup> *Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 71*, 41st Cong. 2d sess., vol. 2, p. 1, March 24, 1870, *Gov't v. United States*, 224 U.S. 488, 102 (1912). Reports of the Dawes Commission, p. 14 (1888). The earliest reference to slaves was found in the Treaty of September 17, 1778, with the Delaware. Art. 4, 7 Stat. 13, 14.

<sup>19</sup> Schmuckler, *The Office of Indian Affairs*, *op. cit.* p. 49. The *Choctaw Freedmen v. Choctaw Nation* and *Chickasaw Nation*, 193 U.S. 115, 124 (1904). Part of the Osage, Chickasaw, Seminole, and Shawnee tribes, severed ties of alliance with the Confederacy on October 2 and 4, 1861. The Choctaws severed such a treaty on October 7, 1861, and on October 28, 1861, accepted a declaration of independence. *Wardwell*, *Political History of Choctaw Nation* (1888), pp. 132-133, 189. Also see *Op. Sol. I. D. M. 27778*, January 22, 1915. For a list of treaties negotiated by the Confederacy with the Indians, see Abel, *supra*, vol. 1 (1910), pp. 187, 175. These treaties are discussed at pp. 158-180. The Confederacy recognized slavery as a legal institution within the Indian country, p. 166.

<sup>20</sup> Abel, vol. 1, *supra*, pp. 140, 206.

<sup>21</sup> *Id.*, p. 14.

<sup>22</sup> Schmuckler, *op. cit.* p. 49.

<sup>23</sup> *Id.* The Choctaws, Creeks, and Seminoles were fully evenly divided. Abel, vol. 1, *supra*, pp. 205, 280, vol. 3, *supra*, pp. 12, 204-208. Several appropriation acts authorized the President to expend part of the appropriations for the hostile tribes on the loyal members of such tribes, who were driven from their homes during the Civil War. Act of July 7, 1862, 12 Stat. 515, 698. Act of March 8, 1868, sec. 8, 12 Stat. 774, 793.

<sup>24</sup> See *The Choctaw Freedmen*, *supra*, p. 110.

<sup>25</sup> Treaty of July 10, 1860, with the Choctaw Nation, Art. 9, 11 Stat. 791, 801. However, the large slave owners among the Choctaw Nation did not recognize this law until the fall of the Confederacy. *Wardwell*, *op. cit.*, pp. 173-174.

<sup>26</sup> Adopted September 8, 1867. *The Chickasaw Freedmen*, *supra*, p. 121.

<sup>27</sup> Abel, vol. 3, *supra*, p. 308.

<sup>28</sup> Abel, vol. 3, *supra*, p. 299.

<sup>29</sup> 112 U.S. 94 (1884).

<sup>30</sup> 84 C. Cl. 411 (1899).

<sup>31</sup> See *Sen. v. Harney*, 216 Fed. 368, 368 (C. C. A. 8, 1914), *Thompson*.

<sup>32</sup> *Twine v. United States*, 215 U.S. 374 (1919), p. 358.

<sup>33</sup> *United States v. Choctaw Nation*, 29 C. Cl. 558, 556 (1907), and with *non-Choctaw Freedmen*, 193 U.S. 115 (1904). The day before the proclamation of the Thirteenth Amendment the President approved the Joint Resolution of July 27, 1865, 15 Stat. 204, commencing General Sherman to receive from passage women and children of the Navajo Indians delivered in the Indian Territory.

<sup>34</sup> *In re Oklahoma*, 81 Fed. 347 (D. C. Alaska, 1886), in which the Court refused to recognize the tribal law of slavery because it contravenes the policy of the Constitution.

<sup>35</sup> *Twine v. United States*, 215 U.S. 374 (1919).

<sup>36</sup> *Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 71*, *supra*.

<sup>37</sup> Treaty of March 31, 1860, with the Seminole, Art. 2, 14 Stat. 765, 766, Treaty of June 16, 1866, with the Creeks, Art. 2, 14 Stat. 785, 786, Treaty of July 10, 1860, with the Choctaws, Art. 9, 14 Stat. 799, 801.

<sup>38</sup> Treaty of January 22, 1857, with the Osage and others, Art. 11, 12 Stat. 927, 929. Treaty of January 20, 1857, with the Chickasaws, Art. 12, 12 Stat. 913, 917, Treaty of August 11, 1866, with the Senecas, Art. 1, 14 Stat. 953.



Even before the war there were many freedmen in the Indian Territory<sup>437</sup> and considerable intermarriage between Negroes and southern Indians.<sup>438</sup> It is true that the emancipation of the slaves might cause prejudice against them, the United States Commissioners required the adoption of important provisions regarding the freedmen in many of the treaties, which included recognition as citizens, the granting of equal rights with Indians<sup>439</sup> and the right to share in tribal funds and property.<sup>440</sup>

The Court of Claims said:<sup>441</sup>

" \* \* \* It is impossible to find in the history of the Seminoles a trace of hostility towards their slaves or free men \* \* \* " (P. 464.)

" \* \* \* The wife of Osceola, one of their most noted, brave, and celebrated chiefs was a descendant of a fugitive slave, and it was on account of her captivity as a fugitive that this intrepid and blood chief waged a cruel

and protracted warfare against the whites \* \* \* " (P. 459.)

The court added:

" An examination of the treaties made immediately after the close of the Civil War with the tribes who had entered into treaties with the Confederates, unmistakably discloses that the predominant purpose and intent of the Government as to preserving slavery was to protect and care for the freedmen. " (P. 466.)

The setting up of the freedmen as worthy of special consideration at a time when the Indians were suffering from economic dislocation<sup>442</sup> caused increased prejudice and among the Cherokees and Chickasaws, a reign of terror.<sup>443</sup>

Until the passage of the Citizenship Act, 1908, Indians were unable to become citizens by the regular naturalization laws, but by the Thirteenth Amendment Negroes who were formerly slaves could become citizens in this way.<sup>444</sup>

Other types of statutes distinguished between Indians and freedmen. For example, the prohibition against the execution and sale of improvements on Indian lands continued in the Act of May 2, 1890<sup>445</sup> is applicable only to improvements owned by Indians by blood and not Indians by adoption or marriage.<sup>446</sup>

<sup>437</sup> Abel, vol. 3, *supra* p. 272.

<sup>438</sup> Abel, vol. 3, *supra* p. 272. En 14. Even before the Civil War some Indians actively opposed slavery. Opposition to slavery was one of the main objectives of the Keetoowah Society, secret organization of Cherokees, formed almost a century ago. *Memorandum I D*, July 29, 1907.

<sup>439</sup> Cherokee Treaty of July 19, 1866, 14 Stat. 799; Treaty of March 21, 1866 with the Seminole Nation, Art. 2, 14 Stat. 775, 786 interpreted by *Seminole Nation v. United States*, 78 U. S. 155 (1833).

<sup>440</sup> Treaty of March 21, 1866 with the Seminole Nation, Art. 15, 11 Stat. 775. See Chapter 3, *supra* 41. On the subsequent history of these provisions see Chapter 23, *supra* 4.

<sup>441</sup> *Seminole Nation v. United States*, 78 U. S. 155 (1833).

<sup>442</sup> Abel, vol. 3, *supra* pp. 290-292, 295.

<sup>443</sup> *Ibid.* p. 273.

<sup>444</sup> *Cy. United States v. Whitcomb* 244 U. S. 131 (1917).

<sup>445</sup> See 51 Stat. 811, 815.

<sup>446</sup> *Hampton v. May*, 4 Ind. T. 502 (1902).

# CHAPTER 9

## INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS IN TRIBAL PROPERTY

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 <i>The nature of individual rights in tribal property</i> .....	183	Section 5 <i>Rights of uses in tribal property—Continued</i> .....	
Section 2 <i>Dependency of individual rights upon extent of tribal property</i> .....	185	C <i>Grazing and fishing rights</i> .....	190
Section 3 <i>Eligibility to share in tribal property</i> .....	185	D <i>Rights in tribal timber</i> .....	191
Section 4 <i>Transferability of the right to share</i> .....	187	Section 6 <i>Individual rights upon distribution of tribal property</i> .....	192
Section 5 <i>Rights of uses in tribal property</i> .....	188	A <i>Modes of distribution</i> .....	192
1 <i>Occupancy of particular tracts</i> .....	188	B <i>Time of distribution</i> .....	193
B <i>Improvements</i> .....	189	C <i>The limits of legislative distribution</i> .....	193

### SECTION 1. THE NATURE OF INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS IN TRIBAL PROPERTY<sup>1</sup>

The nature of the individual Indian's interest in tribal property presents one of the most difficult problems in the law of Indian property. It is clearly established that while legal or equitable title to real or personal property is vested in the tribe it is not vested in the individual members thereof, and yet these individual members are not entirely without legal or equitable rights in such property. The right of the individual Indian is, in effect, a right of participation similar in some respects to the rights of a stockholder in the property of a corporation.

In analyzing this right of participation, we shall be concerned, in the present chapter, with six questions:

- (1) How does the right of participation in tribal property resemble, or differ from, other forms of property right?
- (2) How far is this right of participation limited by the character and extent of the tribal property?
- (3) Who is entitled to participate in tribal property?
- (4) Under what circumstances, if any, is the individual's right of participation transferable?
- (5) What rights of uses may the individual participant exercise while property remains in tribal status?
- (6) What rights does the individual enjoy in the distribution of tribal property?

We must recognize that just as the nature of rights of participation in corporate property varies among corporations and among various classes of security holders within a single corporation, so the rights of individual Indians in tribal property exhibit a wide range of variation, and depend, in the last analysis, upon the governmental acts and contractual agreements of the Federal Government, the tribe, and the individual Indian himself.

Answers to our questions are to be found primarily in a series of statutes and treaties, nearly all of which deal with particular tribes. The judicial and administrative decisions in this field are, in nearly every case, dependent upon such particular acts and treaties.

Here, even more than in most fields of law, general principles, no matter how confidently announced by the highest authorities, must be paid down to the facts with which they deal before we are entitled to rely upon them.

<sup>1</sup> On the nature of tribal property see Chapter 15. On individual property see Chapters 10 and 11.

With this cautious introduction we turn to our first question: How does the right of participation in tribal property resemble, or differ from, other forms of property right?

The right of participation in tribal property must be distinguished, in the first place, from tenancy in common. This distinction is particularly important because a good deal of the discussion of tribal property in the decided cases involves such terms as "ownership in common," which is occasionally used to mean "tenancy in common." The distinction between tribal ownership and tenancy in common may be clearly seen if we consider the fractional interest of an Indian in an allotment in fee simple where there are so many heirs that every member of the tribe has a fractional interest, and then consider the interest which the same Indian would have in the same land if the land belonged to the tribe. In the first case, the individual Indian is a tenant in common. He may, under certain circumstances, obtain a partition of the estate. His consent is, generally, necessary to authorize the leasing of the land. His interest in the land is transferable, devisable, and inheritable. In the second case, his interest is legally more indirect, although economically it may be more valuable. He cannot, generally, secure partition of the tribal estate. He can act only as a voter in the leasing of tribal land. His interest in the tribal property is personal and cannot be transferred or inherited, but his heirs, if they are members of the tribe, will participate in the tribal property in their own right.

Observing that the Cherokee lands were held in communal ownership, the Supreme Court, speaking in the case of *The Cherokee Trust Funds*, remarks:

"\* \* \* that does not mean that each member had such an interest, as a tenant in common, that he could claim a *pro rata* proportion of the proceeds of sales made of any part of them." (P. 505.)

In the absence of legislation to the contrary, the individual Indian has no right as against the tribe to any specific part of the tribal property.<sup>2</sup> It is often said that the individual has only

<sup>1</sup> 117 U. S. 288 (1886).

<sup>2</sup> *Delaware Indians v. Cherokee Nation*, 190 U. S. 127 (1904); *United States v. Choctaw*, 245 U. S. 89 (1917). See *McDougal v. McGoff*, 257 U. S. 372 (1921); *Shawnee v. McDougal*, 170 Fed. 629 (C. C. A. 8, 1900), app. dismissed 225 U. S. 561 (1912).

a "prospective right" to future income from tribal property in which he has no present interest.<sup>1</sup> Other terms used to picture this right are "an inchoate interest," and a "dormant." These terms apply characteristically to the inchoate right of the Indian to share in tribal property. Until the property loses its tribal character and becomes individualized, his right can be no more than this, except insofar as federal law, tribal law or tribal custom may give him a more definite right of occupancy in a particular tract. In the case of tribal lands, he has, ordinarily, no vested right in them until they have been paid over to him or have been set over to his credit, perhaps subject to certain restrictions.<sup>2</sup> In the case of lands, he is not vested right unless the land or some designated interest therein has been set aside for him either socially or as tenant in common.<sup>3</sup>

The statement has often been made that the tribe holds its property in trust for its members.<sup>4</sup> This statement may be compared with the assertion frequently made that corporate property is held in trust for the stockholders (though, strictly speaking, no technical trust relationship exists in either case).

In speaking of the title to the lands of the Creek Nation, the court in *Shulthis v. McDonough*,<sup>5</sup> declared

"The tribal lands belonged to the tribe. The legal title vested in the tribe as a political society, but those lands were not held by the tribe as the public lands of the United States are held by the nation. They constituted the home or seat of the tribe. Every member, by virtue of his membership in the tribe, was entitled to dwell upon and share in the tribal property. It was granted to the tribe by the federal government not only as the home of the tribe, but as a home for each of the members."

Indian lands were generally looked upon as a permanent home to the Indians. "Considered as such, . . . it was not an natural or unequal that the vast body of lands not thus specifically and personally appropriated should be treated as the common property of the Nation. . . ."

That tribal property should be held in common for the benefit of the members of the Indian community as a whole was, according to the Supreme Court in the case of *Woodward v. de Graffenried*, the principle upon which conveyances of land to the Five

Civilized Tribes were made.<sup>6</sup> Treaties often provided that the land conveyed to the tribe was to be held in common.<sup>7</sup>

Likewise certain statutes specify that tribal lands are to be held or occupied in common.<sup>8</sup>

Indian tribal laws and customs led governments dealing with Indian lands to adopt the theory that tribal property was held for the common benefit of all.<sup>9</sup> The constitution of the Cherokee Nation, both as originally adopted in 1839 and as amended in 1860, declared in section 2, article 1, that the lands of the Cherokee Nation were to remain the common property of the tribe.<sup>10</sup>

In the case of *United States v. Clark*,<sup>11</sup> the court, in referring to the lands occupied by the Seminole and Band of Seminole Indians, stated "The reservation lands are held in common by the tribe, although individual members of the tribe may be in possession of a particular tract and such possession is recognized by the tribe" (P. 348). Many tribal constitutions adopted under the Wheeler Howard Act<sup>12</sup> provide that all lands heretofore allotted shall be held in the future as tribal property.<sup>13</sup>

Although tribal property is vested in the tribe as an entity, rather than in the individual members thereof, each member of the tribe may have an interest in the property.

The nature of the individual member's right in tribal property is discussed in *Snuffly Bros. Co. v. United States*.<sup>14</sup> The court quotes the words of an Indian witness who testified in a case in which there was a common right to fish in a great lake where all the Indians came to partake.<sup>15</sup> (P. 297.)

In the case of *Wason v. Ryan*, the Treaty of 1875 between the United States and the Quinaults is discussed. By the terms of article two of the treaty, a tract of land was to be "reserved for the use and occupation of the tribes. . . . and set apart for their exclusive use." The court construed the treaty to give the Indians an exclusive right of fishing in the waters on these lands, the right to fish being enjoyed by all members, even though the treaty was made with the tribe.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Op. Sol. I D. M 8710 August 13, 1922.

<sup>2</sup> *Taylor v. Taylor*, 51 F. 2d 984 (C. C. A. 10, 1911) cert. den. 284 U. S. 672 (1911). This case involved individual rights in Osage tribal minerals. For a discussion of special laws governing Osage tribe see Chapter 29, sec. 12.

<sup>3</sup> *Taylor v. Taylor*, 51 F. 2d 984 (C. C. A. 10, 1911) cert. den. 284 U. S. 672 (1911).

<sup>4</sup> *McKee v. Irving*, 201 Fed. 74 (C. C. A. 8, 1912), *Woodbury v. United States*, 170 Fed. 902 (C. C. A. 8, 1909). The case involved rights of an outsider before allotment had been made. In an opinion involving back annuity payments the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior wrote "The members of a tribe have in silent interest in the tribal lands and funds but until segregated by allotment or payment in severalty they remain the common property of the tribe." Op. Sol. I D. D. 42071 December 30, 1921.

<sup>5</sup> *Pendley* (Osage) as shown in royalties and proceeds from sale of land but until actually paid to him or placed to his credit—Op. Sol. I D. M 8710, August 13, 1922. See Chapter 29, sec. 123. So long as a judgment in favor of a tribe is not protested among individual members no present or former member has a vested right—Letter of Commissioner of Indian Affairs to Indian Agents, October 9, 1937.

<sup>6</sup> *Guthrie v. Taylor*, 224 U. S. 640 (1912), *St. Marie v. United States*, 34 F. Supp. 287 (D. C. S. D. Cal. 1938) aff'd — 3 F. 2d — (C. C. A. 10, 1940), 161 I D. 102 (1937). *McKee v. Irving*, 201 Fed. 74 (C. C. A. 8, 1912).

<sup>7</sup> *Liquor v. Johnston*, 161 Fed. 870 (C. C. A. 8, 1908) app. dismissed 223 U. S. 174, *Cherokee Nation v. United States*, 187 U. S. 294 (1902).

<sup>8</sup> 1870 Fed. 129 (S. D. C. C. A. 8, 1900), aff'd 228 U. S. 661 (1912).

<sup>9</sup> Also see *W. O. Winters, Lands of Great Co. v. Cherokee*, 340 Fed. 789 (C. C. A. 8, 1908). Title to Creek lands were in nation, occupants had no more than possessory right.

<sup>10</sup> *Cherokee Nation v. Jones*, 187 U. S. 109, 215 (1894).

<sup>11</sup> 238 U. S. 244 (1915). Accord *Jackson v. United States*, 421 U. S. 415 (1912), modifying and affirming *sub nom. United States v. Allen* 170 Fed. 14 (C. C. A. 8, 1910). See *Shulthis v. McDonough* 170 Fed. 549 (C. C. A. 8, 1909) app. dismissed 227 U. S. 951 (1912).

<sup>12</sup> See, for example Treaty of December, 29, 1874 with the United States of the Seneca and Shawnee Indians, 7 Stat. 411. Treaty of May 30, 1864, with the United States of the Kawasaka and Poria, Panhandle, and Wen Indians, 10 Stat. 1089. Treaty of June 22, 1875 with Chinooks and Chehalises, 21 Stat. 511. Treaty of August 6, 1810 with Cherokee, 9 Stat. 871. *Cherokee v. United States*, 187 U. S. 298 (1898) and *United States v. Cherokee Nation*, 202 U. S. 101 (1906).

<sup>13</sup> See, for example *Treaty of Resolution*, June 10, 1902, 32 Stat. 714 (Walker River, Shoshone and White River Tribes). Various allotment statutes provide that land from allotment lands to be held "in common," specifically occasionally for the reservation of grazing or timber. Tribal lands containing springs, etc. See, for example Act of March 3, 1885, 21 Stat. 340 (Timahila Reservation). Act of March 2, 1889, 25 Stat. 1013 (United Pecos and Miamas). Act of June 8, 1920, 44 Stat. 451 690 (Northern Cheyenne Indian Reservation). See, also, Chapter 15.

<sup>14</sup> See *McKee v. United States*, 201 Fed. 711, 740 (1912).

<sup>15</sup> Cited and discussed in *Cherokee Indian Land Claims*, 203 U. S. 870 (1906), and in *The Cherokee Trust Funds*, 117 U. S. 288 (1886).

<sup>16</sup> 23 F. Supp. 948, 245 (D. C. W. D. N. Y. 1934).

<sup>17</sup> Act of June 18, 1894, 48 Stat. 684, 26 U. S. Stat. C. 461, et seq.

<sup>18</sup> 19 U. S. Stat. C. sec. 2, of the Constitution and Statutes for the Shoshone-Bannock Tribes of the Fort Hall Reservation Idaho, approved April 30, 1886.

<sup>19</sup> 249 U. S. 194 (1919), affirming *sub nom. United States v. Williams v. Wagon Horse Co.*, 311 Fed. 579 (D. C. Ore. 1916).

<sup>20</sup> 15 F. 2d 255 (D. C. W. D. Wash. 1924). Accord *Talbot v. United States*, 283 U. S. 753 (1931), reversing *sub nom. United States v. Halbert* 88 F. 2d 706 (C. C. A. 9, 1930).



right to share in tribal property has been denied to certain special classes of tribal members. On the other hand, the right to share in tribal property has been extended to various classes of non-members.

The most important class of members excluded from the right to share in tribal property comprised white men marrying Indian women who, under special tribal laws, were admitted to tribal membership or "citizenship," but were not, in many cases, given any rights at all in tribal property.

The problem created by the claims of these people is discussed in the *Cherokee Intermarriage Cases*.<sup>10</sup> The court it was the policy of the United States and the tribal government to keep tribal property from coming into the hands of whites who married Indians solely for the purpose of sharing in the tribal wealth.<sup>11</sup>

The policy of the United States toward the rights of non-Indians who claimed rights because of intermarriage is indicated by the Act of August 9, 1888,<sup>12</sup> which, excluding the Five Civilized Tribes from its scope, provided

\* \* \* no white man, nor otherwise a member of any tribe of Indians who may hereafter marry an Indian woman member of any Indian tribe . . . shall by such marriage hereafter acquire any right in any tribal property, privilege, or interest whatever to which any member of such tribe is entitled.

An analogous problem arose when the slaves residing in the Indian Territory were granted freedom and citizenship by the Emancipation Proclamation and the Thirteenth Amendment to the United States Constitution. The rights of these "freedmen" in tribal property is elsewhere discussed.<sup>13</sup>

As already noted, the original rule was that existing membership was the requisite for sharing in tribal property. But the beginning of the allotment system and the policy of encouraging the abandonment of tribal relations led to the modification of this rule.<sup>14</sup>

In order to persuade Indians to forsake tribal habits and adopt the white man's civilization, various acts<sup>15</sup> were passed and

<sup>10</sup> 302 U.S. 78 (1938).

<sup>11</sup> In 1874, the Cherokee National Council adopted a code which admitted white men to citizenship and it was paid a sum of \$500 (the approximate value of the share of each Indian) into the national treasury. It became entitled to share in tribal property. But even this privilege was withdrawn in 1877 and from that date whites intermarrying into the Cherokee Nation were admitted to citizenship upon the condition that they should not thereby require in case of interest in the communal property of the nation. In the case of *Whitely v. Cherokee Nation*, 50 C. Cl. 188, 192 (1895) the court quotes a section of the Cherokee code and adds: "The idea therefore existed both in the mind and in the law of the Cherokee people that citizenship did not necessarily extend to or invest in the other a personal or individual interest in what the constitution termed the 'common property' of the tribe of the Cherokee Nation."

<sup>12</sup> C. Stat. sec. 1, 26 Stat. 852, 26 U.S.C. § 181.

<sup>13</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 11.

<sup>14</sup> In 1809 Mr. Justice Van Derventer took on the Chief Court of Appeals who

For many years the treaties and legislation relating to the Indians proceeded largely upon the theory that the welfare of both the Indians and the whites required that the former be kept in tribal communities separated from the latter and while that policy practically effect was given to the original rule respecting the right to share in tribal property but Congress later adopted the policy of encouraging individual Indians to abandon their tribal relations and to adopt the customs, habits and manners of civilized life and as an incident to this change in policy, statutes were enacted declaring that the right to share in tribal property should not be impaired or affected by such a severance of tribal relations which occurred theretofore or thereafter. (*Osage v. United States*, 172 Fed. 505 508 (C. C. A. 8, 1909)). See Chapter 11, sec.

<sup>15</sup> *Id. *g. v. The Act of December 19, 1884*, 10 Stat. 888, 899, provided that the property rights of a tribal blood in the tribal property of the Chippewas would not be impaired if they remained on the lands ceded to the United States and separated from the tribe*

theretofore adopted, an answering to those Indians who complied with this policy the same rights to share in tribal property, as if they had remained with the tribe. Part of these acts, general in their terms, deserve special mention.

(1) The Act of March 3, 1875,<sup>16</sup> applying to Indians who had abandoned or who should thereafter abandon their tribal relations to settle under federal homestead laws,<sup>17</sup> declares

That any such Indian shall be entitled to his distributive share of the tribal funds, lands, and other property the same as though he had maintained his tribal relations . . .

However, where specially provided such as in the Act of February 8, 1871,<sup>18</sup> Indians who wished to leave the tribe and at the same time receive certain lands as their allotments, had to relinquish their rights to share in any further distribution of tribal assets. The Act of November 15, 1863,<sup>19</sup> with the Pawnee Nation, discussed in *Goodfellow v. Alineke*,<sup>20</sup> provided that those of the tribe who had adopted the customs of the whites and who were willing to abandon all claims to the common lands and funds would have lands allotted to them in severalty.

(2) Section 6<sup>21</sup> of the Act of February 8, 1887,<sup>22</sup> declares

\* \* \* and every Indian born within the territorial limits of the United States who has voluntarily taken up, within said limits, his residence separate and apart from any tribe of Indians thereof, and has adopted the habits of civilized life, is hereby declared to be a citizen of the United States, and is entitled to all the rights, privileges, and immunities of such citizens, whether and when he is located or not, by birth or otherwise, a member of any tribe of Indians within the territorial limits of the United

<sup>16</sup> 18 Stat. 482, Twenty with Cherokee September 27, 1870, 7 Stat. 875 dis. approved in *Winton v. Leno*, 275 U.S. 871 888 (1921).

<sup>17</sup> *Osage v. United States*, 172 Fed. 508 (C. C. A. 8, 1909), *United States v. At. Brown v. Wolf*, 6 F. 2d 674 (App. D. C. 1925), *Pope v. United States*, 75 F. 2d 219 (C. C. A. 8, 1927).

<sup>18</sup> 16 Stat. 420, 420.

<sup>19</sup> While this act is directed particularly at Indians acquiring homesteads on the public domain it has been referred to as applying to any Indian abandoning his tribal relations. *Osage v. United States*, 172 Fed. 508. It is believed however, that this act can be restricted in the following manner. It will recognize purpose of this act and of similar acts preserving intact the tribal property to Indians. It is believed that the act was to induce Indians to leave their tribal life on the reservation and to take up the habits and customs of civilized life in white communities. *Osage v. United States*, 172 Fed. 508. *United States v. Brown*, 6 F. 2d 674 (App. D. C. 1925). In fact the phrase "abandonment of tribal relations" has been often been interpreted as meaning a physical abandonment of the tribe and the reservation and an undertaking to live as a white person. An example of such an interpretation of the phrase in the Act of 1875 is the Circular of Instructions issued by the General Land Office on March 27, 1875, requiring Indians desiring to take advantage of the benefits of the Act of 1870 to make affidavit that they have adopted the habits and pursuits of civilized life (2 C. Cl. 44). In all cases of which I have knowledge so far brought into court or before the Department for the benefit of Indians under the Act of 1870 or 1875, the Indians had physically abandoned their tribe and its reservation and this was advanced to prove abandonment of tribal relations.

In view of this purpose of Congress to induce Indians to leave the reservation and the interpretation of the statutory language "abandonment of tribal relations" it may be said that the Act of 1870 would not apply to Indians who wish to leave themselves or membership in a tribe but who, nevertheless, remain upon the reservation of the tribe and continue living as other members of the tribe and continuing subject to the Federal protection of reservation life. Memo No. 1, D. C. March 10, 1918.

<sup>20</sup> The Act of January 18, 1881, 21 Stat. 815, 816, gave to those Winnebago Indians of Wisconsin who abandoned their tribal relations and wished to use the money for purposes of settling a homestead on the public domain a pro rata share in the distribution of tribal funds.

<sup>21</sup> 18 Stat. 404 (Stockbridge and Mazonie).

<sup>22</sup> 18 Stat. 1191.

<sup>23</sup> 172 Fed. Cl. No. 8557 (C. C. Kans. 1881).

<sup>24</sup> This was amended by the Act of May 9, 1900, 31 Stat. 182,

25 U.S.C. § 240.

<sup>25</sup> 24 Stat. 888, 990.

States without in any manner impairing or otherwise affecting the right of any such Indian to tribal or other property."

In the case of *Reynolds v United States*,<sup>1</sup> a Sioux woman who had been born on the reservation and was a member of the tribe was taken from the reservation by her father. She moved away from the reservation, adopted the habits of white people and married a white man. Her rights to share in the tribal property were defeated under the 1897 statute.

(9) By section 2 of the Act of August 9, 1948,<sup>2</sup> rights in tribal property were preserved to Indian women who thereafter married citizens of the United States and became citizens also.

(10) In furtherance of its policy to induce Indians to break away from the tribal mode of life Congress included in the Appropriation Act of June 7, 1907,<sup>3</sup> the following provision relating rights in tribal property to the children of certain Indian women who had left the tribe:

That all children born of a marriage heretofore solemnized between a white man and an Indian woman by blood and not by adoption whose said Indian woman is at this time or was at the time of her death, recognized by the tribe shall have the same rights and privileges to the property of the tribe to which the mother belongs, or belonged at the time of her death, by blood, is an other member of the tribe . . .

Because this statute creates a new class of distributees in tribal property and, to that extent, decreases the property right of those distributees otherwise entitled to share, it is hereby strictly construed. It does not include the children of a marriage between two Indians.<sup>4</sup> It does not include the children of a marriage between an Indian man and a white woman,<sup>5</sup> it does not

strip the rights of children of an Indian woman who married a white man after June 7, 1907.<sup>6</sup> It does not take the rights of children whose Indian mother had married a white man before that date but who was a member by adoption only, or if she had been a member by blood who was not considered a member at that date or if her death at it had occurred prior to that time.<sup>7</sup> Nor does it create any rights in any legal descendants other than children of the Indian woman.

The rights of children of a tribal member are discussed in *Hintikka v United States*.<sup>8</sup>

The children of a marriage between an Indian woman and a white man inasmuch take the status of the father, but if the wife retains her tribal membership and the children are born in the tribal environment and their reared by her with the husband failing to discharge his duties to them, they take the status of the mother.

Whether a child of such a marriage has tribal membership or otherwise depends on the status of the father or mother as the case may be, and not on that of a grandparent.

As to marriages occurring before June 7, 1907 (as the marriages here dealt, between a white man and an Indian woman, who was Indian by blood rather than by adoption—and who on June 7, 1907 or at the time of her death, was recognized by the tribe—the children have the same right to share in the division or distribution of the property of the tribe of the mother as any other member of the tribe, but this is in virtue of the Act of June 7, 1907.

In the distribution of tribal assets the visible evidence of one's right to share is the appearance of his name on the appropriate "roll." If membership is the requisite he had to be on the "membership roll." As a pertinent matter, acts and treaties providing for distribution of tribal property had to and did set a specific date as to when status must exist. Generally those who did not have a status entitling them to share on that date could not participate even though they might have had such a status before and after that date.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In view of the act "the mere state of citizenship is not important so long as the question of the rights in tribal property is concerned." *United States v. White Wolf*, 6 F. 2d 694, 698 (App. D. C. 1927).

<sup>2</sup> 205 Stat. 665 (1) (C. S. D. 1948).

<sup>3</sup> 34 Stat. 251, 302. See also *Page v. United States*, 19 F. 2d 219 (C. C. A. 9, 1927), holding that an Indian woman may acquire a share in tribal property even if she married a white man before June 7, 1907.

<sup>4</sup> *Work v. Govins*, 18 F. 2d 940 (App. D. C. 1927), holding that a Chippewa woman though married to a white man and separated from the tribe was entitled to share in tribal fund.

<sup>5</sup> 40 Stat. 92, 95 (C. S. D. 1913).

<sup>6</sup> *Of Stockey v. Writba*, 79 F. 2d 522 (App. D. C. 1942) (Act invoked by Secretary of the Interior, court declined to issue mandamus to compel Secretary to restore certain names to tribal rolls).

<sup>7</sup> 360 Supp. 1 (D. December 18, 1944).

<sup>8</sup> *Id.*

<sup>9</sup> *Page v. United States*, 19 F. 2d 219 (C. C. A. 9, 1927).

<sup>10</sup> *Gokey v. United States*, 172 Fed. 408 (C. C. A. 9, 1909).

<sup>11</sup> 285 U. S. 751, 751-754 (1911), 1911 Supp. 1000, *United States v. Hintikka*, 38 F. 2d 795 (C. C. A. 9, 1930).

<sup>12</sup> For examples of such rolls see the Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 881, 880-870 (Crick) and the Act of June 30, 1902, 32 Stat. 700, 700-702 (Crick). See Bright, 23, sec. 7. For a discussion of the power of Congress and the Secretary over enrollment see Chapter 5, sec. 6 and 13.

## SECTION 4 TRANSFERABILITY OF THE RIGHT TO SHARE

Ordinarily, a right to participate in tribal property cannot be alienated, either voluntarily or by operation of law.<sup>1</sup> To be entitled to share, the participant's children must have a status in their own right; they may be entitled to share as members, but not as heirs.<sup>2</sup>

However, interests in tribal property may be made transferable by congressional act<sup>3</sup> or tribal law and custom.<sup>4</sup> In such

event, alienability may be limited to transfer only by operation of law.<sup>5</sup>

Under the Wheeler Howard Act, shares in the assets of an Indian tribe in corporation may be disposed of to the Indian tribe in corporation from which the shares were derived or to its successors with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, but alienation to others is prohibited. The Secretary of the Interior is authorized to permit exchanges of shares of equal value whenever such exchange is expedient and for the benefit of cooperative organizations.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Steen v. United States*, 118 Fed. 286 (C. C. Neb. 1902) "app. dism." 108 U. S. 814 (1904). *Woodbury v. United States*, 170 Fed. 802 (C. C. A. 8, 1906), *aff. dism.* 280 U. S. 437 (1930), *Orsten v. Buehman*, 1 Black 421 (1882).

<sup>2</sup> *Of Woodbury v. United States*, 170 Fed. 802 (C. C. A. 8, 1909).

<sup>3</sup> *Id.* g. 1, Act of March 1, 1901, 31 Stat. 881, 884 and Act of June 30, 1902, c. 1828 § 2 Stat. 700 (Crick allotments and funds). Act of June 30, 1904, c. 8072, § 842, Stat. 889, and Act of April 18, 1912, 37 Stat. 86 (Omaha allotments and funds). For a discussion of these statutes, see Chapter 28.

<sup>4</sup> See note 5.

<sup>5</sup> Act of June 28, 1906, c. 4772, 34 Stat. 789 (Omaha), providing for descendibility did not make interest descendible. Op. Sol. I. D., 2d 5770 August 15, 1929. Act of April 18, 1912, 37 Stat. 86 (Omaha), providing for descendibility did not make right descendible. *Taylor v. Tarrant*, 51 F. 2d 884 (C. C. A. 10, 1911), cert. den., 284 U. S. 872 (1931).

<sup>6</sup> Act of June 28, 1906, sec. 4, 48 Stat. 984, 985, 26 U. S. C. 404.

## SECTION 5 RIGHTS OF USER IN TRIBAL PROPERTY

While property may be vested in a tribe, it is generally the individual members of the tribe who enjoy the use of such property. The question of what rights of user it enjoyed by individual Indians in tribal property may conveniently be considered under four headings:

- (A) Occupancy of particular tracts
- (B) Improvements
- (C) Grazing and fishing rights
- (D) Rights in tribal timber

## A OCCUPANCY OF PARTICULAR TRACTS

We have elsewhere noted<sup>11</sup> that it is a distinctive characteristic of tribal property that the right of possession is vested in the tribe as such, rather than in individual members.

Nevertheless, as a practical matter, some orderly distribution of occupancy among the members of the tribe is generally necessary in order that the land may be used. Hence it comes about that individuals are given rights of occupancy in certain tracts of tribal land. The tribe may formally assign a right of occupancy to an individual, or it in individual is in possession by tribal law usage and custom, a right of occupancy may come to be recognized without such formal assignment.

The right of an Indian tribe to grant occupancy rights in designated tracts is specified in certain treaties.

Many treaties recognize the value of individual occupancy rights on tribal land as well as the individual ownership of improvements, and provide for payments to such individuals for loss or destruction of such rights and improvements.

The limitations on the rights of an individual occupant have been defined in several cases. In *Revocation Cases*<sup>12</sup> it was held that an Indian tribe might dispose of minerals on tribal lands which had been assigned to individual Indians for private occupancy, since the individual occupants had never been granted any specific mineral rights by the tribe.

In *Tenneco v. Gray*,<sup>13</sup> it was held that no act of the occupant of assigned tribal land could terminate the control duly exer-

cised by the chiefs of the tribe over the use and disposition of the land.

In *Application of Parker*,<sup>14</sup> it was held that the Tonawanda Nation of Seneca Indians had the right to dispose of minerals on the tribal allotment of its members, and that if the individual allottee had no valid claim for damages.

The nature of the rights conferred by an Indian tribe upon its members with respect to land occupancy depends upon the laws, customs, and agreements of the tribe. In the case of *United States v. Chase*,<sup>15</sup> the Supreme Court held that the making of assignments of land of the Omaha tribe to individual members did not preclude a later revocation of such assignments when the tribe decided that the reservation should be allotted, even though the original assignments were made pursuant to a specific treaty provision, were approved by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, and guaranteed the possessory right of the assignee. The court per Van Devanter, 1<sup>st</sup> circuit, these assignments are as

\* \* \* leaving the United States and the tribe free to take such measures for the ultimate and permanent disposal of the lands, including the fee, as might become essential or appropriate in view of changing conditions, the welfare of the Indians and the public interests. (P. 100.)

Referring to the rights of an occupant of lands of the Cherokee Nation the court in *The Cherokee Trust Funds*,<sup>16</sup> declared:

He had a right to use parcels of the lands thus held by the Nation, subject to such rules as its governing authority might prescribe, but that right neither prevented nor qualified the legal power of that authority to cede the lands, and the title of the Nation to the United States.

The right of the occupant has been likened to that of a licensee or tenant at will. But, in order to assure the occupant of land some security in his possession, tribal law and custom may recognize his right of possession to the extent that the right of occupancy may not be revoked at the mere caprice of tribal officials.

Typical of the laws of the Five Civilized Tribes with respect to occupancy rights was the Creek Act of 1889 by which the Creek Nation conferred on each citizen of the nation who was the head of a family and engaged in grazing livestock the right (or lease) for that purpose one square mile of public domain with out paying compensation. Provision was made for establishing, under certain conditions, more extensive pastures near the frontiers to protect the occupants against the influx of stock from adjacent territories.<sup>17</sup> Various laws of the Five Civilized Tribes provided for the sale or lease of these rights in tribal lands to other members of the tribe.<sup>18</sup> Under these laws, the rights of the grantor and the grantee on the lessor and lessee were protected in tribal and territorial courts. If the lessee refused to surrender possession after the expiration of his term, the lessor could maintain an action of ejectment in federal courts.<sup>19</sup> Adverse possession could run against an occupant. The occupant could maintain an action of forcible entry and detainer against

<sup>11</sup> Chapter 16, see 2.

<sup>12</sup> 30 Sup. Ct. 2, October 21, 1938. "If no definite land assignment is made it is possible that individual members may assert occupancy rights in tribal land based upon long continued use." On the power of the tribe over individual rights of occupancy in tribal land see Chapter 7.

<sup>13</sup> See for example Art. VI of the Treaty of September 24, 1877, with the Pawnee Indians, 11 Stat. 729 which provided in part:

\* \* \* if they think proper to do so, they may divide and divide among themselves, giving to each person or each head of a family, a farm, subject to their tribal regulations, but in no instance to be sold or disposed of to persons outside of not themselves of the Pawnee tribe.

And see Art. IV of the Treaty of March 8, 1866 with the Omaha Indians, 14 Stat. 661 contained in *United States v. Chase*, 246 U. S. 89 (1917).

On the development of individual allotment see Chapter 11.

<sup>14</sup> See for example Treaty of January 24, 1868, with the Creek Nation of Indians, 7 Stat. 286, Treaty of August 8, 1881 with the Shawnee, Seneca, and Wyandot, 7 Stat. 505, Treaty of May 20, 1842 with the Seneca Nation of Indians, 7 Stat. 586 Treaty of June 5 and 17, 1846, with the various Bands of Fortawawatomie, Cheyenne, and Ottawa Indians, 9 Stat. 658 Treaty of August 8, 1866, with the Cherokee Nation, 9 Stat. 871, Treaty of October 18, 1846, with the Menominee Tribe of Indians, 9 Stat. 902 Treaty of February 5, 1865, with the Kickapoo and Menominee Tribes of Indians, 11 Stat. 665, Treaty of June 8, 1865, with the Walla Walla, Cayuse, and Umatilla Tribes and Bands of Indians, 12 Stat. 945 Treaty of June 8, 1875, with the Yakima, 12 Stat. 951.

<sup>15</sup> 150 N. Y. Supp. 218 (1914).

<sup>16</sup> 158 N. Y. Supp. 918 (1918).

<sup>17</sup> 277 N. Y. Supp. 134 (1925).

<sup>18</sup> 246 U. S. 89 (1917).

<sup>19</sup> 117 U. S. 288, 508 (1886).

<sup>18</sup> See *Turner v. United States*, 248 U. S. 354 (1919). Art. X of the Complicated Laws of the Cherokee Nation (1892) limited each citizen of the nation to 50 acres of land for grazing purposes, attached to his farm.

<sup>19</sup> See *Complicated Laws of Cherokee Nation* (1892), Art. XXXIII, sec. 708.

<sup>20</sup> *Gooding v. Watkins*, 5 Ind. T. 578, 82 S. W. 918 (1904), rev'd on other grounds, 142 F.2d 112 (C. C. A. 8, 1906) (Chickasaw).

trespasser.<sup>90</sup> *Rhulphis v. McDougal*,<sup>91</sup> describes the nature of the interest held by in occupancy of Creek lands, as follows:

From the time they took up their residence west of the Mississippi, the Constitutions of the Five Nations provided that their land should remain common property, but the improvements made thereon, and in the possession of the citizens of the nation, are the exclusive and inalienable property of the citizens respectively who made, or may rightfully be in possession of them. The term "improvements," as here used, meant not only betterments, but occupancy. *Charles Nation's Exors. et al.*, 175 U. S. 196, 210. \* \* \* These "improvements" passed from father to son and were the subject of sale, with the single restriction that they should not be sold to the United States, individual states, or to individual citizens thereof.

As the foregoing cases indicate the federal courts have given full weight to the allotments made by the various tribes with respect to the individual occupancy rights of tribal members.

Congress has repeatedly given recognition to such occupancy rights, as, for example, by providing that compensation be made directly to occupants of tribal land for damage done or property taken in a tribal building across such land.<sup>92</sup> There have been occasions, however, when Congress has felt compelled to modify these tribal arrangements by federal legislation. The Five Civilized Tribes is a case in point.

The following statement of conditions in the lands of the Five Civilized Tribes is found in the Report by the Senate Committee on the Five Civilized Tribes, May 1891.<sup>93</sup>

A few enterprising citizens of the tribe frequently not Indians by blood but by intermarriage, have in fact become the practical owners of the best and greatest part of these lands, while the title still remains in the tribe—(theoretically for all, yet in fact the great body of the tribe desires no more benefit from their title than in the neighbors in Kansas, Arkansas or Missouri).<sup>94</sup>

These conditions were cited in justification of congressional acts providing for the redistribution of occupancy rights and ultimately for the allotment of lands of the Five Civilized Tribes.<sup>95</sup>

Under the Act of June 18, 1934,<sup>96</sup> the problem of individual rights in tribal land assumes a new importance by reason of the provision prohibiting future allotments in severalty.<sup>97</sup>

On unallotted reservations, tribal constitutions often provide for a single form of assignment, under which each head of a family is entitled to secure the occupancy of a tract of standard acreage under a tenure dependent upon use.<sup>98</sup>

On allotted reservations the land problem is more complicated, and two types of assignment are common, "landed" assignments and "exchange" assignments. Standard assign-

ment is usually made to landless Indians or to Indians having a lesser amount of land than the standard acreage fixed by the tribe, and is generally made for the purpose of establishing homes. The tribal constitution and the assignment from generally provide that a standard assignment shall be canceled if the land is not beneficially utilized by the assignee for a specified period of time. Exchange assignments may be made to Indians who have an interest in severalty in some land in consideration of their surrendering such interest. Exchange assignments generally include more extensive rights of lease and in other than in this respect approach more nearly to the character of allotments. The chief respects to which exchange assignments differ from allotments are: (1) land under such assignment cannot be alienated (apart from exchanges of land of equal value) during the life of the assignee except to the tribe, whereas, allotted land may be transferred, upon the removal of restrictions on the issuance of a fee patent by the Secretary of the Interior, to any individual Indian or non-Indian; (2) land under an exchange assignment is not inheritable in the strict sense of the term, it is allotted land, but is subject to reassignment to qualified members of the tribe designated in the original assignment, provided the land is neither subdivided into portions too minute for economic use nor assigned to persons holding more than a designated maximum acreage of tribal land; (3) land under an exchange assignment is tribal land and is subject to all the protections which the law throws about tribal land.

The rights to improvements placed by individual Indians on the land is under many constitutions, distinguished from the assigned right of user in the land itself, and is made transmissible by devise, lease, or operation of law to certain members of the tribe upon approval by the tribe.<sup>99</sup>

It has been abundantly held that a tribal grant of occupancy rights to its members does not necessarily involve the conveyance of any interest in tribal land, since the occupant may hold a position similar to that of a licensee.<sup>100</sup>

On the other hand, it has been held that an individual member of an Indian Pueblo has such an occupancy interest as will, under the Taylor Grazing Act,<sup>101</sup> justify a preference in the award of grazing rights on the public domain.<sup>102</sup>

At this stage in the development of the forms of assignment it is important to avoid over generalizations on the nature of the legal rights thus created. Possibly a suggestive analogy to the member's occupancy right in tribal land is the right of a member of a membership corporation to reside in an allocated tract of the society's estate.

## B IMPROVEMENTS

With reference to improvements placed upon the land, an occupant may acquire a vested right, subject to the limitations of tribal rules and customs.<sup>103</sup> It has been said that the individual has a vested right in such improvements, even as against the tribe because they are his own property, they are not the

<sup>90</sup> *Hunt v. Truck*, 5 Ind. T. 276, 94 S. W. 518 (1900) (Cheerokee).  
<sup>91</sup> 170 Fed. 529, 59-514 (1 C. & G. 1904), app. dismissed 225 U. S. 561 (1912).

<sup>92</sup> See, for example, sec. 3 of the Act of March 2, 1890, 50 Stat. 990, 901, amended by the Act of February 28, 1902, 32 Stat. 50, 26 U. S. C. 314. And see Act cited in Chapter 16, fn. 14.

<sup>93</sup> Sen. Rept. No. 277, 51st Cong. 2d sess. (1894), cited in *Stephens v. Cherokee Nation*, 174 U. S. 415 (1899) and *Trechsel v. United States*, 224 U. S. 413, 444 (1912).

<sup>94</sup> For a further statement of conditions, see *Woodward v. de Graaf*, federal 248 U. S. 284 (1918).

<sup>95</sup> See Chapter 28.

<sup>96</sup> Sec. 1 to 19, 48 Stat. 984, 25 U. S. C. 461-479.

<sup>97</sup> Op. Sol. I. D. M. 27770, May 22, 1936.

<sup>98</sup> E. g., Constitution and Bylaws of Papago Tribe Aile approved January 8, 1937, Art. 8, sec. 9. Constitution and Bylaws of Pima Tribe Lake Patito, Tribe, New approved January 15, 1936, Art. 7, sec. 3.

<sup>99</sup> E. g., Constitution and Bylaws of Cheyenne River Sioux, S. D., approved December 27, 1935, Art. 8, sec. 4.

Constitution and Bylaws of Lower Sioux Community, Minn., approved June 11, 1936, Art. 9, sec. 1, 6.

<sup>100</sup> E. g., Constitution and Bylaws of Fort Belknap Community, Mont. approved December 13, 1936, Art. 7, sec. 5, 7, 8.

<sup>101</sup> 48 Stat. 1, October 21, 1918 (Palm Springs), Memo. Sol. I. D. April 14, 1939 (Pueblo of Santa Clara).

<sup>102</sup> Act of June 28, 1936, 48 Stat. 1309, as amended June 26, 1938, 40 Stat. 1976 and July 14, 1939 (Pub. No. 377—76th Cong., last sess.).

<sup>103</sup> Eligibility of Indians and Indian Pueblos for Grazing Privileges under the Taylor Grazing Act, 70 U. S. 79 (1917), and the Rights of Pueblo and Member of Pueblo Tribes under the Taylor Grazing Act, 70 U. S. 908 (1918).

<sup>104</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 8.



property of the tribe and his right to them is not derived as in interest in tribal property.<sup>100</sup>

However, the occupants' right of use and disposition of the improvements is qualified by the fact that he does not own the land and that the tribe, in granting him the right of occupancy, may impose conditions certain to them affecting improvements. In effect, tribal laws and customs restrict conditions upon the grant of individual occupancy rights to which the individual is deemed to consent upon receiving such rights.<sup>101</sup>

The laws of many tribes contain provisions regarding the placing of improvements upon tribal land by an occupant.<sup>102</sup> For example, the laws of the Cherokee Nation compelled the occupant to place at least \$50 worth of improvements upon the land he occupied within 6 months of locating thereon or else the land reverted to the nation.<sup>103</sup> Various tribal constitutions permit the holder of an assignment of land from the tribe to make improvements on the land and allow him to dispose of them by will or by other methods, under such laws and regulations as the tribal council may direct. It is also generally provided that permanent improvements may not be removed from the land without the consent of the tribal council.<sup>104</sup>

The claim of the individual Indian to the improvements which he has placed upon tribal land has been frequently recognized by Congress. Allotment acts generally provided that the Indian who held certain lands as an occupant and had made improvements thereon had prior right of selecting these lands as his allotment.<sup>105</sup> The practical value of this was that he could, if he wished, retain a favorable location and save himself the expense of moving and making improvements elsewhere.<sup>106</sup>

Various statutes recognize the right of the individual who has occupied or placed improvements upon tribal land to the value of

these improvements when they have been taken from him or destroyed.<sup>107</sup>

## C. GRAZING AND FISHING RIGHTS<sup>108</sup>

Even in the absence of particular assignments of individual tracts, arrangements limiting the use of tribal lands are frequently imposed either by tribal or by federal authorities, for the purpose of defining and protecting the rights of all the members of the tribe, including those set apart.<sup>109</sup> This control has been exercised most notably to prevent exploitation of tribal grazing lands by a small number of stock owners and to protect the economic life of the tribe against the damages resulting from serious overstocking of the range and soil erosion.<sup>110</sup>

In the case of *United States v. Bagshaw*,<sup>111</sup> the court considered regulations promulgated by the Commissioners of Indian Affairs, limiting grazing on the Shoshone Indian tribal lands. The regulations provided generally for the free grazing by each family of a limited number of stock, which were to be branded. Indians were allowed to graze cattle in excess of this number by obtaining a permit and paying a small fee. The court held that an Indian who grazed cattle in violation of these regulations was guilty of trespass and enjoined him from so using the tribal lands.<sup>112</sup>

In the case of *United States v. Hoga*,<sup>113</sup> and related cases, the court had before it the power of the Department of the Interior to make grazing regulations on Navajo tribal lands.<sup>114</sup> Consent

<sup>100</sup> Memo Sol I D October 21, 1948 (Palm Springs). The tribe does not own the improvements placed on tribal land by an individual. It is the property of the individual. Where the occupant makes improvements with approval of the tribe and the Department of the Interior, the land and improvements thereon should be a default, provision as to the division of tribal lands between the individual and the owner of improvements and the tribe is the owner of the land." Of Memo Sol I D, October 20, 1947 (P. B. Knapp).

<sup>101</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 8.

<sup>102</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 9 and 18B.

<sup>103</sup> Enrolled 1692, Art. III.

<sup>104</sup> P. Constitution and Bylaws of the Ogala Sioux of Pine Ridge Reservation approved January 15, 1906, Art. 10, sec. 9; Constitution and Bylaws of the Colorado Pine Indians approved August 15, 1907, Art. 9, sec. 9, Art. 1, sec. 2 of the Cherokee Constitution (1892) provided that improvements might be made by the individual occupant and no good reason was given therein. The improvements were inheritable and subject to sale to the only restriction being that they were not to be sold to the United States, to any of the states or to any citizen of the state. The purpose of this restriction was to keep tribal members in possession. See *Cherokee First Patent* 117 U.S. 288 305 (1886), *Shoshone v. Doxey* 170 Fed. 129 134 (C.C.A. 8, 1909) up'd 228 U.S. 701 (1912).

Improvements and inclosures on lands held in occupancy made in furtherance of agriculture and grazing purposes by members of the Five Civilized Tribes were permitted to pass by quitclaim deed or bill of sale from one member to another. See *United States v. Bear Reed Hill* 454 U.S. 171 171 504 (C.C.A. 8, 1909) up'd 228 U.S. 701 (1912).

<sup>105</sup> That all allotments . . . shall be selected . . . in such manner as to embrace the improvements of the Indians making the selection. . . is the provision found in sec. 8 of the General Allotment Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 388, 25 U.S.C. sec. 385, 392, 439, 464, 548, 549, 581, 810, 841, 842, and sec. 9 of the Act of March 2, 1889, 26 Stat. 888 (Shaw).

<sup>106</sup> At 1 of the Agreement of June 6, 1906, 31 Stat. 672 between the Shoshones and the United States provided that the Indians who had taken possession of lands under a prior agreement (Act of February 24, 1890, 26 Stat. 687) and were occupying them as tribal lands and had made improvements thereon had a preference in selecting such lands as remained the improvements for their allotments. See *Shoshone v. United States*, 272 Fed. 99 (C.C.A. 9, 1921), and see Art. 8 of the Agreement with the Crow Indians, ratified April 27, 1904 c. 1924, 33 Stat. 952.

<sup>108</sup> Act of February 14, 1871, 16 Stat. 410 (Memorial), Act of May 9, 1872, 17 Stat. 55 (Kinsley), Act of February 19, 1875, 18 Stat. 440 (Kinsley), Act of May 15, 1882, 22 Stat. 63 (Minnit), Act of February 20, 1893, 28 Stat. 677 (U.S.), Act of March 2, 1907, 34 Stat. 1240 (Chester), Act of June 2, 1921, 41 Stat. 257 (Bird's Eye), Act of January 29, 1924, 43 Stat. 1995 (Indian New Mexico in California).

<sup>109</sup> This section deals only with rights in tribal property. On rights pertaining to adjacent public lands, under the Indian Grazing Act, see 16, 98 and 99, supra.

<sup>110</sup> Tribal constitutions sometimes provide that in issuing permits or leases for tribal lands, preference shall be given to Indian cooperative associations, and to individual members of the tribe. See, e.g., Constitution of the Cherokee Indian Sioux Tribe, South Dakota, Art. VIII, sec. 4.

<sup>111</sup> In the purpose of the general grazing regulations issued by the Secretary of the Interior is set forth as follows:

(a) The preservation . . . of the forest the forage the land and the water resources . . . and the building up of these resources which they have deteriorated . . . and the utilization of these resources for the purpose of giving the Indians an opportunity to earn a living through grazing of their own livestock. (b) The grazing of a range, provided on suitable range lands . . . in a manner which will yield the highest livestock with consistent with the preservation of the vegetation of the land, and the protection of the Indians from the encroachment of Indian agriculture and anti-social individuals. 25 U.S.C. § 1711.

<sup>112</sup> (C.C.A. 9, 1928, unreported) D. J. Title No. 90-3-8-24.

<sup>113</sup> In the case of *United States v. Hoga*, unreported (C.C.A. 8, D. Wash. 1928), a member of the Yakima tribe was adjudged guilty of trespassing on tribal lands when he grazed sheep upon the tribal reservation without securing a permit from the Secretary of the Interior, in accordance with regulations promulgated by the Secretary. See also *United States v. Olney*, unreported (C.C.A. 8, D. Wash. 1928), holding that the Secretary of the Interior has the authority to require an Indian owner of tribal grazing lands to first secure a permit and to require him to pay a fee for cattle grazed in excess of the number permitted to graze under the Department of the Interior regulations.

<sup>114</sup> (C.C.A. 9, 1928, unreported) D. J. Title No. 90-3-8-24.

<sup>115</sup> As promulgated, June 2, 1907, these regulations provided, in part: 1. The Commissioners of Indian Affairs shall establish land management districts within the Navajo and Hopi Indian Reservations based upon the social and economic requirements of the Indians and the necessity of establishing the grazing lands. 2. The Commissioners of Indian Affairs shall promulgate for each land management district the carrying capacity for livestock. 3. The Commissioners shall keep accurate records of ownership of all livestock.

4. The Superintendent shall reduce the livestock in each district to the carrying capacity of the range.

5. The Superintendent is authorized to assess and collect fees for pastures used, and with the consent of the Indian owners of the stock, he may also assess and collect grazing fees upon all stock owned in excess of the base preference number and upon all non-productive stock owned below the base preference number. . . .

of the Navajo tribe to the federal grazing regulations had been duly obtained. The court held that under these regulations the Secretary of the Interior could require the removal of horses from the reservation in excess of the number permitted, and in its decree the court compelled the individual stock owners to remove their excess stock. In addition, the court disposed of questions that might cause future litigation by including a declaratory judgment to the following effect:

" \* \* \* The Secretary of the Interior of the United States is vested with the power, right, and authority to promulgate rules and regulations for the protection of the tribal lands of the Navajo Reservation within the State of Arizona and to the effect and extent necessary to prevent waste caused by overgrazing and to prevent injury of an unreasonable monopolization of tribal lands by individuals, and to provide by rules and regulations a maximum carrying capacity of such districts as may be fixed and determined by said rules and regulations."

A similar problem has arisen in connection with the regulation of individual fishing rights in tribal waters. In the case of *Mason v. Burns*,<sup>118</sup> the court considered the power of the Secretary of the Interior to promulgate regulations with respect to the use by tribal Indians of waters in the Quinault Reservation which had been reserved for the exclusive use of the Indians by the Treaty of July 1, 1855 and January 25, 1896, with the Quinaults and Quilchettes.<sup>119</sup> The scheme of regulations in question has been promulgated by the Department of the Interior, without tribal consent. Under these regulations certain members of the tribe were granted exclusive fishing rights, it favored locations upon payment of prescribed fees, and other members were excluded therefrom. The court held that these regulations were invalid. The decision in *Mason v. Burns* is distinguishable from the grazing cases discussed above in two respects. First, certain individual members of the tribe were entirely excluded from the right to fish in tribal waters; in *Mason v. Burns*, while in the grazing cases no member of the tribe was entirely deprived of grazing rights on tribal land, secondly, tribal authority for the regulations in question was lacking in *Mason v. Burns* and present in the *Boga* case. (Whether it was present in the other grazing cases is not clear.)

#### D RIGHTS IN TRIBAL TIMBER

Where a tribe possesses property rights in timber, the question arises. What right has a member of the tribe to cut and to use or sell tribal timber?

By the general Act of February 18, 1888,<sup>120</sup> for example, the President of the United States was authorized to permit, at his discretion and under such regulations as he might prescribe, Indians living on reservations or allotments, the fee to which was in the United States, to cut, remove, sell or otherwise dispose of dead timber, standing or fallen, on such lands. Pursuant to this statute, permission was given to Indians of the Chippewa reservation in Minnesota to cut tribal timber, subject to certain regulations.<sup>121</sup> As discussed in the case of *Pine River Logging Co. v. United States*,<sup>122</sup> the regulations permitted "deserving Indians, who had no other means of support, to cut for a single season a limited quantity of dead and down timber. \* \* \*, and to use the proceeds for their support in exact proportion to the scale

of logs, linked by each provided that ten per cent of the gross proceeds should be to the stumpage or upon final of the tribe

" \* \* \* The facts in the *Pine River Logging Co.* case disclosed that the Commissioner of Indian Affairs had approved contracts between several Indians and a logging company for the cutting of a certain amount of dead timber. In its decision the court held that both the Indians and the logging company were trespassers and were liable to the United States for the value of the timber cut in excess of the amount stated in the contract."<sup>123</sup>

Other cases relating to specific tribes provided that the timber on tribal lands was to be cut and sold under federal supervision and the proceeds therefrom were either to be spent for the benefit of the tribe or distributed per capita.<sup>124</sup>

The general Act of June 25, 1910<sup>125</sup> contains authority for the sale of mature living and dead and down timber from the unallotted lands of any reservation, except the Osage, the Five Civilized Tribes, and the reservations of Minnesota and Wisconsin.

Pursuant to the foregoing acts the Department of the Interior has issued general forest regulations.<sup>126</sup> Insofar as these acts and regulations do it with the rights of the tribe in tribal timber they are elsewhere considered.<sup>127</sup> The right of the individual Indian to cut tribal timber is covered by section 20 of the current regulations which appears in section 61.27 of Title 21 of the Code of Federal Regulations.

Section 61.27 establishes a permit system whereby permits are provided by duly authorized representatives of the tribe are required for the cutting of timber by individual Indians on tribal lands. As stated in the regulation, the system was devised to meet the needs of "Indians and other persons for limited quantities of timber for domestic, agricultural, and grazing purposes." Individual Indians who need timber for personal use may receive permits without the payment of stumpage charges, but the trees so cut are to be designated by a forest officer or other agency employee. The maximum value of the stumpage which may be thus cut by one person in any one year is not to exceed \$100. Should the individual require more timber for his needs, he may purchase the surplus tribal timber on timber otherwise authorized for sale (61.13). The Indian is given the preference of buying stumpage not exceeding \$5,000 in value in open market without having to bid therefor, provided the tribe consents to the sale (61.17).

#### Footnotes

<sup>118</sup> 308 U.S. 171, 181 (1934). See the Act of June 27, 1902, 32 Stat. 409.

<sup>119</sup> 9 U.S. 421, 1900, c. 418, 32 Stat. 146 (Memorandum) discussed in *United States ex rel. Owen v. Work*, 6 B. 2d 604 (App. D. C. 1923) and supplemented by the Act of June 25, 1910, c. 477, 36 Stat. 747, Act of December 31, 1904, c. 25, 34 Stat. 595 (Timber). Act of April 24, 1904, 34 Stat. 102 (Fishing). Cf. sec. 4 of the Act of March 1, 1921, 41 Stat. 1105 (Fur, Belpup), which affirms the right of the individual Indian to cut timber on tribal land. The foregoing statute also provides that the head of a family may take cut from unleased tribal lands for domestic use (sec. 5).

<sup>120</sup> 26 Stat. 887, 887 sec. 7, 25 U.S.C. 407. The disposition of timber belonging to the Five Civilized Tribes is governed by the Act of June 28, 1898, 30 Stat. 406, Act of January 21, 1905, 32 Stat. 774, Act of April 28, 1906, 34 Stat. 187, Act of August 24, 1912, 37 Stat. 497. Timber on reservation lands in Minnesota and Wisconsin may be sold in accordance with the provisions of the Acts of February 16, 1889, 26 Stat. 678, 28 U.S.C. 100, the Act of March 28, 1908, 36 Stat. 51 (Memorandum) and the Act of May 18, 1916, 39 Stat. 123, 137 (Rid. Lake).

<sup>121</sup> 28 C.F.R. 61.1-61.29. Office of Indian Affairs, Department of the Interior, General Forest Regulations, approved April 28, 1936. It is provided that the regulations may be superseded by special instructions to particular reservations or by provisions of tribal constitutions, bylaws, or charters, or any authorized tribal action of the tribe's bandhead.

<sup>122</sup> 28 C.F.R. 61.29.

<sup>123</sup> See Chapter 15, supra 17, 18.

<sup>118</sup> 5 F. 2d 255 (D.C. W.D. Wash. 1928).

<sup>119</sup> 12 Stat. 671.

<sup>120</sup> C. 172, 25 Stat. 678, 25 U.S.C. 100. On the right of Indians, under departmental regulations, to cut and sell tribal timber, see Act of March 31, 1888, 25 Stat. 30, entitled:

An act to confirm certain instructions given by the Department of the Interior to the Indian agent at Green Bay Agency in the State of Wisconsin and to legalize the acts done and permitted by said Indian agent pursuant thereto.

<sup>121</sup> 198 U.S. 270, 285-286 (1902).

## SECTION 6 INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS UPON DISTRIBUTION OF TRIBAL PROPERTY

The extent of individual participation in the distribution of tribal property is governed, in the first instance, by the federal statute or treaty authorizing the distribution, or, where the federal law is silent by the law or custom of the tribe.

Apportionment and distribution of tribal funds may be effected by acts passed by Congress, in the exercise of its plenary power over tribal property.<sup>11</sup> The manner in which the plenary power over tribal property could be exercised to effect the individual rights is discussed elsewhere.<sup>12</sup>

## A. MODES OF DISTRIBUTION

Where Congress has prescribed the method of distributing tribal property, equal division per capita has been the general rule.<sup>13</sup> This method of apportionment is consistent with the nature of the individual's interest in tribal property and is found in numerous treaties and acts providing for the distribution of tribal property.<sup>14</sup> Every member of the tribe has an interest in preventing one member from getting more than his share.<sup>15</sup>

However, the act, treaty, or custom providing for distribution may restrict the class of those entitled to participate in a given distribution in deviate from the equality rule by differentiating among various classes of participants. Certain classes of individuals may receive more tribal property at given times than others.<sup>16</sup>

Even in the same class there have been inequalities in the distribution of tribal assets. For example, many allotments were made on the basis of acreage rather than value, although equality of value might coexist with wide inequality of values.

Ordinarily, in the distribution of money, the wants of all individuals are, for all practical purposes, infinite and equal and equal per capita distribution is a well known universal rule.<sup>17</sup>

Where, however, the Federal Government has provided for a distribution of land on reserves or in tracts of open, differentia-

tions have frequently been made between adults and infants or between heads of families and dependents or between men and women.<sup>18</sup> Likewise where distributions exist within a tribe, based upon separations, on migration, degree of blood, or other less tangible factors, these factors have frequently been taken into account in treaties and statutes.<sup>19</sup>

Occasionally Congress, instead of specifying a total amount to be distributed within a given class has allocated out of the tribal estate a fixed amount of money or property to each member of a tribe,<sup>20</sup> or to each member who meets certain qualifications.<sup>21</sup>

<sup>11</sup> Thus, for example, the original General Allotment Act of February 8, 1887, sec. 1, 24 Stat. 388, 25 U.S.C. 331 authorized the allotment of land in these terms:

"To each single person over eighteen years of age, one eighth of a section.

"To each single child under eighteen years of age, one eighth of a section.

"To each single person under eighteen years of age, one eighth of a section, who may be born into the tribe of the order of the President, or of the allotment of the lands embraced in any provision hereinafter made."

<sup>12</sup> An example of a treaty provision modifying the general rule of equality is Art. 10 of the Treaty of October 1, 1870 with the Gros and Fortes of the Mississippi 19 Stat. 467-470. Under this treaty half bloods and intermarried Indians might receive certain tribal lands as vested in them in severalty but if they would have no share in other tribal property even though they remained members of the tribe.

For example, sec. 1 and 7, Act of July 29, 1848, 9 Stat. 252, 261, 263 (N. C. Cherokee). Act of January 18, 1851, 21 Stat. 325 (Winnebago Indians). Act of October 19, 1848, 25 Stat. 908 (Cheyenne and Arapaho). Act of October 1, 1850, 26 Stat. 906 (Shoshone and Dismal). Act of March 3, 1854, 10 Stat. 474 (Stockbridge and Muncie tribe). Act of April 28, 1851, 31 Stat. 519 (Wyandotte Indians). Act of March 1, 1857, 34 Stat. 1095 (Sic and Fox Indians). Act of August 11, 1870, 19 Stat. 309 (Rosebud Sioux Reservation). Act of March 4, 1877, 19 Stat. 1197 (Cheate Sioux). Act of April 14, 1874, 19 Stat. 95 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of May 1, 1874, 19 Stat. 484 (Sisseton tribe). Act of March 4, 1879, 25 Stat. 1020 (Lodgepole Pine Indians). Act of March 3, 1871, 16 Stat. 1405 (Blackfoot Tribe).

The following Appropriation Acts include special provisions for per capita payments to specific individuals or classes of individuals within a given tribe, Act of March 1, 1855, sec. 1, 10 Stat. 686 (North Carolina Cherokee), Act of July 11, 1874, sec. 417, 10 Stat. 325, 333 (Cherokee). Act of August 18, 1876, sec. 14, 21 Stat. 91, 92 (Cherokee and Chickasaw). Act of June 11, 1878, 21 Stat. 304 (Cherokee). Act of March 8, 1875, 18 Stat. 402, 412 (Kickapoo), Act of July 4, 1884, 25 Stat. 70, 81 (Kickapoo), Act of June 29, 1896, 29 Stat. 227, 228-229 (Kickapoo), Act of March 9, 1891, 26 Stat. 998, 1010 (Kickapoo Indians), Act of June 10, 1896, 29 Stat. 121, 144 (Pawnee Band of Sioux and bands Sioux in Nebraska). Act of July 1, 1898, 30 Stat. 873, 878 (Kickapoo), Act of March 1, 1899, 30 Stat. 824, 825 (Kickapoo). Act of March 8, 1906, 38 Stat. 1048, 1052 (Kickapoo) and pp. 1078-1079 Art. II (Pawnee Indian Reservation). Act of March 4, 1920, 46 Stat. 1802, 1787 (Sisseton, Cheyenne, Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of May 14, 1920, 46 Stat. 279, 287 (Sisseton).

Special liability of participation in tribal property granted to mixed bloods of various tribes give rise to "half breed sales." Act of July 17, 1854, 10 Stat. 304 (Sisseton). See also Appropriation Act of March 4, 1855, 23 Stat. 388, 408 (Kaw or Kansas tribe).

<sup>19</sup> Act of August 22, 1811, 37 Stat. 41 (Chocoma (Chickasaw, Choctaw and Seminole Indians). Act of November 10, 1921, 42 Stat. 221 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of January 20, 1924, 43 Stat. 1 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of February 20, 1925, 43 Stat. 798 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of February 10, 1928, 43 Stat. 7 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of March 15, 1928, 43 Stat. 314 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of April 28, 1928, 45 Stat. 407 (Shoshone and Arapahoe of Wyoming). Act of May 11, 1928, 45 Stat. 407 (Rosebud Sioux Indians). Act of May 26, 1928, 45 Stat. 747 (Pawnee Sioux Indians). Act of December 25, 1920, 46 Stat. 84 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of March 24, 1940, 46 Stat. 88 (Shoshone and Arapahoe). Act of April 15, 1940, 46 Stat. 109 (Pine Ridge, South Dakota). Act of February 3, 1921, 42 Stat. 1102 (Menominee of Wisconsin). Act of February 14, 1921, 46 Stat. 1102 (Menominee of Wisconsin). Act of February 12, 1932, 47 Stat. 49, 1107 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of February 12, 1932, 47 Stat. 49

<sup>11</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 83.

<sup>12</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 8.

<sup>13</sup> On the application of this rule to the allotment of tribal land see Chapter 11. The application of this rule in the distribution of money is discussed in Chapter 20 and 19.

<sup>14</sup> E.g., Act of April 30, 1848, 9 Stat. 252, 261 (Sisseton Nation). Act of April 27, 1854, 10 Stat. 474, 481 (Sisseton Nation). Act of June 24, 1850, 25 Stat. 908, 909 (Sisseton Nation). Act of March 3, 1857, 34 Stat. 1095 (Sisseton Nation). Act of March 4, 1877, 19 Stat. 1197 (Cheate Sioux). Act of April 14, 1874, 19 Stat. 95 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of May 1, 1874, 19 Stat. 484 (Sisseton tribe). Act of March 4, 1879, 25 Stat. 1020 (Lodgepole Pine Indians). Act of March 3, 1871, 16 Stat. 1405 (Blackfoot Tribe).

<sup>15</sup> E.g., sec. 1 and 7, Act of July 29, 1848, 9 Stat. 252, 261, 263 (N. C. Cherokee). Act of January 18, 1851, 21 Stat. 325, 333 (Winnebago Indians). Act of October 19, 1848, 25 Stat. 908, 909 (Cheyenne and Arapaho). Act of October 1, 1850, 26 Stat. 906 (Shoshone and Dismal). Act of March 3, 1854, 10 Stat. 474 (Stockbridge and Muncie tribe). Act of April 28, 1851, 31 Stat. 519 (Wyandotte Indians). Act of March 1, 1857, 34 Stat. 1095 (Sic and Fox Indians). Act of August 11, 1870, 19 Stat. 309 (Rosebud Sioux Reservation). Act of March 4, 1877, 19 Stat. 1197 (Cheate Sioux). Act of April 14, 1874, 19 Stat. 95 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of May 1, 1874, 19 Stat. 484 (Sisseton tribe). Act of March 4, 1879, 25 Stat. 1020 (Lodgepole Pine Indians). Act of March 3, 1871, 16 Stat. 1405 (Blackfoot Tribe).

<sup>16</sup> In passing upon the distribution of a tribal fund created for the purpose of paying to certain individuals the value of the land in the tribal property and Indians having been previously omitted from the distribution of an entire fund, the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior declared:

"The fund created was for one purpose only. Consequently there is no need to go into the question of whether the fund is tribal or communal; then it must be subject to distribution for tribal purposes generally, and that if it is necessarily individual and not tribal because all interests do not participate in its distribution. The very purpose of the appropriation testifies the contention of the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior."

<sup>17</sup> Treaty of March 28, 1886 with the Ottawa and Chippewa, 7 Stat. 491, providing for payments of different amounts to different classes of half-breeds.

<sup>18</sup> For equal payment was made the general rule, except where the interest of the Indians or some treaty stipulation otherwise required, by the act of the Act of March 3, 1875, 19 Stat. 228, 229. This provision suspended a provision to the same general effect in the act of the Act of August 30, 1882, 10 Stat. 41, 60 which made permanent the clause which had been included as a limitation upon the appropriations made by earlier appropriation acts. See section 9 of Act of July 21, 1875, 19 Stat. 15, 28. Recent statutes providing for per capita distribution of various funds are cited in 135 and 144 infra.

To equalize allotments various acts provide for the payment<sup>1</sup> or the withholding of payment<sup>2</sup> of trust funds to individuals

### B TIME OF DISTRIBUTION

Ordinarily, acts providing for the distribution of tribal assets provide for the immediate payment of the entire share to those entitled to it. Individual rights vest immediately upon segregation, and the tribal character of the property is extinguished.<sup>10</sup>

In some special acts providing for distribution of tribal property Congress has seen fit to withhold payment of some or all of the Indian's share until some future time.<sup>18</sup>

Chippewas of Minnesota), Act of June 11 1832, 47 Stat 308 (Red Lake of Minnesota) Act of June 13 1842 47 Stat 307 (Menomonee of Wisconsin) Act of June 20 1842 47 Stat 774 (Chippewas of Minnesota) Act of June 29 1845 Stat 112 1 Menomonee) Act of June 25 1847 48 Stat 149 (Sawabok) Act of June 26 1847 48 Stat 154 (Red Lake) Act of May 7 1871 48 Stat 665 (Chippewas of Minn 1840) Act of July 19 1937 49 Stat 144 (Red Lake) Act of June 20 1840 40 Stat 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000

<sup>16</sup>The Act of April 30 1894 25 Stat 91 (later amended by the Act of June 21 1906 34 Stat 323 126) established the right to "Sioux benefits in the following terms:

\* \* \* That each head of family or single person over the age of eighteen years who shall live or may hereafter take his or her allotment of land in severalty shall be provided with two milch cows one pair of oxen with yoke and collar one plow one wagon one harrow one hoe one rake, and one pitchfork all suitable to the work they may have to do and also twenty dollars in cash. (P. 101)

and the lot of March 3 1909 at least 751 (Quipaw Modern Klumath),  
lot of June 1, 1905 52 Seal 005 (Klumath).

19 Sec (the Act of April 20 1906 c 1876 34 Stat 117 (bom Criminal  
Tribes)

<sup>10</sup> See the Act of March 1 1901 at 51st Sess. 562-86' (Clark).

...a fund out of which the dividend is to be paid is segregated a trust for the benefit of the stockholder is imposed upon the segregated fund.

*See New York Trust Co v Edwards*, 274 N.Y. 2d 953 (D.C.S.D.N.Y. 1921), *Stuart v Biograph Co*, 246 N.Y. 2d 454 (C.C.N.Y. 2, 1918) *See also Daynard v Bink*, 217 N.Y. 2d 440, 142 N.F. 52 (1925), in the event that income accruing to a life tenant during his lifetime but not yet payable at the date of his death is payable to his estate.

The Act of January 14, 1889, 25 Stat. 642 provided for the sale of certain tribal lands of the Chippewa Indians of Minnesota but provided in part

That all money accruing from the disposal of said lands, shall be placed in the Treasury of the United States and shall be held in credit of the State of Minnesota as a permanent fund which shall be loaned to the State at five per centum per annum payable annually for the period of twenty years, the interest on such loan to be paid by the State and shall be expended for the benefit of said Indians in manner hereinafter provided. One hundred and fifty thousand dollars of fifty years except in the cases hereinafter more expressly annually paid in cash in equal shares to the heads of families and to the heads of single persons, and the balance of the interest shall during the same period and with like exception be expended for the benefit of said Indians and for other classes of said Indians and the remaining one fourth of the interest shall during the said period of fifty years be expended for the acquisition of land for the maintenance of a system of free schools among said Indians and the balance of the interest shall be paid in cash to the head of each family and to the head of each single person and shall be divided and paid to all of said Chippewa Indians and their issue then living in each of said villages. The United States shall pay to the head of each family and to the head of each single person, as aforesaid the sum of ninety thousand dollars an acre of land and the balance of the interest shall be paid in cash and shall exceed the sum of three million dollars, less any actual interest that may in the meantime accrue from an account of said land.

Under this act, three fourths of the interest is to be paid annually to the eligible Indians in equal shares per capita. Any advances made can come only from the interest, and the Secretary of the Interior cannot segregate and advance to any individual Chippewa his pro rata share of the permanent fund. If he were allowed to do this there is a possibility that the permanent fund set apart for the benefit of all Chippewas might be seriously depleted or exhausted (Op Sol I D, M 11879, May 21, 1924). The policy behind keeping the fund intact for the period of 50 years was to prevent the Indians from squandering their wealth, it was

### C THE LIMITS OF LEGISLATIVE DISTRIBUTION

Oftentimes, the act or treaty providing for the distribution of tribal lands or tribal funds does not state specifically the proportion each member is to receive, but leaves the distribution to the decision of the tribe.<sup>10</sup> Tribal charters generally limit the amount and mode in which tribal property may be distributed,<sup>11</sup> and in some cases prohibit any per capita distribution of tribal funds.<sup>12</sup>

So long as the Federal Government sought to achieve the breaking up of tribal estates, legislative distribution of tribal funds was the order of the day.<sup>14</sup>

However, by virtue of the Act of May 18, 1916, c. 125, §§ 8(a), 12, 195 the Secretary of the Interior was authorized in his discretion to admit to an individual entitled to participate in the permanent fund of the Chippewas.

\* \* our fourth of the amount which would now be coming to said Indian under a pro rata distribution of said permanent fund *Provided further* That any money received hereunder by any member of said tribe or used for his or her benefit shall be deducted from the share of said member in the permanent fund of the said Chippewa Indians in Minnesota to which he or she

(Discussed On Sol I D M 15054 January 9 1927)

The question of the proportionate distillation of the interest accruing upon the Chippewa fund was discussed in an opinion of the Solicitor of the Interior Department (Op Sol I D M1954 January 5, 1927).

<sup>14</sup>The Act of March 3 1839 5 Stat. 489 350 providing for the division and distribution of land belonging to the Bojilertown Indians by a board of commissioners stated that it was the duty of the board "to make a just and fair partition and division of said lands among the members of said tribe or among such of them as, by the laws and customs and regulations of said tribe, are entitled to the same, and in such proportions; and in such manner as shall be consistent with equity and justice and in accordance with the existing laws customs usages, and regulations of said tribe." Numerous other acts which leave the distribution of tribal property to the tribe itself are discussed in Chap. 11, Secs. 24 and 25.

<sup>21</sup> For example the corporate charter of the Winnebago Tribe of Nebraska, ratified August 15, 1988, provides:

The Tribe may issue to each of its members a nontransferable certificate of membership evidencing the equal share of each member in the net assets of the Tribe. The Tribe may distribute among the recognized members of the Tribe all profits of its public enterprises or income over and above what is necessary to maintain its public enterprises and to provide for the maintenance of its reservation. No portion of the net assets of the Tribe may be devoted to the establishment of a reserve fund for the construction of public works the costs of public enterprises the maintenance of tribal government or the support of tribal public enterprise purposes. No such distribution of profits or income by any one year amounting to a distribution of more than one-half of the net assets of the Tribe may be made without the approval of the Secretary of the Interior. No distribution of the financial assets of the Tribe shall be made except as provided herein or as is authorized by Congress.

<sup>24</sup> For example the corporate charter of the Gila River Pima Maricopa Indian Community (ratified February 28, 1988) provides, in sec 8 "No per capita distribution of any assets of the community shall be made"

134 Act of June 1, 1872, 17 Stat 488 (Ojibwa), Act of March 3, 1873, 17 Stat 623 (Ojibwa), Act of May 15 1888 25 Stat 170 (Ojibwa), Act of August 9 1880 28 Stat 320 (Ojibwa tribe), Act of February 18 1894, 26 Stat 749 (Sas and Fox and Iowa), Act of August 11, 1914, 38 Stat 276 (Omaha), Act of February 20 1890 25 Stat 677 (Ojibwa), Act of June 6 1900, 31 Stat 672 (Fowl Hall), Act of February 28, 1901, 31 Stat 819 (Seneca), Act of February 20, 1904 38 Stat 46 (Red Lake), Act of April 24, 1904, 38 Stat 254 (Bronx), Act of April 28, 1904, 38 Stat 902 (Faribault), Act of April 27, 1904, 38 Stat 310 (Devils Lake), Act of April 27, 1904, 38 Stat 602 (Crow), Act of April 28, 1904, 38 Stat 912 (Grand Coulee), Act of March 3, 1905 38 Stat 1010 (Shoshone or Wind River), Act of March 20, 1905 38 Stat 80 (Kiona, Comanche and Apache), Act of March 22, 1906 34 Stat 80 (Colville), Act of June 14, 1906, 34 Stat 262 (Indians in Richardson County, Nebraska), Act of May 30 1908, 35 Stat 568 (Fort Peck), Act of February 18 1906, 37 Stat 628 (Omaha and Winnebago), Act of March 3, 1906, 38 Stat 1006 (Richmond County, Nebraska), Act of May 11, 1912, 37 Stat 111 (Omaha), Act of July 1, 1912, 37 Stat 187 (Winnebago), Act of February 14 1918, 37 Stat

In recent years, however, the Federal Government recognizes that per capita payments would lead to the dissipation of the tribal estate and the creation of new demands upon the Federal Treasury on the part of individual Indians, has sought to discourage the per capita distribution of tribal funds,<sup>147</sup> except

where such funds represent continuing income,<sup>148</sup> or where prior legislative commitments preclude application of the current policy of conserving the tribal estate.

The federal policy of discouraging per capita distribution of tribal funds, coupled with a tendency to cut down federal use of tribal funds for Indian Service administration, has made the activity of the tribe itself in distributing tribal property or rights of use therein a matter of increasing importance.<sup>149</sup>

675 (Standing Rock), Act of August 26, 1922, 42 Stat. 852 (Riverside County (Internat)), Act of May 19, 1924, 43 Stat. 182 (La. du Prou Beau Rivage of Chippewas), Act of January 7, 1925, 43 Stat. 726 (Omaha), Act of February 9, 1925, 43 Stat. 820 (Omaha), Act of March 3, 1927, 44 Stat. 1459 (Kiowa, Comanche and Apache), Act of March 8, 1927, 44 Stat. 1499 (Cheyenne, Arapaho), Act of March 9, 1927, 44 Stat. 1507 (Bois Hill), Act of April 29, 1930, 46 Stat. 260 (Iowa), Act of March 2, 1931, 46 Stat. 1451 (Fort Berthold), Act of March 4, 1931, 46 Stat. 1626 (Tulsa), Act of March 3, 1933, 47 Stat. 1458 (Pawnee), Act of June 20, 1936, 49 Stat. 1741 (Crow), Joint Resolution of June 20, 1936, 49 Stat. 1560 (Fort Belknap). For a fuller discussion of problems involved in interstate division of tribal property, and general statistics on the subject, see Chapter 1, sec. 22-24, and Chapter 10, sec. 4-5.

<sup>147</sup> Prohibitions against or limitations upon per capita payments are found in the following general statutes: Act of March 3, 1927, 44 Stat. 1447 (tribal oil and gas rentals), Act of June 18, 1934, 48 Stat. 984 (making distribution of tribal assets subject to tribal consent). Pro-

hibitions against per capita payments are likewise found in the following special statutes: Act of May 18, 1928, 45 Stat. 602 (Indians of California), Act of December 17, 1928, 45 Stat. 1027 (Winnebago), Act of February 20, 1929, 45 Stat. 1240 (Nez Percé), Act of February 23, 1929, 45 Stat. 1256 (Coeur d'Alene, Lower Umpqua and Shuswap), Act of February 23, 1929, 45 Stat. 1258 (Klamath), Act of April 21, 1932, 47 Stat. 87 (Wichita and affiliated bands), Act of June 19, 1935, 49 Stat. 788 (Pima and Maricopa), Act of August 30, 1935, 49 Stat. 1040 (Chippewa). A precursor of this prohibition against per capita distribution is found in the Act of March 3, 1863, 12 Stat. 810 (Sioux).

<sup>148</sup> Act of June 15, 1934, 48 Stat. 964 (Menominee), Act of August 26, 1927, 45 Stat. 811 (Palm Springs).

<sup>149</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 8.

# CHAPTER 10

## THE RIGHTS OF THE INDIAN IN HIS PERSONALTY

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE		PAGE
Section 1 <i>Nature and forms of individual personal property</i> .....	195	Section 7 <i>Federal protection of individual personal property</i> .....	200
Section 2 <i>Sources of individual personal property</i> .....	196	Section 8 <i>Expenditure and investment of individual Indian moneys</i> .....	201
Section 3 <i>Sources of individual personal property—Proceeds from allotted lands</i> .....	196	Section 9 <i>Deposits of individual Indian moneys</i> .....	202
Section 4 <i>Sources of individual personal property—Individualization of tribal funds</i> .....	197	Section 10 <i>Bequest, descent and distribution of personal property</i> .....	202
Section 5 <i>Sources of individual personal property—Payments from the Federal Government</i> .....	198	<i>A In the absence of federal legislation</i> .....	202
<i>A Annuities</i> .....	199	<i>B Under federal acts</i> .....	203
<i>B Method of payment</i> .....	199	1 <i>Descent</i> .....	203
Section 6 <i>Sources of individual personal property—Payments of damages</i> .....	200	2 <i>Bequest</i> .....	203
		Section 11 <i>Individual rights in personally—Crops</i> .....	204
		Section 12 <i>Individual rights in personally—Livestock</i> .....	204

### SECTION 1 NATURE AND FORMS OF INDIVIDUAL PERSONAL PROPERTY

The forms of personalty held by Indians (i.e. funds, personal belongings, notes, mortgages, growing crops, livestock, and choses in action) may be as diverse as those held by non-Indians. So, too, the forms of legal and equitable interests in personal property which may be vested in individual Indians are probably as diverse as among non-Indians. It is not our purpose to analyze those rights in personalty which Indians enjoy in common with other citizens. Yet in so far as the Indian is subject to the special guardianship<sup>1</sup> of the Federal Government, problems peculiar to him arise concerning his acquisition, use, and disposition of his goods and chattels.

Under the United States Constitution, the rights of the Indian in his private property, whatever they may be, are "secured and enforced to the same extent and in the same way as other real debts or citizens of the United States."<sup>2</sup> Nonetheless, Congress may, acting within the scope of its constitutional power, control and manage his affairs and property.<sup>3</sup> The rights of the Indian in his personalty are primarily dependent upon the answer to the question: Has Congress, in the particular instance, undertaken to manage the property, and if so, to what extent have powers of management been conferred upon administrative officials?

Where Congress has not imposed restrictions upon the Indian's personal property he may exercise the same power to use, destroy, or alienate his personal property which any other citizen possesses. There is nothing about the status of the individual Indian as such that incapacitates him from exercising the ordinary rights enjoyed by other owners of personal property.<sup>4</sup> Whatever peculiar limitations are to be found in this field are limitations attached to the property rather than limitations affecting the person.

If legal problems in the field of Indian-owned personal property are viewed from this standpoint, the statutory or treaty origin of any property is of minor importance in determining what limitations are attached to its use or disposition. If the treaty or statute provides that funds or trinkets are to be turned over to an Indian without restriction, that ordinarily ends the matter. The funds or the trinkets become the absolute property of the recipient, who may thereafter will, use, destroy, consume, or give away his property without the consent of any official. On the other hand, if Congress provides that certain property shall be distributed to Indians "under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe," it becomes necessary to examine what those rules and regulations provide in order to determine how far rights ordinarily associated with ownership can be exercised by the Indian and how far they rest with the reservation superintendent or some other government official.

Generally, but not universally, restricted personal property represents a carry-over of restrictions imposed upon land ownership. Since Indian lands have generally been subjected to restrictions on lease or sale,<sup>5</sup> the treaties and statutes authorizing such lease or sale might, and often do, provide that the cash returns derived from such disposition of lands should be held by the United States in trust for the Indians concerned or should be turned over to the Indians subject to specific restrictions upon use or disposition. The legal justification for such provisions was that the Federal Government, having power to forbid or permit land alienation might condition its permission by extending restrictions to the proceeds derived from restricted lands. The factual justification was, generally, that the Indians might squander the proceeds of their lands and thus render themselves a burden to the Government or a danger to their neighbors unless restrained from doing so by governmental restrictions.

<sup>1</sup> "Guardian ward" concepts are discussed in Chapter 8, see 0.

<sup>2</sup> See *Gonzalez v. Thompson*, 224 U. S. 685, 677 (1912).

<sup>3</sup> For the extent of congressional power over Indian affairs and Indian property, see Chapter 5.

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 8.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 11, secs. 4 and 5.

The policy problems which are raised in this field involve a balance of two objectives: on the one hand to safeguard the economic future of the Indian and the purse strings of the Federal Government by preventing the dissipation of the Indian's capital; on the other hand to minimize the cost of paternal supervision that such situational entails and to give the individual Indian the right to exercise his own judgment, and to make mistakes in the process, without which no actual education in economics is impossible. At different times and in

different circumstances the balance between these conflicting objectives has naturally varied. No simple formula will explain why certain property has been restricted and other property turned over to Indian owners without strings. All that can be attempted in this chapter in that regard is to indicate the principal types of legislation in the field.

## SECTION 2 SOURCES OF INDIVIDUAL PERSONAL PROPERTY

The same Indian may possess at one time restricted and unrestricted funds. With unrestricted funds as, for example, wages earned by the Indian in private employment, he may do just as he wishes, as any other person might.<sup>1</sup> Funds may come from sources not subject to control by the Federal Government. Congress may restrict the Indians' use of such funds as long as it remains its jurisdiction over the Indian.<sup>2</sup> On the other

hand, funds, presently unrestricted, may have had their source in other restricted property.

The chief sources of funds which have given rise to special problems of Indian law are:

- 1 Proceeds, including income, from restricted allotted lands.
- 2 Tribal funds individualized by per capita distributions to the Indians.
- 3 Payments from the Federal Government.
- 4 Payments of damages for loss of property.
- 5 Proceeds from the sale of restricted crops and livestock.

<sup>1</sup> See *Choate v. Bunch* 284 U. S. 671 (1931) aff., sub nom. *Choate v. Commissioners of Internal Revenue*, 8 F. 2d 976 (C. C. A. 10, 1939).

<sup>2</sup> See *Hickey v. United States*, 84 F. 2d 628 (C. C. A. 10, 1934); *United States v. Walker*, 248 U. S. 152 (1917); *Brady v. Hunter*, 240 U. S. 89 (1915) and see Chapter 5, sec. 50-51.

<sup>3</sup> Op. bol. I. D. 312528 June 26, 1929.

## SECTION 3 SOURCES OF INDIVIDUAL PERSONAL PROPERTY—PROCEEDS FROM ALLOTTED LANDS

Comparatively few of the allotment acts have any specific direction governing the distribution of the proceeds from the disposition of the individual's land, either by sale or lease.<sup>3</sup> The General Allotment Act of 1887<sup>4</sup> did not permit any disposition except in descent of allotted lands for certain periods of time, during which the lands were to be held in trust by the United States. But realizing that the heirs might not want the inherited lands, since they might have allotted lands of their own, and desiring to encourage the sale of such lands,<sup>5</sup> Congress, in the Appropriation Act of May 27, 1902<sup>6</sup> provided that trust lands inherited from Indians might be conveyed in fee by their subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>7</sup>

The interests of the heirs to the proceeds derived from conveyance are discussed in the cases of *National Bank of Commerce v. Anderson*<sup>8</sup> and *United States v. Thurston County, Nebraska*.<sup>9</sup> which sustain the regulations of the Secretary of the Interior controlling the proceeds under the Act of 1902. The court in the *National Bank of Commerce* case holds that the Act of 1902 does

not indicate an intent by Congress to vest the trust of the lands held in trust. When the lands are sold with the consent of the Secretary, the first attaches to the proceeds, which are payable to the heirs under the rules prescribed by the Interior Department. In approving sales by heirs, the Secretary of the Interior had prescribed that all proceeds of such sales be deposited in United States depositories to the individual credit of each heir as his interest in the estate indicated and subject to checks of \$10 per month with the approval of the agent in charge and in trust amounts only when authorized by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs.<sup>10</sup>

In *United States Fidelity and Guaranty Co. v. Hansen*<sup>11</sup> the court holds that the purchase price derived from the sale of the land by the heir is a trust fund that under the provision of the act requiring the Secretary of the Interior to approve a conveyance he has the authority to exercise the government's option of continuing control or relinquishing it.

In 1907, Congress took the further step and permitted the sale or lease of allotted lands by either the allottee or his heirs during the trust period.

" . . . on such terms and conditions and under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe and the proceeds derived therefrom shall be used for the benefit of the allottee or heirs so disposing of his land or interest, under the supervision of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. " \* \* \*

In the same Act of March 1, 1907,<sup>12</sup> Congress amended the Act of 1902, and relinquished some control over the proceeds derived from the sale of allotments in the White Earth Reservation in Minnesota. The amendment provides for the removal of re-

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter 11.

<sup>4</sup> Sec. 5 Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 388, 389.

<sup>5</sup> The Act of 1902 permits alienation by the heirs, subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior on the assumption that they would be "more competent in many cases to manage their own affairs than would the original allottee have been, and that the Secretary of the Interior should be the judge as to whether that condition has come about." *United States v. Park Land Co.*, 188 Fed. 383, 387 (C. C. Minn. 1911).

<sup>6</sup> The purpose of the statute evidently was that lands inherited from deceased allottees by heirs who had and were living upon allotments of their own might be sold and converted into money, and the funds then be utilized and incorporated.

<sup>7</sup> *National Bank of Commerce v. Anderson*, 147 Fed. 87, 89 (C. C. A. 9, 1906).

<sup>8</sup> See 7 22 Stat. 245, 275, 25 U. S. C. 379.

<sup>9</sup> The approval of the Secretary of the Interior was necessary to the validity of a conveyance by an adult heir of an Indian allottee. *United States v. Leahr*, 167 Fed. 670 (C. C. D. 1909).

<sup>10</sup> 147 Fed. 87 (C. C. A. 9, 1906).

<sup>11</sup> 143 Fed. 287 (C. C. A. 8, 1907), rev'd 140 Fed. 406 (C. C. Neb. 1906).

<sup>12</sup> Rules promulgated September 16, 1904, sustained in *United States v. Thurston County*, supra in 15. See Chapter 13, sec. 4.

<sup>13</sup> 28 Okla. 459, 129 Pac. 80 (1912).

<sup>14</sup> Appropriation Act of March 1, 1907, 34 Stat. 1015, 1018, 25 U. S. C.

405. See Chapter 11.

<sup>15</sup> 34 Stat. 1013, 1014.

restrictions on allotments held by adult mixed bloods. In *United States v. Park Land Co.*<sup>3</sup> the court construes this amendment to remove from federal control the sale of lands in the White Earth Reservation and the proceeds derived therefrom by the adult mixed blood Indian no matter how it may come to him. As to an adult full blood, the Act provides that the Secretary of the Interior may remove the restrictions upon the sale of his allotment if satisfied that that Indian is competent to handle his own affairs. Till then, Congress retains control over the land and the proceeds therefrom.

Section 2 of the Act of May 29, 1905,<sup>4</sup> which expressly excludes from its scope lands in Oklahoma, Minnesota, and South Dakota, permits the sale of allotments on petition of the allottee, his heir, or duly authorized representative.

Provided That the proceeds derived from all sales hereunder shall be used, during the first period, for the benefit of the allottee or heir, so disposing of his interest, under the supervision of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. \*

Sections 1<sup>5</sup> and 4<sup>16</sup> of the Act of June 25, 1910,<sup>17</sup> provide generally for the control of the proceeds from the sale or lease of the Indian's restricted lands. Section 8 of the act allows the sale of timber on trust allotments with the consent of the Secretary of the Interior and the distribution of the proceeds to the allottee or disposal for his benefit under rules and regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior.

The imposition of a trust over Indian funds may be effectuated by treaty as well as by statute. In the treaty concluded Sep-

<sup>3</sup> 188 Fed. 788 (1 C. Clm. 1911). In *United States v. First National Bank*, 244 U. S. 245 (1914) aff'd 205 Fed. 958 (C. C. A. 8, 1914), a case involving an attempt by the United States to set aside a conveyance of land by an Indian having less than one eighth white blood, the supreme Court held that any identifiable amount of white blood bought in Indian within the scope of the provision of the Act of March 1, 1907 removing restrictions upon the allotment of mixed blood Indian.

<sup>4</sup> 35 Stat. 444, 25 U. S. C. 404.

<sup>5</sup> All sales of lands allotted to Indians . . . shall be made under such rules and regulations . . . as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe. . . . \* \* \* Provided That the proceeds of the sale of allotted lands shall be paid to such allottee or heirs as may be competent and held in trust subject to use and expenditure during the first period for such heirs or heirs as may be incompetent, as their relative interests shall appear. \*

The section permits the deposit of Indian funds held by federal disbursing agents in banks. This provision is not affected by the Act of March 3, 1925 45 Stat. 151 amending sec. 1. See 25 U. S. C. 872.

<sup>6</sup> See 4 provide for the leasing of allotted lands for a period not to exceed 5 years subject to and in conformity with such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe, and the proceeds of any such lease shall be paid to the allottee or his heirs or expended for his or their benefit, in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior. See 25 U. S. C. 408.

<sup>7</sup> 35 Stat. 855. This act applies to proceeds derived from the sale of lands held in trust as well as lands in which the power of alienation is restricted. *United States v. Bowling* 258 U. S. 484 (1921), 10 V. 261 Fed. 687 (C. C. B. D. N. Y. 1919).

<sup>8</sup> The Act of March 4, 1907, 34 Stat. 1419, provides also for the sale of merchantable timber on allotments on the Kaibito Reservation and declares that the proceeds therefrom are to be expended under the direction of the Secretary of the Interior for purposes beneficial to the indi-

tribes. 30 U. S. 44.<sup>9</sup> between the United States and certain Chipmunk Indians, a system of allotting tribal lands was established. Article 3 of the treaty provided that the President was to assign the allotments and that he might issue patents "with such restrictions of the power of alienation as he might see fit to impose." In the exercise of this power, he may withhold in the patent a restriction against alienation without his consent. In the case of *Starr v. Campbell*, it is held that this restriction extends to the timber on the land and therefore the President could regulate the distribution of the proceeds from the sale of the timber.<sup>10</sup>

On the other hand, Congress may permit the leasing of allotted lands, subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, but specifically providing that the allottees . . . shall have full control of the same, including the proceeds thereof. \*

A perusal of the treaty cited indicates a general intent of Congress to retain, for a time, governmental control of the proceeds from the disposition of restricted allotted lands and to leave to the discretion of administrative officials the time and manner in which such funds are to be distributed or expended, subject to the qualification that the funds be used for the benefit of the Indian.

In the Appropriation Act of May 18, 1916 39 Stat. 123 Congress provided for the disposal of fowling rights on the allotments of Indians of the Little and Ojibwa Tribes. The provision states that:

any allottee or the heirs of any deceased allottee is a condition to grant sale or their consent to the leasing of fowling rights on the allotment the allottee must first obtain the approval of the Secretary of the Interior. . . . That consideration of land it shall be allowed for such sale of rights and in what manner and for what purposes such consideration as well it shall be paid and expended and the compensation or rental shall be paid or expended under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe.

Under the agreement concluded between the Ojibwa and Ojibwa Indians and the United States on July 7, 1884, entitled by the Appropriation Act of July 4, 1884 21 Stat. 70, 79-80, allotments of tribal lands were made, but no provision is made for the sale of allotments, hence no problem of rights in funds therefrom could arise. However, by the Act of March 4, 1911 36 Stat. 1795 Congress withdrew the Secretary of the Interior to some of the land held in trust for certain named Indians and to conserve the funds for the benefit of the allottee or to invest or expend them for the individual's benefit in such manner as he might determine. The Act of May 20, 1924, 43 U. S. C. 138, permits the disposition of patented lands by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs or if he were deceased the heirs might convey the land in accordance with the provisions of the Act of June 25, 1910 36 Stat. 875.

<sup>9</sup> 10 Stat. 1109.

<sup>10</sup> 209 U. S. 527 (1908).

<sup>11</sup> See Chapter 11, sec. 4B Under the regulations approved by the President December 8, 1901 proceeds from the sale of timber from allotted lands after the deduction of expenses, were to be deposited in some national bank subject to the check of the allottee, commingled with the Indian's apert. In December 1902 the regulations were amended so that if the allottee were deemed incompetent to manage his own affairs, the agent had the authority subject to the approval of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, to fit the amounts the Indian could withdraw. For regulations regarding timber, see 27 U. S. C. 41-43-45-49.

<sup>12</sup> Change Allotment Act of June 28, 1906 see 7, 84 Stat. 138, 545. For a discussion of this statute see Chapter 28, sec. 12A.

## SECTION 4 SOURCES OF INDIVIDUAL PERSONAL PROPERTY—INDIVIDUALIZATION OF TRIBAL FUNDS

A second important source of individual funds is the individualization of tribal funds.<sup>18</sup> Since tribal funds generally repre-

sent the income from disposition of tribal lands, the Federal Government has commonly extended the restrictions on the land to the proceeds therefrom. By a further extension, Congress has frequently imposed, as conditions to the right of the individual to participate in tribal funds, certain restrictions affecting his use of the funds after they have become individualized.<sup>19</sup>

<sup>18</sup> The nature of tribal funds is discussed in Chapter 15, the right of the individual to share in tribal funds is discussed in Chapter 9. On administrative power over tribal funds, see Chapter 5 sec. 10, and over individual funds, see *ibid.*, sec. 12. On regulations regarding money, tribal and individual, see 25 U. S. C. 221-1-288 7.

<sup>19</sup> See Chapter 9.



By the Act of March 2, 1907,<sup>3</sup> Congress provided generally for the distribution of tribal funds among individuals. Those Indians whom the Secretary of the Interior believed capable of managing their affairs could have placed to their credit upon the books of the United States Treasury their pro rata share of the tribal funds held in trust by the United States, and they could draw upon this credit without any further governmental control.<sup>4</sup> Section 2 of the act provided that the Secretary of the Interior might pay to the indebted Indians their shares in tribal property, under such rules and conditions as he might prescribe. As later amended,<sup>5</sup> this section authorized the Secretary of the Interior upon application by an Indian "personally or physically incapable of managing his or her own affairs," to withdraw the pro rata share of such Indian in the tribal funds, and to expend such sums on behalf of the Indian.

Section 29 of the Appropriation Act of May 25, 1918,<sup>6</sup> which specifically excluded from its scope the funds of the Five Civilized Tribes and the Osages, in Oklahoma, authorized the Secretary of the Interior to withdraw tribal funds from the Treasury of the United States and to credit recognized members of the tribe with equal shares. However, this authority was revoked by section 2 of the Act of June 24, 1938.<sup>7</sup> Nevertheless, the Indian may still apply for funds as his pro rata share in tribal assets, under the Act of 1907.<sup>8</sup> The granting of such applications is contrary to the general administrative policy of conserving tribal funds, but in special circumstances such pro rata distributions are still made. It has been held by the Interior Department that, under section 16 of the Act of June 18, 1904,<sup>9</sup> such applications must receive the approval of the tribal council, if the tribe in question is organized under that act.<sup>10</sup>

The individual may be awarded, by special statute, a specified sum from the tribal funds on deposit in the United States Treasury. A typical act is the Act of February 12, 1932,<sup>11</sup> providing for payment of \$25 to each enrolled Chippewa of Minnesota from tribal funds, under such regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe.

In the individualization of tribal funds, Congress has at various times laid down directions under which the Secretary of the Interior should expend the funds.

In the Act of March 3, 1883,<sup>12</sup> Congress provided for the dis-

tribution of tribal funds of the Ute Indians. The shares of all were to be deposited as individual Indian monies,<sup>13</sup> and subject to disbursement for the individual's benefit in the following ways: for improving lands, erecting homes, purchase of equipment, livestock, household goods and in other ways as will enable them to become self-sustaining. The shares of the aged, infirm, and other incapacitated members were to be used for their support and maintenance. As for minors, their shares might be invested or spent in the same fashion as prescribed for adults, but when their funds were to be invested or expended, the consent of the parents and the approval of the Secretary of the Interior was necessary.<sup>14</sup>

Acts providing for the payment of judgments in favor of a tribe may limit the rights of the Indian in individualized tribal funds by the qualification that the per capita share due each member

is to be credited to the individual Indian money account of such member for expenditure in accordance with the individual Indian money regulations.<sup>15</sup> Various resolutions authorizing the distribution of judgments rendered in favor of Indian tribes provide for per capita payments to each enrolled member, such distribution to be made under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe.<sup>16</sup>

By virtue of these acts, Congress has given to the Secretary of the Interior authority over individual funds derived from the tribal property held in trust comparable to the authority over funds derived from the individual's restricted property.<sup>17</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Individual Indian monies are funds, including the distribution in judgment to individual Indians which come into the custody of a disbursing agent." 27 C. F. R. 2411. See sec. 9 *infra* for a discussion of these regulations.

<sup>2</sup> "Of Act of June 1, 1918, 42 Stat. 805 as amended by sec. 2(b), Act of August 7, 1919, Pub. No. 427, 41st Cong. 1st sess. (Hearings).

<sup>3</sup> Joint Resolution June 20, 1918, 40 Stat. 1569 authorizing distribution of judgments in favor of Gros Ventre Indians among enrolled members.

<sup>4</sup> The Joint Resolution of June 20, 1918, 40 Stat. 1568 provides for a per capita payment of \$85 and places the remainder of the fund awarded to the Blackfoot Tribe at the disposal of the tribal council and the Secretary of the Interior.

Under the Joint Resolution of April 29, 1940, 16 Stat. 260, the Secretary of the Interior is authorized to pay a judgment in favor of the Iowa Tribe to members of the tribe in proportion to their share. The competent members receive their entire share in cash, the shares of the others included in the money are deposited to the individual credit of each and subject to existing laws governing Indian monies.

The right of the Chippewa allottees on the Lac du Flambeau Reservation in the proceeds derived from the sale of tribal lands are controlled by the act of May 10, 1904, 49 Stat. 132. After providing for the sale under rules and regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior, the act states that the net proceeds are to be distributed per capita. Those whom the Secretary shall deem competent to handle their own affairs shall receive their share. As for the others, their shares are deposited to their individual credit and paid to them as used for their benefit under the Secretary's supervision.

<sup>17</sup> See Chapter 3, sec. 11 and 12.

## SECTION 5. SOURCES OF INDIVIDUAL PERSONAL PROPERTY—PAYMENTS FROM THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT

A third source of individual personality comprises the various forms of direct payment to individual Indians from the Federal Government. In this connection a distinction must be drawn between obligations assumed by the Federal Government towards the various tribes, by reason of the sale of tribal lands or otherwise, and obligations running directly to the members of the tribes. Problems arising out of the former situation are dealt with elsewhere.<sup>18</sup> For the present we are concerned only with the situations in which the Federal Government has under-

taken to make payments, in money or goods, to individual Indians.

Gifts were sometimes made for the purpose of civilizing the Indians by giving them agricultural aids and clothes.<sup>19</sup> Gifts

<sup>18</sup> The Act of March 30, 1892, sec. 12, 2 Stat. 130, 14, provides in part:

"That in order to promote civilization among the friendly Indian tribes and to secure the continuance of their friendship, it shall be lawful for the President of the United States, to cause them to be furnished with useful domestic animals, and implements of husbandry, and with goods or money as he shall judge proper."

In the Appropriation Act of March 8, 1875, 18 Stat. 420, are numerous appropriations for agricultural pursuits. Minnutes of Kansas are given

<sup>19</sup> See Chapters 9 and 10.

were also justified simply on the ground that the Indian needs the bounty for subsistence.<sup>10</sup>

### A ANNUITIES<sup>11</sup>

Periodic payments of either money or goods are called "annuities."<sup>12</sup> According to the terms of the instrument, an annuity may be a specific amount for a specified number of years,<sup>13</sup> or it may be a specified amount to life<sup>14</sup> or while the Indians are at peace.<sup>15</sup>

Frequently the individual recipients of annuities were the chiefs or others of the tribe who were influential in keeping the peace and in treaty-making.<sup>16</sup> Treaties often provided that a sum of money or other gifts would be paid when a particular treaty went into effect.<sup>17</sup> At times the United States would promise to pay the salary of the chief annually,<sup>18</sup> but the policy behind this was probably no different than that fostering the payment of annuities.

money for grain and seed for farming purposes" (p. 442), money in aid of agricultural pursuits to be given to Ponca (p. 436), River Crow (p. 437), Appropriations for clothes are made to Bamocks (p. 440), to Shoshones (p. 440), Six Nations of New York (p. 441), Cherokees and Arapahoes (p. 424), Crow (p. 429).

The Acts of April 10, 1868, sec. 17, 25 Stat. 94 101, and of March 2, 1869, sec. 17, 25 Stat. 888-896 dividing the Sioux lands provide for the distribution of cattle and farming implements among the Sioux allottees.

<sup>10</sup> The Appropriation Act of March 8, 1875, 18 Stat. 420, makes an appropriation for subsistence to those Apaches of Arizona and New Mexico "who go and remain upon wild reservations and refrain from hostilities." \* \* \* (p. 428) appropriation for the aged sick infirm and orphans among the Apaches (p. 424), the Blackfeet, Bloods, and Negrais (p. 424).

The Appropriation Act of June 25, 1894, 18 Stat. 143, provides for the subsistence of Indians who remain loyal to the United States in dining members of the Five Civilized Tribes and affiliated tribes (pp. 180-181). The Appropriation Act of March 3, 1895, 18 Stat. 541, provides for the subsistence of a number of Chippewas of the Mississippi.

In the Treaty of August 9, 1814, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 120 the United States agreed to furnish members of the Creek Nation with the necessities of life until they were able to take care of themselves to some extent.

<sup>11</sup> For regulations regarding annuity and other per capita payments, see 28 C. F. R. 224.1-224.5.

<sup>12</sup> By the Treaty of October 7, 1863, Art. 10, 13 Stat. 674, 675, with the Tabeguache Band of Utah Indians, each family receives a number of sheep and cattle annually for 5 years.

<sup>13</sup> Treaty of January 20, 1826, with Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 234. Treaty of September 26, 1855, with Chippewas, Ottawa, and Potawatami Indians, 7 Stat. 431, Treaty of September 24, 1859, with Delaware Indians, 7 Stat. 327, Treaty of January 7, 1868, 7 Stat. 101, 102 (Cherokee chief receives \$100 per year for life), Treaty of September 20, 1828, 7 Stat. 317, 318 (Potawatami chief receives \$100 per year in goods for life).

<sup>14</sup> Appropriation Act of March 3, 1873, 18 Stat. 420, 423 (supplies to those who refrain from fighting). Art. 14, treaty agreement with Ute, April 20, 1874, 18 Stat. 36, 38.

<sup>15</sup> Art. V of the Treaty with the Chippewas, October 2, 1885, 18 Stat. 967, provides that the Chippewa chiefs may receive a house and annuity, to encourage peace and to encourage others to become sedentary. Treaty with the Chickasaws, October 19, 1815, 7 Stat. 192, 194. Because of their friendliness to the United States, the chiefs receive \$150 in cash or in goods.

<sup>16</sup> Appropriation Act of July 2, 1836, 5 Stat. 73, 75.

<sup>17</sup> The Act of April 20, 1874, 18 Stat. 46 provides for the payment of salary to the head chief of the Ute Nation by the United States at the rate of \$1,000 per year for the term of 10 years, or as long as he remains head chief and at peace with the United States.

The Act of December 15, 1874, 18 Stat. 261, provides for a salary of \$500 per year by the United States for a term of 5 years. Accord Treaty of June 15, 1850, 19 Stat. 977 (salaries of Nez Percé chief to be paid), Treaty of June 20, 1855, 12 Stat. 983 (salary of chief of Oregon bands to be paid), Treaty of June 9, 1855, 12 Stat. 951 (salary to be paid to Yakama chief).

In order to induce Indians to settle upon homesteads<sup>19</sup> or accept allotments,<sup>20</sup> Congress generally provided that those Indians who accepted the benefits of homestead and allotment acts would not lose any rights in annuities and other personal property and that those Indians who did receive allotments would be assured of receiving compensation for damages occasioned by trespass of Indians who had not received allotments by payments from annuities due the trespassers.<sup>21</sup>

### B METHOD OF PAYMENT

While ordinarily the obligations of the United States under treaties and agreements with the Indian tribes were considered obligations owing to the tribes, even when the Federal Government assumed the task of paying over the promised sums in capita to the members of the tribe,<sup>22</sup> there have been cases in which the obligation of the United States ran directly to individual Indians.

In the treaty with the Shawnees on May 10, 1851,<sup>23</sup> the United States was to pay certain sums to these Indians. Section 8 of the treaty provides that competent Shawnees should receive their portions in seven annual payments and in money. As for those incompetent to manage their own affairs, the President was to dispose of their portion in a manner he believed to be for the best interests of them and of their families after consulting the Shawnee Council. The funds due the minor orphan children were to be appropriated by the President in a manner considered to be for their best interest.

The payments due the orphan children became a matter of litigation which reached the Supreme Court at the United States in 1894 in the case of *United States v. Blackfeather*.<sup>24</sup> The Court discussed the treaty of 1854 and finds that if under it the President had determined that the orphans' funds should be paid to them in severalty, he committed some of the money to a United States Indian superintendent for distribution but said officer embezzled it. Another portion was paid to guardians of the orphans who were created by the Shawnee Council, but because of laches or dishonesty, this portion never reached the orphans. The Shawnee Tribe brought this action to collect this money from the Government. In its decision, the Court holds that the tribe has no authority to sue for these moneys under a jurisdictional act authorizing suit for moneys claimed in tribal capacity. The Court also holds that the Government is not liable to the tribe for the portion paid to the guardians appointed by the tribal council, but intimates that the Government may have a moral obligation to reimburse the money embezzled by the Indian superintendent.<sup>25</sup>

Because of difficulties of the type that arose under the Shawnee treaty and described above, Congress in 1862 passed an act prohibiting the payment of money to any person appointed by any Indian council on behalf of incompetent or orphan Indians, and providing that said moneys shall remain in the United States Treasury at 6 percent interest until ordered to be paid by the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>26</sup>

<sup>19</sup> Appropriation Act of March 8, 1885, 18 Stat. 541, 545, see 4, relating to Stockbridges and Minnesota Indians; Appropriation Act of March 8, 1874, 18 Stat. 403, 420, sec. 15 (general act).

<sup>20</sup> Act of March 3, 1845, 5 Stat. 545 (Stockbridge).

<sup>21</sup> Act of June 14, 1862, 12 Stat. 427 (general act).

<sup>22</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 23-28.

<sup>23</sup> 10 Stat. 1058.

<sup>24</sup> 156 U. S. 386 (1894).

<sup>25</sup> In the Appropriation Act of July 7, 1884, 28 Stat. 230, 247, an appropriation was made for that purpose.

<sup>26</sup> See 6, Act of July 5, 1862, 12 Stat. 514, 529-530, which is embodied in R. S. § 2108 and 25 U. S. C. 109.

## SECTION 6 SOURCES OF INDIVIDUAL PERSONAL PROPERTY—PAYMENTS OF DAMAGES

The Indian may receive funds because of being dispossessed from all or some of his lands. Acts or treaties which convey or reserve to the Indian tribe or to its members certain rights in land usually provide that the United States guarantees to them security and protection in the exercise of such rights.<sup>1</sup> The right of the individual to receive compensation for damages to his lands and property used in connection with it is derived in part from such provisions.

The loss of his land may be occasioned by the Government's taking.<sup>2</sup> A more frequent disposition of the Indian's land occurs when Congress grants rights of way across the land for railroad and similar purposes. Some treaties, such as the 1854 treaty with the Shawnees,<sup>3</sup> provide specifically for payment to Indians for any lands made through their lands. The acts granting such rights of way provide for payment of compensation for the taking of the land and for any damages done to his other property, such as chattels.<sup>4</sup> Although the property taken may have been restricted, nevertheless, it is a general policy of the acts to place from Government control the expenditure of the funds by making provision only for the supervision of payment to the Indians. The Act of May 6 1910,<sup>5</sup> is a typical illustration. It provides that the railroad company shall pay to the Secretary of the Interior the amount of the damages and compensation. The act continues, "That the damages and compensa-

tion paid to the Secretary of the Interior by the railway company taking any such land shall be paid by said Secretary to the allottee sustaining such damages."

Similarly, in many acts or treaties providing for the removal of the Indian from the land of which he has possession stipulate that he is to receive money or other goods as payment for any improvements he made on the land or chattels he must leave behind.<sup>6</sup>

Related to moneys and other personal property given to Indians for property left behind are the gifts made to the individual Indians to aid them in their emigration from the lands ceded.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Treaty with Choctaws, July 5 1817, 7 Stat. 176, 178 provides that the Choctaw emigrants are to be paid for loss of improvements by receiving lands and other personal property. Treaty with Winnebagoes, September 29 1857, 7 Stat. 160, 166. Treaty with Chickasaws, October 19 1831, 7 Stat. 192, 193. Treaty with Choctaws, October 18 1830, 7 Stat. 210, 212-213. Treaty with Osage, November 25 1824, 7 Stat. 252, Article 11. Treaty with Creek, January 24 1826, 7 Stat. 286, 288. Treaty with Cherokee, May 6 1828, 7 Stat. 417, 418-419. Treaty with Seminoles, January 29 1831, 7 Stat. 418, 449. Treaty with Winnebagoes, etc. July 20 1841, 7 Stat. 471, 472. Treaty with Ottomaw, August 30 1841, 7 Stat. 499, 500. Article 9. Treaty with Choctaws, December 29 1857, 7 Stat. 475, 482. Treaty with New York Indians, January 15 1868, 7 Stat. 4750. Treaty with Chickasaws, October 18 1830, 7 Stat. 192, 193. Treaty with Chickasaws, July 15 1866, 11 Stat. 661, 667. Treaty with Creek, November 5 1877, 11 Stat. 795, 797. Act of April 30 1886, 25 Stat. 94, 104 (violate). Act of March 2 1899, 26 Stat. 888, 897-898 (violate). Act of February 10, 1897, 29 Stat. 677 (Use).

<sup>2</sup> Appropriation Act of July 29 1848, sec. 4 (18 U. S. § 680) and 5 U. S. Stat. 252, 204-207 (Each Choctaw to receive a sum of money when he moves west). Joint Resolution, March 3 1876, 6 Stat. 942 (These Miami moneys to be at the Mississippi river (land annuities)). Treaty with Choctaws, September 27 1830, Art. 20, 7 Stat. 393, 418 (Each emigrating Choctaw woman receives fifty cents). Treaty with Choctaws, December 20 1810, Art. 9, 7 Stat. 475, 482 (Money for moving expenses paid).

<sup>3</sup> Treaty with Miami, November 6 1838, 7 Stat. 509, 571. See Chapter 16, sec. 10.

<sup>4</sup> The Act of April 25 1924 (41, 41 Stat. 112) appropriates a sum of \$80,000 for the benefit of dispossessed Muscogee Indians. Sec. 2 provides that the sum "shall be expended, in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior, for the benefit of the said dispossessed families or individual Indians under such rules and regulations as he may prescribe."

<sup>5</sup> May 10, 1910, sec. 18 10 Stat. 1051, 1058.

<sup>6</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 1, 17.

<sup>7</sup> 4 Stat. 749.

## SECTION 7 FEDERAL PROTECTION OF INDIVIDUAL PERSONAL PROPERTY

Though the Indian enjoys the legal capacity to enforce his property rights in court, nevertheless his ability to do so has often been handicapped by unfamiliarity with legal processes and rules of law. To aid the Indian in the protection of his rights and to supplement these rights, the Government has at various times sought to give additional protection to the individual Indian. The extent to which the United States may bring suit or intervene in litigation affecting Indian property<sup>1</sup> and the state responsibility of the United States attorneys in Indian litigation are discussed elsewhere.<sup>2</sup>

In various treaties and acts of Congress may be found provisions informing the Indian of his rights respecting depredations committed by whites and by other Indians, or provisions creating rights of damages therefrom.

Treaties may contain declaratory provisions stating the Indian's right of property. Article 10 of the Treaty of November 6 1838, with the Miamies<sup>3</sup> provides in part: "The United States shall protect the said tribe and the people thereof, in their rights and possessions, against injuries, encroachments, and oppressions of any person or persons, tribe or tribes whatsoever."

In the Treaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek<sup>4</sup> with the Choctaws, Article 12 protected the Indian's personality. It provided in part:

Private property to be always respected and on no occasion taken for public purposes without just compensation being made therefor to the rightful owner.  
And if a white man unlawfully takes or steals any thing from an Indian, the property shall be restored and the offender punished.

Similar provisions protecting the Indians' rights to their personality are found in acts of Congress. As early as 1796 Congress indicated a policy to protect Indian property by the passage of the Indian Trade and Intercourse Act of May 10, 1796.<sup>5</sup> It provided that any white person who takes Indian property shall upon conviction of crime be sentenced (in addition to the usual sentence) to pay to the Indian to whom the property taken belongs, a sum twice the just value of such property. Furthermore, the United States Treasury is directed to pay the Indian the just value of stolen or destroyed property if compensation cannot be secured from the white criminal. This protection was continued by subsequent acts.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Entered into September 27 1880, 7 Stat. 588, § 16, proclaimed February 24 1881.

<sup>2</sup> See 4, 1 Stat. 460, 470.

<sup>3</sup> Act of March 3 1799, sec. 4, 1 Stat. 743, 744-745. Act of January 17 1800, sec. 4, 2 Stat. 6, Act of March 30 1802, sec. 4, 2 Stat. 140, 141, Act of June 30 1834 sec. 10, 4 Stat. 729, 731, 8 Stat. § 2156, § 2167, 26 U. S. C. 237, 238.

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 8.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 19, sec. 2A (1) and (3).

<sup>6</sup> See Chapter 12, sec. 2.

<sup>7</sup> 7 Stat. 600, 671.

Other treaties provide for reimbursement to the Indian for damages to his personality. For example, Article 4 of the Treaty of 1842 with the Potawatamies, "outlines a schedule listing the names of various Indians whom the United States agrees to reimburse for horses stolen from them during its war between the United States and the Sac and Foxes."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Concluded October 26, 1842 proclaimed January 21, 1943 7 Stat 378-379.

<sup>2</sup>For example, of other treaties containing provision of payment by the United States for damages sustained see Treaty with Shawnees, May 10, 1843, Art. 21 10 Stat 1083, 1037; Treaty with Shawnees, etc., February 21, 1867, Art. 12 15 Stat 514, 510; Treaty with Kickapooes, June 25, 1862, Art. 6 13 Stat 643; Treaty with Tawagachee Band of Utah Indians, October 7, 1864, Art. 6, 11 Stat 873; Treaty with Pawnee, March 10, 1868, Art. 2 14 Stat 171, 170; Treaty with Chickasaws and Choctaws, March 10, 1868, Art. 3, 14 Stat 688.

In accordance with treaties and acts of this type, Congress has at various times caused to be paid to Indians sums for property taken from them.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>3</sup>Act of March 17, 1842, 6 Stat 180 (Chester paid for slaves taken by white man); Act of July 7, 1842, 4 Stat 576 (Chester Indians paid for livestock taken by United States citizens); Act of June 30, 1844, 6 Stat 582 (Chester to be paid for horse stolen by white man); Appropriation Act of September 30, 1850, 9 Stat 544, 758 (Omaha reimbursed for money stolen by United States soldiers); Appropriation Act of March 1, 1863, 12 Stat 771, 791 (Omaha chief paid for horse killed by white settler); Appropriation Act of March 1, 1865, 13 Stat 741, 760 (Chippewa chief paid for loss of horse and furniture); Act of January 10, 1891, 26 Stat 720 (Indians of Standing Rock and Cheyenne three agencies to be paid for ponies taken by United States); Appropriation Act of December 22, 1897, 45 Stat 2 16, and of March 4, 1902, 45 Stat 1790.

## SECTION 8 EXPENDITURE AND INVESTMENT OF INDIVIDUAL INDIAN MONIES

As may be noted in the statutes cited in this chapter, the rules and regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior with reference to the disposition of individual Indian monies are subject to the congressional requirement that the funds shall be used for the use and benefit of the Indian. The Secretary may not make gifts or donations on behalf of the Indian, nor create private trusts to which he might transfer the supervision and control that was intended to him.<sup>4</sup> Nevertheless, the meaning of the term "for the use and benefit of the Indian" is relative, and in absence of a showing of fraud or a lack of understanding is to what might be within the purview of this phrase, the court will not set aside the act and judgment of the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>5</sup>

It has been held by the Solicitor for the Interior Department that if the money is not spent for the use and benefit of the Indian when the Secretary of the Interior deducts from the royalties accruing to respective allottees from mining leases money to pay for the upkeep of the local Indian agency. For by his so doing the allottees who have royalties accruing pay for an object of general welfare, while other Indians who benefit from the maintenance of an agency but who have no such royalties accruing to them pay nothing.<sup>6</sup>

Large amounts of individual monies are under the control of the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>7</sup>

The regulations provide that withdrawal of money from the Indian's account shall be made by check, upon the application of the disbursing agent, approved by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs.<sup>8</sup> Minors and adults may receive monthly allowances not to exceed \$50 per month, specific authority from the Secretary of the Interior must be obtained for payment of larger amounts.<sup>9</sup> Another regulation provides that the disbursing agents, in their discretion, may turn over to any Indian who has received a patent in fee of his allotted land any individual funds then on deposit to his credit of which in the future accrue to his credit.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 5, see 6D and 12.

<sup>2</sup>United States v. McGowan, 28 F. 2d 76 (D. C. Kansas 1928), and United States v. McGowan, 37 F. 2d 660 (C. A. 10, 1930), cert. granted 253 U. S. 714 (1940), and with note McGowan v. United States, 282 U. S. 747 (1931) indicate how different courts can disagree as to whether an act of the Secretary of the Interior was in fact for the use and benefit of the Indian.

<sup>3</sup>Op. Sol. I. D., M. 23117, October 6, 1947.

<sup>4</sup>The statement of the Indian Office shows that as of June 30, 1899, it had in its control the sum of \$58,200,000 belonging to individual Indians.

<sup>5</sup>25 C. F. R. 222.2.

<sup>6</sup>Id., 221.4.

<sup>7</sup>Id., 221.6.

287785-41—35

Among the regulations are found several which provide that certain payments of money may be made to the Indian for his unrestricted use.<sup>11</sup> The purpose of this is stated to be the encouragement of personal responsibility, self reliance, and business experience which will enable the Indian to become an independent and progressive member of the community.<sup>12</sup>

The regulations authorize the expenditure of money for educational and agricultural purposes.<sup>13</sup> Further regulations provide that disbursing agents may pay necessary medical and funeral expenses, within specified maximum limits.<sup>14</sup> Administrative practice permits the superintendent to apply restricted funds of an Indian toward the support of an illegitimate child of such Indian.<sup>15</sup>

"Debits of Indians will not be paid from funds under the control of the United States . . . unless previously authorized by the Superintendent, except in emergency cases necessitating medical treatment or in the payment of last illness or funeral expenses . . . and any other exceptional cases where specific authority is granted by the Indian Office."<sup>16</sup>

The regulations provide that when personal property, such as wagons, horses, farm implements, etc., is purchased for an Indian, half of it in the aggregate value of \$70 or more, the superintendent shall take a bill of sale therefor in his name as vendee, expressly in trust for the Indian.<sup>17</sup>

In the case of *United States v. McGowan*,<sup>18</sup> under a regulation such as the above, the superintendent of the Winnebago Agency bought several horses with the trust money held by him for an incompetent Indian. The bill of sale, which was promissory in effect, recited that the horses were bought with trust funds and that the sale was made to the superintendent. The Indian was permitted to have the use of the team of horses and hired the defendant out to him for it. When he failed to receive payment for his services, the defendant asserted a claim of lien against the team. The court held that as trustee, the United States could maintain an action of replevin to recover the team from the possession of the defendant.<sup>19</sup>

<sup>11</sup>Id., 221.5, 221.6, 221.18.

<sup>12</sup>Id., 221.5.

<sup>13</sup>Id., 221.10-221.14.

<sup>14</sup>Id., 221.8, 221.17.

<sup>15</sup>Memo Sol. I. D., September 8, 1938.

<sup>16</sup>25 C. F. R. 221.20.

<sup>17</sup>Id., 221.97.

<sup>18</sup>287 Fed 185 (C. A. 8, 1923).

<sup>19</sup>In second *Coohoon v. United States*, 278 Fed 701 (C. A. 8, 1921).

For a fuller discussion of the rights of the United States with respect to trust property, see Chapter 5. On the protection from State taxation of property purchased with restricted funds, see *United States v. Hughes*, 6 F. Supp 972 (D. C. N. D. Okla. 1954), and see Chapter 13.

## SECTION 9 DEPOSITS OF INDIVIDUAL INDIAN MONEYS

Ordinarily, restricted Indian funds are held in the custody of a Government official. Several statutes, however, authorize the deposit of such funds under prescribed conditions.

Section 1 of the Act of June 25, 1910,<sup>10</sup> provided that any "Indian agent, superintendent or other discharging agent of the Indian Service" might "deposit Indian moneys, individual or tribal, coming into his hands as custodian, in such bank or banks as he may select," subject to certain bond requirements.

The Appropriation Act of May 25, 1915,<sup>11</sup> provided for the segregation of tribal funds to the credit of the individual member. The funds so segregated were to be deposited to the individual's credit in any bank selected by the Secretary of the Interior, in the State or States in which the tribe is located. The act contained general legislation in the form of a proviso:

That no individual Indian funds shall be deposited in any bank until the bank shall have agreed to pay interest thereon at a reasonable rate and shall have furnished an acceptable bond or collateral security therefor, and United States bonds may be furnished as collateral security for individual funds so deposited in lieu of such bonds. *Provided further*, That the Secretary of the Interior may invest the tribal funds of any individual Indian in United States Government bonds.

The Act of June 24, 1938,<sup>12</sup> superseding section 2 of the Act of June 25, 1910 and section 28 of the Appropriation Act of May 25, 1915,<sup>13</sup> provides that the Secretary of the Interior may deposit individual trust moneys in banks selected by him, under such rules and regulations as he may prescribe, provided that the bank agrees to pay a reasonable rate of interest thereon and to furnish security of a specified type. The Secretary of the Interior may waive interest on demand deposits. The act also permits the Secretary, if he deems it for the best interest of the Indian, to invest the Indian moneys in any federal public debt obligations and in any other obligations which are unconditionally guaranteed both as to interest and principal by the United States.<sup>14</sup>

<sup>10</sup> Sec. 1, 36 Stat. 857-858 amended in other respects by Act of February 14, 1915, 38 Stat. 678, 20 U. S. C. 978. This provision was unchanged by the Act of March 3, 1925, 43 Stat. 101, and the Act of April 10, 1924, 43 Stat. 647, 25 U. S. C. 372, amending the Act of 1910, but was superseded by the Act of June 24, 1938, discussed below.

<sup>11</sup> 40 Stat. 551, 551, 20 U. S. C. 162.

<sup>12</sup> 52 Stat. 1077, 25 U. S. C. 162.

<sup>13</sup> Sec. 28, 40 Stat. 551, 20 U. S. C. 162.

<sup>14</sup> The authority to waive interest on demand deposits included in the 1938 act was discontinued by the passage of the Banking Act of

In practice, the deposit of individual Indian moneys is made in the name of the United States, the disbursing agent keeping account of the amounts due the various individuals, the bank in which the funds are deposited has no account with the various individuals on whose behalf the funds were deposited.

Though these funds are deposited by the United States in its representative capacity, yet in case the bank fails, such deposits, being debts due to the United States, are entitled to priority under R. S. Sec. 3468. In the case of *Brunn v. United States Fidelity & Guaranty Co.*,<sup>15</sup> the court under R. S. Sec. 3468 giving the United States priority in payment of claims against an insolvent estate, granted priority to deposits of Indian moneys, individual and tribal, made by the superintendent of the Kiowa Reservation.

In enforcing the terms laid down by Congress for the deposit of Indian funds, the Department of the Interior issued regulations governing deposits. Under regulations approved March 5, 1938,<sup>16</sup> a bank seeking to qualify as a depository must file an application showing its financial condition, the amounts of money it will accept, the rate of interest that will be paid and the type of security that will be furnished. The regulations provide for deposits in the name of the disbursing agent and interest is payable semiannually. Monthly statements of receipts and checks on the Indian money account and other statements of information shall be furnished when required. Definite provisions as to the type of security, such as bonds of corporations, individuals, or of the United States are made.

August 23, 1935, 49 Stat. 684, 714, 715. The Act of May 26, 1918 had limited the class of eligible depositories of Indian funds to those paying reasonable interest. But under the 1935 act, as interpreted by the Secretary of the Department of the Interior (Op. Sol. I. D. M. 2855, March 12, 1946), banks which are members of the Federal Reserve System or of the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation are prohibited from paying any interest on demand deposits and all statutory requirements inconsistent with this prohibition are repealed. Following a parallel opinion of the Attorney General in the case of postal savings funds, the Solicitor of the Interior Department held that deposits might be made without interest in banks prohibited under the 1935 Banking Act, from paying interest.

<sup>15</sup> 269 U. S. 489 (1926), 18 F. 2d 705 (C. C. 9, 1924), 18 F. 2d 311. See *United States v. Brunner*, 7 F. Supp. 873 (D. C. N. D. Okla. 1944). Cf. *United States v. Brunner*, 11 F. Supp. 607 (D. C. N. D. Okla. 1945), and 57 F. 2d 175 (C. C. 10, 1936) (holding, United States not entitled to priority in debt of bank to guardian to whom funds had been unlawfully paid). On rights of creditors of Indians, see Chapter 8 sec. 7C.

<sup>16</sup> Regulations of March 2, 1938, Department of the Interior, Office of Indian Affairs, 25 C. F. R. 250.1-250.18.

## SECTION 10 BEQUEST, DESCENT, AND DISTRIBUTION OF PERSONAL PROPERTY

## A. IN THE ABSENCE OF FEDERAL LEGISLATION

In the absence of federal legislation, the bequest, descent, and distribution of the Indian's personality is subject to tribal rule and custom.<sup>17</sup>

Because the inheritance of allotted lands is governed on substantive questions by state law,<sup>18</sup> the Indians of allotted reservations have, in some cases, adopted the state law as their own with respect to the descent of personality, thus achieving the advantage of having a single body of law determine the descent of

real and personal property.<sup>19</sup> A typical body of rules governing descent and distribution of unrestricted personality is that set forth in the Code of Ordinances of the Gila River Pima-Maricopa

<sup>17</sup> See Chapter 7 sec. 0. *Of Tuzigoot v. Prince*, 42 N. M. 197, 79 P. 2d 146 (1938), holding that the state court has power to appoint an administrator for a deceased tribal Indian to enforce a right of action created by a state wrongful death statute.

<sup>18</sup> See Chapter 11, sec. 6.

<sup>19</sup> *Swinomish Law and Order Code*, chap. 8, sec. 5 (adopted March 15, 1938, approved March 24, 1938), *Pine Ridge Tribal Court and Code of Ordinances*, chap. 4, sec. 1 (adopted February 20, 1937, approved March 2, 1937), *Cherokee River Code*, chap. 4, sec. 2 (adopted October 5, 1938, approved October 8, 1938). The *Blackfeet Code of Law and Order* (May 6, 1937) provides that the tribal court shall apply its own law if proved, otherwise, the state law as to be used. Similar provisions are to be found in the *Windward Code* (adopted December 22, 1938, approved December 24, 1938), and the *Makah Tribal Court and Code of Ordinances* (adopted February 15, 1938 approved February 28, 1938). And of *Gray v. Coffman*, 10 Fed. Cas. No. 6, 714 (C. C. Kansas 1874), where the court permits out that the Windward probate laws have been copied from the laws of Ohio with certain modifications, such as a provision that only living children should inherit.

Indian Community, adopted June 3, 1936, approved August 24, 1936. The governing ordinance<sup>100</sup> provides that after the payment of the debts and funeral expenses, the remainder passes to the surviving spouse. If no spouse survives, then the property descends to the children or grandchildren of the deceased. If none of these exist, then the property goes to the parents or parent of the deceased. And if no parents survive, the nearest relatives take. The code provides that if there is more than one heir, the heirs are to meet and decide among themselves what share each shall take and file their decision with the tribal court. If these heirs cannot agree, upon petition by any one of them, the tribal court will pass upon the distribution.

# B UNDER FEDERAL ACTS<sup>101</sup>

By virtue of its power over Indian property,<sup>102</sup> Congress may provide for a system of bequest, descent, and distribution of an Indian's personal property.

1. *Descent*—Congress has never enacted general legislation<sup>103</sup> governing the descent of an Indian's personal property, and this is a matter, therefore, that remains generally subject to tribal jurisdiction.<sup>104</sup> Congress has provided, however, that upon the death, intestate, of "any Indian to whom an allotment of land has been made . . . before the expiration of the trust period and before the issuance of a fee simple patent," the Secretary of the Interior shall determine the heirs of the allottee and his decision shall be final.<sup>105</sup> Although this statute is directed primarily to the problem of the inheritance of allotments, and is discussed in more detail in connection with that subject,<sup>106</sup> the Interior Department has construed the power to determine heirs in the cases specified, as a power to determine heirs for all purposes.<sup>107</sup> Thus, in determining the heirs of an allottee, the Secretary of the Interior actually rules on the descent of personal property in the decedent's estate. This practice probably has the force of law, with respect to the estates of allottees, and it may be argued that an established course of administrative construction has extended the power of the Department to persons who are not within the language of the statute because they are not Indians "to whom an allotment of land has been made."

The regulations of the Interior Department refer to "an Indian of any allotted reservation"<sup>108</sup> which obviously defines a broader class than in the class defined by the statute, since there are many Indians on allotted reservations who were born too late to receive allotments. The regulations of the Interior Department do not provide for departmental distribution of estates on unallotted reservations, although this practice is occasionally resorted to with the consent of all parties in interest where tribal judicial agencies are unavailable.

Under the Law and Order Regulations of the Indian Service, the Court of Indian Offenses determines heirship with respect to

"property other than in allotment or other trust property subject to the jurisdiction of the United States."<sup>109</sup>

Tribal courts of organized tribes sometimes exercise like jurisdiction over all personal property.<sup>110</sup>

In some cases, tribal courts have requested the Interior Department to handle estates involving personal property, and the Department has done so.

The question of what law applies to an estate of personal property should be distinguished from the question of what agency shall administer the estate. The Secretary of the Interior may apply tribal custom and the tribal courts may apply state law as a matter of practice. The examiners of inheritance, acting for the Interior Department and applying state law to the determination of the inheritance of real property, commonly apply the same rules to the inheritance of personal property. Where, however, the record shows a discrepancy between tribal custom and state law, a determination by an inheritance examiner of the descent of the personal estate of an allotted Indian in accordance with state law and in violation of tribal custom has been held illegal. In *Estate of Yellow Bear, Unallotted Navajo*,<sup>111</sup> the Solicitor for the Interior Department disapproved such a determination, declaring:

I believe that this conclusion is unjustified either as a matter of strict law or as a matter of policy. On the latter question I call your attention to the following paragraph in the opinion of this Department, approved October 25, 1934, on "Powers of Indian Tribes," (M-27781) [See 75 I D 14].

With respect to all property other than allotments of land made under the General Allotment Act, the inheritance laws and customs of the Indian tribe are still of supreme authority.

On the policy question involved I can see no necessity for departmental regulation of inheritance of personal property of Navajo Indians. The recently promulgated departmental regulations relating to the determination of heirs and the approval of wills specifically restrict departmental supervision over the inheritance of personal property to reservations which have been allotted (Sections 19 and 22). Likewise, the recently approved law and order regulations provide that Indian judges shall apply tribal custom in the distribution of personal property.

I therefore recommend that instead of turning this case for the purpose of redistributing in accordance with Arizona law, the personal property which has been distributed in accordance with tribal custom, it should be returned so that the entire estate may be distributed in accordance with tribal custom. The Examiner of Inheritance should take testimony as to such customs of inheritance, in their application to the facts of this case, and submit a revised order determining heirs for departmental approval.

2. *Bequest*—The power to bequeath personality is specifically granted by Act of February 14, 1918,<sup>112</sup> amending the Act of June 25, 1910.<sup>113</sup> It provides that any person of the age of 21 years or over may dispose of his interest in any restricted allotment, trust moneys, or other property held in trust by the United States before expiration of the restrictive period, by will in accordance with regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior. To be valid, the will must be approved by the Secretary of the Interior. The act provides further:

That the Secretary of the Interior may approve or disapprove the will either before or after the death of the testator, and in case where a will has been approved and is subsequently discovered that there has been fraud in

<sup>100</sup> Chapter 1, sec. 7.

<sup>101</sup> This discussion excludes the Five Civilized Tribes and Osage. For a discussion of descent and related problems affecting them, see Chap. ter 23, sec. 9, 12D.

<sup>102</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 6.

<sup>103</sup> The Act of January 19, 1891, 26 Stat. 720 provides for the payment to individual Indians of the Standing Rock and Cheyenne River agencies for ponies they were deprived of and states that "if any Indian entitled to such compensation shall have deceased the sum to which such Indian would be entitled shall be paid to his heirs at law, according to the laws of the State of Dakota . . ."

<sup>104</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 6.

<sup>105</sup> Act of June 25, 1910, sec. 1, 36 Stat. 576, 25 U. S. C. 872.

<sup>106</sup> See Chapter 11, sec. 6.

<sup>107</sup> 25 C. F. R. 81.18, 81.23. Regulations governing Determination of Heirs and Approval of Wills of Indians, approved May 31, 1935, sec. 18, 22, 55 I D 309, 308, 268. This rule does not bind organized tribes.

<sup>108</sup> See 22, 115, supra.

<sup>109</sup> 25 C. F. R. 161.81, 86 I D 401, 407 (1935).

<sup>110</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 6.

<sup>111</sup> 65 I D 428, 427-429 (1935). Also see Chapter 7, sec. 6.

<sup>112</sup> See 2, 37 Stat. 675, 676, 25 U. S. C. 878.

<sup>113</sup> 36 Stat. 585.

connection with the execution or procurement of the will the Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized \* \* \* to cancel the approval of the will, and the property of the testator shall thereupon descend or be distributed in accordance with the laws of the State wherein the property is located \* \* \*

In the case of *Blauvelt v Gaidin*,<sup>12</sup> the Supreme Court held that a will by a Quipaw allottee disposing of his monies derived from his restricted lands, which were held in trust by the United States, is governed by the 1913 act. The Court held inapplicable a statute of the State of Oklahoma regulating the portion of an estate that may be transferred by will, stating that the will is valid if approved by the Secretary of the Interior and executed in accordance with his regulations.

<sup>12</sup> The act provides also that the death of testator and the approval of the will does not terminate the trust, and that the Secretary of the Interior may in his discretion regulate the distribution and expenditure of the money belonging to the testator.

<sup>13</sup> 256 U. S. 210 (1921), aff'd 261 Fed. 409 (C. C. A. 8, 1919). This case is also discussed in Chapter 5, sec. 112(2), Chapter 6 sec. 2A and Chapter 11, sec. 6B. See also *Bimandel v Wallace*, 287 U. S. 373 (1932).

The right of the Indian to bequeath his shares in a tribal corporation organized under the Wheeler Howard Act<sup>14</sup> is limited to the extent that he can give them only to his heirs, to tribal members, or to the tribal corporation.<sup>15</sup>

Since the statute governing the bequest of restricted personality does not apply to unrestricted personality, the tribal law on testamentary disposition of unrestricted personality is supreme.<sup>16</sup> Even though the bequest of restricted personality be subject to the rules and regulations of the Secretary of the Interior, nevertheless such rules and regulations<sup>17</sup> implicitly authorize approval of wills made in accord with tribal customs or tribal laws regarding testamentary disposition where there has been no compliance with state law.<sup>18</sup>

<sup>14</sup> Act of June 18, 1894, sec. 4, 48 Stat. 984, 995, 25 U. S. C. 464.

<sup>15</sup> 55 I. D. 385, 270 (1935).

<sup>16</sup> *Estate of Yellow Han, Unallotted Navajo*, 55 I. D. 420 (1935).

<sup>17</sup> The rules and regulations prescribed by the Department of the Interior for the execution of wills, as approved May 31, 1935, may be found in 55 I. D. 291, 275-280.

<sup>18</sup> 55 I. D. 14, 42 (1934). See also *Estate of Yellow Han, Unallotted Navajo*, 55 I. D. 428 (1935).

## SECTION 11 INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS IN PERSONALTY—CROPS

Early in its dealings with the Indians, the government sought, by granting them agricultural aids, to encourage them in peaceful pursuits, that would provide a means of subsistence.<sup>19</sup>

As has been observed elsewhere in this chapter, when the Indian was compelled to vacate his land, provision was made for his reimbursement for the property he could not take with him, including crops.<sup>20</sup> Where possible, the Indian may have been permitted to remain on the land until he harvested his growing crops.<sup>21</sup>

Problems arising today concern chiefly the Indian's rights to dispose of all or some of his interest in his crops grown on restricted lands.

The law is not settled as to whether an Indian may without departmental approval, sell or mortgage<sup>22</sup> crops grown on restricted lands, but severed therefrom. A memorandum of the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior<sup>23</sup> presents the arguments on either side.

On the one hand, it may be contended that even though severed from the restricted land, the crops are tribal property while situated on the land. For as long as they remain there, the mortgage cannot attach upon the land without the Government's consent. The contrary argument is that the sale or mortgage of severed crops does not come within the restrictions of the Indian's privilege to contract;<sup>24</sup> nor does it affect the reality since severed crops are not part of the land, that there are no restrictions on the Indian's disposing of his crop as best he can.

To secure a loan from a tribal corporation under the Wheeler-Howard Act,<sup>25</sup> an Indian may mortgage his crops to the corporation,<sup>26</sup> since he might convey the land itself to the corporation.<sup>27</sup>

<sup>19</sup> For restrictions on the power to contract see Chapter 8, sec. 7.

<sup>20</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 25 U. S. C. 461, et seq.

<sup>21</sup> Memo. Asst. Sec'y I. D., August 17, 1918. This memorandum discloses an opinion of the Attorney General of North Dakota, which holds that the 1913 Crop Mortgage Act of North Dakota, which declares void mortgages on growing and unharvested crops, does not apply to such mortgages given by Indian, to Indian corporations. The opinion holds that the proviso in the amendment of 1914 exempting from the scope of the 1913 act "any mortgage or lien in favor of the United States . . . of any department or agency of either the several or the tribal corporation as a federal instrumentality."

<sup>22</sup> Memo. Sol. I. D. March 25, 1936.

<sup>22</sup> *United States v. Gray*, 201 Fed. 291, 293 (C. C. A. 8, 1912).

<sup>23</sup> See sec. 6, *supra*.

<sup>24</sup> *Trenty with Cherokees*, February 27, 1819, 7 Stat. 105, 197.

<sup>25</sup> As for the sale or mortgage of the crops before severance the case of *United States v. First Nat. Bank*, 252 Fed. 870 (D. C. B. D. Wash. 1922), holds that the United States may enjoin the foreclosure sale of mortgaged crops, the mortgage having been made on growing crops and crops to be grown during that year. Memo. Sol. I. D. March 25, 1930.

<sup>26</sup> Dated January 5, 1938.

## SECTION 12. INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS IN PERSONALTY—LIVESTOCK

To induce Indians to adopt agricultural pursuits, treaties, with Indians frequently contained a promise by the United States that it would furnish livestock to them.<sup>28</sup> When these promises were fulfilled, the livestock remained the property of the United States, the Indian having the right to possession and use.<sup>29</sup> Livestock was also purchased by the United States for the Indian, with his own money.<sup>30</sup>

In the Appropriation Act of July 1, 1894,<sup>31</sup> Congress prohibited the sale of any cattle or then increase, in possession or control of an Indian, which was purchased by the Government, to any person not belonging to the tribe to which said Indian belonged or to any citizen of the United States, except with the written consent of the agent of the tribe to which said Indian belonged. In the case of *United States v. Anderson*,<sup>32</sup> the Court held that this act applied to cattle purchased by the Government even with the Indian's funds. It has also been held that the Act of 1894 is not limited in application to cattle in possession of Indians.

<sup>28</sup> *H. g. Treaty with the Sioux*, April 29, 1868, Art. 10, 16 Stat. 645, 688.

<sup>29</sup> See *United States v. Anderson*, 228 U. S. 52 (1913), rev'g 186 Fed. 262 (D. C. Ore. 1911).

<sup>30</sup> *United States v. Anderson*, 228 U. S. 52 (1913), rev'g 186 Fed. 262 (D. C. Ore. 1911).

<sup>31</sup> 28 Stat. 78, 94, 25 U. S. C. 193.

<sup>32</sup> 228 U. S. 52 (1913), rev'g 186 Fed. 262 (D. C. Ore. 1911).

at the time of its enactment.<sup>148</sup> Since a sale cannot be made without the written consent of the agent, a mortgage on the title without such consent has been held void.<sup>149</sup>

However, a sale or other disposition of the livestock to non-members of the tribe, even with the consent of the agent, may be made illegal, as where the statute making the appropriation specifically states that no sales to such outsiders shall be made.<sup>150</sup>

The Appropriation Act of June 30, 1910<sup>151</sup> also restricted the disposition of livestock purchased or issued by the United States and any increase. It provided that such animals could not be sold, mortgaged, or otherwise disposed of, except with the written consent of the federal officer in charge of the tribe, any transaction in violation of the statute would be void. It was further provided that all such stock was to be branded with the initials I. D. (referring to Interior Department) or with the reservation brand and could not be removed from the Indian country without the consent of the federal officer or by order of the Secretary of War in connection with troop movements.

<sup>148</sup> *Hider v. Le Clau*, 77 Wash. 488, 138 Pac. 8 (1914).

<sup>149</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>150</sup> Appropriation Act of March 2, 1889, sec. 17, 25 Stat. 868, 861 making provision for distribution of livestock among Sioux. Effect of this act upon Act of 1884 is discussed in *Fisher v. United States*, 228 Fed. 156 (C. C. A. 8, 1915).

<sup>151</sup> Sec. 1, 41 Stat. 8, 9, 25 U. S. C. 168.

An additional act affecting an Indian's interest in his livestock is the Appropriation Act of March 3, 1885,<sup>152</sup> which permits an Indian agent to sell livestock belonging to Indians which is not needed for subsistence. The sale is to be under rules and regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior and the proceeds used for the benefit of the Indian.

In accordance with the federal policy of encouraging Indians in peaceful agricultural pursuits and of providing them with a means of livelihood and subsistence, the Secretary of the Interior has provided for certain preferential rights to Indians in the acquisition of grazing permits on Indian lands for his livestock.<sup>153</sup>

On reservations where sufficient tribal land is available, free grazing privileges may be granted to Indians by the tribal authorities, as an encouragement for the breeding and raising of livestock.<sup>154</sup>

The Indian is protected in his care of livestock by regulations seeking to prevent the spread of contagious diseases among stock on Indian lands.<sup>155</sup>

<sup>152</sup> Sec. 0 1d Stat. 541, 70d, E. S. § 21.27, 25 U. S. C. 192. See Chapter 4, sec. 0.

<sup>153</sup> 25 C. F. R. 71.11, 71.13, 72.8.

<sup>154</sup> *Ibid.*, 71.9.

<sup>155</sup> *Ibid.*, 71.21, 72.10.



## INDIVIDUAL RIGHTS IN REAL PROPERTY

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 Background of the allotment system.....	206	Section 4 Alienation of allotted lands.....	221
A Early development of the allotment system.....	206	A Land.....	221
B The General Allotment Act.....	207	B Timber.....	222
C Consequences of the allotment system.....	210	C Exchange of allotted lands.....	223
D Appraisal of the allotment system.....	215	D Mortgages.....	225
E Termination of the allotment system.....	217	E Judgments.....	225
Section 2 Right to receive allotment.....	217	F Condemnation.....	225
A Eligibility.....	218	G Removal of restrictions.....	226
B Selection of allotment.....	219	H Rights of conveyance of allotted lands.....	226
C Appraisal of allotment.....	219	Section 5 Leasing of allotted lands.....	227
D Cancellation.....	219	Section 6 Descent and distribution of allotted lands.....	229
E Surrender.....	220	A Intestacy.....	230
Section 3 Possessory rights in allotted lands.....	220	B Testamentary disposition.....	231
		C Partition and sale of inherited allotments.....	233

The process of allotment shifted the rights of individual Indians in property, already discussed,<sup>1</sup> to rights of ownership in individual tracts in real property from the rights of participation in tribal lands.

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 9. Also see Chapter 2, secs 2B, 2C, 2D.

## SECTION 1. BACKGROUND OF THE ALLOTMENT SYSTEM

The background, the inception, and the operation of this system are set forth with a wealth of detail in J. P. Kunney's study, *A Continent Lost—A Civilization Won* (1937) and, more briefly, in a "History of the Allotment Policy" by D. S. Otis, which, presented in hearings leading to the enactment of the Act of June 18, 1894,<sup>2</sup> provided the chief factual basis for the termination of the allotment system by that act.

## A EARLY DEVELOPMENT OF THE ALLOTMENT SYSTEM

The origin of the allotment system, as of every other important legal institution in the field of Indian affairs, are to be found in Indian treaties. As early as 1788 tribal lands were allotted to individuals or families.<sup>3</sup> Allotment was then, as it has been generally ever since, an incident in the transfer of Indian lands to white ownership. Chiefs and councils might cede vast areas over which a tribe claimed ownership, but when it came to ceding a plot of land which some member of the tribe had improved and on which he lived, a different situation was presented. In this situation many treaties provided that there should be "reserved" from the cession tracts of land for the use, or occupancy, or ownership of designated individuals or families.<sup>4</sup> These early allotments were commonly known as reservations. Various forms of tenure were imposed upon

these reservations. In some cases lands were held in trust for the individual.<sup>5</sup> In other cases the Indian acquired title either

Treaty of September 20, 1817 with the Wyandot, Seneca, and other tribes, 7 Stat. 160, Treaty of October 2, 1818 with the Potawatamie Nation, 7 Stat. 185, Treaty of October 2, 1818 with the Wea Tribe, 7 Stat. 186, Treaty of October 3, 1818 with the Delaware Nation, 7 Stat. 188, Treaty of October 6, 1818, with the Miami Nation, 7 Stat. 189, Treaty of February 27, 1819 with the Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 196, Treaty of August 25, 1821, with the Ottawa, Chippewa, and Potawatamie Nation, 7 Stat. 218, Treaty of June 2, 1825, with the Great and Little Osage Tribes, 7 Stat. 240 (reservations for "half breeds"), Treaty of June 8, 1835 with the Kickapoo Nation, 7 Stat. 244 (reservations for "half breeds"), Treaty of October 16, 1836, with the Potawatamie Tribe, 7 Stat. 295, Treaty of October 28, 1836 with the Miami Tribe, 7 Stat. 300, Treaty of July 29, 1837 with the United Nations of Chippewa, Ottawa, and Potawatamie Indians, 7 Stat. 320, Treaty of August 1, 1839 with the Winnebago Nation, 7 Stat. 329, Treaty of September 27, 1839, with the Chickasaw Nation, 7 Stat. 358, Treaty of August 4, 1831 with the Ottawa Indians, 7 Stat. 379, Treaty of March 24, 1832 with the Creek Tribe, 7 Stat. 386, Treaty of September 15, 1832 with the Winnebago Nation, 7 Stat. 370, Treaty of October 20, 1834 with the Potawatamie Tribe, 7 Stat. 375, Treaty of October 20, 1834, with the Chickasaw Nation, 7 Stat. 381, Treaty of October 27, 1832 with the Potawatamie, 7 Stat. 390, Treaty of October 27, 1834, with the Kickapoo Tribe, 7 Stat. 403, Treaty of February 18, 1839, with the Ottawa, 7 Stat. 420, Treaty of September 28, 1838 with the United Nations of Chippewa, Ottawa, and Potawatamie Indians, 7 Stat. 481, Treaty of May 24, 1836 with the Chickasaw Nation, 7 Stat. 450, Treaty of October 23, 1834, with the Miami Tribe, 7 Stat. 458, Treaty of December 29, 1835, with the Cherokee Tribe, 7 Stat. 478, Treaty of April 23, 1836, with the Wyandot Tribe, 7 Stat. 502, Treaty of November 6, 1838 with the Miami Tribe, 7 Stat. 569.

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of June 1, 1798 with the Onondaga Nation, unpublished treaty, Archives No. 28, Treaty of September 20, 1819, with the Chickasaw Nation, 7 Stat. 160.

<sup>2</sup> Hearings, Committee on Ind. Affs. 73d Cong., 2d sess., on H. R. 7902, 1081 pt. 6, pp. 428 et seq.

<sup>3</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 28 U. S. C. 461 et seq.

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of June 1, 1798, with the Onondaga Nation, unpublished treaty, Archives No. 28.

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of September 20, 1819, with the Chickasaw Nation, 7 Stat. 160, Treaty of July 8, 1817 with the Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 165.

under a restriction against alienation without the consent of the President," or in fee simple.<sup>4</sup>

Nonetheless it later allotment came to be used as an instrument for terminating tribal existence. Allottees surrendered their interest in the tribal estate and became citizens.<sup>5</sup>

During the 1890's, this breakup of tribal lands and tribal existence through allotment assumed a standard pattern.<sup>6</sup>

During the last years of the treaty making period, and for two decades thereafter, the treaty provisions on allotment served as models for legislation.

The legislative development leading up to the General Allotment Act, and the purposes and background of that act are analyzed in Otis' study from which the following excerpts are taken:

In the 1870's the Government's policy of general allotment of Indian lands in severalty gradually took form.<sup>7</sup>

By 1885 the Government had, under various treaties and laws issued over 11,000 patents to individual Indians and 1,200 certificates of allotment.<sup>8</sup> The fact that 8,506 of these patents and 1,195 of these certificates were issued under laws passed and treaties ratified during the period 1890-99 suggests that the treaties which produced the General Allotment Act of 1887 were coming to life in the mid-century. In 1862 Congress saw fit to pass a law for the special protection of the Indian allottee in the enjoyment and use of his land.<sup>9</sup> And in 1870 Congress gave further momentum to the whole lands in severalty movement by extending to the Indian homesteading privileges (18 Stat. L. 420).

<sup>4</sup> Commissioners of Indian Affairs (1885) 820-821.

<sup>5</sup> H. R. P. No. 1570, May 28 1880 40th Cong. 2d sess., 7.

In the meantime, the Indian Administration was paying lip service to the position of supporting allotment as a general principle.

In 1877 Secretary Schurz recommended allotment to heads of families on all reservations, "the enjoyment and use of the individual ownership of property being one of the most effective civilizing agencies."<sup>10</sup> From that date onward the Service as a whole worked for the speeding up of allotment under previous acts and treaties and the passage of a general law.

<sup>10</sup> Report of the Secretary of the Interior 1877-78.

#### LEGISLATION

In the late seventies there was a growing public opinion in support of the allotment movement. The Commissioner in 1876 declared:

"It [allotment] is a measure correspondent with the progressive age in which we live, and is endorsed by

<sup>1</sup> Treaty of October 2, 1818, with the Potawatamie Nation, 7 Stat. 186; Treaty of October 2, 1818, with the Wea Tribe, 7 Stat. 180; Treaty of October 6, 1818, with the Delaware Nation, 7 Stat. 188; Treaty of October 16, 1826, with the Potawatamie Tribe, 7 Stat. 296; Treaty of October 28, 1826, with the Miami Tribe, 7 Stat. 800; Treaty of July 30, 1829, with the United Nations of Chippewa, Ottawa and Potawatamie Indians, 7 Stat. 820; Treaty of August 1, 1829, with the Winnebago Nation, 7 Stat. 828.

<sup>2</sup> Treaty of September 29, 1837, with the Wyandot, Seneca, and other tribes, 7 Stat. 160; Treaty of October 6, 1818, with the Miami Nation, 7 Stat. 180; Treaty of August 28, 1821, with the Ottawa, Chippewa, and Potawatamie Nations, 7 Stat. 218; Treaty of June 2, 1826, with the Great and Little Osage Tribes, 7 Stat. 340 (reservations for "half breed"); Treaty of June 3, 1826, with the Kansas Nation, 7 Stat. 244 (reservations for "half breed"); Treaty of September 15, 1824, with the Winnebago Nation, 7 Stat. 370.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of November 24, 1848, with the Stockbridge Tribe, 9 Stat. 988 (division of tribe into "citizen" and "Indian" parts); Treaty of April 1, 1850, with the Wyandot, 9 Stat. 987; Treaty of August 5, 1826, with the Chippewa Tribe, 7 Stat. 280, providing for allotments to half breed; Treaty of September 27, 1880, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 868; Treaty of December 29, 1885, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 478; Treaty of July 8, 1837, with the Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 156.

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 40.

all true friends of the Indian, as is evidenced by the numerous petitions to this effect presented to Congress from citizens of the various States."<sup>11</sup>

<sup>5</sup> Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1880) xvi.

Barely the following year a joint committee of Congress, appointed to consider the matter of transferring the Indian Bureau to the War Department, reported a decision in favor of the change and proceeded to make the recommendations of measures to civilize the Indians. One of their proposals was a general allotment law providing for a title in fee with a 25-year restriction upon alienation.<sup>12</sup> That same day, January 31, 1870, Chairman Seales of the House Committee on Indian Affairs reported a general allotment bill.<sup>13</sup> In the next Congress various bills were introduced to the same effect.<sup>14</sup> The House Committee on May 28, 1880, reported favorably an allotment bill and accompanied it with statements of the majority and minority views.<sup>15</sup> In the Senate the measure which was to be known for the next few years as the "Coke bill" was introduced.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>11</sup> H. R. P. No. 97 Jan. 31 1874, 45th Cong., 1d sess., 8-20.

<sup>12</sup> Congressional Record Jan. 13 1879, 804. (See also H. R. P. No. 3 1876, 45th Cong. ad sess.)

<sup>13</sup> Congressional Record, Jan. 31 1880 274, Mar. 8 1880 1944, May 28 1880 1969.

<sup>14</sup> H. R. P. No. 1676 May 28, 1880 45th Cong. 2d sess.

<sup>15</sup> Congressional Record May 10 1880 3607.

#### B THE GENERAL ALLOTMENT ACT

The circumstances surrounding the enactment of the General Allotment Act are thus summarized in Dr. Otis' study:

Senator Dwyer in 1885 edited Carl Schurz with having originated the bill.<sup>17</sup> Its provisions were substantially the same as those of the ultimate Dawes Act, except that the Indians were not to be civilly dead as citizens.<sup>18</sup> The Coke bill passed the Senate in 1884 and in 1885 and in the latter year was favorably reported in the House.<sup>19</sup> In the meantime certain tribes by special laws were given the privilege of allotments in severalty—the Crow on April 11, 1882 (22 Stat. L. 42), the Omaha on August 7, 1882 (22 Stat. L. 341), and the Umatilla on March 8, 1882 (28 Stat. L. 840). These acts applied to specific reservations the principles of the Coke bill.

<sup>17</sup> Proceedings of the Third Annual Meeting of the Lake Mohonk Conference of Friends of the Indian (1888) in Miscellaneous Document, XIII 10183.

<sup>18</sup> Congressional Record Jan. 20 1881, 778, 779. For debate on the question of surrendering the bill to record citizenship to the Indian see Congressional Record Jan. 24 1881, 875-876. See also Reports of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, 1880, with Reports of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1885), xv, H. R. P. No. 4217 Jan. 9 1885 46th Cong. 2d sess.

The allotment movement seemed rapidly to be gaining strength in 1886. President Cleveland in his annual messages in 1884 and 1885 advocated the policy.<sup>20</sup> In 1886 General Sheridan, reporting as lieutenant general of the Army to the Secretary of War, likewise urged an allotment scheme.<sup>21</sup> Finally, Congress acted early in the following year and the President signed the Dawes Act on February 8, 1887 (24 Stat. L. 888).<sup>22</sup> The chief provisions of the act were:

(1) a grant of 100 acres to each family head, of 80 acres to each single person over 18 years of age.

<sup>19</sup> George F. Palmer (ed.), The Writings and Speeches of Grover Cleveland (New York 1891), 410-415.

<sup>20</sup> In Miscellaneous Document, Bulletin to Indian Affairs (collected in Indian Office Library) XV 11000-11601. In Miscellaneous Document, Bulletin to Indian Affairs (collected in Indian Office Library) XV 11000-11601. The study of the government documents relating to the Congressional Record tells us the Dawes bill. Such a study might by implication throw some light on the factors which secured its passage. There is a well-founded suspicion that all the motives of the legislators who introduced and passed the Dawes Act, were in 1887 President Quntor told the Women's National Indian Association that passage of the Dawes bill 3 years or so, would have been "an absolute impossibility." She said that the women's position with the Indians, collected in Indian Office Library, XV 11000-11601. In its first stages the bill met with no opposition at all. Debate dealt only with details.

and to each orphan under 18, and of 40 acres to each other single person under eighteen."

"Certain tribes, were exempted from the provisions of the act, viz. the Civilized Tribes, the Ojibwa, Algonquin, and Potawatomi Bands, and those in Indian Territory the Seneca in New York State, and the inhabitants of the strip south of the Shosh in Nebraska." (848)

(2) a patent in fee to be issued to every allottee but to be held in trust by the Government for 25 years, during which time the land could not be alienated or encumbered.

(3) a period of 4 years to be allowed the Indians in which they should make their selections after allotment should be applied to any tribe—failure of the Indians to do so should result in selection for them at the order of the Secretary of the Interior.

(4) citizenship to be conferred upon allottees and upon any other Indians who had abandoned their tribes and adopted "the habits of civilized life."

#### INDIAN AND NON-INDIAN OR THE INDIAN MOVEMENT

That the leading proponents of allotment were inspired by the highest motives seems conclusively true. A Member of Congress, speaking on the Dawes bill in 1886 said "It has . . . the endorsement of the Indian rights associations throughout the country, and of the best sentiment of the land."

"Congressional Record Dec 14, 1886 106

The supreme aim of the friends of the Indian was to substitute white civilization for his tribal culture, and they sincerely sensed that the difference in the concepts of property was fundamental in the contrast between the two ways of life. That the white man's way was good and the Indian's way was bad, all agreed. So, on the one hand, allotment was counted on to break up tribal life. This blessing was dwelt upon at length. The agent for the Yankton Sioux wrote in 1877:

"As long as Indians live in villages they will retain many of their old and ruinous habits. Pleasure feasts, community in food, brotherly civilities, and dances, constant visiting—these will continue as long as the people live together in close neighborhoods, and villages. . . . I trust that before another year is ended they will generally be located upon individual lands of farms. From that date will begin their real and permanent progress."

"Reports of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1877), 76 78 (See also Reports of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1878) 26 (1880) 14 x."

On the other hand, the allotment system was to enable the Indian to acquire the benefits of civilization. The Indian agents of the period made no effort to conceal their disgust for tribal economy.

But voices of doubt were here and there raised about allotment as a wholesale civilization program. "Barbarism" was not without its defenders. Especially were the Five Civilized Tribes held up as an example of feckless under a communal system in contrast to the deplorable condition of certain Indians upon whom allotment had been tried.<sup>2</sup> A minority report of the House Committee on Indian Affairs in 1880 went so far as to state that Indians had made progress only under communism.<sup>3</sup> At this point it is worth remarking that friends and enemies of allotment alike showed no clear understanding of Indian agricultural economy. Both were prone to use the word "communism" in a loose sense, in describing Indian enterprise. It was in the main an extensive term. Gen. O. O. Howard told the Lake Umbagog Conference in 1889 about a band of Spokane Indians who worked their lands in common in the latter part of the 1870's,<sup>4</sup> but certainly in the vast majority of cases Indian economic pursuits were carried on directly with individual rewards in view. This was primarily true even of such essentially group activities as the Omaha's annual buffalo hunt.<sup>5</sup> Agricultural was certainly but rarely a communal undertaking. The Pueblo who had probably the oldest and most established agricultural economy, were ineffective in farming and pooled their efforts only in the care of the irrigation system.<sup>6</sup> What the allotment debaters meant by

communism was that the title to land invariably rested in the tribe and the actual holding of the land was dependent on its use and occupancy. They also meant vaguely the cooperativeness, and claimlessness—the strong communal sense—of barbaric life, which allotment was calculated to disrupt.

"Memorial to Congress from Cherokee Nation in Congressional Record January 20, 1881 173

"If Report No 1070 May 28 1880 46th Cong 2d sess 10

"The 1881 Reports of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1880) 111

"Alice C. Fletcher and Francis L. Fletcher, the Omaha Tribes, in Twenty-seventh Annual Report of the Bureau of American Ethnology to the Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution, 1905-6 (Washington 1911) 271-277

"Reports of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1864) 532

In any event, the doubters were skeptical as to whether this allotment method of civilization would work. They placed much emphasis upon the fact that Indian life was bound up with the communal holding of land. In 1881 Senator Teller quoted a chief's explanation why the Nez Perces went on the warpath:

"They asked us to divide the land to divide our mother upon whose bosom we had been born, upon whose lap we had been reared."

"Congressional Record January 20 1881 783 784 (See also H Report No 1070 May 28 1880 46th Cong, 2d sess 7-10)

"The minority of the House Committee on Indian Affairs doubted whether private property would transform the Indian. The minority report said:

"However much we may differ with the humanitarians who are taking this hobby, we are certain that they will agree with us in the proposition that it does not make a flimsy out of an Indian to give him a quiet section of land. There are hundreds of thousands of white men who have experienced centuries of Anglo-Saxon civilization, who cannot be transformed into cultivators of the land by any such gift."

"H Report No 1070 May 28 1880 46th Cong, 2d sess 8

The believers in allotment had another philanthropic aim, which was to protect the Indian in his present land holding. They were confident that if every Indian had his own strip of land, guaranteed by a patent from the Government, he would enjoy a security which no tribal possession could afford him. If the Indian's possession was further safeguarded by a restriction upon his right to sell it they believed that the system would be fool proof.

It must also be noted that while the advocates of allotment were primarily and sincerely concerned with the advancement of the Indian they at the same time ignored the scheme as promoting the best interest of the whites as well. For one thing, it was fondly but erroneously hoped that setting the Indian on his own feet would relieve the Government of a great expense. In 1879 the Indian Commissioner in recommending an allotment bill to Secretary Schurz, wrote, "The eventually growing feeling in the country against the continued appropriations for the care and comfort of the Indians indicates the necessity for a radical change of policy in affairs connected with their lands."<sup>7</sup> Speaking in favor of the Dawes bill, a member of Congress said in 1880, "What shall be his future status? Shall he remain a pauper wage, blocking the pathway of civilization, an increasing burden upon the people? Or shall he be converted into a civilized farmer, contributing toward the support of the Government and adding to the material prosperity of the country?" "We desire, I say, that the latter shall be his destiny."

"Committee on Secretary Schurz in H Report No 105 March 2, 1880 Cong 46th Cong 2d sess 1, See also Reports of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1881)

"Congressional Record, December 15 1880, 190

The chief advantages that the new system was to bring to the country as a whole were to be found in the opening up of surplus lands on the reservations and in the attendant march of progress and civilization westward. In his report of 1880, Secretary Schurz wrote:

"[Allotment] will eventually open to settlement by white men the large tracts of land now belonging to the reservations, but not owned by the Indians. It will thus put the relations between the Indians and their white neighbors in the western country upon a new basis, by gradually doing away with the system of large reservations, which has so frequently provoked those encroachments, which in the past have led to so much civil injustice and so many disastrous collisions."

"Report of the Secretary of the Interior 1880 12

It must be reported that the using of these lands, which the Indians did not "need" for the advancement of civilization was a logical part of a whole and sincerely idealistic philosophy. The civilizing policy was in the long run to benefit Indian and white man alike. But doubters of the allotment system could see nothing in the policy but dire consequences for the Indian. Senator Teller in 1881 called the Cooke bill "a bill to despoil the Indians of their lands and to make them vagabonds on the face of the earth."

"Congressional Record January 26, 1881 944

At another time he said,

"If I stand alone in the Senate, I want to put upon the record my prophesy in this matter, that when 30 or 40 years shall have passed and these Indians shall have perished with their race, they will curse the hand that was so profitlessly in their defense to secure this kind of legislation and if the people who are claiming for it understood Indian character, and Indian laws, and Indian morals, and Indian religion, they would not be here clamoring for this at all."

"Ibid January 20, 1881, 783

Senator Teller had charged that allotment was in the interests of the land-grabbing speculators, but the minority report of the House Indian Affairs Committee in 1880 had gone even further in its accusations. It said

"The real aim of this bill is to get at the Indian lands and open them up to settlement. The provisions for the apparent benefit of the Indians are but the pretext to get at his lands and occupy them. . . . If this were done in the name of greed, it would be bad enough, but to do it in the name of humanity, and under the cloak of an aid desire to promote the Indian's welfare by making him like ourselves, whether he will or not, is infinitely worse."

"Congressional Record January 20, 1881 788  
"Ibid Sept 10 1881 May 28 1881, 46th Cong, 2d sess. 10

It is probably true that the most powerful force motivating the allotment policy was the pressure of the land-hungry western settlers. A very able pure theory writer at Harvard by Samuel Taylor puts forth this theory. The author copiously and convincingly cites evidence to show the cupidity of the westerners for the Indian's lands and their unrestrained zeal in acquiring them.<sup>10</sup>

"Samuel Taylor: The Origins of the Dawes Act of 1887 (unpublished manuscript, Philip Washburn Price Thesis, Harvard, 1927) 25-42

A special enterprise which undoubtedly affected the establishing and working out of the allotment program was the railroads. If must again be remembered that the 1880's were a time of feverish railroad building.

It is interesting that the same session of the same Congress that passed the Dawes Act went in for grants of railroad rights-of-way through Indian lands on a new and enlarged scale. Of 9 Indian bills that became law, 6 was railroad grants. Of the remaining 3, 1 was the Dawes Act, 1 was the appropriation act, and the third was an amendment to the land-sales law. In September 1887 the Indian Commissioner remarked in his report, "The past year has been one of unusual activity

in the projection and building of numerous additional railroads through Indian lands."

"Reports of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1887) 472-39

It is significant that one of the foremost of these empire builders was discovering that under the old reservation system the way of the railroads was hard. The biographer of James J. Hill tells of the difficulties, which the builder of the St. Paul, Minneapolis & Manitoba Railroad experienced in securing a right-of-way across the Fort Belknap and Blackfoot Reservations in 1886 and 1887.<sup>11</sup> Eventually the railroad got its grant (24 Stat L 402), but the way was paved for acquiring more easily a second grant, extending the right-of-way westward by the Blackfoot agreement of 1888.<sup>12</sup> This agreement (24 Stat L 118) cut the reservation up into several smaller ones (VII I), allowed the sale of the surplus land, provided for allotment to severity (art. VI), and stipulated that rights-of-way might be granted through any of the separate reservations "wherever in the opinion of the President the public interests require the construction of railroads, or other highways, or telegraph lines." (art. VIII) Again, the writer of this paper has no evidence to show that the railroad was active in promoting this agreement. But a later comment of James J. Hill indicates that he had been well aware of the disadvantages of the old reservations for railroading. He said

"When we built into northern Montana, and I went to tell you that it took time to do it, from the eastern boundary of the State to Fort Benton was unceded Indian land, no white man had a right to put two logs one on top of the other. If he undertook to remain too long in passing through the country, he was told to move on. When cattle crossed the Missouri River during the first years to come to our trains, the Indians asked \$40 a head for walking across the land a distance of 8 miles, and they wanted an additional amount per head. I don't remember what it was, for the writer they drank in crossing the Missouri."

"Ten G. Fyle, Life of James J. Hill (2 vols, Garden City, N. Y., 1917) I, 384

"Ten G. Fyle, Life of James J. Hill (2 vols, Garden City, N. Y., 1917) I, 384

"Ten G. Fyle, Life of James J. Hill (2 vols, Garden City, N. Y., 1917) I, 384, 385

#### INDIAN ATTITUDES AND CAPACITIES

In 1881 the Commissioner in a letter to Senator Hill, listed the numerous tribes that had petitioned for allotment and commented by saying, "It may truthfully be said that there are at this time but few tribes of Indians, outside of the Five Civilized Tribes in the Indian Territory, who are not ready for this movement."<sup>13</sup> As early as 1876 agents were reporting Indian sentiment in favor of allotment and preventing Indian petitions and this activity increased up to 1887.<sup>14</sup>

"Congressional Record Jan 20 1881  
"The Commissioner's Report to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1876), p. 100. "Report" to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1878), p. 113 (1880), 20 80 81 (1881), 20 124, 127, especially agents' reports, ibid (1884) and (1888)

From the repeated statements of those Indians who favored allotment it is clear that what was first and foremost in their minds was a hope that patents in fee would protect them against white encroachment upon their lands and against the danger of removal by the Government. A comment as early as 1876 from the Siletz agent in Oregon as to his charges' desire for allotment is typical. He said "Nothing gives them so much uneasiness as the constant efforts of some white men to have them removed to some other country."<sup>15</sup> Their seems to have been little understanding of or desire for a new agricultural economy on the part of the Indians. This was quite as true of the Omaha agent at the time, who was regarded by white proponents of allotment as especially enlightened.

"Ibid (Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs) (1878) 124, see also Miscellaneous Documents relating to Indian Affairs collected in Indian Office Files, 1868-1868, Reports of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, (1880), 35

One of the 56 members of the tribe who asked for allotment expressed his sense of the changing order, but concluded his statement (as usually all the fifty-five did) with the usual argument. He said

"The road our fathers walked is gone, the game is gone, the white people are all about us. There is no use in any Indian thinking of the old ways, he must now go to work as the white man does. We want titles to our lands, that the land may be secure to our children."

\* Fletcher and La Flesche 636 637; also Reports of the Commissioners of Indian Affairs (1882), 113

There were many expressions of Indian opposition to allotment in the early 1880's. The minority report of the House Committee on Indian Affairs in 1880 noted that since the act of 1862 provided for special protection of allottees in their holdings it was "passing strange" that so few had availed themselves of their privileges. "The Senecas and the Creeks made bold to remonstrate Congress against disrupting with allotment their systems of common holding." Realizing that they were opposing the trend of official policy the Creeks remarked

"In opposing the change of Indian land titles from the tenure in common to the tenure in severalty your memorialists are aware that they differ from nearly every one of note holding office under the Government in connection with Indian affairs, and with the great body of philanthropists whose desire to promote the welfare of the Indian cannot be questioned."

\* H. Rept. No. 1378 May 28, 1880 46th Cong. 2d sess. 7  
\* H. Ex. Doc. No. 83, Mar. 1, 1882, 47th Cong. 1st sess.  
\* Ibid., 20

Certain tribes had specific objections to allotment. A memorial from the Creeks, Choctaws, and Cherokees in 1881 read

"The change to an individual title would throw the whole of our domain in a few years into the hands of a few persons."

\* Congressional Record, Jan. 20, 1881, 781

\* \* \* There is a final fact which must be taken into consideration in interpreting reports of Indian sentiments and of the results of allotment experiments, namely, that allotment had become an official policy. As Senator Teller maintained with probable accuracy there would be a tendency on the part of agents and subordinate officials to be influenced in their estimates consciously or unconsciously by the knowledge that allotment was the program to be furthered."

\* Congressional Record, Jan. 20, 1881, 788

What can be said from this survey is that there was no apparent widespread demand from the Indians for allotment.

## C CONSEQUENCES OF THE ALLOTMENT SYSTEM

The General Allotment Act proved to be the cornerstone of a system which involved a considerable amount of legislation that supplemented and amended the terms of that act. The working out of the allotment system in its early years is sketched in Part II of Dr. Otis' study, from which the following quotations are taken.

There was no doubt in the minds of the proponents of the allotment system that they were on the road to the complete solution of the Indian problem. \* \* \* Senator Dawes went so far as to say that the general allotment law had obviated the need for tinkering with the organization of the [Indian] service. He said

"It seems to me that this is a self-acting machine that we have set going, and if we only run it on the track it will work itself all out, and all these difficulties that have troubled my friend will pass away like snow in the spring time, and we will never know when they go, we will only know they are gone."

\* Nineteenth Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1887), 54

Indeed this "self-acting machine" would finally render obsolete all Government machinery whatever. Senator Dawes went on to express a prediction of which an echo has been heard in discussions of the present proposed policy.

"Suppose these Indians became citizens of the United States with this 160 acres of land to them, ask me, what becomes of the Indian reservations, what becomes of the Indian Bureau what becomes of all this machinery what becomes of the six common missions, appointed for life? Their occupation is gone, they have all finished, the work for which they have been created. \* \* \* as all gone, while you are making them citizens. \* \* \* That is why I don't trouble myself at all about how to change it [the machinery of administration]."

Dr. Lyman Abbot said  
"The Indian is no longer to be cited for by the executive department of the Government, he is coming under the general protection under which we all live, namely, the protection of the courts."

\* Ibid. (1887), 55

\* Ibid. (1887), 57

## THE APPLICATION OF ALLOTMENT

The application of allotment to the reservations was above all characterized by extreme haste.

In September 1887—7 months after the passage of the Dawes Act—the nation's first allotment, the Lake Mohonk Conference how President Cleveland had remarked when signing the bill that he intended to apply it to one reservation at first, and then gradually to others. Senator Dawes went on to say

"But you see he has been led to apply it to half a dozen. The bill provides for capitalizing the remainder of the land for the benefit of the Indian, but the greed of the landgrabber is such as to press the application of this bill to the utmost. \* \* \* There is no danger but this will come most rapidly, too rapidly, I think, the greed and hunger and thirst of the white man for the Indian's land is almost equal to his hunger and thirst for righteousness."

\* Nineteenth Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1887), 68

In 1890 the Commissioner reported,

"In numerous instances, where clearly desirable, Congress has by special legislation authorized negotiations with the Indians for portions of their reservations without waiting for the slower process of the general allotment law."

\* Ibid. [Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs] (1890) xxxviii

In 1888 Congress had ratified five agreements with different Indian tribes providing for allotment and for the sale of surplus lands. The following year Congress passed eight such laws. A member of the Board of Indian Commissioners in 1891 estimated that the 104,814,949 acres of Indian reservations in 1880 had been reduced by 12,000,000 acres in 1890 and by 8,000,000 acres in the first 9 months of 1891. \* \* \*

\* Ibid. (1888), 204, 302, 320, 325, 336-338, 340-344

\* Ibid. (1889) 421, 432-438, 440, 447, 449, 450, 463, 464

\* Twenty-third Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1891), 61

In the meantime, the work of applying allotment was pushed rapidly forward. \* \* \* In 1888 the Commissioner had reported that 3,349 allotments had been approved since the passage of the Dawes Act. There were 1,968 allotments approved in 1880, 2,830 in 1881, 5,704 in 1882, and in the last year Commissioner Morgan reported that since February 1887 the Indian Office had given its approval to 21,274 allotments. In this same year, 1889, he told the Mohonk Conference that the allotments which were about to be made would bring the grand total of all the allotments which the Government had made to over

80,000. He concluded it was time to slow down.<sup>4</sup> His successors seem to have acted upon his advice until the opening of the new century, as the following figures show:

*Allotments approved 1893-1900*

Years	Number	Yal	Number
1893	4,361	1897	4,229
1894	4,061	1898	2,015
1895	4,861	1899	1,011
1896	4,414	1900	8,762

<sup>4</sup>Table in Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1901), 94.

<sup>5</sup>Ibid. (1892), 184.

<sup>6</sup>Twenty-fourth Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1894), 37.

<sup>7</sup>Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1898), 28 (1894), 20 (1897), 19 (1896), 25 (1907), 21 (1898), 10 (1899), 45 (1900), 75, 51.

In the years prior to 1887 the Government had approved 7,463 allotments with a total acreage of 694,123. From 1887 through 1900 it approved a total of 53,108 with an acreage of nearly 5,000,000.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>8</sup>Ibid. (1916), 88-94.

So satisfactory was the speed of allotment to Indian Commissioners that in 1897 it was contemplating a very early termination of Government supervision over the Indian. The Board's report stated in that year:

"When patents have been issued and homesteads secured, when Indians are declined and acknowledged citizens, and are actually self-supporting, the supervision of the Government and the arbitrary rule of the agent may be safely withdrawn."

This faith that the allotment system would mean an early decline of Government supervision and placing the Indian on his own responsibility continued to be expressed by the friends of the Indian through the 1890's. But the hope was not realized. In 1900 there were in existence 61 agencies—3 more than in 1880.<sup>9</sup> But while the maintenance of the agency system was in large measure dependent upon the needs of the service, it was apparently even more dependent on the needs of the agents. The Indian Rights Association reported in 1900 that Commissioner Jones had recommended to Congress the discontinuing of 15 agencies but that the agents had been able to bring such pressure through their friends at the Capitol that Congress had agreed to the eliminating of only one.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>9</sup>Twenty-second Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1890), 9.

<sup>10</sup>Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1890), 512-514, Ibid. (1900), 743-746.

<sup>11</sup>Eighteenth Annual Report Indian Rights Association (1900), 77. This report lists the agencies as 66 in 1900 but Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1900) lists 61. See pp. 743-746.

There is no doubt that the idea of allotment was making headway with the Indians, but there is considerable doubt that its progress was the result of a spontaneous and wide spread interest of the Indians in becoming hard-working American farmers. In that same year [1888] the Yankton agent wrote about a determined opposition to allotment which was led by the old chiefs and which was successfully overcome by two companies of soldiers from Fort Randall.

The agent concluded by remarking that when the survey was finished there was not one Indian on the reservation who did not want his allotment.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>12</sup>Ibid. [Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1898)] to 208.

There is considerable testimony to the fact that the Indians knew pretty well what the white man's system had meant for their race. One of the members of the Board of Indian Commissioners reported in 1880:

"The Ojages as a tribe are almost unanimously opposed to taking their land in severalty. Eighteen years ago they purchased this reservation of the Cheyennes for a home, and as such they want it to be. They argue that the time for such action has not yet come, that they are not prepared in any way to have white settlers for neighbors, and especially that the variety of white men with whom it has been their misfortune to come in contact. About 250,000 acres of an area of over 1,500,000 is tillable land, the other is only suitable for grazing, and this they consider is no more than is needed for themselves and children."

<sup>13</sup>Ibid. [Twenty-first Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1880)], 27. The Ojage population was about 1,500 in 1890, which would allow for an average of about 160 acres of arable land per capita.

This refrain is repeated in the reports of various agents.

In that year [1887] the International Council of Indian Territory, to which 19 tribes sent 87 representatives, voted unanimously against allotment and the granting of individual rights of way through their lands. The council's resolution on the allotment question, which was sent to the President of the United States, cited these tribes' "rich experience" with allotment and assailed the policy as one which would "engulf all of the nations and tribes of the Territory in one common catastrophe, the removal of land monopolists."

<sup>14</sup>Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1887), 118-117.

There is a compelling ring to the appeal of the International Council of 1887.

"Like other people, the Indian needs at least the germ of political identity, some governmental organization of his own, however crude, to which his pride and manhood may cling and claim allegiance, in order to make time progress in the affairs of life. This peculiarity in the Indian character is elsewhere called patriotism, the wise and patient fashioning and guidance of which alone will successfully solve the question of civilization. Exclude him from this, and he has little else to live for. The law to which objection is urged does this by cutting many members of a tribe to become a member of some other body politic by electing and taking to himself a quantity of land which at the present time is the common property of all."

<sup>15</sup>Ibid. [Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1887)], 117.

The following year the agent to the Five Tribes observed that the half-breeds were becoming favorably inclined toward allotment, he said,

"The full bloods are against it, as a rule, as they fear it will destroy their present government, to which they appear attached."

<sup>16</sup>Ibid. (1888), 135.

This same cleavage which characterized Indian opinion before the passage of the Dawes Act is apparent all through the nineties.<sup>17</sup> This cleavage expresses the fundamental fact that the allotment controversy was a struggle between two cultures. With the inexorable penetration of the white civilization the conflict within the tribes crystallized into two factions, the half-breeds and the full bloods, the young and the old, the "progressives" and the "conservatives," the sheep and the goats.

<sup>17</sup>See miscellaneous documents relating to Indian Affairs (collected in Indian Office Library), xvii, 14608. Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1893), 93 (1889), 132, 260 (1890), 71 (1892), 294, 477 (1895), 275 (1900), 288-281.

# ADMINISTRATION AND CHANGE IN POLICY LEADING

Those who were dissatisfied with the results achieved by the Dawes Act saw various causes of failure. The one thing, the whole emphasis of the allotment policy was laid upon farming, and critics from time to time pointed out

that large sections of the Indians' lands were not suitable for agriculture \* \* \*

But another thing, the Government was continuing a policy which was a cause as well as an index of allotment's failure. A speaker at the 1890 Mohawk Conference described at length the evil consequences of the rationing system. He showed how it had pauperized the Indians and now deterred them from farming, since they feared if they raised crops the Government would cut down their allowances. \* \* \*

\* Ibid. Twenty-second Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1890) 142.

Many friends of the Indian who believed that the allotment system was not a complete thing all that it should were inclined to hold the Government responsible for use of its failure to give adequate aid to the allottees. \* \* \* It was not true that the Government made no efforts whatever to equip the Indians for farming. But it made very slight efforts. The appropriation act passed in 1888 provided for the allocation of \$30,000 to the purchase of seed, farming implements, and other things "necessary for the commencement of farming" (28 Stat. L. 241). In 1888 alone, 4,768 allotments had been made. The appropriation, therefore, granted less than \$10 to every new allottee setting out on his farming career. There is, furthermore, no way of knowing how much of this money was expended for this purpose. \* \* \*

\* Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1888) 444.

The following year the same amount was provided (28 Stat. L. 963) but in 1890 no such appropriation was made. In 1891 Congress raised \$15,000 for the purpose (30 Stat. L. 1007) and this sum was continued through the next 2 years (27 Stat. L. 137, 690). After 1893 the appropriation sets up to 1900 included no such items. \* \* \*

\* The Omaha treaties of 1854 (10 Stat. L. 1049) and of 1868 (14 Stat. L. 697), which provided for a form of allotment, required the Government to furnish the Indians with implements, stock, and milling services. Yet these promises were never carried out. One of the Indians who signed the petition for the Omaha allotment bill in 1881 said:

"Three times I have cut wood to build a house. Each time the agent told me the Government wished to build me a house. Every time my wood has lain and rotted, and now I feel ashamed when I hear an agent telling me such things." \*

\* Fletcher and La Mesche, 623 624.

\* Ibid., 627.

Defects in the system which \* \* \* occupied the attention of the friends of the Indian were those resulting from the fact that allotted lands must be free from State taxation. The Dawes Act, providing for the 25-year Federal first period during which time the land might not be encumbered (24 Stat. L. 380), meant, it was clear, that no State could tax the allottee's holdings. As a result, the friends of the Indian were noting in 1890, States were refusing to assume any responsibilities for Indian communities and were withholding such services as the upkeep of schools and roads. It was also apparent that this situation was a source of great hostility to Indians on the part of white neighbors. \* \* \*

\* Twenty-first Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners, (1886) 107-108.

\* The most enthusiastic supporters of the allotment policy felt that its first results showed that it needed important revision, itself. In his report for 1890 the Commissioner observed that Indians were asking for equal allotments to all individuals, and he recommended that the law should be so amended. He noted that there was a special need to protect the married women whom the Dawes Act had excluded from allotment benefits. \* \* \* The Board of Indian Commissioners that same year urged upon Congress the equalization of allotments. \*

\* Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1891), 17.

\* Ibid. Twenty-first Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1890), 9.

This proposed change was, significantly, bound up with another and still more important change which most friends of the Indian came to demand. \* \* \* The Mohawk Conference that year heard some talk about the leasing of Indian lands and the freeing of the Indian from bondage. Justice Stone, previously associate justice of the United States Supreme Court, said:

"But on one subject I am perfectly convinced, namely, that the Government has not the shadow of a right to interfere with the Indian in his alienation, either with the use of his property or with the man nor in which he shall educate his children. \* \* \*

\* Ibid. (1880), 103-109.

But especially the point was emphasized that leasing part of his land would bring the Indian the wherewithal to cultivate the rest. \* \* \* Other arguments from time to time were brought forward by Indians sympathetic to show how leasing would help him.

\* Ibid. (1880) 110, 112.

The decision to allow the Indian to lease his land was fraught with grave consequences for the whole allotment system. Probably it was the most important decision in Indian policy that was made in the passage of the Dawes Act. Yet, interestingly enough, the significance of the leasing question seemed to be dwained in the eyes of contemporaries by the pressing matter of equal allotments. It is true that after the Attorney General ruled in 1885 that tribal grazing leases were illegal, the Commissioner of Indian Affairs recommended annually until 1899 a law permitting such leases. \* \* \* But he made no proposal of leasing allotments.

\* Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1888), xxxix.

And no doubt his advocating of grazing leases was looked at with suspicion by the friends of the Indian, as were most of his official acts. \* \* \* The question of leasing allotments had been raised at the 1890 Mohawk Conference, \* \* \* but the Indian Office took no stand on the question in that year. As has been said, Commissioner Morgan was interested in the question of granting equal allotments to Indians of all ages and both sexes. \* \* \* In January 1890 he wrote a letter to the Secretary of the Interior enclosing a bill providing for the granting of 160 acres to every Indian—man, woman, and child. The following month the President transmitted the bill, together with Commissioner Morgan's letter to the Senate Committee on Indian Affairs. \* \* \* The Commissioner mentioned several tribes which had opposed allotment because they disliked the system of unequal grants to the different classifications and he thought that if 160 acres were given each Indian "there would be less levitation on the part of many of the tribes to the taking of land in severity." He also stressed the predicament of east-coast Indians under the existing system and the impotence of dealing more liberally with the young Indians who were the future hope of the race. \* \* \*

\* The criticism directed at the Commissioner especially by the Indian Rights Association was claimed by that organization to be the cause of the Commissioner's dismissal and of the appointment of J. H. Oberly in his place. Seventh Annual Report of the Indian Rights Association (1890) 9, 10.

\* See above p. 101.

\* Ibid., p. 100.

\* 8 Ex. Doc. No. 64, February 17, 1890 (51st Cong. 1st sess., 1-4).

\* Ibid., 2.

\* Ibid., 8.

Accordingly, on March 10, 1890, Senator Dawes introduced in the Senate a bill to "amend and further extend the benefits" of the Dawes Act. Section 1 of the bill provided for the granting of 160 acres to every Indian. The previous agitation of this question by the official and unofficial friends of the Indian furnished an adequate introduction to this legislative proposal. But section 2 of the bill seems to have come almost unbidden from Senator Dawes, the man who a few months later publicly expressed his misgivings about the leasing policy. \* \* \* Section 2 of the Senator's bill read:

"That whenever it shall be made to appear to the Secretary of the Interior that, by reason of age or other disability, any allottee under the provisions of said act or any other act of Congress cannot personally and with benefit to himself occupy or improve his allotment, or any part thereof, the same may be leased upon such terms, regulations, and conditions as shall be prescribed by said Secretary, for a term not exceeding 5 years for farming or grazing, or 10 years for mining purposes."

\* Congressional Record March 10 1890 2098  
 \* See above p 102  
 \* Copy of bill in Senate Document Room files

"A conference committee reached a compromise which was adopted by both Senate and House on February 23, 1891. Eighty acres were to go to each Indian, but an Indian could rent his land only when unable to work it "by reason of age or other disability." The Indian must apply for a lease to the Secretary of the Interior directly and not to the agent, and farming and grazing leases of allotted lands could be for no longer than 5 years. In other words, there was to be something in the way of restraint exercised upon Indian leasing. The President signed the bill on February 28, 1891 (26 Stat L 784)

The Indian administration set out at a very cautious gut to apply the leasing provision to allotments. The bill (Congressional Record) Feb 28 1891, 1118 1152  
 \* See 5, 26 Stat L 784

Commissioner in his report for 1892 and

"Agents have expressly directed that it is not intended to authorize the making of any lease by an allottee who possesses the necessary physical and mental qualifications to enable him to cultivate his allotment, either personally or by hired help."

\* Ibid (Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs) (1892)

71 He said that but two allotment leases had thus far been approved by him. The next year the Commissioner promulgated a set of rules for the making of leases. The rules were primarily concerned with defining the terms in the phrase, "by reason of age or other disability." "Age" applied to all Indians under 18 and all those disabled by senility. "Other disability" applied to all unmarried Indian women, married women whose husband or sons were unable to work the land, widows without able-bodied sons, all Indians with chronic sickness or incurable physical defect, and those with a "irreversible defect of mind or permanent memorable mental disease." The Commissioner reported that four allotment leases had been allowed that year. \* \* \*

\* Ibid (1892) 72  
 \* Ibid (1893), 477 478  
 \* Ibid (1891) 21

The Senator (Dawes) had secured an amendment to the House bill taking away from the agents the power of recommending leases and requiring the Indians to apply directly to the Secretary of the Interior. But in 1893 the Commissioner wrote

"The matter of leasing allotted lands has been placed largely in the hands of Indian agents in charge of the agencies where allotments in severalty have been made"

\* Congressional Record, Feb 28, 1891, 8118

He went on to say that all leases must be approved by the Secretary after recommendation by the agent. How much this administrative ruling was in itself responsible for the subsequent speeding up of leasing cannot be said for at that point a most important change was made in the law. \* \* \*

\* Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1891), 27

\* \* \* the general Indian appropriation act which became law August 15 1891, contained a provision which changed the critical phrase in the act of 1891 to read "by reason of age, disability, or inability," extended the term of agricultural and grazing leases to 5 years and permitted 10 year leases for business as well as mining purposes (28 Stat L 405). Nevertheless, the Commissioner said in his report that year

"It has been repeatedly stated that it was not the intent of the law nor the policy of the office to allow indiscriminate leasing of allotted lands."

"If an allottee has physical or mental ability to cultivate an allotment by personal labor or by hired help, the leasing of such allotment should not be permitted."

\* Ibid (Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs) (1894), 82 88

But a new rule which the Commissioner added to those defining "age" and "disability" read

"The term 'inability' as used in said amended act, cannot be specifically defined as the other terms have been. Any allottee not embraced in any of the foregoing classes who for any reason other than those stated is unable to cultivate his lands on a portion of them, and desires to lease same may make application therefor to the proper Indian agent."

\* \* \* the Indian Appropriation Act of 1897 changed the leasing system back to its original form. Indeed in one respect the provisions were even more restrictive than were those of the 1891 law. The maximum term for mining and business leases was fixed at 5 years. The term for farming and grazing leases was changed back to 8 years, and the word "inability" was dropped so that "age or other disability" became the only legal grounds for permitting leases (40 Stat L 85). The Commissioner's report for 1897 commented on the fact that the leasing periods had been changed by the Indian appropriation act but, interestingly enough, he made no mention of the dropping of the word "inability." \* \* \* The Commissioner approved 1186 allotment leases in 1899 and 2,790 in 1900. In this latter year, the system was again changed by the Indian appropriation act. "Inability" was restored as a reason for permitting allotment leases, and the maximum period of leasing for farming purposes was extended once more to 5 years (81 Stat L 229). \* \* \* Apparently the change in policy had not been the doing of the Commissioner. He wrote in his report for 1900

"The better to assist them the allottees should be divided into small communities, each to be put in charge of persons who by precept and example would teach them how to work and how to live"

"This is the theory. The practice is very different. The Indian is allotted and then allowed to turn over his land to the whites and go on his useless way. This pernicious practice is the direct growth of vicious legislation. The first law on the subject was passed in 1891. \* \* \*

"It is concluded that where an Indian allottee is incapacitated by physical disability or decrepitude of age from occupying and working his allotment, it is proper to permit him to lease it, and it was to meet such cases as this that the law referred to was made. \* \* \* But "inability" has opened the door for leasing in general, until on some of the reservation leasing is the rule and not the exception, while on others the practice is growing"

"To the thoughtful mind it is apparent that the effect of the general leasing of allotments is bad. Like the gratuitous issue of patents and the periodical distribution of money it fosters indolence with its train of attendant vices. By taking away the incentive to labor it defeats the very object for which the allotment system was devised, which was, by giving the



Indian something tangible that he could call his own, to make him to personal effort in his own behalf."

\* Ibid (1894) 421

\* Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1897) 40-43  
\* Ibid Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1899) 60 (1900) 76-77

\* Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1900) 13

Thus it seems that the leasing policy had been pushed much farther than the friends of the Indian desired. As to who had been pushing it there one can only guess. It is apparent that white settlers and promoters had found leasing a new and effective technique for exploiting Indian lands. So had Indian agents—according to the Indian Rights Association. The association's report for 1900 described the evil consequences of the leasing system under the new law and set forth grave charges.

\* Eighteenth Annual Report of the Executive Committee, Indian Rights Association (1900) 68

#### RESULTS OF ALLOTMENT TO 1900

Analysis of the achievements of the allotment system requires first some appraisal of the leasing practice which vitally affected allotment results. There were defenders of the leasing system all through the 1890's. It had certain immediate consequences which recommended it to friends of the Indian who were sincere if lacking in vision. There was the simple fact of allotted lands lying idle which the Indians either could not or would not cultivate. Such waste seemed wicked to a generation that was coming increasingly to set store by efficiency. How much better it was for the lands to be used and the Indians to be deriving an income from them. In 1890, before the passage of the leasing act, a member of the Board of Indian Commissioners requested that the Government had ousted white share workers from the Kiowa, Comanche, and Apache Reservations. He said:

"Farms that could only be worked in this way, owing to peculiar circumstances, are now lying tenantless and abandoned."

\* Twenty second Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1890), 31

In 1895 various agents expressed their approval of the way leasing was working since it was bringing in to the Indians a "useful revenue."

\* Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1895), 290, 292, 326

But for the most part, the agents who expressed their approval of allotment leasing, saw it as productive of practical results. It took a life of misery, women, and the old folks, "and it was economically profitable. Our agents and the Indians got more out of the leased lands than if they worked them themselves." \* \* \* Leasing was undoubtedly a step to the taking of allotments. But it seems hardly to have been a step to the Indian becoming a farmer.

\* Thirtieth Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1898), 14  
\* Ibid (1895) 18 see also p. 15, and Report of the Council of Indian Affairs (1900), 361

Perhaps the most flagrant example of the colossal influence of leasing was that of the Omahas and Winnebagoes, in Nebraska. The Omahas were the great hope of the allotment enthusiasts. But in 1893 the agent wrote that leasing had gone far among the Omahas and Winnebagoes and that the former were renting their lands without the consent of the agent or Government. In 1894 \* \* \* Professor Panthea told the Mohonk conference of his bitter disappointment in the Omahas especially, about whom he had been satisfied and enthusiastic as they had started out under the allotment system. He had recently visited the two reservations and found most of the land in white hands. Real estate syndicates had leased lands even before the allotment was completed. One company had rented 47,000 acres from the Winnebagoes

at from 8 to 10 cents in acre and sublet to white farmers for \$1 to \$2 an acre. The Winnebagoes got enough in come from these lands to pay drunk part of the time. But the Omahas got much more."

\* Ibid (Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs) (1894) 104-105, see also (1892) 186  
\* Twenty sixth Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1894), 120

The illegal leasing of allotments had apparently come to great lengths on these two reservations. "In 1894 the agent thought that the Indians were anxious to recover their lands and fill some portion of them." The following year this fighting agent set out in a vain effort in going to hold a powerful land company. The Government ultimately furnished him with 70 extra police and 70 rifles as the local authorities called in the support of the land company and were reported to be aiming a hundred deputies. Confronted by an opposition in the State courts restraining him from evicting the company's tenants, the agent at last gave in. "In 1894 the agent had written,

"The settlers would almost unanimously prefer to lease under the rules and regulations of the Department, but are held, practically, by the lawless corporations and individuals who have subleased to them."

\* Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1895) 37, 39  
\* Ibid (1894) 137, 139  
\* Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1895) 47, 41

\* Ibid (1894) 138

In 1895 the Commissioner explained the effective technique of this particular land company which had been able to flout the Federal authority. His explanation suggests very clearly why this outlaw corporation received the community's support in many instances, the company kept notes from their subtenants in place of money rent. These notes, as they came into the hands of local bankers. As a result all of the powerful interests in the community were galvanized in opposition to the Government in its attempt to force evictions or collect legal rents.

\* Ibid (1895), 41

Whatever progress the Omahas, especially, might have made under the original allotment system it is clear that the leasing policy doomed their efforts to failure and themselves to demoralization.

The passionate denunciation of leasing by the Omaha and Winnebago agent in 1898 perhaps says the last word on the matter. He wrote that out of 140,000 acres allotted on the two reservations, 112,000 acres had been leased. He then wrote:

"Leasing of allotted agricultural land should never be permitted. The Indians should be compelled to live upon their allotments and support themselves by cultivating the land. They can do it, but will not unless compelled to. Not 1 acre of allotted agricultural land should be leased to a white man, and it would be far better to burn the acres or the allotted lands than to lease them for pastures to the white man."

\* Thirtieth Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1898), 25

\* \* \* the allotment policy began and continued as an act of faith. So it was possible for an agent to report that allotment was working well on his reservation and at the same time submit figures which showed that the greater portion of the Indian lands were leased to white men. Indeed, the testimony which comes even from the friends of the Indian as to the true results of the leasing policy toward the end of the century makes it seem improbable that the allotment system in the main was working well.

The writer's scepticism as to the real success of the allotment system in the period of the 1890's is based not alone on inference and deduction. The following table contains figures that are pertinent to the question whether or not allotment was producing results.

### Land and crop statistics

[Unless otherwise indicated the figures are taken from the current volume of the Annual Reports of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. The figures in parentheses are past references.]

Year	Total number of dairies operating to date	Total number of heifers to date	Number of families having cows or milch buffaloes	Number of cows and milch buffaloes	Indian agricultural production (in lakhs)				Page
					Wheat	Over all barley	Corn	Vegetables	
1880	12 156	2	5 551	265, 012	551 410	815 625	1 39	297 195	900
1881	17 954	2	7 797	301, 012	718 276	796 601	1 88	70 011	971
1882	26 730	2	7 797	301, 012	718 276	875 515	115	164 756	976
1883	31 261	2	7 797	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1884	36 500	2	7 797	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1885	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1886	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1887	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1888	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1889	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1890	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1891	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1892	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1893	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1894	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1895	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1896	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1897	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1898	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1899	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011
1900	37 178	2	8 866	301, 012	1 722 66	511 170	372	300 851	1011

<sup>1</sup> Over 950 000 bushels of wheat raised by white lessees on Umatilla River.

<sup>2</sup> Unspecified amount of wheat, oats, barley, and corn raised by white  
Indians on Indian lands.

NOTE.—Mortment and leaving totals, 1891-1900 taken from figures given above pp 61, 111-113

The figures even show, while by no means conclusive, indicate that the allotment system was not producing the results which the originators of the policy hoped for. In compiling the number of allotments made it must be remembered that several allotments might be made to one family. The act of 1891 which granted 80 acres to every Indian made it possible for one family to possess over a given number of allotments. It is therefore impossible to say there is no way of knowing the number of specific families allotted and the average number of allotments to each. But the above figures show that the number of allotments made has been increasing steadily since the beginning with the allotment figures. The number of allotments per family grew from 2.7 in 1890 to 5.4 in 1900. Since it may be supposed that when Indians accepted allotments they were doing so because they were desirous of obtaining the change in the law after 1890 which affected the question of eligibility for allotment by the extension of the privilege to married women, this increasing figure would indicate a decline of Indian barbarism. Or it least it suggests a desire to reach the goal envisaged by the friends of the Indian. Even more disquieting are the statistics of Indian agriculture. The number of acres of Indian farming from 1880 to 1891 which was far from proportional to the number of allotments made in those years. Then from 1895 to 1900, although more than 100,000 allotments were made, the number of acres farmed by Indians actually decreased by over 26,000 acres. Nor is it only the figures of crop production for which they are worth, can one observe the progress in Indian agriculture in the next 10 years when the friends of allotment expected

\* \* \* If the allotment system were to have succeeded the Indians would, culturally, have had to be made over. The significance of this fact was never fully grasped by the philanthropists and the Government. \* \* \* So the Indian hopefully if not enthusiastically, went, unpaid, out upon his allotment, as an unarmed man would go unwittingly into a forest of wild beasts.

For if white land seekers and business promoters did not create the allotment system, they at least turned it to their own good use. \* \* \*

Besides the lands that were thrown open to settlement, white men were interested in tribal lands that remained. This was especially true of the cattlemen \* \* \*

When it came to the actual designation of allotments, white influence was also busy. General Whittlesey, of the Board of Indian Commissioners, said to the Mohonk Conference in 1891 "Another hindrance [to the allotting of lands] is the influence brought to bear by surrounding white settlers, who are waiting to get possession of the lands that may be reserved after allotments are completed. If there are a double tract of land, they try to possess the first lands soon being allotted, and to prevent anybody from selling them, by bribery and by other means."

\* Ibid. [Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners] (1891) 90

1 \* \* In 1880, General Whittlesey reported that  
2 there was a growing demand for the Government to dis-  
3 tribute among the Indians on a per capita basis tribal  
4 funds that had been so heavily swelled by sales of sur-  
5 plus lands. He said, "That is their own desire, and the  
6 desire of many of those who surround them, who know  
7 how soon such money disappears."<sup>1</sup> The Umatilla agent  
8 who found agriculture languishing on his reservation in  
9 1894—especially among the full bloods—wrote

"The few mixed bloods who farm their allotments do so with stock, machinery, and provisions furnished by merchants or bankers, who take a mortgage on the crop, afterwards taking all the crop."

<sup>1</sup>Ibid. [Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners] (1890), 129.  
-Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1891), 269.

And there was a long story of flagrant corruption and exploitation in the activities of lumbering companies who manipulated the allotment system to their great profit, on up into the twentieth century'

<sup>4</sup> See W. K. Moorehead *The American Indian in the United States* (Andover, Mass., 1914), 60, 62, 71 ff.

By the middle of the 1890's, the friends of the Indian began to express dismay at the course their humanitarian policy had taken in the hands of persons who were not always humanitarians. \* \* \*

In 1805 the Commissioner showed himself well aware of the forces that were crippling Indian development. He made a shrewd comment on his times and a significant forecast. He said:

"The whites, in some sections of the country seem to have very little respect for the rights of Indians who have segregated themselves from their tribes and sought to avail themselves of the benefits of the Indian homestead and allotment laws enacted expressly for them by Congress, and I apprehend that the opposition to them will increase as the public domain grows less and less."

<sup>1</sup> Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1805), 22.

\* \* \* One student of the allotment movement believes that the act of 1881 was the most important step toward ruin. This law by granting the Indian the right to lease and at the same time allotting to each member of the family—to babies and octogenarians—an equal amount of land developed in the Indian idleness and aversion to work. The allotment law was the cause of the Indian's poverty, for it was the only source of revenue through their leased allotments. As a result the family was disrupted as a producing unit and the Indian's interest became pecuniary instead of industrial.\* The present writer agrees with this analysis, but he is inclined to think that it basically the leasing policy which would have meant ultimate defeat for the allotment system.

\* Flora Warrren Seymour *Story of the Red Man* (New York, 1839) 870. letter from Mrs Seymour to the writer

#### D. APPRAISAL OF THE ALLOTMENT SYSTEM

A critical appraisal of the consequences of the allotment system is found in a memorandum submitted to the Senate and House Committees on Indian Affairs by Commissioner Collier.

on February 19, 1914.<sup>22</sup> This memorandum provided it least part of the basis for those provisions of the Act of June 18, 1934,<sup>23</sup> which put an end to the process of allotment.

The Indians are continuing to lose ground, yet Government costs must increase, while the Indians must still continue to lose ground, and this existing law is changed.

Two thirds of the Indians in two thirds of the Indian country for many years have been drifting toward complete impoverishment.

While being stripped of their property, these same Indians, simultaneously, have been disintegrated as groups and pushed to a lower social level as individuals.

During this time when Indian wealth has been shrinking and Indian life has been diminishing, the costs of Indian administration in the identical area have been increasing. The competition of bureaucratic management has grown steadily greater.

Run for the Indians, and still larger costs to the Government, are involved by the existing system.

Whether the Indians themselves, not the Indian Service, can reverse the downward process, or even materially delay it, unless certain fundamental incapacities of law can be changed.

The dislocations continue, peculiar to the Indian situation in the United States, and sharply in contrast with the Indian situation both of Canada and of Mexico, is directly and inevitably the result of existing law—primarily, but not exclusively, the allotment law and its amendments, and its administrative complexities.

The approximately half of the land of the Indians who as yet are outside the allotment system is not losing their property, and generally they are increasing in industry and are rising, not falling, in the social scale. The costs of Indian administration are markedly lower in these unallotted areas.

The backbone of Indian law since 1887 has been the allotment act and its amendments and administrative regulations.

The law originally possessed and still possesses, virtues which can be preserved and made effective. The bill does preserve them. But these virtues, potential rather than realized, have been slighted when contrasted with the destructive effects of the law and the system.

#### HOW ALLOTMENT HAS WORKED AND NOW WORKS

Land allotment, under the general and special allotment acts, has been mandatory. To each Indian—man, woman, and child—living and enrolled at a specified date, a separate parcel of land has been allotted. The residual land, fictitiously called "surplus," have been mandatorily bought from the tribes by the government and these after have been disposed of to whites.

The individually parcels of land have been held under Government trust over long or shorter periods. Some times, where the land was agricultural, the Indian family has lived upon it and used one or more of the allotments attached to its several members. Where the land was of grazing character, or was timberland, allotment precluded the integrated use of the land by individuals or families, even at the start.

Upon the allottees' death it has been necessary to partition the land equally among heirs, or to sell it, and in the interim it has been leased.

Most likewise of the land of living allottees has been leased to whites.

#### STATISTICS OF LOSS OF LAND THROUGH ALLOTMENT

Through sales by the Government of the fictitiously designated "surplus" lands, through sales by allottees after the trust period had ended or had been terminated by administrative act, and through sales by the Government of heathen land, virtually mandatory under the allotment act. Through these three methods, the total of Indian landholdings has been cut from 158,000,000 acres in 1887 to 45,000,000 acres in 1934.

These gross statistics, however, are misleading, for, of the remaining 45,000,000 acres, more than 20,000 acres are contained within areas which for special reasons have been exempted from the allotment law, whereas the land loss is considerable exclusively against the allotment system.

Furthermore, that part of the allotted lands which has been lost is the most valuable part. Of the residual lands, taking all Indian-owned lands into account, nearly one half, or nearly 20,000,000 acres, are devoid of "undesired" lands.

Allotment, commenced at different dates and applied under varying conditions, has divested the Indians of their property at unequal speeds. For about 100,000 Indians the divestment has been absolute. They are totally landless as a result of allotment. On some of the reservations the divestment is as yet only partial and in part is postponed. Most of the heathen lands, awaiting sale to whites under existing law, have not yet been sold, and the Indian title is not yet extinguished. Under the allotment system it inevitably will be extinguished.

The above statement relates solely to land losses. The facts can be summarized thus:

Through the allotment system, more than 50 percent of the land value belonging to all the Indians in 1887 has been taken away from them, more than 85 percent of the land value of all the allotted Indians has been taken away. And the allotment system working down through the partitioning or sale of the land of deceased allottees, mathematically increases and practically requires that the remaining Indian allotted lands shall pass to whites. The allotment act implements total landlessness for the Indians of the third generation of each allotted tribe.

#### THE REMAINING LANDS IN INDIAN OWNERSHIP

A yet more disheartening picture will immediately follow the above statement. For equally important with the outright loss of land is the effect of the allotment system in making such lands as remain in Indian ownership unusable.

There have been presented to the House Indian Commission numerous land maps, showing the condition of Indian-owned lands on allotted reservations. The Indian-owned lands are parcels belonging (a) to allottees and (b) to the heirs of deceased allottees. Both of these classes of Indian-owned land are checkerboarded with white-owned land already lost to the Indians, and on many reservations the Indian-owned parcels are mere islands within a sea of white-owned property.

Farming, at least at the subsistence level and commercial farming within irrigated areas, is still possible on those parcels belonging to living allottees. But grazing, upon the grazing land of living allottees, and businesslike or conservative forest operation, upon the allotted forest land of living allottees, are largely, often absolutely, impossible.

On the checkerboarded land maps, the heathen lands each year become a greater proportion of the total of the remaining Indian land. These heathen lands belong to numerous heirs, even up to the number of hundreds.

And one heir possessed equities in numerous allotments, up to the number of hundreds.

The above conditions force some of the Indian allotted land out of any profitable use whatsoever, and they force nearly all of it into the condition of land rented to whites, and rented under conditions disadvantageous to the Indians. The denial of financial credit to Indians is, of course, an added influence.

The Indians are practically compelled to become absentee landlords with petty and fast-inflating estates, living upon the always diminishing pittance of lease money.

And here they become apparent the administrative impossibility created by the allotment system.

ALLOTMENT COSTS THE GOVERNMENT MILLIONS IN BARREN EXPENDITURES THAT CANNOT SAVE THE INDIAN LANDS OR CAPITAL, WHILE ENLIGHTENING AND RUINING THE INDIANS.

The Indian Service is compelled to be a real estate agent in behalf of the living allottees, and in behalf of the more numerous heirs of deceased allottees. As such

<sup>22</sup> See Hearings, Committee on Ind. Aff., 73d Cong., 2d sess., on H. R. 7903, pp. 15-18.

<sup>23</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 26 U. S. C. 481, et seq.

real estate agent, selling and leasing the hundreds of thousands of parcels of land and its unequalled quantities of parcels, and distributing the results (sometimes to more than a hundred heirs of one parcel, and again to an individual heir with an equity in a hundred parcels), the Indian Service is forced to expend millions of dollars a year. The expenditure does not and cannot serve the land, or conserve the capital accruing from land sales or from rentals.

The operation gets nowhere at all, under the existing system of law it cannot get anywhere, it creates between the Indians and Government a relationship based on abjectness, full of contempt and despair, it keeps the Indians' own minds focused upon petty and dwindling equities which inexorably vanish to nothing at all.

For the Indians, the situation is, necessarily one of frustration, of impotent discontent. They are forced into the status of landless slaves, yet it is impossible for them to control their own estates, and the estates are insufficient to yield a decent living, and the yield diminishes year by year, and finally stops altogether.

It is difficult to imagine any other system which with equal effectiveness, would paralyze the Indian while impoverishing him, and sicken and kill his soul while plunging him into a hopeless situation, abandoning him to the final status of a pauper dependent upon the States and counties.

The Indian Bureau's costs must rise, as the allotted lands pass to the leasing class. The multiplication of individual paternalistic actions by the Indian Service must grow as the complications of ownership grow with each year. Such is the record, and such it will be, unless the Government, in impudence or despair, shall summarily reject from a hopeless situation, abandoning the victims of its allotment system. The alternative will be to apply a continued remedy is proposed by the present bill.

The bill breaks this hopeless impasse. For a number of years, it has been clearly recognized within the Indian Service that conditions must continue to grow worse, regardless of attempted administrative reforms, unless the allotment situation in its totality be modified.

## SECTION 2. RIGHT TO RECEIVE ALLOTMENT

Section 1 of the Act of June 18, 1884<sup>11</sup> provides

That hereafter no land of any Indian reservation, created or set apart by treaty or agreement with the Indians, Act, or Congress, Executive order, purchase, or otherwise, shall be allotted in severalty to any Indian.

Its obvious purpose is to preserve in communal ownership all tribal lands of Indian reservations. It accomplishes that purpose by the declaration that no such lands shall be allotted. To that extent, the act is incompatible with and, therefore, supplants all prior laws, both general and special, purporting to authorize allotments in severalty in any form on any reservation to which the act applies, and thus notwithstanding the fact that the act contains no general repeal provision.<sup>12</sup>

The act extends to and binds all Indians under the jurisdiction of the Federal Government save those tribes expressly excluded by section 13 and those reservations which, in the exercise of the privilege conferred by section 18, vote against its application.

Since allotments have been discontinued under the mandate of this statute, and under a policy proceeding this enactment

And for a number of years the directions of practicable modification have become increasingly clear, both within the Indian Service and among observers outside it. The indicated solution has been stated with clarity, and more than once, in debates on the Senate floor and in reports by the Indian Institution Committee of the Senate. The preceding administration recognized the impasse which had been reached under the allotment system, but did not put forward legislation to break it the impasse.

The present bill, in those aspects which affect most truly emergency items, is a bill to correct the allotment system, to revive the remaining lands, enabling the Indians to get their lands into the shape, and providing the machinery and authority for restoring, to those Indians already rendered landless, usable lands, if they will demonstrate their wish to possess, and use the restored lands.

## E TERMINATION OF THE ALLOTMENT SYSTEM

The allotment system involved four critical steps

1. The allotting of tribal lands.
2. The termination of fixed periods or periods of restricted alienability, after a fixed term of years.
3. The termination of such restrictions prior to the expiration of the statutory period by administrative action.
4. The alienation of allotted lands prior to the termination of such periods.

The Act of June 18, 1884, stopped the continuance of the allotment system at points 3 and 2<sup>13</sup> and placed severe limitations on the operation of the system at points 8 and 4.<sup>14</sup>

The operation of the Act of June 18, 1884, upon the statutory fabric of the allotment system at each of these points is analyzed in the following pages.

<sup>11</sup> See Act of June 18, 1884, sec. 1 and 2, 48 Stat. 884, 25 U. S. C. 461-462.

<sup>12</sup> See Act of June 18, 1884, sec. 4 and 5, 48 Stat. 884, 885, 25 U. S. C. 464-467.

which applies even to tribes not under the act, a detailed study of the allotment statutes will not be attempted. However, inasmuch as allotments may be made on reservations which have rejected the Wheeler Howard Act until the surplus lands have been completely disposed of or until prohibited by Congress,<sup>15</sup> and individual rights of Indians in real property have vested under the allotment statutes, it may be useful to offer a short summary of the provisions and legal effect of such statutes.

Section 1 of the General Allotment Act of February 8, 1887,<sup>16</sup> later amended by general acts of February 28, 1891,<sup>17</sup> and of June 25, 1910,<sup>18</sup> and now embodied in section 331 of title 25 of the United States Code authorized the President of the United States to allot land "in severalty to Indians living on a reservation."

<sup>13</sup> Op. Sol. I. D., M 20250, May 31, 1939. The Act of June 15, 1935, 49 Stat. 878, provided that, all laws affecting any Indian reservation which voted to exclude itself from the application of the Indian Reorganization Act shall be deemed to have been continuously effective as to such reservation notwithstanding the passage of that act. And on the power of the Secretary over individual lands, see Chapter 5, sec. 11.

<sup>14</sup> 48 Stat. 888.

<sup>15</sup> 25 Stat. 794.

<sup>16</sup> 48 Stat. 881, sec. 17, 48 Stat. 856, 859, 25 U. S. C. 381.

<sup>17</sup> Section 385 of title 25 of the Code, derived from the Act of February 14, 1903, 32 Stat. 79, 42 Stat. 1244, makes the provisions of sec. 381-384, inclusive, and 380 and 381 heretofore discussed (and sec. 348-350, inclusive, and 381 to be discussed subsequently) applicable to "all lands heretofore purchased or which may be purchased by authority of Congress for the use or benefit of any individual Indian on band or tribe of Indians."

<sup>18</sup> 48 Stat. 884, 25 U. S. C. 461.

<sup>19</sup> Where a reservation has by vote under the act, land may not thereafter be allotted under a prior statute. Op. Sol. I. D., M 27770, May 22, 1945. But Congress acquiesced clearly by a proper selection which was approved prior to the passage of the act, it has been ruled that the Secretary may issue a patent, and where lands had been selected but not approved before the passage of the act they could be approved and patented to the allottee, the approval not requiring the exercise of discretion. Op. Sol. I. D., M 28360, July 17, 1945, 55 I. D. 285.



It has been held that a tribal Indian living apart from the tribe and off the reservation is not entitled to an allotment on the reservation.<sup>1</sup> This does not mean, of course, that the Indian has had to be on the reservation the instant the Allotment Act was passed.<sup>2</sup>

An Indian may not have allotments from two different tribes,<sup>3</sup> nor can an allotment under his English name and thereafter claim one under an Indian name.<sup>4</sup>

Although the allotment rolls have been deemed conclusive and final evidence of the right of any Indians of a reservation to an allotment,<sup>5</sup> it has been held that they may be changed by the Secretary to correct mistakes.<sup>6</sup>

## B SELECTION OF ALLOTMENT

Section 332<sup>7</sup> of title 25 of the United States Code deals with the selection of allotments and provides that the Indians are to do the selecting, the heads of families selecting for their minor children, and the Indian agent is to make the selection for each orphan. The selections are to be made in such manner as to include the improvements of the Indian making the selection. The Supreme Court has upheld the validity of this clause giving a preferential right to certain lands to Indians who had occupied them and had made improvements thereon, prior to the passage of the Allotment Act affecting the lands of his tribe.<sup>8</sup>

Congress also provided that, if an Indian failed to make his selection within two years after the President authorized an allotment on a particular reservation, the Secretary of the Interior could direct the agent or such other or special agent, if there were no agent, to make the selection. The Supreme Court has sustained the power of the Dawes Commission to place members of the Creek Nation on the allotment roll, upon their refusal to select allotments.<sup>9</sup>

The term "agent," used with reference to selection of allotments by Indians, as defined by the Cherokee Allotment Agreement<sup>10</sup> and the Choctaw-Chickasaw Supplemental Agreement,<sup>11</sup> means a formal application for a particular tract or tracts of land in the land office established by the commission for the particular tribe or nation.<sup>12</sup>

It has been held that section 892 contemplates a selection by a living Indian only. Thus the death of a Chippewa Indian before making a selection of an allotment under the Nelson Act terminated his right to an allotment.<sup>13</sup> Where a right to the allotment becomes equitably vested in the allottee,<sup>14</sup> the act of

the allotting commissioners in thereafter wrongfully allotting the land to another does not operate to cut off the heirs of the person originally entitled to the allotment.<sup>15</sup>

## C APPROVAL OF ALLOTMENT

Section 333<sup>16</sup> provides that after the filing of the selection the allotments shall be made by special allotting agents or by the agents or superintendents in charge of the reservations on which the allotments are directed to be made.<sup>17</sup>

After an allotment has been approved, the allottee is entitled to have the land patented to him,<sup>18</sup> even after the passage of the Wheeler Howard Act which provided that "no land shall be allotted \* \* \* to any Indian."<sup>19</sup>

## D CANCELLATION

As might be expected, the whole-line allotment of lands in severalty which had been made by Indian administration for many years resulted in numerous instances in injustice to the allottee.<sup>20</sup> This injustice took the form very often of the allotment of a parcel of land which was unsuitable for any purpose to which the allottee could reasonably be expected to put it. To remedy in part this situation, Congress in 1909<sup>21</sup> provided for the can-

cel of clerical error, it was held that the Indians were entitled to the approval and patenting of their selections, even after the passage of the act which provided that "no land \* \* \* shall be allotted \* \* \* to any Indian." Act of June 18, 1914, 48 Stat. 884. *Put of Lemmon v. United States*, 25 F. 2d 518 (C. C. A. 9, 1920), cert. den. 254 U. S. 740 where the approval was of a discretionary nature, *United States v. West v. Hirschbeck*, 286 U. S. 80 (1907), 81 Minn. 247, 100 N. W. 237 (D. C. Supp. 237, (D. C. 5, 1907)). *Smith v. Bonifer*, 142 Fed. 880 (C. C. Ore. 1904).

<sup>22</sup> 27 U. S. 818 derived from Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 958 and Act of June 28, 1900, 36 Stat. 855, 858.

<sup>23</sup> See 8 of Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 988, provided only for agents and special agents fulfilling this duty, but sec. 9 of the Act of June 25, 1910, 46 Stat. 855-858 provided for the inclusion of superintendents as performers of this function.

<sup>24</sup> 25 U. S. 858, derived from the Appropriation Act of April 4, 1910, sec. 1, 36 Stat. 209, 270, required the Secretary of the Interior to transmit annual reports to Congress of the cost of survey and allotment work on Indian reservations generally. This section was repealed by the Act of May 29, 1928, sec. 61, 45 Stat. 936.

<sup>25</sup> The allottee may bring a mandamus to obtain the patent. See *Pachon v. Nichols, Christian Lumber Co.*, 125 Minn. 404, 148 N. W. 288, 290 (1914). But when an allotment has not been approved, approval and issuance of patent cannot be compelled by mandamus. *United States ex rel. West v. Hirschbeck*, 286 U. S. 80 (1907), 81 Minn. 247, 100 N. W. 237, (D. C. Supp. 237, (D. C. 5, 1907)). On when mandamus will issue see Chapter 5, sec. 133.

<sup>26</sup> Op. Sol. I. D. M. 2808, July 17, 1905, 55 I. D. 295.

<sup>27</sup> Section 843 of title 25 of the U. S. Code provides:

"In all cases where it shall appear that a double allotment of land has been wrongfully or unconsciously made by the Secretary of the Interior to any Indian by an assumed name or otherwise, or where a mistake has been made in the description of the land allotted in any patent and Secretary is authorized and directed, during the time that the United States may hold the title to the land in trust for any such Indian, and for which a conditional patent may have been issued, to rectify and correct such mistake in the same manner as if the mistake had been made by the Secretary, and to issue a new patent in his opinion the same ought to be considered for error in the issue thereof. \* \* \*

"Act of March 8, 1909, 35 Stat. 751, 754.

From time to time Congress has enacted sundry statutes permitting Indians to surrender the lands allotted to them and select other lands in lieu thereof. See Act of October 19, 1888, 25 Stat. 611, 612, 25 U. S. 889, January 26, 1893, 28 Stat. 621, 25 U. S. 844, April 24, 1901, 31 Stat. 207, 25 U. S. 848, March 3, 1905, 33 Stat. 751, 754, 25 U. S. 844. Sec. 2 of the Act of 1888, *supra*, which has been incorporated in sec. 850 of 25 U. S. C., reads:

"The Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized, in his discretion, and whenever for good and sufficient reason he shall consider it to be for the best interest of the Indians, in making allotments under the statute aforesaid, to permit any Indian to whom a patent has been issued for land on the reservation to which such Indian belongs under treaty or existing law, to transmit such patent with formal surrender by such Indian to the United States of all his or her right title and interest

<sup>1</sup> *Lemmon v. United States*, 15 F. 2d 518 (C. C. A. 9, 1920), cert. den. 278 U. S. 749. But *Yanna v. United States*, 245 Fed. 411 (C. C. A. 8, 1917), under Act of June 7, 1897, c. 9, 30 Stat. 62, 30, 25 U. S. 184.

<sup>2</sup> *Thygesen v. United States*, 229 U. S. 215, 227 (1912). And see *Paw Bank v. United States*, 229 U. S. 215, 227 (1912).

<sup>3</sup> *Josephine Talley et al. v. U. S.*, 19 L. D. 349 (1894).

<sup>4</sup> *Tupin v. Twin State Oil Co.*, 48 F. 2d 500 (C. C. A. 10, 1931).

<sup>5</sup> See Act of March 8, 1909, 35 Stat. 755 (Fort Belknap Reservation), Op. Sol. I. D. M. 7600 June 9, 1902. See also Chapter 5, sec. 13.

<sup>6</sup> Op. Sol. I. D. M. 7380 June 9, 1902. See also Chapter 5, sec. 13.

<sup>7</sup> This section was derived from sec. 2 of the General Allotment Act. On selection of allotment for minors and incompetents, see Chapter 5, sec. 8A.

<sup>8</sup> *U. S. v. Harney v. Martin*, 242 U. S. 380 (1917). See also *Smith v. Bonifer*, 154 Fed. 888 (C. C. Ore. 1907), aff'd sub nom. *Bonifer v. Smith*, 160 Fed. 846 (C. C. A. 9, 1908).

<sup>9</sup> *United States v. Whitford*, 244 U. S. 113 (1917). See Chapter 5, sec. 6 and 18.

<sup>10</sup> Act of March 1, 1901, 31 Stat. 851.

<sup>11</sup> Act of June 20, 1902, 32 Stat. 800.

<sup>12</sup> See *Willet v. Dwyer*, 110 Okla. 241, 287 Pac. 870 (1925).

<sup>13</sup> *La Roque v. United States*, 280 U. S. 82 (1915). See also Chapter 9, sec. 3, *Thygesen v. United States*, 280 Fed. 880 (C. C. A. 5, 1910).

<sup>14</sup> See Op. Sol. I. D. M. 2808, July 17, 1905, 55 I. D. 295. Where Indians had made selections prior to the passage of the Wheeler Howard Act and approval was not of a discretionary nature but was lacking because

cession of an allotment of unsuitable land and the exchange thereof of other land. This Act has been incorporated in section 344 of title 25 of the United States Code.<sup>1</sup> Its provisions are

If any Indian of a tribe whose surplus lands have been ceded or opened to disposal has received an allotment embracing lands unsuitable for allotment purposes, such allotment may be canceled and other appropriated, unoccupied, and unsurveyed land of equal area, within the ceded portions of the reservation upon which such Indian belongs, allotted to him upon the same terms and with the same restrictions as the original allotment, and lands described in any such canceled allotment shall be disposed of as other surplus lands of such reservation. This provision shall not apply to the lands formerly comprising Indian Territory. The Secretary of the Interior is authorized to prescribe rules and regulations to carry this law into effect.

In 1927 Congress also provided for the cancellation of fee patents issued without the consent of the Indian.<sup>2</sup>

in the land conveyed (which people) individual thereon and to cancel such unconsented patent. *Provided* That the Indian who surrendering the same shall make a selection in lieu thereof of other land and reserve patent thereon, and the provisions of the act of February eighth (thirteen hundred and eighty seven)

"On the question of the new entry for notice, and in opportunity to be heard, see *Pawnee v. Fortes Smith*, 228 U. S. 215 (1912)."  
 \* Act of February 26, 1927, c. 213, 45 Stat. 1217, 25 U. S. C. 462.  
 Partial cancellation was also provided for. Act of February 26, 1927, c. 213, sec. 2, 44 Stat. 1217 as amended February 21, 1931, c. 271, 46 Stat. 1203, 25 U. S. C. 462b. For an analysis of the power of the Secretary to cancel a fee patent issued without request from the Indian see *United States Op. Sol. I. D. M. 28297*, August 1, 1930. See Chapter 2, sec. 2B, Chapter 18, sec. 2B.

### SECTION 3. POSSESSORY RIGHTS IN ALLOTTED LANDS

An allottee ordinarily acquires by virtue of his allotment full possessory right with respect to the improvements and the timber upon his allotment as well as the minerals beneath it. Occasionally, by the term of special allotment acts, the minerals are reserved to the tribe in which event the allottee acquires at best a right to share in the income flowing therefrom.<sup>3</sup> His right of ownership in timber is limited only by the statutory restriction on alienation.<sup>4</sup> These restrictions upon alienation are elsewhere discussed.<sup>5</sup> When the allottee acquires his patent in fee, however, his right of use and enjoyment becomes an absolute right of ownership.

The allottee's right to water is recognized by the General Allotment Act,<sup>6</sup> section 7 of which provides

That in cases where the use of water for irrigation is necessary to render the lands within any Indian reservation available for agricultural purposes, the Secretary of the Interior be, and he is hereby, authorized to prescribe such rules and regulations as he may deem necessary to secure a just and equal distribution thereof among the Indians residing upon any such reservations, and no other appropriation or grant of water by any riparian proprietor shall be authorized or permitted to the damage of any other riparian proprietor.

The Supreme Court in *United States v. Powers*<sup>7</sup> declared that under the doctrine of the *Winters* case<sup>8</sup> waters are reserved for the equal benefit of tribal members and that the Secretary of the

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 14, p. 288.

<sup>2</sup> See sec. 4 of this chapter.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>4</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 388, 25 U. S. C. 381. Also see Chapter 15, sec. 7.

<sup>5</sup> 305 U. S. 327, 585-593 (1930).

<sup>6</sup> *Winters v. United States*, 207 U. S. 764 (1908). For a further discussion of this case in connection with tribal water rights, see Chapter 15, sec. 16.

"... The Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized, in his discretion, to cancel any patent in fee simple issued to an Indian allottee or to his heirs, before the end of the period of trust described in the original or trust patent issued to such allottee, or before the expiration of any extension of such period of trust by the President, where such patent in fee simple was issued without the consent of an application therefor by the allottee or by his heirs. *Provided* That the patent be not mortgaged or sold any part of the land described in such patent. *Provided also* That upon cancellation of such patent in fee simple the land shall have the same status as though such fee patent had never been issued.

### E SURRENDER

Section 408, title 25, of the United States Code<sup>9</sup> provides

In any case where an Indian has an allotment of land, or any right, title, or interest in such an allotment, the Secretary of the Interior, in his discretion, may permit such Indian to surrender such allotment, or any right, title, or interest therein, by such formal relinquishment as may be prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior, for the benefit of any of his or her children to whom no allotment of land shall have been made, and thereupon the Secretary of the Interior shall cause the estate so relinquished to be allotted to such child or children subject to all conditions which attached to it before such relinquishment.

"Act of June 25, 1910, sec. 3, 36 Stat. 835, 550. For regulations regarding relinquishment of lands to unallotted Indian children, see 27 U. S. F. 621-622.

Interior is without power affirmatively to authorize unjust and unequal distribution of water. It further declared that when allotments of land were duly made for exclusive use and thereafter conveyed in fee, the right to use some portion of tribal waters essential to cultivation passed to the owner of the allotted land, including both the allottees and those who took from them by conveyance or by purchase of land of deceased allottees at Government sales.

The *Powers* case compels the view that the right to use water is a right appurtenant to the land within the reservation, and that unless excluded it passes to each grantee in subsequent conveyances of allotted land.<sup>10</sup>

In accordance with the doctrine that the United States has exclusive jurisdiction over reservation lands unless it has specified that state statutes shall be controlling, it has been held<sup>11</sup> that an allottee cannot under the state laws relating to the appropriation of water acquire any right whatsoever in waters reserved to the tribe.

"In *Anderson v. Spear Morgan Livestock Co.* 70 F. 2d 637 (1935) the court had occasion to restate the doctrine of the *Powers* case. It said

"... The purpose of this statute is to provide for the distribution of the right to use the water to the individual Indians. *United States v. Fortes Smith*, 228 U. S. 215 (1912). The right to use the water prior to a distribution of it by the Secretary of the Interior may be said to be inchoate in the sense that the precise amount or extent of the right assigned to an individual allottee would be undetermined but the right is vested in so far as the existence of the right to use the water, to which the government has that right is appurtenant to the land upon which it is to be used by the allottee. When the allottee becomes owner of fee simple title after the removal of the restrictions of the trust patent, then a conveyance of the land in the absence of a contrary intention, would operate to give to the grantee the use of the water as an appurtenance. *United States v. Powers*, *supra* (P. 690).

"*United States v. McIntire*, 101 F. 2d 600 (C. C. A. 9, 1939), rev'd 28 F. Supp. 816 (D. C. D. Mont. 1937).

Likewise, whose statutory attempts have been made to indicate water rights of Indians on certain reservations to the jurisdiction of particular states by requiring that state statutes be complied with in securing water rights for the irrigation of Indian land,<sup>10</sup> it has been held "that since the statute contained no specific grant of the reserved waters to the state it could not be construed as the intent of Congress to take from the Indians a vested right and provide in lieu thereof only a means for requiring an inferior and secondary right."

The water right guaranteed in allottee of Indian land has sometimes been defined in treaty or agreement.<sup>11</sup> In *United States*

*v. Tibbitts*,<sup>12</sup> involving such an agreement, it was held that a purchaser from the allottee acquires a water right for the actual acreage under irrigation at the time title passes from the Indians, and for such additional acreage as can be placed under irrigation within a reasonable time.

On the other hand, a purchaser from an allottee is without right to appropriate to his private use water from a creek, most of which comes primarily from a Government irrigation system constructed after he acquired title to the land, which uses the creek bed for a distance is a distance to reach customers below.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>10</sup> 27 F. 2d 809 (D. C. E. D. Idaho 1928).

<sup>11</sup> *United States v. Perkins*, 18 F. 2d 642 (D. C. Wyo. 1926). For a holding that one who purchases land in what was formerly an Indian reservation from the United States may not appropriate water for the irrigation of his land from an irrigation ditch, which the United States had constructed for the benefit of Indian allottees, see *United States v. Morrison*, 203 Fed. 804 (C. C. Colo. 1901).

<sup>12</sup> Act of June 21, 1900, 31 Stat. 425-475 (Utah); *United States v. Perkins*, 18 F. 2d 642 (D. C. Wyo. 1926).

<sup>13</sup> *United States v. Perkins*, 18 F. 2d 642 (D. C. Wyo. 1926).  
<sup>14</sup> Act of June 6, 1900, with the Fort Hall Indians, 31 Stat. 672. For a statute guaranteeing a similar right, see Act of May 18, 1916, 39 Stat. 121, 130.

## SECTION 4 ALIENATION OF ALLOTTED LANDS

Since tribal lands are generally nonalienable without the consent of the Federal Government it was natural that Congress should continue federal control of land alienation when tribal land passed into the hands of individual Indians. The same considerations that lay behind the former restriction—the desire to protect the Indian against sharp practices leading to Indian landlessness, the desire to safeguard the certainty of titles, and the urge to continue an important basis of governmental activity—operated in the case of allotted lands. The first of these motives is usually stressed in the opinions. Typical of the cases is the discussion by the Court of Appeals in *Beck v. Floumay Live Stock & Real Estate Co.*<sup>15</sup>

"... What was the purpose of imposing a restriction upon the Indian's power of conveyance? Title passed to him by the patent, and but for the restriction he would have had the full power of alienation the same as any holder of a fee simple title. The restriction was placed upon his alienation in order that he should not be wronged in any sale he might desire to make, that the consideration should be ample, that he should in fact receive it, and that the conveyance should be subject to no unreasonable conditions or qualifications. It was not to prevent a sale and conveyance, but only to guard against imposition thereon. When the Secretary approved the conveyance it was a determination that the purposes for which the restriction was imposed had been fully satisfied, that the consideration was ample, that the Indian grantor had received it, and that there were no unreasonable stipulations attending the transaction. All this being accomplished, justice requires that the conveyance should be upheld, and to that end the doctrine of relation attaches the approval to the conveyance and makes it operative as of the date of the latter."

The opinion in *Lykins v. McGrath*<sup>16</sup> throws added light upon this basic policy.

"... What was the purpose of imposing a restriction upon the Indian's power of conveyance? Title passed to him by the patent, and but for the restriction he would have had the full power of alienation the same as any holder of a fee simple title. The restriction was placed upon his alienation in order that he should not be wronged in any sale he might desire to make, that the consideration should be ample, that he should in fact receive it, and that the conveyance should be subject to no unreasonable conditions or qualifications. It was not to prevent a sale and conveyance, but only to guard against imposition thereon. When the Secretary approved the conveyance it was a determination that the purposes for which the restriction was imposed had been fully satisfied, that the consideration was ample, that the Indian grantor had received it, and that there were no unreasonable stipulations attending the transaction. All this being accomplished, justice requires that the conveyance should be upheld, and to that end the doctrine of relation attaches the approval to the conveyance and makes it operative as of the date of the latter."

The broad power of Congress to effectuate this policy and the extent to which the enforcement and relaxation of restraints upon alienation have been entrusted to the Secretary of the Interior have been discussed in Chapter 5.<sup>17</sup>

### A LAND<sup>18</sup>

The policy of restricting alienation finds expression in provisions of allotment acts forbidding alienation of lands during a fixed period of years without the consent of some administrative officer, generally the Secretary of the Interior. The provision contained in section 5 of the General Allotment Act<sup>19</sup> declares

"... And if any conveyance shall be made of the lands set apart and allotted as herein provided, or any contract made touching the same, before the expiration of the time above mentioned, such conveyance or contract shall be absolutely null and void."

<sup>15</sup> 254 U. S. 160, 171-172 (1920).

<sup>16</sup> See notes 9C and 11.

<sup>17</sup> For regulations relating to sale of allotted lands, exclusive of Five Civilized Tribes lands, see 26 C. F. R. 241.9-241.38.

<sup>18</sup> 24 Stat. 888, 889, 26 U. S. C. § 448, amended in other particulars by Act of March 8, 1901, 31 Stat. 1083, 1085. Subsequent statutes authorizing alienation of lands with departmental approval are noted in Chapter 5, see 113.

<sup>19</sup> 49 Fed. 80 (C. C. A. 8, 1894), app. dismissed 168 U. S. 680.



We have elsewhere noted the various forms in which lesions on alienation are embodied, not only the "trust patent" and the "restricted fee."<sup>12</sup>

Prohibitions against alienation have been broadly interpreted in the light of the policy of Congress to prevent whites from taking advantage of the Indians.<sup>13</sup> This is shown by the interpretation of the term "conveyance" by the Supreme Court of Oklahoma in the case of *Potter v. Vernon*.<sup>14</sup>

Under the general rule that all instruments affecting real estate are included under the word "conveyance" are included the following: A mortgage of an equitable interest (*Sullivan v. Con Exchange Bank*, 154 App. Div. 292, 139 N. Y. S. 97), a leasehold (*Leiback, etc., v. Dagle Brewing Co. v. Kelly* 83 N. Y. Eq. 401, 404, 51 A. 794), of personal property (*Patterson v. Jantz*, 89 Ill. 388, 200, S. 80 77) an agreement to execute a mortgage (*In re Wright's Mortg. Trust*, 1 R. 16 34, 41, 46), an assignment for the benefit of creditors (*Prouty v. Clark*, 73 Iowa, 55, 36 94 N. W. 614), an assignment of a chose in action (*Wilson v. Bredt*, 2 Herd (Tenn.) 510), the satisfaction of a mortgage (*Fox v. Duffan*, 111 Minn. 220, 126 N. W. 830), an instrument in the nature of a trust deed, even without a well acknowledged, or witness (*White v. Fitzgerald*, 19 Wis. 480), a release, as an instrument, by which the title to real estate might be affected in law or equity (*Palmox v. Bates*, 22 Minn. 632) a release of a mortgage (*Baker v. Thomas*, 61 Ill. 17, 15 N. Y. S. 499), or part of land covered by a mortgage (*McClouth v. Boudy*, 22 Minn. 7, 15 N. W. 830).

It is true that under our statute a mortgage of real estate is to be regarded as a lien only, but the lands in question are Indian lands, with reference to which the federal government has dealt in a peculiar manner, due to peculiar conditions. Under our (34th) Law, our citizens have the right to transact without let or hindrance, all or part of their real property, but, with respect to its awards, the Indians, the government has always dealt exclusively with the trustee of their lands, not only placing restrictions upon the lands themselves, but upon those who owned them. In this case the legality of the transfer is to be determined by interpretation of the act of Congress, and the meaning of this act is ascertained by discovering, not what was in the minds of the lawmakers of Oklahoma in passing the several statutes with reference to conveyances and transfers, but what was in the mind of Congress when it passed the Act of May 27, 1908, and its use of the word "conveyance" in said act. We must assume that in an act of such sweeping proportions it was intended by Congress to deal finally and comprehensively with the subject in hand. Section 8 of the act uses very general terms.

"That any attempted alienation or incumbrance by deed, mortgage, contract to sell, power of attorney, or other instrument or method of incumbering real estate, made before or after the approval of this act, which affects the title of the land allotted to allottees of the Five Civilized Tribes . . . shall be absolutely null and void." 35 Stat. 818

<sup>12</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 113. The inability of incompetent Indians to alienate land has been discussed in Chapter 8, sec. 83(1).

<sup>13</sup> The effect of bankruptcy of an allottee is discussed in Chapter 8, sec. 70.

<sup>14</sup> A deed is not executed until delivered, hence until the Secretary has removed the restrictions upon alienation of allotted lands effective upon the executing of a deed by an allottee, a deed signed by the allottee and given to an Indian superintendent for transmission to a purchaser does not pass title and is subject to cancellation by the Secretary. Since the execution of a deed had not been completed by delivery. *United States v. Lane*, 258 Fed. 520 (App. D. C. 1919).

An order of the Secretary of the Interior approving an Indian agent's recommendation that restrictions on alienation be removed from an allotment to be effective thirty days from date would become effective on the thirtieth day after its date and the allottee is enabled to make a valid conveyance on that date. *Lanham v. McKee*, 244 U. S. 582 (1917).

Also see *Taylor v. Brown* 147 U. S. 540 (1895), *Nixon v. Woodcock*, 64 Okla. 86, 166 Pac. 188 (1917).

<sup>15</sup> 129 Okla. 267, 264 Pac. 611 (1928).

Section 9 seems to be just as comprehensive in the following words:

"That the death of any allottee of the Five Civilized Tribes shall operate to remove all restrictions upon the alienation of said allottee's land. *Provided* That no conveyance of any interest of any full blood Indian held in such land shall be valid unless approved by the court having jurisdiction of the settlement of the estate of said deceased allottee." 35 Stat. 315.

It appears to us that the words "provided that no conveyance of any interest of any full blood Indian held in such land" could hardly be more comprehensive. We think that the words "conveyance of any interest" is just as comprehensive and perhaps more so than the word "alienation," and yet a valid mortgage is often the first step in a full alienation of land and even a foreclosure has reference back to the date of the mortgage and must follow the terms thereof.

To give too limited a meaning to the word "conveyance" and yet a comprehensive meaning to the word "alienation" in the act, the result would be illogical, for it would require, for the making of a deed by the full blood Indian held in, an approval of the county court, but for the execution of a mortgage upon his land, which might easily be effective to transfer his title, no such approval was necessary. This could not have been in the mind of Congress. It is not to be supposed that Congress made tentatively or through oversight failed to take into consideration that the Indian might wish to mortgage his land, for the mortgage of real estate is almost as old as our system of title so that in our judgment, if Congress had entirely overlooked this contingency, or they meant the words "conveyance of any interest" should include every written instrument which might affect the title. It has been, and properly so we think, the design of the government to rapidly as they could with safety to permit the Indians to deal with and have charge of their property, not only for the benefit of the community, but for the distinct benefit of the Indians, by placing responsibility upon them, and we interpret and understand this act of Congress as evidencing that disposition of the government (P. 614).

The courts have also considered the remedial nature of this legislation in construing the extent of its coverage. In holding that homesteads were within the purview of the General Allotment Act, Chief Justice Taft said:<sup>16</sup>

"We find that the Indian Homestead Act of July 4, 1884, and the General Allotment Act of February 8, 1887, with its various amendments, constitute part of a single system evidencing a continuous purpose on the part of the Congress. The statutes are *in pari materia*, and must be so construed. It cannot be supposed that Congress in any part of this legislation, all of which is directed toward the benefit and protection of the Indians, as such, intended to exclude from the beneficent policy which each act evidences, an Indian claiming under the homestead act, even though the statute uses the term 'allottee.' It there were any doubt on the question, the silence of Congress in the face of the long continued practice of the Department of the Interior in constraining statutes which refer only to Indian 'allottees,' or Indian 'allotments,' as applicable also to Indians claiming under the homestead laws, must be considered as 'equivalent to consent to continue the practice until the power was revoked by some subsequent action by Congress.' *United States v. McLeod Oil Co.*, 236 U. S. 459, 481. (2p. 106-107).

## B. TIMBER

Section 406 of title 25 of the United States Code provides:<sup>17</sup>

"The timber on any Indian allotment held under a trust or trust patent containing restrictions on alienation may be sold by the allottee, with the consent of the Secretary of the Interior, and the proceeds thereof shall be paid to

<sup>16</sup> *United States v. Jackson* 290 U. S. 184 (1930), also see *Wigman v. Gault*, 193 U. S. 87, 88 (1903).

<sup>17</sup> Derived from Act of June 25, 1910, sec. 8, 36 Stat. 895, 897. For regulations regarding timber, see 26 C. F. R. 61.1-61.29.

the allottee or disposed of for his benefit under regulations to be prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior.

The rights of an allottee to sell timber on his allotment without administrative approval had been determined by the Supreme Court a few years before the enactment of this provision. The Court in the first case held that the restriction on alienation did not preclude a sale by the allottee of timber of land which was capable of cultivation after the cutting of the timber. The Court said:

" \* \* \* It hardly needs to be said that the allotments were intended to be of some use and benefit to the Indians. And, it will be observed, that on that use there is no restraint whatever. A restraint, however, is deduced from the provision against alienation, the supervision to which, it is asserted, the Indians are subject and the character of their title. It is concluded that the right of the Indians is that of occupation only, and that the measure of power over the timber on their allotments is expressed in *United States v. Cook*, 19 Wall 702. We do not regard that case as controlling. The nature and composition of the count was determined by the limited right which the Indians had in the lands from which the timber that in controversy was cut.

Certain parties of the Osage Indians ceded to the United States all the lands set apart to them, except a tract containing one hundred and one sections and one-half or in all about 67,000 acres which they reserved to themselves, to be held as other Indian lands are held. Some of the lands were held in severalty by individuals or by the tribe with the consent of the tribe, but the timber was cut by a small number of the tribe from a part of the reservation not occupied in severalty. It was held, citing *Johnson v. McIntosh*, 8 Wheat 511, that the right of the Indians in the land from which the logs were taken was that of occupancy only. Necessary to the timber when cut "became the property of the United States absolutely, discharged of any rights of the Indians therein." It was hence concluded "the cutting was a sale, and in accordance with well settled principles, the owner of the fee may seize the timber cut, except if he occupies or proceeds in force for its conversion." If such were the title in the case at law, such would be the conclusion. But such is not the title. We need not, however, exactly define it. It is certainly more than a right of mere occupancy. The restraint upon alienation must not be exaggerated. It does not of itself deprive the right below a fee simple. *Schily v. Clark*, 118 U S 250. The title is held by the United States, it is true, but it is held "in trust for individuals and then heirs to whom the same were allotted." The considerations, which determined the decision in *United States v. Cook* do not exist. The land is not the land of the United States, and the timber when cut did not become the property of the United States. And we cannot extend the restraint upon the alienation of the land to a restraint upon the sale of the timber, consistently with a proper and beneficial use of the land by the Indians, a use which can in no way affect any interest of the United States. It was recognized in *United States v. Clark* that "in theory, at least," that land might be "better and more valuable with the timber off than with it on." Indeed, it may be said that valuable land is of no use until the timber is off, and it was of arable land that the treaty contemplated the allotments would be made. We encounter difficulties and baffling inquiries when we concede a cutting for clearing the land for cultivation, and deny it for other purpose. At what time shall we date the preparation for cultivation and make the right to sell the timber depend? Must the axe immediately precede the plow and do no more than keep out of its way? And if that close relation be not always maintained, may the purpose of an allottee be questioned and referred to some advantage other than the cultivation of the land, and his title or that of his vendee to the timber be denied? Nor does the argument which makes the occupation of the land a test of the title to the timber seem to us more adequate to justify the qualification of the Indians' rights

It is based upon the necessity of superintending the weakness of the Indians and protecting them from imposition. The argument proves too much. If the provision against alienation of the land be extended to timber cut for purposes other than the cultivation of the land it would extend to timber cut for the purpose of cultivation. What is there in the latter purpose to protect from imposition that there is not in the other? Shall we say such cut was contemplated and considered as contemplated by benefit? And what was the benefit? The allotments, as we have said, were to be of viable lands useless, may be, certainly improved by benefit to the Indians, but yet, it is insisted, that this improvement is not to be made though it have the additional inducement of providing means for the support of the Indians and their families. We are unable to assent to this view. (Pp 472-474.)

The Supreme Court held in *Starr v. Campbell* that where the allotment is all timber and none of the land the restriction upon alienation extended to timber. The Court said:

The restriction upon alienation, however, it is contended, does not extend to the timber, and *United States v. Payne Lumber Co*, 208 U S 467, is adduced in controversy of it. We do not think so. There is said by the Solicitor General, the land granted was public, and could be of no use until the timber was cut. Here the land granted is all timber land. And that the distinction is important to observe is illustrated by the allocations of the company. It is alleged that the value of the land, exclusive of the timber, is no more than \$1,000, fifteen thousand dollars worth of lumber has been cut from the land. The timber upon alienation would be reduced to small consequence if it be confined to one-sixteenth of the value of the land and fifteen-sixteenths left in the undisputed or ungranted disposition of the Indian. Such is not the legal effect of the patent. (P 734.)

## C EXCHANGE OF ALLOTTED LANDS

The Act of October 16, 1888,<sup>1</sup> authorized the Secretary of the Interior in his discretion and when deemed for the best interest of the Indians to permit any Indian to whom a patent was issued for land on a reservation to surrender such patent and authorize the Secretary to cancel such patent provided that the Indian shall make a bona fide selection of other land and receive a patent for it under the General Allotment Act. This provision was interpreted by the Circuit Court of Appeals in *United States v. Ute Indians*, as follows:

The plain language of the statute indicates that it is intended to effect a change in allotments, that is, to acquire other and different land when that is deemed for the best interest of the Indians. And that conclusion finds support in the history of the act. It originated in the

<sup>1</sup> 208 U S 527 (1908)

However an Indian allottee under the General Allotment Act may remove and sell timber standing on a piece of his allotment. The Attorney General said in 1894 (L 560 (1896))

The effect of the allotment and cancellation of trust was to place the allottee in possession of the land allotted and give him a qualified ownership therein and the extent to which the allottee, as such, is restricted is a question remaining now to be considered, most in accordance with the question submitted.

(1) And as to the timber. In an opinion of Attorney General (see land dated January 26, 1890) it was held to be wrong for an allottee to cut timber standing on his allotment for the direct purpose of selling it, by which I understand him to mean timber that is live and growing. The question before me however, namely, whether the allottee has the right to sell and remove from his allotment dead timber standing on a piece of land, is essentially different from that passed upon by me just (so), and as I have reached the conclusion that an allottee may sell and remove timber of any kind is not a sale at common law in the case of Wisconsin within the time when the State of the allottee in question is situated it is not necessary to re-examine the question whether an allottee is incapable of sale for waste. (P 762.)

In this opinion the Attorney General also held that an Indian cannot contract with a third party for the creation of mills on his allotment for the manufacture of lumber or other purposes.

On construction of the word "land" in the statute, see *Holmes v. United States*, 33 F 2d 900 (C C 10 1911).

<sup>2</sup> *United States v. Payne Lumber Co*, 208 U S 467 (1907)

<sup>3</sup> See 2, 26 Stat 611, 25 U S C 850

<sup>4</sup> 89 F 2d 551 (C C 10, 1897), cert den 802 U S 708

Department of the Interior. The Secretary wrote the President pro tempore of the Senate on June 17, 1885, transmitting a proposed draft of a resolution. The latter recalled that four members of the Elyton and Wahpeton Indians on the Lake Tri-Bele Reservation, in South Dakota, who had obtained allotments under the General Allotment Act, desired to make changes because it had been discovered that in three of these cases the lands allotted were not the lands on which the allottees lived and had made improvements, and in the fourth case the land allotted was not desirable farm land, that steps had been taken to effect relinquishment and new allotments, and that on four of the four instances it was found that no statutory authority existed for action of that kind. It was further stated that similar cases would likely arise on other reservations, and that for such reason the proposed resolution had been prepared and was transmitted with recommendation that it be passed. The proposed legislation was amended in form from a resolution to an act, and enacted into law. It thus clearly appears that the contemplated object, purpose and function of the act is to enable an Indian allottee to whom a patent has been issued to make relinquishment and secure other and different land in lieu thereof. It was never intended as a means through which an allotment of the land outlined in the bill before him could be effected. The relinquishment of the patent was not for the purpose of enabling John to acquire other and different land more suited and better adapted to his uses and purposes. It was not intended to enable Mary to relinquish the remaining 80 acres of her original allotment and acquire a new allotment for other and different land in lieu of it. The purpose was to enable John to convey 80 acres of his remaining land, to acquire a new tract for the other 80 acres which he already owned, and to receive the 6421 from Chapman to be used in making improvements on his remaining 80 acre tract, and further to enable Mary to put with the last 80 acres of her original allotment by conveying it to Chapman and at the same time to acquire 80 acres of the land originally allotted to John. A transaction of that kind falls well outside the intended scope, purpose, and function of the act permitting relinquishment and new allotments. In the absence of express authority granted by statute, the Secretary has no power to cancel a patent which has been regularly issued and delivered. See *Baltimore v. United States ex rel. Frost*, 216 U. S. 240, 20 S. Ct. 838, 54 L. Ed. 464, *United States v. Dooden* (C. C. A.) 220 F. 277. Measured by the doctrine announced in these cases, it is manifest that the Secretary was without power to cancel the patent for the purpose of accomplishing the unauthorized end. (P. 155.)

The restriction on alienation of allotted lands was held not to prohibit an allottee Indian from selling his improvements to the United States and selecting other lands so that the United States could use the lands for reclamation purposes. The Supreme Court in *Timberl v. United States*<sup>1</sup> explained:

The Circuit Court of Appeals in its decision laid emphasis upon the case of *Williams v. Post National Bank*, 216 U. S. 582, in which this court recognized the right of one Indian to surrender and relinquish to another Indian a preference right to an allotment of a tract of land. In that case it was held that one Indian might sell his improvements and holdings to another Indian for allotment, and try his own on other land which he might find vacant, or which he might, in turn, purchase from another Indian, and the Circuit Court of Appeals held that this being so, as a matter of course, and for sufficient reasons, an Indian might relinquish his rights to the United States, and that restrictions had been placed upon the power of the Indians to alienate their lands or convey their rights of possession only for their protection, and not for the purpose of restricting their right to deal with the United States or to relinquish their rights to the Government, citing *Lyle v. McGraith*, 184 U. S. 100, and *Jones v. Meeker*, 176 U. S. 1. Without questioning the correctness of this reasoning, we think the purpose of the United States to acquire any property necessary in

the reclamation project embraced such transactions as the Secretary had in this case with the Indians, and the action which he took under the authority conferred by that act wholly justified all that was done in the premises.

The effect of the Wheeler-Howard Act on the exchange of allotted lands has been the subject of many administrative rulings.

On March 22, 1935,<sup>2</sup> the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior discussed as follows the status of the act:

Section 1 of the act of June 18, 1934 (48 Stat. 894), declares that no limit of any Indian reservation created or set apart by treaty or agreement with the Indians, act of Congress, Executive Order, purchase or otherwise, shall be allotted in whole or in part to an individual. It may be argued with some force that in exchange of a tract of tribal land for an individual allotment of equal value does not come within the class of transactions which this section of the act was designed to prevent. In such case, the tribal land is not depleted. There is no new allotment as such—merely a change of an existing allotment. However, this may be, the authority to make an exchange of this sort appears to be conferred by section 4 of the act, which, so far as material reads:

"Except as herein provided no exchange of restricted Indian lands or of shares in the assets of any Indian tribe or corporation organized hereunder, shall be made or approved. *Provided*, that the Secretary of the Interior may authorize voluntarily exchanges of lands of equal value and the voluntary exchange of shares of equal value whenever such exchange, in his judgment is expedient and beneficial for or compatible with the proper conservation of Indian lands and for the benefit of cooperative organizations."

The exchange authorized to be made under the foregoing section do not appear to be confined to lands in individual ownership. The main clause refers to "restricted Indian lands" and the proviso refers to "voluntary exchanges of lands of equal value." The terms so used are broad and when given their natural meaning they embrace both tribal and individually owned lands. As I view the section, therefore, it operates to prevent the exchange of a tract of allotted land for a tract in individual ownership unless the lands are of equal value, the exchange is voluntary and is not inconsistent with the proper conservation of Indian lands.

In a subsequent memorandum, dated February 8, 1937,<sup>3</sup> the Solicitor further stated:

Section 4, as I read it, authorizes exchanges of lands of equal value. The parties to the exchange may be two individual Indians, an Indian and a white man, an Indian and an Indian tribe, or a white man and an Indian tribe. The requirement of equality of value is substantially complied with if the difference is so small that both parties are ready to disregard it. It is arguable that an exchange transaction involving a small cash payment to boot falls within the scope of section 4. I would suggest that 5 percent of the value of the land might be regarded as a safe margin within which the maximum difference *non est* too low, may operate. Where tracts of land are substantially unequal in value, an exchange transaction under section 4 is not authorized. However, where two parties wish to exchange tracts of land and are willing to put improvements on the less valuable tract to make it equal in value to the other tract, no objection can be raised to an exchange. The validity of this proposition is not affected by the question of which party makes the improvements, or whether the improved land goes to an Indian or a white man. In this situation no Indian loses any land, in point of value. The transaction is therefore consistent with the whole purpose of the Reorganization Act. In these cases the report from the field should show that the lands are of equal value and that the exchange is at least compatible with the proper conservation of Indian lands.

<sup>1</sup> Memo Sol. I. D., March 22, 1935.

<sup>2</sup> Memo Sol. I. D., February 8, 1937.

<sup>3</sup> 287 U. S. 48, 51 (1932).

Section 5 of the act, in my opinion so far as it authorizes land exchanges, has an entirely different purpose from section 4. Under section 5 the two tracts of land may be either equal or unequal in value, but if they are unequal in value it must be the Indians rather than the whites involved in the transaction who emerge from the transaction with an increased land value. Thus, an Indian may in fact convey \$5,000 worth of land to a white man where the white man transfers to the Secretary for the Indian's use a tract of land worth only \$500 and a cash payment to boot of \$1,500. On the other hand, an Indian may in fact receive a tract of a white man and make an additional payment of \$1,500 in exchange for a transfer of the more valuable tract to the Secretary for the benefit of the Indian. The difference between the two cases is not technical in nature. In the one case the Indian is selling land, in the other case land is being bought for the Indian's benefit. The former is forbidden and the latter is authorized by the terms of the act. This distinction, based on the major purpose of the act, should eliminate some of the confusion that appears in certain memoranda on this subject in the attached file.

Where exchanges under section 5 affect only Indians it seems to me that the same principles should be applied. Ordinary common-sense limitations in land between Indians are not within the purpose of section 5. It seems to me that a transaction under which an Indian surrenders land does not come within the true purpose of section 5 unless some special circumstances such as are mentioned in the land circular referred to above\* are shown. I would suggest, therefore, that any recommendation for approval of a sale or surrender of Indian land under section 5 should be based upon a finding supported by facts that the result of the transaction will be to bring more land into effective Indian use.

\* Indian Office Land Circular No. 3162 June 30 1936

Familiar cases in which such exchanges may advantageously be made are cases involving the exchange of inherited interests, and cases involving the transfer of a more valuable tract of land by a nonresident Indian in exchange for a less valuable tract and a money payment by a resident Indian able to use the money acquired.

Without attempting to analyze every possible transaction, I believe that such cases as the attached will be dealt with more expeditiously in the future if it is borne in mind that section 5 contemplates a land acquisition program looking to general improvement in the land status of the Indians and that section 4 contemplates private transactions which do not interfere with this program.

#### D MORTGAGES

Mortgages of restricted lands are also prohibited. The court in *United States v. First Nat. Bank of Yakima, Wash.* said:

The crops growing upon an Indian allotment are a part of the land and are held in trust by the government the same as the allotment itself, at least until the crops are severed from the land. The use and occupancy of these lands by the Indians, together with the crops grown thereon, are a part of the means by which the government has employed to carry out its policy of protection, and I am satisfied that a mortgage of any of these means by the Indian, without the consent of the government, is necessarily null and void. If the lien is valid, it causes with it all the incidents of a valid lien, including the right to appoint a receiver to take charge of and garnish the crops, if necessary, and the right to send an officer upon the allotment armed with process to seize and sell the crops without the aid and even over the protest of the government and its agents. That this cannot be done does not, in my opinion, admit of question. (P. 382.)

#### E JUDGMENTS

The Supreme Court in *Mullen v. Simmons*,<sup>242</sup> in holding that restricted lands could not be encumbered by judgments entered against an allottee, whether based on tort or contract, said:

<sup>242</sup> 282 U. S. 80 (C. S. D. Wash., 1922). But see *Mullen v. McInnes*, 246 U. S. 308, 811 (1919).

<sup>243</sup> 284 U. S. 192, 197-199 (1914).

The section referred to is as follows: "Lands allotted to members and lineal heirs shall not be affected or encumbered by any deed, debt or obligation of any character contracted prior to the time it which said land may be alienated under this Act, nor shall said lands be sold except as herein provided." c. 3362, § 8 (1914), 642.

The Supreme Court of Oklahoma in deciding that this provision did not apply distinguished between the obligations resulting from an Indian's wrongful conduct and the obligations resulting from his civil acts, saying, p. 187, "A judgment in damages for tortious conduct is not a contract within the contemplation of § 15. In other words, the court was of the view that the tort retained its identity, though merged in the judgment. However, we need not enter into the controversy of the cases and the books as to whether a judgment is a contract. Pressing such considerations, and regarding the policy of § 15 and its language, we are unable to concur with the Supreme Court of Oklahoma."

This court said, *Stuart v. Long Jim*, 227 U. S. 613, 623, that the title to lands allotted to Indians was "obtained by the United States for reasons of public policy, and in order to protect the Indians against their own improvidence." It was held, applying the principle, that a voluntary deed made by Long Jim at a time when he did not have the power of alienation "was in the very teeth of the policy of the law, and could not operate as a conveyance, either by its primary force or by way of estoppel" after he had received the allotment.

The principle was applied again in *Franklin v. Lynch*, 243 U. S. 260, and its strict character enforced against the deed of a white woman who acquired title in an Indian right. It is true, in these cases the act of the Indian was voluntary or contractual, and, it is contended, a different effect can be ascribed to the wrong done by an Indian and that in reputation or retribution of the state law may subject his inalienable land—maintainable by the National law—to alienation. The consequence of the contention repels its acceptance. To its are of variable degree. In the present case that contended on reached, perhaps, the degree of a crime, but a lot may be a touch of a more legal duty, the consequence of negligent conduct. The policy of the law is, as we have said, to protect the Indians against their improvidence, and improvidence may affect all of their acts, those of commission and omission, contracts and torts. And we think § 15 of the act of July 1, 1902, was purposely made broadly protective, broadly preclusive of alienation by any conduct of the Indian, and not only its policy but its language distinguishes it from the statute passed on in *Bliss v. Keweenaw*, 161 Fed. Rep. 145. Its language is that "lands allotted . . . shall not be affected or encumbered by any deed, debt or obligation of any character contracted prior to the time at which" the lands may be alienated, "nor shall said lands be sold except" as in the act provided. The prohibition then is that the lands shall not be "affected . . . by any obligation of any character," and, as we have seen, an obligation may arise from a tort as well as from a contract, from a breach of duty or the violation of a right. *Perkins v. Post*, 7 Colo. 40, 314, 518. If this were not so, a prearranged tort and a judgment confessed would become an easy means of circumventing the policy of the law.

#### F CONDEMNATION

Section 387 of title 26 of the United States Code, derived from the Act of March 3, 1901,<sup>244</sup> provides:

Lands allotted in severalty to Indians may be condemned for any public purpose under the laws of the State or

<sup>244</sup> 31 Stat. 1058, 1084. The preceding provision of this section relating to grants of rights-of-way for telephone and telegraph lines through Indian reservations are not forth under c. 819 of title 25. Permission to state or local authorities for the opening of public highways through Indian reservations or lands allotted to Indians in severalty was authorized by sec. 4 of this act, 28 U. S. C. § 1.

The United States is an indispensable party defendant in a condemnation proceeding brought by a state to acquire a right-of-way over lands which the United States owns and holds in trust for Indian allottees. *Keweenaw v. United States*, 306 U. S. 358 (1934). For cases dealing with the condemnation of allotted lands, see 28 C. F. R. 256.71-256.74.

Territory where located in the same manner as land owned in fee may be condemned, and the money awarded as damages shall be paid to the allottee.

Subsequent legislation concerning rights of way through Indian reservations is found in the Act of February 28, 1902<sup>11</sup> and of May 27, 1906.<sup>12</sup> The first mentioned act authorized any railroad company to condemn a right of way through Indian lands, the second provided that no restriction upon alienation should be construed to prevent the exercise of the right of eminent domain in condemning rights of way for public purposes over allotted lands.

### G REMOVAL OF RESTRICTIONS\*

Restrictions on alienation of land imposed by the allotment acts run with the land and do not personal to the allottee. Hence the removal of such restrictions as to an allotment by the Secretary in accordance with a statute does not operate to remove restrictions as to other tracts in which the Indian may be interested. In reaching this holding the Circuit Court of Appeals in *Johnson v. United States* said:<sup>13</sup>

Applicants rely also on that part of the act of February 8, 1887, as the sixth section thereof is amended by the act of May 8, 1896 (31 Stat. 183 (Comp. St. § 4268)), reading:

"Provided, that the Secretary of the Interior may, in his discretion, and he is hereby authorized, when once he shall be satisfied that any Indian allottee is competent and capable of managing his or her affairs at any time to cause to be issued to such allottee a patent in fee simple, and thereafter all restrictions as to sale, inheritance, or taxation of said land shall be removed."

and also on subsequent acts (35 Stat. 441, 46 Stat. 856, 87 Stat. 678) which extend the power of the Secretary to determine the heirs of deceased allottees, and provide that, if he is satisfied of their ability to manage their own affairs, he may cause patents in fee simple to be issued to them for the lands inherited. The contention as we understand it is that, if the Secretary, acting under these statutes, removes the restriction as to any allotment or an inherited interest therein, such action on his part operates to remove restrictions on other tracts in which the Indian may be interested. But the effect of this contention is to make the restriction against alienation personal to the Indian, whereas the uniform ruling is that it attaches to and runs with the land. In *U. S. v. Noble*, 237 U. S. 74, it is said, at page 80, 15 Sup. Ct. 332, 39 L. Ed. 844, that the restriction binds the land for the

time stated. See, also, *Bouling v. U. S.*, 273 U. S. 528, 31 Sup. Ct. 670, 84 L. Ed. 1040, 101, 102 Fed. 1311 C. C. A. 761, *United States v. Buffalo*, 312 Fed. 817, 59 C. C. A. 525. Furthermore, the facts as we obtain them from the record do not show a removal of restrictions, as claimed, in behalf of any Indian other than those that have been heretofore named and whose conveyances we held to be valid under the act of June 21, 1906, as above stated. (P. 466-477.)

### H RIGHTS OF CONVEYERS OF ALLOTTED LANDS

Contracts involving allotted lands which are not yet freed from restrictions have been held valid.<sup>14</sup> Justice Holmes in the case of *Boye v. Hanna*<sup>15</sup> explains:

The purpose of the law still is to protect the Indian interest and to control his lands to bring about proper education upon the Secretary of the Interior and to induce attempts to make it him is to what the welfare of the Indian requires we are content to follow the policy of the law as others that have been considered by the courts. *Kelly v. Hanna*, 17 Ind. Ter. 531, 25 S. W. 2d 540, 171 Nat. Bank. 62, Neb. 134, 303, 105.

Courts and administrators have consistently refused to order the restoration of consideration received by an Indian for a conveyance which violates such laws, despite the good faith of the party dealing with the Indian<sup>16</sup> and the bad faith of the Indian who intended to deceive the purchaser.<sup>17</sup>

In the case of *Bankitt v. Oila Oil Co.*,<sup>18</sup> the District Court said:

"The disability under which these deeds of the government are placed is to the inclusion of restricted lands is very similar to those attaching to minerals with reference to their contracts, and in the latter case it is established that the acts and declarations of a minor dealing in minerals cannot extend him from assuming the liability of his deeds after he has attained his majority. *Sim v. Bechard*, 102 U. S. 300, 26 L. Ed. 87 (P. 391)."

The Supreme Court in the case of *Heckman v. United States*,<sup>19</sup> said:

"It is said that the allottees have received the consideration and should be made parties in order that equitable

<sup>11</sup> 32 Stat. 48.

<sup>12</sup> 34 Stat. 312 (Five Civilized Tribes).

<sup>13</sup> The Supreme Court in the case of *United States v. Bartlett*, 295 U. S. 73, 80 (1914) discussed a meaning of the word "removed".

The real controversy is over the meaning of the word "removed." It is not questioned that it authorizes the action of Congress and of the Secretary of the Interior in abolishing or removing restrictions in advance of the time fixed for their expiration but it is insisted that it does not remove their termination by the lapse of time. In short the contention is that the word is used in a sense which contemplates only a negative act such as a rescission or revocation while the statutory period was still running. Although having support in some definitions of the word the contention is in our opinion untenable for other parts of the same act as also other acts dealing with the same subject show that the word is employed in this legislation in a broad sense plainly including a termination of the restrictions through the expiration of the time prescribed period. This is illustrated in §§ 1 and 5 of the act of 1906 and § 18 of the act of April 29, 1908 and § 270, 34 Stat. 287, 144, and is recognized in *Choate v. Trapp*, 254 U. S. 608, 670, where, in dealing with some of these statutes it was said that "restrictions on alienation were removed by lapse of time."

<sup>14</sup> On the power of the Secretary of the Interior to remove and resume restrictions, see Chapter 7, sec. 11. For regulations regarding issuance of patents in fee, see 25 C. F. 241.1-241.2.

<sup>15</sup> 238 Fed. 904 (C. C. A. 8, 1922). Accord *United States v. Nash*, 62 F. 2d 620 (C. C. A. 10, 1932).

<sup>16</sup> *United States* are declared not liable for debts contracted prior to the issuance of the land patent in fee therein. 27 U. S. 174 derived from Act of June 21, 1906, 34 Stat. 125, 327. And see Act of February 9, 1887, sec. 2, 24 Stat. 484, 560 as amended by 27 U. S. 174.

<sup>17</sup> 23 U. S. 86, 105 (1914).

<sup>18</sup> *United States v. Welles*, 17 F. 2d 116 (C. M. Minn. 1048) holding that a purchaser of land from an Indian allottee during the time period he is not entitled to return of the purchase money as a condition to the cancellation of the deed is out of the United States. In *United States v. Brown* 8 F. 2d 594 (C. C. A. 3, 1925), cert. den. 270 U. S. 644 (1926) the court said that "Whether the disposition of this land was made in good faith or upon unconscionable considerations cannot be made to affect this decision which involves a public policy of far reaching consequences" (P. 594). Also see *Boye v. Hanna*, 235 U. S. 591, 105 (1914) and *Smith v. McLaughlin*, 270 U. S. 450 (1926), rev'g 245 Fed. 978 (C. C. A. 8, 1922), in dealing with issues negotiated for a fullblooded team.

The Circuit Court of Appeals in *United States v. Rusche*, 31 F. 2d 624 (C. W. D. W. Va. 1928) said:

"The home rule of the transaction was held to be beside the point in *United States v. Brown*, 235 U. S. 591, 105 (C. C. A. 8), in which it is said: 'The bona fide of these conveyances is unimpaired.' Whether the disposition of this land was made in good faith or upon unconscionable considerations cannot be made to affect this decision which involves a public policy of far reaching consequences." Indeed it seems this must be the correct rule also after the effective news of such restrictions would be easily furnished away. (P. 627.)

<sup>19</sup> *United States v. Hallett*, 17 F. 2d 116 (C. M. Minn. 1928).

<sup>20</sup> 218 Fed. 780 (D. C. E. D. Okla. 1914), aff'd sub nom. *Ola Oil Co. v. Bartlett*, 236 Fed. 488 (C. C. A. 8, 1916).

<sup>21</sup> 224 U. S. 410 (1912), mod. and aff'd in part *United States v. Wiles*, 170 Fed. 128 (C. C. A. 8, 1910).

restoration may be enforced. Where, however, conveyance has been made in violation of the restrictions, it is plain that the return of the consideration cannot be regarded as an essential prerequisite to a decree of cancellation. Otherwise, if the Indian in garnishee had squandered the money, he would lose the land which Congress intended he should hold, and the very incompetence and thoughtlessness which were the occasion of the measure, for its protection would render them of no avail. The

effectiveness of the acts of Congress is not thus to be destroyed. The restrictions were set forth in public laws, and were matters of general knowledge. Those who dealt with the Indians came into this knowledge, and it is not entitled to insist that they should keep the land if the purchase price is not repaid and thus frustrate the policy of the statute. *United States v. Trinidad Coal Co.*, 137 U. S. 100, 170, 171. (Pp. 416, 447.)

## SECTION 5 LEASING OF ALLOTTED LANDS

We have elsewhere noted that by virtue of a general statutory prohibition against leasing of tribal lands, dating from the Act of May 19, 1790,<sup>100</sup> valid leases of tribal lands can be made only pursuant to specific statutes expressly authorizing such leases. Such is not the case with allotted lands. There is no general statutory prohibition against leasing of allotted lands. Limitations if they exist, are to be found in the treaty or statute prescribing the tenure under which the allotment is to be held.

No attempt will be made in this paper to analyze the various leasing provisions of statutes applicable to particular tribes. The prohibition against leases, contained in the General Allotment Act is found in section 5<sup>101</sup> of that act, which is embodied in the United States Code as section 348 of title 25, providing:

\* \* \* And if any conveyance shall be made, of the land set apart and allotted is herein provided, or any contract made touching the same, before the expiration of the time above mentioned, such conveyance or contract shall be absolutely null and void \* \* \*

This general provision has been modified by a series of statutes authorizing leases, subject to Interior Department control, in a variety of cases. Note has already been taken of the historical process, which began in 1891, of amending this provision contained in the General Allotment Act so as to permit leasing in a growing class of cases. These amendments authorizing the

leasing of allotted lands vary in four major respects: (1) The purpose of the lease, (2) the term of the lease, (3) who is to make the lease, and (4) who is to approve the lease.

A brief comment on each of these points is in order.

(1) Leasing of restricted Indian allotments, without regard to the purpose of the lease, is authorized by section 4 of the Act of June 25, 1910,<sup>102</sup> which authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to consent to the alienation of allotments "by deed, will, lease, or in any other form of conveyance" in cases where, by the terms of special allotment laws or treaties, land is inalienable without the consent of the President.

Other statutes in the field limit the leases which they authorize to those made for specific purposes such as "farming and grazing purposes,"<sup>103</sup> "livestock farming,"<sup>104</sup> "farming purposes only,"<sup>105</sup> and "mining purposes."<sup>106</sup>

(2) The statutes permitting the Secretary to lease certain township lands,<sup>107</sup> to approve leases on lands the alienation of which originally required Presidential consent<sup>108</sup> and authorizing mining leases on allotted lands<sup>109</sup> contain no limitations as to the term of years for which the lease may be made. Other statutes limit the term to 5<sup>110</sup> or 10 years<sup>111</sup>.

<sup>100</sup> 50 Stat. 855, 856, 25 U. S. C. 408.

<sup>101</sup> Sec. 5 of this act (48 Stat. 905, 897) makes it unlawful and punishable by fine and imprisonment "for any person to induce any Indian to execute any contract, deed, mortgage, or other instrument purporting to convey any land or other interest therein held by the United States in trust for such Indian, or to offer any such contract, deed, mortgage, or other instrument for record in the office of any recorder of deeds."

On administrative power of the Secretary over leasing, see Chapter 5, sec. 11E. When approval is secured the lease is effective as of the date of execution. *Hallam v. Commerce Mining and Royalty Co.*, 46 F. 2d 103 (C. C. A. 10, 1941), 127 F. 2d 871, 128 F. 2d 874 (D. C. N. D. Okla. 1929), cert. den. 284 U. S. 844 (1931). Also see *Montgomery v. Brown*, 22 F. 2d 51 (C. C. A. 8, 1927), cert. den. 276 U. S. 628 (1928).

<sup>102</sup> Act of March 3, 1921, sec. 1, 41 Stat. 1228, 1229, 25 U. S. C. 898. On general grazing regulations, see 25 C. F. R. 71.1-71.26. On regulations for leases, of certain restricted allotted Indian lands for mining, see 25 C. F. R. 189.1-189.32.

<sup>103</sup> Act of May 18, 1918, sec. 1, 39 Stat. 123, 128, 25 U. S. C. 894.

<sup>104</sup> Act of May 31, 1900, sec. 1, 31 Stat. 221, 225, 25 U. S. C. 895.

<sup>105</sup> Act of March 8, 1900, 35 Stat. 781, 788, 25 U. S. C. 896, amended by Act of May 11, 1908, 32 Stat. 847, 25 U. S. C. 895A-895F.

<sup>106</sup> Leases of Indian mineral lands frequently contain only certain specified minerals. For example when only oil is named in the lease, it is a wrongful conversion to sell the gas issued from the well, except that such an oil lease may use gas necessary to facilitate production upon the leased land, such as to run compressors and to repressure the well. *Union Pacific Corp. v. Carter Oil Co.*, 2 F. Supp. 81 (D. C. N. D. Okla. 1963).

<sup>107</sup> Act of July 8, 1940 (Pub. No. 732, 70th Cong.).

<sup>108</sup> Act of September 21, 1929, sec. 6, 42 Stat. 964, 965, 25 U. S. C. 892.

<sup>109</sup> Act of March 3, 1909, 36 Stat. 781, 783, 25 U. S. C. 896.

<sup>110</sup> Act of June 25, 1910, sec. 4, 36 Stat. 955, 956, 25 U. S. C. 408.

<sup>111</sup> Act of May 18, 1918, sec. 1, 39 Stat. 123, 128, 25 U. S. C. 894.

The policy behind this limitation of term has been considered in interpreting other statutes relating to leases of Indian lands. Thus the Circuit Court in *United States v. Haddock*, 21 F. 2d 106 (C. C. A. 8, 1927) said:

Whenever Congress has authorized Indian allottees to lease their lands without the approval of the Secretary of the Interior

<sup>100</sup> See 12, 1 Stat. 499, 472. See Chapter 15, sec. 10.

<sup>101</sup> Acts applying to particular tribes include, the following: Allotted lands on the Fort Belknap Reservation, susceptible of mining may be leased for not to exceed ten years for such beds "and other cop. in relation" (Act of March 1, 1907, 34 Stat. 1015, 1034).

Allotted lands in the Shoshone Reservation may be leased for maximum terms of twenty years (Act of April 10, 1908, 45 Stat. 70, 97). (Yakima Reservation allotment may lease unimproved allotted lands for agricultural purposes for a period of not more than ten years (Act of March 1, 1899, 30 Stat. 924, 941, and Act of May 31, 1900, 31 Stat. 221, 246).)

The Secretary of the Interior may lease, for a maximum of ten years, the village allotments of any Indian allotment of the Warm Springs and Uncompagne Reservations in Utah when the allottee is unable to cultivate the same or any portion (Act of April 10, 1908, 35 Stat. 70, 96).

Competent Crow allottees may lease their own and their minor children's allotments for five years. Adult incompetent Crow may lease their own and their children's allotments with the approval of the agency superintendent for terms up to five years. Lands of Crow minor allottees may be leased by their superintendent for the same term (Act of May 28, 1908, 34 Stat. 658).

Most of the foregoing acts place the leasing of Indian allotted lands under the superintendency of the reservations. Competent adult Crow Indians may execute farming and grazing leases without restraint of the Indian Service (Act of May 28, 1908, 34 Stat. 658).

Allottees under the Quapaw Agency may lease lands for not to exceed three years for farming or grazing purposes or ten years for mining or business purposes (Act of June 7, 1897, 30 Stat. 92, 72).

On Five Tribes leasing statutes, see Chapter 23, sec. 10. On Onawa leasing statute, see *ibid.*, sec. 12D.

<sup>102</sup> Act of February 8, 1897, 24 Stat. 889, 890, amended Act of March 8, 1900, sec. 9, 31 Stat. 1068, 1069.

<sup>103</sup> It has been held that an assignment by an Indian of royalties from a mining lease of restricted lands is void as constituting an assignment of part of his inalienable reversion. *United States v. Moore*, 284 Fed. 86 (C. C. A. 8, 1922).

(8) Most of the statutes provide specifically that the lease shall be made by the allottee or by the heirs to whom the allotment has descended.<sup>107</sup> Other statutes leave this to inference.<sup>108</sup> A statute authorizing leasing of lands in heirship status allows the local superintendent to execute leases under specified conditions.<sup>109</sup>

It has been administratively ruled that the statutory requirement of execution by the allottee cannot be waived so as to authorize the execution of leases by the superintendent of the reservation.<sup>110</sup>

It has hindered the policy for which the leases were made, and in order to protect the Indian allottees it has been held that Congress intended authority to convey the allottees to take place in between them, and not in their own execution and sale in the hands of the State. See, *Putas v. U. S.*, where the plaintiff of the Secretary of the Interior is necessary to give validity to the action in the suit. The allottee is protected by the requirement of departmental approval. The lease here was made and approved is provided by law. \* \* \* (P. 107)

Also see *Reynolds v. Colo.*, 208 U. S. 250 (1928) and *United States v. Noble*, 277 U. S. 74 (1913), 145 F. 2d 202 (C. C. A. 8, 1913).

The broad outlines of administrative policy concerning the leasing of allotted lands are shown by many of the regulations. For instance, see 1711 of 21 C. F. R. provides: " \* \* \* Leases should be made for the shortest term for which advantageous contracts can be secured with prospective parties."

<sup>107</sup> Act of March 8, 1921, sec. 1 41 Stat. 1226, 1232 25 U. S. C. 993 (Heaman, and Grange Leases). Act of March 4, 1909 35 Stat. 751, 763, 26 U. S. C. 390 (mining leases).

<sup>108</sup> Act of May 18, 1916, sec. 1 49 Stat. 121, 124 25 U. S. C. 401 (Leases of Available Lands). Act of May 31, 1900, sec. 41 Stat. 221, 222, 25 U. S. C. 393 (leases of available lands in unincorporated).

<sup>109</sup> The Act of July 8, 1910, Public Law 722, 70th Cong., 3d sess., provides:

"That interested allotments of deceased Indians may be leased except for oil and gas mining purposes, by the superintendent of the reservation within which the lands are located (1) when the heirs of a deceased allottee have not been determined and (2) when the heirs of a deceased allottee have been determined and such lands are not in use by any of the heirs and the heirs have not been determined to lease the lands to agriculture under a lease by reason of the number of the heirs their absence from the reservation or for other cause under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe. The proceeds derived from such leases shall be credited to the estate or other account of the individuals entitled thereto in accordance with their respective interests."

<sup>110</sup> This office has had occasion frequently to point out that the general rule for the leasing of Indian allotments is that the signature of the Indian owner or owners must be obtained before approval can be given to a lease. In a memorandum dated October 28, 1917, the Solicitor, in dealing with a similar factual situation, held that section 7 of the Heaman Regulations as revised by departmental circular of December 18, 1906, which requiring a substantial majority of the heirs of allotted land in heirship status to lease the land does not authorize an heir or heirs representing only a half interest in the land to do like wise. It was pointed out that the Department was without legal power to approve a lease, where the owner, or the owners of a majority interest, were unable to give the necessary approval in an official capacity as infancy, mental disability, or pending heirship determination. These exceptions are not to be broadened into unlimited administrative discretion. The special circumstances where the Department may act without the consent of the Indian owner, or a majority interest are those cases where there is no owner, or owners, legally capable of executing a valid lease of the land. They are not every case where Department officials may feel that some of the Indians are acting unwisely or capriciously, or to the detriment of the other Indians interested in the land.

In the present case, one Mr. Jennie Mills Fair, has signed the lease. The other heir, Benjamin Mills Fair, refuses, however, to sign it. There is no legal authority, therefore, to take the action proposed in the letter. Neither Ben holds such a substantial majority interest in the land as to enable him or her to bind the other. The Indians are known and are capable of executing a valid lease. Their motives in signing, or not signing, are not relevant at this point." (Memo Sol I D June 15, 1908)

See 7 of the leasing regulations above referred to, embodied in 25 C. F. R. 171.9 declares:

"When the heirs owning a substantial majority in interest are desirous of leasing their inherited trust or restricted lands the Superintendent is authorized to approve such a lease provided the heirs holding substantial interests in the estate have been notified of the proposed lease and have not objected to such a

(4) Several of the statutes specifically require the "approval" or "consent" or "approval" of the Secretary to a lease of allotted lands.<sup>111</sup>

Other statutes require approval of the superintendent and other officers in charge of the reservation where the land is located.<sup>112</sup> Still others leave it to the regulations of the Secretary to determine whether approval shall be by the Secretary, by the Commissioner, or by a local reservation official.<sup>113</sup>

A lease made without the approval required by the statute or by regulations issued pursuant to such statute is generally considered to be void.<sup>114</sup> There are, however, a number of unincorporated

laws. In case the heirs holding such minority interest have objected to the approval of a lease on such interested lands the Superintendent is in a predicament, especially if the majority interest is in the hands of the heirs, and in such case the object of the statute, that would require the approval of the majority interest shall be held in favor of the superintendent to be paid to such heirs upon their request of when and if they can get leave. Such minority owners may however, be permitted through partition or other arrangement with their co-heirs to make use of such part of the land as may be equivalent to the portion of interest in the whole, in which event the part of the estate not held in full in excess may be returned to the heirs. Approved leases, made by the heirs holding a majority interest shall be considered as complete, the estate, except included in the lease and no kind of partition or partition of part of the estate shall be made to the heirs who, when in part, have in other circumstances, but is not proper to the lease here is permitted to use a portion of the land included in the lease. \* \* \* (P. 208)

For a discussion of the lack of power of the Secretary, or the superintendent on his behalf to change the terms of a lease see *Holmes v. United States*, 41 F. 2d 654 (C. C. A. 8, 1913) and *United States v. Sanderson*, 22 F. Supp. 100 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1918).

<sup>111</sup> Act of September 21, 1922, sec. 6 62 Stat. 994, 995 25 U. S. C. 392 and sec. 10 *supra*. Also see Chapter 5, sec. 12B. For a discussion of fully defined leasing, see *Secretary of the Interior v. Miller*, 219 U. S. 309 (1910).

<sup>112</sup> Act of March 4, 1909, sec. 1 41 Stat. 1221, 1224 25 U. S. C. 398. Act of May 18, 1916, sec. 1, 39 Stat. 123, 128, 25 U. S. C. 404 (Leases of Available Land). Act of May 31, 1900, sec. 1 41 Stat. 221, 222 25 U. S. C. 397 (Leases of Available Lands in Unincorporated). Act of May 14, 1909, sec. 1 41 Stat. 781, 782, 25 U. S. C. 396 (mining leases). Act of June 25, 1910, sec. 4, 40 Stat. 565, 565, 25 U. S. C. 408 (Leasing of trust allotments generally).

By the Act of May 11, 1909, 82 Stat. 347, 25 U. S. C. 596, the Secretary of the Interior may delegate his power of approval of mining leases to superintendents of other Indian Service offices. Previously it was held that the superintendent had no power of approval of leases. See *Central National Bank of Tulsa, Oklahoma, v. United States*, 283 F.2d 508 (C. C. A. 8, 1912). By statute, however, the superintendent in the Five Civilized Tribes could previously act in this capacity in approving leases. See Act of May 27, 1906, sec. 2 45 Stat. 114, in (repealed in *Holmes v. United States*, 41 F. 2d 658 (C. C. A. 8, 1912)). The superintendent for the Osage Tribe also possessed much power pursuant to the Act of June 28, 1906, sec. 7, 34 Stat. 782, 783, incorporated in *United States v. Sanderson*, 22 F. Supp. 100 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1918).

The regulation which is specifically concerned with business leases provides:

"Whereas it is deemed advisable to lease allotted Indian land for business purposes, the Superintendent is authorized to accept the offer, terms and conditions of the proposed lease to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs who, if he deems it proper, may accept without objection of the Secretary of the Interior, should be made without such prior approval." (25 C. F. R. 171.10)

<sup>113</sup> \* \* \* It thus appears that the lesser under which the defendant claims the right to the possession of the land, the allotment is wholly void having been taken in direct violation of the sovereignty of the acts of Congress under which the allotments in severalty were made, that the occupancy of the lands and the cultivation thereof by the defendants is wholly inconsistent with the purposes for which the lands were originally set apart as a reservation for the Indians, and with the object of the government in providing for allotments in severalty, that such occupancy is held contrary to the rules and regulations of the department of the interior, and is held, not for the benefit, protection, and advancement of the Indians, but for the benefit of the original lessees and their descendants, that such occupancy of said lands by the defendants results in antagonizing the authority and action of the government on the Indians, and is clearly detrimental to them both interests and materially interfere with the rules and regulations of the department charged with the duty of carrying out the treaty stipulations under which the land forming the reservation was set apart for the benefit and occupancy of the Indians. Having





(3) It may be that Indian family relations are more complicated than the family relations of non Indians in rural areas, although there do not appear to be any authoritative figures on this point.

(4) The Indian population, on most allotted reservations, is without channels by which members of families too large for the family homestead and too poor to migrate it move off to other rural or urban areas. The application to the allotted Indians of state inheritance laws adapted to a more fluid population and economy has therefore had striking and largely unforeseen results.

(5) Under existing law the cost of administration is borne by the Federal Government rather than by the individual Indians concerned in the estate. There is thus no economic incentive on the part of the Indians concerned to simplify the status of heirship lands.

### A. TESTACY

In the absence of statute, heirs to an allotment are determined in accordance with tribal custom.<sup>120</sup>

The General Allotment Act, like several special allotment acts, modifies this rule and substitutes state law as a standard for the determination of heirs. The most important consequence of this shift has been the multiplication of the number of heirs and the subdivision of interests in "dead allotments."

This result is achieved by section 5 of the General Allotment Act,<sup>121</sup> which provides that the patent issued to each allottee under the General Allotment Act shall

" . . . declare that the United States does and will hold the land thus allotted, for the period of twenty-five years, in trust for the sole use and benefit of the Indian to whom such allotment shall have been made, or, in case of his decease, of his heirs according to the laws of the State or Territory where such land is located . . . "

Where an Indian to whom an allotment of land has been made dies before the expiration of the trust period and before the issuance of a fee simple patent without having made a will disposing of said allotment the Secretary of the Interior may, under rules prescribed by him and upon notice and hearing, determine the heirs, his decision is final and conclusive.<sup>122</sup> The statute<sup>123</sup> granting him this right further provides:

(1) If the Secretary finds the heirs competent to manage their own affairs he may issue a patent in fee to them for the allotment.

(2) If he finds partition to be to the advantage of the heirs, he may, on petition of the competent heirs, issue patents in fee to them for their shares.

(8) If he finds one or more of them incompetent, he may cause the land to be sold, under certain rules of sale.

(1) The shares of the proceeds of the sale due the competent Indians are to be paid to them.

(6) The shares due the incompetent ones are to be held in trust for them use during the trust period.

(6) The purchaser of the land receives a patent in fee

<sup>120</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 6, Chapter 10, sec. 10.

<sup>121</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 388, 389, amended Act March 3, 1901, sec. 9, 31 Stat. 1058, 1059, 26 U. S. C. 948.

<sup>122</sup> In *Chase v. United States*, 272 Fed. 884 (C. C. A. 8, 1921), the court held that the determination by the Secretary of the Interior that a certain person was the heir of a deceased Omaha "chieftain" who as such had a life estate in the allotment under the Nebraska laws was conclusive. The same principle was followed in *Lane v. United States ex rel. McKee*, 241 U. S. 201 (1916), wherein it was further held that even after determining the heirs the Secretary may reopen his decision at any time during the trust period.

<sup>123</sup> Act of June 25, 1910, sec. 1, 36 Stat. 855, Act of March 3, 1925, 43 Stat. 101, Act of April 8, 1904, 48 Stat. 647, 26 U. S. C. 872.

The foregoing provision, though phrased to apply to trust allotments, has been held by the Supreme Court to be applicable to restricted allotments in fee as well.<sup>124</sup>

The power of Congress to enact this statute and the power of the Secretary thereunder have been elsewhere treated.<sup>125</sup>

The Act of June 18, 1934, has not affected the mode of intestate descent of allotted lands.

Continuation of the regulations pertaining to the determination of heirs define the manner in which the Secretary determines heirs.<sup>126</sup> Eight examiners of inheritance are appointed, one for each probate district in the Indian country.<sup>127</sup> It is made the duty of the superintendent in charge of any allotted reservation, as soon as he is informed of the death of an allottee or an Indian possessed of trust property within the jurisdiction, to cause to be prepared an inventory showing in detail the estate of the decedent and also a certificate of appraisement thereof and statement as to testamentary claims.<sup>128</sup>

Notice of hearing is provided for by the requirement that the examiner of inheritance shall post, for 20 days in five or more conspicuous places on the reservation or in the vicinity of the place of hearing, notices of the time and place at which he will take testimony to determine the legal heirs of the deceased Indian, calling upon all persons interested to attend the hearing.<sup>129</sup> Copies of the notice are usually served personally on all persons who the superintendent believes are probable heirs or creditors of the deceased.<sup>130</sup> A further requirement is made of the examiner that he inspect carefully the allotment, convey, and annuity rolls, and any other records on file at the agency, and obtain all other information which may enable him to make a prima facie list of the heirs of such deceased Indian.<sup>131</sup>

Minors in interest must be represented at the hearings by a natural guardian or by a guardian ad litem appointed by the examiner.<sup>132</sup>

Persons interested in any probate case before an examiner of inheritance may appear by attorney.<sup>133</sup> Attorneys appearing before the examiner of inheritance, the Indian Office, or the Department of the Interior, must have a power of attorney from their respective clients and must be licensed attorneys, admitted to practice.<sup>134</sup> Written arguments or briefs may be presented.<sup>135</sup>

All claimants are required to be summoned to appear and testify at the hearings. Those must be present at least two disinterested witnesses, who are acquainted with and have direct knowledge of the family history of the decedent.<sup>136</sup> In case the decedent is a minor, unmarried and without issue, and the heirs are members of the immediate families of the decedent, the ex-

<sup>124</sup> *United States v. Boesche*, 256 U. S. 484 (1921).

<sup>125</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 5C, 11C.

<sup>126</sup> The procedure in Indian probate cases is discussed in Monograph No. 20, Attorney General's Committee on Administrative Procedure (1940).

<sup>127</sup> 26 C. F. R. 81.1, 81.2, 81.3.

<sup>128</sup> 26 C. F. R. 81.5. The superintendent also notifies the examiner for the district and the Probate Division of the Office of Indian Affairs of the demise of an Indian with restricted property. When an Indian of any allotted reservation dies leaving only personal property or cash of a value less than \$500, the superintendent of the reservation where the property is found is authorized to assemble the apparent heirs and hold an informal hearing, with a view to the proper distribution thereof. In the disposition of such funds, the superintendent is authorized to pay funeral charges and expenses of last illness and any just claims for necessaries furnished decedent. 26 C. F. R. 81.28 (1940).

<sup>129</sup> 26 C. F. R. 81.6. Also see 81.10-81.11.

<sup>130</sup> The rules also permit service by mail. 26 C. F. R. 81.8.

<sup>131</sup> 25 C. F. R. 81.7.

<sup>132</sup> 26 C. F. R. 81.12.

<sup>133</sup> 26 C. F. R. 81.15. Attorneys appear very rarely.

<sup>134</sup> 26 C. F. R. 81.17.

<sup>135</sup> 26 C. F. R. 81.18.

<sup>136</sup> 26 C. F. R. 81.19-81.21.

annet may, in his discretion, dispense with the presence of disinterested witnesses, provided the testimony of the interested witnesses is corroborated by the records of the Department.<sup>11</sup>

When, subsequent to the determination of heirs by the Department, property is found which is not included in the examiner's report, this fact must be brought to the attention of the Commissioner, together with an appraisal thereof. The Superintendent will then be instructed to include this property in the original findings with instructions as to any additional fee to be charged. However, where newly discovered property takes a different line of descent from that shown by the original findings, a re-determination relative thereto must be ordered and paid.<sup>12</sup>

The Solicitor for the Department of the Interior, discussing the authority of the Secretary of the Interior relative to claims against estates of deceased Indians, declared:<sup>13</sup>

The Secretary of the Interior is authorized to probate Indian estates under the Acts of June 25, 1910 (36 Stat. 885), and February 12, 1911 (37 Stat. 676). No special authority is indicated in these Acts relative to the allowance or disallowance of claims against the estate. As in incident to the power granted, however, ever since the passage of the Acts mentioned, the Secretary of the Interior has passed on claims, based on indebtedness incurred by the decedent during his lifetime, and on expenses of last illness and funeral charges. While the allotted lands of the Indian are not subject to the heirs of indebtedness incurred while the title is held in trust for the Indian (Section 354, Title 25, U. S. Code) the right of the Secretary administratively to allow and settle indebtedness against the Indian decedent has never been seriously questioned.

The priority recorded claims of the United States by virtue of Title U. S. Code does not apply to the estates of deceased Indians. No administrator or executor is appointed in these Indian estates, and claims against them are not such heirs as may be enforced through the title of the restricted lands involved. Allowed claims are paid from the moneys to the land or from such cash as may be available at the time of death of the decedent.

Priority is however given to claims of the United States against estates of deceased Indians, administratively. There are some qualifications which are covered by Departmental Regulations.

Except when the expenditures above mentioned [medical and funeral] affect the order of priority this Department allows claims administratively in the following order:

- 1 The probate fee (25 U. S. C. 877, 25 C. F. R. 81.40)
- 2 Funeral bills and expense of last illness in reasonable amount (25 C. F. R. 221.9 and 81.46)
- 3 Claims of the United States
- 4 General creditors (25 C. F. R. 81.44, 81.46)

Any aggrieved person claiming an interest in the trust or restricted property of an Indian, who has received notice of the

<sup>11</sup> 26 C. F. R. 81.20. According to the Court of Appeals of the District of Columbia in *Shawyer v. Jewett*, 24 F. 2d 813 (Top D. C. 1928).

The duty of the examiner is clearly defined under the regulations which require a complete investigation of the mental capacity of the testator at the time of the making of the will and of the influence to which also may have been subjected at the time as well as the ascertainment of the legal heirs to her estate. He was required likewise to give full and complete hearing to all parties interested, (p. 810.)

The report of the examiner of inheritance which contains a proposed order for the determination of heirs, is reviewed by the Probate Division of the Office of Indian Affairs and the Office of the Solicitor and is then submitted to the Secretary of the Interior for approval. While the Probate Division is nominally a branch of the Office of Indian Affairs, it is also subject to the supervision of the Solicitor by virtue of a departmental order which placed all attorneys under the administrative jurisdiction of the Solicitor. Personnel Order No. 8380 of June 30, 1904, supplementing Order No. 680, passed June 9, 1903.

<sup>12</sup> 25 C. F. R. 81.22.

<sup>13</sup> Letter Sol. I. D. to Sol. of Dept. of Agt., June 20, 1940.

hearing, to determine heirs on consideration of a will, or who was present at the hearing may file a motion for rehearing within 60 days from the date of notice on him of the determination of heirs or action on a will or within such shorter period of time as the Secretary of the Interior may determine to be appropriate in any particular case. A motion so filed operates as a supersedeas until otherwise directed by the Secretary of the Interior.

Any such motion must state concisely and specifically the grounds upon which the motion for rehearing is based and be accompanied by brief and argument in support thereof.

If proper grounds are not shown, the rehearing will be denied. If upon examination grounds sufficient for rehearing are shown a rehearing will be granted and the moving party will be notified that he will be allowed 75 days from the receipt of notice within which to serve a copy of this motion, together with all argument in support thereof, on the opposite party or parties, who will be allowed 90 days thereafter in which to file and serve answer, brief, and argument. Thereafter, the case will be again considered and appropriate action taken, which may consist either in adhering to the former decision or modifying or vacating same, or the making of any further or other order deemed warranted.<sup>14</sup>

No case will be reopened at the petition of any person who is served notice of the hearing or who was present at such hearing, and received notice of the final decision, except as provided in § 81.74. Any other aggrieved person, claiming an interest in the estate, may apply for reopening of the case by petition, in writing, addressed to the Secretary of the Interior, to be submitted through the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. All such petitions must set forth fully the alleged grounds for reopening, and when such petitions are based on alleged errors of fact are to be accompanied by affidavits or other supporting evidence. On receipt of such petition, the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, if he deems it essential, will give the previously determined heirs an opportunity to present such showing in the matter as they may care to offer. Thereafter, the petition together with the record in the case will be submitted to the Secretary of the Interior with such recommendation in the premises as the Commissioner of Indian Affairs may deem appropriate. Aside from filing the papers specifically referred to, no further proceedings by the respective parties are required prior to a determination by the Secretary of the question whether a reopening will be granted or not.

Petitions for reopening will not be considered when 10 years or longer have elapsed since the heirs were previously determined nor in those cases in which the estate of the decedent or any considerable part thereof has been disposed of under the previous finding of heirs. Claims for expenses, attorneys' fees, etc., in connection with petitions for reopening will not be considered or recognized prior to a determination of the question whether or not a reopening is to be had, and neither the estate of the decedent nor the determined heirs thereto will be subject to any expense incurred prior to allowance by the Secretary of a reopening of the case.<sup>15</sup>

## B TESTAMENTARY DISPOSITION

Statutory provision has been made for the disposal by will of allotments held under trust.<sup>16</sup> This provision, as it appears in

<sup>14</sup> 25 C. F. R. 81.94.

<sup>15</sup> 25 C. F. R. 81.85.

<sup>16</sup> Acts of June 25, 1910, 80 Stat. 870, 860, and February 14, 1919, 87 Stat. 878, 25 U. S. C. 878.

the United States Code,<sup>38</sup> permits the disposal by will of interests in allotments (as well as other property) held under trust by anyone having such an interest who is at least 21 years old. The will is to be executed in accordance with regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior and each will must be approved by him. If after an Indian's demise the will is disapproved, the allotment descends according to the law of the state wherein it is located.<sup>39</sup>

Approval of a will and death of the testator do not automatically terminate the trust. The Secretary may cause the lands to be sold and the proceeds to be held for the legatees or devisees and used for their benefit.

In the case of *Blount v. Cardin*,<sup>40</sup> the Supreme Court was of the opinion that the provisions were exclusive and that state statutes regarding devise of property have no effect upon allotments held in trust. Thus it held that the death of an allottee who had made a will did not terminate the restrictions<sup>41</sup> and subject the land to the Oklahoma law of wills, under which a wife could not devise more than two thirds of her property away from her husband.

The power of the Secretary in connection with the approval or disapproval of wills is broad enough to enable him to determine whether he has mistakenly approved a will and whether the hearing before the examiner has been conducted in accordance with statute and regulations even after more than a year has elapsed since the death of the allottee.<sup>42</sup>

The authority of the Secretary of the Interior is limited to approval or disapproval of an Indian will, and he is without authority to change the provisions of the will by making a different provision than that provided by the testator.<sup>43</sup>

<sup>38</sup> "Any person of the age of twenty-one years having any right, title, or interest in any allotment held under trust or other patent containing restrictions on alienation of individual Indian moneys or other property held in trust by the United States shall have the right prior to the expiration of the trust or interests period and before the passage of a fee simple patent or the removal of restrictions to dispose of such property by will, in accordance with regulations to be prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior. *Provided, however*, That no will so executed shall be valid or have any force or effect unless and until it shall have been approved by the Secretary of the Interior. *Provided further*, That the Secretary of the Interior may approve or disapprove the will either before or after the death of the testator, and in case where a will has been approved and it is subsequently discovered that there has been fraud in connection with the execution or procurement of the will the Secretary of the Interior is authorized within one year after the death of the testator to cancel the approval of the will and the property of the testator shall thereupon descend or be distributed in accordance with the laws of the state wherein the property is located. *Provided further*, That the approval of the will and the death of the testator shall not operate to terminate the trust or restrictive period, but the Secretary of the Interior may in his discretion, cause the lands to be sold and the moneys derived therefrom or so much thereof as may be necessary, used for the benefit of the trust or heirs entitled thereto, remove the restrictions, or cause patent in fee to be issued to the devisee or devisees, and pay the moneys to the legatee or legatees either in whole or in part from time to time as they may deem advisable, or use it for their benefit. *Provided also* That the said and preceding section shall not apply to the Five Civilized Tribes or the Osage Indians." (25 U.S.C. § 378.)

<sup>39</sup> See subsection A, supra. Also see Chapter 7, sec. 6.  
<sup>40</sup> 394 U.S. 419 (1962).  
<sup>41</sup> *Wheat*, on the other hand, an Indian died testate prior to the enactment of June 25, 1910, 36 Stat. 867, he will made under an authorizing statute which was silent as to its effect upon the removal by will of restrictions made upon approval by the President serves to remove such restrictions. *Op. Sol. I D*, M 27700, August 3, 1934. See *Lo Motie v. United States*, 224 U.S. 970 (1911).

<sup>42</sup> *Asm of v. Jandson*, 24 F. 2d 613 (App. D C 1928).  
<sup>43</sup> In the case of *Isaiah Wah-shah aka Ma-tan-De's Nakate*, 111 Okla. 177, 289 Pac. 177 (1925), the Supreme Court of Oklahoma, speaking with reference to the probate of a will of an Osage Indian which had been approved by the Secretary of the Interior as provided by law, said:

If the will is void for any reason the husband would take under the provisions of section 11801 C.B. 1921, but so long

But after the will has been approved, the parties interested in the estate may agree upon a different disposition of property, subject, of course, to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior.

Certain of the federal regulations pertaining to the approval of wills illuminate the meaning of the statutory provisions above quoted. It is provided<sup>44</sup> that the will of any Indian who may make such an instrument shall be filed with the superintendent and that the officials of the Indian Office shall aid and assist the Indian in so far as possible in the drawing of the instrument so that it will clearly and unambiguously express his wishes and intentions. Statements preferably under oath by the person drawing the will and the witnesses thereto that the testator was mentally competent and that there was no evidence of fraud, duress, or undue influence in connection therewith should be attached to the instrument. Where such evidence exists, a detailed statement should accompany the will setting forth the nature and extent thereof.

Other important regulations as they appear in title 27 of the Code of Federal Regulations are noted in the following summary:

Section 81.73 requires the examiner, Superintendent, or other official to make a specific recommendation as to whether the will of a deceased Indian should be approved by the Secretary, based upon a full inquiry into his mental competency, "the circumstances attending the execution of the will, the influences which induced its execution." In the event that the distribution is contrary to the laws of the State in which the testator resided, the examiner is required to seek the best available evidence as to the reasons for such action, including the affidavit of the testator, if living. He must also investigate the competency of all devisees and legatees to manage their affairs and note if any beneficiary is a person not of Indian blood. Section 81.54 provides that "No will executed in conformity with the Act of February 14, 1913 (37 Stat. 775, 25 U.S.C. § 373), shall be valid or have any force or effect so far as it relates to property under the control of the United States, unless and until it shall have been approved by the Secretary of the Interior, who may approve or disapprove the will after a due and proper hearing to determine the facts in the estate of the testator or testatrix shall have been held, required notice of such hearing first having been given to all persons interested, including the presumptive legal heirs, so far as they may be ascertained, and at which hearing the circumstances attendant upon the execution of said will shall have been fully shown by proper and credible testimony, and after the legal heirs or heirs have had ample opportunity to object to the will and its approval."<sup>45</sup>

Section 81.55 provides that no action on wills will be taken until after the death of the testator, except that during the life of the testator the Office of Indian Affairs shall give on the form of the will.

Section 81.56 provides that in the absence of a contest, the examiner may secure affidavits of attesting witnesses to the will, in lieu of their personal appearance at the hearing.

Under section 4 of the Act of June 18, 1894,<sup>46</sup> an Indian's real property and shares in a tribal corporation may be devised only to his heirs, to members of the tribe having jurisdiction over the property, or to the tribe itself. In a recent opinion, the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior was called upon to construe this section. His opinion throws considerable light upon the limitation placed by that act upon a testator.<sup>47</sup>

My opinion has been requested upon the proper construction of section 4 of the Wheeler-Howard Act (48

as the will stands the disposition of the property made by its terms must also stand, as the court cannot make a new will nor direct a different division of the property from that made by the testator with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior. (P. 170.)

<sup>44</sup> 25 C.F.R. 81.60.

<sup>45</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 985, 25 U.S.C. 494. See 25 C.F.R. 81.58.

<sup>46</sup> *Op. Sol. I D*, M 27776, August 17, 1934, 54 I.D. 584.

Stat 984, 985) in so far as this section limits the class of persons to whom an allottee may devise restricted lands. The relevant language of this section declares:

Except as herein provided, no sale, devise, gift, exchange, or other transfer of restricted Indian land, or of shares in the assets of any Indian tribe, or corporation organized hereunder, shall be made or approved. *Provided*, That such lands, or interests may, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, be sold, devised, or otherwise transferred to the Indian tribe in which the lands or shares are located or from which the shares were derived or to any succession corporation, and in all instances such lands or interests shall descend or be devised, in accordance with the then existing laws of the State or Federal laws where applicable, in which said lands are located or in which the subject matter of the corporation is located, to any member of such tribe or of such corporation or any heirs of such member.

The question of what persons other than members of the testator's tribe may lawfully be designated as devisees of his restricted property, where such property is subject to the terms of the Wheeler Howard Act, is raised by the ambiguity of the last two words in the passage above quoted, namely, "such member." If "such member" refers to the testator himself, then the class of nonmembers entitled to receive restricted Indian property will be limited to those who have through marriage, descent or adoption law acquired a relationship to the testator sufficient to constitute them heirs at law.

If the words "such member" be construed to mean *any member to whom the property in question might be devised*, then, apparently, nonmember heirs of other Indians in the testator might be made devisees of the testator's restricted property.

In the third place the phrase "such member" might be construed to refer to a member who is a devisee under the will in question.

The circumstances under which the phrase "in any heirs of such member" was inserted in the Wheeler Howard Bill indicate the proper meaning to be attached to that phrase. Early drafts of the legislation (e. g. H. R. 7802, Title III, Sec. 3, April House Committee Print, S 2755, Sec. 4, May Senate Committee Print), both in the House and in the Senate, limited the privilege of inheriting restricted property to the members of the testator's tribe, in accordance with the fundamental purpose of the legislation to conserve Indian lands in Indian ownership and to prevent the further checker-boarding of Indian lands through the acquisition of parcels of such lands by persons not subject to the authority of the Indian tribe or reservation. To this limitation the objection was urged that in some cases the heirs of a deceased Indian would not be members of the tribe or corporation to which the deceased had adhered, and that it would be unfair to deny such natural heirs the right to participate in a devise of property. The House Committee on Indian Affairs, therefore, added to the clause first considered the phrase "or any heirs of such member." (H. R. 7802, Sec. 4, as reported to the House.) Independently, the Senate Committee on Indian Affairs added to the draft under its consideration a parallel phrase more restricted in scope, "or the Indian heirs of such member." (S 2755, Sec. 4, Committee Print No. 2, S. 6635, Sec. 4, as reported to the Senate.) It seems clear that the purpose of these legislative afterthoughts was not to alter fundamentally the intent and scope of the original restriction but rather to provide for the exigencies of a special case that had not been distinctly considered, namely, the case of an Indian testator desiring to divide his estate by will among those who would, in the absence of a will, have been entitled to share in the estate, namely, his own heirs.

That the Chairman of the House Committee on Indian Affairs so construed the phrase here in question is indicated by his explanatory statement to the House of Representatives:

Section 4 stops a dangerous leak through which the restricted allotted lands still in Indian ownership

pass therefrom. Upon the death of an allottee the number of heirs frequently makes partition of the land impractical, and it must be sold at partition sale, when it generally passes into the hands of whites. This section endeavors to restrict such sales to Indian buyers or to Indian tribes or organizations. It however permits the devise of such lands to the heirs, whether Indian or not. (Cong. Rec. June 17, 1894, p. 2031.)

It requires no strained construction of language to interpret the phrase "or any heirs of such member" in accordance with this intent and purpose. The phraseology of section 4 suffers from the looseness of which is incident to the legislative process of amendment. Grammatical rules, such as that requiring a definite antecedent for the word "such," are not always religiously observed in the closing days of a Congressional session. In the phrase "heirs of such member" the reference of the word "such" is supplied not by any clear grammatical antecedent but by the fact that the "member" chiefly considered throughout the section, though never expressly named, is the testator. This is not the only evidence in the statute where the word "such" cannot be construed by simple application of the rules of grammar. (See the initial words of Sec. 17.)

To conclude legal usage requires that the phrase "heirs of such member" must refer to the heirs of an individual deceased. *Memo of heirs vivants*. The only deceased person considered in the section is the testator. Evidence of the intent of Congress indicates that it is the testator's heirs that are being considered. I am of the opinion that the phrase "heirs of such member" should properly be construed to mean "heirs of the testator."

#### C. PARTITION AND SALE OF INHERITED ALLOTMENTS

In 1935, the National Resources Board published a study entitled 'Indian Land Tenure, Economic Status, and Population Trends.' Its authors had studied, among others, the problems resulting from the partition and sale of inherited allotments. Their comments on this subject are particularly enlightening.

In 1902 pressure for legislation which would authorize the sale of leasehold allotments could no longer be resisted. The passage of the act of May 27, 1902 (32 Stat. 245, 277)<sup>104</sup> opened the sluiceway for a wholesale disposition of the Indian landed estate.<sup>105</sup> A few years later (1906) it was complemented by another law which permitted the Secretary of the Interior to sell original allotments, as well.

The act of 1902 was later modified to provide a more solidly method of determining heirs, principally by the act of May 9, 1906 (34 Stat. 182), and the act of June 25, 1910 (36 Stat. 856, 859).

<sup>104</sup> Although such sale was provided for as early as 1902, no statutory provision for the determination of heirs by the Secretary of the Interior was made until 1910 (Act of June 25, 1910, § 6 Stat. 856). As a result, purchasers of allotted Indian lands from heirs of the allottee prior to 1910 found difficulty in obtaining loans upon such property because of the contention of the loan companies that there had not been formal determination of the heirs of the deceased allottee, by a court or official clothed with authority to make such determination and that in the absence of such proceedings the title was defective. A letter from the Secretary of the Interior to the Chairman of the Federal Home Loan Bank Board, presents a rather exhaustive review of authority on the validity of sale under the foregoing statutory provisions.

It has come to the attention of this Department that owners of lands whose title are founded upon deeds executed by the heirs of deceased Indian allottees and approved by the Secretary of the Interior prior to the enactment of the act of June 25, 1910 (36 Stat. 856), complaining jurisdiction upon the Secretary of the Interior to determine the heirs of such deceased Indians are experiencing difficulty in obtaining loans from the Federal Land banks and other government lending offices.

The principal trouble appears to be that the abstracts of title furnished by the applicant for the loan have not been as yet been a formal determination of the heirs of the deceased Indian allottees by a court or official clothed with authority to make such determination, and in the meantime, the title in question has been taken that the title is defective. We believe this position no takes is justifiable on the basis of the recognition of the legal effect of the deeds from these Indian heirs.

The deeds under consideration were executed and approved in accordance with regulations prescribed by the Secretary of

Upon the death of an allottee their heirs from possible methods of disposing of the estate.

(1) The Secretary of the Interior could issue for patent to the heirs as a group or otherwise remove the restrictions.

(2) The estate could be physically partitioned among

the Indians under authority of section 7 of the act of May 27 1902 (32 Stat. 452-275) and the act of March 1 1907 (34 Stat. 1018-1019). The pertinent provisions of these acts read see 7, Act of 1902.

"That the adult heirs of any deceased Indian to whom a trust or other profit containing restrictions upon alienation has been or shall be conveyed in lands allotted to him or her and convey the lands inherited from such decedent but in case of minor heirs their interests shall be sold only by a guardian duly appointed by the proper court upon the order of such court made upon petition filed by the guardian but all such conveyances shall be subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior and shall not convey a full title in the purchaser the same as if a final patent without restriction upon the alienation had been issued to the allottee." \* \* \* [This supplied]

Act of 1907

"That any noncompliant Indian to whom a patent containing restrictions against alienation has been issued for an allotment of land in severalty, under any law or treaty to whom any heirs in interest in any allotment by inheritance may sell or convey all or any part of such allotment or such inherited interest on such terms and conditions and under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe and the proceeds derived therefrom shall be used for the benefit of the allottee or his or disposing of his land interest." \* \* \* The Secretary of the Interior in the report of Indian Affairs, and any consequences made hereunder and approved by the Secretary of the Interior shall convey full title in the land or interest so sold the same as if a final patent had been issued to the allottee." [This supplied]

In considering the foregoing statutory provisions it is well to point out that the courts were without jurisdiction to determine the heirs of deceased Indian allottees (Murray v. Kallstrom, 204 U. S. 438) and that other than the Secretary of the Interior they viewed no tribunal with jurisdiction to make such a determination. But Congress has provided that the heirs of deceased allottees it was not essential that the heirs be first determined and the acts of 1902 and 1907 reason why Congress desired to confer upon the Secretary of the Interior by necessary implication, the authority to determine the heirs of deceased allottees. Further, the act makes provision for formal notice and hearing for the determination of heirs but regulations were proposed and promulgated by the Secretary of the Interior providing that when a deed or other instrument conveying inherited lands was submitted to him for approval it should be accompanied by the following data concerning the heirs of the deceased allottee:

"In a certificate issued by two members of a business committee if there be more than six at least two recognized chiefs or in two small reliable members of the tribe, setting forth that the allottee to whom the land was originally allotted is dead giving as clearly as possible the date of death. Such certificate shall also show the names and ages of the heirs, adults and minors, of such deceased allottee but the Department reserves the right to require, in its judgment it shall be considered necessary, such further and additional evidence relative to heirship as may be deemed proper. If the persons who testify to the death of the allottee are from their own knowledge unable to certify as to who are the heirs (with proper exceptions in the case of deceased allottee, on additional certificate made by persons of one of the three classes herein specified, showing who are the heirs and giving their names and ages (adults and minors) must be furnished."

It has been the uniform practice and policy of the Department to require the approval by the Secretary of the Interior of a deed based upon proof of heirship furnished in accordance with the above regulations as having the effect of finally determining the heirs and conveying the full title to the purchaser in the legislative declaration in the acts of 1902 and 1907 that such an approved deed shall convey full title to the purchaser the same as if a final patent had been issued to the allottee or purchaser. While the authorities are not in entire harmony, the better view appears to be the departmental position.

The remainder of the letter above quoted analyses the cases supporting (1) *Osawa v. Boston Steele*, et al., 23 Kans 872 (1890), *Egan v. McDonald*, 188 N W 915 (1925) *Helton v. Morgan*, 283 Fed 483 (D C E D Wash 1922), *Davidson v. Robinson*, 92 Okla 121, 218 Pac 878 (1923) and opposing the foregoing conclusion. (Even cases which deny him the right to successful alienation under the circumstances considered indicate that successful approval confers a prima facie title good until someone else shows a better title. See *Hightook v. Gove*, 179 N W 12 (1920), *Thipp v. Sifers*, 181 N W 887 (1921), *Horn v. Ne Gon Ah-N Quisno*, 192 N W 368 (1923).)

the heirs and either trust or fee patents issued to them individually."

(3) The estate could be retained by the superintendent and leased for the benefit of the heirs.

(4) The estate could be sold under Government supervision and the proceeds distributed among the heirs.

Partition of estates is a common procedure when the number of heirs is small but small families are not the rule among Indians, and the very tardy process of probate in the Office of Indian Affairs causes long periods of time, often running into years, to elapse before the heirs are determined. In the meantime, new heirs may have been born, and the heirs of the original allottee may have died.

The leasing of hereditary allotments is a more frequent procedure, with consequences, to be noted later. But it is more important to note here that under the act of 1902 a single "competent" heir could demand the sale of the whole allotment. Even though an indemnification may flow from the sale of the hereditary lands, it is actually powerless to prevent it. It perpetually faces the dilemma of either permitting the land to be sold, or exerting its influence to let in the land in the ownership of the heirs and to leave it. So long as the allotment is held intact, it is subject to progressive subdivision by the death of heirs, and the resulting fragmentation of the equities.

If the estate is put up for sale, Indians rarely have the cash to buy it and the allotment almost invariably passes to white ownership. A strong pressure to sell comes from the Indian heirs themselves because of their lack of experience with the white man's property system. Contrary to the hopeful idealism of the proponents of the allotment system, the Indians have not acquired the white man's respect for "land in severalty." Unrestricted, individual ownership, as contrasted with their own communal ownership, tempts Indians to sell their land or asset to be disposed of for cash to meet everyday wants rather than to work it for an income."

Dr. John R. Swanton of the Bureau of American Ethnology recently wrote: "Our own attempts to shift this land to a white title in order to enable the Indians to sell the land that had been sold to be used to furnish a living with the addition of labor instead of being sold outright."

The result of this legislation was exactly what would be expected—a rapid dissipation of capital assets. From 1908, when the first sales were made, to 1931, sales of hereditary land totaled 1,129,051 acres, most of which was spent as income. Desperately in need of the steady income which the application of labor to these lands would have provided, Indians were nevertheless persuaded to divest themselves of the one asset which they needed most to insure their own survival. (Pp 15-17)

With the stoppage of further allotment virtually insured under the Wheeler Howard Act, all the land now in the possession of original allottees will pass into the hereditary stage in the next generation. Sales of land to other than Indian tribes or corporations were also prohibited. It is, therefore, a definite certainty that the area of hereditary lands will steadily increase in the immediate future, and inasmuch as the Wheeler Howard Act left untouched the present system of hereditary, except to restrict inheritance to members of a tribe or their descendants, (thus preventing the sale of the land to the problem of what to do with these lands becomes of paramount importance. At present the hereditary lands are 12

\* The Act of May 18, 1916 80 Stat 122, 127 25 U S C 479 provides:

"If the Secretary of the Interior shall find that an inherited trust allotment or allotments are capable of being put to the advantage of the heirs he may cause such lands to be partitioned among the holders of such allotments, patents in fee to be issued to the competent heirs by white and trust patents to be issued to the incompetent heirs for the lands respectively and to hold the same in trust until the trust terminates in accordance with the terms of the original patent or order of extension of the trust period set out in said patent

For regulations regarding applications for partitions of inherited allotment, see 25 C F R 241.5, regarding sales of hereditary lands, see 25 C F R 241.9-241.12

percent of all Indian lands and 35 percent of the allotted lands.

\*See 1 prohibits further allotment, but by sec. 15 the whole act may be rejected by a negative vote of a majority of eligible voters of a band of tribe.  
b1c 4

These township trusts are potentially one of the most important of the Indian resources. (P 15)

The present Federal policy and objectives relating to Indian land have recently been stated in a Handbook of Indian Land Policy and Manual of Procedures prepared by the Office of Indian Affairs.<sup>128</sup>

By exchange of allotments for assignments the problem of the sale and partition of inherited lands is finding a solution and the federal Indian land policy is being carried forward. Section 5 of the Act of June 18, 1894,<sup>129</sup> has provided for the acquisition of land by the Secretary of the Interior for an Indian tribe, through purchase, gift, exchange, or assignment, or through relinquishment of land by individual Indians. It has been held that the purpose of "providing land for Indians" is served by an exchange transaction whereby an individual Indian transfers allotted land to the tribe in exchange for an assignment of occupancy rights in the same or in another tract, since the tribe

<sup>128</sup> The primary object of Indian land policy is to save and to provide for the Indian people adequate land in such a form and in such an amount with such proper usage that they may subsist on it permanently by their own labor.

Indian land policy shall have for its purpose the organization and consolidation of Indian lands into proper units, considering the use to be made of the land the type of labor and capital investment to be applied thereon, and the technical capacities and habits of cooperation of the Indians concerned.

Indian land policy definitely looks toward the substitution of Indian use for non-Indian use of land in lands.

Implicit in all of the above is the responsibility of affording the Indians the necessary credit and technical training to make possible the best economic use of their lands.

Indian land tenure policy shall be suitably adapted to various solutions not only as to whole tribes, but also as to actual communities within any particular tribe, and where the facts so indicate, to individual cases.

Indian land policy should take into account and should seek to contribute to the solution of the land policy problems of the Government as a whole.

In the protection and enlargement of an adequate land base, due consideration must be given to the preservation of those Indian cultural, social and economic values and institutions which have in the past sustained and the now sustaining their economic and spiritual integrity and which may hold important possibilities for the future.

Indian land policy shall seek the most rapid possible reduction of uneconomic and nonproductive administrative expenditures, particularly in connection with the management of township lands.

In view of the limited amount of funds available for the enlargement of the Indian land base, preference in the application of these funds shall be given to those reservations showing a readiness to cooperate in order to secure the advantages, and to those showing a critical shortage of resources, and within these reservations, preferences shall be given to those communities definitely Indian in character.

In the process of simplifying the ownership pattern on Indian reservations, tribal funds, BIA land acquisition appropriations, or other applicable funds may be used (in default of other preferable methods) for the consolidation of Indian owned lands whenever such use supplies an essential element in improving the economy of the tribe, and reducing costs of administration.

The acquisition of land for Indians shall be for Indian use and upon adequate evidence that it will be used by Indians. In all cases where it is practicable, the acquisition should be carried out in response to the request of the Indians and upon evidence furnished by them of their determination to use the land.

Funds according to tribes from the past or present disposal of capital assets shall be used to the largest feasible extent for the creation of new productive resources. (Handbook, 1989, Pt. III (1988), pp. 1-3)

<sup>129</sup> 48 Stat. 954, 26 U.S.C. 485

(though this transaction requires a definite interest in the land over and above the trustor's retained occupancy right.<sup>130</sup> By means of this exchange provision the tribe may acquire Indian allotments or township lands and may designate various parcels of tribal land which are not needed for any tribal enterprise as suitable for exchange. Where a tribe has funds in its tribal treasury or in the United States Treasury, it may decide to use a portion of such funds to buy up lands from Indians who have holdings in the area under consideration. Where the land is in township status, if the tribe and all the heirs are unable to agree among themselves on the terms of purchase, the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe the method of sale and valuation.

There is no reason why a tribe may not purchase allotted lands in township status where such lands are offered for sale by the Secretary of the Interior. The mechanics of such a transaction are set forth in a memorandum of the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior<sup>131</sup> in the following words:

It will be noted that section 372 of United States Code, title 25, requires that upon completion of the payment of the purchase price a patent in fee shall issue to the purchaser. Does this requirement make impossible sales to individual Indians, to Indian tribes, or to the Secretary of the Interior in trust for such tribes or individuals?

So far as direct sales to Indian tribes are concerned, there is nothing to prevent the issuance of a patent in fee to an Indian tribe. The issuance of patents to an Indian tribe is provided for by the following statute: Act of January 12, 1893 (26 Stat. 702), providing for patents to Mission Bands, jointly with Cheyokes, December 29, 1885 (7 Stat. 478) granting land to Cheyoke Nations.

After issuance of such patent, however, an organized tribe might, under section 5 of the act of June 18, 1894, surrender legal title to the land, if it so chose, to the United States, retaining equitable ownership of the land. A tribe not within the provisions of that act could not surrender such legal title.

The necessity for issuance of a fee patent which issues when township land is sold by the Secretary of the Interior, does not arise where the conveyance of land is made by all the interested heirs. Such conveyance, made on a restricted deed form, conveys only the same interest as is held by the heirs.

The question of issuing fee patents to Indian purchasers of land does not arise on reservations subject to the act of June 18, 1894, since on such reservations direct sales to individual Indians are prohibited. A related question, however, arises with respect to sales of land to the United States in trust for a tribe or individual Indian under the provisions of section 5 of the said act, which authorizes the Secretary of the Interior:

"to acquire through purchase, relinquishment, gift, exchange, or assignment, any interest in lands, water, rights, or surface rights to lands, within or without existing reservations, including trust or otherwise restricted allotments, whether the allottee be living or deceased, for the purpose of providing land for Indians."

The statute in question specifically provides, with respect to the tenure of lands so acquired:

"Title to any lands or rights acquired pursuant to this act shall be taken in the name of the United States in trust for the Indian tribe or individual Indian for which the land is acquired, and such lands or rights shall be exempt from State and local taxation."

<sup>130</sup> Memo Sol. I D, April 4, 1895

<sup>131</sup> Memo Sol. I D, August 14, 1897

In the light of these provisions it may be asked whether the requirement of section 372 that a fee patent issued to the purchaser of heirship lands remains in force, on reservations subject to the act of June 18, 1894. If it is in force then either the Secretary of the Interior must issue a fee patent to the United States, or, if this is impossible, he must refrain from requiring heirship land under the provisions of section 372. If the latter view is taken one of the principal objects of section 5 of the act of June 18, 1894, would be defeated. If the former view is taken a legal absurdity is presented. In the face of this dilemma it appears to be a reasonable view that the requirement of section 372 that a patent in fee be issued to the purchaser, is inapplicable where the United States is itself the purchaser, and that in this case section 5 of the act of June 18, 1894, supersedes and amends the relevant provisions of section 372. This view is in accord with the familiar rule that a limiting statute does not run against the sovereign.

It is my opinion, therefore, that the Secretary of the Interior on reservations subject to the act of June 18, 1894, may acquire heirship land on behalf of individual Indians or Indian tribes, on the same terms as a private individual might acquire such lands under section 372, and that title to such lands is to be held by the United States in trust for the Indian or Indian tribe for which the land is purchased.

In accordance with the foregoing analysis you are advised that existing departmental regulations and orders affecting the sale of heirship lands may be amended to provide for the following transactions, under existing law.

1. On all reservations heirship lands may be sold by the Secretary of the Interior to an Indian tribe. Such sale may be made with or without the consent of the

interested heirs. It is necessary that reasonable compensation be paid by the tribe for the land thus sold. Such reasonable compensation may be based upon the actual income producing prospect and record of the land, due consideration being given to the expenses of leasing cited by [the] heirship status insofar as these expenses would be deducted from the sums paid to the lessees. Except for the requirement that 10 percent of the purchase price be paid in advance, the terms of payment are within the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior.

2. On reservations within the act of June 18, 1894, sales of heirship land may be made to the United States in trust for the tribe or for individual Indians. With respect to the terms and manner of sale and the basis of valuation the comments noted in the preceding paragraph appear equally applicable.

3. On reservations not within the act of June 18, 1894, heirship lands may be sold directly to individual Indians or to an Indian cooperative or tribe. It is within the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior to make such sales with or without the consent of the heirs, without calling for bids or after bids have been called for. Patents in fee must issue to the purchaser upon final completion of payments for the land, unless all the heirs join in making a conveyance of the trust title. If bids are called for it would be proper to limit the bidder either to Indians or to Indians of a particular tribe or to Indians interested in the particular estate or to any other reasonably defined class of Indians, provided that in any case a fair price, in the light of all circumstances, is obtained for the land that is sold. With respect to the terms and manner of sale, and the basis of valuation the comments noted in the first paragraph of this summary appear equally applicable.

## CHAPTER 12

# FEDERAL SERVICES FOR INDIANS

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 Introduction.....	237	Section 7 Reclamation and irrigation.....	248
Section 2 Education.....	238	A Operation and maintenance charges.....	250
A Development of federal policy.....	238	B Blackfeet project.....	250
B Eligibility for school attendance.....	241	C Colorado River project.....	250
C Compulsory education.....	241	D Crook irrigation project.....	251
D Use of funds for Indian education.....	242	E Flathead irrigation project.....	251
Section 3 Health services.....	243	F Fort Belknap project.....	251
Section 4 Rations, relief, and rehabilitation.....	244	G Fort Hall project.....	251
Section 5 Social security benefits.....	245	H Fort Peck Reservation.....	251
Section 6 Federal loans.....	245	I San Carlos project.....	252
A Loans under special Indian legislation.....	245	J Uintah.....	252
B Loans under general legislation.....	247	K Wind River.....	252
		L Yakima.....	252
		Section 8 Federal legal services.....	252

## SECTION 1. INTRODUCTION

Federal services which the United States provides for Indians are frequently viewed as a matter of charity. The erroneous notion is widely prevalent that in their relationship with the Federal Government the Indians have been the regular recipients of unearned bounties. In reality, federal services were, in earlier years, largely a matter of self-protection for the white man or partial compensation to the Indian for land cessions or other benefits received by the United States. In recent years such services have been continued, partly as a result of the failure of the states to render certain essential public services to the Indians, because of their special relation to the Federal Government.

In the treaty period<sup>1</sup> of our Indian relations, in order to induce the Indian to cease active resistance to further encroachment upon his domain, it was thought wise to educate him in the white man's culture. The Indian's white neighbor would instruct him to seek paths of peace rather than the ways of war, to replace the tomahawk with a religion of love for his fellow man. To obviate responsibility for his support, or the alternative of slow starvation, they would instruct him in the ways of the farm, in the arts of the frontier, and in means of earning a livelihood on his greatly reduced land.<sup>2</sup> This offered a practical alternative to a policy of warfare which, it has been estimated, cost the Federal Government in the neighborhood of one million dollars for each dead Indian.

Reservations were located in the vicinities of army posts. In the panic of an epidemic of smallpox, as a matter of protection to prevent the spread of this disease through the entire population, a statute<sup>3</sup> was enacted which provided for vacat-

tion of Indians by army surgeons.<sup>4</sup> This statute is illustrative of the way in which the Indian health service and other federal services originated.

In making treaties with the Indian tribes, the United States generally offered a more or less substantial *quid pro quo* for land ceded by the Indian tribes in such treaties and for other promises contained in such treaties that were advantageous to the United States.<sup>5</sup> This *quid pro quo* might be, and generally was, defined in terms of money, although in some cases the United States undertook to furnish specified supplies or services for a designated period of years. The Indians had little use for money. The practice therefore arose of placing the money in trust in the United States Treasury and expending either the principal or the interest of such funds, in accordance with the wishes of the Indians, for food, clothing, livestock, farm implements, and the pay of blacksmiths, teachers, physicians, and other skilled employees. To this day tribal funds are expended for these purposes.<sup>6</sup>

When treaty and tribal funds of a given tribe came to an end, the Federal Government might have discharged the teachers, physicians, blacksmiths, and other employees maintained by it pursuant to treaty obligation, but many factors, some of them humanitarian, combined to prevent the abandonment of these services. Instead, an increasing amount of what were called "gratuity appropriations," as distinct from treaty appropriations and tribal fund appropriations, was devoted to the maintenance of these various federal services in the Indian country. According to contemporary critics, and according to subsequent official investigations, these funds were in many

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 8.

<sup>2</sup> 8 Am. State Papers (Indian Affairs, class II, vol. 2) 1815-27, pp. 160-161.

<sup>3</sup> Act of May 5, 1882, 4 Stat. 514.

<sup>4</sup> Appropriations for this service have since been regularly enacted. See Chapter 4, sec. 17.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 9C(8).

<sup>6</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 28.



cases extravagantly and wastefully disbursed. Itigation projects, for example, frequently were launched without the benefit of expert technical advice and were consequently impracticably constructed and ill advised.<sup>1</sup>

With the increase of gratuity appropriations the picture of the Indian as a charity ward came to loom large in the public eye. In 1875 Congress provided that Indians receiving supplies from the Federal Government might be required to perform actual labor as a condition precedent, quite ignoring the fact that many Indians were no more "charity wards" than were holders of federal bonds or other legal obligation of the Federal Government.

In an effort to remove federal services to Indians from a gratuity basis, Congress has frequently provided that various expenditures made for the benefit, or supposed benefit, of Indians should be "reimbursable," that is to say, repaid to the United States Treasury out of the future income of the tribes concerned. Even where Congress has not so provided, the rule has been developed in many jurisdictional acts and court cases that appropriations which were supposed to be gratuities when made are to be reimbursed out of judgments rendered in favor of an Indian tribe.<sup>2</sup>

More recently the effort to remove federal Indian services from a charitable basis has taken the form of legislation authorizing the Secretary of the Interior to assess fees for various acts, and services benefiting Indians.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Hearings, Sen. Subcom. of Comm. on Ind. Aff. 71st Cong. 2d Sess., Survey of Conditions of the Indians in the United States, pt. 8, Eagle Report, January 21, 1930, p. 2283.

<sup>2</sup> Act of March 8, 1875 18 Stat. 430, 449, 25 U. S. C. 137.

<sup>3</sup> *Orange Tribe of Indians v. United States*, 60 U. S. 61 (1828), 40 Fed. Cl. 278 U. S. 811, 68 U. S. 788 *Choctaw Nation v. United States*, 31 U. S. 1 (1806), cert. den. 308 U. S. 844, Act of June 7, 1924 43 Stat. 587 (*Choctaw and Chickasaw*), *Fort Belknap Indians v. United States*, 72 U. S. 318 (1868), Act of February 11, 1920 41 Stat. 101.

<sup>4</sup> Section I of the Act of May 9, 1938 52 Stat. 291 312, 113 114, amended by the Act of May 10, 1939 53 Stat. 708, 25 U. S. C. 961 provides:

In the execution of the Secretary of the Interior and under such rules and regulations as may be prescribed by him, fees may be collected from individual Indians for services performed for them, and any fees so collected shall be credited into the Treasury of the United States.

Of Act of January 24, 1923, 42 Stat. 1174 1185, 25 U. S. C. 177 is relating to probate fees, and Act of February 14, 1920 41 Stat. 104 415 amended March 4, 1868, 41 Stat. 7417, 25 U. S. C. 414, relating to various management fees for Indian forestry work.

In recent years, and particularly since 1924, when citizenship was granted to all Indians not already citizens,<sup>4</sup> the states have assumed a larger role in supplying the Indians with essential public services. In 1920<sup>5</sup> the Secretary of the Interior was authorized to permit state agents to make inspections of health and educational conditions on the reservations and to enforce sanitation and quarantine regulations or to enforce compulsory school attendance of Indian pupils, as provided by the law of the state, and since 1934<sup>6</sup> the Secretary has been authorized to enter into contracts with state or other bodies for education, medical attention, agricultural assistance, and social welfare, including relief of distress, of Indians, and to authorize the state to utilize existing federal school buildings, hospitals, and other facilities.

Some states have taken kindly to their added responsibility, others have continued to discriminate against the Indian, as, for instance, those states which deny the Indian services available under the Social Security Act.<sup>7</sup>

The year 1884 marked a momentous change in Indian policy. The then prevalent economic conditions brought on by the depression emphasized the desperate plight of the Indian. The Wheeler Howard Act<sup>8</sup> was passed. A program was launched, with the assistance of federal and tribal funds, to organize and incorporate Indian tribes, to launch tribal enterprises, to enable tribes and tribal members to become self-sufficient by their own efforts in lines of endeavor congenial to native tastes and talents, and to make possible the transfer to the organized tribes of responsibility for services hitherto performed by the Federal Government.

This program is still too close to its inception to warrant estimation of its success. It may be said, however, that the prevailing tendency today is to turn over to the organized tribes, or to the states, white stock tribes and states are willing to accept such burdens, an increasing measure of responsibility for the performance of services which have historically been rendered to the Indians by the Federal Government.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 2.

<sup>6</sup> Act of February 15, 1928, 45 Stat. 1185, 25 U. S. C. 231. See Chapter 8, sec. 2.

<sup>7</sup> Act of April 16, 1934 48 Stat. 590, amended June 4, 1936, 40 Stat. 1483, 25 U. S. C. 452, 454.

<sup>8</sup> Act of August 14, 1884, 49 Stat. 620. See sec. 5, *infra*, and see Chapter 8, sec. 5.

<sup>9</sup> Act of June 15, 1934 48 Stat. 984, 25 U. S. C. 461 et seq. See Chapter 4, sec. 18.

<sup>10</sup> See Chapter 2, sec. 8C.

## SECTION 2. EDUCATION

### A DEVELOPMENT OF FEDERAL POLICY

"Father," requested Complanter, speaking for the Senecas in 1792, "you give us leave to speak our minds concerning the tilling of the ground. We ask you to teach us to plough and to grind corn. . . . that you will send smiths among us, and, above all, that you will teach our children to read and write, and our women to spin and to weave."<sup>1</sup> With equal

warmth George Washington replied, through the Secretary of War, that the Senecas might be sure of his willingness and desire to impart to them "the blessings of husbandry, and the arts" and that a number of their children would be received to be educated either at the time of the treaty, or at such a time and place as they might agree upon.<sup>2</sup>

In such a fashion did the President of the United States and a chief of an Indian tribe first discuss the possibility of governmental assistance in bringing to the red man the advan-

<sup>1</sup> American State Papers (Indian Affairs, class II vol. 1) (1789-1815) p. 144.

<sup>2</sup> That such was not always the attitude of all Indians is clear in an excerpt from Benjamin Franklin's "Remarks Concerning the Savages of North America." In 1744, after the Treaty of Lancaster in Pennsylvania between the government of Virginia and the Six Nations (Iroquois Confederation) offered to let the chiefs to educate six of their sons at a college in Williamsburg, Va. They received this reply:

Several of our young people were formerly brought up in the college of the Northern Province, they were instructed in all your sciences, but when they came back to us, they were like runners, ignorant of every means of living in the woods, unable

to bear either cold or hunger, knew neither how to build a cabin, take a deer or kill an enemy, spoke our language imperfectly, and therefore neither fit for hunters, warriors, or councilors. They were totally good for nothing. We are however not the Jews obliged by your kind offer, though we decline accepting it. And to show our grateful sense of it if the Seneca of Virginia will send us a dozen of their sons, we will take great care of their education. Instruct them in all we know, and make more of them (Benjamin Franklin, *Two Treatises* (2d ed., 1764), pp. 28-29).

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 196.

ances of a European civilization." Although this particular arrangement was destined not to materialize, the interest it aroused quickened, and on December 2, 1794, educational provisions were included in a treaty negotiated with the Oneida, Delaware, and Stockbridge Indians.<sup>1</sup> This was followed in 1805 by a treaty with the Kakaskia Indians which provided an annual contribution for 7 years for a Roman Catholic priest who, among other things, was to instruct in literature.<sup>2</sup> Thus began the practice, which persisted up to the end of treaty making in 1871, of including educational provisions in treaties.<sup>3</sup> The provisions covered technical education in agriculture and the mechanical arts,<sup>4</sup> support of reservation schools,<sup>5</sup> boarding

schools, or schools and teachers generally,<sup>6</sup> and contributions for educational purposes.<sup>7</sup>

On March 30, 1802, Congress made provision for the expenditure of a sum of money not to exceed \$15,000 per annum to promote civilization among the aborigines.<sup>8</sup> For another decade this action stood as the sole indication that Congress had recognized its responsibility for Indian education, then, in his first message to Congress, President Monroe called for additional efforts to preserve, improve, and civilize the original inhabitants.<sup>9</sup> This recommendation was acted upon 2 years later when Congress enacted a provision which still stands as the organic legal basis for most of the educational work of the Indian Service. As embodied in the United States Code, the law declares:

" \* \* \* The President may, in every case where he shall judge improvement in the habits and conditions of such

<sup>1</sup> For additional examples see Bureau of Education, Special Report on Indian Education and Civilization (1888), Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 95, 48th Cong., 2d sess. pp. 101-107. The annual reports of the Commissioners of Indian Affairs throw considerable light on the development of the federal educational policy regarding the Indians. See Chapter 2, sec. 2.

<sup>2</sup> 7 Stat. 47, 49. These provisions allowed for the employment of one or two persons for 3 years to instruct in the arts of the miller and sawyer.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of August 18, 1809, 7 Stat. 79, 79.

<sup>4</sup> The educational provisions of the various treaties are unified and summarized in the following government documents: *Indian Training Schools for Indiana* (Louisville, Ill. Rept. No. 29, 40th Cong., 1st sess. (1870)). *Indian Training Schools for Indiana*, Ill. Rept. No. 762, 40th Cong., 2d sess. (1880). *Treaty Items*, Indian Appropriation Bill H. Doc. No. 1030, 62d Cong., 2d sess. (1914).

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of August 18, 1804, with Delaware Tribe, 7 Stat. 61; Treaty of August 29, 1821, with Ottawa, Chippewa, and Potawatamie, 7 Stat. 218; Treaty of February 12, 1825, with Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 237; Treaty of February 8, 1831, with Menominee Indians, 9 Stat. 342; Treaty of September 21, 1835, with the Ojibwa and Menominee, 7 Stat. 428; Treaty of March 28, 1838, with the Ottawa and Chippewa, 7 Stat. 491; Treaty of September 17, 1839, with the Sisseton and Foxe, etc., 7 Stat. 511; Treaty of October 17, 1840, with the Ojibwa, etc., 7 Stat. 524; Treaty of January 4, 1846, with the Cheyenne and Arapaho, 9 Stat. 821; Treaty of October 11, 1840, with the Winnebago Indians, 9 Stat. 878; Treaty of August 2, 1847, with the Chippewa, 9 Stat. 904; Treaty of October 18, 1847, with the Menominee Tribe, 9 Stat. 912; Treaty of July 25, 1851, with the Sioux, 10 Stat. 910; Treaty of August 7, 1851, with the Sioux Indians, 10 Stat. 954; Treaty of May 12, 1854, with the Menominee, 10 Stat. 1004; Treaty of December 26, 1854, with the Nequale, etc., Indians, 10 Stat. 2192; Treaty of October 17, 1855, with the Blackfoot Indians, 11 Stat. 687; Treaty of September 21, 1867, with the Pawnee, 11 Stat. 729; Treaty of January 22, 1867, with the Nez Perce, etc., 12 Stat. 927; Treaty of January 22, 1875, with the Kiowa, 12 Stat. 982; Treaty of January 11, 1875, with the Malah Tribe, 12 Stat. 939; Treaty of July 1, 1885, with the Quanaid, etc., Indians, 12 Stat. 971; Treaty of July 16, 1895, with the Flathead, etc., Indians, 12 Stat. 978; Treaty of December 21, 1895, with the Modoc, 12 Stat. 981; Treaty of October 18, 1896, with the Chippewa Indians, 14 Stat. 657; Treaty of June 14, 1890, with the Creek Nation, 14 Stat. 785; Treaty of February 18, 1897, with the Sac and Fox Indians, 15 Stat. 405; Treaty of February 18, 1897, with the Shawnee, etc., Sioux, 15 Stat. 608.

<sup>6</sup> Treaty of May 6, 1828, with the Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 811; Treaty of New Echota, December 20, 1825, with the Cherokee, 7 Stat. 475 (provides for common schools and " \* \* \* a literary institution of a higher order. " \* \* \*); Treaty of June 7, 1836, with the Potawatamie Nation, 8 Stat. 893; Treaty of September 4, 1854, with the Chippewa Indians, 10 Stat. 1109; Treaty of November 18, 1854, with the Cheyenne, etc., Indians, 10 Stat. 1122; Treaty of April 10, 1858, with the Lakota Sioux, 11 Stat. 748; Treaty of June 9, 1855, with the Walla-Walla, etc., Tribes, 12 Stat. 945; Treaty of June 11, 1855, with the Nez Perce, 12 Stat. 977; Treaty of March 1, 1855, with the Pima, 12 Stat. 987; Treaty of October 14, 1858, with the Lower Brule, Sioux, 14 Stat. 690; Treaty of February 23, 1867, with the Sequoia, etc., 15 Stat. 518; Treaty of October 21, 1867, with the Kiowa and Comanche Indians, 15 Stat. 681; Treaty of October 21, 1867, with the Kiowa, Comanche, and Apache Indians, 15 Stat. 689; Treaty of October 28, 1867, with the Cheyenne and Arapaho Indians, 15 Stat. 693; Treaty of March 2, 1868, with the Ute Indians, 15 Stat. 610; Treaty of April 22, 1868, with the Sioux Nation, 15 Stat. 688; Treaty of May 7, 1868, with the Crow Indians, 15 Stat. 649; Treaty of May 10, 1868, with the Northern Cheyenne and Northern Arapaho, 15 Stat. 685; Treaty of June 1, 1868, with the Navajo Tribe, 15 Stat. 687; Treaty of July 8, 1868, with the Eastern Band Shooshone and Bannock Tribe of Indians, 15 Stat. 678.

An unusual educational provision appears in the Treaty of May 6, 1828, with the Cherokee Nation, *supra*, Art. 5 reads in part:

" \* \* \* It is further agreed by the United States, to pay two thousand dollars annually, to the Cherokee for ten years to be expended under the direction of the President of the United States in the education of their children in their own country in letters and the mechanic arts. Also one thousand dollars towards the purchase of a printing press and types to aid the Cherokee in the progress of education, and to benefit and enlighten them as a people in their own and our language. (P. 413)

<sup>7</sup> Treaty of November 15, 1827, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 407; Treaty of September 16, 1828, with the Winnebago Nation, 7 Stat. 870; Treaty of May 24, 1834, with the Chippewa Indians, 9 Stat. 450; Treaty of June 9, 1803, with the Nez Perce Tribe, 14 Stat. 647; Treaty of March 10, 1867, with the Chippewa of Mississippi, 16 Stat. 719.

<sup>8</sup> Treaty of October 18, 1820, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 210; Treaty of June 8, 1825, with the Navajo Nation, 8 Stat. 218; Treaty of August 8, 1826, with the Chippewa Tribe, 7 Stat. 200; Treaty of October 21, 1827, with the Sac and Fox Indians, 7 Stat. 543; Treaty of March 17, 1842, with the Wyandott Nation, 11 Stat. 551; Treaty of May 15, 1846, with the Comanche, etc., Indians, 9 Stat. 844; Treaty of June 8, 1847, with the Menominee Indians, 9 Stat. 821; Treaty of November 15, 1848, with the Rogue River, 10 Stat. 1119; Treaty of November 30, 1854, with the Umpqua, etc., Indians, 10 Stat. 1223; Treaty of July 31, 1855, with the Ojibwa and Chippewa, 11 Stat. 921; Treaty of February 5, 1868, with the Stockbridge and Muncie Tribe, 11 Stat. 603; Treaty of June 8, 1875, with the Kiowa Indians, 12 Stat. 951; Treaty of June 28, 1885, with the Oregon Indians, 12 Stat. 903; Treaty of June 10, 1888, with the Sioux Bands, 12 Stat. 1081; Treaty of July 18, 1889, with the Chippewa Bands, 12 Stat. 1107; Treaty of February 18, 1891, with the Apish and Cheyenne Indians, 12 Stat. 110; Treaty of March 6, 1891, with the Wyandott, Sac, Foxe, and Iowa, 12 Stat. 1171; Treaty of June 24, 1892, with the Ottawa Indians, 12 Stat. 1247; Treaty of May 7, 1894, with the Chippewa, 13 Stat. 603; Treaty of August 12, 1895, with the Snake Indians, 14 Stat. 688; Treaty of March 21, 1896, with the Menominee Indians, 14 Stat. 771; Treaty of April 28, 1896, with the Shawnee and Chickasaw Nation, 11 Stat. 760; Treaty of August 12, 1898, with the Nez Perce Tribe, 15 Stat. 603.

<sup>9</sup> Treaty of October 18, 1826, with the Potawatamie Tribe, 7 Stat. 289; Treaty of September 20, 1828, with the Potawatamie Indians, 7 Stat. 817; Treaty of July 15, 1830, with the Sac and Foxe, etc., 7 Stat. 428; Treaty of September 27, 1830, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 744; Treaty of March 24, 1832, with the Creek Tribe, 7 Stat. 806; Treaty of February 14, 1838, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 417; Treaty of January 14, 1846, with the Kansas Indians, 9 Stat. 849; Treaty of April 1, 1850, with the Wyandott Tribe, 9 Stat. 987; Treaty of March 18, 1854, with the Ottawa and Menominee Indians, 10 Stat. 1048; Treaty of May 6, 1854, with the Delaware Tribe, 10 Stat. 1048; Treaty of May 10, 1854, with the Shawnee, 10 Stat. 1056; Treaty of May 17, 1854, with the Ioway Tribe, 10 Stat. 1060; Treaty of May 30, 1854, with the Kickapoo, etc., Indians, 10 Stat. 1052; Treaty of January 22, 1855, with the Winnebago Bands, 10 Stat. 1144; Treaty of February 22, 1855, with the Chippewa Indians, 10 Stat. 1105; Treaty of June 22, 1858, with the Choctaw and Chickasaw Indians, 11 Stat. 611; Treaty of August 2, 1858, with the Chippewa Indians of Saginaw, 11 Stat. 611; Treaty of June 7, 1859, with the Cheyenne and Seminoles, 11 Stat. 697; Treaty of June 28, 1859, with the Kickapoo Tribe, 11 Stat. 628; Treaty of October 2, 1859, with the Chippewa Indians (Red Lake and Pembina Bands), 12 Stat. 687; Treaty of September 20, 1865, with the Oregon Indians, 14 Stat. 687.

<sup>10</sup> XXXI Annals of Congress, 18th Cong., 1st sess. (1817-18), p. 12; Act of March 8, 1819, 8 Stat. 616; B. S. 3071, 25 U. S. C. 271.

Indians practicable, and that the means of instruction can be introduced with their own consent, employ capable persons of good moral character in order to instruct them in the mode of agriculture suited to their situation, and for teaching their children in reading writing, and arithmetic, and performing such other duties, as may be required according to such instructions and rules as the President may give and prescribe for the regulation of their conduct in the discharge of their duties. A report of the proceedings adopted in the execution of this provision shall be annually laid before Congress.

This statute carried with it a permanent annual appropriation of \$10,000 "for the purpose of providing against the further decline and final extinction of the Indian tribes, adjoining the frontier settlements of the United States, and for introducing among them the habits and arts of civilization."

The expenditure of this fund occasioned no little difficulty. The President, anxious to apply it in the most effective manner possible, addressed a circular letter to those societies and individuals—usually missionary organizations—that had been prominent in the effort to civilize the Indians, offering the cooperation of the Government in their various enterprises. Soon the \$10,000 was apportioned among them and later, as treaty lands became available for this purpose, these, too, generally were disbursed to such establishments.

A significant development in the history of Indian education was the establishment by a number of Indian tribes of their own schools. As early as 1805, the Choctaw chiefs maintained a school with annuity funds.<sup>1</sup> In 1841 and 1842, before a number of states had provided for public schools, the Cherokee and Choctaw nations had put into operation a common school system.<sup>2</sup>

In 1855, the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, George W. Murray, reported that total expenditures for education among the Indian tribes during the 10 year period ending January 1, 1855, exceeded \$2,150,000. Apparently only a small portion of this sum was contributed directly by the Government, for the Commissioner's report shows that while \$102,107.14 had been furnished by the United States, \$424,180.11 had been added from Indian treaty funds, over \$400,000 had been paid out by Indian nations themselves, and \$30,000 had come from private benevolence.<sup>3</sup>

After the Civil War a more liberal policy for participation of the Government in the education of the Indians was pursued. In 1870, \$100,000 was set aside for this purpose,<sup>4</sup> and in succeeding years the sums allocated were sufficiently liberal to permit a definite expansion of activities.

By 1878, several nonreservation boarding schools had been opened. Indian youths from all parts of the country attended the United States Indian Training and Industrial School at Carlisle, Pennsylvania. Other schools were located at Chemawa, Oregon, Lawrence, Kansas (Haskell Institute), Genoa, Nebraska, and Chilocco, Indian Territory.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Act of March 8, 1810 8 Stat. 516. The repeal of this permanent appropriation was contemplated several times and finally accomplished in the Act of February 14, 1874, c. 138 17 Stat. 487, 491. This appropriation became known as the "civilization fund." <sup>2</sup> Blanch, *Educational Service for Indians*, Staff Study No. 18, prepared for the Advisory Committee on Education (1898), p. 82.

<sup>3</sup> 8 Am. State Papers (Indian Affairs, class II, vol. 2) 1815-27, pp. 200, 201.

<sup>4</sup> Blanch, *op. cit.*, p. 98.  
<sup>5</sup> Treaty of October 16, 1820, with the Choctaw Nation, Arts. 7 and 8, 7 Stat. 210.

<sup>6</sup> Blanch, *op. cit.*, p. 88.  
<sup>7</sup> Report of the Secretary of the Interior, Sen. Ex. Doc. No. 1, pt. 1, 84th Cong., 1st sess. (1885), p. 691.

<sup>8</sup> Act of July 15, 1870, 16 Stat. 885, 890.  
<sup>9</sup> Blanch, *op. cit.*, p. 84.

By the Act of July 31, 1882,<sup>6</sup> it was provided that abandoned military posts might be turned over to the Interior Department for the purpose of conducting therein Indian schools.

Government participation increased when, in 1890, the Indian Service

\*\*\* began to use public schools for the instruction of Indian children. Individual Indians had attended public schools before, but under the policy adopted in 1890 the Office of Indian Affairs reimbursed public schools for the actual increase in cost incurred by instructing the Indian children. The practice was in accordance with the ultimate plan of the Office of turning over the Indian day schools to the States as soon as white settlers and taxpayers were present in sufficient numbers to justify the establishment of local systems of schools. However, the use of public schools for educating Indian children did not become a common practice until after 1900, when it developed rapidly.<sup>7</sup>

The recent course of federal activity with respect to Indian education is charted in the following excerpt from a recent study prepared under the auspices of the President's Advisory Committee on Education:

The period since 1900 is marked by a number of changes. In 1906 the schools—several hundred day schools and a number of boarding schools—of the Five Civilized Tribes in Oklahoma, previously operated by the tribal governments, were placed in charge of the Office of Indian Affairs. At first they were operated under contract but later by the Office of Indian Affairs. A uniform course of study for Indian schools—now hardly to be regarded as a progressive step—was provided in 1910. In order to increase the efficiency of the teachers, provision was made in 1912 for educational leave not to exceed 15 days a year to attend teachers' institutes or training schools, and in 1922 this leave was increased to 30 days. A provision in 1928 permitted 60 days of educational leave in any 2 year period.

Some of the changes which occurred are reflected in the data on enrollment of Indians in schools. \*\*\* From 1900 to 1928 the enrollment increased from 26,451 to 89,802 or 164 percent. \*\*\*

Since then, a number of other changes have taken place, largely in response to criticism voiced by the Report of the Institute for Government Research, in 1928,<sup>8</sup> and the Report of the National Advisory Committee on Education in 1931.<sup>9</sup> These changes are summarized in additional passages from the 1930 Advisory Committee study:

\*\*\* A material change has occurred in the point of view of the education of Indians, and a program is being developed which seeks to relate instruction to the needs and interests of children as well as to develop initiative and independence. Much of the deadening routineism has been eliminated. Increased emphasis has been placed on community day schools, there has been a notable decrease in the enrollments of Government boarding schools, and the programs of the boarding schools have been improved to serve primarily the need for secondary education. Vocational education adapted to the needs of Indian children has received some attention. Provision has been made for the higher and technical education of Indian youth. Child labor in the schools has been reduced, although there is still too much of it in the elementary boarding schools. Improvement has been made in the educational personnel through higher requirements and increases in salaries. Congress has also made larger

<sup>10</sup> 22 Stat. 181.

<sup>11</sup> Blanch, *op. cit.*, pp. 94, 95.

<sup>12</sup> Blanch, *op. cit.*, pp. 87, 88.

<sup>13</sup> Mason, *The Problem of Indian Administration* (1928), c. IX.  
<sup>14</sup> Federal Relations to Education (1931).  
<sup>15</sup> The National Advisory Committee on Education was organized in 1929 by the Secretary of the Interior acting for the President.

appropriations to provide for larger expenditures per child in the school. Educational management has been somewhat decentralized, more control being given to the regional and local superintendents."

Another innovation in the Act of April 16, 1934,<sup>1</sup> commonly known as the Johnson O'Malley Act providing for Federal-State cooperation. Under the terms of this legislation, monies appropriated by Congress for Indian education may be turned over to "any State, Territory, or political subdivision thereof" or to "any State, university, college, or school" or "any appropriate State or private corporation, agency, or institution" under a contract by which the recipient of Federal funds undertakes to provide educational facilities in accord with standards established by the Secretary of the Interior to a specified number of Indian students. So far contracts in accordance with this act have been made with Arizona, California, Minnesota, and Washington.

In line with the foregoing tendency towards decentralization of Federal educational activities, it should be noted that in a long series of special statutes Congress has appropriated money directly to various counties and school districts for the maintenance of public schools attended by Indians.<sup>2</sup> Generally such statutes contain some such provision as the following:

\* \* \* That there is hereby authorized to be appropriated out of any monies \* \* \* for the purpose of cooperating with school district \* \* \* in the improvement and extension of public school buildings. *Provided* That the schools \* \* \* shall be available to both Indian and white children without discrimination, except that tuition may be paid for Indian children attending in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior. \* \* \*

From these varying treaty stipulations, statutory provisions, and government policies have emerged a number of problems concerning education of the Indian. Are all Indians eligible to attend Federal schools, state schools? (An Indian be compelled to attend schools? What is the limitation upon the use of funds for Indian education? At various times these and other questions have been dealt with judiciously and the substance and application of these decisions must be examined.

## B ELIGIBILITY FOR SCHOOL ATTENDANCE

The most important restriction imposed on the Indian's right to attend Federal schools is found in the provision that

\* \* \* No appropriation, except appropriations made pursuant to treaties, shall be used to educate children of less than one fourth Indian blood whose parents are citizens of the United States and of the State wherein they live and where there are adequate free school facilities provided.

This restriction, contained in the Appropriation Act of May 25, 1918,<sup>3</sup> has been embodied in title 27 of the United States Code as section 207.

<sup>1</sup> Blauch op cit, p 44

<sup>2</sup> Act of April 16 1934 c 147 48 Stat 806, amended by Act of June 4, 1936, 49 Stat 1455, 25 U S C 453-456

<sup>3</sup> Act of June 7, 1915 c 185, 40 Stat 827, Act of June 7 1915 c 189, 49 Stat 527, Act of June 7 1915 c 190, 49 Stat 828, Act of June 7, 1915 c 191, 49 Stat 828, Act of June 7 1915 c 192, 49 Stat 828, Act of June 7 1915 c 193, 49 Stat 829, Act of June 7, 1915 c 194, 49 Stat 830, Act of June 7, 1915 c 195, 49 Stat 830, Act of June 7, 1915 c 196, 49 Stat 830, Act of June 7, 1915 c 197, 49 Stat 830, Act of June 7, 1915 c 198, 49 Stat 831, Act of June 7, 1915 c 199, 49 Stat 831, Act of June 7 1915 c 200, 49 Stat 832, Act of June 7, 1915 c 201, 49 Stat 832, Act of June 7, 1915 c 202, 49 Stat 833, Act of June 11, 1915 c 215, 49 Stat 836, Act of June 11, 1915 c 216, 49 Stat 836, Act of August 9, 1915 c 527, 49 Stat 1018, Act of August 30, 1915 c 528, 49 Stat 1014

<sup>4</sup> Act of June 7, 1915 c 190, 49 Stat 828, supra

<sup>5</sup> C 85, 49 Stat 551, 964, Act of May 24, 1923, c 190, 42 Stat 552, 570, Act of May 15, 1916, c 185, 40 Stat 128, 125  
The Appropriation Act of May 15, 1916, declared that "the facilities of the Indian schools are needed for pupils of more than one fourth

At a time when allotment was considered a step towards the termination of governmental obligations, Congress thought it proper to enact a specific statute which declares that the fact of allotment shall not be construed as a reason for excluding the children of allottees from the benefit of Federal appropriations for education."

The eligibility of Indians to attend State schools is primarily a matter of State Law, and therefore need not be considered at this point. The existence of various Federal statutes designed to induce the States to offer education facilities to Indians has already been noted,<sup>6</sup> and the constitutional issues involved in State discrimination are elsewhere analyzed.<sup>7</sup>

Under certain conditions non-Indian children have the right to attend Indian schools."

## C COMPULSORY EDUCATION

The Secretary of the Interior is authorized at the present time to make and enforce regulations necessary to secure regular attendance of Indian children at Indian or public schools."

Several treaties contained provisions for compulsory school attendance for children between specified ages and for a specified part of the year.<sup>8</sup> Failure to comply with those provisions might involve penalties.<sup>9</sup> However, compulsory education was not a common feature of treaties up to the cessation of treaty-making in 1871.

At least as early as 1877, common schools and compulsory education were urged by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs as a general policy.<sup>10</sup>

In 1891,<sup>11</sup> Congress provided for regulations to enforce, by proper means, the regular attendance of Indian children of suitable age and health at schools established for their benefit. In 1908 much stronger methods were adopted. In the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior, parents were given the alternative of sending their children to school or losing their portion of the annual rations or subsistence.<sup>12</sup>

A year later, Congress made it clear that compulsory attendance was not to apply to nonreservation schools, enacting legislation<sup>13</sup> which forbade the removal of Indian children to reservations outside the state or territory in which they resided without the consent of parents or next of kin, and further declared

\* \* \* And it shall be unlawful for any Indian agent or other employee of the Government to induce or seek to induce by withholding rations or by other improper

Indian blood" (Davis v. Shita School Board, 3 Alaska 451, 461 (1908)) See also Chapter 21, sec 7

<sup>6</sup> Act of August 15, 1894, 28 Stat 286, 311

<sup>7</sup> See fn 45, supra

<sup>8</sup> See Chapter 2, sec 10

<sup>9</sup> Act of March 1, 1907, 34 Stat 1016, 1018, 25 U S C 388, Act of March 8, 1909 36 Stat 731, 732, 25 U S C 268

<sup>10</sup> Act of February 14, 1920 41 Stat 408, 410, 25 U S C 282. For regulations regarding education of Indians see 25 C F R 41.1-47.7

<sup>11</sup> B. O. Treaty of April 19 1895, with the Sisseton Tribe, Art 4, sec 4, 11 Stat 748, Treaty of March 12, 1868, with the Ponca Tribe, Art 2, sec 4, 12 Stat 907, Treaty of April 20, 1868, of sec, with the Sioux Tribe, 12 Stat 635, Art 7

<sup>12</sup> Treaties of April 10, 1868 11 Stat 743, and March 12, 1868, 12 Stat 907, carried the definite penalty for failure to comply with holding annuities by the Secretary of the Interior. The Treaty of April 29, 1908 of sec 15 Stat 656, contained a pledge to comply. See fn 72, infra

<sup>13</sup> Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs 1877, p 1

<sup>14</sup> Act of March 8 1891 26 Stat 980, 1014, 25 U S C 284. The Commissioner of Indian Affairs was authorized to make regulations to secure attendance by the Act of July 15, 1892 27 Stat 120, 143, 25 U S C 284

<sup>15</sup> Act of March 8, 1893, 27 Stat 612, 628, 635, 25 U S C 288

<sup>16</sup> Act of August 15, 1894, c 250, sec 11, 28 Stat 286, 313

means, the parent, or next of kin of any Indian to consent to the removal of any Indian child beyond the limits of any reservation.

This provision was reenacted a year later,<sup>11</sup> and has been incorporated in title 25 of the United States Code in section 286. Under this statute it has been suggested that a writ of habeas corpus will be issued to compel the release of an Indian child placed in a nonreservation school without parental consent.<sup>12</sup>

The Indian Service sought to evade the force of this statute by having a local Indian agent apply in the courts of the state to be appointed the guardian of the person of the Indian children. His application was granted and he was directed to place the children at the industrial school, which was done. Later this proceeding was declared invalid by the federal court, which declared that if a county court could appoint a guardian of Indian children and could direct the placement of these children in any of the schools of the state then the tribal condition of the Indians could be speedily broken up, not in pursuance of the acts of the National Government, but through the enforcement of the laws of the state acting upon the persons and property of the Indians.<sup>13</sup>

Consent of parents, guardians, or next of kin is not required to place Indian youths in an "Indian Reform School."<sup>14</sup>

No Indian pupil under the age of 14 may be transported at Government expense beyond the limits of the state or territory where its parents reside or of the adjoining state or territory.<sup>15</sup>

In 1918 an act was passed which authorized retention of an Indian due to absence of parents from parents who refused to send their children to some established school.<sup>16</sup>

After Indians became citizens and responsibility for the Indian devolved to some extent at least upon the states, state agents and employees, under regulations of the Secretary of the Interior, were authorized to enter reservations as variant officers to enforce laws of states requiring regular school attendance.<sup>17</sup>

## D USE OF FUNDS FOR INDIAN EDUCATION

From time to time Congress has placed certain restrictions on its appropriations for the support of Indian schools.

<sup>11</sup> Act of March 2, 1895, 28 Stat. 876, 906. See also Act of June 10, 1890, 26 Stat. 321, 348, 25 U. S. C. 287.

<sup>12</sup> See *In re Leah*, 300 U.S. 487, 98 F. 2d 429 (D. C. N. D. Iowa, 1939).

<sup>13</sup> *Peters v. Mullin*, 111 Fed. 244 (C. C. N. D. Iowa, 1901). *Of State v. Wolf*, 140 N. C. 449, 65 N. E. 40 (1907) (state law compelling school attendance applied to Indian children in federal Indian school).

<sup>14</sup> In an Alaska case, *In re Oona*, 200 U.S. 287, 297 (D. C. Alaska, 1887), the question of continued attendance at school was at issue. It is interesting to note that the decision was put on a quasi contract basis, the Alaska district court holding the mother of the child could not reclaim him from the custody of a Presbyterian mission school because she had agreed to allow him to attend for 5 years, and unless a clear breach or abuse of the child or a failure to educate and provide for and properly superintend his moral training was shown, it would be presumed that the best interests of the child would be served by continuance at school. Contrast with this the accepted view that when a white parent agrees to transfer custody of the child to another not *in loco parentis*, he may ordinarily stipulate that agreement and the courts will retain custody to him unless a reciprocal affection has grown up between the custodian and child. The primary concern in these situations is still the best interest of the child, but the courts ordinarily hold that when the parents are alive and competent it is to the best interest of the child to return him to the parents. *Sandoz v. Villalpando*, 51 F. 2d 285 (App. D. C. 1939).

<sup>15</sup> Act of June 21, 1906, 34 Stat. 225, 228, 25 U. S. C. 202.

<sup>16</sup> Act of March 3, 1908, 35 Stat. 781, 783, 25 U. S. C. 290.

<sup>17</sup> Act of June 30, 1915, 38 Stat. 77, 98, 25 U. S. C. 286. *Of Ins. 84-85, 1915.*

<sup>18</sup> It is no longer the practice to withhold annuities to compel attendance.

<sup>19</sup> Act of February 15, 1920, 45 Stat. 1185, 25 U. S. C. 281.

In 1897, Congress declared it to be the policy of the government thereafter to make no appropriation whatever for education in any sectarian school.<sup>20</sup> In 1905<sup>21</sup> contracts were made with mission schools, the money being taken from treaty and trust funds (tribal funds) on request of Indians. This use of tribal funds was challenged as being contrary to the policy stated in the appropriation act for 1897. The Supreme Court held, in 1908<sup>22</sup> that both treaty and trust funds to which the Indians could lay claim as a matter of right, were not within the scope of the statute and could be used for sectarian schools.

In 1917, a statute was enacted which provided that "no appropriation whatever out of the Treasury of the United States" should be used "for education of Indian children in any sectarian school."<sup>23</sup> The effect of the newly added phrase "out of the Treasury of the United States" is not clear. At the present time money is appropriated for the institutional care<sup>24</sup> of Indian children in sectarian schools rather than for their instruction.

Controversies in the Court of Claims involve educational provisions of treaties and the use of tribal funds for educational purposes.<sup>25</sup>

Legislation<sup>26</sup> limiting the annual per capita cost in Indian schools has been repealed.<sup>27</sup>

All expenditures of money appropriated for school purposes among Indians are under the direction of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, subject to the supervision of the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>28</sup>

Tribal and gratuity funds are made available for advances to worthy Indian youth to enable them to take educational courses, including special courses in nursing, home economics, forestry, and other industrial subjects in colleges, universities, or other institutions, the advances to be reimbursed in not to exceed 8 years.<sup>29</sup>

The status of Indian Service educational personnel involves problems of Indian office structure and policy, which are separately treated.<sup>30</sup>

<sup>20</sup> Act of June 7, 1897, 30 Stat. 64, 75, 25 U. S. C. 278. And see Act of June 10, 1890, 26 Stat. 321, 345.

<sup>21</sup> Act of March 3, 1905, 41 Stat. 1049, 1055.

<sup>22</sup> *Quill*, 205 U.S. 1, 26 S. Ct. 40, 50, 50 (1908).

<sup>23</sup> Act of March 4, 1917, 39 Stat. 969, 988, 25 U. S. C. 278.

<sup>24</sup> The Act of June 4, 1906, 34 Stat. 325, 323, 25 U. S. C. 276, provides for receipt of salaries by mission schools for children enrolled in such schools who were entitled to salaries under treaty stipulations.

<sup>25</sup> See title 22-27, Ins. 64 and 65, supra.

<sup>26</sup> The educational provisions of the Treaty of April 29, 1868, with the Sioux Tribe of Indians, 15 Stat. 886 formed the basis of a petition filed May 7, 1923, in the Court of Claims, under authority of the Act of June 3, 1920, 41 Stat. 738 (Sioux). The petitioner alleged that treaty provisions for a teacher and schoolhouse for every 80 children were unfulfilled and asked compensatory damages. The court in dismissing the petition held that the treaty imposed no obligation upon the Indian parents to compel attendance which had not been discharged and that, moreover, there existed no logical basis for computing damages. *Sioux Tribe of Indians v. United States*, 34 Cl. 16 (1908) cert. den. 302 U.S. 710. Other Court of Claims cases concern the possibility of a counterclaim by the United States for education expenditures for education against Indian tribal claims. The language of pertinent judicial dicta on this point varies. *Ojibwa Tribe of Indians v. United States*, 96 Cl. 64 (1928), aff. 279 U.S. 811, 68 Cl. 788. *Fort Berthold Indians v. United States*, 71 Cl. 808 (1930). *Blackfeet et al. National v. United States*, 81 Cl. 101 (1935). *Of Chockosaw Nation v. United States*, 87 Cl. 91 (1938) cert. den. 307 U.S. 946.

<sup>27</sup> Act of April 30, 1908, 35 Stat. 70, 72, Act of June 30, 1915, 41 Stat. 8, 6, Act of February 31, 1920, 43 Stat. 008, 25 U. S. C. 294.

<sup>28</sup> Act of March 2, 1939, 45 Stat. 1284.

<sup>29</sup> Act of April 30, 1908, 35 Stat. 70, 72, 25 U. S. C. 296.

<sup>30</sup> See sec. 6, supra.

<sup>31</sup> See Chapter 2.

## SECTION 3. HEALTH SERVICES "

When the Federal Government assumed the education of Indians, some degree of responsibility for their health was incidentally involved, and the first expenditures for Indian health were made from funds appropriated for education and civilization. " Early expenditures for health and medical care were made from tribal funds under treaties and from general appropriations for education or incidentals. " These appropriations were allotted among various religious and philanthropic societies already active in educational and missionary work among the various Indian tribes "

While the superintendency of Indian Affairs was under the War Department, " the Indians were for the most part in the vicinities of military posts. It was a natural and convenient thing that dispensation of medical care and sanitary regulation be assumed by members of the army medical staff located on the nearby posts "

In 1882, Congress, " authorized the Secretary of War to provide vaccination against smallpox for the Indians and made an appropriation for that purpose "

In 1849, " when the Department of the Interior was established, medical care of the Indian under the Bureau of Indian Affairs passed from military to civil control. Under this department, agency physicians on the reservation at first gave little attention to the Indians and acted more in the capacity of doctors for the government employees, or in connection with Indian schools. " Treaties " entered into included provisions for physicians and hospitals. " In 1873, measures were taken towards furnishing organized medical facilities and an educational and medical

division which continued until 1877. " By 1871, " about one-half of the Indian agencies were each supplied with a physician. After 1878 " physicians on Indian reservations were required to be graduates of medical colleges. Between 1880 and 1890, " several hospitals were established. In 1897, prevalence of trachoma among the Indians had become so devastating that funds were appropriated for investigation, treatment, and prevention of this disease, and in 1912 " money was allotted to the Public Health and Marine Service for a survey of trachoma and tuberculosis "

After 1911, " appropriations under the heading 'relief of distress and prevention of contagious diseases' " were greatly increased and were spent on correspondingly increased medical care and hospital facilities. " Since 1921, " when the Bureau of Indian Affairs was authorized to expend funds for the conservation of health, funds have been appropriated specifically for that purpose. In 1924, a special division of health was established in the Office of Indian Affairs "

Fees may be charged for medical, dental, and hospital services under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe. " Other regulations " in force relative to health activities of the Indian Service, briefly summarized, state that health personnel is subject to civil service regulations, physicians may not engage in outside practice, they are responsible for health conditions on the reservation, prevention of diseases and are required to treat and medically instruct Indians at established offices, clinics, or in their homes, they are required to make reports of all contagious diseases, inoculations, immunizations, vital statistics, cooperate with state officials and otherwise enforce necessary quarantine regulations and sanitary inspections, immunize and inoculate against contagious diseases. " All admissions and discharges to and from hospitals are upon order of physician. Adults leaving the hospital against the advice of physician in charge must give a written release of all liability to the Indian Service. Parents or guardians must give written permission for hospitalization of a minor or incompetent person and consent for surgical operations must be obtained from

" For regulation, concerning hospital and medical care of Indians, see 25 C F R 84.1-87.15

" Sec act 2 supra

" Sen Ex Doc 48th Cong, 2d sess, vol 2, pt 2, Special Report of 1888 on Indian Education and Civilization, p 168

" American Board of Foreign Missions, Morrison's Baptist Board of Foreign Missions Society of Friends. The reports of religious and educational societies even in pre-revolutionary days refer to health and medical care for students. Mass Hist Coll, 1st ser, vol 1 (1702 ed) p 173. Regarding two Indian students at Cambridge, Mass in 1654 " The other child died, not long after took his degree. . . . died of a consumption at Charleston, where he was placed. . . . under the care of a physician. . . . while he waited not for the best means the country could afford, both of food and physic. . . . " Accounts of the superintendency of Indian Affairs of 1820-21 include items for medical advice and supplies. 8 Am State Papers, (div II, Indian Affairs vol 2) 1816-27, p 299

" Act of May 26, 1824, 4 Stat 35

" Act of May 8, 1832, 4 Stat 511 " For vaccine matter and vaccination of Indians " was a regular item in appropriation bills

" Act of March 8, 1849, 9 Stat 305

" Speech of Dr James Townsend before William Birch, American Public Health Ass'n, July 24, 1907, Government and Indian Health "

" Treaty of January 22, 1805 with the Shawnee etc., Indiana 12 Stat 927, 929, Treaty of February 20, 1805, with the Kickapoo Indians, 12 Stat 931, 935 Treaty of January 31, 1805, with the Makiaha, 12 Stat 938, 941, Treaty of June 9, 1805 with the Walla Walla, Cymones, and Flathead Bands, 12 Stat 946, 947, Treaty of June 9, 1805, with the Yama Nation, 12 Stat 951, 951, Treaty of June 11, 1805, with the Nez Percé Indians, 12 Stat 957, 959, Treaty of June 26, 1805, with the Indians in Middle Oregon, 12 Stat 963 965, Treaty of July 1, 1805, and January 26, 1806, with the Quinaults and Quillikeh etc., 12 Stat 971, 971, Treaty of July 16, 1806 with the Flatheads, etc., 12 Stat 975, 977, Treaty of October 21, 1807, with the Klamath and Comanche Tribes, 15 Stat 581, 584, Treaty of October 28, 1807, with the Cheyenne and Arapahoe Tribes, 15 Stat 593 597, Treaty of April 20, 1808, et seq, with the Sioux, 15 Stat 638 638, Treaty of May 7, 1808, with the Crow Tribe, 15 Stat 646, 652, Treaty of May 10, 1808, with the Northern Cheyenne and Arapahoe Tribes, 15 Stat 655, 658, Treaty of July 8, 1808, with the Basque Band of Shoshone and Banquo Tribes, 15 Stat 678, 678

" Sen Ex Doc 48th Cong 2d sess, vol 2, pt 2, Special Report of 1888 on Indian Education and Civilization p 168 " Annual Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs 1885, p LXXVI

" Speech of Dr Townsend, op cit

" Ibid

" Annual Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs 1887, pp 227, 264, 1888, p XXXV

" Act of February 20, 1905, 33 Stat 642

" Act of August 24, 1912 37 Stat 518, 519

" Act of March 8, 1911, 36 Stat 1038

" Specific appropriations for health work among Indians 1911 \$40,000, 1912, \$60,000 1913 \$90,000, 1914, \$200,000, 1915, \$300,000, 1916, \$300,000, 1917, \$300,000, 1918, \$350,000, 1919, \$350,000, 1920, \$370,000, 1921, \$350,000, 1922, \$375,000, 1923, \$370,000, 1924, \$370,000, 1925, \$350,000, 1926, \$370,000, 1927, \$375,000, 1928, \$375,000, 1929, \$375,000, 1930, \$375,000, 1931, \$375,000, 1932, \$400,000, 1933, \$400,000, 1934, \$400,000, 1935, \$400,000, 1936, \$400,000, 1937, \$400,000, 1938, \$400,000, 1939, \$400,000, 1940, \$400,000, 1941, \$400,000, 1942, \$400,000, 1943, \$400,000, 1944, \$400,000, 1945, \$400,000, 1946, \$400,000, 1947, \$400,000, 1948, \$400,000, 1949, \$400,000, 1950, \$400,000, 1951, \$400,000, 1952, \$400,000, 1953, \$400,000, 1954, \$400,000, 1955, \$400,000, 1956, \$400,000, 1957, \$400,000, 1958, \$400,000, 1959, \$400,000, 1960, \$400,000, 1961, \$400,000, 1962, \$400,000, 1963, \$400,000, 1964, \$400,000, 1965, \$400,000, 1966, \$400,000, 1967, \$400,000, 1968, \$400,000, 1969, \$400,000, 1970, \$400,000, 1971, \$400,000, 1972, \$400,000, 1973, \$400,000, 1974, \$400,000, 1975, \$400,000, 1976, \$400,000, 1977, \$400,000, 1978, \$400,000, 1979, \$400,000, 1980, \$400,000, 1981, \$400,000, 1982, \$400,000, 1983, \$400,000, 1984, \$400,000, 1985, \$400,000, 1986, \$400,000, 1987, \$400,000, 1988, \$400,000, 1989, \$400,000, 1990, \$400,000, 1991, \$400,000, 1992, \$400,000, 1993, \$400,000, 1994, \$400,000, 1995, \$400,000, 1996, \$400,000, 1997, \$400,000, 1998, \$400,000, 1999, \$400,000, 2000, \$400,000, 2001, \$400,000, 2002, \$400,000, 2003, \$400,000, 2004, \$400,000, 2005, \$400,000, 2006, \$400,000, 2007, \$400,000, 2008, \$400,000, 2009, \$400,000, 2010, \$400,000, 2011, \$400,000, 2012, \$400,000, 2013, \$400,000, 2014, \$400,000, 2015, \$400,000, 2016, \$400,000, 2017, \$400,000, 2018, \$400,000, 2019, \$400,000, 2020, \$400,000, 2021, \$400,000, 2022, \$400,000, 2023, \$400,000, 2024, \$400,000, 2025, \$400,000, 2026, \$400,000, 2027, \$400,000, 2028, \$400,000, 2029, \$400,000, 2030, \$400,000, 2031, \$400,000, 2032, \$400,000, 2033, \$400,000, 2034, \$400,000, 2035, \$400,000, 2036, \$400,000, 2037, \$400,000, 2038, \$400,000, 2039, \$400,000, 2040, \$400,000, 2041, \$400,000, 2042, \$400,000, 2043, \$400,000, 2044, \$400,000, 2045, \$400,000, 2046, \$400,000, 2047, \$400,000, 2048, \$400,000, 2049, \$400,000, 2050, \$400,000, 2051, \$400,000, 2052, \$400,000, 2053, \$400,000, 2054, \$400,000, 2055, \$400,000, 2056, \$400,000, 2057, \$400,000, 2058, \$400,000, 2059, \$400,000, 2060, \$400,000, 2061, \$400,000, 2062, \$400,000, 2063, \$400,000, 2064, \$400,000, 2065, \$400,000, 2066, \$400,000, 2067, \$400,000, 2068, \$400,000, 2069, \$400,000, 2070, \$400,000, 2071, \$400,000, 2072, \$400,000, 2073, \$400,000, 2074, \$400,000, 2075, \$400,000, 2076, \$400,000, 2077, \$400,000, 2078, \$400,000, 2079, \$400,000, 2080, \$400,000, 2081, \$400,000, 2082, \$400,000, 2083, \$400,000, 2084, \$400,000, 2085, \$400,000, 2086, \$400,000, 2087, \$400,000, 2088, \$400,000, 2089, \$400,000, 2090, \$400,000, 2091, \$400,000, 2092, \$400,000, 2093, \$400,000, 2094, \$400,000, 2095, \$400,000, 2096, \$400,000, 2097, \$400,000, 2098, \$400,000, 2099, \$400,000, 2100, \$400,000, 2101, \$400,000, 2102, \$400,000, 2103, \$400,000, 2104, \$400,000, 2105, \$400,000, 2106, \$400,000, 2107, \$400,000, 2108, \$400,000, 2109, \$400,000, 2110, \$400,000, 2111, \$400,000, 2112, \$400,000, 2113, \$400,000, 2114, \$400,000, 2115, \$400,000, 2116, \$400,000, 2117, \$400,000, 2118, \$400,000, 2119, \$400,000, 2120, \$400,000, 2121, \$400,000, 2122, \$400,000, 2123, \$400,000, 2124, \$400,000, 2125, \$400,000, 2126, \$400,000, 2127, \$400,000, 2128, \$400,000, 2129, \$400,000, 2130, \$400,000, 2131, \$400,000, 2132, \$400,000, 2133, \$400,000, 2134, \$400,000, 2135, \$400,000, 2136, \$400,000, 2137, \$400,000, 2138, \$400,000, 2139, \$400,000, 2140, \$400,000, 2141, \$400,000, 2142, \$400,000, 2143, \$400,000, 2144, \$400,000, 2145, \$400,000, 2146, \$400,000, 2147, \$400,000, 2148, \$400,000, 2149, \$400,000, 2150, \$400,000, 2151, \$400,000, 2152, \$400,000, 2153, \$400,000, 2154, \$400,000, 2155, \$400,000, 2156, \$400,000, 2157, \$400,000, 2158, \$400,000, 2159, \$400,000, 2160, \$400,000, 2161, \$400,000, 2162, \$400,000, 2163, \$400,000, 2164, \$400,000, 2165, \$400,000, 2166, \$400,000, 2167, \$400,000, 2168, \$400,000, 2169, \$400,000, 2170, \$400,000, 2171, \$400,000, 2172, \$400,000, 2173, \$400,000, 2174, \$400,000, 2175, \$400,000, 2176, \$400,000, 2177, \$400,000, 2178, \$400,000, 2179, \$400,000, 2180, \$400,000, 2181, \$400,000, 2182, \$400,000, 2183, \$400,000, 2184, \$400,000, 2185, \$400,000, 2186, \$400,000, 2187, \$400,000, 2188, \$400,000, 2189, \$400,000, 2190, \$400,000, 2191, \$400,000, 2192, \$400,000, 2193, \$400,000, 2194, \$400,000, 2195, \$400,000, 2196, \$400,000, 2197, \$400,000, 2198, \$400,000, 2199, \$400,000, 2200, \$400,000, 2201, \$400,000, 2202, \$400,000, 2203, \$400,000, 2204, \$400,000, 2205, \$400,000, 2206, \$400,000, 2207, \$400,000, 2208, \$400,000, 2209, \$400,000, 2210, \$400,000, 2211, \$400,000, 2212, \$400,000, 2213, \$400,000, 2214, \$400,000, 2215, \$400,000, 2216, \$400,000, 2217, \$400,000, 2218, \$400,000, 2219, \$400,000, 2220, \$400,000, 2221, \$400,000, 2222, \$400,000, 2223, \$400,000, 2224, \$400,000, 2225, \$400,000, 2226, \$400,000, 2227, \$400,000, 2228, \$400,000, 2229, \$400,000, 2230, \$400,000, 2231, \$400,000, 2232, \$400,000, 2233, \$400,000, 2234, \$400,000, 2235, \$400,000, 2236, \$400,000, 2237, \$400,000, 2238, \$400,000, 2239, \$400,000, 2240, \$400,000, 2241, \$400,000, 2242, \$400,000, 2243, \$400,000, 2244, \$400,000, 2245, \$400,000, 2246, \$400,000, 2247, \$400,000, 2248, \$400,000, 2249, \$400,000, 2250, \$400,000, 2251, \$400,000, 2252, \$400,000, 2253, \$400,000, 2254, \$400,000, 2255, \$400,000, 2256, \$400,000, 2257, \$400,000, 2258, \$400,000, 2259, \$400,000, 2260, \$400,000, 2261, \$400,000, 2262, \$400,000, 2263, \$400,000, 2264, \$400,000, 2265, \$400,000, 2266, \$400,000, 2267, \$400,000, 2268, \$400,000, 2269, \$400,000, 2270, \$400,000, 2271, \$400,000, 2272, \$400,000, 2273, \$400,000, 2274, \$400,000, 2275, \$400,000, 2276, \$400,000, 2277, \$400,000, 2278, \$400,000, 2279, \$400,000, 2280, \$400,000, 2281, \$400,000, 2282, \$400,000, 2283, \$400,000, 2284, \$400,000, 2285, \$400,000, 2286, \$400,000, 2287, \$400,000, 2288, \$400,000, 2289, \$400,000, 2290, \$400,000, 2291, \$400,000, 2292, \$400,000, 2293, \$400,000, 2294, \$400,000, 2295, \$400,000, 2296, \$400,000, 2297, \$400,000, 2298, \$400,000, 2299, \$400,000, 2300, \$400,000, 2301, \$400,000, 2302, \$400,000, 2303, \$400,000, 2304, \$400,000, 2305, \$400,000, 2306, \$400,000, 2307, \$400,000, 2308, \$400,000, 2309, \$400,000, 2310, \$400,000, 2311, \$400,000, 2312, \$400,000, 2313, \$400,000, 2314, \$400,000, 2315, \$400,000, 2316, \$400,000, 2317, \$400,000, 2318, \$400,000, 2319, \$400,000, 2320, \$400,000, 2321, \$400,000, 2322, \$400,000, 2323, \$400,000, 2324, \$400,000, 2325, \$400,000, 2326, \$400,000, 2327, \$400,000, 2328, \$400,000, 2329, \$400,000, 2330, \$400,000, 2331, \$400,000, 2332, \$400,000, 2333, \$400,000, 2334, \$400,000, 2335, \$400,000, 2336, \$400,000, 2337, \$400,000, 2338, \$400,000, 2339, \$400,000, 2340, \$400,000, 2341, \$400,000, 2342, \$400,000, 2343, \$400,000, 2344, \$400,000, 2345, \$400,000, 2346, \$400,000, 2347, \$400,000, 2348, \$400,000, 2349, \$400,000, 2350, \$400,000, 2351, \$400,000, 2352, \$400,000, 2353, \$400,000, 2354, \$400,000, 2355, \$400,000, 2356, \$400,000, 2357, \$400,000, 2358, \$400,000, 2359, \$400,000, 2360, \$400,000, 2361, \$400,000, 2362, \$400,000, 2363, \$400,000, 2364, \$400,000, 2365, \$400,000, 2366, \$400,000, 2367, \$400,000, 2368, \$400,000, 2369, \$400,000, 2370, \$400,000, 2371, \$400,000, 2372, \$400,000, 2373, \$400,000, 2374, \$400,000, 2375, \$400,000, 2376, \$400,000, 2377, \$400,000, 2378, \$400,000, 2379, \$400,000, 2380, \$400,000, 2381, \$400,000, 2382, \$400,000, 2383, \$400,000, 2384, \$400,000, 2385, \$400,000, 2386, \$400,000, 2387, \$400,000, 2388, \$400,000, 2389, \$400,000, 2390, \$400,000, 2391, \$400,000, 2392, \$400,000, 2393, \$400,000, 2394, \$400,000, 2395, \$400,000, 2396, \$400,000, 2397, \$400,000, 2398, \$400,000, 2399, \$400,000, 2400, \$400,000, 2401, \$400,000, 2402, \$400,000, 2403, \$400,000, 2404, \$400,000, 2405, \$400,000, 2406, \$400,000, 2407, \$400,000, 2408, \$400,000, 2409, \$400,000, 2410, \$400,000, 2411, \$400,000, 2412, \$400,000, 2413, \$400,000, 2414, \$400,000, 2415, \$400,000, 2416, \$400,000, 2417, \$400,000, 2418, \$400,000, 2419, \$400,000, 2420, \$400,000, 2421, \$400,000, 2422, \$400,000, 2423, \$400,000, 2424, \$400,000, 2425, \$400,000, 2426, \$400,000, 2427, \$400,000, 2428, \$400,000, 2429, \$400,000, 2430, \$400,000, 2431, \$400,000, 2432, \$400,000, 2433, \$400,000, 2434, \$400,000, 2435, \$400,000, 2436, \$400,000, 2437, \$400,000, 2438, \$400,000, 2439, \$400,000, 2440, \$400,000, 2441, \$400,000, 2442, \$400,000, 2443, \$400,000, 2444, \$400,000, 2445, \$400,000, 2446, \$400,000, 2447, \$400,000, 2448, \$400,000, 2449, \$400,000, 2450, \$400,000, 2451, \$400,000, 2452, \$400,000, 2453, \$400,000, 2454, \$400,000, 2455, \$400,000, 2456, \$400,000, 2457, \$400,000, 2458, \$400,000, 2459, \$400,000, 2460, \$400,000, 2461, \$400,000, 2462, \$400,000, 2463, \$400,000, 2464, \$400,000, 2465, \$400,000, 2466, \$400,000, 2467, \$400,000, 2468, \$400,000, 2469, \$400,000, 2470, \$400,000, 2471, \$400,000, 2472, \$400,000, 2473, \$400,000, 2474, \$400,000, 2475, \$400,000, 2476, \$400,000, 2477, \$400,000, 2478, \$400,000, 2479, \$400,000, 2480, \$400,000, 2481, \$400,000, 2482, \$400,000, 2483, \$400,000, 2484, \$400,000, 2485, \$400,000, 2486, \$400,000, 2487, \$400,000, 2488, \$400,000, 2489, \$400,000, 2490, \$400,000, 2491, \$400,000, 2492, \$400,000, 2493, \$400,000, 2494, \$400,000, 2495, \$400,000, 2496, \$400,000, 2497, \$400,000, 2498, \$400,000, 2499, \$400,000, 2500, \$400,000, 2501, \$400,000, 2502, \$400,000, 2503, \$400,000, 2504, \$400,000, 2505, \$400,000, 2506, \$400,000, 2507, \$400,000, 2508, \$400,000, 2509, \$400,000, 2510, \$400,000, 2511, \$400,000, 2512, \$400,000, 2513, \$400,000, 2514, \$400,000, 2515, \$400,000, 2516, \$400,000, 2517, \$400,000, 2518, \$400,000, 2519, \$400,000, 2520, \$400,000, 2521, \$400,000, 2522, \$400,000, 2523, \$400,000, 2524, \$400,000, 2525, \$400,000, 2526, \$400,000, 2527, \$400,000, 2528, \$400,000, 2529, \$400,000, 2530, \$400,000, 2531, \$400,000, 2532, \$400,000, 2533, \$400,000, 2534, \$400,000, 2535, \$400,000, 2536, \$400,000, 2537, \$400,000, 2538, \$400,000, 2539, \$400,000, 2540, \$400,000, 2541, \$400,000, 2542, \$400,000, 2543, \$400,000, 2544, \$400,000, 2545, \$400,000, 2546, \$400,000, 2547, \$400,000, 2548, \$400,000, 25

the patient, if an adult, if a minor or incompetent, from parents or guardians.<sup>190</sup>

Under regulations<sup>191</sup> relating to hospitals, indigent Indians recognized as tribal members are admitted without cost. In tribal hospitals supported by tribal funds all tribal members are entitled to free hospitalization. Priority of admission is based on necessity for hospitalization and degree of Indian blood. White wives of Indians, Indian children from Government schools, Indian widows of whites or of unenfranchised Indians, if residing on reservations, are eligible for admission. Indian wives and children of white men are not admitted unless residents on reservations and participants in tribal affairs.

Indians as citizens of the States in which they reside frequently claim and sometimes obtain the public health protection of the various States. To facilitate cooperation between the State and Federal Government, the Secretary of the Interior in 1929<sup>192</sup> was authorized to permit agents and employees of any State to enter on tribal land, reservation, or allotment therein for the purpose of making inspections of health and enforcing sanitation and quarantine regulations.

In 1934, the Johnson-O'Malley Act<sup>193</sup> became law and provided that the Secretary of the Interior might enter into contracts with States or territories for medical attention to Indians.

In 1935, under the Social Security Act, increased health benefits were made available to the Indians.<sup>194</sup>

In 1936,<sup>195</sup> the President, by Executive order, provided that officials and employees of the Indian Service serving in a medical or sanitary capacity could hold State, county, or municipal positions of similar character without additional compensation, with the consent of the Secretary of the Interior.

In the enforcement of public health regulations the Secretary of the Interior has been authorized to impose quarantine and when necessary to confine persons afflicted with infectious diseases.<sup>196</sup>

<sup>190</sup> 25 C F R 84, 85

<sup>191</sup> *Id.*

<sup>192</sup> Act of February 17, 1929, 45 Stat. 1185, 25 U S C 281.

<sup>193</sup> Act of April 16, 1934, 48 Stat. 598, amended June 4, 1936, 49 Stat. 1458, 25 U S C 452-454.

<sup>194</sup> See sec. 5 of this Chapter.

<sup>195</sup> Executive Order 7568, May 13, 1936.

<sup>196</sup> Act of August 1, 1914, 38 Stat. 582, 584.

Care of insane Indians has for many years been considered within the powers of the Secretary.<sup>197</sup> Payment for their care is made to various hospitals for the insane including St. Elizabeths Hospital in the District of Columbia, which is a Federal institution.<sup>198</sup>

Commitment of an Indian to a hospital for the insane requires a sanity hearing to insure due process.<sup>199</sup> The laws of the States where reservations are located are conformed to in the commitment of insane Indians to State mental hospitals or State institutions for the insane. An insane Indian residing on an Indian reservation under the jurisdiction of the United States may be committed to St. Elizabeths Hospital by order of the Secretary of the Interior. A certificate of insanity made by two reputable physicians who have conducted an examination of the Indian is required before issuance of an order of the Secretary. Notice of the time and place of such examination must be personally served upon the alleged insane Indian, the spouse, parent, or other next of kin known to be residing on the reservation. The Indian alleged to be insane has the right to present witnesses and to submit evidence of his sanity.<sup>200</sup>

In any case in which an Indian is alleged to be insane or of unsound mind, and such Indian has displayed homicidal tendencies or has otherwise demonstrated that if permitted to remain at large or to go unattended, the rights of persons and of property will be jeopardized or the preservation of the public peace imperiled and the commission of crime rendered probable, the Superintendent has authority to take such Indian into custody and to detain him temporarily in some suitable place pending proper legal adjudication of his insanity.

<sup>197</sup> 25 U S C 13 derived from Act of November 2, 1921, 42 Stat. 208, grants the Bureau of Indian Affairs power to expend money for relief of distress and conservation of health.

<sup>198</sup> Act of April 26, 1904, 4 Stat. 639 directs that insane Indians in Indian Territory be cared for at the asylum for insane Indians at Canton, S. Dak. The Appropriation Act of May 10, 1930, 51 Stat. 685, 746, provides for the admission to St. Elizabeths Hospital of "insane Indian beneficiaries of the Bureau of Indian Affairs."

<sup>199</sup> *Cf. Barry v. Hall*, 68 U S 242, 222 (App. D C 1938). This case requires all persons admitted to St. Elizabeths Hospital to have been determined insane upon hearing with an opportunity for defense. Memo Sol. I D July 27, 1930.

<sup>200</sup> 25 C F R 84.

## SECTION 4 RATIONS, RELIEF, AND REHABILITATION

The common belief that Indians, as such, receive rations from the Federal Government is not in accord with the facts.<sup>201</sup>

As noted in the introduction to this chapter, frequently in sales of Indian land<sup>202</sup> supplies were used instead of cash as the *quid pro quo* offered to compensate the Indian for value received by the United States. Later, as the Indians advanced sufficiently in the knowledge of white man's civilization to purchase their own supplies and clothing, the value of promised supplies was frequently commuted and paid in money per capita to the members of various tribes.<sup>203</sup>

As a matter of hospitality, a law<sup>204</sup> authorizing food for Indians visiting at army posts has remained on the statute book for over a hundred years. Relief, frequently dispensed in the form of food, has been authorized in general appropriations<sup>205</sup> for indi-

gent Indians. The charitable nature of these limited appropriations, however, has been mistakenly attributed generally to all provisions relating to Indians. The failure to recognize that issuance of a ration may be a form of payment of obligations to Indians resulted in the provision in the Act of March 3, 1876,<sup>206</sup> that able-bodied male Indians give service and labor in return for supplies distributed to them.

At the present time, when relief is given in the form of food and supplies, labor is required of recipients of relief rations whenever possible. Such rations may not be sold or exchanged. They can be shared only with dependents of the recipients.<sup>207</sup>

Under recent appropriation acts<sup>208</sup> tribal funds have been made available for relief purposes.

<sup>201</sup> 18 Stat. 440, 449, 25 U S C 187.

<sup>202</sup> 25 C F R 251.2, 251.3.

<sup>203</sup> Act of May 9, 1938, 52 Stat. 231, 314. Tribal funds are appropriated for relief of Indians "in need of assistance including cash grants, the purchase of subsistence supplies \* \* \* and household goods, \* \* \* transportation and all other necessary expenses, \$100,000, payable from funds on deposit to the credit of the particular tribe concerned."

<sup>204</sup> 25 C F R 251.1. Also see 251.2-251.8.

<sup>205</sup> For example, see treaties of February 10, 1867, with the Sananton and Warapeton, 15 Stat. 608, October 21, 1867, with the Kiowa and Comanche, 15 Stat. 631, May 7, 1868, with the Crow, 15 Stat. 648.

<sup>206</sup> Act of July 1, 1876, 20 Stat. 571, 598, 25 U S C 136.

<sup>207</sup> Act of May 13, 1930, 2 Stat. 85, B S § 2110, 25 U S C 141.

<sup>208</sup> See appropriation acts, Chapter 4.

Allotments are made to the superintendents of the various agencies for the relief of indigent Indians under their supervision. These allotments are spent chiefly for supplies, food, and clothing,<sup>124</sup> a limited amount being spent also for work relief and for substance grants when unusual circumstances warrant such procedure. Rarely is relief given in the form of cash.

<sup>124</sup> Relief allotments are often of an emergency nature and purchases for relief dispensation are permitted without usual advertisement is required by it is § 8708. Compliance is apparently required with the provisions of the Act of May 27, 1909, 46 Stat. 911 requiring purchases of shoes or other articles available from prison manufacturers to be made through the Federal Prison Industries, Inc.—Hearings, H. Subcomm. of

A chief object of recent rehabilitation work has been to provide landless Indians with land, houses, outbuildings, fencing, water supply, etc., so that with equipment and livestock provided from other sources they may be enabled to work the land in a self-supporting manner.<sup>125</sup> Aid to individual Indians in this field has generally taken the form of loans rather than grants, and is therefore considered under section 6 of this Chapter.

Comm. on Appropriations, Interior Dept., 76th Cong., 3d sess., pt. II, p. 102.

<sup>125</sup> *Ibid.* The National Resources Board as the result of a survey of Indian homes in 1935 has reported that some 70 percent of Indian dwellings are poorly below a reasonable living standard.

## SECTION 5 SOCIAL SECURITY BENEFITS

In 1936<sup>126</sup> the Solicitor of the Interior Department rendered an opinion which held that the Social Security Act<sup>127</sup> was applicable to the Indians. The act contemplates three types of direct aid by states in cooperation with the Government to their needy citizens, that is, aid to needy aged individuals, to needy dependent children, and to needy individuals who are blind.

In connection with these three types of direct aid, it was determined that as a state plan must be "in effect in all political subdivisions of the State," and as Indian reservations are included within states, counties, and other political subdivisions, Indians are entitled to aid under state plans.

Other provisions of the Social Security Act provide federal assistance in the case of crippled children, maternal health service and public health service, special attention being given to rural areas and areas suffering from severe economic distress. One of the bases for allotment of federal funds was population of states. Statistics relating to population included Indians. Their inclusion in the compilation would seem to

prohibit any implication that Indians were to be deprived of the benefits of the act. To quote the Solicitor,

In computing these statistics no omission is made of the Indians and official registration and census rolls have been used which of course include the Indian population. It would be manifestly contrary to the intention of the act that funds allotted to cover a certain number of people should be used only for a chosen group to the exclusion of others included in the count.

Furthermore it was held that, as citizens, Indians were entitled to social security benefits, all Indians who were not already citizens having become so by the Act of June 2, 1924.<sup>128</sup> In view of these considerations, the Solicitor held that no distinction is justified between the Indian and other state citizens, and that the law requires that social security benefits be distributed without discrimination against the Indians.

According to Dr. James Townsend,<sup>129</sup> Director of Health, Of the Indian Affairs, most states are actively assisting in the application of the Social Security Act to Indians, others are assisting to a lesser degree, and still others resist expenditure of state and local funds for Indians, even to the point of failure to accept Indian applications.

<sup>126</sup> Memo. Sol. I. D., April 22, 1936.

<sup>127</sup> Act of August 14, 1935, 48 Stat. 630.

<sup>128</sup> 48 Stat. 253. See Chapter 8, sec. 2.

<sup>129</sup> Speech by Dr. Townsend, op. cit.

## SECTION 6. FEDERAL LOANS

Loans advanced by the Federal Government to the Indians are financed from gratuity appropriations,<sup>130</sup> appropriations from tribal funds,<sup>131</sup> and revolving credit funds established under the Indian Reorganization Act<sup>132</sup> and the Oklahoma Welfare Act.<sup>133</sup> The Klamath Indians may borrow from a revolving credit fund specifically set up for that tribe.<sup>134</sup>

In addition, loans and grants have been made available to the tribe and their members under emergency relief appropriation acts beginning in 1935 for financing rehabilitation of families, in stricken agricultural areas.<sup>135</sup> It is also possible for Indian tribes to borrow from other federal agencies funds appropriated for such purposes in promotion of the general welfare of the nation as low rent housing development, when the tribes meet the eligibility requirements of the controlling federal legislation.<sup>136</sup>

### A LOANS UNDER SPECIAL INDIAN LEGISLATION

Since 1912, Congress has appropriated<sup>137</sup> gratuity funds for reimbursable loans direct from the Government to individual

Indians. Prior to 1938 loans were made in the form of property, but since that year Indians have received cash loans. These loans were designed to establish Indians in self-supporting individual enterprises including farming, stock raising, and other industries. Loans have been granted also to assist old and indigent Indians who have land they cannot use.

A limited number of qualified Indians are able to obtain loans from gratuity and tribal funds for educational purposes, for payment of tuition, and other expenses in recognized vocational and trade schools.<sup>138</sup>

Recipients of loans from gratuity funds are for the most part members of tribes not organized under the Indian Reorganization Act,<sup>139</sup> who therefore are not eligible to borrow funds under that act. With the exception of members of the Osage Tribe, loans from gratuity funds are not made to residents of the State of Oklahoma.

Congress has also made available for loans to the members of certain tribes a part of their tribal funds. These are handled as tribal revolving credit funds under which loans are made to

<sup>130</sup> 36 U. S. C. 18, annual appropriation acts.

<sup>131</sup> 36 U. S. C. 123, annual appropriation acts.

<sup>132</sup> Act of June 18, 1904, sec. 10, 48 Stat. 984, 986, 25 U. S. C. 470.

<sup>133</sup> Act of June 28, 1906, sec. 8, 49 Stat. 1967, 1968, 28 U. S. C. 508.

<sup>134</sup> Act of August 28, 1937, 50 Stat. 872.

<sup>135</sup> See subsection B, *infra*.

<sup>136</sup> See subsection B, *infra*.

<sup>137</sup> 25 U. S. C. 18, 123. And see annual appropriation acts, Chapter 4.

<sup>138</sup> Hearings, H. Subcomm. on Comm. on Appropriations, Interior Dept., 76th Cong. 3d sess., pt. II, p. 175.

<sup>139</sup> Act of June 18, 1904, 48 Stat. 984, 986, 25 U. S. C. 470. Under sec. 11 of the Indian Reorganization Act similar provisions are made for loans for educational purposes.



individual Indians whose repayments are returned to the fund and are available for further loans.<sup>124</sup>

Under the Act of May 10, 1899,<sup>125</sup> Congress authorized transfer of tribal revolving funds to the revolving credit funds of organized tribes to supplement credit funds and to be administered under the rules and regulations applicable thereto. In the case of organized tribes, tribal consent is necessary to authorize use of tribal funds for loans or other purposes.<sup>126</sup>

Federal credit to the Indians was greatly extended by the establishment of revolving credit funds under the Act of June 18, 1904,<sup>127</sup> and June 26, 1906.<sup>128</sup> These statutes authorized the establishment of a revolving fund totaling \$12,000,000, from which the Secretary of the Interior may make loans to incorporated tribes and in the State of Oklahoma to cooperatives,<sup>129</sup> credit associations,<sup>130</sup> and individuals<sup>131</sup> for economic development. Loans are repaid as credits to the revolving fund and reports are made annually to Congress of transactions under this authorization.

Regulations governing loans from revolving credit funds to a tribal corporation, cooperative, credit association, or an individual provide that the tribal application must be accompanied by an economic program.<sup>132</sup> Security or other guarantee of repayment, terms of payment, and plan for managing credit operations must be included in the application. Upon approval of the application a commitment order covering the terms and conditions for making advances of funds is prepared. Any changes to be made in the application or any additional conditions are incorporated in the commitment order, which is then returned to the applicant for acceptance. Advances are made contingent upon accomplishment of certain features of the program. Failure to carry out these provisions is ground for refusing further advances. The tribe, if the loan contract so provides, may reloan funds to individuals, partnerships, and to cooperatives, and may use funds for the development and operation of corporate (tribal) enterprises. Credit associations may lend only to individuals.<sup>133</sup>

Definite plans for the use of funds likewise are required of any individual or association of individuals borrowing from the tribe or credit association. These loans may not extend for a greater period than the duration of the agreement of the tribe or credit association with the government. This period varies, ranging from short-term crop loans and intermediate term loans for livestock products, to long-term loans for permanent improvements. Loans for permanent improvements are made only in exceptional circumstances, preference being given to income producing enterprises. As a matter of policy loans are not made for land purchases under the revolving fund except in very unusual cases and then in small amounts.<sup>134</sup>

Final approval of all loans made by corporations, or credit associations, is vested in representatives of the Indian Service at the present time.

<sup>124</sup> See for example 25 C F R 28.1-28.50, governing administration of Kiamath Tribal Loan Fund, created by Act of August 28, 1907, 30 Stat 872, 25 U S C 580-586.

<sup>125</sup> Public Act No. 68, 70th Cong., 1st sess.

<sup>126</sup> Act of June 18, 1904 see 16, 48 Stat 984, 987, 25 U S C 476 giving such tribe power to veto unauthorized use of tribal assets. And see Memo Sol I D October 18, 1942.

<sup>127</sup> See 10-48 Stat 984, 985, 25 U S C 470. For regulations governing loans to Indian chartered corporations, see 25 C F R 21.1-21.40.

<sup>128</sup> 40 Stat 1087.

<sup>129</sup> For regulations governing loans to Indian cooperatives, in Oklahoma see 25 C F R 24.1-28.27.

<sup>130</sup> See *ibid.*, 24.1-24.15. For regulations governing loans by Indian credit associations in Oklahoma, see 25 C F R 25.1-25.26.

<sup>131</sup> For regulations governing loans by the United States to individual Indians in Oklahoma see *ibid.*, 28.1-28.26.

<sup>132</sup> 25 C F R, subchapter B.

<sup>133</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>134</sup> *Ibid.*, part 27.

Legislation authorizing revolving credit fund loans to incorporated tribes has been construed in the light of the avowed purpose of increasing tribal control over tribal resources.

In discussing this legislation the Solicitor of the Interior Department<sup>135</sup> pointed out:

Money from the revolving credit fund may not be loaned to individual Indians directly. In relation to this fund the Secretary of the Interior can deal only with the tribal corporations representing the interests of all the Indians who are members of the tribes. In this respect the loans contemplated . . . are in distinct contrast to those heretofore authorized by Congress. Under reimbursable appropriations loans have been made to the Indians for designated purposes, . . . are criticized on by the Government with individual Indians . . . The tribal bodies, where such exist, have no responsibility in the administration of such funds.

Under section 10 of the Wheeler-Howard Act,<sup>136</sup> governing the revolving credit fund the Government can deal only with the tribal authorities, and these are charged with the responsibility for making such loans to their members, or for using the funds in such ways as will enable them to create a basis for expanding self-sufficiency. In accordance with the purpose expressed in sections 10 and 17 of the act, by which a large and increasing responsibility for taking care of their own welfare is placed upon the various tribes, organized for local self-government and economic activity, section 10 contemplates that funds loaned to the tribes will be, in large measure, subject to their disposition, consistent with the terms of said provision.

This section was construed by the Solicitor

Under section 10 the Secretary of the Interior may determine the conditions upon which he will make loans to Indian corporations. He may prescribe such rules and regulations as are reasonably appropriate to this purpose. He may require reasonable guarantees by the borrowing corporation that the money loaned to it will be used for specified purposes and handled in specified ways. If the Secretary is to exercise any control over money already loaned to the corporation it must be a control which is authorized by mutual agreement, and is designed to enforce the terms of such agreement. The strictly regulatory power of the Secretary, conferred by section 10, ceases when the loan to the tribe is completed. Thereafter the powers of the Department are limited to enforcement of the terms of the tribal loan agreement. The Indian corporation, upon which responsibility is placed for the repayment of the loan, may properly expect, under the terms of section 10, that money will not be disbursed to individual members of the tribe in the discretion of the Interior Department, on behalf of the corporation, but that the money will actually be loaned to the corporation to be used or disbursed by the duly elected officers of the corporation in accordance with the terms of a loan agreement and in accordance with the mandates given these officers in tribal constitutions, bylaws and charters.<sup>137</sup>

In view of these purposes, the Solicitor of the Interior Department held, any arrangement placing upon Indian Service officials primary responsibility for the administration of loans from the tribe to the individual would be "a serious invasion of tribal responsibility and initiative" and would "nullify in large measure the promises contained in other sections of the Act." Equally inconsistent with the purposes of the act and with the terms of constitutions and charters adopted thereunder, the Solicitor held, would be any arrangement whereby the tribal authorities administering such loans were subjected to the control of Indian Service officials. Any such arrangement would constitute an assumption of "political control of matters internal to the tribe."

<sup>135</sup> Memo Sol I D, December 5, 1905.

<sup>136</sup> Act of June 18, 1904, 48 Stat 984, 985, 25 U S C 470.

<sup>137</sup> Memo Sol I D, December 5, 1905.

Safeguards against improper disposition of funds by the borrowing tribe must be set forth in the loan agreements between the tribe and the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>128</sup>

The Oklahoma Welfare Act<sup>129</sup> made funds appropriated for loans under the Indian Reorganization Act available for loans to Oklahoma tribes, individual Indians, and cooperatives for land management, credit, administration, consumer protection, production, and marketing purposes. The act also authorized additional appropriations of an additional \$2,000,000 for loans.

The benefit of the revolving credit fund was extended to Alaska by the Act of May 1, 1896.<sup>130</sup>

## B LOANS UNDER GENERAL LEGISLATION

Under various acts making appropriations for tribal rehabilitation, and relief,<sup>131</sup> Indians, like other citizens, have received loans and grants. At the same time certain Indian tribes have under taken to handle their own rehabilitation and relief problems, with federal aid. Thus funds for rehabilitation were granted in various tribes under agreements<sup>132</sup> executed by the Commissioners of Indian Affairs for, and on behalf of, the United States. Agreements on behalf of organized tribes are signed by tribal officers. Unorganized tribes are represented by trustees. Sub mission of programs approved by such officers or trustees is required as a condition precedent to the execution of a trust agreement. The funds may be set up by the tribe as a revolving fund and money may be advanced by the tribe to individual Indians, all contracts with individuals being executed by the tribes.

In some cases the tribe, instead of loaning money, uses rehabilitation funds to improve tribal land, and then assigns the use of the land to members. Improvements on tribal land remain the property of the tribe, individual Indians paying fees for the use of the improvements. These payments are, in most cases, to be collected until the original value, or partial value at least, of the improvement has been collected. Payments are placed in a tribal revolving fund.

Property improved under rehabilitation loans is ordinarily held under irrevocable assignments, subject to reversion upon failure to pay. The assignee may ordinarily designate a successor subject to joint approval of the tribal officers or trustees and superintendent.

<sup>128</sup> *Id.* In this memorandum the Solicitor declared:

"\* \* \* If the loan agreement is to be regarded as a contract, observance of which by the corporation is a prerequisite to the obtaining and the ensuing use of funds from the revolving fund, then such contract should be equally binding on the Government. The Secretary of the Interior has no authority, under the power to make rules and regulations contained in section 10 of the Act to require that the Indians shall observe such agreements on pain of forfeiting penalties while the Government is free to change its policies in such way as it deems best and to force upon them the Indians which were not included in the original agreements. Such an alleged agreement is clearly not binding as a matter of law."

I believe that the rules and regulations should state clearly the minimum terms and conditions which must be inserted in every agreement for a loan from the revolving fund and further, that this agreement should be binding not only upon the Indians, but also upon the Government. If the Secretary of the Interior and the Indians, of a particular tribe agree upon a credit program and upon plans for the economic development of such tribe and of its members, I do not believe that a subsequent Secretary should have the power at a later date to change the terms of that agreement."

<sup>129</sup> Act of June 26, 1906, 49 Stat. 1087, 25 U. S. C. § 407. For regulations governing loans by United States to individual Indians in Oklahoma, see 25 C. F. R. 26-1-26-26.

<sup>130</sup> 49 Stat. 1260, 48 U. S. C. See Chapter 21, sec. 9.

<sup>131</sup> Joint Resolution of April 8, 1896, 49 Stat. 1116, Joint Resolution of June 29, 1897, 50 Stat. 823, Joint Resolution of June 21, 1898, 52 Stat. 805.

<sup>132</sup> Under these agreements, the United States grants to the tribe all of the allocation of emergency funds required to cover the cost of the approved projects, excepting such part of the cost as represents necessary administrative and supervisory expenses. The grant is made subject to the condition that it will be used for approved objects.

Another phase of rehabilitation involves self help projects. Money is advanced to the tribes for community buildings, in which Indians are engaged in sewing, spinning, weaving, and handicrafts. Machine sheds, stone houses, shearing sheds, smithies, shops, grist mills, latheries have been constructed. Water development and irrigation projects have been financed. Frequently materials are supplied at tribal expense and the workers are paid wages, the products being property of the tribe. By these activities, not only have numerous Indian workers received wages, but thousands of Indian families have been more adequately fed and clothed.<sup>134</sup>

The tribal programs of rehabilitation were first financed out of appropriations under the Joint Resolution of April 8, 1896,<sup>135</sup> allocated to the Office of Indian Affairs by a Presidential letter of January 11, 1896.<sup>136</sup> This work was continued under the Emergency Relief Acts of 1897<sup>137</sup> and 1898.<sup>138</sup> The Emergency Relief Appropriation Act of 1939<sup>139</sup> made a special appropriation directed to the Office of Indian Affairs.

Those Indians who are needy are not met by the tribal rehabilitation program are entitled to treatment on a parity with other citizens when they apply to the Farm Security Administration for individual rehabilitation loans.<sup>140</sup>

Under the same principle that prompted the holding that individual Indians are eligible to receive assistance under the Social Security Act and from the Farm Security Administration for rehabilitation loans,<sup>141</sup> Indian tribes are eligible to apply for loans under such legislation for the general welfare as that

<sup>134</sup> Hearings, II Subcommittee of Comm. on Appropriations, Interior Dept. 76th Cong., 80 vols. pt. II, p. 461.

<sup>135</sup> 49 Stat. 1116. This act appropriated for tribal rehabilitation and relief of "Indian agricultural areas."

<sup>136</sup> Presidential letter No. 182, January 11, 1896.

<sup>137</sup> Joint Resolution of June 29, 1897, 50 Stat. 823, 873. This act appropriated for expenditures by the Reorganization Administration for rehabilitation of needy persons as the President may direct.

<sup>138</sup> Joint Resolution of June 21, 1898, 52 Stat. 800. Under this act only Indians are eligible to positions on Indian work relief projects until these needs have been met. Memo Sol. I. D., December 14, 1938.

<sup>139</sup> Public Res. No. 21, 76th Cong., 1st sess., 223.

<sup>140</sup> Sec. 6 (a) In order to continue to provide relief and rural rehabilitation for needy Indians in the United States there are hereby appropriated to the Bureau of Indian Affairs, Department of the Interior, out of any money in the Treasury not otherwise appropriated for the fiscal year ending June 30, 1940, \$1,750,000.

(b) The funds provided in this section shall be available for (1) administration, and to extend 1937-38, (2) loans, and (3) the prosecution of projects approved by the President for the Farm Security Administration for the benefit of Indians under the provisions of the Emergency Relief Appropriation Act of 1939, and (5) subject to the approval of the President, for projects involving rural rehabilitation of needy Indians.

<sup>141</sup> The argument that Indians should be excluded from benefits available to other needy persons under the appropriations to the Farm Security Administration, because of the special appropriation to the Office of Indian Affairs, was considered and rejected by the Solicitor for the Department of Agriculture, in view of the ruling of the Solicitor for the Interior Department that the appropriation to the Office of Indian Affairs:

"\* \* \* should be narrowly construed in such a manner as to limit expenditures by the Indian Service to those purposes for which expenditures were made during the fiscal year 1899 out of funds transferred to that year for the purpose of service by the Farm Security Administration. These purposes are, in substance: (1) grants to Indian tribes for the benefit of Indians through a program of tribal community projects for the construction of buildings and other tribal and community center, and (2) administrative expenses, loans and relief payments incidental to the foregoing, primary purpose or otherwise affecting Indians who are ineligible to receive benefits under section 8 of the act. (Memo Sol. I. D., December 14, 1938)."

The Solicitor for the Department of Agriculture then upon ruled:

"\* \* \* there is no occasion for applying the rule that an appropriation for a specific purpose cannot be augmented by the use of funds appropriated for other purposes. The funds appropriated to that (Farm Security Administration) under the current (Emergency Relief Appropriation Act) are loaned to loans and grants to Indians except those Indians who are receiving aid directly from the Indian Office under Section 6 of the Act of August 1, 1939 (Dept. of Agriculture, December 22, 1939)."

<sup>142</sup> See secs. 5 and 6, supra.

providing for low rent housing development, when they are otherwise qualified under the terms of the legislation The United States Housing Act of 1937<sup>120</sup> authorizes to us to "public housing agencies," which are defined to include a "governmental entity or public body \* \* \* which is authorized to engage in the development or administration of low rent housing or slum clearance."<sup>121</sup> In the opinion of the Solicitor, the Interior

Department has held that Indian tribes are governmental entities capable of undertaking housing enterprises and that, where a tribe is incorporated under the Act of June 15, 1904,<sup>122</sup> it may be said to be authorized to engage in the low rent housing and slum clearance projects contemplated by the United States Housing Act of 1937 and it is, therefore, eligible to apply for a loan under that act.

<sup>120</sup> Act of September 1, 1937, 50 Stat. 885, 42 U. S. C. chap. 8.

<sup>121</sup> Sec. 2 (1) Act of September 1, 1937, 50 Stat. 886.

<sup>122</sup> Op. Sol. I. D., M. 10017, August 6, 1940.

<sup>123</sup> 48 Stat. 981.

## SECTION 7 RECLAMATION AND IRRIGATION

Evidence of ancient irrigation works abounds in the more arid regions of the western part of the United States, indicating that irrigation was practiced by the Indian in prehistoric times. Without irrigation, much of this land is unproductive and unsuited to human life. When Indian reservations were established in this country, the Federal Government, in order to make it possible for the Indian to become self-sufficient, embarked on a program of irrigation development.<sup>124</sup>

At the present time, the Irrigation Division of the Bureau of Indian Affairs is responsible for the administration of over 100 individual irrigation projects embracing approximately 1,250,000 acres, of which some 800,000 acres are under constructed works. The total investment in these projects exceeds \$51,000,000. The area under constructed works is being increased each year. The annual operation and maintenance expenditures average about \$1,500,000, and the construction expenditures vary from \$8,000,000 to \$70,000,000 annually.<sup>125</sup>

The field administration is handled from four offices. The assistant director's office in Los Angeles, the supervising engineer's offices in San Francisco and Billings, and a district office in Oklahoma City. There is also maintained a chief counsel's office in Los Angeles and a district counsel's office in Billings. On each of the projects a local operating force is maintained.<sup>126</sup>

Until 1902<sup>127</sup> irrigation construction, maintenance, and operation were carried on under the direction of the reservation superintendents, with occasional assistance from local engineers temporarily employed.

In 1906,<sup>128</sup> a chief engineer was appointed and gradually, since that time a technical staff and organization has been developed to supervise and carry on Indian irrigation.

In 1907,<sup>129</sup> a plan contemplating close cooperation between the Bureau of Reclamation and the Indian Service was formulated. Some of the Indian projects were transferred to the Bureau of Reclamation. Under this agreement construction was carried on by the Reclamation Service on the Flathead, Fort Peck, and Blackfoot projects in Montana and on the Pima and Yuma reservations in Arizona. In 1924,<sup>130</sup> these projects were returned to the Indian Service. In the past few years the Bureau of Reclamation and the Office of Indian Affairs frequently have cooperated on engineering features of various irrigation projects.

The irrigable land on Indian reservations in the Northwest, in almost every instance, is allotted. In the Southwest a few allotments of irrigable land have been made but on most of the reservations in that area the Indians occupy and use certain small plots so long as the individual makes beneficial use of the land and irrigation facilities, the ownership remaining in the tribal status. This condition applies to practically all the projects in the Navajo and Hopi country and also to the Pueblo projects. In the North and Northwest the allotments range from 20 acres to 80 acres, the average being about 40 acres of irrigable land per individual. The southern projects are subdivided into small tracts, the majority being about 10 acres. In areas where fruit or garden is the prevailing crop, individual tracts are frequently as small as 2 acres.<sup>131</sup>

In addition to construction, operation, and maintenance of systems of canals and ditches, the Indian irrigation service is supervised the construction and operation and maintenance of numerous drainage systems, pumping plants, storage and flood control dams, and miscellaneous irrigation developments in connection with subsistence gardens or homesteads. Hydroelectric and Diesel engine power generating plants<sup>132</sup> have been constructed in some instances with transmission lines supplying power to neighboring communities, factories, farms, and mining operations.

The government's first venture into irrigation construction in 1807<sup>133</sup> was provided for by an appropriation of \$50,000 for the expense of collecting and locating the Colorado River Indians in Arizona \* \* \* including the expense of constructing a canal for irrigating and reclamation. The work was finally completed, under supplementary appropriations,<sup>134</sup> only to be abandoned, however, after several unsuccessful attempts at operation and maintenance. In 1884,<sup>135</sup> a general appropriation of \$50,000 for irrigation was to be spent for irrigation in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior. A similar appropriation followed in 1902,<sup>136</sup> and beginning with 1898,<sup>137</sup> Congress annually made general appropriations<sup>138</sup> under the description "Irrigation, Indian Reservations" for use on such reservations or for such purposes as were not provided for by specific appropriation. By the Act of April 1, 1910,<sup>139</sup> no new irrigation project on any Indian reservation or land could be undertaken without

<sup>124</sup> Data to support Request for Public Works Funds, The Indian Service, August 11, 1935.

<sup>125</sup> See "Culio Project See above I infra.

<sup>126</sup> Act of March 2, 1887, 14 Stat. 492, 514.

<sup>127</sup> Act of July 27, 1868, 15 Stat. 198, 222, Act of May 20, 1872, 17 Stat. 105, 108.

<sup>128</sup> Act of July 4, 1881, 22 Stat. 70, 94.

<sup>129</sup> Act of July 13, 1892, 27 Stat. 120, 117.

<sup>130</sup> Act of March 2, 1908, 27 Stat. 612, 631.

<sup>131</sup> Appropriation act, Act of March 2, 1897, 14 Stat. 492, 514, Act of July 27, 1898, 15 Stat. 198, 222, Act of May 29, 1872, 17 Stat. 105, 108, Act of July 20, 1884, 23 Stat. 70, 94, Act of March 8, 1893, 20 Stat. 980, 1011.

<sup>132</sup> 80 Stat. 260, 270, 272, 23 U. S. C. 885.

<sup>133</sup> The extent to which water rights have been received is considered in Chapter 15.

<sup>134</sup> Annual statement of "Costs, Cancellations, and Miscellaneous Irrigation Data of Indian Irrigation Projects, Fiscal year 1939," Interior Department.

<sup>135</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>136</sup> By the Act of June 17, 1902, 32 Stat. 888, the Secretary was authorized to contract for construction of projects.

<sup>137</sup> Act of June 21, 1906, 34 Stat. 388.

<sup>138</sup> Hearings, Sen. Subcomm. of Comm. on Ind. Aff., Bureau of Conditions of the Indians in the United States, 71st Cong., 2d sess., pt. 6, Senate report January 21, 1930, p. 2250.

<sup>139</sup> Act of June 5, 1924, 43 Stat. 890, 402.

express authorization by Congress upon presentation of an estimate of the cost of the work to be constructed.

Brief authorization for expenditures for irrigation purposes was conferred by the Act of November 2, 1911.<sup>14</sup> After 1913, emergency funds were allocated for irrigation purposes.

For projects involving a large expenditure from the United States Treasury on tribal funds and bounties in many instances, both white and Indian water users, it has been common for Congress to pass special acts of authorization.<sup>15</sup> For the most part reimbursement was provided for by these special acts.

Until 1917, costs of irrigation work on Indian reservations under general appropriations since 1884 were borne by the United States. Appropriations for this purpose were considered gratuities. Also until that year, projects reimbursable from tribal funds were operated on the theory that irrigation conferred collective tribal benefit. In effect, all members of the tribe were required to pay an equal part of the cost regardless of whether or not their lands were irrigated.

By the Act of August 1, 1917,<sup>16</sup> Congress changed its legislative policy as to reimbursable appropriation for specific projects, and thereafter required reimbursement of construction charges on the basis of individual benefits received. It provided also for reimbursement, under the direction of the Secretary of the Interior, of general appropriations, heretofore considered as gratuities, and gifts. Maintenance and operation charges were to be fixed upon the same basis.

Enforcement of this act proved difficult. One reason given was that compilation of construction charges was impossible in the uncompleted state of many such projects.<sup>17</sup> Furthermore, reimbursement in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior by the Act of August 1, 1914, was made dependent upon ability of the Indians to pay assessments. In 1920,<sup>18</sup> when Congress made it mandatory that the Secretary of the Interior begin to enforce at least partial reimbursement, the retroactive provision

<sup>14</sup> 42 Stat. 208, 26 U. S. C. 3.

<sup>15</sup> See statistics, relative to the more important projects in subsections A through E of this section. The major projects in the Indian Service which are the San Carlos, Salt, the Wapiti and Lakota in Washington, the Flathead, Fort Belknap, and Crow in Montana and the Wind River in Wyoming, were constructed under specific acts of Congress.

<sup>16</sup> Act of August 1, 1917, 40 Stat. 852, 26 U. S. C. 395. This act provided:

" \* \* \* That all moneys expended hereafter or hereafter under prior provision shall be reimbursable when the Indians have adequate funds to pay the same. Such reimbursement shall be made under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe. Provided further, That the Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized and directed to reimburse the cost of any irrigation project constructed for Indians and made reimbursable out of tribal funds of said Indians in accordance with the benefits received by each individual Indian so far as practicable from said irrigation project, and cost to be apportioned against such individual Indian under such rules, regulations, and conditions as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe."

Prior to the year 1914 there were two classes of funds raised: (1) Funds expended or reimbursable in the legislative act making appropriation and in most cases reimbursable from tribal funds; (2) Funds constructed which nothing is stipulated as to reimbursement. The Crow, Blackfoot, Flathead, Fort Peck, Fort Belknap, Fort Hall and Yakima projects were in this class. However, Ben Subcom of Comm on Ind Aff, Survey of Conditions of the Indians in the United States, 71st Cong., 2nd sess., pt. 6, Single report, January 21, 1930, p. 2285.

<sup>17</sup> See Ind. 562, 563.

<sup>18</sup> 46 Stat. 562, 563.

<sup>19</sup> Act of February 14, 1920, 41 Stat. 405, 406, 25 U. S. C. 886. This act provided:

"The Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized and directed to require the owners of irrigable lands to contribute for the benefit of Indians and to which water for irrigation purposes can be delivered to begin payment of the reimbursement of the construction charges where reimbursement is required by law, at such time and in such amount as may be determined by the Secretary of the Interior to be credited on a per acre basis in favor of the land in behalf of which such payments shall have been made and to be deducted from the total per acre charges assessable against said land."

967783-41—38

of the reimbursement act was strenuously opposed. Some of the projects included ceded tribal lands which had been appraised and open to entry, the entire sum in paying the appraised price which apparently included water rights. Numerous individual allotments had been sold under Indian Agency agreements with the understanding, that water rights were included in the conveyance. An opinion by the Attorney General<sup>19</sup> held that reimbursement could not be enforced where ceded rights had been acquired. Regulations<sup>20</sup> were issued requiring that in all future contracts for the purchase of Indian allotments, the purchaser assume accrued irrigation charges and undertake to pay initial charges until the total assessable costs had been paid. Likewise many Indians had received fee patents containing affirmations that their lands were free of all encumbrances, and these Indians had been sold under warranty deed. The Solicitor of the Department of the Interior<sup>21</sup> held that while no specific law was created by act of Congress for payment of irrigation charges, the obligation was personal against the individual Indian and the land was not subject to construction charges accrued prior to the issuance of the fee patent.

Unpaid charges were made liens on the land under the Blackfoot, Fort Peck, Flathead, Crow, Wapiti, Fort Hall, Fort Belknap, and Gila River (or San Carlos) projects by specific acts.<sup>22</sup> For collective collection of reimbursement charges generally by the Act of March 7, 1925,<sup>23</sup> all unpaid apportioned construction and maintenance costs were made a lien on land in all irrigation projects.

Practically all assessments that were collected under the 1921<sup>24</sup> and 1920<sup>25</sup> acts were paid by white landowners on Indian projects. In 1932 a statute known as the Leavitt Act<sup>26</sup>

Op Sol I D, M 6870, November 15, 1921, held no interest charge could be assessed for overdue charges under the Act of February 24, 1920, 41 Stat. 408, 409.

<sup>19</sup> 45 Op. A. G. 25 (1921).

<sup>20</sup> Office of Indian Affairs Circular No. 1077, May 12, 1921.

<sup>21</sup> 53 L. D. 700 (1929).

<sup>22</sup> See section, hereinafter, under the subject of irrigation charges. By Act of March 1, 1911, 36 Stat. 1078, 1088, Yuma Reservation, Act of March 1, 1911, 36 Stat. 1079, 1081, Colorado River Reservation, Act of August 24, 1912, 37 Stat. 518, 522, Gila River Reservation, Act of May 18, 1910, 36 Stat. 124, 140, Flathead Reservation, Act of May 18, 1910, 36 Stat. 124, 140, Blackfoot Reservation, amended in 46 L. D. 600 (1927), Act of May 25, 1916, 39 Stat. 121, 154, Yakima Reservation, Act of May 18, 1910, 36 Stat. 124, 140, Wapiti Reservation, Act of June 4, 1920, 41 Stat. 405, 406, Crow Reservation, Act of March 9, 1921, 41 Stat. 1365, Fort Belknap Reservation, Act of May 24, 1924, 42 Stat. 672, 688, Fort Hall Reservation, Act of June 7, 1924, 43 Stat. 475, Gila River Reservation, San Carlos Project.

<sup>23</sup> 46 Stat. 200, 210.

<sup>24</sup> Act of August 1, 1921, 39 Stat. 582, 593.

<sup>25</sup> Act of February 24, 1920, 41 Stat. 408.

<sup>26</sup> Act of July 1, 1932, 47 Stat. 554. The House Committee on Indian Affairs in recommending the passage of this law said:

" \* \* \* The progress of many Indians is retarded by old debts which burden them by the Government and incurred under circumstances which dictate adjustment as a matter of simple justice. This is at the present time no authority to make any adjustment. As a consequence, while the Indian Bureau has been laboring in making collections, these accumulated debts many times have prevented the collection of the Indian's share of the funds of individual Indians, and against some tribal funds. This decreases the value of funds and interferes with the effort necessary to make Indians self-sufficient through farming, livestock raising, etc."

" \* \* \* Not the purpose of this measure to wipe out any part of proper debt. The record of the Indians in making repayment of revolving funds and paying obligations is worthy of recognition by our citizens generally. It is intended to enable the Secretary of the Interior to do justice in connection with all bonded or unpaid obligations. (House Report No. 861, 72d Cong., 1st sess. p. 1.)"

For an analysis of the legislative history of this act leading to the conclusion that it applies to Indian lands subsequently acquired, see Op Sol I D, M 80153, April 19, 1929.

Op. Letter of Secretary of the Interior to Comptroller General, September 28, 1932, with regard to availability after passage of the

was carried. Under this act, the Secretary of the Interior was given authority to adjust and eliminate reimbursable charges due from Indians or tribes of Indians, taking into consideration the equities existing at the time of the expenditure. It was specifically provided with respect to irrigation that all uncollected construction assessments (the interest levied thereon) were cancelled and that no more assessments of construction charges should be made as long as lands remain in Indian ownership. This act in effect recognized the need for and provided a subsidy in favor of the Indians to the extent of construction costs.

#### A OPERATION AND MAINTENANCE CHARGES

Although the Leavitt Act<sup>22</sup> relieved the Indian of liability for future construction charges, he remained liable for the current assessments for operation and maintenance charges. However, as the Act of August 1, 1904<sup>23</sup> made reimbursement of all charges dependent upon ability of the Indian to pay,<sup>24</sup> when an agency dependent certifies as to the inability of circumstances of an Indian payment of current operation and maintenance charges are also deferred and remain charges against the land. In such cases a reimbursable appropriation is secured to defray the Indian's share of such costs.

Land of non-Indian owners on Indian projects continued liable for irrigation construction charges. Several non-Indian acts<sup>25</sup> have been enacted for this relief. In 1936<sup>26</sup> Congress authorized investigation and adjustment of irrigation charges on non-Indian lands. A survey is now in process. Under this act, costs which the land improper upon investigation under direction of the Secretary of the Interior may be adjusted subject to report of the proposed adjustments to Congress for approval. Further, the Secretary is authorized to decline land non-liable for a period not exceeding 5 years, which could not be properly irrigated with existing facilities and no charges may be assessed during that period. He may, also, cancel all charges, construction and operation and maintenance, which remained unpaid at the time Indian title was extinguished which were not a lien against the land.

Regulations relative to time of payment, delivery, penalties for nonpayment, both as to time and stoppage of water upon failure to pay, apportionment of water and other distinctions as to various classes of water users, Indians, Indian lessees, and non-Indians, and the effect of contacts with state or local water users' projects are in force.<sup>27</sup>

The various irrigation projects were instituted and are operated under dissimilar conditions and different statutory authority, and consequently regulations are not uniform.

General statutory provisions dealing with irrigation are noted below.<sup>28</sup>

Leavitt Act of funds appropriated for irrigation projects without consent of Indian owners to pay construction costs.

After an assessment has accrued, the Secretary of the Interior is without authority to extend time of payment in the absence of specific enactment of Congress except as modified by the Leavitt Act. Op. Sol. I D. M. 42084, July 3, 1980, 60 U. S. D. 228.

<sup>22</sup> Act of July 1, 1902 47 Stat. 661.

<sup>23</sup> See quotation of act in 190 supra.

<sup>24</sup> Act of February 14, 1931 46 Stat. 1115, 1127, Act of June 1, 1932, 47 Stat. 504. Act of January 20, 1933 47 Stat. 770, Act of March 3, 1935 47 Stat. 1427, Act of May 3, 1935 49 Stat. 170, 187, Act of June 19, 1935 49 Stat. 847. Act of July 14, 1936 49 Stat. 1306, Act of May 31, 1936, Pub. No. 97, 76th Cong., 1st sess., Pub. Res. No. 40 of August 5, 1939 76th Cong., 1st sess. These provisions acts deferred all construction charges and not assessment for operation and maintenance. For regulations, see 25 C. F. R. 130.1-130.100 and 131.1-131.4 and 131.1.

<sup>25</sup> Act of June 22, 1935, 49 Stat. 1808.

<sup>26</sup> 25 C. F. R. Subchapter L, § 1.10.

<sup>27</sup> Act of February 8, 1887 24 Stat. 948, 500 (Secretary of the Interior authorized to provide for equal distribution of water supply

The more important pertinent legislation of the several more important irrigation projects are summarized subsequently.

#### B BLACKFEET PROJECT<sup>29</sup>

Under an agreement of June 10, 1896<sup>30</sup> upon cession of Indian land, the United States was committed to irrigate the farms of the Blackfeet Tribe of Indians. This reservation consisting of 140,201.2 acres inhabited by approximately 1,600 Indians is located in the northwestern part of Montana. In connection with the livestock industry, the basis upon which the Blackfeet Indians expect to attain a subsisting economy, irrigation is necessary to raise winter feed for cattle. Operation costs were apportioned to the land irrigated,<sup>31</sup> and Indian landowners, when well supplying, were to repay construction charges over and above the amount paid from tribal funds.

#### C COLORADO RIVER PROJECT<sup>32</sup>

The Colorado River project irrigates 6,500 acres on the Colorado River Reservation in Arizona. In 1916, a policy of leasing was

among the Indians on any reservation, Act of March 3, 1901 26 Stat. 1093 1203 (which is to public land and reservations with regard the canal and ditch companies under certain rules and regulations). Act of February 26, 1907 30 Stat. 799 (opened irrigation ditches on Indian lands). Act of May 31, 1909 40 Stat. 1024 (extended rights of way for ditches, canals, roads, and other purposes subsidiary to irrigation). Act of February 25, 1901 31 Stat. 790 (required the approval of the Secretary of the Interior and the chief officer of the department in charge of the reservation for a list of ways for ditches, canals and reservoirs through reservations. No easements were certified in virtue of the right of way). Act of June 21, 1906 34 Stat. 325 327 (provided for the sale of any irrigated land within a reclamation project with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, compensation in the land first to pay construction charges). Act of April 4, 1910 36 Stat. 270 (provided for express authorization of Congress of any irrigation project and then only after estimation of probable cost of irrigation). Act of June 25, 1910 36 Stat. 595 598 (provided for the irrigation of private lands on Indian reservation projects). Act of August 1, 1914 48 Stat. 952 954 (made irrigation expenditures reimbursable and apportioned costs to benefits received). Act of February 11, 1920 41 Stat. 408 (made mandatory that the Secretary of the Interior begin collection of at least partial reimbursement on construction costs), for regulations issued in pursuance of this act, see 25 U. S. C. 141.1-141.7, Act of March 7, 1928 45 Stat. 200 210 (provided that all unpaid charges reimbursable by law become a first lien in favor of the land). Act of July 1, 1932 47 Stat. 504 (provided that no construction assessments be levied against Indian lands until Indian title thereon had been extinguished). Act of June 22, 1936 49 Stat. 1301 (provided for the investigation and adjustment of irrigation charges subject to the approval of Congress), non-Indian acts, see in 107.

<sup>29</sup> Principal statutory provisions, other than appropriation acts, or acts generally applicable to all projects which relate specifically to the Blackfeet project are: Act of March 1, 1907 34 Stat. 1015 1026 (authorized construction), Act of May 18, 1916 39 Stat. 128 140 (irrigation charges were made a lien on the lands), Act of June 40, 1914, 43 Stat. 3, 16 (extended provisions of the Act of March 1, 1907, 34 Stat. 1015, 1026, relating to the disposal of allotted land and provided for further allocation to tribal members. Act of April 1, 1920, 41 Stat. 549 (authorized the Secretary of the Interior to acquire land for reforestation purposes), Act of February 26, 1923 43 Stat. 1269 (inhabited the B. C. entry of the Indians to enter lands in agreement with Cattle Company irrigation district to settle water rights of the Blackfeet Indians), Act of February 18, 1931, 46 Stat. 1003 (authorized the Secretary of the Interior to adjust payment of claims on Blackfeet Indian irrigation projects), Act of August 28, 1917 40 Stat. 961 963 (provided that the Secretary of the Interior is liable to the Blackfeet Tribe the interest in certain lands acquired by the United States under reclamation laws land to be held in trust for the Indians by the Secretary of the Interior). For discussion of act of May 1, 1988 26 Stat. 113, as affecting water rights of Blackfeet Indians, see Op. Sol. I D. M. 15840, July 12, 1935. For regulations see 25 C. F. R. 91.1-91.22.

<sup>30</sup> 26 Stat. 121 254.

<sup>31</sup> Act of March 1, 1907 34 Stat. 1015 1088.

<sup>32</sup> Principal statutory provisions, other than those relating to appropriations or those generally applicable to all projects, which relate specifically to the Colorado River project are: Act of March 2, 1897, 34 Stat. 492, 514 (appropriated for construction of canal), Act of July

instituted whereby lessees in consideration of clearing and improving the land received the use of it for from 3 to 7 years, operations and maintenance charges being paid by lessee. Since 1927 the lessee has paid construction charges. Crop returns from this project have in the past been as high as \$700,000 and it is expected that the land of this reclamation properly drained will produce profitably. A diversion dam is under construction in the Colorado River near Puke, which will divert water for 100,000 acres of Indian owned land.

#### D CROW IRRIGATION PROJECT \*

Construction of the present irrigation system on the Crow Indian Reservation \*\* in southeastern Montana was begun in 1907.

Under the agreement with the Crow Tribe \* the United States agreed to construct an irrigation project, and facilities were extended more or less continuously until 1927. Many private systems are operated from the streams supplying the Indian project. To provide a sufficient water supply for the present under cultivation a substantial dam is being constructed.

All money expended for irrigation, both construction and operation and maintenance, was from tribal funds until 1924. Beginning with 1918, \* these funds were in whole reimbursable.

#### E FLATHEAD IRRIGATION PROJECT \*

The Flathead project \*\* on the Flathead Reservation in western Montana irrigates approximately 107,000 acres. Less than

27 1894 15 Stat 198 222 (provided facilities for irrigation (amals). Act of April 21 1904 3 Stat 189 224 (authorized irrigation under Reclamation Act), Act of April 4 1910 36 Stat 289 374 (authorized further construction funds to be reimbursed from the sale of lands), Act of March 5 1911 36 Stat 1079 1082 (made construction charges a lien on the land not to be enforced so long as original allottee occupied land as a homestead).

\* Principal statutory provisions, other than those relating to appropriations or those generally applicable to all projects which relate specifically to the Crow Reservation are: Act of April 27 1901 36 Stat 452 467 (agreement by which proceeds from ceded lands were to be used in irrigation), Act of March 3 1909 35 Stat 781 797 (extended provisions for entry upon ceded lands), Act of May 28 1918 40 Stat 501 774 (made reimbursable appropriation from tribal funds), Act of June 4 1910 36 Stat 751 (made irrigation charges a lien on the land since that time funds have been appropriated from the United States Treasury Act of May 26 1926 44 Stat 675 (amended the Act of June 4 1910 in Stat 751 by providing that the expenditure not approved by the tribal council be reimbursed to the tribe). For regulations, see 25 C F R 94.1-94.22.

\*\* See *United States v. Powers*, 309 U S 581 (1938), and *Anderson v. Bryan Morgan*, 214 F.2d 607 (9th Cir. 1928).

\* Act of March 5 1911, 36 Stat 1079 1082.

\*\* Act of May 23 1918, 40 Stat 501, 574.

\* Principal statutory provisions other than those relating to appropriations or those generally applicable to all projects which relate specifically to the Flathead project are: Act of April 29 1901 36 Stat 905 906 (authorized survey for irrigation purposes), Act of June 21 1906, 34 Stat 825 854, and Act of April 30 1908, 36 Stat 70, 83 (amended and extended Act of April 27 1904, 36 Stat 902, 908), Act of May 29 1908, 37 Stat 444 448 (provided that any money on the portion of reclamation project proportionate cost of irrigation construction allotted Indian lands be relieved of construction cost), Act of April 4 1910, 36 Stat 280 277 (extended construction), Act of August 24 1912, 37 Stat 718 820 (related to the disposal of allotted land), Act of July 17 1914, 38 Stat 610 (provided for reimbursement of funds spent for irrigation), Act of May 19 1918 40 Stat 123 130 (provided for operation and maintenance charges and amended the Act of May 29 1908 36 Stat 444 445 so that purchasers of allotted Indian lands were liable for construction charges, returned money spent from tribal funds for irrigation), Act of June 6 1924, 43 Stat 890, 402 (transferred the Flathead reservation from the Bureau of Reclamation to the Indian Service). For regulations see 25 C F R 97.1-100.10. For regulations relating to electric power system see 161.1-121.62.

\*\* *Moody v. Johnson*, 80 F.2d 699 (C. C. A. 9 1926), and *United States v. McIntire*, 101 F.2d 660 (C. C. A. 10 1939), relate to water rights of this tribe.

one-fourth of the land is owned by Indians. Re-payment contract is providing for payment of construction and operation and maintenance costs have been executed by non-Indian owners. A power system is operated in connection with the irrigation project.

Tribal money was expended for a part of the construction. By the Act of May 18 1916, \* these funds were refunded and placed to the credit of the tribe.

#### F FORT BELKNAP PROJECT \*\*

The Fort Belknap project, on the reservation of that name, in north central Montana, has been in operation about 40 years. The irrigated land is all Indian owned. Tribal money has been used extensively in the construction of this project. All construction appropriations were made reimbursable but water users on this project have not had sufficient income to pay charges.

#### G FORT HALL PROJECT \*

The Fort Hall project on the Fort Hall Reservation in the southeastern part of Idaho contains a total irrigable area of 60,000 acres of which 60,000 acres are under constructed works. Additional storage on Snake River will be necessary to provide a water supply for the remaining 30,000 acres of irrigable land. Irrigation on this reservation is vital as the key to the agricultural enterprises in which the Indians expect to become self-sustaining. In the agreement of the United States with this tribe \*\* it was provided "that water rights are to be without cost to the Indians so long as title remained in said Indians or tribe." The white owned lands pay both construction and operation and maintenance charges. A nonreimbursable appropriation has been made each year to cover the Indian share of the costs.

#### H FORT PECK RESERVATION \*\*

By the Act of May 30 1908, under the direction of the Reclamation Service, irrigation projects were built on Fort Peck

as 30 Stat 128 141.

\* Principal statutory provisions other than those relating to appropriations or those generally applicable to all projects which relate specifically to the Fort Belknap project are: Act of June 10 1898 30 Stat 471 714 (consentment of the United States to transfer lands on Fort Belknap Reservation), Act of April 4 1910 36 Stat 289 277 (provided that costs of irrigation be reimbursed from tribal funds), Act of March 8 1911 36 Stat 1078 1080 (provided charges become a lien on the land when ceded to be used as a homestead), Act of March 8 1921 41 Stat 1850, 1907 (provided all charges become a lien on the land). For regulations see 25 C F R 101.1-103.22.

\*\* Principal statutory provisions other than those relating to appropriations or those generally applicable to all projects which relate specifically to the Fort Hall project are: Act of March 1 1907 34 Stat 3215 1021 (authorized construction), Act of April 4 1910 36 Stat 280, 274 (provided for the payment of construction charges on lands to private ownership), Act of March 4 1911 36 Stat 1058 1061 (provided for the completion of the project and that charges should be a lien on land not used as Indian homestead), Act of May 24 1922 42 Stat 751 868 (provided that the cost of rehabilitation to be paid by both Indian and non-Indian owners making proportionate reimbursable expenditures on Indian lands), Act of March 3 1927 44 Stat 1188 (repealed contracts for the repayment of charges by white owners and created a lien on Indian lands. (This applied to the Gibson unit only). For regulations see 25 C F R 101.1-100.27.

\*\* *Op. Bol. I D. M. 5886* June 19 1923 (authority of the Secretary of the Interior to appropriate land in Fort Hall Reservation as a reserve site without consent of the Indians).

\* Principal statutory provisions other than those relating to appropriations or those generally applicable to all projects which relate specifically to the Fort Peck Reservation are: Act of May 30 1908 35 Stat 678 (authorized construction), Act of May 18 1916 38 Stat 121 140 (provided that a lien was to be created in patents for unpaid charges, that tribal funds be used for construction be returned to the tribal account), Act of June 6 1924, 43 Stat 890, 402 (transferred jurisdiction from the Bureau of Reclamation to the Indian Service).

Reservation, Mont., into which both white and Indian interests entered. The proceeds of the sale of surplus land were used for original construction.

### I SAN CARLOS PROJECT<sup>22</sup>

The San Carlos irrigation project,<sup>23</sup> was designed to irrigate 100,000 acres of which 50,000 are owned by whites and 50,000 acres on the Gila River Indian Reservation owned in part by individual Indians and in part by the Gila River Pima Maricopa Indian Community.<sup>24</sup> The project has a hydroelectric plant at Coolidge Dam and a Dixie electric plant located near the town of Coolidge, with high voltage and low voltage lines to carry power to project irrigation wells, nearby towns, mining camps and individual firm consumers.

### J UTAH<sup>25</sup>

On the Utah Reservation in Utah an irrigation project was constructed over a period of years, from 1900 to 1912. A system of project of replacement is now in process.

This project is designed to irrigate 77,104 acres of project land and to carry water to approximately 28,000 acres of private lands through carrying capacity granted to companies and individuals who pay a proportionate share in the operation and maintenance of the project.

<sup>22</sup>Principal statutory provisions, other than appropriations or acts generally applicable to all projects which relate specifically to the San Carlos project are Act of March 3, 1903 38 Stat. 1048-1081 (authorized construction and provided that costs of the project for the Pima Indians be repaid within 80 years after the Indians have become allottees), Act of August 21, 1912, 37 Stat. 518-522 (provided that the cost of the irrigation work be reimbursable and created a lien upon Indian lands), Act of June 18, 1910 39 Stat. 128-129 (provided for the construction of a dam to irrigate white and Indian-owned lands. Costs of this construction made reimbursable with respect to Indian lands under the act of August 24, 1912. Costs of non-Indian owned land were to be paid in accordance with the Act of August 18, 1914 39 Stat. 646), Act of June 7, 1924 43 Stat. 475, 476 (amending act for the San Carlos project provided for contracts for irrigation of the Gila River Indian and of white-owned lands).

<sup>23</sup>Preference of Indians to whites stated by Coolidge Dam. Memo Sol I D February 19, 1908.

<sup>24</sup>Memo Sol I D August 25, 1908 (reflection of charges).

<sup>25</sup>Principal statutory provisions, other than those relating to appropriations or acts generally applicable to all projects, which relate specifically to the Utah project are Act of June 21, 1906 34 Stat. 325, 375 (authorized the project and provided that the cost should be repaid within 80 years after becoming self-supporting), Act of April 30, 1908, 37 Stat. 70-85 (provided for the leasing of allotted irrigated lands with the consent of the allottee with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior), Act of May 24, 1922, 42 Stat. 552-578 (provided for extension and rehabilitation of this project repaid from the principal funds held in trust for the Confederated Band of Utah Indians). For regulations see 26 C. F. R. 121-1-121-28.

### K WIND RIVER<sup>26</sup>

The Wind River irrigation project includes the diminished and ceded portions of the Wind River Reservation, Wyoming. The project consists of five systems, embracing irrigable areas of approximately 65,000 acres. The funds furnished for this project were made reimbursable. Assessments of operation and maintenance costs are made against all land to which water can be delivered except tribal lands not farmed. Regulations covering the first sale of the irrigated land provided for paid up water rights. These funds are not charged with construction costs.<sup>27</sup>

### L YAKIMA

The Yakima irrigation projects in the State of Washington include the Wapato, Toppenish-Sumner, Stetus, and Ylhamum units containing a total irrigable area of 170,000 acres, of which 120,000 acres are in Indian ownership and 50,000 acres in private ownership. Of this area some 128,000 acres are supplied with irrigation facilities.

<sup>26</sup>Principal statutory provisions other than appropriations or acts generally applicable to all irrigation projects, which relate specifically to the Wind River project are Act of March 8, 1905 34 Stat. 1016 (provided for the construction of the project at farm proceeds of sale of ceded lands), Act of April 30, 1908 37 Stat. 70-85 (appropriations under this provision for Indian-owned or lands appropriated by this act), Act of May 25, 1922, 42 Stat. 552-578 (provided that private lands under this project pay the proportionate share of the cost of construction). For regulations see 26 C. F. R. 121-1-121-22.

<sup>27</sup>Op Sol I D M 14051 July 8, 1925.

Principal statutory provisions, other than those relating to appropriations or acts generally applicable to all projects which relate specifically to the Yakima project are Act of December 21, 1904 38 Stat. 811-812 (provided for the construction of irrigation work on the Yakima Indian Reservation, such benefit to compensate the Indians for any such water benefits required by the act), Act of June 18, 1910 39 Stat. 128-129 (provided for the construction of the project), Act of June 21, 1906 34 Stat. 128-129 (appropriated reimbursable funds), Act of April 4, 1910 36 Stat. 209-286 (provided for the construction of a drainage system for the Wapato project), Act of June 10, 1918 40 Stat. 77-100 (provided for the appointment of a joint congressional committee to report on the feasibility of constructing irrigation systems in this reservation), Act of August 1, 1914 38 Stat. 582-604 (provided that the Indians who had been unjustly deprived of the Yakima River be entitled to 117 cubic feet per second in perpetuity), Act of August 1, 1914 38 Stat. 582-604 (continued in Op Sol I D, M 3401, April 15, 1921, holding that no penalty could be charged on delinquency. This applied to the Wapato and Stetus units only), Act of May 18, 1910 39 Stat. 121, 123, 124 (provided for extension of project be reimbursed in 20 annual installments and created a first lien on Indian lands in the Wapato and Stetus unit), authorized the Secretary of the Interior to fix operation and maintenance charges, continued in Ind. Off. Memo, June 12, 1908), Act of June 30, 1919, 41 Stat. 3-28 (provided no interest charges were on land under the Toppenish-Sumner unit), Act of February 14, 1920 41 Stat. 406-441 (provided that Indians under the Wapato and Stetus units repay construction costs of land at \$5 per acre per year), Act of May 25, 1922 42 Stat. 552-578 (reduced annual construction payment from \$5 to \$4.70 per acre on the Wapato and Stetus units). For regulations, regarding the Wapato irrigation project, Washington, see 26 C. F. R. 124-1-124-19.

## SECTION 8 FEDERAL LEGAL SERVICES

The United States without specific statutory authority represents the Indian generally in legal matters in which the United States has an interest. Federal legal services, therefore, are available to the Indian in cases involving the protection of property allotted or furnished to the Indian by the Government in which an interest of the United States may be found, either in the fact that it holds such property in trust for the Indians or in the fact that the property may be held by the Indians subject to restrictions against alienation.<sup>28</sup>

<sup>28</sup>See Chapter 10, sec. 2A(1).

The Federal Government, as a routine service to the Indian, brings actions to enforce terms of leases or other contracts arising in connection with restricted property. It institutes or defends litigation relating to oil royalties or other mineral rights and represents the Indians in suits involving federal and state taxes.<sup>29</sup>

The Department of Justice has, for the most part, followed the policy of representing Indians in matters relating to their allotments or reservations or to property of Indians over which

<sup>29</sup>Justice Department File No. 00-2-012-1, Memo of July 29, 1922.

Congress has provided that the United States maintain control and supervision.

Legal representation is also given the Indian in other cases involving interests of the United States, as expressed in treaty provisions or acts of Congress. These cases for the most part relate to hunting and fishing privileges, water rights, suits for trespass, or other rights arising out of reservation property.<sup>1</sup>

A specific statutory duty to represent the Indian in all suits at law and in equity is found in section 175, title 25, of the United States Code. This section provides:

In all States and Territories where there are reservations or allotted Indians the United States district attorney shall represent them in all suits at law and in equity.

The language of this provision is very broad, and this probably has been a factor in the failure of the Department of Justice to adopt a consistent policy as to when it will authorize or require the United States district attorneys to appear on behalf of the Indian.

The original enactment, as found in the Act of March 8, 1898,<sup>2</sup> is part of a paragraph which reads:

To enable the Secretary of the Interior, in his discretion, to pay the legal costs incurred by Indians in contests initiated by or against them, to any entity, thing, or other claim, under the laws of Congress relating to public lands, for any sufficient cause affecting the legality or validity of the entity, thing or claim five thousand dollars. *Provided*, That the fees to be paid by and on behalf of the Indian party in any case shall be one half of the fees provided by law in such cases, and said fees shall be paid by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, on an account stated by the proper land officers through the Commissioner of the General Land Office. In all States and Territories where there are reservations or allotted Indians the United States District Attorney shall represent them in all suits at law and in equity.

It may be argued that the last sentence of the paragraph should be construed as relating only to the first sentence, and the circumstance that the last sentence was introduced on the floor of the House in the course of a discussion of the first sentence may be thought to give support to this construction.<sup>3</sup> Such a construction, however, would subordinate the plain language of the statute to the form of paragraphing, and would ignore the long established custom of including items of permanent general

legislation on Indian affairs in criticized paragraphs of appropriation acts. This narrow construction has never been adopted by the Attorney General, and it is rejected by the codifiers of the United States Code, who copied the proviso in the first sentence, and the last sentence of the paragraph, as distinct statements of general and permanent legislation.

While rejecting the construction which would limit the duty of legal representation to public land contests, the Department of Justice has occasionally taken the view that the statute in question contains an implied proviso, and that the phrase "all suits at law and in equity" really means "all suits at law and in equity in which the United States has an interest."<sup>4</sup> The Department of Justice has not been consistent, however, in the use of this construction, and has on occasion given a less narrow interpretation to the words of Congress.<sup>5</sup> Carried out consistently, this narrow construction would nullify the statute, since, as we have noted, the United States has represented Indians in such cases without special statutory authorization.

In criminal prosecutions<sup>6</sup> for alleged violations of state laws committed outside the reservation, where the jurisdiction of the state is plainly and unquestionable, the United States has not represented the Indians in any such criminal prosecutions brought by state authorities, unless the Indians claim immunity from such state laws by reason of the status of the *terra in quo*, or because of some treaty stipulation or provision of a federal law affecting the act, the commission of which is regarded as a crime by the state law. Within this latter class of cases may be included, for instance, the defense of Indians who are prosecuted for alleged violations of the state fish and game laws,<sup>7</sup> or Indian claiming a right to fish or hunt in the particular place where the offense is alleged to have been committed, or prosecuted for the driving of a truck without a state license.

Special provision has been made by Congress to provide legal services for the Five Civilized Tribes,<sup>8</sup> the Osage,<sup>9</sup> and the Pueblo Indians.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In the *Constitution Indemnity Company* case in California, no legal representation was furnished in a suit for negligence resulting in personal injuries or death of Indians even though such Indians were still wards of the government (Justice Department File No. 90-2-0-83). And again representation was denied in suit to recover damages for the death of deceased Port Fred Agnew Indian from the Great Northern Railway (Justice Department File No. 90-2-0-133).

<sup>2</sup> On December 26, 1929, the Attorney General advised a United States Attorney to represent a Hopi Indian, Tom Fyates, sued for accidental shooting of a white man off the reservation. See Ind. Off. Memo, May 20, 1930. In the case of the claim of the Indians of the Warm Springs Reservation against the Montana Horse Products Company, the United States Attorney brought suit in the name and behalf of the Indian to compel the said company to pay to individual Indians the stipulated consideration for catching a number of wild horses running on the reservation (Justice Department File No. 90-2-19-6).

<sup>3</sup> In the Humeon murder case in New York the position was taken that section 175 has no relation to criminal prosecutions and had never been so construed (Justice Department File No. 90-2-7-42).

<sup>4</sup> See, for example, 227, supra.

<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 23, sec. 6.

<sup>6</sup> See Chapter 23, sec. 12.

<sup>7</sup> See Chapter 20, sec. 8A.

<sup>1</sup> Justice Department File No. 90-2-012-1 Memo of July 20, 1932.

<sup>2</sup> Where the State of Idaho prosecuted several Indians of the Coeur d'Alene Agency in district court for the killing of deer out of season in alleged violation of the state game laws the Department of Justice took the position that, since the United States had the duty to protect the Indians in their treaty rights of subsistence it could maintain an action to restrain the state authorities from interfering with the exercise of such treaty rights by the Indians, and the United States Attorney appeared for the purpose of protecting and defending the Indians. (Justice Department File No. 90-2-0-71.)

<sup>3</sup> 27 Stat. 612-631. Compare the statute of September 6, 1869, embodied in the Laws of the India, requiring the King's Solicitors to "be protectors of the Indians." \* \* \* and plead for them in all civil and criminal suits, whether official or between parties with Spaniards demanding or defending." 2 White's Recopilacion (1880) 95.

<sup>4</sup> Cong. Rec., 52d Cong., 2d sess., February 24, 1898, p. 2182.



## TAXATION

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 Sources of limitations on taxing power of the states.....	254	Section 9—Continued	
A "Instrumentality" doctrine.....	254	C Homestead allotments.....	259
B Federal statutes.....	255	D Land purchased with restricted funds.....	260
C State constitutions.....	256	Section 4 State taxation of personal property.....	262
D State statutes.....	256	Section 5 State sales taxes.....	263
Section 2 State taxation of tribal lands.....	256	Section 6 State inheritance taxes.....	264
Section 3 State taxation of individual Indian lands.....	267	Section 7 Federal taxation.....	265
A Treaty allotments.....	267	A Sources of limitations.....	265
B The General Allotment Act.....	258	B Federal income taxes.....	265
		C Other federal taxes.....	266
		Section 8 Tribal taxation.....	266

The use of the phrase "Indians not taxed" in the provisions of the Federal Constitution relating to representation in Congress<sup>1</sup> has given color to the popular belief that tribal Indians are exempt from taxes. Whichever the situation may have been when this phrase was first used, it is a fact today that Indians pay a great variety of taxes, federal, state, and tribal. It is, however, a fact that peculiarities of property ownership and special jurisdictional fiction affecting Indian reservations result in certain tax exemptions not generally applicable to non-Indians. These exemptions involve a series of difficult legal and political problems.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Art I sec 2 amendment XIV, sec 2. For an analysis of the legislative and administrative history of this phrase leading to the conclusion that there is no class of "Indians not taxed" see Op Sol I D M 31019 November 7 1940. And see 87 Cong Rec 70 (January 8 1941) for Census report following this opinion.

<sup>2</sup> See Sen Rep 198 73th Cong. 4d sess (May 6 1938), Sen Rep 1365, 72d (encl. 4d sess., Hearings, Sen Comm on Ind Aff Oct 5

Limitations upon the power to tax, which has been called an attribute of sovereignty,<sup>3</sup> give rise to certain immunities. Such limitation may be expressed in federal, state, and tribal constitutions<sup>4</sup> or laws<sup>5</sup> or they may be imposed by contract.<sup>6</sup>

See 282, 72d Cong 1st sess. The proposal has been made for many years that the Federal Government pay to counties and states in which tax exempt Indian lands are located sums in lieu of taxes to pay for educational and other services. See Twenty-first Report of the Board of Indian Commissioners (1889). This principle has been actually embodied in special legislation. Act of July 1 1862 sec 4, 27 Stat 82, 88 (Coville). And see Chapter 12 sec 2A.

<sup>3</sup> See *McCulloch v. Maryland* 4 Wheat 316, 428-429 (1819) 1 Cooley Taxation (4th ed 1924) c 1, sec 1, p 61.

<sup>4</sup> See secs 10 and 8 supra.

<sup>5</sup> Act of June 18, 1914, sec 7, 48 Stat 984 985 25 U S C 367, Act of June 20, 1938, 49 Stat 1642.

<sup>6</sup> 1 Cooley Taxation (4th ed 1924) c 2, sec 58 p 151.

## SECTION 1 SOURCES OF LIMITATIONS ON TAXING POWER OF THE STATES

To the extent that Indians and Indian property within an Indian reservation are not subject to state laws, they are not subject to state tax laws.<sup>7</sup>

We have seen, elsewhere, that state laws are not applicable to tribal Indians on an Indian reservation except where Congress has expressly provided that state laws shall apply.<sup>8</sup> It follows that Indians and Indian property on an Indian reservation are not subject to state taxation except by virtue of express authority conferred upon the state by act of Congress. Conversely Indian property outside of an Indian reservation is subject to state taxation unless congressional authority for a claim of tax exemption can be found.<sup>9</sup> This jurisdictional immunity from state taxation is sometimes buttressed by

(a) The judicial doctrine that states may not tax a federal instrumentality, operating upon the assumption that various incidents of Indian property are federal instrumentalities,

(b) Express prohibition in enabling acts and other federal statutes against taxation of Indians and Indian property,

(c) Explicit waiver in state constitutions of the right to tax Indians or Indian property,

(d) Express prohibition in state statutes against taxation of Indians or Indian property.

It is not clear whether any of these added reasons need be advanced to justify the immunity of Indian property on an Indian reservation from state property taxes. Since, however, they often figure largely in the reasoning used by the courts in attaining a particular result, they will hereinafter be discussed in some detail.

## A "INSTRUMENTALITY" DOCTRINE

Perhaps the most frequent reason stressed by the courts for the exemption of Indian property from state taxation is the federal instrumentality doctrine. The doctrine in its application to Indians and Indian property is founded upon the premise that the power and duty of governing and protecting tribal Indians is

<sup>1</sup> See *Surplus Trading Co v. Cook*, 281 U S 847, 851 (1980).

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 6.

<sup>3</sup> Act of June 18 1914, sec 5 48 Stat 984, 985 25 U S C 368, Act of June 20 1938, 49 Stat 1642.

primarily a federal function,<sup>30</sup> and that a state cannot impose a tax which will substantially impede or burden the functioning of the federal Government.<sup>31</sup>

The doctrine is limited in its application to the property or functions of those Indians who are in some degree under federal control or supervision. Thus it has afforded immunity to the property and functions of tribal Indians whether allotted or unallotted.<sup>32</sup>

Something of the nature of the doctrine as well as its scope may be found in the illuminating opinion of the Circuit Court of Appeals in the case of *United States v. Thorpe County*<sup>33</sup> where the proceeds of the sale of restricted Indian lands were held exempt from state taxation.

\* \* \* The experience of more than a century has demonstrated the fact that the unimproved good, healthy, cunning, and possibly of members of the superior race, in their dealings with the Indians, unworshipfully drive them to poverty, despair, and wail. To protect them from want and despair, and the superior race from the inevitable attacks which these evils produce, to lead them to abandon their nomadic habits and to leave the ways of civilized life, the Government of the United States has long exercised the power granted to it by the Constitution (Article I, § 8, subd 3) to reserve and hold in trust for them large tracts of land and large sums of money derived from the release of the Indian rights of occupancy of the lands of the continent, to manage and control their property to furnish them with agricultural implements, houses, barns, and other permanent improvements upon their lands, domestic animals and implements, and small amounts of money, and to provide them with physicians, farmers, schools and teachers. The Indian reservations, the funds derived from the release of the Indian right of occupancy, the lands allotted to individual Indians, but still held in trust for the state in their behalf, the improvements upon these lands, the agricultural implements, the domestic animals and other property of like character furnished to them by the nation to enable and induce them to cultivate the soil and to establish and maintain permanent homes and families, are the means by which the nation pursues its wise policy of protection and instruction and exercises its lawful powers of government.

\* \* \* Every instrumentality lawfully employed by the United States to execute its constitutional laws and to exercise its lawful governmental authority is necessarily exempt from state taxation and interference. *McClough v. Mayland*, 6 Wheat 416 4 L Ed 170 *Van Brocklin v. State of Tennessee*, 117 U S 151, 176 6 Sup Ct 470, 29 L Ed 117. *Wagoner v. United States*, 138 U S 409, 10 Sup Ct 911, 35 L Ed 667. It is for this reason that the Supreme Court decided that lands held by Indian allottees under Act Feb 8, 1887, 24 Stat 589, c 110, § 6, within 25 years after their allotment, houses and other permanent improvements thereon, and the cattle, horses and other property of like character which had been issued to the allottees by the United States and which they were using upon their allotments, were exempt from state taxation, and decided that "no authority exists for the state to tax lands which are held in trust by the United States for the purpose of carrying out its policy in reference to these Indians." *U S v. Rickett*, 188 U S 432, 411, 28 Sup Ct 178, 482, 47 L Ed 532.

\* \* \* The proceeds of the sales of these lands have been lawfully substituted for the lands themselves by the trustee. The substitutes partake of the nature of the originals, and stand charged with the same trust. The

lands and their proceeds, so long as they are held or controlled by the United States and the term of the trust is not expired, are alike instrumentalities employed by it in the lawful exercise of its powers of government to protect, support, and instruct the Indians for whose benefit the complainant holds them, and they are not subject to taxation by any state or county. (Pp 289-290, 292.)

## B FEDERAL STATUTES

Congressional power to exempt land from state taxation is limited only by the requirement that the property or function in question be reasonably considered incident to a federal function. So large is the discretion permitted the legislative branch by the courts,<sup>34</sup> in this connection that no case has been found in which the courts refused to sustain Congress' power to exempt.

When a tax immunity is offered to individual Indians by federal statute or treaty, by way of inducement to a voluntary transaction, the courts have held that the immunity becomes constitutional in the sense that the individual Indians acquire a vested right to the exemption which is protected against Congress itself by the Fifth Amendment.<sup>35</sup>

Other federal statutes limiting the power of the states to tax are the enabling and organic acts authorizing the formation of state and territorial governments,<sup>36</sup> expressly exempting Indians and Indian property from the jurisdiction of state laws.

<sup>30</sup> Act of June 18, 1933, c 5, 48 Stat 994 25 U S C 167 provides:

"The Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized in his discretion to acquire . . . any interests in lands . . . within or without existing reservations . . . for the purpose of providing land and buildings . . . to be taken in the name of the United States . . . and such lands or rights shall be exempt from State and local taxation."

See also Act of June 20, 1910, 40 Stat 1542 upheld in *United States v. Board of Comm'rs*, 20 F Supp 270 (D C N D Okla 1910).

<sup>31</sup> *U S v. Board of County Commissioners of Grant County, Idaho*, 103 Fed 187 (C C W D Okla 1912), aff'd 210 Fed 957 (C C A, 1024), app dismissed 241 U S 601 (1917).

<sup>32</sup> The leading case is *Choctaw v. Trapp*, 244 U S 665 (1912), holding that the Act of May 27, 1904, 33 Stat 423 was invalid insofar as it attempted to remove the tax exemption according to Choctaw and Choctaw's allottees under the Creek Assignment and Cession Act of June 28, 1898, 30 Stat 195. The rationale of this decision is here followed in many cases. See for example, *Carpenter v. Shaw*, 240 U S 116, 119 (1915); *Ward v. Lewis County*, 254 U S 17 (1920); *Board of Pows v. United States*, 130 F 2d 925 (C C 10, 1918), 80 U S 629, 60 Sup Ct 255, 102 Fed 406, 407 (C C of Okla 1915); *United States*, 87 F 2d 57 (C C A, 10, 1916); *Glenn County, Alaska v. United States*, 60 F 2d 743 (C C A, 9, 1935); *Worow v. United States*, 241 Fed 524 (C C A, 8, 1917).

<sup>33</sup> The doctrine is not without limitations. The immunity can only vest in an Indian and does not accrue to a purchaser from him. *Pink v. County Commissioners*, 218 U S 900 (1919). This conclusion is sometimes based upon the ground that tax immunity has been constitutionally relinquished by the Indian in consideration for a removal of restrictions. *Brown v. Board of Inds*, 218 U S 192 (1917). This immunity, finally extended only for the time provided in the defining statute *United States v. Sparth*, 24 F Supp 486 (D C Minn 1938).

<sup>34</sup> *United States v. Pearson*, 241 Fed 270 (D C N D Okla 1916) (Enabling Act for North Dakota, South Dakota, Montana and Wyoming, Act of February 22, 1889, 23 Stat 670 677). *Wau-Pa, Man Qua v. Aldrich*, 25 Fed 489 (C C Ind 1889) (Northwest Ordinance, July 13, 1787 U S C (1894 ed) p xciii). *United States v. Yakima County*, 274 Fed 116 (D C B D Wash 1914) (Enabling Act for Washington, Act of February 22, 1889, 25 Stat 677). *See United States v. Perry County, Wash*, 21 F Supp 369 (D C B D Wash 1938) (Enabling Act for Washington, Act of February 22, 1889, 25 Stat 670 677). *Pink v. County Comm'rs*, 248 U S 870 401 (1918). *United States v. Board of Comm'rs of Jefferson County*, 271 Fed 17 (D C B D Okla 1915). 274 Fed 105 (C C A 8, 1922), app dismissed 283 U S 689 (1924), 263 U S 691 (1924). *United States v. Board of Comm'rs*, 20 F Supp 270, 275 (D C N D Okla 1916) (Enabling Act for Oklahoma, Act of June 16, 1906 34 Stat 267). *Truett v. Jernett Land & Cattle Co*, 71 F 2d 69 (C C A, 9, 1906) (Enabling Act for Montana, Act of February 22, 1889, 23 Stat 676 677). *app dismissed* *see Furber Land & Cattle Co v. Truett*, 165 U S 719 (1907).

<sup>35</sup> See Chapter 5.

<sup>36</sup> *United States v. Roberts*, 188 U S 479 (1903). *United States v. Pearson*, 241 Fed 270 (D C S D 1916). *Duany County, S D v. United States*, 263 U S 434 (C C A 8, 1923) cert 278 U S 649 (1928). *United States v. Thurston County*, 143 Fed 287 (C C A, 1906). *United States v. Wright*, 59 F 2d 900 (C C A 4, 1981) cert den 285 U S 650. *Worow v. United States*, 241 Fed 524 (C C A, 8, 1917).

<sup>37</sup> *See Fox v. Indiana*, 9 Wall 703 (1866).

<sup>38</sup> 118 Fed 287 (C C A, 8, 1904).

Thus Indian immunity from taxation has been predicated<sup>25</sup> upon clauses providing that nothing in the enabling act shall impair the rights of persons or property pertaining to the Indians, or that Indian lands shall remain subject to the absolute jurisdiction of Congress.<sup>26</sup>

### C STATE CONSTITUTIONS

Most of these enabling act provisions have been written into

<sup>25</sup> *The Kansas Indians*, 5 Wall 737 740 (1866). *United States v. Yakima Indians* 271 Fed 125 (D C Wd Wash 1921). *United States v. Puyallup*, 211 Fed 270 (D C Wd Wash 1916). *See United States v. Bluff*, 87 Fed Case No. 10772 (C C Ky 1865), *see United States v. Board of Commissioners of McIntosh County* 271 Fed 747 (D C Okla 1921), *aff'd* 254 Fed 307 (C C A 9 1924) *app. dis.*, 268 U S 690 (1924) 268 U S 691 (1924).

<sup>26</sup> *See for example Arizona*, Act of March 20 1910, ch 577, *Colorado*, Act of February 25 1961, ch 172, *Dakota Territory*, Act of March 2 1961, ch 2, 9, *Idaho Territory*, Act of March 1, 1961, ch 180, 509, *Kansas*, Act of February 25 1961, ch 126 127, *Maine*, *Territory*, Act of May 26 1864, ch 5, *Nebraska*, *Territory*, Act of June 20 1910, ch 511 777, *North Dakota*, Act of May 2 1960, 20 Stat 81 82, *Act of June 16 1906*, ch 511 267 270, *Utah*, Act of June 18 1904, ch 107, *Wyoming Territory*, Act of July 25 1908, 15 Stat 178.

## SECTION 2 STATE TAXATION OF TRIBAL LANDS

Lands which are occupied by a tribe or tribes of Indians, have always been regarded as not within the jurisdiction of the state for purposes of state property taxation. The principal reason for this immunity has been the fact that the tribes have been regarded as distinct political communities exercising many of the attributes of a sovereign body.<sup>27</sup> A landmark in this field is the case of *The Kansas Indians*.<sup>28</sup> In holding that the tribal lands (as well as lands held by individual members thereof) were not subject to state tax laws, the court said:

"... It is the tribal organization of the Shawnees is preserved intact, and recognized by the political department of the government as existing, then they are a 'people distinct from others,' capable of making treaties, separated from the jurisdiction of Kansas, and to be governed exclusively by the government of the Union. It is under the control of Congress; from necessity there can be no divided authority. If they have acquired many things, they have not involved the protection afforded by the Constitution treaties and laws of Congress. It may be, that they cannot exist much longer as a distinct people in the presence of the civilization of Kansas, but until they are clothed with the rights and bound to all the duties of citizens, they enjoy the privilege of total immunity from State taxation. There can be no question of State sovereignty in the case, as Kansas accepted her admission into the family of States on condition that the Indian rights should remain unimpaired and the general government at liberty to make any legislation respecting them, their lands, property, or other rights, which it would have been competent to make if Kansas had not been admitted into the Union." "While the general government has a superintending care over their affairs, and continues to treat with them as a nation, the State of Kansas is estopped from denying their title to it. She accepted this status when she accepted the act admitting her into the Union. Conferring rights and privileges on these Indians cannot affect their situation which can only be changed by treaty stipulations, or a voluntary abandonment of their tribal organization. As long as the United States recognizes their national character they are under the protection of treaties and the laws of Congress, and their property is withdrawn from the operation of State laws. (Pp 755-757.)

<sup>27</sup> *See Chapter 14*  
<sup>28</sup> 5 Wall 737 (1866). Where, however, the tribe has ceased to exist as such within the state, lands owned by Indians formerly members of the tribe are subject to state taxation unless forbidden by some other federal law. *Pennock v. Commissioners*, 108 U S 44 (1880).

state constitutions; thus adding additional reason for limitation upon the power of the state.<sup>29</sup>

### D STATE STATUTES

A state may also limit its own power to tax the property of an Indian tribe by entering into an agreement with the tribe guaranteeing exemption of its lands from taxation, which guarantee is protected against violation by the obligation of contracts clause of the Federal Constitution.<sup>30</sup> This source of immunity, however, is of little importance today because states seldom make agreements with Indian tribes.

The agreement may sometimes take the form of a statutory enactment.<sup>31</sup>

<sup>29</sup> *Oldlandham Const. Act 1 sec 3* *South Dakota Const. Act XXII sec 2* *See United States v. Kautel* 154 U S 442 (1901) *United States v. Yakima County* 271 Fed 125 (D C Wd Wash 1921).

<sup>30</sup> *United States Const. Act 1 sec 10, cl 1* *New Jersey v. Wilson*, 7 Cranch 161 (1812). *Of the 35 infra*.

*New Jersey v. Wilson* 7 Cranch 161 (1812), and *see West v. Main* 100 U S 100, 26 Fed 480 (C C Ind 1866).

When the State of New York attempted to levy taxes upon the lands occupied by various tribes of Indians, contending that though the lands might be sold for nonpayment of the taxes the right of occupancy of the tribe would continue unchallenged, its attempt was frustrated by the Supreme Court in the following words:

"It will be seen on looking into the general laws of the State imposing taxes for town and county charges, a well as into the special acts of 1840 and 1841, that the taxes are imposed upon the lands in these reservations, and it is the lands which are sold in default of payment. They are dealt with by the town and county authorities in the same way in making the assessment, and in levying the same, as other real property in these subdivisions of the State. We must say, regarding these reservations as wholly exempt from State taxation, and which as we understand the opinion of the learned judge below, is not denied, the exercise of this authority on their part is in unwarrantable interference, inconsistent with the original title of the Indians, and offensive to their tribal relations."

The tax titles purporting to convey these lands to the purchasers, even with the qualification suggested that the right of occupancy is not to be affected, may well embarrass the occupants and be used by unworthy persons to the disturbance of the tribe. All agree that the Indian right of occupancy creates an indefeasible title to the reservations that may extend from generation to generation, and will cease only by the dissolution of the tribe, or their consent to sell to the party possessed of the right of pre-emption. He is the only party that is authorized to deal with the tribe in respect to their property, and thus with the consent of the government. Any other party is an intruder, and may be proceeded against under the twelfth section of the act of 30th June, 1884\* (P 771.)

\* *See Act of June 30 1884*

On the other hand, though a state may not tax the lands which the tribe occupies, it was only held that the state might tax cattle of non-Indians grazing upon tribal land under a lease from the Indians.<sup>32</sup> "But it is obvious," said the court, "that a tax put upon the cattle of the leasees is too remote and indirect to be deemed a tax upon the lands or privileges of the Indians."

<sup>32</sup> *The New York Indians*, 5 Wall 701 (1866).

<sup>33</sup> *Thomas v. Gay*, 100 U S 204 (1868).

Until recently, the federal instrumentality doctrine was employed to exempt from state taxation the income of non-Indian lessees of tribal or restricted Indian lands. However, in sustaining a federal tax on the income accruing to a lessee under a lease of state lands the Supreme Court in *Hettinger v. Producers Corp.*<sup>1</sup> expressly overruled the leading case of *Gillespie v. Oklahoma*,<sup>2</sup> which held that a state tax on income derived by a lessee from leases of Creek or Osage restricted lands was invalid because it impinged the United States in making the best possible use of its Indian lands.<sup>3</sup>

The *Gillespie* case seems to have rested on the premise that a lessee of lands from which a Government derives income for its governmental functions becomes thereby an instrumentality of that Government.

The Supreme Court, in 1933, was more concerned with the immunity from state and federal taxation which its decision in *Young's Exors. v. United States* had granted to huge private incomes then with any question of interference with federal power in Indian lands.

As said by the court, in the *Hettinger* case:

"... immunity from non-discriminatory taxation sought by a private person for his property or gains because he is engaged in operations under a government contract or lease cannot be supported by merely theoretical conceptions of interference with the functions of government. Regard must be had to substance and direct effects. And where it merely appears that one operating under a government contract or lease is subjected to a tax with respect to his profits on the same basis as others who are engaged in similar businesses, there is no sufficient ground for holding that the effect upon the Government is other than indirect and remote."<sup>4</sup> (Pp. 380-381)

And even if the lessee were in fact an agency of the Government, "no constitutional implications prohibit a State tax upon the property of an agent of the Government merely because it is the property of such an agent."<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 301 U. S. 870 (1932).

<sup>2</sup> 237 U. S. 501 (1922). But see dissenting opinion in *Hettinger v. Producers Corp.* 308 U. S. 576-587 (1933).

<sup>3</sup> "In its original form the tax immunity of governmental lessees would a relatively unimportant doctrine designed to protect the income of the Indian wards of the nation. See Note 51 HARV. L. REV. 707-712 Feb. 10 (1936). But from exemption of the gross income of the lessee of Indian lands, the cases progressed through exemption of net receipts in various circumstances at the hands of private owners of Oklahoma, Cherokee, Ojibwa & G. R. R. v. Harrison, 235 U. S. 292 (1915) (gross income tax rent paid directly to Federal Government); Indian Territory v. Humphrey, 247 U. S. 104, 240 U. S. 822 (1916) (households of Indian land exempt from general property tax); *Idaho v. Govey Oil Co.* 247 U. S. 708 (1918) (gross production (in lieu of property taxes)); *Gilchrist v. Oklahoma* 277 U. S. 501 (1922) (net income tax, interstate commerce, analogy to railroad); *Jagdish Munshi Co. v. U. S.* 271 U. S. 809 (1926) (non-discriminatory property tax on oil at mine before sale). But of Indian Territory v. Humphrey Oil Co. v. Board, 288 U. S. 325 (1933) (oil taxable in lieu of sale, where royalty already paid to Indians).

<sup>4</sup> *Railroad Co. v. Preston*, 18 Wall. 58 (1878). Of *Clallum County v. United States*, 269 U. S. 841 (1926). See also discussion of federal income tax, *infra*, note 7B.

It is to be noted, however, that in the cases overruled the taxes were levied on private individuals or corporations organized for profit and which were only incidentally performing a federal function. A distinction may be drawn between these cases, and cases involving a corporation organized solely to carry out governmental objectives, such as the tribal corporations organized under the Indian Reorganization Act of June 18, 1934,<sup>6</sup> and it is probable that an attempt by a state to impose income or other types of taxes on such business organizations would still be held a direct burden on a federal instrumentality.<sup>7</sup>

There seems little doubt in view of the foregoing that the validity, if not the scope, of the instrumentality doctrine, in so far as it relates to Indians, their property and their affairs, remains unchanged. For just is the right to tax the lessee of state lands does not include the right to tax the state itself, so the right to tax the lessee of Indian lands does not imply a right to tax the Indians or their property.

When the lands pass from the tribe to non-Indians they become, ordinarily, subject to state taxation. Thus a railroad purchasing a right of way through a reservation must pay taxes on that right-of-way is though the lands were entirely withdrawn from the reservation,<sup>8</sup> and the fact that property owned by a railroad is subject to a right of reversion in an Indian tribe does not preclude the state from taxing such property while owned by the railroad.<sup>9</sup>

On the other hand a state may contract with a tribe that designated lands be tax exempt. In such a case it has been held that the exemption runs with the lands even into the hands of a non-Indian purchaser.<sup>10</sup> Nevertheless, as pointed out by the Court, the state could, is a condition to permitting the sale of the lands, require that the right to exemption be waived, in which event the lands in the hands of the purchaser would be subject to state property taxes.

In the exercise of its plenary power over the Indian tribes, Congress may expressly subject a privilege or a property right of the tribe to state taxation. Thus the Act of May 29, 1924,<sup>11</sup> provided that—

- • • the production of oil and gas and other minerals on [unallotted Indian reservation land, other than land of the Five Civilized Tribes and the Osage reservation], may be taxed by the State in which said lands are located
- the same as production on unreserved lands,
- • • Provided, however, That such tax shall not be come a lien or charge of any kind on characters against the land or the property of the Indian owner.

<sup>5</sup> 48 Stat. 984.

<sup>6</sup> See *Clallum County v. United States*, 261 U. S. 841 (1923).

<sup>7</sup> *Utah and Northern Railway v. Fisher*, 116 U. S. 28 (1885); *Marquette and Phoenix Railroad v. Arizona*, 166 U. S. 547 (1905).

<sup>8</sup> *Cherokee, O. & G. R. R. v. Mosley*, 250 U. S. 831 (1921).

<sup>9</sup> See *Jensen v. Walker*, 316 U. S. 561 (1922); *Clallum County Commissioners v. United States*, 218 U. S. 890 (1919); *Swick v. Holbrook*, 245 U. S. 192 (1917).

<sup>10</sup> 43 Stat. 244.

## SECTION 3 STATE TAXATION OF INDIVIDUAL INDIAN LANDS

### A TREATY ALLOTMENTS

The earliest individual Indian land holdings with which the cases are concerned are those resulting from treaty. The early case of *The Kansas Indians* involved, among others, the question of whether tribal lands conveyed, pursuant to treaty, to tribal members in severalty were exempt from state taxation. As we have seen<sup>12</sup> the Court was of the opinion that since "These is

no evidence • • • to show that the Indians with separate estates have not the same rights in the tribe as those whose estates are held in common" and since "as long as the United States recognizes them [the tribes'] national character they are under the protection of treaties and the laws of Congress, and their property is withdrawn from the operation of State laws," the individual Indian holdings, as those of the tribe, are exempt from state taxation.

Similarly, lands allotted pursuant to treaty to a chief of the

<sup>12</sup> 5 Wall. 787, 796, 797 (1866). See *Fn 24 supra*.

Manum, and restricted as to alienation and inheritance even in the hands of the heirs of the allottee, provided that tribal relations be maintained.<sup>10</sup>

With the growth of the practice of allotting tribal lands in severalty the question of their exemption from state taxation became of increasing importance. We find the courts holding uniformly that restricted lands within an Indian reservation remain exempt from taxation. The extent, however, of their immunity from taxation is dependent in each case upon the statute under which the allotment is made. Conversely, land held by individual Indians outside an Indian reservation is exempt only to the extent that it is declared exempt by statute or state constitution or is recognized by the court as a federal instrumentality.<sup>11</sup>

### B THE GENERAL ALLOTMENT ACT

The division of tribal lands in severalty to individual Indians was largely accomplished by the General Allotment Act of 1887.<sup>12</sup> This act did not apply to all the Indians, several tribes, including the Five Civilized Tribes inhabiting the Indian Territory, which has since become a part of Oklahoma, being omitted.<sup>13</sup> However, it covered all Indian tribes except those explicitly named, and provided for the allotment to individual Indians of tracts of land for their own use. Under it the President was authorized to allot to individual Indians plots of land, and the Secretary of the Interior to issue patents.

"... in the name of the allottees, which patents shall be of the legal effect, and declare that the United States does and will hold the land thus allotted for the period of twenty-five years, in trust for the sole use and benefit of the Indian to whom such allotment shall have been made, ... and that at the expiration of said period the United States will convey the same by patent to said Indian, or by heirs if deceased in fee, such right of said trust and free of all charge or incumbrance what or ever."<sup>14</sup> (P 886)

But stressing then holding with the argument that the "trust" is the means whereby the Federal Government exercises control over the Indian and in order to fulfill the duty of care and protection which it owes him, the courts have uniformly declined the subject of that trust a federal instrumentality and hence not subject to state taxation. As said by the Supreme Court "in quoting a statement of the Attorney General

It was therefore well said by the Attorney General of the United States, in an opinion delivered in 1898, "that the allotment lands provided for in the Act of 1887 are exempt from state or territorial taxation upon the ground above stated."

"... namely that the lands covered by the act are held by the United States for the period of twenty-five years in trust for the Indians such trust being in agency for the exercise of a Federal power, and therefore outside the province of state or territorial authority." 29 Op. Atty Gen 161, 169 (P 489)

The courts have also argued that the lands allotted under this act are not subject to state taxation, on the theory that if the lands

<sup>10</sup> *Yas P. Man Qua v. Aldrich* 28 Fed. 489 (C C Ind. 1880) *Off. Lessor v. Teepee*, 17 Fed. Cas. No. 9584 (C C Ind. 1816)

<sup>11</sup> *Peacock v. Commissioner*, 108 U. S. 144 (1883)

<sup>12</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 389. See Chapter 4 sec. 11, and Chapter 11.

<sup>13</sup> The act, by its terms, did not apply to territory occupied by the Chickasaw, Creek, Choctaw, Chickasaw, Seminole, Osage, Miami, Florida, Seminole and other in the Indian Territory, nor to any territories occupied by the Seneca Nation in New York nor to a certain strip of land in Nebraska adjoining the Sioux Nation on the north. For a discussion of state taxation of the lands of the Five Civilized Tribes and the Osage see Chapter 29.

<sup>14</sup> The trust period was extended from time to time by various Executive orders and indefinitely by the Act of June 13, 1934, 48 Stat. 694.

<sup>15</sup> *United States v. Becker* 188 U. S. 432 (1903)

were taxable, they could be incumbered and any incumbrance would prevent the United States from fulfilling its first obligation.<sup>15</sup>

Similarly, lands allotted under authority of acts incorporating the General Allotment Act by reference are not taxable.<sup>16</sup> In *Mojave v. United States*,<sup>17</sup> the court said that the exemption arose from the local trusteeship obligating the United States to convey free of encumbrance, rather than from any concept of "sovereignty" or of a "dependent and alien people" (P 579).

The faculty of exempting the lands and not the improvements thereon was recognized in *United States v. Becker*<sup>18</sup> wherein the court said:

"Looking, if the object to be accomplished by allotting Indian lands in severalty, it is evident that Congress expected that the lands so allotted would be improved and cultivated by the allottee. But that object would be defeated if the improvements could be assessed and sold for taxes. The improvements to which the question arises are of a permanent kind. While the title to the land remained in the United States, the permanent improvements could not more be sold for its taxes than could the land to which they belonged. Every reason that can be urged to show that the land was not subject to local taxation applies to the assessment and taxation of the permanent improvements."

"... The fact remains that the improvements here in question are essentially a part of the lands, and their use by the Indians is necessary to effectuate the policy of the United States." (P 442)

It is clear, of course, that an allotment made under the General Allotment Act<sup>19</sup> remained exempt from taxation so long as the land was held in trust by the United States.<sup>20</sup> The allottee was thus insured that his lands would be tax exempt for at least 25 years and perhaps longer. However, in 1906 Congress empowered the Secretary of the Interior, before the expiration of the 25-year trust period, to issue a patent in fee "whenever he shall be satisfied that any Indian allottee is competent and capable of managing his own affairs."<sup>21</sup> The duration of the exemption came thus to be determined according to the federal Indian policy in vogue at any particular time.<sup>22</sup> Yet, the importance to the Indian of his tax immunity can hardly be underestimated. The consequences of the vesting of a fee patent have been expressed in *Menominee*, The Problem of Indian Administration as follows:

"... The statistics of Indian property previously given in this chapter demonstrate the fact, obvious to persons who visit the Indian country, that the value of the Indian lands is relatively high as compared with the

<sup>16</sup> *Mojave v. United States*, 244 Fed. 851 (C C A. 8 1917), *Board of Commissioners v. United States*, 100 F. 2d 929 (C C A. 10 1938) and 90 Sup. Ct. 295 (1939), *Glanville County v. United States*, 90 F. 2d 783 (C C A. 9 1918), *United States v. Brewster County, Idaho*, 270 Fed. 642 (C C A. 8, 1923), *United States v. Churchill County*, 217 Fed. 281 (C C W. D. Wash. 1914), *United States v. Ferry County, Washington*, 24 F. Supp. 180 (D C W. D. Wash. 1918), see *United States v. New Potosi County, Idaho*, 95 F. 2d 232 (C C A. 9, 1918) rehearing den. 95 F. 2d 238 (C C A. 9 1918).

<sup>17</sup> *See* *Nelson Act* of January 14, 1890, 25 Stat. 641, 644; see 9 applied to *Minneapolis Chippewas in Minnesota v. United States*, 248 Fed. 854 (C C A. 8 1917), *United States v. Smith*, 24 F. Supp. 105 (D C Minn. 1918), Act of June 6, 1900, 31 Stat. 872, 878, sec. 5 (Comanche, Kiowa and Apache) discussed in *United States v. Board of Commissioners (Comanche County)*, 6 F. Supp. 401 (D C W. D. Okla. 1914), Act of March 3, 1891, 26 Stat. 1155, applying to the Chickasaw in Indian Territory. *United States v. Matthews*, 22 F. 2d 748 (C C A. 8, 1929).

<sup>18</sup> 244 Fed. 854 (C C A. 8, 1917).

<sup>19</sup> 188 U. S. 432 (1903).

<sup>20</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 388.

<sup>21</sup> *United States v. Becker*, 188 U. S. 432 (1903).

<sup>22</sup> Act of May 8, 1906, 34 Stat. 182.

<sup>23</sup> For a discussion of such policy and its effects, see Chapters 2 and 11.

Indians' income from the use of that land. The general property tax, although based on the value of land, must be paid from income unless it is to result in the forfeiture of the land itself. So far as the general property tax from many points of view, it is palpably bad when applied to Indians suddenly removed from the status of a tax exempt incompetent and subjected to the full weight of state and local taxation. So far as the Indians are concerned, the tax violates the accepted canon of taxation that a tax shall be related to the capacity to pay. The levying of these taxes has without doubt been an important factor in causing the loss of Indian lands by so large a proportion of these Indians as to have been a general calamity.

The policies involved in making individual allotments and issuing fee patents brought into the economic problems of the Indian the difficult subject of taxation. Under the allotment act the incompetent Indian holding a trust patent is generally exempt from taxation. On the day he is declared competent and is given his fee patent, he straightway becomes subject to the full burden of state and local taxation. The more common form of taxation is the general property tax, the basis of which is the value of the property owned, and the burden of which falls heavily on land because it cannot be sold or taken under in the way other forms of property frequently do.

Many wise conservative Indians, with a keen power to observe the experience of others, have no desire to progress to the point where they will be declared competent and be obliged to pay taxes. They know that the taxes will consume a large proportion of their total income and that taxes are incapable. To them to achieve the status of competency means in all probability the ultimate loss of their lands. From this point of view the reward for success is the imposition of an annual loss. (P. 177)

A policy of "great liberalism" was inaugurated in 1917 led to whole sale patenting in fee whether the allottee desired the patent or not. Fully typical is the following description by the United States of the Tenth Circuit:

"... Briefly, the record discloses that in the year 1915 patents covering the lands involved were issued to the United States in trust for twenty-seven Indians to whom the lands had been allotted in severalty. Within two years thereafter, fee patents were issued to these Indians. It is stipulated that the fee title was granted to the Indians without any application on their part and without their consent. Apparently there was some opposition among the Indians to the policy of the Department and some had said that they would not accept for the fee patents. There is a letter in the record written under date of April 24, 1915 from the office of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to the special agent in charge at the reservation, instructing him to inform the Indians that the Secretary of the Interior has the right to issue these patents, and if they refuse to accept them they are directed to have the patents recorded and after recording same to send them to the patentees by registered mail and retain the receipt cards for the files in your office." (P. 734)

The year 1921 saw a reversal of policy in the issuing of patents and recent years have witnessed the cancellation of such patents and a variety of suits by the Federal Government seeking to recover taxes paid the state by the allottee, to enforce further tax

ation and to strike allotments from the tax rolls.<sup>11</sup> In all these cases the Government was successful on a rationale perhaps best expressed in *United States v. Nez Perce County, Idaho*,<sup>12</sup> as follows:

"... The Allotment Act, is well as the trust patent, by plan impeding as it did the Indian immunity from taxation during the first period of any extension of it and he had the right finally to receive his lands "free of all charge on uncertainty as to taxes." The authorities are uniform to the effect that this right of exemption is a vested right, inasmuch as part of the grant is the land itself, and the Indian may not be deprived of it by the new statute to him of a fee patent prior to the end of the first period. *Chick v. Trapp*, 224 U. S. 605, 12 S. Ct. 595, 56 L. Ed. 911, *Boyd v. Loepp*, 253 U. S. 17, 40 S. Ct. 414, 61 L. Ed. 751, *United States v. Bennet*, 207 U. S. 200, 6 S. Ct. 628, *Mohave v. United States*, 8 Ct. 243, 8 U. S. 243, *Board of Commissioners of Goshute County v. United States*, 207 U. S. 47, 6 S. Ct. 257, *United States v. Decker County, D. C.*, 14 F. 2d 784, *United States v. Comanche County, D. C.*, 6 F. Supp. 401, *United States v. Chehalis County, D. C.*, 217 F. 257. Thus with the Indians and acts of Congress relating to them rights in property reserved to them have always been liberally construed by the courts. The dependent condition of these lands of the Government makes it imperative that doubtful provisions in treaties and statutes be resolved in their favor. This court in *United States v. Bennet*, 207 U. S. 200, at page 202 declared that the Act of May 8, 1906 should be held to mean that the action of the Secretary of the Interior authorized by it can be had only on the application of the allottee or his consent. The Act of February 26, 1907 was little more than a statutory recognition of the principle here announced. The fee patent in the present instance was issued during the trust period or at least during an extension of that period. If follows from what has been said that it was issued to Citizens without his application or consent, his land remained immune from taxation during the whole of the time from 1921 to 1932, and the lien of the county should be held void. (Pp. 227-230)

Therefore, it would appear that the allottee under the General Allotment Act obtains a vested right to tax exemption which cannot be taken from him without his consent.<sup>13</sup> Should he, on the other hand, apply for the issuance of a fee patent and be accorded one pursuant to law, there seems no reason to believe that his land would not thereby become subject to state taxation.<sup>14</sup>

### C HOMESTEAD ALLOTMENTS

Lands acquired by individual Indians under the general homestead laws are exempt from taxation for specified periods following the date of issuance of the patent. Section 17 of the Homestead Act of March 3, 1878,<sup>15</sup> extended to Indians born in the United States who were heads of families or over 21 years of age and who have abandoned or shall abandon tribal relations, the benefits of the General Homestead Act of 1862.<sup>16</sup> The 1875 Act defined a tax exemption for a 5 year period by providing that the title to the lands acquired under it

"... shall not be subject to alienation or incumbrance, either by voluntary conveyance or in judgment

<sup>11</sup> *Glasco County Board v. United States* 95 F. 2d 738 (C. C. A. 9 1938).

<sup>12</sup> Authority for such cancellation is recorded by the Act of February 26, 1927, 44 Stat. 1217 which provides:

"... That the Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized in his discretion, to cancel any patent in fee simple issued to an Indian allottee or to his heirs before the end of the period of trust, described in such patent, if a first patent issued to such allottee or before the expiration of any extension of such period of trust by the President, in such case, in fee simple issued to such allottee or to his heirs, provided that the patentee has not mortgaged or sold any part of the land described in such patent. Provided also that upon revocation of such patent in fee simple the land shall have the same status as though such fee patent had never been issued."

See also Act of February 21, 1931, 46 Stat. 1205

<sup>13</sup> *United States v. Bennet*, 207 U. S. 200, 6 S. Ct. 628 (C. C. A. 9 1923), *United States v. Board of Commissioners of Goshute County, D. C.*, 217 F. 257 (1914), *United States v. Ferry County, Washington*, 24 F. Supp. 910 (D. C. W. D. Wash. 1938).

<sup>14</sup> 95 F. 2d 732 (C. C. A. 9 1938).

<sup>15</sup> *United States v. Ferry County, Washington*, 24 F. Supp. 899 (7 D. C. W. D. Wash. 1918). For an account of legislation designed to deal with this situation see Chapter 5, sec. 113.

<sup>16</sup> *Ind. Accord* 50 L. D. 681 (1924).

<sup>17</sup> 18 Stat. 402, 420.

<sup>18</sup> Act of May 20, 1892, 12 Stat. 892 "allowing citizens over 21 or heads of families to enter in private sector of public lands. This act was thought not to include Indians because they were not considered citizens." *United States v. Lower* 240 Fed. 610 (C. C. A. 8, 1917).

decree, or order of any court, and shall be and remain in full force for a period of five years from the date of the patent issued thereon.<sup>10</sup>

This act was supplemented by the Act of July 4, 1884,<sup>11</sup> which applied the homestead law to Indians generally who had to ceded on public lands rather than to a specified class and contained a 20-year trust period provision (almost identical to that contained in the General Allotment Act.<sup>12</sup> The same principles applied to the General Allotment Act allotments were seen, therefore, applicable to lands acquired under the 1881 Act.<sup>13</sup>

## D LAND PURCHASED WITH RESTRICTED FUNDS

In 1924 the Meriam report on "The Problem of Indian Administration" was published. Its authors had had occasion to study the then perplexing problem of the availability of lands purchased with restricted funds and their comments concerning it are particularly enlightening:

"A perplexing problem confronting the Indian Office today is the fixation by the states of the lands purchased for the Indians with then restricted funds which are under the supervision of the Office. The volume of such purchases is large because the allotments originally made to the Indians are often not suitable for homes. These original allotments must be sold and new property purchased if the Indians are to be situated on the land to better social and economic conditions. In order to purchase these new lands for the use and benefit of the Indian owner, it has been the uniform rule to impose upon them the restrictions which existed upon the funds with which they were obtained. Many states are claiming and exercising the power to tax such lands. Since the Indian owner, on account of his lack of ready funds or his insufficient sense of public responsibility, either cannot or will not pay taxes, the result is that the lands purchased for his permanent home are speedily slipping from him and he himself is becoming a homeless public charge. This unfortunate situation is remedied more or less because the terms of the deeds prohibit alienation by voluntary act, and thus the Indian owner is not able either to mortgage or sell his lands to secure for himself the interest that he may have in the land over and above the delinquent taxes.

The United States Supreme Court<sup>14</sup> held at an early date that the allotted lands of the Indians, the title to which was held in trust by the United States, were not taxable by the states. The policy of allotting land to the Indians and holding the title to it in abeyance until such time as they could be trusted with its full and free control had been adopted by the national government as a means for more fully civilizing the Indians and ininging them to the position where they could assume the full responsibility of citizenship. The lands were therefor the instrumentalities of the United States, and as such, by virtue of longstanding principles of constitutional law, not taxable by the several states. To this unquestioned decision may be added the ruling that, in the event of the sale of the allotted lands by govern-

mental consent, the proceeds, being simply the medium for which the lands were exchanged, were likewise held in trust by the government and not taxable.<sup>15</sup> The Supreme Court has also sustained the power of the Secretary of the Interior, in whom is vested the discretion to permit the conveyance of Indian lands, to allow such conveyance on the sole condition that the proceeds be invested in lands subject to his control in the manner at his choice.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>10</sup> *United States v. Sackett*, 188 U. S. 432, (1903).

<sup>11</sup> *National Bank of Commerce v. Anderson*, 117 Fed. 87 (C. C. Okla. Cir. 1900); *United States v. Thomson*, 118 Fed. 247 (C. C. Okla. Cir. 1900).

<sup>12</sup> *United States v. Sandilands*, 206 U. S. 228 (1924). See also *United States v. Brown*, 8 F. 2d 2nd and 3d Cir. 8 (C. C. Okla. 1925) holding that the Secretary of the Interior may purchase lands for the Indians with money from the lease of restricted lands, and reduce the title of the lands purchased.

In spite of the intimation from these cases and from the express decisions of two district courts of the Northwest<sup>17</sup> more favorable to the Indians, the exemption from state taxes of restricted funds purchased for them by the government with their restricted funds is in a precarious situation. In a case which was taken to the United States Supreme Court<sup>18</sup> it was held that lands purchased with trust funds for an Osage Indian, and made inalienable without the consent of the Secretary of the Interior, were not taxable. This decision, however, did not involve necessarily the question of a general principle. Since the ruling was so moved by the fact that the special act under which these particular funds were released to the allottee gave to the Secretary no authority to control and transfer after such release. In this case, moreover, it was not shown that the money released from the fund was invested directly in the property purchased. The thought of the court is perhaps shown in its closing remark, "Congress did not confer upon the Secretary of the Interior authority to give to property purchased with trust funds immunity from state taxation." By a series of recent decisions<sup>19</sup> the Circuit Court of Appeals for the Eighth Circuit, although omitting some dicta favorable to the Indian position, has uniformly sustained state taxation of lands purchased from the fund with their restricted funds, and made subject to alienation only with the consent of the Secretary of the Interior, and has declared itself committed to the proposition that such funds are taxable.<sup>20</sup> One of these cases was affirmed by the United States Supreme Court<sup>21</sup> in a per curiam decision on the somewhat doubtful authority of the McCurdy case *supra*.<sup>22</sup>

<sup>17</sup> *United States v. New Price Company*, 267 Fed. 499 (D. C. Idaho, 1917); *United States v. Yakima County*, 274 Fed. 155 (D. C. E. D. Wash. 1919).

<sup>18</sup> *United States v. McCurdy*, 210 U. S. 493 (1918).

<sup>19</sup> *Beckman v. The State of Oklahoma*, 1922, *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 101 (1922), *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 106 (1922), *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 106 (1922), *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 106 (1922), *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 106 (1922), *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 106 (1922), *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 106 (1922).

<sup>20</sup> *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 106 (1922), *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 106 (1922), *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 106 (1922), *United States v. Brown*, 254 Fed. 106 (1922).

<sup>21</sup> *United States v. McCurdy*, 240 U. S. 208 (1918).

The declaration by the Circuit Court of Appeals<sup>23</sup> that the national government has no authority to withdraw from state taxation lands formerly subject thereto is certainly not tenable. Congress has the power to relieve from the burden of state taxes a governmental institution, whether a post office or a home for the government's Indian wards, and it matters not that the prior status of the property may have been such that the state could fairly tax it.

<sup>22</sup> *United States v. Brown*, 8 F. 2d 584 (1925), *dictum*.

<sup>10</sup> See *United States v. Hemma*, 241 U. S. 879 (1915).

<sup>11</sup> 23 Stat. 76.

<sup>12</sup> The 1870 Act was also supplemented by the Act of January 18, 1881, 22 Stat. 815 making funds available to the Winnebagoes of Wisconsin so that they could avail themselves of the benefits of it. That act expressly provided that titles acquired by the Winnebagoes should be nontransferable for 20 years from date of issuance of the patent.

<sup>13</sup> The discussion combining the two acts, see *United States v. Hemma*, 241 U. S. 879, 884-885 (1915); *United States v. Conception of the President*, 101 F. 2d 159 (C. C. A. 10 1899).

<sup>14</sup> This trust period was extended to 1946 by Executive order issued under authority of Act of June 21, 1890, 24 Stat. 825, 826, and indefinitely under the Act of June 15, 1894, 48 Stat. 864.

<sup>15</sup> See sec. 83, *supra*.

<sup>16</sup> See discussion of General Allotment Act, *supra*, sec. 83. Also see *United States v. Jackson*, 280 U. S. 188 (1930).

<sup>17</sup> On the other hand some courts have held that where land is purchased for an Indian with restricted funds, from another Indian who held it tax exempt, it is tax exempt in the hands of the new purchaser. The reason given being that the lands and funds involved were at all times owned by the United States in the discharge of its obligation to its Indian wards. *McGeehan v. Ashland County*, 192 W. 171, 212 N. W. 288 (1927); *United States v. Glenwood* (D. C. E. D. Okla. Time 14, 1941); *Justice File No. 90-2-11-431*, *Hawley v. Foss* (D. C. N. D. Okla. August 27, 1934); *Justice File No. 90-3-5-30*, *United States v. Stone* (D. C. W. D. Okla. September 28, 1934); *Justice File No. 90-2-11-822*.

If, as has been inferred, there be doubt as to the intention of Congress to give immunity from state taxation, it is recommended that legislation be secured expressly containing the exemption. The states will not suffer from such a practice, for in return for the lost taxes on the purchased lands will be the subjection to the state taxing power of the relinquished lands, or of the funds used in making the new purchase.

Pending legislation should, of course, be pressed to a final conclusion with all possible speed in order that the existing uncertainty be ended. Should it be ascertained that these Indian lands be taxable, then the national government must fully consider the nature of the duty to the word of the guardian who has employed the trust or exempt fund to purchase property on the express or implied representation that the newly acquired property is likewise exempt. Several Indians have complained to the service staff that they are being taxed despite the formal assurance of Indian Service employees that the land purchased for them would be exempt from taxation.<sup>1</sup> (17p 780-795)

In the case of *Shau v Gibson Paines, Inc. Corp.*,<sup>2</sup> lands outside a reservation purchased with restricted Indian funds and subject to a trust not against alienation were held subject to state property taxation. The court, however, recognized the fact that

There is some instrumentalities which, though Congress may protect them from state taxation, will nevertheless be subject to that taxation unless Congress speaks. (P 261)

Thereafter by the Act of June 20, 1936,<sup>3</sup> Congress expressly exempted such lands from state taxation. In order that its purpose and meaning may be more fully understood, both section 1 and section 2 of the 1936 Act are quoted in full.

That there is hereby authorized to be appropriated, out of any money in the Treasury of the United States not otherwise appropriated, the sum of \$25,000 to be expended under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe for payment of taxes, including penalties and interest, assessed against individuals owning Indian land the title to which is held subject to restrictions against alienation or encumbrance except with the consent or approval of the Secretary of the Interior, heretofore purchased out of trust or restricted funds of an Indian, where the Secretary finds that such land was purchased with the understanding and belief on the part of said Indian that after purchase it would be non-taxable and for redemption or repurchase of any such land heretofore or hereafter sold for nonpayment of taxes.

Sec 2. All lands the title to which is now held by an Indian subject to restrictions against alienation or encumbrance except with the consent or approval of the Secretary of the Interior, heretofore purchased out of trust or restricted funds of said Indian, are hereby declared to be instrumentalities of the Federal Government and shall be non-taxable until otherwise directed by Congress.

The 1937 amendment<sup>4</sup> to section 2 of the above act reads as follows:

All homesteads heretofore purchased out of the trust or restricted funds of individual Indians, are hereby declared to be instrumentalities of the Federal Government and shall be non-taxable until otherwise directed by Congress. *Provided*, That the title to such homesteads shall be held subject to restrictions against alienation or encumbrance except with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior. *And provided further*, That the Indian owner or

owners shall select, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, either the agricultural and grazing lands, not exceeding a total of one hundred and sixty acres, or the village, town, or city property, not exceeding in cost \$5,000, to be designated as a homestead.

The 1936 Act was passed to establish the tax exemption of the lands purchased with restricted funds under the guidance and direction of the Interior Department as tax-exempt lands. After the passage of the act it was found that section 2 had application to such a large quantity of lands that a bill was introduced in Congress for its repeal. This bill was, however, amended on the recommendation of the Senate Committee on Indian Affairs to provide for restricting the tax exemption to homesteads purchased with trust or restricted funds, rather than for repealing the tax exemption entirely, and the bill was passed in the amended form. The report of the Senate Committee in which this recommendation was made contains the following pertinent statement of the purpose of the 1936 Act and the 1937 amendment:

The said act of June 20, 1936 (49 Stat. L. 1612) was designed to bring relief and redemption to Indians who in the future to pay taxes have lost or now are in danger of losing lands purchased for them under supervision, advice, and guidance of the Federal Government, which lands were not the full of the Indians, but were purchased with the understanding and belief on their part and induced by representations of the Government that the land be non-taxable after purchase. It was intended that such lands would be redeemed out of the fund of \$25,000 authorized to be appropriated under the provisions of said act of June 20, 1936 (49 Stat. L. 1612).

Since the passage of said act of June 20, 1936 (49 Stat. L. 1612), it was found the provisions of section 2 thereof would apply to lands and other property purchased by restricted Indian funds, which would exempt from taxation vast quantities of property, such as business buildings, farm lands which are not homesteads, etc.

The Commissioner of Indian Affairs appeared before the committee and suggested the amendment herein proposed, which proposed amendment was adopted and herein recommended by your committee. (Senate Report No. 392 77th Cong., 1st sess.)

In *United States v Board of Commissioners*,<sup>5</sup> the court, in construing these statutes, held that Congress had the power to define federal instrumentalities, and that the 1936 Act clearly applied to prevent taxation for 1936<sup>6</sup> of real estate used for both residence and business purposes, which was purchased with restricted funds of Osage Indians. The court said that the act applied to Indians in general, and was not made inapplicable to the Osages by reason of prior acts relating specifically to Osage homesteads.

In an unreported case, the same court applied these statutes to prevent taxation of homesteads purchased with trust funds held on deposit by the United States for Pawnee Indians in lieu of allotment.<sup>7</sup>

The further extent of the operation of these statutes is not known at the present time, but they express the clear intent of Congress to continue homesteads of Indians tax exempt, whether the homestead was purchased for the Indian or allotted to him.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 26 F Supp 270 (D C N D Okla 1939) (Osage County). This court followed the view expressed in 50 I D 18 (1937) as to the applicability of the 1936 act to the Osages.

<sup>2</sup> The court held that the act was in force at the date of levy which was the critical date.

<sup>3</sup> *United States v Board of County Commissioners of Pawnee County, Oklahoma* (D C N D Okla., January 10 1939), Justice Dibs No. 90-2-11-410.

<sup>4</sup> For a discussion of questions of tax exemption not yet passed upon by the courts see Op No I D, M 28007 (1930). *And of letters of Attorney General dated October 6, 1939, declining to pass upon cases therein discussed.*

<sup>5</sup> The legislation referred to was finally enacted in 1936. Act of June 20 1936, 49 Stat 1642. *Of, Act of June 20, 1936, 49 Stat 474.*

<sup>6</sup> 26 F. R. 8, 875 (1938).

<sup>7</sup> 49 Stat 1712. *United States v Board of Commissioners*, 26 F Supp 270 (D C N D Okla 1939).

<sup>8</sup> Act of May 10, 1937, 50 Stat 188.



## SECTION 4 STATE TAXATION OF PERSONAL PROPERTY

Whenever personal property is acquired by or for tribal Indians for use on Indian reservation lands in connection with or in furtherance of the policy adopted by the Government in recognizing the Indians to cultivate the soil and to establish permanent homes and families, or otherwise aid in their economic rehabilitation, such property may not be taxed by the state.<sup>1</sup> The immunity exists whether the property be purchased with money held in trust by the United States for the Indians, or with money accruing to the Indians from other federal sources. The reason behind this doctrine of immunity is that the state has no power, by taxation or otherwise, to intrude upon, hinder, or control the operations of instrumentalities employed by the Federal Government in carrying into execution the powers lawfully vested in it.

In *United States v. Thayer County*,<sup>2</sup> the Circuit Court of Appeals for the Eighth Circuit ruled that the proceeds of the sale of allotted lands held in trust by the United States were exempt from state taxation for the reason that the proceeds like the lands from which they were derived constituted an instrumentality lawfully employed by the Government in the exercise of its powers to protect, support and instruct the Indians. The court said, among other things:

The allotted lands were held in trust by the United States for the benefit of those to whom they were assigned, and then leased, under the acts of August 7, 1882, and February 8, 1887. The proceeds of the sales of these lands have been lawfully substituted for the lands, their value by the trustee. The substitute, part of the nature of the original, and is charged with the same trust. The lands and their proceeds, so long as they are held in trust by the United States, and the terms of the trust have not expired, are like instrumentalities employed by it in the lawful exercise of its powers of government to protect, support, and instruct the Indians, for whose benefit the complainant holds them, and they are not subject to taxation by any state or county. (P. 292)

The doctrine of the foregoing case was approved in *United States v. Pearson*,<sup>3</sup> a case involving issue property, that is, property issued to the Indians by the Federal Government. Immunity from state taxation was there extended to personal property which could be traced and identified as issue property, the increase of issue property, property purchased with the proceeds of the sale of issue property, property purchased with the proceeds of the sale of the income of issue property, property for which similar issue property had been exchanged for similar use, the increase of issue property received in such exchange, the increase of issue property exchanged for similar property for similar use, and property purchased with money given to the Indians by the United States.

To the same general effect is *United States v. Dewey County*<sup>4</sup> and *United States v. Rice*.<sup>5</sup> In the case last cited the court held that personal property consisting of horses, cattle, and other property issued by the United States to the Indians and used by them on their allotments was not subject to assessment and taxation by the state.

For the same reason that property purchased by Indians with

restricted funds and property issued to the Indians by the Government as Government instrumentalities, property purchased by the Indians pursuant to a specific plan for economic rehabilitation approved by the Government and carried out under Government supervision should likewise be recognized as Government instrumentalities. As said by the Solicitor of the Interior Department:<sup>6</sup>

The purchase of property by the Indians themselves in accordance with an economic plan worked out with the Government is equalling as a method of assuring the possession by Indians of productive property, the old method of the Government's issuing, such property to the Indians. From a legal viewpoint the purpose and content of the Government are identical whether the plow or the cattle are bought by the Indian with Individual Indian Money, the expenditure of which has been approved by the Superintendent, or bought by the Indians with revenue to its funds or judgment fund money, pursuant to a plan of rehabilitation approved by the Superintendent, or bought by the Superintendent with grant-in-aid funds and issued to the Indians. The reasoning of the courts applies equally to these procedures, except that in the cases above cited the Government had an ownership interest as the title to the property was found to be in the United States. The form of title, while indicative of the interest of the Government, is not, in my opinion, the determining factor. The important factor is the acquisition and use of the property in execution of a government plan for the Indians.

There are apparently no cases determining the right of the state to its personal property of an Indian on a reservation which is not used pursuant to some federal plan. Apparently no state has attempted to collect such a tax. The doctrine that Indians on a reservation are not subject to state law in the absence of congressional authority<sup>7</sup> would indicate that any such tax would be invalid.

On the other hand, personally issued to an Indian by the Federal Government and used by him outside the reservation is taxable by the state.<sup>8</sup>

Personally owned by non-Indians but held on an Indian reservation is subject to state taxation.<sup>9</sup> This is true even though the personality belongs to a Catholic mission situated on an Indian reservation and devoting both the personality and the proceeds therefrom to the welfare of the Indians. In so deciding the Supreme Court declared:<sup>10</sup>

Taking the complaint as it is, it shows on its face that the Indians have neither any legal nor equitable title to the property, neither have they any legal or equitable right to its beneficial use, and it also appears from the complaint that the property is owned unconditionally and absolutely by the plaintiff. The plaintiff, as the owner of these cattle, may, at any time, abandon its present manner of using them and may devote them, or any income arising from their ownership, to any other purpose it may choose, and the Indians would have no legal right of complaint. The plaintiff might refuse to spend another dollar upon the Indians upon these reservations, and refuse to further maintain or aid them in any way whatever, and no right of the Indians would be thereby violated nor could they call upon the court to enforce the application of the plain gifts property, or the income thereof, to the same purposes the plaintiff had theretofore applied them. There is noth-

<sup>1</sup> This immunity extends to the personality of a half blood Indian adopted into a tribe, *United States v. Hoyle*, 188 Fed 964 (C. C. Mont. 1905), and in fact to the personality of any recognized member of an Indian tribe. *United States v. Higgins*, 108 Fed 648 (C. C. Mont. 1900).

<sup>2</sup> But of *United States v. Higgins*, 110 Fed 609 (C. C. Mont. 1901).

<sup>3</sup> 181 Fed 287 (C. C. A. 8, 1900).

<sup>4</sup> 243 Fed 270 (D. C. R. Dak. 1916).

<sup>5</sup> 14 Fed 24784 (D. C. R. Dak. 1892), aff'd sub nom. *Dewey County v. United States*, 26 P 54484 (C. C. A. 8, 1902), cert den 378 U S 919.

<sup>6</sup> 188 U S 452 (1907). And see *McKnight v. United States*, 180 Fed 655 (C. C. A. 8, 1904).

<sup>7</sup> *Op. Sol. I. D. M. 96449*, May 8, 1904.

<sup>8</sup> See Chapter 6.

<sup>9</sup> *United States v. Porter*, 22 F. 2d 808 (C. C. A. 9, 1927).

<sup>10</sup> *Thomas v. Gay*, 159 U. S. 264 (1895), *Wagoner v. Davis*, 170 U. S. 549 (1898), *Catholic Mission v. Missouri County*, 200 U. S. 118 (1906), *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902), *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902), *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902).

<sup>11</sup> *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902), *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902).

<sup>12</sup> *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902), *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902).

<sup>13</sup> *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902), *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902).

<sup>14</sup> *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902), *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902).

<sup>15</sup> *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902), *Truescott v. Howell*, 184 U. S. 477 (1902).

ing in *Mannon Church v United States*, 136 U S 1, which in the roughest degree applies to this case. This court has heretofore determined that the Indians' interest in this kind of property, situated on their reservations, was not sufficient to exempt such property, when owned by private individuals, from taxation. *Thomson v Gay* 109 U S 264, *Wagoner v Evans*, 170 U S 354. In the first of above cited cases, the right to reserve over the reservation was leased by the Indians to the owners of the cattle and it was alleged that if the cattle were taxed the value of the lands would be reduced, because the owners of the cattle would not pay as much for the right to graze as they would if their cattle were not subjected to taxation, and that therefore the tax was, in effect and substance, upon the land. This court held that the tax put upon the cattle of the lessees was not remote and indirect to be deemed a tax

upon the lands or privileges of the Indians citing *Bur Railroad v Pennsylvania* 125 U S 331, and other cases, is authority for the decision. This is affirmed in the second case above cited. In this case the Indians have not even even a lease, and the owners are not obliged to pay anything for the privilege of grazing, and may, as we have said, devote the property, or the income thereon, to purposes wholly foreign to the Indians' use and lives. However malicious the conduct of the owners of the cattle may be, in devoting the income of any portion of the principal of their property to the fruitless work of improving and cultivating the Indians (and we would admit the merit of such conduct), we cannot see what the tax on the sheep at all, let alone claim for exemption from taxation because of any Federal provision, constitutional or otherwise. (Pp 129-130)

## SECTION 5. STATE SALES TAXES

The question of the extent to which Indians and persons trading with Indians are subject to state sales taxes has been treated in a recent opinion of the Solicitor of the Interior Department.<sup>\*</sup> Though the questions treated arise under Arizona statutes, the problem they present is a general one and the Arizona statutes involved are not dissimilar in substance from the sales tax laws of other states. For this reason the following opinions quotations from the opinion serve to illuminate the entire subject.

There are two Arizona statutes particularly involved each of which is illustrative of a type of sales tax law. The Excise Revenue Act of 1917, Chapter 77, Laws Regular Session 1917, as amended by Chapter 4, Laws of 1921, Special Session 1921, places an annual privilege tax on the business of selling at retail measured by the gross proceeds or the gross income from the business. Provision is made by the law for the use of tokens by purchasers to reimburse the dealers for the tax applicable to any sale. The other statute in question, Chapter 78, Laws Regular Session 1923, as amended in 1926, 1927, and 1929, places a tax on certain designated luxuries to be paid by stamps to be affixed to the articles by the dealers. Both statutes contain, as a method of enforcement, the requirement that all dealers shall take out State licenses. Both statutes provide for an exemption from the tax of businesses and transactions not subject to tax under the United States Constitution and provide for refund to the dealer of the tax paid by him when proof is made that the transactions and articles taxed were not subject to tax under the law. In both statutes the tax is, on its face, a tax to be paid by dealers, whether wholesalers or retailers, and to be enforced against them, although both acts contemplate that the amount of the tax shall be added to the price paid by the consumer.

### 1 Application of State taxes to persons trading with Indians

The question of the application of these taxes to persons trading with Indians is subject to different answers depending upon the location of the trade and upon whether the traders or the persons dealt with are Indians. The regulation of trade with Indian tribes is one of the powers expressly delegated to Congress by section 8 of Article I of the United States Constitution. Congress has exercised this power in statutes regulating trade with the Indians and giving exclusive authority to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to regulate such trade and the prices at which goods shall be sold to the Indians. (See titles 261 through 265, Title 21 of the United States Code.) These statutes, by their terms, or by indirect construction, are limited in their application to Indian reservations. *United States v Taylor*, 44 F (2d) 637 (C A 9th, 1930), cert den 288 U S 820, *Rider v La Olay*, 71 Wash 488, 188 Pac 8, *United States v O'Connell Property*, 25 Pac 637 (Ariz). Congress has not exercised its power to regulate trade with the Indians in so far as

trade off the reservation is concerned except in the case of title in liquor.

(a) Where Congress has exercised its authority it is manifest that the field is closed to State action. *Sperry Oil and Gas Co v Oklahoma* 201 U S 485. Therefore, persons selling to or buying from Indians on Indian reservations are not subject to State laws which regulate or tax such transactions. However, it should be emphasized that as to title with the Indians which is reserved from State interference and not the trader himself, if the trader is a white person and is dealing with other white persons, even though such transactions occur on a reservation.

The Supreme Court has repeatedly examined the location in the State of the property of white persons located on Indian reservations on the theory that such location did not interfere with the exercise of Federal authority within the reservation. *Thomson v Gay* 109 U S 264, *Wagoner v Evans*, 170 U S 354, *Outback Mines v Arizona County* 200 U S 118. This principle has been cited by the State courts to the extent of permitting State taxation of the property of Indian traders, including their stock in trade. *Mont v Brown*, 7 Wyo 282, 71 Pac 877; *Cosco v McMillan*, 12 Mont 481, 58 Pac 965; *Noble v Amorth*, 71 Pac 870 (Wyo 1903). In the review of the relationship between the Federal Government and the State government on an Indian reservation, in *Smalley Trading Co v Cook* 251 U S 97, the Supreme Court stated that the jurisdiction of the State over the reservation is full and complete save as to the Indians and their property.

In view of this jurisdiction of the State it deals in my memorandum to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, February 4, 1933, that white traders in their dealings with non-Indians must comply with the State laws, including those imposing sales taxes. I believe this ruling was correct. To deny on Indian reservations who are non-Indians are, in my opinion, required to take out licenses under the Arizona laws in question to carry on trade with non-Indians on the reservation, and must account to the State authorities for sales taxes on so much of their business as is done with non-Indians. They are not required to account to the State authorities for their transactions with Indians on the reservations, but are, if they do deal with the Indians, required to conform with the licensing provisions in the Federal statutes regulating trade with Indians. Traders who are themselves Indians are not subject to the State laws whether they deal with Indians or non-Indians.

(b) Where traders are not located on Indian reservations they are, in my opinion, responsible for the State taxes and subject to license whether or not they are Indians and whether or not they deal with Indians. Since

<sup>\*</sup> The position of the Solicitor in this connection has been substantiated by the recent case of *Neah Bay Fish Co v Krummel*, 301 P 2d 900 (Wash 1930). The court there held that the State of Washington may levy a sales tax upon a company conducting business solely within the Indian reservation under a license from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs and the tribe, for sales made to persons other than Indians.

Congress has not attempted to regulate such trade and since such trade has been carried on subject to State laws for a long number of years, there is no ground for exemption of such trade in the absence of congressional authority, except in the special types of Indian purchases discussed in part 2 (b) of this opinion.

## 2 Application of State taxes to sales to Indians

This subject falls into two parts—sales to Indians on the reservation and sales to Indians off the reservation.

(a) The preceding part of this opinion demonstrates that sales to Indians on the reservation are not subject to State taxation and Indian purchasers are not required to pay the additional cost which is added to the price of the article to cover the tax. Such additions to the price of articles by State action are clearly interferences with the authority of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to regulate the prices at which goods shall be sold to the Indians.

(b) The preceding part of this opinion likewise demonstrates that when Indians purchase goods off the reservation they are not exempt from sales taxes on the ground of State interference with Federal regulation of Indian trade. However, certain purchases by Indians may be exempt on the ground that these purchases are made in quantities for the Federal Government used to improve the economic conditions of its lands. Where this is the case, the purchase may be considered not subject to State taxation under the principle that the State, through the use of its taxing power, cannot hinder or interfere with an instrumentality of the Federal Government.

After noting the fact that personal property purchased by Indians with restricted lands and property issued to the Indians by the Government are Government instrumentalities and that property purchased by the Indians pursuant to a specific plan for economic rehabilitation approved by the Government and carried out under Government supervision should likewise be recognized as a Government instrumentality, the opinion continues, with a review of the authorities on the question of whether a state tax upon the acquisition of such property places an unconstitutional burden upon a Federal instrumentality and concludes:

The Supreme Court has held that the application of a State tax on the selling of gasoline to sales of gasoline to the United States is unconstitutional as placing a direct burden on the Federal Government. *Panhandle Oil Co. v. Mississippi*, 277 U. S. 218, *Graves v. Texas Co.*, 298 U. S. 403. However, in *James v. Dravo Contracting Co.*, 302 U. S. 813, the Supreme Court said that the *Panhandle* and *Graves* cases "it is well been distinguished and should be limited to their particular facts. In the *James* case a State tax on the gross proceeds of a contractor on Government work was held constitutional as having only an indirect effect on the Federal Government. That case is representative of the recent Supreme Court cases tending to

restrict the tax immunity of agencies of Government where the burden on the Government was not clear and direct. *Hettinger v. Mountain Producers Corp.*, 303 U. S. 370, *Mitchell v. Gendard*, 304 U. S. 455.

Although the law on the question is in a state of flux the proper holding at the present time is, in my opinion, that while purchases are made either by the Indians themselves or by Government agents in carrying out a specific economic program for the Indians approved and supervised by the Federal Government, or while such purchases are made with restricted lands, the purchases are not subject to the State sales taxes even though they are made off the reservation.

## SUMMARY

1 Persons dealing with the Indians on Indian reservations are not subject to the Arizona sales tax laws. However, where such traders are non-Indians, they are subject to the sales tax laws on so much of their business as is carried on with other non-Indians. Traders off the Indian reservation are subject to the State sales tax laws whether or not they are Indians or dealing with Indians.

2 Purchases made by Indians on Indian reservations are not subject to the Arizona sales taxes nor are purchases made by Indians on Government agents off the reservation where they are made with restricted lands or in carrying out a specific program for the economic rehabilitation of the Indians approved and supervised by the Federal Government.

In another recent opinion of the Solicitor of the Interior Department "the application of certain state taxes to sales of tobacco and gasoline to the Menominee Indian Mills was considered. The state taxes in question were: (1) The State excise tax on the sales of gasoline, levied under chapter 78 of the Wisconsin Statutes of 1937, and (2) the State occupational tax on the sale of tobacco products, levied under chapters 443 and 518 of the Laws of Wisconsin, 1939.

After a searching analysis of the problems presented, the Solicitor made a twofold finding, to wit:

1. State gasoline sales taxes (a) do not apply to sales of gasoline to the Menominee Indian Mills for use in the operation of the mills, but (b) do apply to sales of gasoline to the mills for resale through the commissary of the mills to employees and the general public. This latter ruling was occasioned by the fact that title IV of the Internal Revenue Act of 1932 and the regulations issued thereunder exempted from the operation of the tax only gasoline sold "for the exclusive use of the United States."

2. The state tax on the selling of tobacco products does not apply to the selling of such products by the commissary of the Menominee Indian Mills to employees and the general public.

"Op. Sol. I D., M. 30544, May 31, 1940.

## SECTION 6 STATE INHERITANCE TAXES

There appears to be meager authority on the question of the liability of an Indian's estate to the payment of state inheritance taxes. The only case to reach the Supreme Court involved allotted lands of a restricted full blood Quapaw Indian which had been declared unalienable for a period of 25 years by the Act of March 2, 1885. By the Act of June 25, 1910, the Secretary of the Interior was directed to determine the heirs of deceased allottees according to state statutes of descent. According to the state statute the land herein involved descended to two full-blood Quapaws. The state auditor of Oklahoma attempted to

subject the lands to the state inheritance tax. Upon appeal the Supreme Court declared:

Apparently appellant supposed that the lands passed to the heirs by virtue of the laws of the State and were subject to the inheritance taxes which such land. He accordingly demanded the payment of appelles and threatened enforcement by summary process and sale of the lands. The court below held that the State had no right to demand the taxes and returned appellant from attempting to collect them.

The duty of the Secretary of the Interior to determine the heirs according to the State law of descent is not questioned. Congress provided that the lands should be

"26 Stat. 876  
"30 Stat. 805

"*Childers v. Beeson*, 270 U. S. 855 (1926).

second and directed how the lands should be returned. It adopted the provisions of the Oklahoma statute in its expression of its own will—the laws of Missouri on lands in any other State might have been accepted. The lands really passed under a law of the United States and not in Oklahoma's possession.

It must be accepted as established that during the trust or restricted period Congress has power to control lands

within a State which have been duly allotted to Indians in the United States, and then after conversion through trust in a State interest. Thus, essentially to the proper discharging of their duty to a dependent people, and the means of instrumentality within them cannot be subjected to taxation by the State without assent of the federal government. (17-299)

## SECTION 7 FEDERAL TAXATION

### A. SOURCES OF LIMITATIONS

While the tax which was declared invalid in *Choate v. Trapp*<sup>11</sup> was payable to the State of Oklahoma, the question to which the Supreme Court addressed its primary attention in that case was the validity of the congressional enactment which purportedly subjected the land to state taxation. In holding that Congress had no power to subject the land to taxation after acquisition, in exchange for a valuable consideration, that the land should be free except, the Supreme Court enumerated and went far to support a rule which would lay limits upon federal taxation as well as upon state taxation. Thus it, in numerous cases similar to those exemplified in *Choate v. Trapp* the Federal Government, pursuant to an agreement with an Indian tribe, issues a trust patent promising clear title to the patentee after a fixed period, it is probable that my attempt to exempt to suppose federal indirect tax upon such land would be held violative of the Fifth Amendment.

Nevertheless, in the only Supreme Court case in which the constitutionality of a federal tax valid, in agreement with an Indian tribe was considered, the case of *The Cherokee Tobacco*,<sup>12</sup> the Supreme Court held that the violation of a treaty provision by an act of Congress presented a purely political question which the courts were powerless to remedy. This doctrine would, of course, preclude the relief which the Supreme Court gave in *Choate v. Trapp*.

It seems clear, then, that the holding in *Choate v. Trapp* is inconsistent with the doctrine of *The Cherokee Tobacco*, and that the holding in that case is incompatible with the doctrine of *Choate v. Trapp*. The opinion in the latter case does not attempt to distinguish the earlier case—does not even mention the earlier case. It is easy to make verbal distinctions, to say that *The Cherokee Case* involved a question of the plenary power of Congress over tribal affairs and that *Choate v. Trapp* involved individual property rights. But one might as easily say that plenary power of Congress over tribal affairs was involved in *Choate v. Trapp* since all the legislation in that case dealt with tribes, and that the individual rights of the Indian Elias Boudnot in *The Cherokee Tobacco*, which in fact Congress felt called upon to recognize and compensate 4 years after the Supreme Court decision,<sup>13</sup> were even more individual than the rights of the 8,000 plaintiff members of the Choctaw and Chickasaw tribes in *Choate v. Trapp*. To say that property rights existed in one case and not in the other is to describe the result rather than to explain it or to aid in predicting future decisions.<sup>14</sup>

Whether the *Choate* case overruled the case of *The Cherokee Tobacco*, said silently, or whether the doctrine of the earlier case is to prevail outside the narrow fact situation presented in the *Choate* case, the future will determine. Some support is given

to the former hypothesis by the consideration that the decision of the Supreme Court in *Choate v. Trapp* was unanimous, while that in *The Cherokee Tobacco* was a lost-boat decision with three members of the court not hearing argument.<sup>15</sup>

In recent years Congress has occasionally made certain that no claim to permanent tax exemption would arise, by specifying that designated Indian property should be amenable until otherwise directed by Congress.<sup>16</sup>

### B. FEDERAL INCOME TAXES

In considering federal taxation of Indian income one finds the courts concerned not, as in the case of the state, with the question of *whether* the state may tax but with the question of *whether* the Federal Government has intended to tax. Whether it has done so in a particular case depends on the construction accorded the taxing statute by the courts. The rule of construction most recently announced<sup>17</sup> is that the federal income tax law, applying as it does to the income of "every individual" and to income derived "from any source whatever," includes within its application Indians and their income unless they are by agreement or statute exempted.

It is clear that the exemption accorded tribal and restricted Indian lands extends to the income derived directly therefrom.<sup>18</sup> Accordingly, rents, royalties, and other income of *Chippewa*,<sup>19</sup> *Ojibwa*,<sup>20</sup> *Ojibwa* and *Mishon*,<sup>21</sup> and *Ponca*<sup>22</sup> Indians have been held tax exempt. Likewise, the income derived by individual Indians is then, share in the oil or mineral deposits in tribal lands has been held tax exempt.<sup>23</sup>

<sup>11</sup> The case of *The Cherokee Tobacco Tax* 11 Wall 616 cannot be cited as authority against the conclusion we have reached. The decision only disposed of that case in that the judges of the court did not sit in it and two dissented from the judgment pronounced by the other four. *United States v. Forty-Five Gallons of Whiskey*, 108 U. S. 491, 497-498 (1883).

<sup>12</sup> Act of June 20, 1906, sec. 2, 34 Stat. 1942 amended May 10, 1937, 50 Stat. 188, 27 U. S. C. 414a. No such limitation is found in various other statutes. *U. S. v. Act of June 19, 1934, sec. 6, 48 Stat. 984, 986, 25 U. S. C. 465.*

<sup>13</sup> *Supplemental Act of Commissioners of Internal Revenue*, 297 U. S. 131 (1935).

<sup>14</sup> *United States v. Housatonic*, 10 F. 2d 407 (11 U. S. 1014, 1940) app. div. 49, 2d 1086, *Blackbird v. Commissioner of Internal Revenue*, 36 F. 2d 976 (11 U. S. 1014, 1940) *Pittman v. Commissioner*, 36 F. 2d 116 (C. C. 10, 1943).

<sup>15</sup> 297 U. S. 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000.

The following abbreviations referring to the cases in the footnotes are used in this and succeeding footnotes:

- C. C. M.—General Counsel Memo
- C. B.—Comptroller Bulletin Treasury Department
- B. T. A.—Board of Tax Appeals
- A. F. T. R.—American Federal Tax Reporter
- Q. M.—Solicitor's Memo
- T. D.—Treasury Decisions

<sup>16</sup> (1) C. M. 2715, (2) C. B. VII-1, p. 76 (revised however in C. C. M. 6020, C. B. VIII-1, p. 67).

<sup>17</sup> *United States v. Housatonic*, 40 F. 2d 405 (11 U. S. 1014, 1940).

<sup>18</sup> 55 M. 5882, C. B. V-1, p. 193.

<sup>19</sup> *Blackbird v. Commissioner of Internal Revenue*, 36 F. 2d 976 (C. C. 10, 1930).

<sup>11</sup> 224 U. S. 686 (1912).

<sup>12</sup> 11 Wall 616 (1870).

<sup>13</sup> Act of May 14, 1934, c. 173, 18 Stat. 549.

<sup>14</sup> Cf. F. B. Cohen, *Transcendental Nonexistence and the Functional Approach* (1936) 85 Col. L. Rev. 800, 818-820.

Conversely income which is derived from unrestricted lands has been held taxable,<sup>124</sup> and the Circuit Court of Appeals has held that upon the death of a restricted Creek allottee, his surplus allotment having been freed of restrictions by the Act of May 27, 1908,<sup>125</sup> the income therefrom was taxable in the hands of a noncompetent heir although income from the home stead which remained restricted was not taxable.<sup>126</sup> It has been held, too, by the United States Supreme Court<sup>127</sup> that where an Indian holds a certificate of competency the income paid to him as royalties from oil and gas leases is taxable. And the income of a Hopi Indian derived from his commercial business in trading with other Indians and from the sale of cattle given him by the Government is taxable.<sup>128</sup>

Though income derived directly from restricted allotted lands is exempt from federal income taxation, so critical comment income is subject to such taxation.<sup>129</sup> The case of *Superintendent Pitts v. United States v. Commissioner*,<sup>130</sup> involved the taxability of the income of a noncompetent Indian derived from the reversion of income from restricted allotted lands. The court there said that the taxation of the income from trust property of its Indian wards by the Federal Government, under federal revenue acts passed in its scope, is not so inconsistent with the relationship between the Government and its Indian wards that exemption is a necessary implication, and held that reversioned income is clearly taxable under the federal revenue laws.<sup>131</sup>

It has been held that the income of non-Indian in lessee derived from a lease of restricted Indian lands is subject to the federal income tax.<sup>132</sup>

The courts in considering an Indian claim for refund of taxes erroneously paid, have looked upon an unrestricted Indian claimant as upon any other taxpayer. Thus an unrestricted Indian member of the Choctaw in Tribe of Indians is not entitled to a refund of taxes erroneously paid upon income from tax exempt lands where no claim for refund is filed until after the running

of the statute of limitations.<sup>133</sup> But there is no limitation on refunds to restricted Indians if (1) a tax was assessed against the non-restricted income, and (2) such tax was paid by an Indian superintendent, or other such officer of the United States, out of funds in his possession belonging eventually to his ward.<sup>134</sup>

Provision has been made by public resolution<sup>135</sup> for the allowance of claims for refund of taxes erroneously or illegally collected from a duly enrolled member of an Indian tribe who received in pursuance of a tribal treaty or agreement with the United States an allotment of land which by the terms of said treaty or agreement was exempted from taxation, notwithstanding his failure to file a claim for refund within the time prescribed by law. A recent statute,<sup>136</sup> similar in nature to the foregoing resolution, has expressly stated that it is not the policy of the Government to invoke or plead the statute of limitations in order to escape its obligation to its Indian wards.

### C OTHER FEDERAL TAXES

By section 617 of title 4 of the Revenue Act of 1932,<sup>137</sup> an excise tax was levied on sales of gasoline. In considering the application of this tax to sales of gasoline to the Menominee Indian Mills, the Solicitor of the Interior Department in a recent opinion<sup>138</sup> made the following finding, to wit:

1. Federal gasoline sales taxes (a) do not apply to sales of gasoline to the Menominee Indian Mills for use in the operation of the mills, but (b) do apply to sales of gasoline to the mills for resale through the commissary of the mills to employees and the general public. This latter ruling was occasioned by the fact that title 4 of the Internal Revenue Act of 1932 and the regulations issued thereunder exempted from the operation of the tax only gasoline sold "for the exclusive use of the United States".

From its early days Congress has expressly provided that no duty shall be levied or collected from Indians on the importation of peltries brought by them into the territories of the United States,<sup>139</sup> and the desire to encourage native Indian handicrafts has been clearly evidenced by the express exemption from the operation of the Revenue Act of 1932<sup>140</sup> of "any article of native Indian handicrafts manufactured or produced by Indians on Indian reservations, or in Indian schools, or by Indians under the jurisdiction of the United States Government in Alaska".

<sup>124</sup> G. C. M. 782, C. B. June 1927, p. 133. To the same effect: *United States v. Alohahda*, 27 F. 2d 284 (C. C. 8, 1928), *cert. den.* 278 U. S. 510; *Lundman v. Alexander*, 20 F. Supp. 702 (D. C. Okla. 1940), *rev. 520 F. 2d 1018* (9th Cir. 1945); *See also* 27 F. 2d 1018 (C. C. 10), *rev. 520 F. 2d 1018* (9th Cir. 1945); *See also* 27 F. 2d 1018 (C. C. 10), *rev. 520 F. 2d 1018* (9th Cir. 1945).

<sup>125</sup> Public Resolution No. 74, 71st Cong. (S. 1 Rev. 101) approved May 10, 1908.

<sup>126</sup> Act of February 14, 1908, 47 Stat. 807.

<sup>127</sup> 28 U. S. C. 1485, *et seq.*, chap. 29 of the Internal Revenue Code, approved July 30, 1930, 68 Stat. 409.

<sup>128</sup> *See* *Op. I. D.*, 40544, May 21, 1940. *See also* *supra*.

<sup>129</sup> Act of March 4, 1909, 41 Stat. 827, Act of October 1, 1909, 36 Stat. 567, Act of August 27, 1904, 28 Stat. 508.

<sup>130</sup> Act of June 6, 1932, sec. 624, 47 Stat. 100.

## SECTION 8 TRIBAL TAXATION

As distinct political communities, the Indian tribes possess some of the attributes of sovereignty, among which is the power to legislate regarding their internal relations.<sup>141</sup> This power, with certain exceptions, includes the power to levy local taxes on all property within tribal limits, belonging to members of the tribe.<sup>142</sup> Though the scope of the power as applied to nonmem-

bers is not clear, it extends at least to property of nonmembers used in connection with Indian property as well as to privileges enjoyed by nonmembers in trading with the Indians.<sup>143</sup> The power to tax nonmembers is derived in the cases from the authority, founded on original sovereignty and guaranteed in some instances by treaties, to remove property of nonmembers from

<sup>141</sup> See Chapter 7.

<sup>142</sup> 85 U. S. 14, 46 (1864).

<sup>143</sup> See *Alfaro v. Hishcock*, 21 App. D. C. 585, 586 (1908), *aff'd* 194 U. S. 884 (1904).



# CHAPTER 14

## THE LEGAL STATUS OF INDIAN TRIBES

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 Tribal existence	266	Section 6 Capacity to sue	283
Section 2 Termination of tribal existence	272	A Statutes authorizing suits by tribes	283
Section 3 Political status	273	B Statutes authorizing suits against tribes	283
Section 4 Corporate capacity	277	C Trustee capacity in the absence of specific statutes	283
Section 5 Contractual capacity	279	Section 7 Tribal hunting and fishing rights	285

### SECTION 1 TRIBAL EXISTENCE

The term "tribe" is commonly used in two senses, an ethnologic sense and a political sense. It is important to distinguish between these two meanings of the term.<sup>1</sup> Groups that consist of several ethnological tribes, sometimes speaking different languages, have been recognized as single tribes for administrative and political purposes. Examples are the Fort Belknap Indian Community (Gros Ventre and Assiniboin), the Cheyenne and Arapaho Indians of Oklahoma,<sup>2</sup> the Cherokee Nation (in which Delaware, Shawnee, and others were assimilated), and the Confederated Salish and Kootenai Tribes of the Flathead Reservation. Despite the use of the plural "tribes" in this last case, and other similar cases, the group has been treated, politically as a single tribe. Likewise what is a single tribe from the ethnological standpoint, may sometimes be divided into a number of independent tribes in the political sense. Examples of this situation are offered by the Sioux, the Chippewa, and the Shawnee.

The question of tribal existence, in the legal or political sense, has generally arisen in determining whether some legislative, administrative or judicial power with respect to Indian "tribes" extended to a particular group of Indians.

The most basic of these issues has been the constitutional issue arising from the grant of power to Congress to regulate "commerce with . . . the Indian Tribes."<sup>3</sup> The Supreme Court has, in a number of cases, taken the position that the applicability or constitutionality of congressional legislation affecting individual Indians, and the inapplicability or unconstitutionality

of state legislation affecting such individuals, depended upon whether or not the individuals concerned were living in tribal relations.

While thus making the validity of congressional and administrative actions depend upon the existence of tribes, the courts have said that it is up to Congress and the executive to determine whether a tribe exists. Thus the "political arm of the Government" would seem to be in a position to determine the extent of its power. In this respect the question of tribal existence and congressional power has been classified as a "political question" along with the recognition of foreign governments and other issues of international relations.<sup>4</sup>

Thus in the case of *United States v. Holliday*,<sup>5</sup> the Supreme Court held that federal liquor laws were applicable to a sale of liquor to a Michigan (Chippewa) Indian despite a treaty provision looking to the dissolution of the tribe, for the reason that the Interior Department regarded the tribe as still existing. The Court declared:

In reference to all matters of this kind it is the rule of this court to follow the action of the executive and other political departments of the government, whose more special duty it is to determine such affairs. If in them those Indians are recognized as a tribe, this court must do the same. (P. 419.)

Again, in the case of *The Kansas Indians*,<sup>6</sup> the Supreme Court dealt with the converse situation, involving an attempt to apply state laws to Shawnee, Wya, and Miami Indians of Kansas, and held such laws to be unconstitutional on the ground that the tribal relations of these Indians were still recognized by the Interior Department. In this case the Court declared:

If the tribal organization of the Shawnees is preserved intact and recognized by the political department of the government is existing, then they are a "people distinct from others," capable of making treaties, separated from the jurisdiction of Kansas, and to be governed exclusively by the government of the Union. . . . Conferring rights and privileges on these Indians cannot affect their situation, which can only be changed by treaty stipulation, or a voluntary abandonment of their tribal organization. As long as the United States recognizes their national character they are under the protection of treaties and the laws of Congress, and their property is withdrawn from the operation of State Laws. (Pp. 775-777.)

<sup>1</sup> *Of Cherokee Nation v. United States*, 40 C. Cls. 1 (1902) holding that Cherokee, by blood calling themselves "the Cherokee Tribe of Indians" (including the various tribes and groups incorporated into or adopted in the Cherokee Nation, had no standing to bring a suit in the Court of Claims under the special Cherokee Reimbursement Act of March 19, 1924, 43 Stat. 27. For examples of tribal consolidation effected by individual agreement authorized by a general treaty provision, see *Cherokee Nation v. Blackfeet Nation*, 175 U.S. 218 (1904) (Shawnee and Cherokee) and *Cherokee Nation v. Chickasaw Nation*, 155 U.S. 190 (1894) (Cherokee and Delaware). To the effect that the dissolution of a union between two tribes requires consent of the United States where such consent was a condition of the original act of union, see *Cherokee and Chickasaw Nation v. U.S.*, 142 (1895). On the situation in Alaska, see Chapter 21.

<sup>2</sup> For an ethnological definition of "tribe" see Handbook of American Indians (Bureau of American Ethnology, Bulletin No. 80, 1910), pt. 2, p. 514.

<sup>3</sup> See Memo. Sol. I D, March 20, 1908.

<sup>4</sup> See *Twitty v. Oklahoma*, 228 U.S. 1867, with these Indians, 16 Stat. 609, particularly Arts. XIX and XXV.

<sup>5</sup> 108 U.S. 419, 4 S. Ct. 1, 28 L. Ed. 8.

<sup>6</sup> See *United States v. Reel*, 168 U.S. 432 (1905), *United States v. Boyd*, 98 Fed. 447 (C. C. 4, 1897).

<sup>7</sup> 5 Wall. 407 (1867).

<sup>8</sup> 5 Wall. 787 (1866).

In the case of *Chippewa Indians v. United States*<sup>1</sup> the power of Congress over Chippewa lands was challenged on the theory that the tribe had been dissolved and the lands individualized, and that Congress had therefore no right to expand the funds for various tribal purposes. In rejecting this argument, the Supreme Court put its criterion of tribal existence in these terms:

It is true that, prior to the adoption of the Act of 1880 the tribe had been broken up into numerous bands, some of which held title in fee to lands in the State of Minnesota. The Act refers to these collectively as "The Chippewas in the State of Minnesota." Whether or not the tribal relation had been dissolved prior to its adoption, the Act contemplates future dealing with the Indians upon a tribal basis. It excludes a purpose gradually to incorporate the Indians and to bring about a status comparable to that of citizens of the United States. But it is plain that, in the interim Congress did not intend to surrender its guardianship over the Indians or treat them otherwise than as tribal Indians.

This is evidenced by a series of acts. The first of which was enacted nineteen months after the Act of 1880, which treated the Indians as an incorporated or intended to incorporate a banding (contract with them as individuals. [Citing statutes.] Many of these statutes refer to the Chippewas of Minnesota as a tribe. [Citing statutes.] Moreover, in execution of the Act of 1880 Congress found that it is not consistent in the form of an agreement, and we may not state that Congress abandoned its guardianship of the tribe or the bands and entered into a formal trust agreement with the Indians, in the absence of a clear expression of that intent. (2p. 4-6)

Tribes similar to the above have been raised in many other cases, and determined in accordance with the foregoing principles.<sup>2</sup>

The limits of legislative power in this field were suggested in the opinion written by Mr. Justice Van Devanter, for a unanimous court, in *United States v. Sandoz*:<sup>3</sup>

Of course, it is not useful in this field Congress buy having a community or body of people within the name of this power by arbitrarily calling them in Indian tribe, but only that in respect of distinctly Indian communities, the questions whether to what extent, and for what time, they shall be recognized and dealt with as dependent tribes requiring the guardianship and protection of the United States, are to be determined by Congress, and not by the court. (P. 40.)

A rule from these cases which have dealt with the term "Indian tribes" as used in the Constitution, there have been a few statutes which have used the term and about which legal questions of tribal existence have been raised.

One such statute is that regulating the purchase or leasing of land "from any Indian in fee or title of Indians."<sup>4</sup> Under these

statute title cannot be conveyed to non-Indian lands in New York. Indeed upon the theory that the Onondas in New York had ceased to exist as a tribe, was set aside. The federal court held that the Onondas of New York still existed as a tribe, in the eyes of the Federal Government, and that it was for Congress, and not the state courts, to say when this tribal existence was at an end.<sup>5</sup>

A similar holding with respect to the Pueblos of New Mexico is of course discussed.<sup>6</sup>

Questions of tribal existence were extensively litigated under the Indian Depredation Act of 1891<sup>7</sup> which gave to the Court of Claims jurisdiction over "all claims for property of citizens of the United States taken or destroyed by Indians belonging to any band, tribe or nation in amity with the United States, without just cause or provocation on the part of the owner or agent in charge, and not returned or paid for." Under the statute it became necessary in each case to determine whether the band or tribe to which the offender belonged was in amity with the United States.<sup>8</sup>

The question of tribal existence presented little difficulty under the 1891 Act when the group in question had entered into treaty relations with the United States, or where a separate

<sup>1</sup> *United States v. Sandoz*, 265 Fed. 167 (1st C. C. 2d 1920) aff'd 207 U. S. 674 (1922). Accord: *United States v. Okla. 24 F. Supp. 346 (D. C. W. D. N. S. 1935) (Lawrence & Band)*.

<sup>2</sup> See *United States v. N. S. 4*.

<sup>3</sup> *At of March, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>4</sup> *261 U. S. 291 (1895)*. See also *United States v. Martin*, 105 U. S. 469 (1904). *Coronado Co. v. United States*, 175 U. S. 280 (1900).

<sup>5</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>6</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>7</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>8</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>9</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>10</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>11</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>12</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>13</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>14</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>15</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>16</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>17</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>18</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>19</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>20</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>21</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>22</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>23</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>24</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>25</sup> *At of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 871, 872* (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>1</sup> 107 U. S. 1 (1891).

<sup>2</sup> *United States v. Koonau*, 218 U. S. 175 (1886) (upholding constitutionality of federal statute on matters of one Indian by method as applied to Hopi Valley Indians); *Lane Wolf v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 951 (1903) (upholding constitutionality of federal allotment statute for Kiowa, Comanche, and Apache Indians); *Proctor v. Western Investment Co.*, 221 U. S. 284, 216 (1911) (upholding constitutionality of congressional restriction upon alienation of lands of a member of the reservation, Creek Nation); *United States v. Wright*, 51 S. 2d 300 (4, 4, 1911) (1st C. C. 2d 1920) (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>3</sup> 221 U. S. 284, 216 (1911) (upholding constitutionality of congressional restriction upon alienation of lands of a member of the reservation, Creek Nation); *United States v. Wright*, 51 S. 2d 300 (4, 4, 1911) (1st C. C. 2d 1920) (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>4</sup> 221 U. S. 284, 216 (1911) (upholding constitutionality of congressional restriction upon alienation of lands of a member of the reservation, Creek Nation); *United States v. Wright*, 51 S. 2d 300 (4, 4, 1911) (1st C. C. 2d 1920) (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>5</sup> 221 U. S. 284, 216 (1911) (upholding constitutionality of congressional restriction upon alienation of lands of a member of the reservation, Creek Nation); *United States v. Wright*, 51 S. 2d 300 (4, 4, 1911) (1st C. C. 2d 1920) (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>6</sup> 221 U. S. 284, 216 (1911) (upholding constitutionality of congressional restriction upon alienation of lands of a member of the reservation, Creek Nation); *United States v. Wright*, 51 S. 2d 300 (4, 4, 1911) (1st C. C. 2d 1920) (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).

<sup>7</sup> 221 U. S. 284, 216 (1911) (upholding constitutionality of congressional restriction upon alienation of lands of a member of the reservation, Creek Nation); *United States v. Wright*, 51 S. 2d 300 (4, 4, 1911) (1st C. C. 2d 1920) (1st Act of March 4, 1891, 1st Stat. 62, 70 which dealt with Depredation claims which tribes made against the Indians. An alternative account of Indian depredations between tribes will be found in the opinion of the Court of Claims in *Lightfoot v. United States and Okla. Band*, 29 C. Cls. 256 (1894).



reservation had been set aside for the group.<sup>30</sup> A more difficult question, however, was presented in cases where a portion of a tribe went on the warpath. In this situation the rule was established that if the hostile party consisted of a *distinct band* the original tribe was not responsible for its depredations.<sup>31</sup> In the case of *Montou v. United States*,<sup>32</sup> the Supreme Court upheld the rule laid down by the Court of Claims and sought to establish the meaning of the terms "tribe" and "band," in these words:

We are most concerned in this case with the meaning of the words "tribe" and "band." By a "tribe" we understand a band of Indians of the same or a similar race, united in a community under one leadership or government and inhabiting a particular though sometimes ill-defined territory. By a "band" a company of Indians not necessarily of the same race or tribe, but united under the same leadership in a common design. While a "band" does not imply the separate racial origin characteristic of a tribe of which it is usually an offshoot, it does imply a leadership and a concert of action. How large the company must be to constitute a "band" within the meaning of the act is unnecessary to decide. It may be doubtful whether it requires more than independence of action, continuity of existence, a common leadership and concert of action. (P. 268.)

In the parallel case of *Conner v. United States*,<sup>33</sup> the Supreme Court declared:

To constitute a "band" we do not think it necessary that the Indians composing it be a separate political entity, recognized as such, inhabiting a particular territory, and with whom treaties had been or might be made. These peculiarities would rather give them the character of tribes. The word "band" implies, in Indian and less permanent organization, though it might be of sufficient strength to be capable of initiating hostile proceedings. (P. 275.)

In the case of *Hubb v. United States*,<sup>34</sup> the Court of Claims decided:

It has been urged in this and other cases that when a number of Indian tribes have been removed to a reservation the tribal entity of each ceases, that they become in legal effect one tribe and that the question of amity is to be directed to all of the Indians then brought together.

In dealing with the question of the amity of such a tribe as a band of the Apaches, the court has been more and

<sup>30</sup> *Thompson v. United States and Klamath Indians*, 42 C. Cl. 309 (1907).

<sup>31</sup> *Herring v. United States and the Indians*, 23 C. Cl. 536 (1847); *Aldred v. United States and the Indians*, 38 C. Cl. 280 (1861); *Montou v. United States and Mesquero Apaches*, 42 C. Cl. 349 (1897); *Ward v. U. S.*, 202 (1901); *Dobbs v. United States and Apache Indians*, 35 C. Cl. 908 (1888); *Conner v. United States and Cheyenne Indians*, 35 C. Cl. 317 (1898); *Ward v. U. S.*, 271 (1901). In the case of *Herring v. United States and the Indians* the Court of Claims held that while the Five Tribes were in amity with the United States, the members of Black Hawk's band had desecrated themselves from the tribe in order to engage in hostile acts so that neither the tribe nor the band was liable for depredations which had been committed the tribe being immune because not involved, the band immune because engaged in war. The Court declared:

A band being the lowest and smallest subdivision, considerably more so than any other form of corporate existence so to speak and become a de facto band by the exercise of its membership its continuity of existence and its persistent cohesion subject to the control and power of a leader having the recognized authority of a commander and chief.

The different divisions of the Indians have not usually originated from the conventional mode which organizes white persons into political communities but have originated as a condition in fact and when so existing they are recognized by the host as a separate entity, and held responsible as such. (P. 58.)

<sup>32</sup> 180 U. S. 261 (1901), aff'd 32 C. Cl. 349 (1897).

<sup>33</sup> *Conner v. United States*, 180 U. S. 271 (1901), aff'd 38 C. Cl. 317 (1898).

<sup>34</sup> 38 C. Cl. 308 (1898).

more compelled to fall back upon the purpose of the other statutes which created a liability and gave to these elements the right of action. This purpose, as has been said before, was to keep the peace to prevent Indian warfare upon the frontier. The Government said both to the white man and to the Indian "This depredation on this one act is wrong, is indefensible, and you shall be indemnified for your losses so far as property is involved, provided always that you act in amity with us." If the Indians in reason and the Indians did not comply with this simple condition, if the purpose of creating the indemnity was not effective, the elements have no right to seek it under the act of 1891.

The practical question, then is, Who were the Indians whose amity was to be maintained? Who were the Indians so afflicted with the depredations in fact that the depredations might reasonably be regarded as a part of them and thus be regarded as a body who are amity it was desired to maintain?

In dealing with this question the court has held first, that a nation, tribe, or band will be regarded as an Indian entity where the relations of the Indians in their organized or tribal capacity has been fixed and recognized by treaty, second, that where there is no treaty by which the Government has recognized a body of Indians, the court will recognize a subdivision of tribes or band, which has been recognized by the objects of the Government whose duty it was to deal with and report the condition of the Indians to the executive branch of the Government third that where there has been no such recognition by the Government, the court will accept the subdivision into tribes or bands made by the Indians themselves. (*Ward v. The Apache Indians*, 32 C. Cl. 311.)

But in the application of this rule the court has had to go further and recognize bands which simply in fact existed, irrespective of recognition, either by the Department of the Interior or the Indian tribes from which the members of the band came. Yet this band of Apaches was merely a combination of individuals from different bands associated together for the purpose of waging war against the United States. The band did not exist until its warfare began. It had no geographical home or habitat. A temporary sense of amity induced the Indians to prefer death to submission, and they fought the troops of the United States, and the band and its members were extinct. (*Montou v. The Mesquero Apaches*, 42 cl., 349.)

The Cheimichus were an isolated mountain band, they had their own habit in its remote valleys distant from the valleys or mountains of the other bands, they fought their own battles, they pursued their own policy, they were hunted down and captured as Cheimichus, and were brought in and placed upon a reservation as a distinct and well known military enemy. On the reservation they remained distinct neither in fact nor in legal consequence among with the other tribes. In their conflict and receipt from the San Carlos Reservation, in 1881, they still retained their tribal distinctiveness. For the court to hold that they had become an integral part of all the Indians upon the reservation, and that it all of the Indians upon the reservation, little better than a process of war, had become a new distinctive Indian nation or tribal organization would be to introduce a new and artificial element into this in fact of litigation founded on the facts of the case but on a speculative theory. (Pp. 315-317.)

The question of what groups constitute tribes or bands has been extensively considered in recent years by the administrative authorities of the Federal Government in connection with tribal organization effected pursuant to section 18 of the Act of June 18, 1934.<sup>35</sup> A showing that the group seeking to organize is entitled to be considered as a tribe, within the meaning of the act,<sup>36</sup> is deemed a prerequisite to the holding of a referendum on

<sup>35</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 985, 27 U. S. C. 470.

<sup>36</sup> Sec. 18 of the act covers "any Indian tribe or tribes, residing on the same reservation." Sec. 10 defines "tribe" as follows: "The term 'tribe' wherever used in this Act shall be construed to refer to any Indian tribe, organized band, pueblo, or the Indians residing on one reservation." Critical cases arise particularly where the last phrase is inapplicable. Where this phrase is applicable, and the Indians of a given reservation

a proposed tribal constitution, and the basis for such a holding is actually set forth in the letter from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to the Secretary of the Interior recommending the submission of a tribal constitution to a referendum vote. In cases of special difficulty, a ruling has generally been obtained from the Solicitor for the Interior Department as to the tribal status of the group seeking to organize. The considerations which, singly or jointly, have been particularly relied upon in reaching the conclusion that a group constitutes a "tribe" or "band" have been:

- (1) That the group has had treaty relations with the United States.
- (2) That the group has been denominated a tribe by act of Congress or Executive order.
- (3) That the group has been treated as having collective rights in tribal lands or funds, even though not expressly designated a tribe.
- (4) That the group has been treated as a tribe or band by other Indian tribes.
- (5) That the group has exercised political authority over its members, through a tribal council or other governmental forum.

Other factors considered though not conclusive, are the existence of special appropriation items for the group<sup>1</sup> and the social solidarity of the group.

Ethnologic and historical considerations, although not conclusive, are entitled to great weight in determining the question of tribal existence. A situation of peculiar difficulty and complexity arose in connection with the application of two tribal towns of the Creek Nation to organize under the Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act. In upholding the tribal status of the applicants, the Solicitor for the Interior Department declared:

For the information of the Solicitor's Office in authorizing political report compiled by Mr. Monty Opley, we submitted which deals with the history and present character of these towns. This report provides data and opinions of authorities on the Creeks showing that the Creeks were originally a confederacy composed of 1 number of tribes, each referred to as a "Tulwa". This word was generally translated into the English word "town" but latter covers the conception contained in the word "tribe". Each Tulwa was self governing. It was composed of people living in a single locality, but membership was dependent on birth rather than residence since a Creek Indian belonged to the Tulwa of his mother. These towns were originally recognized by the Federal Government as the governing units in the Creek confederacy. The treaties of 1790 and 1796 with

the Creeks were signed by the representatives of the various towns. However, because of the pressure of the white people for land and the fact that the towns declared war and peace independently of each other, the Federal authorities found it advisable to insist upon centralization of the Creeks to avoid dealing with each Tulwa. The Indians opposed this centralization and it was not until after the Civil War, in which the towns took opposing positions, that the Federal Government achieved the formation of a single government among the Creek Indians. And even then the union was opposed by the red blood element in part of the confederation, because the towns were still used for the official purposes of claims and annuity payments and is a basis for representation in the central body. The census was kept on the basis of the towns without the making of the tribal rolls by the Bureau of Commissioner. It was thought that the plotting of the Creek Indians would destroy their town organization but this did not in fact occur, as the members of the town took themselves in the same locality and continued their social and political organization. The report states that at the present time the same offices described by members of De Soto's expedition are still maintained. Many of the old traditions and distinctions between the towns are likewise maintained, including the traditional membership.

There is other evidence besides the report of this anthropologist now available which indicates the tribal character of these towns. The federated government formed in the latter part of the nineteenth century was a modified replica of the United States government, with representatives elected from the self governing towns to the two Houses of Legislature, the House of Kings and the House of Warriors. These representatives received Creek designation of the chiefs and headmen of the towns. The present Principal Chief of the Creek Nation has in turned the office that these elections will continue, though the National Council has few functions, and that the towns still have their kings and warriors. The organization is in electron connected with one of the constitutions, and the provisions of the constitutions themselves show the existence of a fully elaborate local organization with a chief, governing committee and various special offices. Some towns have a square dedicated by their members used for meetings, ceremonies and social functions and there is at least one case of communal ground, given by the members, worked by them to the benefit of indigent persons in the town. The principal Chief reports various ways in which the towns are active in providing assistance and relief to the members of the town.

That the Indians themselves recognized the existence of the Creek tribal towns is clear from an examination of the constitution and laws of the Muskogean Nation.

Under the foregoing legal authorities it appears to me that the Creek towns can lay a substantiated claim to the right to be considered as recognized bands within the meaning of section 5 of the Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act of June 20, 1906.<sup>2</sup>

It is not enough, however, to show that any of the foregoing elements existed at some time in remote past. As was said by the Solicitor in passing upon the status of the Miami and Peoria Indians under the Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act:

It is not enough that the ethnographic history of the two groups shows them in the past to have been distinct and well-organized tribes or bands. A particular tribe or band may well pass out of existence as such in the course of time. The word "recognized" as used in the Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act involves more than past

organize and adopt a constitution under sec 16, it has been administratively held that they thereby become a tribe but do not thereby acquire nonterritorial powers of government which they have never exercised. See Chapter 7, in 67.

<sup>1</sup>The case of *Tully v. United States*, 32 C Cls 1 (1898) indicates that where the Indians themselves have treated a group as a band separate from or subordinate to a given tribe, the courts will accept the subdivisions so recognized.

The policy of the United States in dealing with the Indians has been, as we understand, to accept the subdivisions of the Indians into such tribes or bands as the Indians themselves adopted, and to deal with them accordingly.

So that if such subdivisions, whether into tribes or bands, have not been continued by treaty and have been by the officers of the Government whose duty it was to report in respect thereto, then the court will accept that an sufficient recognition of the tribe or band upon which to predicate a judgment.

Of if there be no such recognition by the Government, then the court will accept the subdivisions into such tribes or bands as made by the Indians themselves, whether such tribes and bands be named by reason of their geographical location or otherwise (Op. 7 and 8).

<sup>2</sup>See, for an example of the consideration given to the foregoing elements of tribal existence, Memo Sol I D, February 8, 1937 (Mole Lake and St. Croix Chippewa).

<sup>3</sup>It appears to be given considerable weight by the Court of Claims in *McKee v. United States and Comanche Indians*, 38 C Cls 98, 104 (1897).

<sup>1</sup>Act of August 7, 1790, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 35, 36; Act of May 29, 1796, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 26.

<sup>2</sup>Memo Sol I D, July 15, 1937. The Constitution of the Talpithlocoo Tribal Town was ratified on December 27, 1898 that of the Alabama Quapaw Tribal Town on January 10, 1909. Both constitutions recognize that membership in the town is not inconsistent with membership in the Creek Nation.

<sup>3</sup>Act of June 28, 1896, 40 Stat. 1907, 25 U. S. C. 501, et seq.

existence is a tribe and its historical recognition is such there must be a continuity existing group distinct and functioning as a group in certain respects, and recognition of such identity must have been shown by specific actions of the Indian Office, the Department, or by Congress.<sup>2</sup>

The distinction between a band or tribe and a voluntary association of society is at times difficult to draw with precision. The Acting Solicitor in the Interior Department held that a particular group could not be considered a tribe or band for purposes of organization under the Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act.<sup>3</sup> declared

The primary distinction between a band and a society is that a band is a political body. In other words, a band has functions and powers of government. It is generally the historic unit of government in those tribes where bands exist. Because of Federal intervention aimed to destroy tribal organization within recognized bands have lost most if not all of their governmental functions. But their identity as a political organization must remain if the group of Indians can be considered a band or tribe.

This character of a band as an existing or historical unit of Indian government seems to be recognized in sections 10 and 19 of the Indian Reorganization Act which refer to "persons vested in its title or tribal control by existing law," and define tribe to include an "organized band."<sup>4</sup> In the administration of the act, organizations of tribes or bands have included such language.

<sup>2</sup> Memo. to I. D. December 18, 1935.

<sup>3</sup> Act of June 26, 1906, 49 Stat. 1987, 28 U. S. C. 763, *et seq.*

## SECTION 2 TERMINATION OF TRIBAL EXISTENCE

Given adequate evidence of the existence of a tribe during some period in the remote or recent past, the question may always be raised: Has the existence of this tribe been terminated in some way?

Generally speaking, the termination of tribal existence is shown positively by act of Congress, treaty provision, or tribal action.<sup>5</sup> or negatively by the cessation of collective action and collective recognition. The terms of such collective action and collective recognition which are considered criteria of tribal existence have already been discussed.

The view was once widely entertained that tribal membership was legally incompatible with United States citizenship. Thus a number of early treaties and statutes provided that a given tribe should be dissolved when its members become citizens.<sup>6</sup> Dissolution of the tribe required divison of property, and this meant allotment of tribal lands and per capita divison of tribal funds.<sup>7</sup>

The Supreme Court in *Matter of Hell*,<sup>8</sup> took the view that citizenship and allotment involved a termination of tribal relations, and that such termination of tribal relations removed citizen allottees from the scope of the Indian liquor laws.

The defendant in the case was a Kickapoo Indian, and the Treaty of June 28, 1862, with that tribe "had provided that upon allotment these Indians "shall cease to be members of said tribe, and shall become citizens of the United States." This provision provides a possible justification for the actual decision in *Matter of Hell*, but the opinion in the case put the decision upon the broader ground that under section 6 of the General Allotment

Act powers of government as a nation and be considered appropriate. It is this feature which distinguishes an organization under section 3 of the Oklahoma Act from organization of voluntary associations under section 1.<sup>9</sup>

The question of tribal existence has generally been treated by the courts as a simple yes or no question. It remains true, however, that an Indian tribe may "exist" for certain purposes, and not for others. Where several Indian groups are considered a single tribe generally for political and administrative purposes, Congress may nevertheless assign tribal status to a component group for specified purposes. This has frequently occurred in connection with claims. Tribe A and Tribe B have amalgamated to form Tribe C and share a common reservation and common funds. But at some time prior to amalgamation Tribe A had suffered some injury for which a later generation offers redress in the form of a jurisdictional act in such cases, Congress occasionally recognizes as a tribe, entitled to being said in the limit of claims what is for most purposes only a part of a tribe.

<sup>4</sup> Memo. Act. Ind. I. D. July 29, 1937.

<sup>5</sup> Examples of this situation are involved in the Act of February 25, 1899, 25 Stat. 694 (authorizing, art by Old Statutes) contained in *United States v. Old Statutes*, 148 U. S. 427 (1893) and in the Cherokee Nation, 1891 (Shawnee and Delaware Indians incorporated in the Cherokee Nation, allowed to bring tribal suits against the Cherokee Nation and the United States), Act of June 28, 1894, sec. 25, 10 Stat. 937 (authorizing suit by Delaware Indians) contained in *Delaware Indians v. Cherokee Nation*, 194 U. S. 427 (1904), Treaty Resolution of June 9, 1900, 46 Stat. 811 (authorizing suit by Assiniboin Indians).

Act<sup>10</sup> which provides that allottees shall be citizens of the United States "entitled to all the rights, privileges, and immunities of such citizens," every allottee has now emancipated from federal control.

This doctrine was rejected in the case of *United States v. Nix*,<sup>11</sup> which held that allotment did not terminate tribal existence so as to take allottees outside the scope of Indian liquor laws adopted pursuant to congressional power to regulate commerce with Indian tribes. The Supreme Court declined

We recognize that a different construction was placed upon section 6 of the act of 1887 in *Matter of Hell*, 197 U. S. 458, but after reexamining this question in the light of other provisions in the act and of many later enactments, clearly reflecting what was intended by Congress, we are constrained to hold that the decision in that case is not well grounded, and it is accordingly overruled. (160.)

The view taken in the *Nix* case has prevailed ever since.<sup>12</sup>

While it is thus clear that neither allotment nor citizenship,<sup>13</sup> or not both together, imply a termination of tribal existence, in the absence of express provision of treaty or statute availing such a common law, presumably these are factors to be considered

<sup>6</sup> *Reynolds v. United States*, 145 U. S. 348, 390, 25 U. S. C. 349. See Chapter 8, sec. 2A(1).

<sup>7</sup> 281 U. S. 591 (1930).

<sup>8</sup> *United States v. Boyton*, 265 Fed. 165 (C. C. 2 (1920), aff'd, 276 Fed. 468 (U. S. D. C. 2 (1931)), up from 277 U. S. 614 (1927). Accord, *Perrell v. United States*, 114 Fed. 911 (C. C. A. 8, 1903).

<sup>9</sup> Of the argument that the Fourteenth Amendment conferred citizenship upon Indians, and thereby dissolved tribal relations, the Senate Committee on Judiciary said, in 1870:

To maintain that the Indian States intended, by a change of the fundamental law, which we've not a tribe by these tribes, to annul the tribe, then existing, would be to change upon the United States repudiation of national obligation. It would double the burden upon the law that the nation whose claims were thus annulled are too weak to enforce their just claims, and were enjoying the voluntary and guarded guardianship and protection at this Government (Sen. Rept. No. 266, 41st Cong., 2d sess., December 14, 1870, p. 11).

See Chapter 8, sec. 2C(1) to 2C(3).

<sup>10</sup> See *United States v. Anderson*, 255 Fed. 426 (D. C. R. D. Wyo. 1937) (dissolution of Stockingdale Muncho Tribe by tribal agreement ratified by Congress).

<sup>11</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 2A. And see Act of March 3, 1875, 17 Stat. 653 (Maine).

<sup>12</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 28.

<sup>13</sup> 197 U. S. 488 (1905).

<sup>14</sup> 18 Stat. 922, 926.

in determining whether a given group has ceased to maintain tribal relations. Other factors considered by courts and administrative authorities in determining whether the tribal relations of a given group have come to an end are: the physical separation of a group from the main body of the tribe, and the cessation of participation in tribal resources and tribal government.

In the case of *The Cherokee Trust Funds*,<sup>1</sup> it was held that those Cherokees who remained in North Carolina when the main body of the Cherokees were removed to Indian Territory thereby lost their tribal status. The Supreme Court declared:

\* \* \* Whatever upon their have had among themselves has been merely a sort of business one. It was formed in 1846, at the suggestion of an officer of the Indian office for the purpose of enabling them to transact business with the Government with greater convenience. Although its articles are drawn in the form of a constitution for a separate civil government, they have never been recognized as a separate Nation in the United States; no treaty has been made with them; they can pass no laws; they are citizens of that State and bound by its laws. . . . (P. 309)

As the Court of Claims pointed out, in this case the remaining Cherokees had expatriated themselves from the Cherokee Nation. . . . The only parallel ever accorded to them by the nation was that they might become citizens and subjects upon terms it within its territorial boundaries.

It has been administratively determined that those Choctaws remaining in Mississippi when the Choctaw Tribe removed to Indian Territory lost their tribal status and could not be recognized as a separate tribe,<sup>2</sup> and, similarly, that the Indians of the Georgelown or Shilohwaka Reservation in Washington all of whom, apparently took allotments in other reservations or otherwise abandoned the reservation in question, could no longer be recognized as a separate tribe entitled to the use of receipts from timber sales on the Georgelown Reservation.<sup>3</sup>

Many of the attempts made by Congress to terminate the existence of particular tribes have proved abortive. Tribes which have been dissolved not once but several times have been recognized, in later congressional legislation, as still existing.

An example in point is the group of Winnebago Indians who, separating from their brothers in Nebraska, took up homestead allotments in Wisconsin, under the Act of March 4, 1877,<sup>4</sup> which provided for the issuance of homestead allotments to Indians upon proof of the abandonment of tribal relations. The intent of these Indians "to abandon their tribal relations, and adopt the habits and customs of civilized people" was given special legislative confirmation in the Act of January 18, 1881.<sup>5</sup> Nevertheless,

in many subsequent statutes Congress recognized the continued existence of the Winnebago Indians of Wisconsin as a separate band.<sup>6</sup> In 1937 the right of this group to organize as a separate band was affirmed by the Interior Department.<sup>7</sup>

The efforts of Congress to terminate the existence of the Five Civilized Tribes are elsewhere discussed.<sup>8</sup>

The efforts to terminate the existence of the Wyandotte Tribe apparently began in 1870 in a treaty by which that tribe, having renounced all claims to land in exchange for their tribal or national character and become citizens of the United States," agreed "that their existence, as a nation or tribe, shall terminate and become extinct upon the ratification of this treaty. . . . The treaty was ratified on September 21, 1870. Apparently the extinguishment clause did not work, for neither treaty containing similar provisions for the extinguishment of tribal existence was entered into by the supposedly non-existent tribe some 7 years later.<sup>9</sup> In 1947 Congress again provided for the final distribution of the funds belonging to the Wyandotte Tribe.<sup>10</sup> Even this apparently, did not interfere with the continued functioning of the tribe, and on July 24, 1947, the chief of the tribe testified that the members of the tribe, by a unanimous vote, had adopted a tribal constitution under the Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act,<sup>11</sup> perpetuating the traditional tribal organization.

Various other attempts to terminate tribal relations by treaty or act of Congress have proved abortive.<sup>12</sup> These legislative experiments suggest that the dissolution of tribal existence is easier to decree than to effect, and indicate the value of a certain skepticism in considering current legislative proposals looking to the dissolution of all or some Indian tribes. They also point to the reasons for the judicial rule that an exercise of the federal power to dissolve a tribe must be demonstrated by statutory provision which are positive and unambiguous.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 21 Stat. 315.

<sup>2</sup> Act of March 3, 1909, 35 Stat. 781, 798. Act of January 20, 1910, 36 Stat. 973. Act of July 1, 1912, 37 Stat. 187. Act of December 17, 1928, 45 Stat. 1027.

<sup>3</sup> Memo Reel I D, March 6, 1897.

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 21, sec. 6.

<sup>5</sup> Act of April 1, 1876, with the Wyandotte, 9 Stat. 987, 989.  
<sup>6</sup> Treaty of January 18, 1881, 21 Stat. 2179, confirmed in *Wyandotte v. Shoshone*, 184 U.S. 200 (1902). Cf. art. XII of the Treaty of February 28, 1867 with the Seneca and others including certain Wyandottes, 17 Stat. 313, 616, providing for Wyandottes, "many of whom have been in a disorganized and unfortunate condition since their treaty of one thousand eight hundred and fifty five." And see *Grey v. Hoffman*, 10 Fed. Cas. No. 3711 (C. C. Kan. 1874) (*Quincy Bellinger*, 216 U.S. 81 (1910)).

<sup>7</sup> Act of August 27, 1936, 49 Stat. 804.

<sup>8</sup> Act of June 16, 1936, 49 Stat. 1867.

<sup>9</sup> *Wagon v. Chouteau*, 159 U.S. 75 (1896), concerning the Treaty of June 24, 1862 with the Ottawa Indians of the United Bands of Black and Fork etc., 12 Stat. 1237, providing for the termination of tribal relations on July 16, 1867, and also the Treaty of February 23, 1867 with the Ottawa and other tribes, 15 Stat. 613, repeating this provision. And see Act of August 6, 1840, 9 Stat. 47.

<sup>10</sup> *Johnson v. Johnson*, 175 U.S. 1 (1899). *Johnson v. Johnson*, 216 U.S. 223 (1913).

<sup>11</sup> *Johnson v. Johnson*, 175 U.S. 1 (1899). *Johnson v. Johnson*, 216 U.S. 223 (1913).

(b) The relation of an Indian tribe to other governments presents a series of difficult problems of international law. These problems involve (1) The treaty-making capacity of an Indian tribe, (2) the capacity of a tribe to wage war, (3) its capacity to sue as a "foreign nation", (4) its relationship to a foreign country, (5) the recognition which it may demand of the several states, (6) its relation to the federal power of eminent domain, (7) its relation to the state power of eminent domain, and (8) its status as a federal instrumentality.

<sup>12</sup> *Barlow v. Band of Cherokee Indians v. United States and Cherokee Nation*, 117 U.S. 288 (1886). 18 U.S. 20 C. (N. 440 (1886)).

<sup>13</sup> 20 C. Cls. 419, 473. *Acord United States v. Nim*, 21 Fed. Cas. No. 15648 (D. C. N. D. N. 1877) (Owens).

<sup>14</sup> Memo Reel I D, August 11, 1936. Cf. note on the status of Pogoque Pueblo, Chapter 20, sec. 1.

<sup>15</sup> Op. Reel I D, March 18, 1916, 21, 1912, 54 U.S. 71.

<sup>16</sup> See 15, 18 Stat. 462, 420.

<sup>17</sup> See Chapter 7.

The political status of Indian tribes may be considered with respect to the relations subsisting between the tribe and (a) its members, (b) other governments, and (c) private persons not members of the tribe.

(a) So far as concerns the political relation between a tribe and its members, this is a subject which has already been considered in treating of the nature and scope of tribal self-government.<sup>18</sup>

<sup>18</sup> See Chapter 7.

## SECTION 3. POLITICAL STATUS

(1) The Indian tribes were recognized as powers capable of making treaties before the United States was.<sup>11</sup> The validity of the many treaties made and ratified between the United States and nearly all the tribes within its boundaries, is closely established, as a matter of law.<sup>12</sup> Treaty making, however, depends upon the will of two parties, and neither the United States or an Indian tribe may refuse, and frequently has refused, to make treaties with the other party desired. Thus, since Congress expressed its opposition to the continued making of treaties with the Indian tribes, in a note which the House of Representatives attached to the Indian Dependent Appropriation Act of March 1, 1871,<sup>13</sup> the President and the Senate have refused to make such treaties. Whether Congress, which is not the treaty-making department of the Government, has the power thus to lay down a binding limitation upon the treaty-making power, viz., the President and the Senate, and whether a treaty made next year with an Indian tribe and constitutionally ratified would be valid or invalid, are probably academic questions. They are also purely verbal questions. When Congress condemned the use of treaties, it did not prevent the practice of dealing with Indian tribes by means of 'conventions,' 'agreements,' 'charters,' and 'constitutions.' From the stand point of the Indian tribes, it made little difference what manner of ratification and procedure was incumbent upon the representative of the United States, who treated with them.<sup>14</sup>

(2) A second fundamental attribute of sovereignty, in international law, is the power to make war. This power has been recognized in Indian tribes down to recent times,<sup>15</sup> and there we still on the statute books laws which contemplate the possibility of hostilities by an Indian tribe.<sup>16</sup> The capacity of an Indian tribe to make war involves certain definite consequences for domestic law. Acts which would constitute murder or manslaughter in the absence of a state of war, whether committed by Indians<sup>17</sup> or by the military forces<sup>18</sup> of the United States, may be justified as acts of war where a state of war exists. Hostile Indians surrendering to armed forces are subject to the disabilities and entitled to the rights of prisoners of war.<sup>19</sup> While the existence of a state of war at some time in the past continues to be a current question in Indian litigation, parties

usually claim litigation if it may be doubted whether the courts would recognize the legal capacity of an Indian tribe to engage in war today.

(3) A third issue in the relations between an Indian tribe and other governments relates to the possibility of suit by an Indian tribe against a state or its citizens in the federal courts. It was settled in the historic case of *Onekoku Nation v. Georgia*<sup>20</sup> that the Cherokee Nation was not a foreign state entitled to bring suit in the federal courts against the State of Georgia to restrain the enforcement of an unconstitutional law.<sup>21</sup> The Supreme Court, per Marshall, C. J., laid down the classic outline of the doctrine which has since been cited:

'Is the Cherokee Nation a foreign state, in the sense in which that term is used in the constitution? The counsel for the plaintiffs have maintained the affirmative of this proposition with great earnestness and ability. As much of the argument as was intended to prove the character of the Cherokees as a state as a distinct political society, separate from others, capable of managing its own affairs and governing itself, has, in the opinion of a majority of the judges, been completely successful.'

A question of much more difficulty remains. Do the Cherokees constitute a *foreign* state in the sense of the constitution? The counsel have shown conclusively, that they are not a state of the Union, but have insisted that, individually, they are aliens, but owing allegiance to the United States. An aggregate of aliens composing a state must, they say, be a foreign state each individual being foreign the whole must be foreign.

This argument is imposing, but we must examine it more closely, before we yield to it. The condition of the Indians in relation to the United States is, perhaps, unlike that of any other two people in existence. In several nations not owing a common allegiance, an alien to each other, the *terra foreign* nations is, with strict propriety, applicable by either to the other. But the relation of the Indians to the United States is marked by peculiar and cardinal distinctions which exist nowhere else. The Indian territory is destined to compose a part of the United States. In all our maps, geographical treatises, histories, and laws, it is so considered. In all our intercourse with foreign nations, in our commercial regulations, in our attempt at amity with the Indians and in our relations, they are considered as within the jurisdictional limits of the United States, subject to many of those restrictions which are imposed upon our own citizens. They acknowledge their duties, in their treaties, to be under the protection of the United States; they admit, that the United States should have the sole and exclusive right of regulating their trade with them, and managing all their affairs: they think proper, and the Cherokees in particular were allowed by the treaty of Hopewell, which preceded the constitution, to send a deputy of their choice, whenever they think fit, to congress. Treaties were made with some tribes, by the state of New York, under a then settled construction of the confederation, by which they ceded all their lands to that state, taking back a limited grant to themselves, in which they admitted their dependence. Though the Indians are acknowledged to have an unquestionable, and heretofore unquestioned, right to the lands they occupy, until that right shall be extinguished by a voluntary cession to our government, yet it may well be doubted, whether those tribes which reside within the acknowledged boundaries of the United States can, with strict accuracy, be denominated foreign nations. They may, more correctly, perhaps, be denominated domestic dependent nations. They occupy a territory to which we assert a title independent of their will, which must take effect in point of possession, when their right of possession ceases. Meanwhile they are in a state of pupillage, their relation to the United States resembles that of a ward to his guardian. They look to our government for protection, rely upon its kindness and its power, appeal to it for relief to their wants, and address the president as their great father. They and their country are considered by foreign nations, as well

<sup>11</sup> See *Patterson v. Brown*, 1st Wheat 115 (1816). *Patterson v. Jenks* 2 Pet 210 (1820), *Worcester v. Georgia*, 6 Pet 515 (1832), *Lattimer v. Pater*, 14 Pet 4 (1840), *Porterfield v. Chitt* 2 How 76 (1844), *Remond v. Christie*, 162 U.S. 1 (1896), *Wheeler v. United States*, 9 Pet 711 (1836). Also see Chapter 8, sec 44.

<sup>12</sup> See Chapter 8.

<sup>13</sup> 16 Stat 544, 556.

<sup>14</sup> See Chapter 8, sec 6.

<sup>15</sup> *Marshall v. United States* 180 U.S. 261 (1901), *Scott v. United States* and *Apache Indians*, 85 C. Cls 496 (1890), *Dobbs v. United States* and *Apache Indians*, 93 C. Cls 308 (1898). Warfare among the Indian tribes themselves was long a matter of concern to the Federal Government. See, for example, the Act of July 14, 1852, 4 Stat. 508.

<sup>16</sup> Act of July 8, 1862, 12 Stat 512, 528, R. S. § 2090, 25 U.S.C. 72 (authorizing abrogation of treaties with tribes engaged in hostilities), Act of March 2, 1897, 14 Stat 402, 617, R. S. § 2100, 25 U.S.C. 127 (authorizing withholding of annuities from hostile Indians), Act of February 14, 1878, 17 Stat 487, 487, 489 R. S. § 487, 25 U.S.C. 268 (declaring sale of arms to hostile Indians), Act of March 8, 1875, 18 Stat 420, 440, 25 U.S.C. 128 (prohibiting payments to Indian bands at war).

<sup>17</sup> The fact that they were treated as prisoners of war also indicates the idea that they were murderers, burglars or other common criminals. *Onan v. United States*, 180 U.S. 271, 275 (1901). And of *United States v. Cho* to *Behn* on *pe* *ali* 25 Fed. Cls No 14789a (Supreme Court, Atk 1854) (holding Osage Indians guilty of murder, their home in smoky). *U.S. v. Cho* *to* *Behn* *on* *pe* *ali* 25 Fed. Cls No 14789a (Supreme Court, Atk 1854).

<sup>18</sup> See *Onan v. United States* and *Cherokee Indians*, 85 C. Cls 317, 325 (1898), *aff'd* 150 U.S. 8 271 (1901) (killing of "escaping prisoners of war" legally justified).

<sup>19</sup> *Jid* And *see* *Montoya v. United States* and *Mescalero Apaches*, 180 U.S. 261 (1901), *aff'd* 32 C. Cls 340 (1897).

<sup>20</sup> 5 Pet 1 (1831).

<sup>21</sup> *See* *Worcester v. Georgia*, 6 Pet 515 (1832), discussed in Chapter 7.

is by ourselves, is hence so completely under the sovereignty and dominion of the United States, that any attempt to acquire these lands, or to form a political connection with them, would be considered by all as an invasion of our territory and an act of hostility. These considerations go far to support the opinion, that the claims of our civilization had not the Indian tribes in view, when they opened the courts of the Union to controversies between a state or the citizens thereof and foreign states.

We should feel some difficulty in considering them as designated by the term foreign state were there in other part of the constitution which might shed light on the meaning of these words. But we think that in construing them considerable aid is furnished by that clause in the eighth section of the third article, which empowers congress to regulate commerce with foreign nations, and among the several states, and with the Indian tribes." In this clause they are as clearly on a par distinguished by a name appropriate to themselves, from foreign nations, as from the several states composing the Union.

The court has devoted its best attention on this question, and, after mature deliberation, the majority is of opinion that an Indian tribe or nation within the United States is not a foreign state, in the sense of the constitution, and cannot maintain an action in the courts of the United States. (Pp 16-18, 20.)

(4) If it has been held that the relation of dependence existing between an Indian tribe and the Federal Government is not terminated by the flight of the tribe to foreign soil or by its sojourn on such soil for years. Thus the return of a refugee tribe has been demanded of the foreign country in which it was sojourning.

(5) The Indian tribes have been treated, for certain purposes as similar to states, territories, or dependencies of the United States. Thus, in the case of *Murray v. Osceola*, the Supreme Court held that an administrator appointed by a probate court of the Choctaw Nation occupied the same position as an administrator appointed by any state or territory of the United States. The court declared:

"In some respects, they bear the same relation to the federal government as a territory did in its second grade of government, under the ordinance of 1787. Such territory passed its own laws, subject to the approval of congress, and its inhabitants were subject to the constitution and acts of congress. The principal difference consists in the fact that the Choctawes enact their own laws, under the restriction stated, appoint their own officers, and pay their own expenses. This, however, is no reason why the laws and proceedings of the Choctaw territory so far as relates to rights claimed under them, should not be placed upon the same footing as other territories in the Union. It is not a foreign, but a domestic territory—a territory which originated under our constitution and laws.

By the 11th section of the act of 24th of June, 1812, it is provided "that it shall be lawful for any person or persons to whom letters, testamentary or of administration hath been or may hereafter be granted, by the proper authority in any of the United States or the territories thereof, to maintain any suit or action, and to prosecute and recover any claim in the District of Columbia, in the same manner as if the letters, testamentary or administrative had been granted in the District."

The Choctaw country, we think, may be considered a territory of the United States, within the act of 1812. In no respect can it be considered a foreign State or territory, as it is within our jurisdiction and subject to our laws. (Pp 103-104.)

<sup>1</sup> *Lone v. United States and Kickapoo Indians*, 37 C. Cl. 413 (1892). Compare, however, *McDonald v. United States ex rel. Dwyer*, 25 F. 2d 71 (C. C. 8, 1828) (Indians in Canada).

<sup>2</sup> See, for example, the Joint Resolution of June 15, 1890, 12 Stat. 116, providing that certain tribes should receive all congressional domain supplies to states and territories.

<sup>3</sup> 18 How. 100 (1855).

Again, in the case of *Standley v. Roberts*<sup>11</sup> the question arose whether a federal court might, by injunction, restrain the enforcement of a judgment rendered by the circuit court of the Choctaw Nation and affirmed by the supreme court of that nation, affecting title to land and rights to rentals within the Choctaw Nation. This issue was resolved in favor of the Choctaw Nation by the Circuit Court of Appeals, and the decision was sustained by the Supreme Court. In the opinion of the former court, rendered by Judge Baileys it was said:

"The judgments of the courts of these nations, in cases within their jurisdiction, stand on the same footing with those of the courts of the territories of the Union, and are entitled to the same faith and credit. (P. 845.)"

A similar decision was reached in the case of *Raymond v. Raymond*, where the validity of a tribal divorce decree was upheld.

The Interior Department has taken the view that tribal elections are within those provisions of the Hatch Act<sup>12</sup> applicable to "any election."

(6) Again, it is held that an Indian tribe is not exempt from the power of federal eminent domain.

(7) The rule has likewise been established that an Indian tribe is exempt from the eminent domain power of the several states, in the absence of federal legislation subjecting the tribe to such power.

(8) In its relations with state and municipal governments, an Indian tribe is treated for certain purposes as an instrumentality of the Federal Government.<sup>13</sup> Following a ruling of the Attorney General of North Dakota to the effect that a state crop mortgage law did not apply to mortgages made to an Indian tribe, for the reason that such tribe was deemed an "agency" of the United States within the meaning of the statutory exemption, the Interior Department authorized the acceptance of such mortgages as security for revolving fund loans. The Assistant Secretary declared:

"This Department has previously held in various decisions, that an Indian tribe, particularly where incorporated, is a Federal agency. In the Solicitor's Opinion M 2750 of December 12, 1934, the following statement is made:

"The Indian tribes have long been recognized as created with governmental powers, subject to limitations imposed by Federal statutes. The powers of an Indian tribe cannot be restricted or controlled by the governments of the several States. The tribe is, therefore, so far as its original absolute sovereignty has been limited, an instrumentality and agency of the Federal Government. (See the recent opinion of this Department, 'Powers of Indian Tribes,' approved October 25, 1934—M 2781.)"

"Various statutes authorize the delegation of new powers of government to the Indian tribes." (See opinion cited above.) The most recent of such

<sup>11</sup> 59 Fed. 886 (C. C. A. 8, 1894) and down 17 Sup. Ct. 999 (1896).

<sup>12</sup> "The Choctaw Nation . . . may maintain its own judicial tribunals, and then judgments and decrees upon the persons and property of members of the Choctaw Nation as against such tribes are entitled to all the faith and credit accorded to the judgments and decrees of territorial courts." (*Per Sanborn J.*) *Raymond v. Raymond*, 88 Fed. 721, 722 (C. C. A. 8, 1897). But cf. *Nepean v. Almon*, 20 Fed. 298 (D. C. W. D. Ark., 1893) (holding Choctaw Nation not a "state" for purposes of extradition).

<sup>13</sup> Act of August 2, 1949, 76th Cong., Pub. No. 262.

<sup>14</sup> *Memo. Sol. J. D.*, April 6, 1940.

<sup>15</sup> *Choctaw Nation v. Kansas Railway Co.*, 145 U. S. 841 (1896), 177 F. 98 Fed. 900 (D. C. W. D. Ark. 1895). And see Chapter 15, sec. 18D, and Federal Eminent Domain (Dept. Justice 1940).

<sup>16</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 11.

<sup>17</sup> "The 'instrumentality' and 'wardship' concepts are sometimes used interchangeably. See *United States v. 1407 Acres of Land*, 27 F. Supp. 167 (D. C. Minn. 1938) ("wardship" offered as basis of federal legislative power to condemn land for Indian use). And see Chapter 8, sec. 9.



the plaintiffs were white men, who, by proceedings of questionable legality, had secured a lease to approximately 400 square miles of Creek tribal land. When this proceeded to fence the land, the tribal treasury and many other Indians of the vicinity rose in protest and destroyed 60 miles of fence, which was as much as the plaintiffs had built. Congress thereafter enacted a statute authorizing the Court of Claims to hear the plaintiffs' claim against the Creek Nation. The Court of Claims finally dismissed the plaintiffs' suit, declaring:

Plaintiffs' petition avers that the damage was inflicted by a mob of Indians of the Creek or Chickasaw Nation in "Texas," and if that be true the Creek Nation is not to be held responsible for the mob's action. It can be said of the Creek Nation as was said of the Cherokee Nation, that it has "many of the rights and privileges of an independent people. They have their own constitution and laws and power to administer their internal affairs. They are recognized as a distinct political community and treaties have been made with them in that capacity." *Delaware Indians v. Chickasaw Nation*, 193 U.S. 327, 344. They are not sovereign to the extent that the federal or state governments are sovereign, but this suit is predicated upon the assumption that their laws are valid enactments, and it recognizes the separate existence of the Creek Nation. When, therefore, the effort is made to hold them responsible, it is a violation of the alleged action of a mob we must apply the rule of law applicable to established governments under similar conditions. It is a familiar rule that in the absence of a statute declaring a liability therefor neither the sovereign nor the governmental subdivisions, such as counties or municipalities, are responsible to the party injured in his person or estate in mob violence." (Pp. 172-173.)

The decision of the Court of Claims, affirmed by the Supreme Court, clearly establishes that an Indian tribe is not a mere collection of individuals, and that the return of a mob even though it should include all the members of a municipality, is not the action of the municipality.

<sup>1</sup> (1898) *Louisiana v. Maye*, 109 U.S. 8, 285, 291 (1883); *Hart v. Byrdington*, 11 Fed. Cl. No. 1649 (C. C. Conn. 1876); *Quafostone v. New Orleans*, 81 Fed. Cl. 64 (C. C. D. C. La. 1894); *Cory v. Abbeville*, 62 Fed. Cl. 240 (C. C. A. 5, 1901); *Minutack State Co. v. Commonwealth*, 102 Mass. 28, 51, 24 N.E. 854 (1890).

## SECTION 4 CORPORATE CAPACITY

Whether an Indian tribe, in the absence of some sort of incorporation, is to be regarded as a corporate body is an interesting question. The answer to it must depend, in part, upon one's definition of the term "corporation." In the narrow sense in which the term is frequently used, a corporation is something chartered by a government, and in this sense only those Indian tribes which have been chartered by some government, e.g. the Pueblos of New Mexico incorporated by territorial legislation,<sup>20</sup> and the tribes incorporated under section 17 of the Act of June 18, 1914,<sup>21</sup> are to be considered corporations.

The term "corporation," however, is frequently used in a broader sense,<sup>22</sup> as when it is stated, for instance, that the City of London, in the United States, is a body corporate, even though a charter of incorporation cannot be discovered. The term "corporation," in this sense, might be defined as designating a group of individuals to which the law ascribes legal personality, i.e., the complex of rights, privileges, powers, and immunities enjoyed by natural persons generally. This definition is not precise, because the rights, privileges, powers, and immunities of different classes of natural persons vary, and various organized groups

<sup>20</sup> Laws of New Mexico, 1881-82, pp. 176, 418, see Chapter 20, sec. 2.  
<sup>21</sup> 48 Stat. 684, 688, 25 U.S.C. 477.

<sup>22</sup> See Stevens on Corporations (1908), § 1.

Under the Act of March 3, 1885,<sup>23</sup> the Secretary of the Interior was authorized to pass on claims for depredations where the tribe concerned had, in reality, assumed collective responsibility for the acts of its members. This statute was narrowly construed. The Court of Claims held that in order to bring a case within the terms of the statute it had to be shown that the tribe had expressly undertaken to make compensation for injuries committed by individual members.

While Congress has the undoubted right to provide that an obligation to pay may arise from an act of Congress, the policy of the Government has confined the responsibility of the Indian and the consequent power of the Secretary to the obligation arising from treaties in which there is an express undertaking on the part of the Indians to pay for depredations.<sup>24</sup> (P. 22.)

As was said by the Court of Claims, with respect to a depredation suit brought against an Indian tribe under the statute:

\* The Indian defendants were not liable, for they were a tribe, a quasi body politic, and the depredations were individual. There was no natural right except that of pursuing and proceeding against the depredators individually. They were the only wrongdoers known to the common law—to any law. As against both of the defendants in this suit the Government and the Cheyenne tribe, the only semblance of liability that existed or exists, is that which has been expressly declared and created by treaties and statutes." (P. 179.)

We have already noted that a strict act imposed upon Indian tribes a liability for depredations which was statutory and not based upon treaty provisions. While the power of Congress thus to impose a common law liability for individual wrongs is unquestioned, it remains true that clear and unambiguous language must be used to show such intention.<sup>25</sup>

<sup>23</sup> 23 Stat. 882, 376.

<sup>24</sup> *Crow v. United States and Apache and Kiowa Indians*, 42 C. Cl. 10 (1896); *Accord Maye, Adm. v. United States and Jicarilla Apache Indians*, 29 C. Cl. 197 (1894).

<sup>25</sup> *Labadie Adm. v. United States and Cheyenne Indians*, 53 C. Cl. 470 (1898).

<sup>26</sup> See fn. 85, supra.

may enjoy the status of individuals in some respects, and not in others. The definition does, however, establish a direction and a method of analysis, and enables us to say that for certain purposes a group has corporate status.

In this sense, we may say that Indian tribes have been assigned corporate status for many different purposes.<sup>26</sup> Among these purposes are the right to sue, the capacity of being sued, the capacity to hold and exercise property rights not vested in any of the members of the tribe, the power to execute contracts that bind the tribe even when in the course of time its entire membership has changed, and the separation of tribal liability from the liability of tribal members.

Various general statutes on Indian depredations, for instance, have authorized suits by injured citizens of the United States against Indian tribes whose members had committed such depredations.

<sup>27</sup> In *Farmers' Loan and Trust Co. v. Peterson*, 130 Mo. 110, 118, 222 N.E. 512 (1927), Justice Brann of the New York Supreme Court wrote that "a corporation is more nearly a method than a thing and that the law in dealing with a corporation has no need of defining it as a person or an entity, or even as an embodiment of functions, rights and duties, but may treat it as a name for a usual and usual collection of four or five things, each one of which must in every instance be examined, analyzed and assigned to its appropriate place according to the circumstances of the particular case, having due regard to the purposes to be achieved."



ditions.<sup>12</sup> None of these statutes imposes individual liability upon the members of the tribe, the liability imposed is purely tribal. It is, in the sense above defined, corporate, and has been so described by the Court of Claims.<sup>13</sup> The extent to which Indian tribes have been subjected to suit under these and similar statutes is elsewhere noted.<sup>14</sup>

The distinction between property rights of a tribe and rights of individual members is elsewhere analyzed in some detail,<sup>15</sup> and for the present it is pertinent only to cite examples of this corporate attitude of the Indian tribes.

In the case of *Flomberg v. McGowan*,<sup>16</sup> the Supreme Court per Holmes, J., referred to "the corporate existence of the nation as such," in enforcing a treaty provision granting a tract to the Choctaw Nation "as free simple to them and their descendants to mine to them while they shall exist, as a nation and live on it," and emphasized the distinction between the nation and its members, in reaching the conclusion that title to the tract rested with the former and that no trust was imposed in favor of the latter. The same distinction is confirmed in the case of *Griff v. Fisher*,<sup>17</sup> holding that the particular members alive when the distribution of tribal property was ordered did not obtain any vested right which would preclude the legislature of the tribe and Congress from later deciding that a new list of tribal members should participate in the property.<sup>18</sup>

Another example of the distinction between tribal and individual property rights is found in claims cases which seek to distinguish between the claims of the tribe and the claims of individual members,<sup>19</sup> holding that damages to members, through denial of education promised in treaty, are not damages to a tribe, except in a sense too remote to serve as a basis of recovery.

Further examples of the distinction between corporate liability and individual liability are found in the cases of *Parks v. Rose*<sup>20</sup> and *Turner v. United States*,<sup>21</sup> the former case holding that an officer of a tribe was not personally responsible for the debts of the tribe, the latter case holding that the tribe itself was not liable at common law for torts committed by its members.<sup>22</sup>

The distinction between tribe and members is emphasized in *United States v. Cherokee Nation*,<sup>23</sup> in holding that where Congress allows a tribe to bring suit not on its own behalf but on behalf of a designated class of individuals, some of them non-members, and excluding from the class certain members, the beneficial interest in a judgment rests in the class and not in the tribe.

The practical significance of the corporate concept lies in the form of analogical argument that proceeds from the fact that a tribe is treated as a corporation for some purposes to the conclusion that it may be so treated for other purposes.<sup>24</sup>

<sup>12</sup> Act of March 8, 1885, 28 Stat. 902, 970, Act of March 8, 1891, 26 Stat. 881. See notes 1, 3, supra.

<sup>13</sup> *Griffith v. United States and Shawnee Tribe*, 30 C. Cls. 815, 821-828 (1895).

<sup>14</sup> See note 5, supra.

<sup>15</sup> See Chapters 9 and 10.

<sup>16</sup> 215 U. S. 50, 61 (1909).

<sup>17</sup> 224 U. S. 540 (1912).

<sup>18</sup> And see rulings as to status of Seminoles lands in terms of "corporate capacity," in 26 Op. A. G. 840 (1907).

<sup>19</sup> See, for example, *Shawnee Tribe of Indians v. United States*, 84 C. Cls. 10 (1908), cert. den. 402 U. S. 740.

<sup>20</sup> 21 How. 398 (1860).

<sup>21</sup> 248 U. S. 974 (1918), aff'd, 51 C. Cls. 125 (1916). See note 3, supra.

<sup>22</sup> Characteristic of holdings on tribal "entity" is the decision in *Quo Nation v. United States*, 51 C. Cls. 238 (1916), to the effect that a treaty or agreement with an Indian nation or tribe is binding upon all the lands and divisions thereof.

<sup>23</sup> 202 U. S. 101 (1906).

<sup>24</sup> See, for example, the opinion of the Supreme Court in *Loose v. Pueblo of Santa Rosa*, 240 U. S. 110 (1919), discussed in Chapter 20, see

Recognizing that the corporate existence and corporate powers of Indian tribes are at least subject to considerable uncertainties, Congress in its current special or general legislation providing for the issuance of charters of incorporation upon application by the Indian tribes. The constitutional power of Congress to incorporate an Indian tribe is clear.<sup>25</sup> The only general legislation on this subject is found in section 17 of the Act of June 18, 1904,<sup>26</sup> which provides for the establishment of tribal corporate status in the following language:

The Secretary of the Interior may, upon petition by it, lease out land of the adult Indians residing on a charter of incorporation to such tribe. Provided That such charter shall not become operative until ratified at a special election by a majority vote of the adult Indians living on the reservation. Such charter may convey to the incorporated tribe the power to purchase, take by gift, or bequest, or otherwise, own, hold, manage, operate, and dispose of property of every description, real and personal including the power to purchase and receive Indian lands and to issue in exchange therefor interests in corporate property, and such further powers as may be incidental to the conduct of corporate business, not inconsistent with law, but no authority shall be granted to sell, mortgage, or lease for a period exceeding ten years any of the land included in the limits of the reservation. Any charter so issued shall not be revoked or amended except by Act of Congress.

Various special acts establish procedures for acquiring corporate status applicable to designated tribes or areas.

Section 1 of the Act of May 1, 1916,<sup>27</sup> providing the following section in Alaska, contains the following proviso:

... That groups of Indians in Alaska not heretofore recognized as bands or tribes, but having a common bond of occupation, or association, or residence within a well-defined neighborhood, community, or rural district, may organize to adopt constitutions and bylaws and to receive charters of incorporation and Federal loans under sections 10, 17, and 10 of the Act of June 18, 1904 (38 Stat. 954).

Section 8 of the Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act of June 20, 1906,<sup>28</sup> provides:

Any recognized tribe or band of Indians residing in Oklahoma shall have the right to organize for its common welfare and to adopt a constitution and bylaws, under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe. The Secretary of the Interior may issue to any such organized group a charter of incorporation, which shall become operative when ratified by a majority vote of the adult members of the organization voting *Pro and Contra*. That such charter shall be void unless the total vote cast be at least 80 per centum of those entitled to vote. Such charter may convey to the incorporated group, in addition to any powers which may properly be vested in a body corporate under the laws of the State of Oklahoma, the right to participate in the revolving credit fund and to enjoy any other rights or privileges secured to an organized Indian tribe under the Act of June 18, 1904 (38 Stat. 954). *Provided*, That the corporate funds of any such chartered group may be deposited in any national bank within the State of Oklahoma or otherwise invested, utilized, or disbursed in accordance with the terms of the corporate charter.

Where the corporate status of an Indian tribe is established, it will ordinarily be held to be within the scope of federal legislation extending certain benefits to corporations. Thus it has been administratively determined<sup>29</sup> that the Pueblos of

<sup>25</sup> And cf. G. F. Cusfield, *Legal Position of the Indian* (1881), 15 Am. L. Rev. 21, 33.

<sup>26</sup> See Memo. Acting Sol. J. D., May 15, 1924, citing *McCallister v. Maryland*, 4 Wheat. 816 (1819), *Lewis v. North River Bridge Co.*, 193 U. S. 525 (1904), *Panola Railroad Removal Cases*, 115 U. S. 2 (1885).

<sup>27</sup> 40 Stat. 864, 958, 25 U. S. C. 477.

<sup>28</sup> 40 Stat. 1269, 25 U. S. C. 825.

<sup>29</sup> 49 Stat. 1907, 25 U. S. C. 505.

<sup>30</sup> Op. Sol. J. D., M. 28890, February 18, 1907, 66 I. D. 79.

New Mexico he entitled to receive grazing privileges under the Taylor Grazing Act, under the clause in section 9 of that act<sup>110</sup> conferring such rights upon "corporations authorized to conduct business under the laws of the State." The principle involved would appear to be equally applicable to any Indian tribe which has a recognized corporate status, either under the Act of June 18, 1934, or otherwise.<sup>111</sup>

While a tribe is incorporated under the Act of June 18, 1934,<sup>112</sup> or similar legislation, the question may be raised, "How far does the incorporated tribe retain possession of the rights and subject to the obligations vested in it prior to the issuance of its corporate charter?"

That an incorporated Indian tribe is not responsible for debts contracted by individual members, jointly or severally, prior to incorporation was the holding of the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court in *Meyers v. Gay Head*,<sup>113</sup> where the court declared per Bigelow, C. J.

The claim which the plaintiff seeks to enforce is for a debt alleged to have been incurred by various persons belonging to the Gay Head tribe of Indians, now included within the district of Gay Head, for goods sold and delivered prior to the incorporation of said district by St. 1892, c. 134. The obvious and decisive objection to the enforcement of this claim is, that it is not due and arising from the "body politic and corporate" which that act creates. No contract, either express or implied, exists by force of which the corporate body can be held liable. There is no rule or principle of the common law by

virtue of which the creation of a municipal corporation can be held to convert the debts previously due, either jointly or severally, from the persons who become members of the new municipality, into corporate liabilities. In the absence of any express legislative enactment, the corporation cannot be said to be the successors of or in privity with its members, so as to be responsible for their previously existing liabilities. There is no legal identity between a corporation and the individuals who compose it. The corporate body is a distinct legal entity, and can be held liable only by showing some breach of corporate duty or contract. (Pp. 134-136.)

While the distinction here spoken between obligations of members and corporate obligations would probably be followed today, it does not follow that an obligation of the tribe as such would be divested by incorporation. In fact, the incorporation provisions of the Act of June 18, 1934, have been consistently interpreted by the administrative authorities of the Federal Government and by the tribes themselves as modifying only the structure of the tribe and not relieving it of any tribal obligations or depriving it of tribal property. A customary provision of a tribal charter declares<sup>114</sup>

7. No property rights of the Northern Cheyenne Tribe as heretofore constituted, shall be in any way impaired by anything contained in this charter, and the tribal ownership of unallotted lands, whether or not assigned to the use of any particular individuals, is hereby expressly recognized. The individually owned property of members of the Tribe shall not be subject to any corporate debts or liabilities, without such owners' consent. Any existing tribal debts of the Tribe shall continue in force, except as such debts may be satisfied or cancelled pursuant to law.

<sup>113</sup> *Corporation of the Northern Cheyenne Tribe of the Tongue River Reservation*, 110 Fed. November 7, 1936.

## SECTION 5. CONTRACTUAL CAPACITY

That an Indian tribe has legal capacity to enter into binding contracts is clearly established.<sup>115</sup> Except where federal or tribal law otherwise provides, such contracts are subject to the same rules of contract law that are applied to contracts of non-Indians.

Thus it is held that contractual relations between a tribe and the United States may confer vested rights upon tribal members, which rights are not subject to invasion by Congress or the states.<sup>116</sup> Likewise, it has been held that a convention or treaty between the Colony of New Jersey and the Delaware Tribe is a contract, constitutionally protected against impairment by the legislature of the State of New Jersey.<sup>117</sup>

In accordance with the usual rule, a tribe is not bound by a contract which is not made by a proper representative or agent of the tribe,<sup>118</sup> although a tribe, like any other polity, may be estopped from denying the authority of its agent by accepting the benefit of services for which he has contracted.<sup>119</sup> Again following the usual rule of contract law, the Supreme Court has held that a tribal representative is not personally liable on a contract signed in the name of the principal, or reasonably to be

construed as executed on behalf of such principal. This rule was laid down in *Parke v. Rose*,<sup>120</sup> a case arising out of the forced migration of Cherokee Indians, in 1838 and 1880, from Georgia to what is now Oklahoma. John Ross, the Principal Chief of the Cherokee Nation, was authorized to contract for the hire of wagons to transport the Cherokee Indians and as much of their belongings as they had managed to save from the whites, who had overrun their lands. One of the wagon owners who entered into such a contract later brought suit against John Ross to recover extra compensation to which he deemed himself entitled. The Supreme Court held that there was no basis for a claim against Principal Chief Ross, since he had entered into the contract on behalf of the tribe. The Court declared, per Grier, J.

Now, it is an established rule of law, that an agent who contracts in the name of his principal is not liable to a suit on such contract, much less a public officer, acting for his government. As regards him the rule is, that he is not responsible on any contract he may make in that capacity, and wherever his contract or engagement is connected with a subject fairly within the scope of his authority, it shall be intended to have been made officially, and in his public character, unless the contrary appears by satisfactory evidence of an absolute and unqualified engagement to be personally liable.

The Cherokees are in many respects a foreign and independent nation. They are governed by their own laws and officials, chosen by themselves. And though in a state of vassalage, and under the guardianship of the United States, this government has delegated no power to the courts of this District to arrest the public representatives or agents of Indian nations, who may be actually within their local jurisdiction, and compel them to pay the debts

<sup>110</sup> Act of June 25, 1934, 48 Stat. 1269, 1270, 48 U. S. C. § 100.  
<sup>111</sup> See 27, 48 Stat. 194, 285, 29 U. S. C. § 477.  
<sup>112</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 29 U. S. C. § 481, *et seq.*  
<sup>113</sup> 95 Mass. 120 (1860). The statute of incorporation was Mass. St. 1892, c. 184.

<sup>114</sup> The argument noted in *United States v. Boyd*, 89 Fed. 547 (C. C. A. 4, 1897), "that as most Indians are the wards of the nation, all contracts made by them are void, unless they are approved by the proper officials of the government," is not supported by any statute or judicial holdings. As to contracts involving tribal property, see Chapters 15, sec. 24.

<sup>115</sup> *Gonzalez v. Frapp*, 224 U. S. 905 (1912); *Board of Commissioners of Tulsa County v. United States*, 94 U. S. 24, 400 (C. C. A. 10, 1938), *aff'd* 19 F. Supp. 685 (C. C. N. D. Okla. 1937).

<sup>116</sup> *New Jersey v. Wilson*, 7 Cranch 164 (1812).

<sup>117</sup> *People of Santa Rosa v. Paul*, 375 U. S. 315 (1927), *rev'd* 12 F. 2d 883 (App. D. C. 1924), *affirmed* in Chapter 20, sec. 6.

<sup>118</sup> *Rollins and Probst v. United States*, 28 C. Cl. 106 (1888).

<sup>119</sup> 11 How. 382 (1880).

of their nation either to an individual of their own nation, or to citizens of the United States. (P. 474.)

The usual rules of conflict law relating to the interpretation of contracts, the validity of releases, the status of funds, and various other matters have been applied in a considerable number of cases involving Indian tribes.<sup>12</sup> Congress, however, may, and frequently does, modify the usual rules of conflict law with respect to particular tribal agreements. Thus, for example, if agreements may be given legal effect, by congressional legislation in a case where such agreements would otherwise be deemed invalid. In the case of *Isaiah Tribe of Indians v. United States*,<sup>13</sup> the Court of Claims noted that while ordinarily the terms of a transfer of land must be spelled out within the four corners of a written instrument, where Congress, in view of the disparity of intelligence and bargaining power involved in an agreement between an Indian tribe and the Federal Government, had expressly authorized the court to pass upon "implied terms or agreements, whether written or oral,"<sup>14</sup> the Court was bound to give legal weight to oral assurances and explanations given to the Indians upon the execution of an agreement for land cession.

Where Congress has fixed the consideration for a tribal agreement releasing claims, the courts will not assume to reconsider the adequacy of the amount so fixed.<sup>15</sup> The courts have likewise refused to review the propriety of congressional legislation which in effect nullifies an acknowledgment of proceeds of a judgment made by an Indian tribe to an attorney.<sup>16</sup>

Certain special applications of general rules of conflict law may be noted in the Indian cases. The usual rule that where disparity of bargaining power is found the contract will be interpreted in favor of the weaker party has particular application to agreements made between an Indian tribe and the United States.<sup>17</sup> This rule, however, has no application to contracts or agreements made between two Indian tribes.<sup>18</sup> The question of the effective date of an agreement between the United States and an Indian tribe arose in the case of *Beau v. United States and Sioux Indians*.<sup>19</sup> It was held that such agreements become effective only upon ratification by Congress, and that such ratification does not relate back to the date of the agreement so as to invalidate acts which amounted to trespass if the agreement (for land cession) was not in effect.

There are few, if any, cases which give careful consideration to the question of what law is applicable to a contract made between an Indian tribe and third parties. In most cases the ordinary rules of the common law with respect to the execution and interpretation of contracts have been applied, by common consent of the parties. Thus tribal law is applicable to a contract by which one tribe was incorporated into another was the holding in the case of *Delaware Indians v. Cherokee Nation*,<sup>20</sup> in which the court declared:

The common law did not prevail in the Cherokee country, \* \* \* The agreement must be construed with

reference to the constitution and laws of the Cherokee Nation. (P. 273.)

It is by no means clear, however, that this rule would apply to an agreement between a tribe and the United States.

The question of whether the state law of contract applies to a contract made by the United States, on behalf of an Indian tribe, with a third party was expressly left open in the case of *Kusy v. United States*,<sup>21</sup> in which the Supreme Court said:

Whether the state statute for penalties and liquidated damages could effect a contract made by the United States on behalf of Indian wards need not be considered. (P. 127.)

General doctrines of conflict of laws would justify the application of the law of the forum where the tribal law that is applicable is not shown. As was said by Chief Justice, in *Dutton v. Gibson*:<sup>22</sup>

It is very well settled that if it will not be presumed that the English common law is in force in any State not so settled by English courts. (*Whitford v. Railroad Co.* 23 N. Y. 463; *Savage v. D'Neil* 11 N. Y. 298; *Plato v. Malhot*, 12 Mo. 322; *Manley v. Lash*, 61 Cal. 623), and it has been expressly decided that it will not be presumed to be in force in the Creek nation. (*Dur Val v. Marshall*, 40 Ark. 240) or in the Choctaw Territory. (*Payatt v. Powell* 9 C. A. 307, 51 Fed. Rep. 671.)

It, therefore, the court has no means of ascertaining what the law or custom of the Creek nation is on this question it should have applied the law of the forum.

The interpretation of treaties' contents in connection with claims against the United States has been a source of considerable litigation.<sup>23</sup> No principle peculiar to Indian law appears to be involved in these cases.

The foregoing discussion of the validity and interpretation of contracts made by an Indian tribe assumes that the contract in question is not one forbidden by Federal law. It must be recognized, however, that the Federal Government has seriously curtailed the contractual powers of an Indian tribe. Those restrictions which relate particularly to the disposition of real property will be considered in a subsequent chapter dealing with tribal property. A notable restriction upon the scope of tribal contracts was imposed by the Act of March 3, 1871,<sup>24</sup> as amended by the Act of May 31, 1872.<sup>25</sup> These provisions were embodied in the Revised Statutes as sections 2104 to 2106, and are now embodied in title 25 of the United States Code as sections 81 to 84. Section 81 contains this important provision:

No agreement shall be made by any person with any tribe of Indians, or individual Indians not citizens of the United States, for the payment or delivery of any money or other thing of value, in present or in prospective, or for the granting or purporting any privilege to him, or any other person in consideration of services for said Indians relative to their lands, or to any claims growing out of, or in reference to, mortgages, usufructs, or other money, claims, demands, or thing, under laws or treaties with the United States, or official acts of any officers, agents, or in any way connected with or flowing from the United States, unless such contract or agreement be executed and approved as follows:

The section then lists six distinct requirements as to form and manner of execution, the most important of which is the re-

<sup>12</sup> *Klamath and Modoc Tribes v. United States*, 296 U. S. 244 (1935), aff'd 81 C. Cl. 78 (1936), *Kusy v. United States* 200 U. S. 423 (1922), aff'd 272 Fed. 281 (C. C. A. 9, 1940), *Sioux Tribe of Indians v. United States* 34 C. Cls. 16 (1930), cert. den. 302 U. S. 740, *Grove v. Minnesota Tribe of Indians*, 40 C. Cls. 88 (1911), aff'd 238 U. S. 658 (1914), *Pelt v. Choctaw Nation and United States* 45 C. Cls. 171 (1910).

<sup>13</sup> 68 C. Cls. 585 (1923).

<sup>14</sup> Act of April 22, 1930, 41 Stat. 584, amended Joint Resolution of January 11, 1929, 46 Stat. 1075 (Iowa).

<sup>15</sup> *Klamath Indians v. United States*, 200 U. S. 244 (1919).

<sup>16</sup> *Kendall v. United States* 1 C. Cls. 281 (1860), aff'd 7 Wall. 115 (1860).

<sup>17</sup> *Isaiah Tribe of Indians v. United States*, 68 C. Cls. 585 (1923).

<sup>18</sup> *De Delawares v. Cherokee Nation*, 88 C. Cls. 284, 249-250 (1908), aff'd 198 U. S. 137 (1904), *Choctaw Nation v. United States and Chickasaw Nation* 68 C. Cls. 160 (1906), cert. den. 287 U. S. 663.

<sup>19</sup> 48 C. Cls. 51 (1907).

<sup>20</sup> 88 C. Cls. 284 (1908).

<sup>21</sup> 260 U. S. 423 (1922), aff'd 278 Fed. 791 (C. C. A. 9, 1931).

<sup>22</sup> 108 Fed. 445 (C. C. A. 8, 1908).

<sup>23</sup> *Garland, Briss v. Choctaw Nation*, 250 U. S. 449 (1914), *see* 272 U. S. 738 (1927), *Navajo Cherokees v. United States*, 225 U. S. 572 (1912), *Ogawa v. Dudley*, 217 U. S. 488 (1910), *Guthrie v. McKee*, 179 U. S. 508 (1907), *In re Shoshone*, 148 U. S. 226 (1895), and *see* *Contract with the Osage Nation of Indians*, 17 Op. A. G. 445 (1882).

<sup>24</sup> *Osage v. Goudry*, 54 App. D. C. 608 (1910), *Eastern Cherokees v. Crawford*, 47 Fed. 661 (C. W. D. Ark. 1801), *Eastern Cherokees v. United States*, 220 U. S. 772 (1912).

<sup>25</sup> 16 Stat. 564, 570.

<sup>26</sup> 17 Stat. 126.

agreement that such an agreement must "be executed before a judge of a court of record, and with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior and the Commissioner of Indian Affairs indorsed upon it."

The section further provides that, "all contracts or agreements made in violation of this section shall be null and void . . . and establishes a special procedure for suit to recover money improperly paid out by or on behalf of an Indian tribe under a prohibited contract."

Section 82 provides for departmental supervision of payments made "to any agent or attorney" under such contract or agreement. Section 83 provides for the prosecution of persons receiving money contrary to the provisions of sections 81 and 82, and provides that any district attorney who fails to prosecute such a case upon application shall be removed from office and that any person in the employ of the United States who shall assist in the making of such a contract shall be "dismissed from the service of the United States, and be forever disqualified from holding any office of profit or trust under the same."

Section 84 provides that no assignment of any contract entered by section 81 shall be valid unless approved by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs and the Secretary of the Interior.

A specific modification of the foregoing statutory provisions was made by the Act of June 26, 1936,<sup>12</sup> which applied only to contracts made and approved prior to that date and declared that as to such contracts the requirement of the original statute that the contract "have a fixed limited time to run, which shall be distinctly stated" and that the contract shall fix "the amount or rate per centum of the fee" should be considered satisfied by attorneys' contracts "in the prosecution of claims against the United States, which provide that such contracts or agreements shall run for a period of years therein specified, and is long thereafter it may be required to complete the business therein provided for, or words of like import, or which provide that compensation for services rendered shall be on a quantum meruit basis not to exceed a specified percentage . . ."

In the case of *McIlwain v. Choctaw Nation*,<sup>13</sup> the Court of Claims decided

Section 2108, Revised Statutes, is a most stringent and protective enactment. The section points out in precise terms the method of contracting with Indian tribes.

"If this method is not followed, any proceeding, contract or deal is absolutely void. Any money paid upon contracts not executed according to its terms and approved by the Secretary of the Interior and Commissioner of Indian Affairs may be recovered back by the Indians (P. 495)."

The scope of the prohibitions imposed by the statutes in question was given a useful consideration in two important Supreme Court cases. In the case of *Green v. Menominee Tribe*<sup>14</sup> it was held that this statute rendered invalid a contract between an Indian tribe and a licensed trader whereby the tribe undertook to compensate the trader for his services in making lumber equipment available to individual members of the tribe. The fact that a representative of the Interior Department participated in the making of the contract and was to participate in its performance was held not to remove the agreement from the prohibitions of the statute.

In *Pueblo of Santa Rosa v. Fall*<sup>15</sup> the prohibitory statute was held applicable to an alleged contract by which an attorney sought to prosecute certain claims on behalf of an alleged Indian pueblo of Arizona.

While the foregoing cases leave some doubt as to the exact scope of the statute, it is at least clear that the statute applies only to contracts with Indians relative to their lands, or to any claims, and does not apply to matters not comprised within these two categories.

Some light is thrown upon the intended scope of the statute by the extensive report of the House Committee on Indian Affairs on the hands which the statute was designed to circumvent, and the expected consequences of the legislation. In general the legislation was directed against the "godless hordes of those lawless people," the attorneys and claim agents.<sup>16</sup>

The statutory restrictions upon tribal contracts have been modified by sections 10 and 17 of the Act of June 18, 1931.<sup>17</sup> By the former section each tribe adopting a constitution under this act became entitled to employ legal counsel, the choice of counsel and the fixing of fees to be subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior. The effect of this provision was thus stated in a memorandum of the Solicitor for the Interior Department:<sup>18</sup>

The Minnesota Chippewa Tribe has organized and adopted a constitution and bylaws pursuant to section 16 of the Indian Reorganization Act of June 18, 1934 (49 Stat. 881). That section declares among other things, that such an organized tribe shall have the power to employ legal counsel, the choice of counsel to be subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior. Your proposed letter raises the question of whether the provision in section 16 just quoted supercedes as to contracts to which section 81, Title 25, U. S. C., otherwise would be applicable, the specific requirements set forth in said section 81. Section 81 is confined to a certain class of contracts, that is contracts for services relating to Indian lands, or to any claims growing out of or in reference to annuities, installments or other monies, claims, demands, or things under the laws or treaties with the United States, or official acts of any official thereof, or in any way connected with or due from the United States. Contracts not calling for the performance of legal services connected with any of the matters or things mentioned in section 81 obviously are controlled by section 16 of the Reorganization Act and may be entered into without regard to the requirements of section 81.

The Minnesota Chippewa contract provides for the performance of legal services in relation to claims of the tribe against the United States Government. This is the sort of contract to which section 81 applies, and the requirements of that section should be observed unless they are superceded by section 16 of the Reorganization Act. To the extent of any conflict or inconsistency, it is clear that section 16 is controlling and supercedes the prior law. Requirements of the prior law not directly inconsistent or conflicting may also be superceded as to the particular kind of contract to which section 16 applies, if such was the intent of Congress. A consideration of the general background and purpose of the Indian Reorganization Act leaves no doubt that the purpose of the statutory provision in question was to increase the scope of responsibility and discretion afforded the tribe in its dealings with attorneys. Earlier drafts of legislation contained provisions limiting the fees that might be charged. After considerable discussion before the Senate Committee (Hearings before the Committee on Indian Affairs, United States Senate, 76th Congress, 2d session, S. 2765 and S. 8045, part 2, pages 244-247), it was decided that the Secretary of the Interior should have the sole power to approve or veto the choice of counsel. This discussion would have been futile and the statutory provision would have been meaningless, if the intention had

<sup>12</sup> 49 Stat. 1964, 25 U. S. C. § 81a.

<sup>13</sup> 62 C. Cls. 452 (1928), cert. den. 275 U. S. 524 (1927).

<sup>14</sup> 283 U. S. 528 (1931), 47 C. Cls. 281 (1912).

<sup>15</sup> 278 U. S. 312 (1927), 107 C. Cls. 12 P. 2d 832 (App. D. C. 1926).

287785-41—30

<sup>16</sup> Investigation of Indian Frauds, H. Rept. No. 98, 42nd Cong., 8d sess., March 8, 1873, especially pp. 4-7.

<sup>17</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 987-988, 25 U. S. C. 476, 477.

<sup>18</sup> Memo. Sol. I. D. January 24, 1931. Also see 25 C. F. R. 14-1-14-17, relative to the recognition of attorneys and agents to represent claimants of organized and unorganized tribes, or individual claimants, before the Indian Bureau and the Department of the Interior and 15-1-15-25, relative to attorney contracts with Indian tribes.

been to make those contracts subject to the provisions of section 51, Title 25 of the Code.

I am inclined to the view that invalid is contracts for the employment of legal counsel are concerned. Congress intended to empower the organized tribe to make such contracts, subject only to the limitations imposed by section 51 of the Reorganization Act. The matter is by no means free from difficulty, however, and it may be that the courts, when called upon to consider the question, will hold that the two statutes should be treated as one and that the requirements of both in the absence of conflict or inconsistency must be observed. In this situation it is appreciated that attorneys may desire for their own protection to have the contract executed in conformity with the requirements of both statutes. Such appears to be the position of the attorneys seeking enforcement by the Minnesota Chippewa Tribe. Such a position is not unreasonable and I recommend that no objection be raised to approval of this or any other contract so executed.

Constitutions of Indian tribes adopted pursuant to the Act of June 18, 1934, generally contain some such provision as the following, in line with the statutory requirement on the point.<sup>14</sup>

#### ARTICLE V POWERS OF THE COMMUNITY COUNCIL

Section 3 *Enumerated powers*—The council of the Fort Belknap Community shall have the following powers, the exercise of which shall be subject to popular referendum as provided hereafter:

(b) To employ legal counsel for the protection and advancement of the rights of the community and its members, the choice of counsel and fixing of fees to be subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior.

Agit from contracts involving a disposition of tribal property, the contracts made by chartered tribes are subject to the limitations imposed by the corporate charter. Typical of such limit provisions are the following, taken from the charter of the Covelio Indian Community of the Round Valley Indian Reservation, California.<sup>15</sup>

5 The Covelio Indian Community, subject to any restrictions contained in the Constitution and laws of the United States, or in the Constitution and Bylaws of the Covelio Indian Community, shall have the following corporate powers:

(d) To borrow money from the Indian Credit Fund in accordance with the terms of section 10 of the Act of June 18, 1934 (48 Stat. 984), or from any other governmental agency, or from any member or association of members of the Covelio Indian Community, and to use such funds directly for productive Community enterprise, or to loan money thus borrowed to individual members, or associations of members of the Community. *Provided*, That the amount of indebtedness to which the Covelio Indian Community may subject itself, aside from loans from the Indian Credit Fund, shall not exceed \$10,000 except with the express approval of the Secretary of the Interior.

(e) To engage in any business that will further the economic well being of the members of the Covelio Indian Community, or to undertake any activity of any nature whatsoever, not inconsistent with law or with any provisions of this Charter.

(f) To make and perform contracts and agreements of every description, not inconsistent with law or any provisions of this Charter, with any person, partnership, association, or corporation, with any

municipality or any county, or with the United States or the State of California, including agreements with the State of California for the rendition of public services. *Provided*, That any contract involving payment of money by the corporation in excess of \$2,000 in any one fiscal year other than a contract for the use of the revolving loan fund established under section 10 of the Act of June 18, 1934 (48 Stat. 984), shall be subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior or his duly authorized representative.

(g) To pledge or assign credits or future Community income due or to be received by the Community under any notes, leases, or other contracts, whether or not such notes, leases, or contracts are in existence at the time, or from any source. *Provided*, That such agreements of pledge or assignment, except to the Federal Government, shall not extend more than ten years from the date of execution and shall not cover more than one half of the net Community income in any one year. *And provided further*, That any such agreement shall be subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior or his duly authorized representative.

(h) To deposit corporate funds from whatever source derived, in any national or state bank to the extent that such funds are insured by the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation, or secured by a surety bond, or other security, approved by the Secretary of the Interior, or to deposit such funds in the Postal Savings Bank or with a bonded disbursing officer of the United States to the credit of the Covelio Indian Community.

The supervisory provisions of sections 5 (d), 5 (e), 5 (f), 5 (g), and 5 (h), above set forth, are subject to termination under section 6 of the corporate charter, which reads:

6 Upon the request of the Covelio Indian Community Council for the termination of any supervisory powers reserved to the Secretary of the Interior under sections 5 (b), 5 (c), 5 (d), 5 (f), 5 (g), 5 (h), and section 8 of this Charter, the Secretary of the Interior, if he shall approve such request, shall thereupon submit the question of such termination to the Covelio Indian Community for a referendum vote. The termination shall be effective upon ratification by a majority vote at an election in which at least 50 per cent of the adult members of the Covelio Indian Community residing on the reservation shall vote. If at any time after ten years from the effective date of this Charter, such request shall be made and the Secretary shall disapprove such request or fail to approve or disapprove it within 90 days after its receipt, the question of the termination of any supervisory powers may then be submitted by the Secretary of the Interior or by the Community Council to popular referendum of the adult members of the Covelio Indian Community actually living within the reservation and if the termination is approved by two-thirds of the eligible voters, it shall be effective.

By section 17 of the act quoted, each tribe receiving a charter of incorporation might be empowered thereby

to purchase, take by gift, or bequest, or otherwise, own, hold, manage, operate, and dispose of property of every description, real and personal, \* \* \* and such further powers as may be incidental to the conduct of corporate business, not inconsistent with law, but no authority shall be granted to sell, mortgage, or lease for a period exceeding ten years any of the land included in the limits of the reservation.

This provision has been construed as granting to the incorporated Indian tribes very extensive powers to contract with respect to all matters of tribal concern, including tribal property. The extent to which this section legalized agreements with respect to tribal property which were formerly prohibited is a matter which must be reserved for further discussion in connection with our analysis of tribal property rights.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>14</sup> Constitution of the Fort Belknap Community, approved December 18, 1938.

<sup>15</sup> Ratified November 6, 1937. Under the terms of this charter, the incorporated tribe handled all sales of Indian arts and crafts work at the San Francisco Fair in 1939.

<sup>16</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 22.

## SECTION 6 CAPACITY TO SUE

That Indian tribes may, under certain circumstances, sue and be sued is clear from the large number of such suits which are analyzed in this chapter and other chapters of this work. Since, however, nearly all such suits have been expressly authorized by general or special statutes, the question of whether an Indian tribe may sue or be sued in the absence of such express statutory authorization is more difficult to answer.

## A STATUTES AUTHORIZING SUITS BY TRIBES

Statutes authorizing suits by Indian tribes include: (a) jurisdictional acts authorizing suits against the United States, and sometimes against other tribes, in the Court of Claims, (b) statutes authorizing suits against third parties to determine questions of ownership, and (c) statutes authorizing suits against third parties to determine the measure of compensation due from third parties for property taken.

(a) Within the scope of this chapter it is not possible to include more than a simple reference to statutes conferring jurisdiction upon the Court of Claims to hear tribal claims.<sup>100</sup> Cases in which these claims are adjudicated<sup>101</sup> and statutes conferring jurisdiction.<sup>102</sup>

The language of special jurisdictional acts varies so fundamentally from act to act that it is impossible to list any common principles applicable to all Indian claims cases and not applicable to other cases. There is certain maximum which frequently occurs in these cases, such as the maximum that acts authorizing suit on claims against the Government are to be narrowly construed,<sup>103</sup> that such acts will ordinarily be construed as granting a forum rather than determining liability, and that such acts will not be construed, in the absence of clear language to the contrary, as empowering a court to consider the justice or injustice of law, treaty, or agreement.<sup>104</sup> It may be doubted, however, whether these maxims show more than verbal uniformities, and they are certainly of little help in predicting the outcome of cases. Indian claims cases like other tribal cases involve questions with respect to tribal property rights, tribal powers, the powers of the Federal Government, and similar questions of substantive law, elsewhere considered,<sup>105</sup> and which have a greater bearing upon the actual decisions in claims cases than any rules which might be derived from considerations limited purely to these cases.

(b) Various statutes provide for suits by Indian tribes against third parties to determine land ownership. Perhaps the most important of these statutes is the Public Lands Act,<sup>106</sup> which is discussed elsewhere.<sup>107</sup>

(c) Tribal capacity to sue is implied in the various right-of-way statutes which permit appeals from administrative decisions on the amount of damages due for tribal property taken or damaged.<sup>108</sup>

(d) As we have already noted, capacity to sue is not conferred by Article III, section 2, of the Federal Constitution,

providing for "cases of jurisdiction over controversies between a state . . . and foreign states." The informed opinion of Chief Justice Marshall established the proposition, which has not since been questioned by any federal court, that an Indian tribe is not a foreign state within the meaning of this provision.<sup>109</sup>

## B STATUTES AUTHORIZING SUITS AGAINST TRIBES

There are three or four various statutes allowing suits by Indian tribes, so there is a number of statutes which authorize suits against Indian tribes.

We have already noted and need not here reconsider, the various deposition statutes which authorized suits against Indian tribes, and allowed in effect the execution of judgment upon the tribal fund of the tribe in the United States Treasury, subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>110</sup>

Congress has from time to time authorized various other suits against Indian tribes by private citizens. Thus, for example, the Act of May 29, 1908,<sup>111</sup> confers jurisdiction upon the Court of Claims to adjudicate a suit by designated Indians against the Menominee tribe and members thereof, and requires that the Secretary of the Interior

shall thereupon in case judgments be against the said Menominee tribe of Indians is a tribe, direct the payment of said judgments out of any funds in the Treasury of the United States to the credit of said tribe, and when in case judgments be against individual members of said Menominee tribe of Indians, shall thereupon the disbursement officers in charge of said General Land Office, pay from any amounts due to which may become due said Indians as an individual or as the head of a family from the United States or from the heirs of said Indian is an individual or as the head of a family any distribution of tribal funds deposited in the Treasury of the United States, the amounts of such judgments to the claimants in whose favor such judgments have been rendered.

## C JURISTIC CAPACITY IN THE ABSENCE OF SPECIFIC STATUTES

There remains the question of whether suit may be brought by or against an Indian tribe where Congress is silent.

The latter portion of this question is easier to answer than the former. We have noted that in Indian tribe is a municipality.<sup>112</sup> As such it would appear to be exempt from suit unless it is consented thereto or been subjected thereto by a superior power.

The general attitude of Congress and the courts towards suits against Indian tribes is clarified in an opinion of Caldwell, J., in *Thibault v. Choctaw Tribe of Indians*,<sup>113</sup> where it was held that a suit against an Indian tribe could not be maintained in the absence of clear congressional authorization.

The court declared:

It may be conceded that it would be competent for Congress to authorize suit to be brought against the Choctaw Nation upon any and all the causes of action

<sup>100</sup> See Chapter 19, note 3.

<sup>101</sup> See Chapter 19, note 4.

<sup>102</sup> Joint Resolution of June 19, 1902, 32 Stat. 714-715 (Title), Act of February 9, 1925 (4 Stat. 920) (Commerce). See *Loyal Creek Claim—Attorneys Fees*, 24 Op. A. G. 621 (1909).

<sup>103</sup> *Choctaw and Chickasaw Nations v. United States*, 75 C. Cls. 401 (1902).

<sup>104</sup> *Gile and Minnesota Indians v. United States*, 62 C. Cls. 424 (1917).

<sup>105</sup> See, particularly, Chapter 5 and 15.

<sup>106</sup> Act of June 7, 1924, 43 Stat. 616-617, 618, construed in *Pueblo de Taos v. Guadalupe*, 90 F. 2d 721 (C. C. A. 10, 1931), *Pueblo of Pecos v. Abeyta*, 90 F. 2d 112 (C. C. A. 10, 1931).

<sup>107</sup> See Chapter 20, note 4.

<sup>108</sup> *Of Choctaw Nation v. Southern Kansas Ry. Co.*, 185 U. S. 641 (1899).

<sup>109</sup> *Choctaw Nation v. United States*, 75 F. 1 (1851). See note 9, supra.

<sup>110</sup> See notes 1 and 2, supra. Suits for depositions were "foreign suits" unless brought within 1 years of the enactment of the Indian Deposition Act of March 3, 1891. *United States and Kiowa Indians v. Hartsford*, 195 U. S. 160 (1904).

<sup>111</sup> 35 Stat. 141.

<sup>112</sup> See 2. The same act authorizes suits in the Court of Claims against the Choctaw Nation (see 5 17 Stat. 415) against the Creek Nation (see 40 73 Stat. 477), and against the Mississippi Choctaw (see 27, 15 Stat. 427).

<sup>113</sup> See note 3, supra.

<sup>114</sup> 60 F. 2d 474 (C. C. A. 8, 1905).

in any conflict it might designate. Acts of congress have been passed, specially conferring on the courts jurisdiction over all controversies arising between the railroad companies authorized to construct their roads through the Indian Territory and the Choctaw Nation and the other nations and tribes of Indian owning lands in the Indian Territory through which the railroads might be constructed. Other acts have been passed authorizing suits to be brought by or against these Indian Nations in the Indian Territory to settle controversies between them and the United States and between themselves.

Among such acts are the following: "An act for the ascertainment of amount due the Choctaw Nation" 21 Stat 701 Act of July 4, 1864 (23 Stat 74), granting the right of way through the Indian Territory to the Southern Kansas Railway Company. An act giving the right of way through Indian Territory to Kansas & Arkansas Valley Railway Company, 21 Stat 73. An act granting the right of way to the Denton & Wichita Valley Railway Company through the Indian Territory, Id. 117. An act granting the right of way through the Indian Territory to the Kansas City, Ft Scott & Gulf Railway Company, Id. 124. An act granting the right of way through Indian Territory to Ft Worth & Denver City Railway Company, Id. 419. An act granting the right of way through Indian Territory to the Chicago Kansas & Nebraska Railway Company, Id. 440. An act granting right of way through the Indian Territory to the Choctaw Coal & Iron Company, 25 Stat 15. An act granting right of way to the Ft Smith & Ft Paul Railway Company through the Indian Territory, Id. 102. An act granting the right of way to Kansas City & Pacific Railway Company through the Indian Territory, Id. 140. An act granting the right of way to Ft Smith, Choctaw & Little Rock Railway Company through the Indian Territory, Id. 205. An act granting right of way to Ft Smith, Paris & Dismal Railway Company through Indian Territory, Id. 749. An act authorizing the Kansas & Arkansas Valley Railway Company to construct an additional railroad through the Indian Territory, 21 Stat 789.

The constitutional competency of congress to pass such acts has never been questioned, but no court has ever presumed to take jurisdiction of a cause against any of the five civilized Nations in the Indian Territory in the absence of an act of congress expressly conferring the jurisdiction in the particular case. (Pp 373-374.)

\* \* \* Being a domestic and dependent state, the United States may authorize suit to be brought against it. But, for obvious reasons, this power has been sparingly exercised. It has been the settled policy of the United States not to authorize suits except in a few cases, where the subject matter of the controversy was particularly specified, and was of such a nature that the public interests, as well as the interests of the Nation, seemed to require the exercise of the jurisdiction. It has been the policy of the United States to place and maintain the Choctaw Nation and the other civilized Indian Nations in the Indian Territory, so far as relates to suits against them, on the plane of independent states. A state, without its consent, cannot be sued by an individual. "It is a well established principle of jurisprudence in all civilized nations that the sovereign cannot be sued in its own courts or any other without its consent and permission but if it thinks proper, waive this privilege and permit itself to be made a defendant in a suit by an individual or by another state." *Beers v Arkansas*, 20 How 527. The United States has waived its privilege in this regard, and allowed suits to be brought against it in a few specified cases. Some of the states of the Union have at times claimed no immunity from suits, but experience soon demonstrated this to be an unwise and extremely injurious policy, and most, if not all, of the states after a brief experience, abandoned it, and refused to submit to suits, and to conserve process of judicial tribunals. When the Supreme Court of the United States in *Cherokee v Georgia* 2 Dall 410, decided that under the constitution that court had original jurisdiction of a suit by a citizen of one state against another state, the eleventh amendment to the constitution was subsequently adopted, taking away this jurisdiction. Since the adoption of this amendment, the contract of a state "is

substantially without sanction, except that which arises out of the honor and good faith of the state itself, and these are not subject to coercion." *Int'l Am'n*, 123 U S 443, 705, 8 Sup Ct 104. One claiming to be creditor of a state is required to the justice of its legislature. It has been the settled policy of congress not to authorize suits, generally, against these Indian Nations, or subject them to suits upon contracts or other causes of action at the instance of private parties. In respect to their liability to be sued by individuals, except in the few cases we have mentioned, they have been placed by the United States, substantially, on the plane occupied by the states under the eleventh amendment to the constitution. The civilized Nations in the Indian Territory are probably better guarded against oppression from this source than the states themselves, for the states may consent to be sued, but the United States has never given its permission that these Indian Nations might be sued generally, even with their consent. As such is the Choctaw Nation is said to be in funds and money it would soon be impoverished if it was subject to the jurisdiction of the courts, and required to respond to all the demands which private parties chose to prefer against it. The intention of congress to confer such a jurisdiction upon any court would have to be expressed in plain and unambiguous terms. (Pp 375-376.)

There is at least language supporting the rule that a tribe cannot be sued without its consent, in the Supreme Court opinion in *Tanner v United States*.<sup>120</sup> And in the case of *United States v F S Fidelity & Guar Co.*<sup>121</sup> The Circuit Court of Appeals for the Tenth Circuit declared, citing the two cases above noted:

\* \* \* the Indian tribes, like the United States, are sovereign immune from civil suit except when expressly authorized. (P 810)

In line with the policy set forth in the *Cherokee* case, it has been held that where the tribe itself is not subject to suit, tribal officers cannot be sued on the basis of tribal obligations.<sup>122</sup>

Although a tribe, as a municipality, is not subject to suit without its consent, it may be argued that a tribe has legal capacity to consent to such a suit. The power to consent to such suit must be regarded as cognate with the power to bring suit.

Some support for the view that an Indian tribe is capable of appearing in litigation as a plaintiff or voluntary defendant is found in the statement of the Supreme Court in *United States v Condalia*.<sup>123</sup>

It was settled in *Lane v Pueblo of Santa Rosa*, 210 U S 110, that under territorial laws enacted with congressional sanction each pueblo in New Mexico—among the Indians comprising the community—became a juristic person and enabled to sue and defend in respect of its lands. (Pp 442-443.)

This statement, standing by itself, could be given a limited scope on the ground that the Pueblos are statutory corporations. The fact remains, however, that the Supreme Court has enfolded suits in which Indian tribes were parties litigant, without any question of legal capacity being raised. An outstanding case in point is the case of *Cherokee Nation v Hitchcock*.<sup>124</sup> This was a suit brought by an Indian tribe against the Secretary of the Interior. Although judgment was rendered for the defendant, no question was raised, apparently, as to the capacity of the principal plaintiff (individual members were joined as parties plaintiff) to bring the suit.

The decision of the Supreme Court in the *Coronado* case,<sup>125</sup> holding labor unions suable in view of the legislative recognition

<sup>120</sup> 248 U S 954 (1918)

<sup>121</sup> 100 F 2d 804 (C C A 10 1939)

<sup>122</sup> *Leona v Murphy*, 135 F.2d 404 (C C A 8, 1938) (suit by attorney on tribal attorney's contract)

<sup>123</sup> 271 U S 422 (1926)

<sup>124</sup> 187 U S 294 (1902)

<sup>125</sup> *United Mine Workers of America v Coronado Coal Co.*, 259 U S 844 (1924). *See* *F v Cohen Transportation Co. v Monmouth and the Punctuated Approach*, 88 Cal L Rev 800, 813 (1908)





similar situation the Supreme Court of Wisconsin in *State v. Johnson*, 249 N. W. 254, 255 said:

"While the treaty conferred no and not specifically reserved to the Indians such hunting and fishing rights as they had, therefore, we think it is reasonable to say that there is no necessity for specially mentioning such hunting and fishing rights with respect to the lands reserved to them. At the time the treaty of 1773 was entered into there was no reservation of land upon the hunting rights of the Indians on the lands retained by them. The treaty was not a grant of rights to the Indians, but a grant of rights from the United States to the Indians of those not granted. *United States v. Winans*, 196 U. S. 471, 25 S. Ct. 662, 664, 19 L. Ed. 1089. We entertain no doubt that the rights of the Indians to hunt and fish upon their own lands continue."

The court further recommended that as to unoccupied lands outside the reservation, the fish and game laws of the State of Wisconsin were without force and effect.

By tradition and habit the Indians as a people hunters and fishermen depending largely upon these pursuits for their livelihood. Their ancient and immemorial right to follow these pursuits on the lands and in the waters of their reservation is universally recognized. The Indians of the Red Lake Reservation appear to have resented and exercised an exclusive right of fishing in the waters of Upper and Lower Red Lakes from the beginning, subject only to Federal control and regulation. The right of the Indians to do so has not heretofore been disputed by the State of Minnesota but has been recognized and acquiesced in.

Cheminuques somewhat similar to those, complied with the rule of liberal construction uniformly invoked in determining the rights of Indians when cited by the Supreme Court of the United States in support of its conclusion that the Metlakatla Indians had an exclusive right to fish in the waters adjacent to Alaska Islands in Alaska notwithstanding the fact that the Act of Congress setting aside the Indians' reservation for the Indians made no mention of the surrounding waters or the fishing rights of the Indians thereon. *U. S. v. Pacific Fisheries*, 5 *United States*, 248 U. S. 88.

In *United States v. Shavon* (27 Federal Cases Case No. 10113), the court gave consideration to the rights of the Indians of the Pyramid Lake Indian Reservation in Nevada to fish in the waters of a lake inside the bounds of their reservation and held:

"The president has set apart the reservation for the use of the Pth Utes and other Indians residing thereon. He has done this by authority of law. We know that the lake was included in the reservation, that it might be a fishing ground for the Indians. The lines of the reservation have been drawn around it for the purpose of excluding white people from fishing there except by proper authority. It is plain that nothing of value to the Indians will be left on their reservation if all the whites who choose may resort there to fish. In our judgment, those who thus encroach on the reservation and fishing ground violate the order setting it apart for the use of the Indians, and consequently do so contrary to law."

In an opinion dated May 14, 1928 (122378), the Solicitor in this Department advised that the State of Washington was without right to regulate or control the use of boats on a navigable body of water within the Quinalt Reservation in this State. The Solicitor said, and his remarks apply with equal force here:

"Manifestly unless the Indians of the Quinalt Reservation are protected in the exclusive use and occupancy of their reservation including the water therein, not only is it untenable, but their rights may become subject to serious interference, if not jeopardy, by outsiders. If we admit the right of the State to invade the reservation for the purpose of regulating or controlling the use of boats on the Quinalt or any other body of a navigable water therein, it

would be tantamount to recognizing the right of the State to regulate other activities there, including fishing. This we cannot afford to do."

Minnesota was admitted into the Union in 1858. The Indian title, as subsequently recognized by treaty and Act of Congress, then extended to all of the lands surrounding Upper and Lower Red Lakes. The Indian title was that of occupancy only, the ultimate fee being in the United States, but the right of occupancy extended to and included the right to fish in the waters of the Lakes. *United States v. Winans*, supra. The rights insofar as the diminished reservation is concerned have never been surrendered or relinquished by the Indians nor have they been taken away by any Act of Congress of which I am aware. In these circumstances, it is not unreasonable to hold that the State upon its admission into the Union took title to the submerged lands subject to the occupancy rights of the Indians in virtue of which the Indians possess an exclusive right of fishing in the waters of the Lakes. *Becker v. Hethcote*, supra. *United States v. Thomas*, supra. If this be the correct view, and I think it is, the exclusive right of the Indians of the right of fishing is subject to Federal and not State regulation and control. *United States v. Kagame*, 128 U. S. 377; *In re Becker*, 109 Fed. 191; *People v. Mahon*, 111 Fed. 241; *In re Mahon*, 123 Fed. 246; *United States v. Hamilton*, 273 Fed. 685; *Stacy v. Campbell*, 54 Minn. 754, 53 N. W. 753.

In expressing the foregoing view, I am mindful of the statement of the Supreme Court in *United States v. Holt Bank*, supra, that while the Indians of the Red Lake Reservation were to have access to the navigable waters thereon and were to be entitled to use them in accustomed ways, "the water common rights vested to all, whether Indian or white." But when this statement is read, as it should be, in the light of the decisions cited in its support it becomes apparent that the court had in mind rights of navigation of a public nature and not private rights of ownership such as the Indian right of fishing. The latter right is not involved and was neither considered nor discussed.

Accordingly, since the Indians' exclusive rights to fish in the waters of Lower Red Lake and that part of Upper Red Lake inside the Indian reservation is supported by all of the decided cases touching on the subject, it is my opinion that continued paramount title recognition of such rights is exclusive in the Indians is fully justified.

Such rights of hunting and fishing in the Indian tribes may enjoy the subject in the first instance to federal regulation. Thus it has been held that Congress may restrict tribal rights by conferring on a state powers inconsistent with such rights through an enabling act.

Likewise, the United States may limit Indian hunting and fishing rights by international treaty.<sup>14</sup> The extent and constitutional limits of such regulatory powers of State and Federal Governments are questions more fully considered in other chapters of this volume.<sup>15</sup> Within the limits suggested tribal rights of hunting and fishing have received judicial recognition and protection against state and private interference<sup>16</sup> and even against interference by federal administrative officials.<sup>17</sup>

<sup>14</sup> *Ward v. Love*, 161 U. S. 364 (1896). *But cf. Nesbit Bros. Co. v. United States*, 219 U. S. 194 (1919).

<sup>15</sup> See Op. Sol. I. D. M27090 June 15, 1954 54 I. D. 837 (holding Migration and Treaty Act of July 3, 1918 40 Stat. 795 applicable to Bannock Indian Reservation).

<sup>16</sup> See Chapters 5 & 6.

<sup>17</sup> *Nesbit Bros. Co. v. United States*, 219 U. S. 194 (1919). *United States v. Winans*, 196 U. S. 471. *In re Becker*, 109 Fed. 191, 120 Fed. 246 (1901) and see *Malheur v. United States*, 281 U. S. 754, 756 (1930). *U. S. v. The Ship John*, 191 U. S. 101, 410 (1904). *Spaulding v. United States*, 160 U. S. 81 (1896). *Trotter v. United States*, 14 F. 2d 573, 512 S.W.2d 100 (1946).

<sup>18</sup> *Malheur v. United States*, 5 F. 2d 271 (D. C. W. D. Wash. 1923), disapproved in *Charter* 9 see 5C.

## CHAPTER 15

# TRIBAL PROPERTY

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
<i>Section 1 Definition of tribal property</i> .....	287	<i>Section 12 The territorial extent of Indian reservations</i> .....	310
<i>A Tribal ownership and tenancy in common</i> .....	288	<i>Section 13 The temporal extent of Indian titles</i> .....	311
<i>B Tribal ownership and individual occupancy</i> .....	288	<i>Section 14 Subsurface rights</i> .....	312
<i>C Tribal lands and public lands of the United States</i> .....	289	<i>Section 15 Tribal timber</i> .....	313
<i>D The composition of the tribe as proprietor</i> .....	289	<i>Section 16 Tribal water rights</i> .....	316
<i>Section 2 Forms of tribal property</i> .....	290	<i>A Tribal right v. state right in navigable waters</i> .....	318
<i>Section 3 Sources of tribal rights in real property</i> .....	291	<i>B Extent of reserved water right</i> .....	318
<i>Section 4 Aboriginal possession</i> .....	291	<i>Section 17 Tribal rights in improvements</i> .....	319
<i>Section 5 Treaty reservations</i> .....	294	<i>Section 18 Tribal conveyances</i> .....	320
<i>A Methods of establishing treaty reservations</i> .....	294	<i>A Restraints on alienation</i> .....	320
<i>B Treaty definitions of tribal property rights</i> .....	295	<i>B Historical view of restraints</i> .....	321
<i>C Principles of treaty interpretation</i> .....	296	<i>C Federal legislation</i> .....	322
<i>Section 6 Statutory reservations</i> .....	296	<i>D Involuntary alienation</i> .....	324
<i>A Legislative definitions of tribal property rights</i> .....	298	<i>E Invalid conveyances</i> .....	324
<i>Section 7 Executive order reservations</i> .....	299	<i>Section 19 Tribal leases</i> .....	325
<i>Section 8 Tribal land purchase</i> .....	302	<i>Section 20 Tribal licenses</i> .....	332
<i>Section 9 Tribal title derived from other sovereigns</i> .....	303	<i>Section 21 Status of surplus and ceded lands</i> .....	334
<i>Section 10 Protection of tribal possession</i> .....	306	<i>Section 22 Tribal rights in personal property</i> .....	336
<i>A Legislation on trespass</i> .....	306	<i>A Forms of personal property</i> .....	337
<i>B Congressional respect for tribal possession</i> .....	308	<i>B Tribal property and federal property</i> .....	337
<i>C Who may protect tribal possession</i> .....	308	<i>C Tribal ownership and common ownership</i> .....	338
<i>D Effect of title upon possessory right</i> .....	309	<i>D Tribal interest in trust property</i> .....	338
<i>E Against whom protection extends</i> .....	309	<i>E The composition of the tribe</i> .....	338
<i>Section 11 Extent of tribal possessory rights</i> .....	309	<i>F Interest in tribal funds</i> .....	338
		<i>G Creditors' claims</i> .....	339
		<i>Section 23 Tribal right to receive funds</i> .....	339
		<i>A Sources of tribal income</i> .....	340
		<i>B Manner of making payments to tribe</i> .....	343
		<i>Section 24 Tribal right to expend funds</i> .....	345

## SECTION 1 DEFINITION OF TRIBAL PROPERTY

Tribal property may be formally defined as property in which an Indian tribe has a legally enforceable interest. The exact nature of this interest it will be the purpose of this chapter to delineate. It will, however, clarify the scope and purpose of the chapter to note certain implications of the formal definition of tribal property here presented.

If tribal property is property in which a tribe has a legally enforceable interest, it must be distinguished, on the one hand, from property of individual Indians, and, on the other hand, from public property of the United States. Actually, we find that tribal property partakes of some of the incidents of both individual private property and public property of the United States. The distinctions on both sides, however, are as significant as the similarities. It may be noted that historically, conceptions of tribal property have oscillated between the two limits of individual private property and public property. When, for instance, Pueblo property was treated like any other private

corporate property in the Territory of New Mexico,<sup>1</sup> no special problems of Indian law were presented. Likewise, where lands, although set aside for Indian purposes, have not been the subject of any legally enforceable Indian rights, as is the case perhaps with public lands set aside for the establishment of an Indian hospital or school not restricted to any particular tribe, the lands remain public property of the United States and no question of tribal property is presented.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 20, sec. 1.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 1, sec. 9 fn 76. Even in the Indian school situation, tribal property rights may be created. In Alaska, for instance reservations for native education have come to be treated for most purposes as Indian reservations. See Chapter 21, sec. 7. Similarly we may note that the Joint Resolution of January 30, 1897, 20 Stat. 698, authorizing the use of the Fort Bidwell abandoned military reservation, "for the purposes of an Indian training school," has been construed as establishing an Indian reservation. The Act of January 27, 1911, 37 Stat. 682, refers to "Indians having rights on and reservation."



terms for damages to individual occupants injured by the granting of such rights of way.<sup>1</sup> Under such statutes, it has been said,

Where one has a base fee, it has been held that he should receive the full value of the land, as the interest of the grantor is too remote to be treated as property. The act of the Cherokee Nation is in this nature, but the occupants of the land have so complete a right of enjoyment that, when a right of way is condemned, they are entitled to the compensation.<sup>2</sup>

Where Congress has provided for the sale of tribal lands, special provision has frequently been made for the payment of damages to individual occupants.<sup>3</sup>

While the Indian occupant of tribal land has such an interest as will entitle him to compensation when a right of way is granted across the land he occupies, it has been held administratively that such payments made to individual Indian occupants cannot satisfy the tribal right to compensation.<sup>4</sup>

### C TRIBAL LANDS AND PUBLIC LANDS OF THE UNITED STATES

Although Indian tribal lands have been distinguished from public lands in various ways, there are certain situations in which tribal lands have been treated as public lands. For example it has been held that tribal lands, even though held by the tribe in fee, may be considered public lands of the United States for the purpose of erecting federal buildings thereon, at least where Congress has directed such action, or where the tribe itself has consented to the action.<sup>5</sup>

Again, it has been held that Indian lands are "public lands" within the meaning of a statute giving a right of way to a railroad company across "public lands," where the United States specifically undertakes to extinguish Indian title on the lands.

<sup>1</sup> Act of May 30, 1888, 25 Stat. 100; Act of July 4, 1888, 25 Stat. 107; Act of June 26, 1888, 25 Stat. 140; Act of July 28, 1888, 25 Stat. 247; Act of July 28, 1888, 25 Stat. 249; Act of October 17, 1884, 25 Stat. 508; Act of February 23, 1889, 25 Stat. 654 (Dikoto); Act of February 20, 1889, 25 Stat. 715 (Kinnik); Act of May 8, 1890, 26 Stat. 105; Act of October 1, 1890, 26 Stat. 801; Act of December 21, 1893, 28 Stat. 22; Act of August 4, 1894, 28 Stat. 229; Act of February 28, 1895, sec. 8, 30 Stat. 908; Act of March 2, 1895, sec. 7, 30 Stat. 909.

<sup>2</sup> *Indolph, Lummis Domain* (1891), sec. 801 citat, *Payne v. Kennedy*, 4 Fed. Cl. 50, 10 Fed. 548 (C. C. W. D. Ark., 1893).

<sup>3</sup> Act of May 25, 1810, 4 Stat. 311 (providing that when tribal lands were exchanged for lands west of the Mississippi by tribal consent the individual members of the tribe shall be paid the value of improvements upon the land they occupy); Act of February 6, 1871, sec. 1, 16 Stat. 404 (Comptroller held that mutes sec. 485 of the Revised Statutes, 83 U. S. C. 784, 1897 Stat. 851 (Bee and Fox); Act of February 20, 1889, 25 Stat. 677 (Southern Ute); Act of June 28, 1898, 30 Stat. 495 (Indian Territory).

<sup>4</sup> *Memo Sol. I. D.*, August 11, 1897.

<sup>5</sup> In a decision dated June 25, 1900, 6 Comp. Dec. 987 the Comptroller of the Treasury considered the question of the construction of a school on the Indian lands in reservation owned by the Teton Sioux Tribe in fee simple. The Comptroller held that mutes sec. 485 of the Revised Statutes, 83 U. S. C. 784, not the general policy exemplified by that action against the expenditure of public funds on private property but any application, stating

"\* \* \* The same act which in the appropriations for new buildings made large appropriations for the purchase of the school on the reservation and the fee funds provided for the support of the school is a gift of it, and with some show of reason we can understand that it was the intention of Congress that the provisions for new buildings should be considered as a gift, and that the money should be expended on the land known to belong to the Indians, in fee." (P. 980)

A subsequent decision dated February 28, 1918, 24 Comp. Dec. 477, publishes the same doctrine. The Comptroller ruled that public moneys could not be expended in erecting school buildings on Indian reservation lands the title to which was in the State. But he said

"If the legal title to the land upon which it is contemplated to erect the buildings were in the Seminoles Indian, then it might not be required to use Government appropriations for the construction of the required buildings." \* \* \* (P. 479)

affected and where the statute is interpreted to cover Indian lands by the Executive Department charged with the administration of the act.<sup>6</sup>

Likewise, it has been held that land acquired by the United States, in trust for an Indian tribe is immune from state zoning regulations which, in times, do not apply to lands "belonging to and occupied by the United States."<sup>7</sup>

As already noted, the fact that Indian lands may be classified as "public lands" for certain purposes, does not negate their character as tribal property. Thus, surplus Indian lands, although designated "public lands" of the United States "for purposes of disposition, are subject to restoration as tribal lands under section 8 of the Act of June 18, 1874."<sup>8</sup>

And where "public lands" are granted to a state or railroad, Indian lands will not be deemed to be covered by the grant in the absence of clear evidence of a congressional intent to include such lands.<sup>9</sup>

Similarly, it has been held that Indian tribal lands are not covered by statutes opening "public lands" to settlement, nor are they comprised within the mineral laws affecting the public domain.<sup>10</sup>

### D THE COMPOSITION OF THE TRIBE AS PROPRIETOR

To mark out the tribe in which any form of tribal property is vested is ordinarily a simple enough matter. There are, however, a number of cases in which, because of tribal amalgamation or dissolution, modification of membership rules, or inconsistencies and ambiguities in treaty or statutory designations, serious questions arise as to the composition of the tribe in which particular rights of property are vested. Indeed, as these questions involve the issue of the tribal status, they have already received on consideration in Chapter 14. For present purposes it is enough to designate briefly the chief complications that have arisen in designating the tribe in which given property rights are vested.

One of these complications arises out of the practice in numerous early statutes and treaties, of dividing a tribal estate between those Indians desiring to maintain tribal relationships and communal property and those desiring to separate themselves from the tribe and hold their shares of tribal property in individual ownership. Typical of this arrangement is the Act of February 6, 1871.<sup>11</sup> Under this statute the tribal estate was divided be

<sup>6</sup> *Karad v. Union Pacific, B. R. Co.*, 225 U. S. 548, 566 (1912), affg 108 Fed. 648 (C. C. S. C., 1900). The doctrine of this case is attributed to *ex parte*, a case where no administrative construction was offered by the court and where the land had been promised to a given tribe of Indians "as their land and home forever" (Treaty of June 6 and 17, 1848 with the Potawatomi, 8 Stat. 831, 854), in the case of *Nadeau v. Union Pac. R. Co.*, 353 U. S. 422 (1956) (citing the Act of July 3, 1862, 12 Stat. 489, as amended by the Act of July 3, 1868, 15 Stat. 79). Cf., however, *Leavenworth, et al., B. R. Co. v. United States*, 92 U. S. 788, 748 (1875), holding that a congressional grant of Indian lands is not to be presumed "in the absence of words of unmistakable import." *Acme, Haverhill, Knox & Twp. Ry. Co. v. United States*, 236 U. S. 87 (1914). Cf. also *Booth v. Wothrich*, 95 U. S. 517 (1877) (holding that a grant of "public lands" may convey the fee to an Indian reservation subject to the Indians' right of occupancy, if such a congressional intention is shown). And see fn. 215, 217, *supra*.

<sup>7</sup> *Memo Sol. I. D.*, October 5, 1888.

<sup>8</sup> 48 Stat. 981, 25 U. S. C. 483, Op. Sol. I. D., M. 20798, June 15, 1888. <sup>9</sup> *Minnesota v. Hitchcock*, 148 U. S. 873 (1902). And see *Leavenworth, et al., B. R. Co. v. United States*, 92 U. S. 743, 741 (1875). See *McNulty, Kansas & Texas Ry. Co. v. Roberts*, 152 U. S. 114, 115 (1894); *Dubuke, et al., Railroad v. M. V. Railroad*, 109 U. S. 329, 384 (1883), but cf. *Shenep v. Northwestern Life Ins. Co.*, 40 Fed. 841, 448 (C. C. B. D. Minn., 1890).

<sup>10</sup> *United States v. McIntire*, 101 F. 2d 20, 469a (C. C. A. 9, 1939), 167a.

<sup>11</sup> *McIntire v. United States*, 22 F. Supp. 316 (D. C. Mont. 1887).

<sup>12</sup> See sec. 7 and 14, *supra*.

<sup>13</sup> 16 Stat. 404 (Stockbridge and Munsee).

tween a "citizen party" and an "Indian party," the former to receive per capita shares of the tribal funds, and the latter to enjoy exclusive rights in the remaining tribal fund. Members of the "citizen party" were deemed to have made "full surrender and relinquishment" of all claims "to be thereafter known and considered as members of said tribe, or in any manner interested in any provision hereof or hereafter to be made, by any treaty or law of the United States for the benefit of said tribes." (See § 1.)

A similar procedure was employed in certain cases where tribes were induced to migrate westward and those individuals remaining behind severed tribal connections and thus lost any rights in the tribal property of the migrant tribe.<sup>4</sup>

The problem of propertionate common ownership by two tribes is raised by the Act of March 2, 1886.<sup>5</sup>

A related problem is raised by the existence of separate treaty rights enjoyed by the Gros Ventre and the Assiniboune tribes of the Fort Belknap Reservation, which tribes, as a result of occupying a single reservation,<sup>6</sup> holding land in common, and acting through a single tribal council, have come to be amalgamated as a single tribe.<sup>7</sup>

The pooling of lands held by different Chippewa bands under the Act of January 14, 1888,<sup>8</sup> has raised a number of complex questions which (as hardly be noted within the confines of this

discussion) While it is impossible to lay down a simple rule to determine when title to reservation lands is located in a tribe and when it is located in a component band, the opinion of the Supreme Court in *Chippewa Indians v. United States*<sup>9</sup> indicates the factors that will be considered in such a determination. Among such factors particular importance attaches to the attitude of other bands towards the claim of the band in occupancy, the nature of the treaties made, whether with individual bands or with the entire tribe or nation, and the administrative practice of the Interior Department with respect to the use of lands and the disposition of proceeds therefrom.

The clarification of ambiguity in the designation of the Indian group for which a reservation has been set aside is exemplified in the case of the Colorado River Reservation. This reservation was originally set aside "for the Indians of the said river and its tributaries."<sup>10</sup> It was held by the Solicitor of the Interior Department that the Indians located on the reservation over a long period of years and recognized as a single tribe came to enjoy rights in the reservation which administrative officials could not thereafter diminish by locating, on the reservation, Indians of other tribes residing within the Colorado River watershed.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>4</sup> For an account of these arrangements see *United States v. Miller, Ltd. Band of Chippewa Indians*, 229 U.S. 494 (1913); *Chippewa Indians of Minnesota v. United States*, 401 U.S. 535 (1967), aff'd 80 C. Cl. 410 (1915); *United States v. Minnesota*, 270 U.S. 181 (1926), Op. Sol. I D, M 29616, February 10, 1958.

<sup>5</sup> See, for example, *United States v. Chippewa Indians of Minnesota v. United States*, 307 U.S. 1 (1939).

<sup>6</sup> Act of March 1, 1885, 13 Stat. 541, 550.

<sup>7</sup> Memo Sol. I D, September 15, 1956, Memo Sol. I D October 20, 1956. Accord: *United States v. Choctaw Nation*, 179 U.S. 184, 518 (1900).

<sup>8</sup> Accord, Act of February 20, 1897, 28 Stat. 677 (Use).  
<sup>9</sup> 37 Op. A. G. 410 (1882) (Miami tribe). See Chapter 8, notes 4 and 5.  
<sup>10</sup> 25 Stat. 1018.  
<sup>11</sup> Act of May 1, 1889, 24 Stat. 118, 124.  
<sup>12</sup> Memo Sol. I D, March 20, 1956.  
<sup>13</sup> 25 Stat. 642.

## SECTION 2 FORMS OF TRIBAL PROPERTY

In the whole range of ownership forms known to our legal system, from simple ownership of money or chattel, and fee simple title in real estate, through the many varieties of restricted and conditioned titles, trust titles and future interests, to the shadowy rights of permittees and contingent remaindermen, there is probably no form of property right that has not been lodged in an Indian tribe. The term *tribal property*, therefore, does not designate a single and definite legal institution, but rather a broad range within which important variations exist. These variations exist in every aspect of property law—in the duration of the possessory right, whether perpetual or limited, in the extent of that right, with respect, *e.g.*, to timber, minerals, water, and improvements on tribal land, in the measure of supervision which the Federal Government reserves over the tribal property, and in the types of use and disposition which may be made of the property by the tribal owner.<sup>12</sup> In view of these diversities, generalizations about "tribal property" should be scrutinized as critically as assertions about "property" in general.

A brief and incomplete list of the various tenures by which tribal property is held may serve to indicate the need for caution in dealing with generalizations about "Indian title" and "tribal ownership." (1) fee simple ownership of land,<sup>13</sup> (2) equitable ownership of land,<sup>14</sup> (3) leasehold interest in land,<sup>15</sup> (4) rights of reverter established by statutes granting to various railroads rights-of-way across Indian reservations with a provision that

the land shall revert to the tribe in the event that the grantee ceases to use it for the designated purpose,<sup>16</sup> and similar rights of reversion established by various other types of legislation,<sup>17</sup> (5) easements,<sup>18</sup> (6) ownership of minerals underlying allotted

<sup>12</sup> Act of July 4, 1884, 23 Stat. 66, Act of July 4, 1884, 23 Stat. 77, Act of June 1, 1890, 24 Stat. 71, Act of July 1, 1880, 21 Stat. 117, Act of July 6, 1896, 24 Stat. 121, Act of February 24, 1887, 24 Stat. 419, Act of March 2, 1887, 25 Stat. 446, Act of February 18, 1889, 25 Stat. 95, Act of May 14, 1898, 30 Stat. 140, Act of May 30, 1898, 30 Stat. 162, Act of July 20, 1888, 25 Stat. 405, Act of September 1, 1888, 25 Stat. 452, Act of January 18, 1880, 25 Stat. 617, Act of February 20, 1889, 25 Stat. 715, Act of May 8, 1890, 26 Stat. 102, Act of June 21, 1890, 26 Stat. 170, Act of June 30, 1890, 26 Stat. 184, Act of September 26, 1890, 26 Stat. 488, Act of October 1, 1890, 26 Stat. 622, Act of February 24, 1881, 25 Stat. 781, Act of March 8, 1891, 26 Stat. 844, Act of July 8, 1892, 27 Stat. 82, Act of July 30, 1902, 27 Stat. 186, Act of February 20, 1891, 27 Stat. 405, Act of December 21, 1891, 28 Stat. 22, Act of August 4, 1894, 28 Stat. 229, Act of March 2, 1890, 28 Stat. 40, Act of March 18, 1890, 26 Stat. 160, Act of March 30, 1890, 26 Stat. 80, Act of April 6, 1890, 29 Stat. 87, Act of January 20, 1897, 29 Stat. 502, Act of February 14, 1888, 80 Stat. 241, Act of March 40, 1898, 90 Stat. 847, Act of February 25, 1899, 90 Stat. 906.

<sup>13</sup> See, for example, *United States v. Board of Nat. Missions of Peabody Indian Church*, 37 F. 2d 272 (C. C. A. 10, 1930). Compare sec. 2 para. graph 12, of the Act of June 28, 1906, 34 Stat. 588, providing for the conveyance of Omage lands to a cemetery association with a right of reverter to "the use and benefit of the individual members of the Oage tribe according to the roll herein provided or to their heirs."

<sup>14</sup> See, for example, the Act of May 9, 1924, 43 Stat. 117, providing that it lands withdrawn from the Fort Hall Indian reservation for reversion purposes shall be subject to a "reservation of an easement to the Fort Hall Indians to use the said lands for grazing, hunting, fishing, and gathering of wood and so forth, the same way as was obtained prior to this enactment, insofar as such uses shall not interfere with the use of said lands for reversion purposes." Compare the Act of February 26, 1910, 40 Stat. 1175, conferring upon the Nez Percé tribe rights of "use and occupancy" in lands within the Grand Canyon National Park.

<sup>13</sup> See sec. 6 of this Chapter.

<sup>14</sup> See sec. 6 of this Chapter.

<sup>15</sup> See, for example, the Act of February 28, 1899, 2 Stat. 527, conferring a 50 year leasehold upon the Alabama and the Wyandott tribes, subject to termination upon abandonment.

lands," (7) water rights," (8) rights of interment,<sup>4</sup> (9) tribal trust funds,<sup>5</sup> (10) accounts payable to tribe<sup>6</sup>

<sup>4</sup> Act of June 4 1920 sec. 6, 41 Stat. 751 753 (Crow). Act of June 28 1895 sec. 11, 30 Stat. 197 197 (Indian Interests). Act of June 25 1906 34 Stat. 510 (Omaha). Act of March 3 1921 sec. 4, 41 Stat. 1371 (Fort Belknap). See sec. 14, infra.

<sup>5</sup> See, for example, Act of June 6 1900 31 Stat. 672 (Flat Hill, reserving water rights by allotment while surplus lands were sold on Flat Hill Reservation). Act of March 8 1907 34 Stat. 1078 (authorizing the use of tribal funds to purchase water rights for Indian lands on the Wind River Reservation in accordance with the statutes of Wyoming). And see, sec. 10 of this Chapter.

<sup>6</sup> Act of March 1 1881 22 Stat. 432 (rights of interment reserved for Indians of Allegheny Indian Reservation when lands were transferred to (certainly associations). Act of January 27 1918, 37 Stat. 602 (Flat Indian Indian Act of Reservation).

<sup>7</sup> Act of June 9 1938, sec. 2, 51 Stat. 312, Act of March 3 1961 sec. 4, 6, 12 Stat. 819, Act of April 29, 1874 sec. 2, 18 Stat. 40, 41, Act of

Various other types of property rights<sup>10</sup> vested in Indian tribes might be noted, but the foregoing list should serve to convey a fair idea of the complexity of the subject matter and the danger of overgeneralization.

March 3 1891 sec. 4, 21 Stat. 180. Act of March 1 1885 23 Stat. 951 (see also Fox and Iowa). Act of September 1 1888, sec. 6, 25 Stat. 452. Act of February 20 1891 27 Stat. 409 (White Mountain Apache). Act of March 2 1901 31 Stat. 972, Act of April 21 1904 31 Stat. 302 (Pinehead). Act of December 21 1904 31 Stat. 906 (Sakama). Act of June 7 1906, 34 Stat. 211, Act of December 10 1914 37 Stat. 64 (Middletown). Act of February 11 1915 37 Stat. 077 (Standing Rock). Act of March 4 1927 4, 41 Stat. 161 sec. 22, infra.

<sup>10</sup> See, for example, Act of March 3 1921 sec. 3, 41 Stat. 1367. See, for example, Act of August 6 1846 9 Stat. 511 (claims) Joint Resolution of February 15 1901 27 Stat. 793. Act of February 13 1912 37 Stat. 608 (right of interment). Act of February 9 1925, 43 Stat. 820 (claims).

## SECTION 3. SOURCES OF TRIBAL RIGHTS IN REAL PROPERTY

The derivation of tribal property rights in every decided case and in every actual situation involves some element of course of action which defines those rights. An analysis of the different ways in which tribal rights over property come into being is therefore prerequisite to a proper definition of those rights.

Interests in real property have been acquired by Indian tribes in at least six ways:

- 1 By aboriginal possession
- 2 By treaty
- 3 By act of Congress
- 4 By executive action
- 5 By purchase
- 6 By action of a colony, state, or foreign nation

In sections 1 to 9 of this chapter, these six sources of tribal right will be analyzed.

A word of caution, however, must be offered against the assumption that the foregoing six methods are clearly distinguished from each other. In fact, there is interconnection of all

methods. Aboriginal possession may be confirmed by treaty or statute, a treaty may carry into effect a land down in a statute, and vice versa,<sup>11</sup> either may be implemented by Executive order in purchase. Action of the United States alone, any of these times may parallel or confirm acts of prior sovereignties. But with all these qualifications, the six-fold division above proposed does offer a convenient method of managing in workable compass the material pertaining to the citation of tribal property rights in land.

By way of corrective to any illusion of certainty that this division of material is arbitrary, it is well to quote the words of the Supreme Court in *Minnesota v. Hitchcock*:<sup>12</sup>

"... Now in order to create a reservation it is not necessary that there should be a formal cession or a formal act setting apart a particular tract. It is enough that land which has been due these results a certain defined tract appropriated to certain purposes."<sup>13</sup>

<sup>11</sup> 353 U. S. 178, 380-390 (1952).

## SECTION 4. ABORIGINAL POSSESSION

The derivation of Indian property rights from aboriginal possession<sup>14</sup> is not only the first source of tribal property rights in a historic sense, but is of first importance in that this source of property is greatly influenced by tribal customs established in other ways. Except in the light of this influence it is difficult to understand why peculiar incidents should attach to property which has been purchased outright by an Indian tribe from a private person, or has been patented to the tribe by the United States in the same way that other public lands are patented to private individuals. That there are peculiar incidents attached even to fee simple tenure by an Indian tribe is an undoubted fact, and the explanation of this fact is probably to be found in the confusion that has emanated from the concept of aboriginal possession.

The problem of recognizing or denying possessory rights claimed by the aborigines in the soil of America engaged the

attention of jurists and publicists from the discovery of America.<sup>15</sup> A clear expression of the classical view, which influenced Chief Justice Marshall and other founders of American legal doctrine in this field, was given by Vattel.<sup>16</sup> The conflicting claims of European powers to unpopulated areas in the new world went to be resolved, according to Vattel, in accordance with the precept of natural law (or, as we should say today, the precept of international morality) that no nation can

"... exclusively appropriate to themselves more land than they have occasion for, or more than they are able to settle and cultivate."<sup>17</sup> We do not, therefore, deviate from the views of justice in confining the Indians within narrow limits. However, we cannot help praising the moderation of the English publicists who first settled in New England, who, notwithstanding their being furnished with a charter from their sovereign, purchased of the Indians the land of which they intended to take possession. This laudable example was followed by William Penn, and the colony of quakers that he conducted to Pennsylvania.

The basic issues in the field of aboriginal possessory rights were first presented to the United States Supreme Court in the case of *Johnson v. McIntosh*.<sup>18</sup> Of the opinion of Chief Justice Marshall in that case, a leading writer on American consti-

<sup>12</sup> The significance of this concept is summarized in these words from the opinion in *Déne v. State of New York*, 22 F. 2d 851 854 (D. C. N. D. N. Y., 1927).

<sup>13</sup> "The source of title here is not letters patent or other form of grant by the federal government. It is the Indians' claim to the land rights in the soil to white occupation and recognized and protected by treaties between Great Britain and the United States and between the United States and the Indians. By the treaty of 1763 between the United States and the six Nations of Indians, and the treaty of 1796 between the United States, the State of New York and the Seven Nations of Cherokee, the right of occupation of the lands in question by the Six Nations of Indians, was not denied but recognized and confirmed."

<sup>14</sup> Vattel's *Law of Nations* (1788), Book I, c. XVIII. The passage quoted is from the edition of Chitty published in 1797.

<sup>15</sup> 8 Wheat. 543 (1825).

tutional law remarks: "the principles there laid down have ever since been accepted as correct." "In this case the plaintiffs claimed land under a grant by the chiefs of the Illinois and Piankeshaw Nations, and in the words of the opinion, 'the question is, whether this title can be recognized in the courts of the United States?' In reaching the conclusion that the Indian tribes did not enjoy and could not convey complete title to the soil, the Court announced in some detail the extent and origin of the Indians' possessory right. From this opinion the following pertinent excerpts are taken:

On the discovery of this immense continent, the great nations of Europe were eager to appropriate to themselves, so much of it as they could respectively acquire. Its vast extent offered in ample field to the ambition and enterprise of all, and the character and religion of its inhabitants afforded no apology for considering them as a people over whom the superior genius of Europe might claim an ascendancy. The potentates of the old world found no difficulty in convincing themselves that they made ample compensation to the inhabitants of the new, by bestowing on them civilization and Christianity in exchange for unlimited independence. But, as they were all in pursuit of nearly the same object, it was necessary, in order to avoid conflicting settlements, and consequent war with each other, to establish a principle which all should acknowledge as the law by which the right of acquisition which they all asserted, should be regulated as between themselves. This principle was that discovery gave title to the government in whose subjects, or by whose authority, it was made, against all other European governments, which title might be contaminated by possession.

The exclusion of all other Europeans, necessarily gave to the nation making the discovery the sole right of acquiring the soil from the natives, and establishing settlements upon it. It was a right which no European could interfere. It was a right which all asserted for themselves, and to the assertion of which, by others, all assented.

Those relations which were to exist between the discoverer and the natives, were to be regulated by them selves. The rights thus acquired being exclusive, no other power could interpose between them.

In the establishment of these relations, the rights of the original inhabitants were, in no instance, entirely disregarded, but were necessarily, to a considerable extent, impaired. They were admitted to be the rightful owners of the soil, with a legal as well as just claim to retain possession of it, and to use it according to their own discretion, but their rights to complete sovereignty as independent nations, were necessarily diminished, and their power to dispose of the soil at their own will to whomsoever they pleased, was denied by the original fundamental principle, that discovery gave exclusive title to those who made it.

While the different nations of Europe respected the right of the natives, as occupants, they asserted the ultimate dominion to be in themselves, and claimed and exercised, as a consequence of this ultimate dominion, a power to grant the soil, while yet in possession of the natives. These grants have been understood by all to convey a title to the grantees, subject only to the Indian right of occupancy.

The history of America, from its discovery to the present day, proves, we think, the universal recognition of these principles. (Pp 572-771.)

The United States, then, have unequivocally accented to that grant and broad rule by which its civilized inhabitants now hold this country. They hold, and assert in themselves, the title by which it was acquired. They maintain, as all others have maintained, that discovery gave an exclusive right to extinguish the Indian title of occupancy either by purchase or by conquest, and gave also a right to such a degree of sovereignty as the future stance of the people would allow them to exercise.

The power now possessed by the government of the United States to grant lands, residing, while we write these laws, in the crown, or its grantee. The validity of the title given by either has never been questioned in our courts. It has been exercised uniformly over territory in possession of the Indians. The existence of this power must recognize the existence of any right which may conflict with and control it. An absolute title to lands cannot exist, at the same time, in different persons, or in different governments. An absolute, must be in exclusive title, at least a title which excludes all others not compatible with it. All our institutions recognize the absolute title of the crown, subject only to the Indian right of occupancy, and recognize the absolute title of the crown to extinguish this right. This is incompatible with an absolute and complete title in the Indians.

We will not enter into the controversy, whether agriculturalists, merchants, and manufacturers, have a right, on distinct principles, to expel hunters from the territory they possess, or to contract their limits. Conquest gives a title which the courts of the conqueror cannot deny, which the private and speculative opinions of individuals may be, respecting the original justice of the claim which has been successfully asserted. The British government, which was then our government, and whose rights have passed to the United States, asserted a title to all the lands occupied by Indians, within the chartered limits of the British colonies. It asserted also a limited sovereignty over them, and the exclusive right of extinguishing the title which occupancy gave to them. These claims have been maintained and established by law west as the River Mississippi, by the sword. The title to a vast portion of the lands we now hold, originates in them. It is not for the courts of this country to question the validity of this title, or to set at naught one which is incompatible with it. (Pp 587-589.)

However extravagant the pretension of converting the discovery of an uninhabited country into conquest may appear, if the principle has been asserted in the first instance, and afterwards sustained, if a country has been acquired and held under it, if the property of the great mass of the community originates in it, it becomes the law of the land, and cannot be questioned. So, too, with respect to the concomitant principle, that the Indian in habitants are to be considered merely as occupants, to be protected, indeed, while in peace, in the possession of their lands, but to be deemed incapable of transferring the absolute title to others. However this restriction may be opposed to natural right, and to the usages of civilized nations, yet, if it be indispensable to that system under which the country has been settled, and be adapted to the actual condition of the two people it may, perhaps, be supported by reason, and certainly cannot be rejected by courts of justice. (Pp 791-792.)

The limitations upon Indian rights emphasized by Chief Justice Marshall in his opinion in the *McIntosh* case were supplemented a few years later by a second notable opinion of the Chief Justice emphasizing the positive content of the Indian possessory right. In the case of *Worcester v. Georgia*,<sup>1</sup> which dealt with the constitutionality of action by the State of Georgia leading to the imprisonment of individuals admitted to residence in the Cherokee Reservation by the authorities of that nation and by the United States, the Supreme Court took occasion again to arrive in detail the extent of the Indian right in the soil of the Cherokee Nation. "It is difficult," the Chief Justice notably noted

... to comprehend the proposition, that the inhabitants of either quarter of the globe could have rightful original claims of dominion over the inhabitants of the other, or over the land, or they occupied, or that the discovery of either by the other should give the discoverer rights in the country discovered, which annulled the pre-existing rights of its ancient possessors.

<sup>1</sup> 6 C. E. Burdick, *The Law of the American Constitution, Its Origin and Development* (1922) sec 107.

<sup>2</sup> 6 Pet 515 (1832).

But power, war, conquest, gave rights which, after possession, are conceded by the world, and which can never be controverted by those on whom they descend. (P 543)

'The great maritime powers of Europe,' the Chief Justice observed, agreed upon the mutually advantageous rule, formulated in the *Malvosh* case "that discovery gave title to the government by whose subjects, or by whose authority it was made, against all other European governments, which title might be consummated by possession." 8 Wheat 573" (Pp 538-4)

Such a rule, however, bound the European governments, but not the Indian tribes.

This principle, acknowledged by all Europeans, because it was the interest of all to acknowledge it, gave to the nation making the discovery, its inevitable consequence, the sole right of acquiring the soil and of making settlements on it. It was an exclusive principle which shut out the right of competition among those who had agreed to it, not one which could admit the previous rights of those who had not agreed to it. It regulated the right given by discovery among the European discoverers, but could not affect the rights of those already in possession either as aboriginal occupants, or as occupants by virtue of a discovery made before the memory of man. It gave the exclusive right to purchase, but did not found that right on a denial of the right of the possessor to sell.

The relation between the Europeans and the natives was determined in each case by the particular government which asserted its claim, and could manifest its possessive privilege in the particular place. The United States succeeded to all the claims of Great Britain, both territorial and political, but no attempt, so far as is known, has been made to cancel them. So far as they existed merely in theory, or were in the nature only of claims of the claims of other European nations, they still remain their original character, and remain dormant. So far as they have been actually exercised they exist in fact as understood by both parties, the asserted by the one, and admitted by the other.

Soon after Great Britain determined on planting colonies in America, the king granted charters to companies of his subjects, who associated for the purpose of carrying the views of the crown into effect, and of exchanging their selves. The first of these charters was made before possession was taken of any part of the country. They put forth, generally, to convey the soil, from the Atlantic to the South Sea, this soil was occupied by numerous and warlike nations, capable of willing, and able to defend their possessions. The extravagant and absurd idea, that the feeble settlements made on the sea coast, or the companies under whom they were made, acquired legitimate power by them to govern the people, or occupy the lands from sea to sea, did not enter the mind of any man. They were well understood to convey the title which, according to the common law of European sovereigns respecting America, they might rightfully convey, and no more. This was the exclusive right of purchasing such lands as the natives were willing to sell. The crown could not be understood to grant what the crown did not affect to claim, nor was it so understood. (Pp 544-545)

Viewing the problem in these terms, the Supreme Court had no difficulty in reaching the conclusion that a possessory right in the area concerned was vested in the Cherokee Nation and that the State of Georgia had no authority to enter upon the Cherokee lands without the consent of the Cherokee Nation. These views were reaffirmed by the Supreme Court, per Chief Justice, in the subsequent case of *Worcester v. Georgia*.

Enough has already been remarked to show that the lands conveyed to the United States by the treaty were held by the Cherokees under their original title, acquired by immemorial possession, commencing ages before the New World was known to civilized man. Unmistakably their title was absolute, subject only to the pre-emption

right of purchase acquired by the United States as the successors of Great Britain, and the right also on their part as such successors of the discovery to prohibit the sale of the land to any other governments or their subjects, and to exclude all other governments from any interference in their affairs.\*

*Atchafal et al v United States* 9 Peters 748

A small view of the aboriginal Indian title was taken by the Attorney General in answering the question whether a certain Mr Ogden, owner of the reservation in Sisseton Indian lands, might lawfully enter these lands for the purpose of making a survey. In answering this question in the negative, Attorney General Will declared

The answer to this question depends on the character of the title which the Indians retain in these lands. The principle admission of the European conquerors of this country is that it must wait for us to speculate on the extent of that right which they might have asserted from conquest, and from the manner habits and hunter state of its aboriginal occupants. (See the authorities cited in Fletcher and Park, 6 Clanch, 121.) The conquerors have never claimed more than the exclusive right of purchase from the Indians, and the right of succession to a title which will have removed voluntarily, or become extinguished by death. So long as a title exists and survives in possession of its lands, it is not subject to alienation and expropriation, and there exists no authority to enter upon their lands, for any purpose whatever, without their consent. Although the Indian title continues only during their possession, yet that possession has been always held sacred, and is never to be disturbed but by their consent. They do not hold under the States, nor under the United States, their title is original, sovereign, and exclusive. We treat with them as separate sovereignties, and while an Indian nation continues to exist within its acknowledged limits, we have no more right to enter upon their territory, without their consent, than we have to enter upon the territory of a foreign prince.

It is said that the act of ownership proposed to be exercised by the grantees, under the State of Massachusetts will not injure the Indians, nor disturb them in the usual enjoyment of these lands, but of this the Indians, whose title, while it continues, is sovereign and exclusive, are the proper and the only judges. \* \* \*

I am of opinion that it is inconsistent, both with the character of the Indian title and the stipulations of their treaty, to enter upon these lands, for the purpose of making the proposed surveys, without the consent of the Indians, freely rendered, and on a full understanding of the case." (Pp 466-467)

Cases and opinions subsequent to the *Malvosh* case oscillate between a stress on the content of the Indian possessory right and stress on the limitations of that right. These opinions and cases might perhaps be classified according to whether they refer to the Indian right of occupancy as a "mere" right of occupancy or as a "sacred" right of occupancy. All the cases, however, agree in saying that the aboriginal Indian title involves an exclusive right of occupancy and does not involve an ultimate fee. The cases dealing with Indian lands in the territory of the original colonies locate the ultimate fee in the state wherein the lands are situated. Outside of the territory of the original

\* *The Seneca Lands*, 1 Op A G 465 (1821).

\* *Clark v Smith*, 18 Pet 195 (1850), *Littler v Potter*, 14 Pet 4 (1840), *Seneca Nation v Olney* 182 U S 283 (1890), *The Cherokees and their Lands*, 2 Op A G 421 (1830) (holding that Cherokee lands became the property of Georgia upon the migration of the occupants), *Tennessee Land Title*, 80 Op A G 264 (1910) (holding that such lands within the boundaries of the State of Tennessee became the property of that state upon the migration of the Cherokees), *Spalding v Chandler*, 100 U S 304 (1886) and see *Fletcher v Peck*, 6 Clanch 87 (1816), *Johnson v McIntosh*, 8 Wheat 519, 580 (1823), *Cherokee Nation v Georgia*, 5 Pet 1, 35 (1831), *United States v Joseph*, 94 U S 814, 818 (1876), *Atchafal et al v United States*, 9 Peters 748 (1836), *United States v New York Indians*.



colonies, the ultimate fee is located in the United States and may be granted to individuals subject to the Indian right of occupancy.<sup>1</sup>

The question of what evidentiary facts must be shown to establish the aboriginal possession described in the foregoing opinions would exist as beyond the limits of this volume but certain elementary principles are readily established. It has been held that title by aboriginal possession is not established by proof that an area was used for hunting purposes where other tribes also hunted on the lands in question.<sup>2</sup>

Where exclusive occupancy over a considerable period is shown,

<sup>1</sup> *Michigan v. Fox*, 7 How. 600 (1849); *Parker City Case*, 9 Op. 1, 6 255 (1836). Of Act of June 7, 1836, 5 Stat. 54 (limiting state jurisdiction over alien territory to take effect when Indian title to the country was extinguished).

<sup>2</sup> *Liscomb Indian Tribe v. United States*, 77 C. Cls. 447 (1918), *sup. dlm.* 292 U. S. 606.

rights of possession are not lost by forced abandonment.<sup>3</sup> In the words of the Court of Claims,

The Supreme Court has repeatedly held that the Indians' claim of right of occupancy of lands is dependent upon actual and not constructive possession. *Atchafalpa v. United States*, 9 Oct. 711, *Williams v. Chicago*, 242 U. S. 434, *Choctaw Nation v. United States*, 34 C. Cls. 17. Beyond doubt, abandonment of claimed Indian territory by the Indians will extinguish Indian title. In this case, the Government introduces the defense of abandonment, asserting that the facts show an intention that it is of course conceded that the issue of abandonment is one of intention to relinquish, surrender, and unreservedly give up all claims to title to the lands described in the treaty, and the source from which to derive it such an intention is the facts and circumstances of the transaction involved. Possible exception from the premises of nonuse under certain circumstances, as well as lapse of time, are not standing alone sufficient to constitute an abandonment. *Wick v. Taylor*, 18 L. R. 535, *Choctaw v. United States*, 34 C. Cls. 659, *Atchafalpa v. United States*, 21 W. Vt. 277 (P. 344).

<sup>3</sup> *Port Berthold Indians v. United States*, 71 C. Cls. 808 (1930).

## SECTION 5 TREATY RESERVATIONS

The various ways in which treaty reservations have been established and the different forms of language used in defining the terms by which such reservations are held, together with the judicial and administrative interpretations placed upon these phrases, have been noted in some detail in Chapter 3, and need not be restated here. It is enough for our present purposes merely to list (a) the principal ways in which treaty reservations have been established, (b) the principal forms of language used in defining tribal tenure, and (c) the more important rules of interpretation placed upon such phrases.

### A METHODS OF ESTABLISHING TREATY RESERVATIONS

In general, three methods of establishing tribal ownership of lands by treaty were in common use: (1) the recognition of aboriginal title, (2) the exchange of lands, and (3) the purchase of lands.

(1) Usually the first treaty made by the United States with a given tribe recognizes the aboriginal possession of the tribe and defines its geographical extent. When this geographical extent has been defined by treaty with another sovereign, the treaty with the United States may simply confirm such prior definition. Thus, the first published Indian treaty, that of September 17, 1775, with the Delaware Nation,<sup>4</sup> provides

Whereas the enemies of the United States have endeavored, by every artifice in their power, to possess the Indians in general with an opinion, that it is the design of the States aforesaid, to extinguish the Indians and take possession of their country to obtain such false suggestion, the United States do engage to guarantee to the aforesaid nation of Delaware, and their heirs, all their territorial rights in the fullest and most ample manner, as it hath been bounded by former treaties,<sup>5</sup> as long as they the said Delaware nation shall abide by, and hold fast the chain of friendship now entered into

A typical treaty fixed a "boundary line" between the United States and the Wyandot and Delaware Nations.<sup>6</sup>

In many treaties the recognition of aboriginal title was coupled with a cession of portions of the aboriginal domain.<sup>7</sup> Thus, Article 6 of the Treaty of January 31, 1795, with the Shawnee Nation,<sup>8</sup> provides

The United States do allot to the Shawnee Nation, lands within their territory to live and hunt upon beginning at . . . beyond which line none of the citizens of the United States shall settle, nor disturb the Shawnees in their settlement and possessions, and the Shawnees do relinquish to the United States, all title, or pretense of title they ever had to the lands east, west, and south, of the east, west and south lines before described.

In some of these treaties the tribe was given a right at a future date to select from the ceded portions additional land for reservation purposes.<sup>9</sup>

(2) A second method of establishing tribal land ownership by treaty was through the exchange of lands held in aboriginal possession for other lands which the United States presumed to grant to the tribe.<sup>10</sup> A typical treaty of this type is that of

<sup>4</sup> Art. 6 of Treaty of January 21, 1795, with the Wyandot Delaware, Chippewa, and Ottawa Nations, 7 Stat. 241. Art. 1 of Treaty of January 1, 1795, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 21. ("The boundary of the lands hereby allotted to the Choctaw nation to live and hunt on . . . is and shall be the following . . ."). Art. 4 of Treaty of August 7, 1790, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 111. ("The boundary between the citizens of the United States and the Creek Nation is and shall be . . .").

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of August 8, 1795, with the Wyandot, Delaware, Shawnee, Ottawa, Chippewa, Potawatomi, Miami, Fox, Wea, Kickapoo, Piankeshaw, and Kaskaskia, 7 Stat. 101. Treaty of May 31, 1795, with the Seven Nations of Canada, 7 Stat. 75. Treaty of July 2, 1791, with the Cherokee Nation, 7 Stat. 49, 40. ("The United States solemnly guarantee to the Choctaw nation all their lands, not hereby ceded"). Treaty of October 17, 1802, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 78. Treaty of December 80, 1805, with the Piankeshaw Tribe, 7 Stat. 100. Treaty of November 17, 1807, with the Ottawa, Chippewa, Wyandot and Potawatomi Nations, 7 Stat. 101. Treaty of August 24, 1813, with the Quapaw Tribe, 7 Stat. 178. Treaty of September 21, 1819, with the Chippewa Nation, 7 Stat. 201. Treaty of September 18, 1825, with the Florida Indians, 7 Stat. 221. Treaty of June 8, 1825, with the Great and Little Osage Tribes, 7 Stat. 240. Treaty of June 4, 1825, with the Kansas Nation, 7 Stat. 244. Treaty of October 28, 1820, with the Miami Tribe, 7 Stat. 300.

<sup>6</sup> 7 Stat. 28, 27.

<sup>7</sup> Treaty of August 21, 1808, with the Kickapoo Nation, 7 Stat. 78. Treaty of September 29, 1817, with the Wyandot, Seneca, Delaware, Shawnee, Potawatomi, Ottawa, and Chippewa Tribes, 7 Stat. 160.

<sup>1</sup> Art. 6, 7 Stat. 18.

<sup>2</sup> "The House of Representatives" referred to in this article were Senators with the British Crown and with the Colonies. A similar reference is made in the Treaty of December 17, 1801, with the Choctaw Nation, Art. 8, 7 Stat. 66. ("The two contracting parties covenant and agree that the old line of demarcation heretofore established by and between the officers of his Britannic Majesty and the Choctaw nation . . . shall be retraced and plainly marked . . . and that the said line shall be the boundary between the settlements of the Mississippi Territory and the Choctaw nation.")

October 3, 1818, with the Delaware Nation<sup>10</sup>. The first two articles of this treaty provided:

ART. 1 The Delaware nation of Indians cede to the United States all their claim to land in the state of Indiana.

ART. 2 In consideration of the aforesaid cession, the United States agree to provide for the Delaware a country to reside in, upon the west side of the Mississippi, and to guarantee to them the peaceable possession of the same.

This type of exchange is characteristic of the "removal" treaties whereby many of the eastern and central tribes were induced to move westward.<sup>11</sup>

Another type of treaty wherein an aboriginal domain is ceded to the United States in exchange for other lands, arises where a particular tribe combines with another and cedes to the United States its land in exchange for the privilege of participating in the reservation privileges accorded the other tribe.<sup>12</sup> Yet another variation combines the two foregoing basic methods. A typical treaty of this type is that of July 8, 1817, with the Cherokee Nation,<sup>13</sup> wherein it was provided that a portion of the aboriginal lands be ceded in exchange for lands west of the Mississippi but that a portion be retained for those Indians not desirous of migrating west.<sup>14</sup>

(3) A third type of treaty provision for the establishing of reservations, frequently connected with the above two methods, directed the purchase of lands on behalf of the tribe. Generally tribal funds were utilized for such purchase and the purchase was made either from the United States or from another tribe. A typical provision of this type is the following, taken from the Treaty of March 21, 1836, with the Seminoles:

\* \* \* The United States having obtained by grant of the Creek nation the westerly half of their lands, hereby grant to the Seminole nation the portion thereof hereafter described. \* \* \* In consideration of cession of two hundred thousand acres of land described above, the Seminole nation agrees to pay the cost of the price of fifty cents per acre, amounting to the sum of one hundred thousand dollars, which amount shall be deducted from the sum paid by the United States for Seminole lands under the stipulations above written.<sup>15</sup>

Treaty of July 30 1819 and July 19 1820, with the Kickapoo Tribe, 7 Stat. 200 206, Treaty of November 7 1825, with the Shawnee Nation, 7 Stat. 284, Treaty of September 27, 1830, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 85, Treaty of February 22, 1831, with the Seneca Tribe, 7 Stat. 478, Treaty of July 20 1831 with the Mixed Band of Seneca and Shawnee Indians, 7 Stat. 851, Treaty of August 8, 1831, with the Shawnee Tribe, 7 Stat. 855, Treaty of August 30 1831 with the Ottawa Indians, 7 Stat. 859, Treaty of September 15, 1832 with the Winnebago Nation, 7 Stat. 870, Treaty of October 24 1832, with the Kickapoo Tribe, 7 Stat. 891, Treaty of November 8 1838, with the Miami Tribe, 7 Stat. 569, Treaty of October 11 1842 with the Confederate Tribes of Sac and Fox, 7 Stat. 800, Treaty of March 17, 1842, with the Wyandott Nation, 11 Stat. 581.

<sup>10</sup> 7 Stat. 168.

<sup>11</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 4E.

<sup>12</sup> Treaty of September 25 1818, with the Peoria, Kaskaskia, Miami, Kickapoo, and Tamarout Tribes of the Illinois Nation, 7 Stat. 181, Treaty of November 15, 1824, with the Quapaw Nation, 7 Stat. 232.

<sup>13</sup> 7 Stat. 159.

<sup>14</sup> Treaty of January 24, 1826, with the Creek Nation, 7 Stat. 286. See also Treaty of October 18, 1820, with the Choctaw Nation, 7 Stat. 210 ("Whereas it is an important object with the President of the United States to promote the civilization of the Choctaw Indians by the establishment of schools amongst them, and to persuade them as a nation, by a cession, for a small part of their land here, a country beyond the Mississippi River, where all who live by hunting and will not work, may be collected and settled together. \* \* \*").

<sup>15</sup> At 8 Stat. 765. See also Treaty of December 29, 1845, with the Cherokee Tribe, 7 Stat. 478 480 ("\* \* \* the United States in consideration of the sum of five hundred thousand dollars therefore hereby covenant and agree to convey to the said Indians \* \* \* the following additional tract of land").

## B TREATY DEFINITIONS OF TRIBAL PROPERTY RIGHTS

The language used to define the character of the estate granted to an Indian tribe varies so considerably that any detailed classification is likely to be merely useless. It is possible, however, to distinguish five general types of language commonly utilized.

(1) In a number of treaties the United States undertakes to grant to the tribe concerned a patent in fee simple.<sup>16</sup> In some cases reference is made to the tribe "and their descendants."<sup>17</sup> In a few cases the terms "patent" and "fee simple" are coupled with language indicating that if the tribe leaves to exist as an entity the land will revert on escheat to the United States.<sup>18</sup> In some cases express provision is made restricting alienation.<sup>19</sup> Occasionally the language of the ordinary patent is used in fee simple is embellished with guarantees stressing the permanent character of the tenure, as in the following language, taken from the Treaty of May 6, 1828, with the Cherokee Nation<sup>20</sup>:

\* \* \* a permanent home, and which shall, under the most solemn guarantee of the United States, be, and remain, theirs forever—a home that shall never, in all future time, be embarrassed by having extended around it the lines of a plowed over or the jurisdiction of a Territory or State, nor be possessed by any other people, nor, in any way, of any of the limits of any existing Territory or State.

(2) Other treaties guaranteed ownership or possession, or permanent possession, without using the technical language of the typical patent or grant in fee simple.<sup>21</sup> Thus, for instance,

<sup>16</sup> Treaty of March 17, 1842, with the Wyandott Nation 11 Stat. 581 ("both of these cessions to be made in fee simple to the Wyandott, and to their heirs forever.") And see Chapter 1, sec. 4.

<sup>17</sup> Treaty of December 29, 1845, with the Cherokee Tribe 7 Stat. 478 ("the United States \* \* \* hereby covenant and agree to convey to the said Indians and their descendants by patent, in fee simple. \* \* \*").

<sup>18</sup> Treaty of September 20 1816 with the Chickasaw Nation 7 Stat. 170, Treaty of September 27 1830 with the Choctaw Nation 7 Stat. 333 ("in fee simple to them and their descendants, to issue to them while they shall exist as a nation and live on it"), Treaty of February 23, 1831, with the Seneca Tribe, 7 Stat. 448, Treaty of July 20 1831 with the Mixed Band of Seneca and Shawnee Indians, 7 Stat. 851, Treaty of August 8, 1831, with the Shawnee Tribe, 7 Stat. 855, Treaty of August 30, 1831, with the Ottawa Indians, 7 Stat. 859, Treaty of February 14, 1831, with the Creek Nation at 8 Stat. 417 ("The United States will grant a patent, in fee simple to the Creek nation of Indians \* \* \* and the right to the guarantees of the United States shall be continued to said tribe of Indians so long as they shall exist as a nation and continue to occupy the country hereby assigned them").

<sup>19</sup> Treaty of December 29, 1845 with the United Nation of Seneca and Shawnee Indians 7 Stat. 411, 412 ("The said parties shall be granted in fee simple, but the lands shall not be sold or ceded without the consent of the United States"), of Treaty of July 40, 1819, and July 19, 1820, with the Kickapoo Tribe, 7 Stat. 200 208 ("to them, and their heirs for ever \* \* \* provided, nevertheless, that the said tribe shall never sell the said land without the consent of the President of the United States").

<sup>20</sup> 7 Stat. 811.

<sup>21</sup> Treaty of September 24, 1839 with the Delaware Indians 7 Stat. 327 ("And the United States hereby pledges the faith of the government to guarantee to the said Delaware Nation forever, the quiet and peaceable possession and undisturbed enjoyment of the same, against the claims and assaults of all and every other people whatever"). Treaty of October 11 1819, with the Confederate Tribes of Sac and Fox 7 Stat. 800 ("to the Sac and Foxes for a permanent and perpetual residence for them and their descendants \* \* \*"), Treaty of August 8 1797, with the Wyandott, Delaware, Shawanoe, Ottawa, Chippewa, Pottawatamie, Miami, Delawar, Wea, Kickapoo, Piankashaw, and Kaskaskia, 7 Stat. 40, 52 ("The Indian tribes who have a right to those lands, are equally to enjoy them, hunting, planting, and dwelling thereon so long as they please \* \* \*"), Treaty of October 24, 1832 with the Kickapoo Tribe, 7 Stat. 891 ("and secured by the United States, to the said Kickapoo tribe, as their permanent residence").

Article 4 of the Treaty of August 18, 1804, with the Delaware Nation "recognized the Delawares "as the rightful owners of all the country which is bounded . . ."

(3) Various other treaties used language which if literally construed restricts the Indian possession to a particular form of land utilization, but which may be construed as an outright grant in nonexclusive language. Theology of this sort was utilized by Marshall, *O J. v. Worcester v. Georgia*, where he noted that the use of the term "hunting grounds" in describing the country guaranteed to the Choctaws did not mean that the land could not be used for the establishment of villages or the planting of cornfields.

(4) Particularly in the later frontier, phrases such as "use and occupancy" are increasingly utilized.<sup>1</sup>

(5) Finally, a number of treaties dodge the problem of defining the Indian estate by providing that specified lands shall be held "as Indian lands are held,"<sup>2</sup> or as an Indian reservation,<sup>3</sup> thus ignoring the fact that considerable differences must exist with respect to the tenures by which various tribes hold their land.

### C PRINCIPLES OF TREATY INTERPRETATION

Apart from general principles of treaty interpretation discussed in Chapter 8, certain holdings with respect to the interpretation of treaty provisions establishing tribal land ownership deserve special note at this point.

(1) By way of caution against the notion that all Indian treaty reservations are held under a single form of ownership, one may note the comment of the Court of Claims in the case of *One Nation v. United States*:<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 7 Stat. 81.

<sup>2</sup> See Treaty of January 7, 1806, with the Cherokee Nation 7 Stat. 101, 103 ("and will cede to the Cherokees the title to the said reservation").

<sup>3</sup> 6 Pet. 515, 558 (1852).

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of May 31, 1796, with the Seven Nations of Canada 7 Stat. 55 ("to be applied to the use of the Indians of . . . St. Regis"), of Treaty of January 8, 1786, with the Wyandot, Delaware, Ottawa, Chippewa, Pottawatamie, and Sac Nations, 7 Stat. 28, 29 ("to live and hunt upon, and otherwise to occupy as they shall see fit").

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of May 14, 1874, with the Menominee, 10 Stat. 1061. Of Art. 3, Treaty of September 26, 1853, with the Nation of Chippewa, Potawatamie, and Ottawa, 7 Stat. 131.

<sup>6</sup> Treaty of October 2, 1818, with the Yee-Tah, 7 Stat. 180 ("to be held by the said tribe as Indian reservations, as usually held"). Of Treaty of September 17, 1818, with the Wyandot, Seneca, Shawnee and Ottawa Tribes 7 Stat. 178 ("and held by them in the same manner as Indian reservations have been heretofore held. But (1) is further agreed, that the tracts reserved shall be reserved for the use of the Indians named . . . and held by them and their heirs forever, unless ceded to the United States"). Treaty of September 20, 1817, with the Wyandot, Seneca, Delaware, Shawnee, Potawatamie, Ottawa and Chippewa Tribes, 7 Stat. 160 ("grant by patent, to the chiefs . . . for the use of the said tribe, . . . which tracts thus granted, shall be held by the said tribe, upon the usual conditions of Indian reservations, as though no patent were issued").

<sup>7</sup> 81 O. Cl. 288, 275 (1885).

\* \* \* the title derived by an Indian tribe, through the selling spirit of a reservation, depends entirely upon the terms of the treaty which is entered into between the parties, and that, while there is simply a reservation set apart for the Indian Nation, no fee simple or base fee is granted to the tribe, but only a right of occupancy.

(2) The question whether a treaty incorporates a grant in present, or in an executory promise, was considered in the case of *New York Indians v. United States*.<sup>8</sup> Although the treaty used the words "agreed to set apart," the court held that the context and circumstances showed that the treaty was understood to effectuate a grant in present.<sup>9</sup>

(3) It has been held that the mere use of the term "grant" in Indian treaties does not indicate an intent to establish fee simple tenure.<sup>10</sup>

(4) Likewise, it has been held that the language of a "grant" does not necessarily evidence a desire to grant new property rights, but may constitute simply a method of defining and removing aboriginal rights.<sup>11</sup>

(5) Where the United States has made a treaty promise that certain land "shall be confirmed by patent to the said Christian Indians, subject to such restrictions as Congress may provide,"<sup>12</sup> and Congress has not provided any restrictions, the tribe is entitled to receive in ordinary patent granting title in fee simple, rather than "the usual Indian title."<sup>13</sup>

Other questions of the interpretation of treaty clauses are considered in later portions of this chapter, particularly in sections 12 to 16, and in Chapter 8, section 2.

It is doubtful whether any broad principles of interpretation that would be at all useful can be derived from the cases in this field, but in subsequent sections of this chapter we shall be concerned to analyze specific questions concerning the nature of the estate granted by the various phrases classified in the foregoing sections.

<sup>8</sup> 170 U. S. 1 (1908), followed in *United States v. New York Indians*, 173 U. S. 464 (1899).

<sup>9</sup> *United States v. Brantley*, 10 Fed. Cl. No. 9177 (C. Cl. Ind. 1841), holding that a treaty can operate as a grant of title to lands. Accord *Johnson v. Mehan*, 176 U. S. 1 (1900).

<sup>10</sup> Title of the *Brotherhoods* under the Menominee Treaty, 3 Op. A. G. 122 (1894) ("the Indian tribes, under the policy of this government in their actual capacity, cannot hold the absolute title to lands occupied by them except when specially provided for by treaty, . . ."). *Goodfellow v. Markley*, 10 Fed. Cl. No. 5557 (C. Cl. Can. 1881) holding that unless there is a clear and explicit provision in the treaty showing that the Government intended to make the grant in fee simple, the court will presume that the treaty granted but a right of occupancy to the Indians.

<sup>11</sup> See *United States v. Roman*, 275 Fed. 283, 286 (C. Cl. A. 9, 1916) (interpreting Treaty of January 25, 1811, with various tribes of Oregon Territory, 12 Stat. 927), *Gannett v. Mohr*, 9 Iowa 359, 364 (1860), *United States v. Hana*, 198 U. S. 471 (1905), rev. 73 Fed. 72 (C. Cl. Wash. 1898).

<sup>12</sup> Treaty of May 6, 1834, with the Delaware Indians 10 Stat. 1048. <sup>13</sup> 8 Op. A. G. 24 (1887).

## SECTION 6. STATUTORY RESERVATIONS

Spotadically during the treaty-making period and regularly since its expiration, tribal property rights in land have been established by specific acts of Congress. These acts vary from specific grants of fee simple rights to broad designations that a given area shall be used for the benefit of Indians, or that Indian occupancy of designated areas shall be respected by third parties. Legislation establishing Indian reservations follows various patterns.

(1) Perhaps the most common type of such legislation today

is that which reserves a portion of the public domain from entry on sale and dedicates the reserved area to Indian use. The designated area is "set aside" or "reserved" for a given tribe, band, or group of Indians.<sup>1</sup> Frequently the statute uses the

<sup>1</sup> See, e.g., Act of March 4, 1863, 12 Stat. 819 ("assign to and set apart for the Shoshone, Washiton, Medawak nation, and Wahpachoota bands of Sioux Indians"), Act of May 21, 1908, 44 Stat. 614 (Mashan and Quante Indians), Act of March 8, 1928, 45 Stat. 182 (Indians of Indian Ranch, Inyo County, California).

phrase "reserved for the sole use and occupancy" or on some similar phrase.<sup>116</sup> Other statutes of this type provide that designated lands shall be "reserved as additions for" or "made reservations of," or that the boundaries of a designated reservation be "extended to include" specified lands.<sup>117</sup> Occasionally the public lands so set aside are lands which have previously been used for another purpose and the prior purpose may be mentioned in the statute.<sup>118</sup> In some of these statutes, the designation of the Indian beneficiaries of the reservation to be established is delegated to administrative discretion. These statutes, typically, provide that public lands shall be reserved for the use and occupancy of certain named bands or tribes,<sup>119</sup> and such other Indians as the Secretary of the Interior may see fit to settle thereon.<sup>120</sup>

(2) Another and distinct type of statute authorizes the purchase, either by voluntary sale or by condemnation,<sup>121</sup> of private lands for Indian use, and allocates these private lands in the United States Territory not otherwise appropriated,<sup>122</sup> or, in the alternative

native tribal lands of the tribe benefited.<sup>123</sup> Some of these statutes authorize the purchase of land for Indians without using the word "reservation."<sup>124</sup> Since the decision of the Supreme Court in *United States v. McGowan*<sup>125</sup> it has been clear that there is no magic in the word "reservation" and that land purchased for Indian use and occupancy is a "reservation," at least within the meaning of the Indian liquor laws, whether or not the statute uses the term. Although the issue presented in the *McGowan* case was one of criminal jurisdiction rather than of property right, the views therein expressed appear to be a pertinent to the determination of tribal property as in the determination of federal jurisdiction. The Court declared, *per* Black J. "It is immaterial whether Congress designates a settlement as a 'reservation' or a 'colony'." (pp. 538, 539). The Court, quoting from its earlier opinion in *United States v. Phelan*,<sup>126</sup> indicated that the important issue was whether the land had "been validly set apart for the use of the Indians in such, under the superintendence of the Government." (p. 539). The determination of this question requires an ascertainment of the purpose underlying the pertinent legislation, to which end consideration may be given to committee hearings and reports (p. 537).

(3) In addition to the two major methods of establishing Indian reservations by statute, *public land withdrawal and purchase of private land*, a third method, the surrender of private lands in exchange for public lands, is followed in a number of statutes. A typical statute is that of June 14, 1934,<sup>127</sup> commonly known as the Arizona New Mexico Boundary Act, which authorizes the Secretary of the Interior in his discretion to accept relinquishments and reconveyances to the United States of such privately owned lands as in his opinion are clearly this fee, and should be reserved for the use and benefit of, a particular tribe of Indians, "so that the lands returned for Indian purposes may be consolidated and held in a solid acre as far as may be possible."<sup>128</sup> Upon conveyance to the United States of a good and sufficient title to such privately owned land, the owners thereof, or their assigns, are authorized under regulations of the Secretary of the Interior, to select lands approximately equal in value to the lands thus conveyed. Summa in effect are statutes authorizing the grant of public lands to a state in exchange for the relinquishment of state lands for Indian use.<sup>129</sup>

<sup>116</sup> Act of March 3, 1928, 45 Stat. 162 (Koshute Band of Indians in Arizona), Act of May 21, 1926, 49 Stat. 717 (Indians of the Acoma Pueblo), Act of February 12, 1922, 42 Stat. 1102 (Klamath Band of Indians in Utah), Act of June 20, 1910, 49 Stat. 973 (Klamath Band of Indians in Idaho).

<sup>117</sup> Act of March 3, 1907, 2 Stat. 484 (reserved for the use of the said [Navaho] tribe and their descendants so long as they continue to reside thereon and cultivate the soil), Act of April 12, 1924, 43 Stat. 94 (Zuni Pueblo), Act of March 2, 1925, 43 Stat. 1114 ("Navajo Indians residing in this immediate vicinity"), Act of May 10, 1926, 44 Stat. 406 (Mescal Grande Reservation), Act of June 1, 1928, 44 Stat. 679 (Mescal Grande Reservation), Act of March 3, 1928, 45 Stat. 360 (Indians of the Walker River Reservation), Act of February 11, 1929, 45 Stat. 1101 (San Indefonso Pueblo), Act of January 17, 1936, 49 Stat. 1001 (Indians of the Tonto Post McDowell Military Reservation, Nev.), Act of February 21, 1931, 46 Stat. 1201 (Lincolnton or Peshawar Indian Reservation), Act of February 22, 1932, 47 Stat. 50 (Goshute Valley Indian Reservation), Act of May 14, 1935, 49 Stat. 217 (Rocky Boy Indian Reservation), Act of June 22, 1930, 49 Stat. 1606 (Walker River Indian Reservation) and of Act of April 22, 1937, 50 Stat. 72 ("set aside as an addition to the Batons Ranch, a tract of land purchased for the Captain Grande Band of Mescal Grande Indians; authorities contained in the Act of May 14, 1935, 47 Stat. 116").

<sup>118</sup> Act of May 28, 1937, 50 Stat. 241 (Koshute Band Indian Reservation in Utah).

<sup>119</sup> Act of June 7, 1937, 49 Stat. 432 ("Certain" Administration lands to be held by the United States in trust for the Navaho Indians), Act of June 20, 1935, 49 Stat. 891 (National Forest lands "withdrawn from the Public National Forest and withdrawn as an addition to the Zuni Indian Reservation").

<sup>120</sup> Act of April 25, 1974, 18 Stat. 28 ("use and occupancy of the Goshute, Piiguan, Blood, Blackfoot, Flathead, Crow, and such other Indians as the President may from time to time see fit to locate thereon"), Act of September 7, 1916, 39 Stat. 719 ("set apart as a reservation for Rocky Boy's Band of Chippewa, and such other homeless Indians in the State of Montana as the Secretary of the Interior may see fit to locate thereon"), Act of May 31, 1924, 49 Stat. 246 ("certain bands of Paiute Indians, and such other Indians of this title as the Secretary of the Interior may see fit to settle thereon"), Act of March 4, 1928, 45 Stat. 360 (Paiute and Shoshone), Act of April 14, 1938, 52 Stat. 216 (Go-shute), Act of April 8, 1904, 34 Stat. 2, 11 Stat. 49 ("title of land").

<sup>121</sup> To be returned by the United States for the purposes of, Indians, and such other Indians of this title as the Secretary of the Interior may see fit to settle thereon), Act of March 4, 1928, 45 Stat. 360 (Paiute and Shoshone), Act of April 14, 1938, 52 Stat. 216 (Go-shute), Act of April 8, 1904, 34 Stat. 2, 11 Stat. 49 ("title of land").

<sup>122</sup> To be returned by the United States for the purposes of, Indians, and such other Indians of this title as the Secretary of the Interior may see fit to settle thereon), Act of March 4, 1928, 45 Stat. 360 (Paiute and Shoshone), Act of April 14, 1938, 52 Stat. 216 (Go-shute), Act of April 8, 1904, 34 Stat. 2, 11 Stat. 49 ("title of land").

<sup>123</sup> To be returned by the United States for the purposes of, Indians, and such other Indians of this title as the Secretary of the Interior may see fit to settle thereon), Act of March 4, 1928, 45 Stat. 360 (Paiute and Shoshone), Act of April 14, 1938, 52 Stat. 216 (Go-shute), Act of April 8, 1904, 34 Stat. 2, 11 Stat. 49 ("title of land").

<sup>124</sup> Act of June 23, 1928, 44 Stat. 817 (Go-shute), *in United States v. 4,590 Acres of Land*, 27 F. Supp. 167 (D. C. Minn. 1949).

<sup>125</sup> Act of June 7, 1937, 49 Stat. 891 ("No purchase of a tract of land, with sufficient water right attached, for the use and occupancy of the Tumacac Band of homeless Indians, located at Ruby Valley, Nevada, provided, That the title to said land is to be held in the United States for the benefit of said Indians"), Act of June 14, 1934, 48 Stat. 302 (California), Act of June 8, 1926, 44 Stat. 690 (Santa Ynez Indian Reservation), Act of January 31, 1931, 46 Stat. 1048 ("purchase of a village site for the Indians now living near Elko, Nevada"), Act of April 17, 1937, 50 Stat. 69 (Santa Rosa Band of Mission Indians).

<sup>126</sup> Act of February 12, 1922, 42 Stat. 1089 (Theville Reservation), Act of May 29, 1934, 47 Stat. 902 (Fort Apache Reservation), Act of April 16, 1930, 46 Stat. 218 (Wind River Reservation), Act of March 4, 1928, 45 Stat. 367 (Fort Apache Indian Reservation), Act of June 14, 1934, 48 Stat. 302 (California), Act of June 14, 1934, 48 Stat. 302 (California), Act of June 14, 1934, 48 Stat. 302 (California).

<sup>127</sup> Act of July 1, 1932, 47 Stat. 127 (Wichita-Winnagoes), Act of September 11, 1922, 42 Stat. 971 (Apache Indians of Oklahoma), Act of March 2, 1925, 43 Stat. 1096 ("for the use and occupancy of a small band of the Piute Indians now residing thereon. Provided That the title to said land is to be held in the United States for the benefit of said Indians"), Act of May 19, 1936, 44 Stat. 406 ("hold to and become a part of the site for the Reno Indian colony"), Act of June 27, 1930, 46 Stat. 820 (land acquired by "Indian colony" to be purchased the title to be held in the name of the United States Government, for the use of the Indians).

<sup>128</sup> 302 U. S. 543 (1938), 115 F. 2d 291 (C. C. 9, 1937), aff'd, sub nom. *United States v. Ono Okonishi Sedan*, 36 F. Supp. 404 (D. C. Nev. 1938).

<sup>129</sup> 302 U. S. 542, 459 (1934).

<sup>130</sup> Act of March 7, 1923, 13 Stat. 3171 (see also Act of May 21, 1926, 49 Stat. 778, is amended by Act of February 21, 1931, 46 Stat. 1204 (Western Navaho Indian Reservation), Act of March 1, 1945, 47 Stat. 1418 (Navaho Reservation in Utah), Act of May 29, 1934, 48 Stat. 780 (Fort Mojave).

<sup>131</sup> Act of February 11, 1903, 32 Stat. 822 (disputed lands confirmed to Toros Band of Mission Indians and new public domain lands transferred to state), Act of March 1, 1921, 41 Stat. 1198, Act of June 14,

Various combinations<sup>100</sup> as well as minor variations,<sup>101</sup> of the foregoing three basic methods have been used in other statutes.

(4) Distinct mention should be made of "reservation removal" statutes which authorize the sale of reservation lands and the re-vestment of the proceeds of such sale in the acquisition of new lands for the benefit of the tribe concerned.<sup>102</sup> Generally such statutes provide for the consent of the Indians.<sup>103</sup>

(5) A fifth type of statute establishing tribal property in reservation lands involves the vesting of a tribe of lands previously removed from tribal ownership.<sup>104</sup>

(6) A sixth source of tribal title is congressional legislation approving voluntary transfers of lands by another tribe,<sup>105</sup> state,<sup>106</sup> or individual.<sup>107</sup>

(7) Finally, it should be noted that tribal ownership is frequently confirmed, if not created, in allotment and cession acts with respect to lands withheld from allotment or cession.<sup>108</sup>

1916 49 Stat. 469 ("Upon conveyance to the United States by the heirs of a Indian of a sufficient title to the lands to be required for the use of the Bureau of Indian Affairs, the Secretary of the Interior is authorized to issue a patent . . . to the State of Idaho. . .").

1906 Act of June 21, 1920 44 Stat. 764 (Chippewa), Act of February 27, 1901 sec. 2, 46 Stat. 1262 (public lands reserved for the use and occupancy of the Pigeon Indians in addition to the Pigeon Indian Reservation, Arizona, where the public lands were and lands except within claims within said addition have been purchased and required as hereinafter authorized), Act of April 11, 1918 42 Stat. 216 (to-which). The first aimed at title provided for the use of condemnation power to complete consolidation of a given reservation, and authorized the use of tribal lands to pay for lands acquired.

1907 Act of May 29, 1915, 49 Stat. 312 (Minnesota Minitonk Park Reserve lands transferred to Chippewa tribe upon repayment of sums originally paid for such lands), Act of August 28, 1917 40 Stat. 984 (interest in Blackfeet lands acquired by United States reclamation purposes passed to tribe), Cf. Act of February 26, 1927, 45 Stat. 1001 (Kiowa, Comanche, and Apache).

1917 Act of June 3, 1917, 41 Stat. 228, 229 ("That upon and confirmed in title (Donor's reservation), Act of April 30, 1876, 19 Stat. 28 ("purchase of a suitable tract in the Indian territory for the Pigeon tribe of Indians"), Act of February 25, 1919 40 Stat. 1208 ("purchase of additional lands for the Captain George Band of Indians . . . to properly establish these Indians permanently on the lands purchased for them").

1914 Act of March 9, 1885, sec. 6, 23 Stat. 151, 152 (Iowa and Fox and Iowa), Act of March 4, 1881, sec. 5, 21 Stat. 380, 381 ("That the Secretary of the Interior may, with the consent of the Sioux and Mescalero Indians, expressed in open council, convey their reservation lands upon which to locate said Indians . . . and expend such sum . . . to be drawn from the fund arising from the sale of their reservation lands").

1917 Act of May 24, 1917, 40 Stat. 138 (three patents conveyed and lands included to the heirs of tribal property). Second Act of May 24, 1917 40 Stat. 138 (Winnebago), Act of February 13, 1920 45 Stat. 1107 (certain lands reserved in Yankton Sioux Tribe), Act of March 9, 1917 44 Stat. 1461 (Fort Peck, payment for agency land intended to Federal Government), see also the Indian Reorganization Act, June 19, 1934 48 Stat. 984, which in sec. 8 provides that "The Secretary of the Interior, if he shall find it to be in the public interest, is hereby authorized to re-vest to tribal ownership the remaining surplus lands of any Indian reservation heretofore opened, or authorized to be opened, to sale or any other sort of disposal by Presidential proclamation or by any of the public land laws of the United States. . . . For a more detailed discussion see section 7 of this chapter.

1917 Joint Resolution of July 25, 1918 9 Stat. 437 (cession by Delaware Tribe to Wyandotte), Act of February 23, 1889 26 Stat. 657 (agreement for the settlement of Indian Indians upon Fort Hall Reservation).

1917 Act of February 16, 1920, 45 Stat. 1183 (Alabama and Coushatta Indians of Texas).

1917 Act of August 15, 1876, 19 Stat. 149 (lands to be accepted by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs "and conveyed to the Eastern Band of Cherokee Indians in fee simple").

1917 " . . . for school, church and cemetery purposes . . . shall be held as common property of the respective tribes."

1917 Act of March 2, 1889, sec. 1, 26 Stat. 1013 (United Pottawatomie and Miami), Act of June 28, 1869, sec. 11, 80 Stat. 495, 497 (Indian Territory), Act of June 6, 1900, sec. 9, 31 Stat. 674 677 (see note for the use in common by said Indian in title (Kiowa, Comanche, and Apache), 400,000 acres of public lands), Joint Resolution of June 19, 1905, 35 Stat. 741 (Walker River, Utah), Act of December 21, 1904, 38 Stat. 695

similar to the statutes which divide up a single reservation among various component tribes or bands.<sup>109</sup> Such division being based upon the consent of the Indians concerned.

## A LEGISLATIVE DEFINITIONS OF TRIBAL PROPERTY RIGHTS

The foregoing statutes, except as otherwise noted, generally provide for the establishment of tribal lands, or reservations, without defining the precise character of the tribal interest therein. Certain statutes, however, seek to define precisely the extent of such tribal interest.

A number of these statutes, for instance, specify that a fee simple title shall be vested in the Indian tribe.<sup>110</sup> Of particular importance in this category are the statutes authorizing the patenting of land to the Pueblos of New Mexico and to the Mission Bands of California Indians. The former of these statutes<sup>111</sup> is utilized in Chapter 20, section 6, of this volume. The latter statute<sup>112</sup> directed the Secretary of the Interior to appoint three commissioners (see 1) for the purpose of selecting

" . . . a reservation for each band or village of the Mission Indians residing within said State, which reservation shall include, in far as practicable, the lands and villages which have been in the tribal occupation and possession of said Indians, and which shall be sufficient in extent to meet then just requirements, which selection shall be valid when approved by the President and Secretary of the Interior. . . . (Sec. 2)

The Secretary of the Interior was directed to issue a patent for each of the reservations.

" . . . which patents shall be of the legal effect, and declare that the United States does and will hold the land thus patented subject to the provisions of section four of this act, for the period of twenty-five years, in that, for the sole use and benefit of the band or village to which it is issued, and that at the expiration of said period the United States will convey the same in the remaining portion not previously patented in severalty by patent to said band or village, discharged of said trust, and free of all charge or incumbrance whatsoever. . . . (Sec. 3)

The Secretary of the Interior was further authorized to cause allotments to be made out of such reservation land to any Indian residing upon such patented land who shall be so advanced in civilization as to be capable of owning and improving land in severalty. (Sec. 4) Individual patents were to "overrule" the group patent (see 5). The Attorney General was directed to

(Yakima), Act of June 1, 1920 41 Stat. 751 (Crow). Act of May 19, 1924 43 Stat. 142 (Lac du Flambeau Band of Chippewa), Act of February 13, 1929 45 Stat. 1107 (Yankton Sioux).

1917 Act of April 30, 1885 25 Stat. 94 (Sioux). Act of May 1, 1888, 26 Stat. 111 (Fort Peck, Fort Belknap, Blackfeet).

1917 Act of August 14, 1870, 19 Stat. 199 (Eastern Cherokee), Act of March 9, 1885, sec. 7 and 8, 23 Stat. 391, 392 (see note for Iowa), Act of March 17, 1926 44 Stat. 681 ("Title to . . . is hereby conveyed to the free and paid Nation or Tribe of Indians unconditionally").

1917 Act of June 6, 1900 31 Stat. 107 (Secretary of the Interior authorized to "convert by deed" abandoned Indian school lands "to the Lane Band of Lake Superior Indians for community meetings and other like purposes").

1917 " . . . provided, That said conveyance shall be made to three members of the land duly elected by said Indians as trustees for the band and their successors in office", Act of February 13, 1920, 45 Stat. 1107 ("all claim, right, title, and interest in and to acreage lands reserved in Yankton Sioux Tribe"). Cf. Act of June 3, 1926, 44 Stat. 690 (declaring executive order reservation lands set apart for "permanent use and occupancy" to be "the property of said Indians, subject to such control and management of said property as the Congress of the United States may direct").

1917 Act of December 29, 1876, 19 Stat. 374 ("a patent to issue therefor as in ordinary cases of private individuals"), extended to Zuni Pueblo by Act of March 8, 1915, 40 Stat. 1509.

1917 Act of January 12, 1891, 26 Stat. 712.

defend the rights of Indian groups "secured to them in the original grants from the Mexican Government" (sec. 6)

The provisions of this legislation have been modified in certain respects by later enactments<sup>2</sup> and have been incorporated by reference in a number of subsequent acts dealing with the Mission Indians of California.<sup>3,4</sup>

While the foregoing statutes may be construed to grant an estate greater than the ordinary tribal title, there are other statutes which rigidly confine the interest of the Indians in a given tract by specifying the particular purpose for which the tract is to be used.<sup>2</sup> Other statutes specify that the land is

established for Indian use under the supervision of the Secretary of the Interior or under rules and regulations to be prescribed by him' or that the land shall not be subject to allotment.<sup>10</sup>

[illegible]

<sup>1</sup> Act of March 3, 1801 sec 15, 28 Stat 1095 (Mishikatta Indians).  
Act of June 24 1920 46 Stat 703 (Chippewa Indians of Minnesota).  
<sup>2</sup> Act of March 3 1801 sec 17, 28 Stat 1095 (Mishikatta Indians).  
Act of February 13, 1929, 45 Stat. 1167 (Yankton Sioux).

## SECTION 7 EXECUTIVE ORDER RESERVATIONS

Although the practice of establishing Indian reservations by Executive order goes back at least to May 18, 1835,<sup>1</sup> the practice rested on an uncertain legislative foundation prior to the General Allotment Act.<sup>2</sup> In fact, so uncertain was the legislative foundation for the exercising of the power by the Executive that the Attorney General in upholding its legality in an opinion rendered in 1882, did so chiefly on the basis that the practice had been followed for many years and Congress had never objected.<sup>3</sup>

Questions as to the validity of the already established Executive order reservations were settled<sup>1</sup> by the language of the General Allotment Act which referred to "any reservation created by the United States, either by treaty stipulation or by virtue of an Act of Congress, or Executive order setting apart the same for that use." \* \* \* (sec. 1). The view that Executive order reservations have exactly the same validity and status as any other type of reservation is expressed in a carefully documented opinion of Attorney General Stone, rendered with respect to the validity of attempts by Secretary of the Interior Fall to dispose of minerals within Executive order Indian reservations under the laws governing minerals within the public domain. In holding the proposed practice to be illegal, the Attorney General declared

That the President had authority at the date of the orders to withdraw public lands, and set them apart for the benefit of the Indians, or for other public purposes, is now settled beyond the possibility of controversy. *United States v. Midwest Oil Co.*, 236 U. S. 479, *Mason v. United States*, 280 U. S. 545. And aside from this, the General Indian Allotment Act of February 8, 1887 (24 Stat. 888, Sec. 1), clearly recognizes and by necessary implication

confirms Indian reservations "heretofore" or "hereafter"  
established by executive orders.

Whether the President might legally abolish in whole or in part, Indian reservations, once created by him, has been seriously questioned (12 L R 203, 14 L R 628) and yet without strong reason, for the Indian rights, attach when the lands are thus set aside, and moreover, the lands then at once become subject to allotment under the General Allotment Act. Nevertheless, the President has in the past, been charged with changing the boundaries of executive order Indian reservations, excluding Indians therefrom, and the question of his authority to do so has not, as yet, come before the courts.

When, by an executive order, public lands are set aside, either as a new Indian reservation or in addition to an old one without further language indicating that the action is a mere temporary expedient, such lands are thenceforth properly known and designated as an "Indian reservation" and so long, at least, as the order continues in force, the Indians have the right of occupancy and use and the United States has the title in fee. *Spading v. Chandler*, 160 U. S. 304. *In re Wilson*, 140 U. S. 375.

But a right of "occupancy" or "occupancy and use" in the Indians with the fee title in the sovereign (the Crown, the original States, the United States) is the same condition of title which has prevailed in this country from the beginning, except in a few instances like those of the Chickasaws and Choctaws, who received patents for their new tribal lands on removing to the West. And the Indian right of occupancy is as sacred as the fee title of the sovereign.

The courts have applied this legal theory indiscriminately to lands subject to the original Indian occupancy, to reservations resulting from the cession by Indians of their lands to the United States, and to lands ceded by the United States to reservations established in the West in exchange for lands in the East, and to reservations created by treaty. Act of Congress, on executive order, out of those of occupancy and use and the fee was in the United States. *Johnson v. McIntosh*, 8 Wheat 543, *Michell v. United States*, 11 Wheat 516, *The Sloop "Thetis"*, 12 Wall 591, *Goodwin v. United States*, 10 Pet 457, *United States v. 69 U S 788, 742, Seneca Nation v. Christy*, 162 U S 288, 288-9, *Becker v. Welch*, 91 U S 517, 527, *Minnesota v. Hitchcock*, 187 U S 988, *Jones v. M'Intosh*, 376 U S 1, 1-2.

<sup>127</sup> J4 Op A G 181, 186-189 (1924)

<sup>120</sup> Act of February 8 1887, 24 Stat 855

<sup>126</sup>Indian Reservations, 17 Op. A.G. 258 (1882), in 1887 the Attorney General ruled that an act of Congress would be necessary in order to establish a reservation in Alaska for Indians emigrating from Canada since the President's "power to declare permanent reservation for Indians to the exclusion of others on the public domain does not extend to Indians not born or resident in the United States." 18 Op. A.G. 587, 589 (1887).

<sup>10</sup> See 20 Op. A. G. 239, 241 (1911), and see *In re Wilson*, 140 U. S. 575, 577 (1891).

*Spalding v Chandler*, 160 U.S. 194, 14 *Padden v Mountain View Mill & Mill Co.*, 97 Fed. 670, 173, *Gibson v Anderson*, 131 Fed. 29.

In *Spalding v Chandler*, *supra* which involved in executive order Indian reservation the Supreme Court said (pp. 402, 403)

"It has been settled by repeated admissions of this court that the fee of the land in this country in the original occupation of the Indian tribes was from the time of the formation of this government vested in the United States. The Indian title as against the United States was merely a title and right to the perpetual occupancy of the land with the privilege of using it in such mode as the tribe in mutual self-right of occupation had been understood in the government. When Indian reservations were created either in treaty or executive order, the Indians held the land by the same character of title, with the right to possess and occupy the lands for the uses and purposes designated."

In *Padden v Mountain View Mill & Mill Co.*, *supra* the Circuit Court of Appeals for the Ninth Circuit said (p. 673)

On the 9th day of April, 1872, in executive order was issued by President Grant, by which was set apart as a reservation for certain selected Indians and for such other Indians as the department of the interior should see fit to locate thereon, a certain scope of country bounded on the east and south by the Columbia river, on the west by the Okanogan river, and on the north by the British possessions, hereafter known as the 'Colville Indian Reservation'. There can be no doubt of the power of the president to reserve those lands of the United States for the use of the Indians. The effect of that executive order was the same as would have been effected with the Indians for the same purpose, and was to exclude all intrusion upon the territory thus reserved by any individual person, other than the Indians for whose benefit the reservation was made for hunting as well as other purposes."

The latter decision was reversed by the Supreme Court and on an entirely different ground (180 U.S. 673). The views expressed in the *Padden* case were reaffirmed by the same court in *Gibson v Anderson*, *supra* involving a reservation created by executive order for the Spokane Indians.

The General Indian Allotment Act of February 8, 1887 (24 Stat. 388, Sec. 1), is based upon the same local theory as the decisions of the courts, but it is expressly made applicable to "any reservation created by treaty, or by treaty stipulation or by statute or by Act of Congress, or executive order setting apart the same for their use."

A few years after the foregoing opinion was rendered, the question raised by Attorney General Stone as to the propriety of modifying Executive order reservations by new Executive orders received its legislative answer in section 4 of the Act of March 9, 1897,<sup>121</sup> which declared

"That hereafter changes in the boundary of a reservation created by Executive order, proclamation, or otherwise for the use and occupation of Indians shall not be made except by Act of Congress. *Provided* That this shall not apply to temporary withdrawals by the Secretary of the Interior."

Some years earlier, a general prohibition against the creation of new Executive order reservations, or new additions to existing reservations had been enacted, in these terms

"That hereafter no public lands of the United States shall be withdrawn by Executive Order, proclamation, or otherwise, for or as an Indian reservation except by act of Congress."

The foregoing statute, which terminates the practice of creating Indian reservations by Executive order, remains in force to this day, except with respect to the Territory of Alaska, where it has been substantially repealed by section 2 of the Act of May 1, 1936.<sup>122</sup> It may be argued that the procedure of establishing reservations by Executive order is survived, *pro tanto*, by section 3 of the Act of June 25, 1934,<sup>123</sup> which authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to add to existing reservations by reserving to Indian ownership "the remaining surplus lands of any Indian reservation heretofore opened, or authorized to be opened to sale, or any other land at disposal by Presidential proclamation, or by any of the public laws of the United States." Under this provision, it has been administratively held that the reservation of land need be for the benefit of the entire tribe that would according to the terms of the reservation, be entitled to accept from the sale thereof, rather than to a fraction of the tribe, to which the land formerly belonged.<sup>124</sup>

Executive orders setting apart public lands for Indian reservations or Indian use are by no means uniform. Perhaps the most common type of order is that which purports to set apart a designated area for the use,<sup>125</sup> at use and occupancy,<sup>126</sup> or as a reservation<sup>127</sup> for a particular tribe or tribes of Indians. Frequently the order uses the term "permanent use and occupancy."<sup>128</sup> Other orders of this type provide that designated

<sup>121</sup> 49 Stat. 1230. See Chapter 21, sec. 8.

<sup>122</sup> 48 Stat. 985, 25 U.S.C. 405.

<sup>123</sup> 48 Stat. 1230, 25 U.S.C. 1905 (Chippewa). Op. Sol. I. D. W. 24991 August 1, 1914 (Red Lake, Chippewa). While this is a proceeding *in rem* against land instead of *in rem* against a tribe, it has been administratively decided that such land remains unaffected by the reservation and may be enforced by judicial process.

<sup>124</sup> Executive order March 12, 1871 (Mojave River), Executive order November 4, 1873 (Lac Lake), Executive order November 4, 1873 (Omumet), Executive order February 25, 1874 (Stokomish), Executive order May 26, 1875 (Lac Lake), Executive order May 26, 1875 (Winnemucca), Executive order November 21, 1897 (Navajo), Executive order June 2, 1911 (Hualapai), Executive order May 29, 1912 (Hualapai), Executive order March 11, 1912 (Smith River), Executive order April 24, 1912 (Chukchansi Band), Executive order February 10, 1912 (Shavito), Executive order May 6, 1913 (Shavito), Executive order February 12, 1913 (Shavito) (for the "Shavito"), Executive order December 19, 1906 (Imperial), Executive order March 22, 1914 (Goshute), Executive order November 10, 1914 (Spokane), Executive order October 1, 1915 (Fort Apache), Executive order February 1, 1917 (Winemucca), Executive order February 4, 1918 (Winnemucca).

<sup>125</sup> Executive order November 22, 1873 (Lac Lake), Executive order, March 16, 1877 (Wind Pueblo), Executive order May 1, 1881 (Fort Apache), Executive order June 8, 1880 (Sappa), Executive order November 21, 1880 (Sappa), Executive order January 15, 1881 (Sappa), Executive order March 31, 1882 (Sappa), Executive order December 16, 1882 (Mogul), Executive order January 4, 1884 (Tribal), Executive order November 26, 1884 (Southern Cheyenne), Executive order February 11, 1887 (Hualapai), Executive order March 14, 1887 (Mojave), Executive order June 15, 1902 (San Felipe Pueblo), Executive order September 4, 1902 (Nimble Pueblo), Executive order July 29, 1903 (Santa Clara Pueblo), Executive order May 6, 1917 (Colony of Nevada) (for the Nevada or Colony Tribe), Executive order November 27, 1917 (Cochise).

<sup>126</sup> Executive order, November 8, 1871 (Bear D'Arne), Executive order July 1, 1875 (Mojave River), Executive order May 10, 1877 (Carlin Plains), Executive order April 18, 1877 (Duck Valley), Executive order January 7, 1879 (Southern Ute), Executive order March 18, 1879 (White Earth), Executive order, June 27, 1879 (Drifting Goose), Executive order, September 21, 1880 (Jicarilla Apache), Executive order, December 20, 1884 (Vermilion Lake), Executive order, January 5, 1882 (Cocopah), Executive order, September 11, 1893 (Hoh), Executive order, May 6, 1899 (Mission), Executive order, April 12, 1901 (Owtoye), Executive order June 28, 1911 (Sonoma), Executive order, March 28, 1914 (Kahspet), Executive order, January 14, 1915 (Papago).

<sup>127</sup> Executive order December 27, 1875 (Mission), Executive order, May 15, 1878 (Mission), Executive order, April 19, 1879 (Colonia or Mow), Executive order, March 8, 1880 (Colonia or Mow), Executive order, March 2, 1881 (Mission), Executive order, June 19, 1888 (Mojave).

<sup>121</sup> 34 Op. A.G. 181, 186-189 (1904).

<sup>122</sup> 44 Stat. 1947.

<sup>123</sup> Act of June 30, 1919, sec. 27, 41 Stat. 5, 84 Op. Chapter 20, to 90.







an Indian tribe, through purchase, gift, exchange or assignment or through relinquishment of land by individual Indians is authorized by section 5 of the Act of June 18, 1934.<sup>100</sup> It has been held that the purpose of "providing land for Indians" is served by an exchange transaction whereby an individual Indian transfers allotted land to the tribe in exchange for an assignment of occupancy rights in the same or in another tract, since the tribe through this transaction acquires a definite interest in the land over and above the transferor's retained occupancy right.<sup>101</sup> Where a tribe exchanges land with a non-Indian, under this section, the value of the land acquired must be equal to, or greater than, the value of the land ceded, since the purpose of section 5 is to increase the tribal estate rather than to open the way to its alienation.<sup>102</sup>

Relinquishments of individual timber and mineral rights to the tribe have been made in consideration of other similar relinquishments by other members of the tribe.<sup>103</sup> The result of such a transaction is that each member of the tribe has an undivided interest in the entire mineral and timber wealth of the reservation, instead of a particular interest in the possible timber and mineral wealth of his own allotment.

It has been held that a tribe may purchase allotted lands in husband status where such lands are offered for sale by the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>104</sup> The mechanics of such a transaction are elsewhere discussed.<sup>105</sup>

The acquisition of land by one tribe from another was at one time a common method of acquiring tribal property. The distinction between such a transfer and a transaction whereby one tribe is dissolved and its members incorporated in another tribe, is carefully analyzed by the Supreme Court in the case of *Onio Nation v. Jacksonville*.<sup>106</sup>

For some time it was doubted whether land conveyed to an Indian tribe by private parties was under the protection of the Federal Government. These doubts were largely dissipated by the case of *United States v. 7,165.2 Acres of Land*,<sup>107</sup> in which it was held that lands of the Eastern Cherokee of North Carolina were not subject to a claim of adverse possession. In an opinion which illuminates the subject, the court declared, *per Parker, J.*

As we were at pains to point out in the *Wright Case*, it makes no difference that title to the land in controversy was originally obtained by grant from the State of North Carolina, or that the Indians are citizens of that state and subject to its laws. The determinative fact is that

the federal government has assumed towards them the same sort of guardianship that it exercises over other tribes of Indians, from which it results that their property becomes an instrumentality of that government for the accomplishment of a proper governmental purpose and may not be taken from them by contract adverse possession, or otherwise without its consent. *United States v. Chandler*, 273 U. S. 432, 40-46 Ct. 561, 562 70 L. Ed. 1021; *United States v. Minnesota*, 270 U. S. 181 248, 46-48 Ct. 286, 301, 70 L. Ed. 489; *United States v. Sandford*, 233 U. S. 28, 34 Ct. 1, 58 L. Ed. 107; *Trudeau v. United States*, 221 U. S. 413, 438, 32 S. Ct. 124, 36 L. Ed. 820. Indeed, a statute of the United States expressly forbids the acquisition of lands of any Indian tribe in purchase, grant, sale, or other conveyance, except by treaty or convention and subject to peculiar approval and being employed under the authority of the United States who attempts to negotiate such treaty. R. S. 2316, 23 U. S. C. A. 177. This statute protects Indians, such as these as well as the non-Indian tribes. *United States v. Chandler*, *supra* and the protection is not affected by reason of the fact that the land has been incorporated under a state charter and attempts to take upon themselves. *United States v. Boyd*, *supra* 1 Ct. 481 P. 773. Certainly if the land was not attainable by the Indians, title could not be obtained as against them by adverse possession. *Schump v. Stokton*, 189 U. S. 290, 295, 22 S. Ct. 107, 46 L. Ed. 207; *Garcia v. United States*, 10 Ct. 48 P. 2d 873. (Pp. 422-423)

If adverse possession will not give title under state statutes of limitation against restricted allotments of individual Indians, a fiction such possession cannot give title to lands held in trust for the common benefit of the tribe over which the United States exercises guardianship. It is beyond the power of the state, either through statutes of limitation or adverse possession, to affect the interest of the United States, and the United States is indirectly but an interest in preserving the property of these wards of the government for their use and benefit. As said in the *Lockman Case*, *supra* (22 S. Ct. 4 page 132), "If these Indians may be divested of their lands they will be thrown back upon the Nation a paupered, discontented . . . people." The lands held for them are thus an instrumentality in the discharge of the duty which the government has assumed toward them. Title to it can no more be acquired by adverse possession under state statute, than to land held for other governmental purposes. (P. 422)

A further step in accumulating the status of lands purchased for Indians to the status of treaty, Executive order, and statutory reservations was taken in the Act of February 14, 1923,<sup>108</sup> which extended the provisions of the General Allotment Act<sup>109</sup> as amended, which in terms covered only reservations created "either by its stipulation or by virtue of an act of Congress or executive order setting apart the same for their use," to "all lands heretofore purchased or which may hereafter be purchased by authority of Congress for the use or benefit of any individual Indian or band or tribe of Indians."

<sup>107</sup> 42 Stat. 1248

<sup>108</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 588

## SECTION 9 TRIBAL TITLE DERIVED FROM OTHER SOVEREIGNTIES

The analysis of tribal rights in land is complicated by the fact that all of the territory of the United States (with the possible exception of Oregon territory) was at one time subject to some other sovereignty, and it has been the consistent policy of the United States to respect rights in real property recognized under such prior sovereignty. This policy, based upon international law,<sup>110</sup> has been affirmed in our various treaties with Spain,

France, Great Britain, Mexico, and Russia. It would take us far beyond the limits of this volume to analyze in any detail the principles of Spanish, French, British, Mexican, and Russian law governing aboriginal titles. It is necessary, however, to refer to the statutes and judicial decisions of this country which interpret the applicable principles of foreign law and mark out the authority which the courts of this Nation will accord to such principles.

In some measure the Spanish and Mexican law relating to the Pueblo of New Mexico and the Russian law relating to the

<sup>110</sup> See *Baker v. Harvey*, 181 U. S. 481 (1901) (discussing Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo)

natives of Alaska are dealt with in separate chapters,<sup>1</sup> and need not be discussed at this point. The relevance of Spanish and Mexican law is not, however, limited to the problems of the Picholos of New Mexico. The cession of Florida and the land claims of nomadic Indians in the later Mexican sessions often involve difficult questions of Spanish law.

The California Private Land Claims Act of March 3, 1851,<sup>2</sup> provided a means for determining land titles established under Mexican law, including rights of permanent occupancy vested in Indian tribes. It has been held that claims not presented to the Commission established under this act have been waived, even though such claims emanate from Indian tribes not practically in a position to present them at the time when the commission was functioning.<sup>3</sup>

The effect of Spanish and British law upon Indian rights within the Florida cession was analyzed by the Supreme Court in the case of *Wichita v. United States*,<sup>4</sup> from which the following excerpts are taken:

We now come to consider the nature and extent of the Indian title to these lands.

As Florida was for 30 years under the dominion of Great Britain, the laws of that country were in force as the rule by which lands were held and sold. It will be necessary to examine before they were as applicable to the British provinces before the acquisition of the Floridas in the treaty of 1763. One of the great difficulties in the way of their prevalence from their first settlement as appears in their laws, is that friendly Indians were protected in the possession of the lands they occupied and were considered as occupying them by perpetual right. The right of nation inhabiting them, as their common property, from generation to generation, not as the right of the individuals located on particular spots.

Subject to this right of possession, the ultimate fee was in the crown and its grantees, which could be granted by the crown or colonial legislatures, while the lands remained in possession of the Indians, though possession could not be taken without their consent.

Individuals could not purchase Indian lands without permission or license from the crown, colonial government, or according to the rules prescribed by colonial laws, but such purchases were valid with such license, or in conformity with the local laws, and by this means of the perpetual right of occupancy with the ultimate fee which passed from the crown by the license, the title of the purchaser became complete.

Indian possession or occupancy was considered with reference to their habits and mode of life, their hunting grounds were as much in their actual possession as the cleared fields of the whites, and their rights to its exclusive enjoyment were their own property, and their own purposes were as much respected, until they abandoned them, made a cession to the government, or an authorized sale to individuals. In either case then right became extinct, the lands could be granted, disseminated or the right of occupancy, or enjoyed in full dominion by the purchasers from the Indians. Such was the tenor of Indian laws by the laws of Massachusetts Indian Laws, 9 10 16, 17, 18, 19, 21, in Connecticut, 40, 41, 42, Rhode Island, 22, 23, New Hampshire, 60, New York, 62, 64, 71, 85, 102, New Jersey, 138, Pennsylvania, 139, Maryland, 141, 143, 144, 145, Virginia, 147, 148, 150, 153, 154, North Carolina, 158, 4, 26, South Carolina, 178, 179, Georgia, 180, 187, by Georgia Appendix, 16, by their respective laws, and the decisions of courts in their construction. See cases collected in 2 Johnson's Dig. 15, tit. Indians, and Wharton's Dig. tit. Land, c. 468. Such law was the view taken by this court of Indian rights in the case of *Johnson v. McIntosh*, 8 Wheat. 711, 604, which has received universal assent.

The merits of this case do not make it necessary to us to declare whether the Indians, within the United States, have any other rights of soil or jurisdiction, it is, enough to

consider it as a settled principle, that they might of occupancy is considered as secured in the fee simple of the whites. 7 Fed. 19. The principle which had been established in the colonies were adopted by the king in the proclamation of October 1763, and applied to the provinces acquired by the treaty of peace and the crown lands in the ten of provinces, now composing the United States, as the law which should govern the enjoyment and transmission of Indian and vacant lands. After providing for the government of the acquired provinces of Quebec, East and West Florida, to make the grants of such lands as the king had power to dispose of, upon such terms as have been used in other colonies, and such other conditions as the crown might deem necessary and expedient, without any other restriction. It also authorized warrants to be issued by the governors for military and naval services rendered in the then life was. It reserved to the Indians the possession of their lands and hunting grounds, and prohibited the granting any warrant of survey, or patent to any lands west of the heads of the Atlantic waters, or which not having been ceded or purchased by the crown, were reserved to the Indians, and prohibited all purchases from them without its special license. The warrants issued pursuant to this proclamation for lands then within the Indian boundaries, before the treaty of Fort Mifflin in 1763, have been held to pass the title to the lands reserved on them, in opposition to the principle, and point afterwards would *Johnson v. McIntosh*, 3 Dallas 427-430. And all titles held under the charter of license of the crown to purchase from the Indians have been held good, and all purchases have never been denied, the right of the crown to grant being complete, this proclamation had the effect of a law in addition to such purchases, so it has been considered in this court. 5 Wheat. 695-604. (Ep. 747-747 1/2).

A classic historical account of the extent to which Indian rights were recognized under British and colonial law is given by Chief Justice Marshall in his opinion on *Worcester v. Georgia*.<sup>5</sup> After analyzing the claims of the European nations on the subject of aboriginal right,<sup>6</sup> the Chief Justice offered these comments on the colonial charters issued by the European powers and the recognition of Indian rights implicit in the language of these charters:

The power of making war is conferred by these charters on the colonies, but defensive war alone seems to have been contemplated. In the first charter to the first and second colonies, they are empowered, "for their several defenses, to commit, employ, hire, and resist all persons who shall without license attempt to inhabit within the said precincts and limits of the said several colonies, or that shall undertake or attempt at any time hereafter the least detriment or annoyance of the said several colonies or plantations."

After analyzing various colonial charters, the court concluded that the motives for planting the new colony in incompatible with the efforts of granting the soil, and all its inhabitants from sea to sea. They demonstrate the truth that these grants asserted a title against European only and were considered as blank paper so far as the rights of the natives were concerned. The power of war is given only for defense, but not conquest.

The charters contain passages, showing one of their objects to be the civilization of the Indians, and their conversion to Christianity—objects to be accomplished by constitutional conduct and good example, not by extermination.

The actual state of things, and the practice of European nations, on so much of the American continent, has

<sup>1</sup> Chapter 20 (People of New Mexico), Chapter 21 (Aleaskan Natives).

<sup>2</sup> 9 Stat. 851.

<sup>3</sup> *Seater v. Hawley*, 181 U. S. 481 (1901), *United States v. Tule Lake Co.*, 265 U. S. 472 (1924), aff'g 264 Fed. 621 (C. C. 9, 1928).

<sup>4</sup> 9 Fed. (11 Curtis) 711 (1889).

<sup>5</sup> Apparently the Supreme Court was of the opinion that the principles applicable to Indian possessions in Florida under Spanish rule were not identical with those applicable in the territory of New Mexico. It is declared that, to Spain, "the friendship of the Indians was a most important consideration. It would have been lost by adopting toward them a less liberal, just or kind policy than had been pursued by Great Britain, or acting according to the laws of the Indies in force in Mexico and Peru." (7 Fed. 1.)

<sup>6</sup> 6 Fed. (10 Curtis) 815 (1882).

<sup>7</sup> See sec. 4 of this chapter.

between the Mississippi and the Atlantic, explain their claims and the charters they wanted. Then professions unavailingly interceded with each other, though the discovery of one was admitted by all to exclude the claim of any other, the extent of that discovery was the subject of unceasing contest. Bloody conflicts arose between them, which gave importance and security to the neighboring nations. These and a strike in their character, they might be found the enemies, or effective friends. Instead of joining their sentiments by asserting claims to their lands, or to dominion over their persons, the discovery is sought by fighting, professions, and pursued by rich presents. The English, the French, and the Spanish were equally competitors for their friendship and their aid. Not well acquainted with the exact meaning of words, nor supposing it to be material whether they were called the subjects, or the children of their father in Europe, lavish in professions of duty and affection, in return for the rich presents they received, so long as their actual independence was untroubled, and their right to self government acknowledged, they were willing to profess dependence on the power which furnished supplies of which they were in absolute need, and tolerated dangerous intruders from entering their country, and thus was probably the sense in which the term was understood by them.

Certain it is that our history furnishes no example, from the first settlement of our colonies, of any attempt, on the part of the crown to interfere with the internal affairs of the Indians, but they claim to be the agents of their own power, while, as Indians or otherwise, might induce them into foreign alliances. The king purchased their lands when they were willing to sell, at a price they were willing to take, but never coerced a sovereign of them. He purchased their aid and dependence by subsidies, but never intruded into the internal affairs of them, or interfered with their self government, so far as it respected themselves only.

The general terms of the Great Britain, with regard to the Indians, were defined by Mr. Stuart, superintendent of Indian affairs, in a speech delivered at Mobile, in presence of several persons of distinction, soon after the peace of 1763. Towards the conclusion, he says: "Lastly, I inform you that it is the king's order to all his governors and subjects, to treat the Indians with justice and humanity, and to forbear all encroachments on the territories allotted to them; accordingly, all individuals are prohibited from purchasing any of your lands, but as you know that, as you white brethren cannot feed you when you visit them unless you give them ground to plant, it is expected that you will cede lands to the king for that purpose. But whenever you shall be pleased to surrender any of your territories to his majesty, you must call the Indians to it at a public meeting of your nation, when the governors of the provinces, or the superintendent shall be present, and obtain the consent of all your people. The boundaries of your hunting grounds will be as strictly fixed, and no settlement permitted to be made upon them. As you may be visited that all treaties with your people will be faithfully kept, so it is expected that you, also, will be careful strictly to observe them."

The proclamation issued by the king of Great Britain in 1763, soon after the satisfaction of the articles of peace forbids the governors of any of the colonies to grant warrants of survey, or pass patents upon any lands whatever which, not having been ceded to or purchased by us, (the king), as aforesaid, are reserved to the said Indians, or any of them.

The proclamation proceeds: "And we do further declare it to be our royal will and pleasure, for the present, as aforesaid, to reserve, under our sovereignty, protection and dominion, for the use of the said Indians, all the lands and territories lying to the westward of the sources of the rivers which fall into the sea, from the west and north west as aforesaid, and we do hereby strictly forbid, on pain of our displeasure, all our loving subjects from making any purchases or settlements whatever, or taking possession of any of the lands above reserved, without our special leave and license for that purpose first obtained."

"And we do hereby declare that we will acquire all persons whatever, who have, either wilfully or inadvertently, encroached themselves upon any lands within the countries

above described, or upon any other lands which not having been ceded to or purchased by us, are still reserved to the said Indians, as aforesaid, forthwith to remove themselves from such settlements."

A proclamation issued by Governor Gage, in 1772, contains the following passage: "While in many persons, contrary to the positive orders of the king, upon this subject, have undertaken to make settlements beyond the boundaries fixed by the treaties made with the Indian nations, which bound them, ought to serve as a barrier between the whites, and the said Indians, particularly on the Ohio river. The proclamation orders such persons to quit those countries without delay."

Such was the policy of Great Britain towards the Indian nations inhibiting the territory from which she excluded all other Europeans, such her claims, and such her practical exposition of the doctrine she had adopted. She considered them as nations capable of maintaining the relations of peace and war, of governing themselves, under her protection, and she made treaties with them, the obligation of which she acknowledged. (Ib. 547-549.)

The question of how far Spain and Mexico recognized rights of possession in Indian tribes is a question upon which conflicting views have been expressed. In *Spain v. United States and Utah Indians*<sup>58</sup> the Court of Claims took the position that Spain and Mexico had never recognized any right of exclusive possession in any of the nomadic tribes, and that only areas affirmatively designated as Indian reservations could be considered Indian country within the meaning of the Indian Interoceanic Act of 1884. The actual decision in the case, however, is simply that a plaintiff was not precluded from maintaining a suit for depredations committed by the Indians by the mere fact that he was on territory which later had been recognized as an Indian reservation. On the other hand, the Supreme Court, in the case of *Chontley v. McIntosh*<sup>59</sup> held that under the Spanish law applicable to what is now the State of Iowa when that territory was under Spanish dominion, the Fox tribe of Indians had rights of ownership in the land they occupied which were of such dignity that a purported grant of such land by the Spanish Government would be

"an unaccountable and capricious exercise of official power, contrary to the uniform usage of his predecessors in respect to the sales of Indian lands, and that it could give no property to the grantees. It is not meant, by what it is just been said, that the Spanish governors could not relinquish the interest or title of the Crown in Indian lands and for more than a mile square, but when that was done, the grants were made subject to the rights of Indian occupancy. They did not take effect until that occupancy had ceased, and whilst it continued it was not in the power of the Spanish government to authorize any one to interfere with it." (P. 230.)

Apparently the Foxes were as nomadic in their habits as most of the other Plains tribes, so that the correct historical view would seem to be that if Spanish law ever denied title by aboriginal occupancy to certain Indian tribes it was because these tribes did not in fact maintain exclusive occupancy of any territory at all but merely wandered over lands which were traversed by other tribes as well. In this situation even our own law recognizes that no possessory rights are created.<sup>60</sup> There would seem, therefore, to be no valid reason to suppose that the Spanish law was more rigorous than the law of Great Britain or the United States with respect to the recognition of Indian possessory rights derived from aboriginal occupancy.<sup>61</sup>

<sup>58</sup> 98 Ct. Cls. 488 (1905).

<sup>59</sup> 10 How. 208 (1853).

<sup>60</sup> *Leishouse, Indian Title v. United States*, 17 Ct. Cl. 347 (1903), app. den. 202 U. S. 909.

<sup>61</sup> For a critical statement of Spanish legal theory on the subject of Indian title, see Victoria, De Indis et De Jure Belli Rotundones (trans. by John Pawley Bates, 1917), originally published in 1857. And see Hall, *Leva of Mexico* (1888), notes 86, 98, 40, 45, 46, 86, 136, 2. White's *Recognition* (1889), 14 61-62, 64-65, 85, 95-96. See also Chapter 8, sec. 44, *supra*.

## SECTION 10 PROTECTION OF TRIBAL POSSESSION

Tribal possessory right may be defined as a power to command the aid of the law against trespassers, coupled with a privilege to use reasonable force in excluding such trespassers. An assertion of possessory right, whether contained in statute, treaty, Executive order, or judicial decision, is meaningless if both these elements are lacking, and implied if one is lacking.

The right to protection of tribal possession through an action of ejectment or other similar possessory action was affirmed in an early period. Thus, the Supreme Court in the case of *Marich v. Brooks*,<sup>17</sup> declared

\* This Indian title consisted of the distinct and right of occupancy and enjoyment. \*  
That an action of ejectment could be maintained on an Indian right to occupancy and use is not open to question. This is the result of the decision in *Johnson v. M'Fulton*, 8 Wheat 574, and is the question directly decided, in the case of *Cajigas v. Wilson*, 2 Yeates 131. The right to the effect of reserves to individual Indians of a mile square each, secured to the heads of families by the Cherokee treaties of 1817 and 1819. \* (17 pp 232-233)

<sup>17</sup> 5 Mass at Large 156

<sup>18</sup> 21 Ind 197

This measure of common law protection was amplified from time to time by treaty and statute provisions designed to prevent or punish various types of trespass upon Indian land. These provisions were generally limited either to a particular tribe or reservation or to a particular type of trespass, e.g., trespass for purposes of trading, driving livestock, stealing horses, and settlement. At no time has there been comprehensive legislation on the general problem of the protection of tribal property against trespass.<sup>18</sup> The law on the subject is therefore a haphazard patchwork which can hardly be understood without reference to historical considerations.

## A LEGISLATION ON TRESPASS

The early legislation, whether emanating from the United States,<sup>19</sup> from the colonies,<sup>20</sup> or from the European powers,<sup>21</sup>

<sup>19</sup> See *Howe v. Judd* (1870). A suit in trespass, brought by the individual occupant of tribal land against a non-Indian, was successfully maintained in *Pellotte v. Blankinship*, 10 How 566 (1860).

In a case where a conveyance under a congressional land grant brought a trespasser into possession in a state court against the local Indian superintendent, the Attorney General held that the writ of ejectment founded on that judgment did not give the conveyee legal possession of the land and that the plaintiff was an intruder who could be removed by federal authorities under 18 U 12119, and said

\* \* \* the title held the reservation act under the treaty but under their original title which is confirmed by the Government in agreeing to the reservation. (See *Gonzalez v. Nibolston* 9 How 305.)

Thus it would seem that the title imparted by the acts of 1848 and 1850 was at that period, and has ever since continued to be, subject to the Indian right of occupancy in said tribe the enjoyment of which right moiety is assumed to be by the Government by solemn treaty stipulations. \* \* \* (P 374.)

**New Pease Reservation—Claim of W G Langford** 14 Op A G 508 (1876), decision reaffirmed in 17 Op A G 808 (1883), and 20 Op A G 42 (1884), the latter case holding that Langford held "nothing but a naked title" (p 45, per Taney, Sct G) which could not be invoked to prevent allotment. "What is the Indian right of occupancy? It is the right to enjoy the land forever with the right of alienation limited to one alienance the United States, or to such persons as the United States, in its capacity of guardian over the Indians, may permit." (P 45.)

<sup>20</sup> The nearest approach to such general legislation was legislation authorizing Indian Service officials, with the aid of the military, "to remove from the Indian country all persons found therein contrary to law." See Act of June 4, sec 10, 4 Stat 729 1790 S 4 2167, 25 U S C 220, repealed by Act of May 31 1884, 48 Stat 787. And see *United States ex rel Gordon v. O'Neil*, 179 Fed 851, 288-860 (D C Neb 1876).

<sup>21</sup> Reference to legislation of the United States on this subject under the Articles of Confederation is found in 18 Op A G 285, 286-287 (1885).

purported not to create new possessory rights, but to recognize existing rights inherent in the Indian nations. This recognition took the form of (a) disavowing the right of intrusion to interfere with the action of the Indian tribes, in their own territories, in excluding or removing intruders, or (b) establishing forms of civil or criminal proceedings in non-Indian courts against such intruders. Thus, we find in many of the early treaties, provisions recognizing the right of the Indian tribes to proceed against trespassers in accordance with their own laws and customs,<sup>22</sup> which, of course, antedated the discovery of America by Europeans and applied, originally, only to Indians from other Indian tribes.

The historic source of tribal possessory right is a matter of more than antiquarian interest, since even today the limitations upon the right depend in part upon its source. Perhaps the clearest authoritative analysis of the basis and origin of tribal possessory right is that given in the case of *Bush v. Wright*,<sup>23</sup>

The intimacy of the Creek Nation to prescribe the terms upon which non-Indians may transact business with its Indians did not have its origin in act of Congress, treaty, or statement of the United States. It was one of the inherent and essential attributes of its original sovereignty. It was a natural right of that people, in dispensable to its autonomy as a distinct tribe or nation, and it must remain an attribute of its government until by the agreement of the nation itself or by the superior power of the republic it is taken from it. Neither the authority nor the power of the United States to license its citizens to trade in the Creek Nation, with or without the consent of that tribe is in issue in this case because the complainants have no such licenses. The plenary power and lawful authority of the government of the United States by license, by treaty, or by act of Congress to take from the Creek Nation every vestige of its original or acquired governmental authority and power may be identical, and for the purposes of this decision are here conceded. The fact remains nevertheless, that even if original attitude of the government of the Creek Nation still exists intact which has not been destroyed or limited by act of Congress, or by the contacts of the Creek tribe itself. (P 970.)

The proposition that a tribe needs no act of authority from the Federal Government in order to exercise its inherent power of excluding trespassers has been repeatedly affirmed by the Attorney General.<sup>24</sup> It is against the background of this recognition of tribal power that the course of federal legislation must be viewed. Thus viewed, legislative prohibitions against trespass on Indian land are seen as implementing the assumed international obligations of the United States.<sup>25</sup>

The early Indian Intercourse Acts, eliminating in the Act of June 30, 1834,<sup>26</sup> dealt with five distinct types of trespassers: (1) trespassers seeking to trade with Indians, (2) trespassers

<sup>22</sup> *Pratt v. Broderick*, 1 Wheat 115, 121 (1818).

<sup>23</sup> See *United States v. Ritchie*, 17 How 526 (1854) (dealing with the Act of March 4 1851, 9 Stat 681).

<sup>24</sup> *Secretary of January 21, 1785 with the Winneton, Delaware, Chippewa, and Ottawa Nations* Att V 7 Stat 19 17. Also, Att VII of Treaty of January 21, 1785, with the Shawanoe Nation, 7 Stat 28, and see Chapter 4, sec 8D (1).

<sup>25</sup> 136 Fed 947 (C C A 8 1905), app dismissed 208 U S 570 (1906).  
<sup>26</sup> \* \* \* so long as a tribe exists and remains in possession of its lands, its title and possession are sovereign and exclusive, and these give no authority to enter upon their lands, for any purpose whatever, without their consent. \* \* \* 1 Op A G 405 466 (1821).

See to the same effect, 17 Op A G 184 (1851), 18 Op A G 84 (1854).  
<sup>27</sup> See, e.g., *Attorney General's Report of January 7, 1780, with the Winneton, Delaware, Chippewa, and Ottawa Nations* Att V 7 Stat 19 17. Also, Att VII of Treaty of January 21, 1785, with the Shawanoe Nation, 7 Stat 28, and see Chapter 4, sec 8D (1).

<sup>28</sup> Act of July 22, 1790, 1 Stat 187, Act of March 1, 1789, 1 Stat 289, Act of May 19, 1789, 1 Stat 499, Act of March 8, 1789, 1 Stat 743, Act of March 30, 1802, 2 Stat 138, Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat 729.

committing injuries against Indians, (4) trespassers settling on Indian lands, (4) trespassers driving livestock upon Indian lands, and (5) trespassers hunting or trapping game on Indian lands.

Section 3 of the first Indian Intercourse Act,<sup>124</sup> approved by President Washington on July 22, 1790, provided for the punishment of any person found in the Indian country "with such merchandise in his possession as is usually vendible to the Indians without a license first had and obtained," and this provision, with minor modifications,<sup>125</sup> remains the law to this day. Section 5 of the same act<sup>126</sup> continued the prohibition making it an offense for any inhabitant of the United States to "go into any town, settlement, or territory belonging to any nation or tribe of Indians, and . . . there commit any crime upon, or trespass against, the person or property of any peaceable and friendly Indian or Indians, which, if committed within the jurisdiction of such state or within the jurisdiction of either of said districts, against a citizen or white inhabitant thereof, would be punishable by the laws of such state or district." This provision was likewise incorporated with minor modifications in subsequent statutes.<sup>127</sup>

The first Indian Intercourse Act was temporary, to continue "in force for the term of two years, and from thence to the end of the next session of Congress, and no longer."<sup>128</sup>

The second Intercourse Act that of March 1, 1793,<sup>129</sup> introduced a new provision of importance. Section 5 of that act provided:

And be it further enacted, That if any such citizen or inhabitant shall make a settlement on lands belonging to any Indian tribe or shall convey such lands, or designate their bound lines, by any thing in law, or otherwise, for the purpose of settlement, he shall forfeit a sum not exceeding one thousand dollars, nor less than one hundred dollars, and suffer imprisonment not exceeding twelve months, in the discretion of the court, before whom he shall be tried. And it shall, moreover be lawful for the President of the United States, to take such measures, as he may judge necessary, to remove from lands belonging to any Indian

tribe, any citizens or inhabitants of the United States, who have made or shall hereafter make, or attempt to make a settlement thereon. (P. 330.)

The reference to lands belonging to any Indian tribe<sup>130</sup> was amplified in later legislation to refer to "lands belonging, or secured, or granted by treaty with the United States, to any Indian tribe."<sup>131</sup> Various other minor modifications are found in the language of this provision, but in essence it sets forth the present day law on the subject.

The second Indian Intercourse Act, like the first, was a temporary act, to continue "in force, for the term of two years, and from thence to the end of the then next session of Congress, and no longer."<sup>132</sup>

The third Indian Intercourse Act, that of May 19, 1796,<sup>133</sup> dealt for the first time with two new kinds of trespasses, the limits and the survey. Section 2 of that act provided:

And be it further enacted, That if any citizen or other person resident in the United States, or either of the territorial districts of the United States, shall cross over, or go within the said boundary line, to hunt, or in any wise destroy the game, or shall drive, or otherwise convey any stock of horses or cattle to range, on any lands allotted or secured by treaty with the United States, to any Indian tribe, he shall forfeit a sum not exceeding one hundred dollars, or be imprisoned not exceeding six months.

These provisions, reaffirmed and made permanent in the second section of the fifth Indian Intercourse Act,<sup>134</sup> were subsequently separated and elaborated in the Act of June 30, 1831,<sup>135</sup> which was a comprehensive statute on Indian relations.

Sec. 8 And be it further enacted, That if any person, other than an Indian, shall, within the limits of any tribe with whom the United States shall have existing treaties, hunt or trap on lands and destroy any peltries or game, except for subsistence in the Indian country, such person shall forfeit the sum of five hundred dollars, and forfeit all the traps, guns, and ammunition in his possession, used or wanted to be used for that purpose, and peltries so taken. (P. 750.)

Sec. 9 And be it further enacted, That if any person shall drive, or otherwise convey any stock of horses, mules, or cattle, to a range and feed on any land belonging to any Indian or Indian tribe, without the consent of such tribe, such person shall forfeit the sum of one dollar for each animal of such stock. (P. 730.)

The last of these provisions, which is still in force,<sup>136</sup> has been interpreted to cover only the case where cattle are "driven" to the reservation, or to the vicinity of the reservation.<sup>137</sup> It has been held that sheep are "cattle" within the meaning of this section.<sup>138</sup>

Following the 1831 act, Congress provided for the protection of Indian lands against trespass in various other statutes. Thus, the Act of July 30, 1857,<sup>139</sup> entitled "An Act to establish Peace with certain Hostile Indian Tribes" provided that "all the Indian tribes now occupying territory east of the Rocky mountains, not now peacefully residing on permanent reservations under treaty stipulations," should be offered reservations. The In-

<sup>124</sup> Act of July 22, 1790, 1 Stat. 137.

<sup>125</sup> Act of March 1, 1793, 1 Stat. 820 ("without lawful license"), Act of May 19, 1796, 1 Stat. 469, March 8, 1799, 1 Stat. 748, March 30, 1802, 2 Stat. 139, ("That no such citizen, or other person, shall be permitted to reside in any of the towns, or hunting grounds of any of the Indian tribes as a trader without a license.") Act of June 30, 1831, 4 Stat. 722 ("That any person other than an Indian who shall attempt to reside in the Indian country as a trader or to introduce goods or to trade therein without such license, shall be . . ."). Act of July 31, 1888, 25 Stat. 170, R. S. § 2148, 25 U. S. C. 284 ("Any person other than an Indian of the full blood who shall attempt to reside in the Indian country, or on any land in reservation as a trader or to introduce goods, or to trade therein, without such license shall forfeit . . ."). Provided, That this section shall not apply to any person residing among or trading with . . . the five civilized tribes, residing in said Indian country, and belonging to the Union Agency therein").

<sup>126</sup> Act of July 22, 1790, 1 Stat. 147, 138. See Chapter 1, sec. 2.

<sup>127</sup> Act of March 1, 1793, 1 Stat. 820 ("and shall there commit murder, robbery, larceny, trespass or other crime, against the person or property of any friendly Indian or Indians"), Act of May 19, 1796, 1 Stat. 469 and Acts of March 3, 1794, 1 Stat. 748, March 30, 1802, 2 Stat. 139 ("and shall there commit murder, robbery, larceny, trespass or other crime, against the person or property of any friendly Indian or Indians, which would be punishable, if committed within the jurisdiction of any state, against a citizen of the United States or, unauthorized by law, and with a hostile intention, shall be found on any Indian land"), Act of June 30, 1831, 4 Stat. 729 ("That where, in the commission, by a white person, of any crime, offense, or misdemeanor, within the Indian country, the property of any friendly Indian is taken, injured or destroyed, and a conviction is had for such crime, offense, or misdemeanor, the person so convicted shall be sentenced to pay to such friendly Indian to whom the property may have been so injured, a sum equal to twice the just value of the property so taken, injured, or destroyed"). R. S. § 2148, 25 U. S. C. 212 (imposing penalty for offenses of arson in Indian country), R. S. § 2142, 25 U. S. C. 218 (imposing penalty for crime of assault in Indian country).

<sup>128</sup> See 7.

<sup>129</sup> 1 Stat. 820. See Chapter 4, sec. 2.

<sup>130</sup> Act of March 8, 1796, sec. 9, 1 Stat. 743, 745.

<sup>131</sup> Act of March 1, 1793, sec. 15, 1 Stat. 329, 332.

<sup>132</sup> 1 Stat. 469. See Chapter 4, sec. 2.

<sup>133</sup> Act of March 30, 1802, 2 Stat. 139, 141. See Chapter 4, sec. 4.

<sup>134</sup> 4 Stat. 729. See Chapter 4, sec. 6.

<sup>135</sup> R. S. § 2117, 25 U. S. C. 178.

<sup>136</sup> Engraving on Indian Lands, 16 Op. A. G. 968, 1880.

<sup>137</sup> *Asa Sheep Co. v. United States*, 253 U. S. 150 (1920), aff'd 350

Fed. 191 (C. C. A. 9, 1918), and 274 Fed. 99 (C. C. A. 9, 1918), *Driving Stock on Indian Lands*, 18 Op. A. G. 61 (1884), *United States v. Matlock*, 28 Fed. Cas. No. 18744 (D. C. Ore. 1879) holding that the word cattle includes both sheep and all other animals, used by man for labor or food.

<sup>138</sup> 15 Stat. 117.

thru possessory right in such reservation was secured by the following statutory language:

" Said district or districts, when so selected, and the selection approved by Congress, shall be and remain permanent homes for said Indians to be located thereon, and any persons not members of said tribes shall ever be permitted to enter thereon without the permission of the tribes interested, except officers and employees of the United States. (Sec 2.)

## B CONGRESSIONAL RESPECT FOR TRIBAL POSSESSION

In addition to the foregoing statutes prohibiting various forms of trespass upon Indian lands, there is a considerable body of legislation which extends recognition to tribal possession by exempting tribal lands from provisions designed to open up the public domain to settlement.<sup>10</sup> Thus, for example, the Act of March 3, 1853,<sup>11</sup> relating to public lands in California, protects from settlement "any tract of land in the occupation of or possession of any Indian tribe."<sup>12</sup>

The Act of May 17, 1881,<sup>13</sup> relating to Alaska contains a special proviso:

" Provided That if the Indians or other persons in said district shall not be disturbed in the possession of any lands actually in their use or occupation or now claimed by them until the terms under which such persons may acquire title to such lands is revised for future legislation by Congress. " (P 20)

Protection of Indian possession is likewise the purpose of a provision in the Act of March 3, 1891,<sup>14</sup> establishing a court of private land claims to determine land claims in former Mexican territory, within New Mexico, Arizona, Utah, Nevada, Colorado, and Wyoming:

" No claim shall be allowed that shall interfere with or overthrow any just and unextinguished Indian title or right to any land or place.

In the same spirit, grants of rights of way were frequently conditioned upon a special undertaking by the grantee that it

" ... will neither sell, convey, nor assist in any effort looking towards the changing or extinguishing the present tenure of the Indians in their remaining lands, and will not attempt to acquire from the Indian tribes any further grant of land or its occupancy than is hereinbefore provided. Provided, That any violation of the conditions mentioned in this section shall operate as a forfeiture of all the rights and privileges of said railway company under this act."

In 1858 the Attorney General was able to say:

" ... it was and is a well known usage of the Government not to sell lands until the Indian title of occupancy should be extinguished."

Even where Congress has not specifically provided for the protection of Indian possessory rights, the courts have read an implicit qualification into general legislation relating to the public domain, in order to protect such possession:

<sup>10</sup> Act of March 2, 1907, 34 Stat. 1229 (permission to landowners or claimants to complete tracts at expense of reservation limited so as to exclude "lands in the use or occupation of any Indian having tribal rights on the Cienega de Amos Reservations").

<sup>11</sup> 10 Stat. 244.

<sup>12</sup> Accord: Act of March 28, 1864, 13 Stat. 37.

<sup>13</sup> 26 Stat. 24. See chapter 11, see 8C.

<sup>14</sup> 26 Stat. 261.

<sup>15</sup> Act of September 1, 1888, 25 Stat. 482, 487 (Shoshone and Bannock); Act of March 3, 1887, 24 Stat. 545; Act of October 3, 1890, 26 Stat. 662.

<sup>16</sup> 19 Op. A. G. 117 (1888).

Thus, in the case of *Spalding v. Chandler*, the Supreme Court decided:

" ... The general grant of authority conferred upon the President by the act of March 3, 1847, c. 42, § 8 Stat. 146, to set apart such portion of lands within the land district then created as were necessary for public uses, cannot be considered as empowering him to interfere with reservations existing by force of a treaty. (P 405)

Likewise, school land grants have never been made in disregard of tribal possessory rights.<sup>17</sup> In the absence of an expressed intent of Congress to the contrary, Indian land grants have not affected tribal possessory rights.<sup>18</sup> Even where Congress expressly stipulated to extinguish Indian title, railroad land grants conveyed only the naked fee, subject to tribal occupancy and possessory rights.<sup>19</sup> Only where it was necessary to give eminent domain possessory rights to parts of the public domain, has Congress ever granted tribal lands in disregard of tribal possessory rights.<sup>20</sup>

## C WHO MAY PROTECT TRIBAL POSSESSION

The protection of tribal possessory rights has been recognized as a proper function of the Army,<sup>21</sup> of the Interior Department,<sup>22</sup> and of the Department of Justice.<sup>23</sup> At the same time, the interest of the tribes themselves in self protection has been recognized repeatedly in statutes.<sup>24</sup>

Although primary concern for the protection of Indian lands against trespass rests with the Indian tribe and the Federal Government, it has been held that the individual states have a legitimate interest in protecting Indian possession against trespass. Thus, it was early held by the Supreme Court that state laws protecting Indian lands against trespass were valid, and state decisions thereon entitled to great weight.<sup>25</sup> Where a state patent to land included land reserved to Indians under state law, it was held that such patent was void as to the erroneously

<sup>17</sup> 160 U. S. 804, 405 (1896). Accord: *United States v. McFarlane*, 103 F. 2d 630 (C. C. 9, D. 1919); *U. S. v. McIntire*, *U. S. v. McIntire*, 270 U. S. 181 (1926). But: *United States v. Postville Marsh Valley L. Co.*, 213 Fed. 801 (C. C. A. 9, 1914 aff'd 205 Fed. 419 (D. C. Idaho 1914). And see *Hot Springs* (over 62 U. S. 608, 703-704 (1879) (Indian possession protected against settlers by denying them prescription claims)).

<sup>18</sup> *Atchey v. Wetherby*, 95 U. S. 517, 536 (1877); *Wassenaar v. Littlejohn*, 201 U. S. 202 (1906).

<sup>19</sup> *Lutesworth, et al. R. Co. v. United States*, 42 U. S. 733 (1876); *Northern Pac. Ry. Co. v. United States*, 227 U. S. 355 (1914).

<sup>20</sup> *United States v. Northern Pac. Railroad*, 110 U. S. 55 (1883).

<sup>21</sup> *Organ Donation Act of September 27, 1850*, c. 76 sec. 4, § 9, Stat. 496, 497, 498. *New Mexico Donation Act of July 22, 1854*, c. 101 sec. 2, 10 Stat. 808. *Homestead Act of May 20, 1862*, c. 75, 12 Stat. 302.

<sup>22</sup> *U. S. v. United States*, see *U. S. v. Gordon v. Oriskany*, 170 Fed. 391 (D. C. Nebi 1876).

<sup>23</sup> *United States v. Mullin*, 71 Fed. 282 (D. C. Nebi, 1895).

<sup>24</sup> See for instance Joint Resolution of March 3, 1879, 20 Stat. 488, superseded by Act of March 1, 1889, 25 Stat. 768 (authorizing Attorney General to bring suit to quiet tribal title); sec. 8, *Public Lands Act of June 7, 1924*, 43 Stat. 668 (discussed in Chapter 20, sec. 4) And see Chapter 19, sec. 24(1).

<sup>25</sup> Thus, for instance, sec. 2 of the Act of June 28, 1878, 20 Stat. 495 requires the courts in the Indian Territory to make tribes parties to suits affecting their possessory rights "by service upon a chief or governor of the tribe" whenever it appears "that the property of any tribe is in any way affected by the issue being heard." See 4 of the *Public Lands Act of June 7, 1924*, 43 Stat. 688 expressly protects the right of the Indian tribal peoples to bring suit in vindication of their land claims. The right to protect tribal property against trespass, accrues only to the tribe whose land it is and not to Indians of another tribe who happen to be on the land. *Atchey v. Wetherby*, *U. S. v. McIntire*, 35 C. Cls. 468 (1900).

<sup>26</sup> *Danforth's Lessee v. Thomas*, 1 Wheat. 155 (1816); *Presley v. Brown*, 1 Wheat. 115 (1816). See also *Danforth v. Wear*, 6 Wheat. 678, 677 (1824).

included Indian lands.<sup>22</sup> The constitutionality of state legislation designed to protect Indian lands from trespass was upheld by the Supreme Court in *State of New York v. Dinkh*.<sup>23</sup>

In that case the court declared, *per Grier*,<sup>24</sup>

"The statute in question is a police regulation for the protection of the Indians from intrusion of the white people, and to preserve the peace."<sup>25</sup> "The power of a State to make such regulations to preserve the peace of the community is absolute, and has never been surrendered."<sup>26</sup> (P. 370)

#### D EFFECT OF TITLE UPON POSSESSORY RIGHT

The protection which the Federal Government gives to tribal possession is not limited to the cases where title to tribal land is held in the name of the United States, but extends equally to lands where title is vested in the state. An illuminating analysis of this problem is found in a memorandum to the Assistant Attorney General dated April 29, 1953, regarding the Osage Reservation. Opinion authority is cited to show that even where the United States does not own the ultimate fee in the land of an Indian reservation, its relation of guardianship to the Indian tribe carries the power and duty of protecting the Indian possessory right against condemnation proceedings or other infringements by the state.

As guardian of the Indians there is imposed upon the Government a duty to protect these Indians in their property, it follows that this duty extends to protecting them against the unlawful acts of the State of New York. (P. 222.)<sup>27</sup>

Likewise, it has been held that protection of tribal property in the Federal Government is not forewarn where a tribe incorporates under state law and thus achieves corporate capacity.<sup>28</sup>

#### E AGAINST WHOM PROTECTION EXTENDS

Tribal possessory right in tribal land requires protection not only against private parties but against administrative officers acting without legal authority and against persons purporting to act with the permission of such officers. Thus where Indians were induced by administrative authorities to settle on a given area and the area was designated as the "Old Winnebago and Crow Creek Reservation" on Indian office maps, it was held that such lands were a "reservation" within the meaning of a subsequent treaty which set "reservation" lands apart "for the absolute and undisturbed use and occupation of the Indians herein named, and for such other friendly tribes or individual Indians as from time to time they may be willing, with the consent of the United States, to admit amongst them."<sup>29</sup> "It was further held that a later Executive order of February 27, 1885, opening these lands to entry was invalid and inoperative."<sup>30</sup>

It was likewise ruled by the Attorney General that an application for permission to construct a ditch across an Executive order reservation, without the consent of the Indians, could not

be legally granted by Interior Department officials, even though the ditch was supposed to be beneficial to the Indians. The Attorney General declared:

But the petitioners allege the reservation is not a legal one, and in consequence thereof the Indians had without the reservation was made only trunks at will of the Government. But the rights of trunks at will, so long as the landhold does not effect to determine the trunks, are as sacred as those of a tenant in fee.

It has also been held<sup>31</sup> that the Federal Government is under an obligation to protect tribal lands even against fellow tribes men.

The respect for tribal possessory rights shown by Congress and the courts has not always been shared by administrative authorities. In recent years, however, the Department of the Interior has strictly adhered to the view that a tribe may exclude from tribal property any nonmember not specially authorized by law to enter thereon, that, having the right so to exclude outsiders, the tribe may condition the entry of such persons by requiring payments of fees, and that federal authorities, in the absence of specific legislative authorization, may not invade outsiders to enter upon tribal lands without tribal consent.

Indian possessory rights are enforceable against state authorities as well as against federal authorities.<sup>32</sup> Thus, where a treaty between the United States and the Seneca Nation provided

The United States acknowledge all the land within the (unmentioned) boundaries (which include the reservations in question) to be the property of the Seneca nation, and the United States will never during the same time disturb the Seneca nation . . . in the free use and enjoyment thereof, but it shall remain theirs until they choose to sell the same. (Pp. 766-767)

the Supreme Court held that state violation of tribal lands was inconsistent with the treaty and invalid.<sup>33</sup> The court declared:

The tax titles purporting to convey these lands to the purchaser, even with the qualification suggested that the right of exemption is not to be affected, may well embarrass the occupants and be used by unscrupulous persons to the disturbance of the tribe. All agree that the Indian right of occupancy creates an indefeasible title to the reservations that may extend from generation to generation, and will cease only by the dissolution of the tribe or their consent to sell to the party possessed of the right of preemption. He is the only party that is authorized to deal with the tribe in respect to their property, and thus with the consent of the government. Any other party is an intruder, and may be proceeded against under the twelfth section of the act of 30th June, 1831. (P. 771)

<sup>34</sup> 4 Stat. at Large, 730 (2d 771)

The question of how far Indian possessory rights are protected against Congress leaves a problem of constitutional law considered earlier in Chapter 5.

With the establishment of the right of Indian tribes to the protection of federal and state governments (as well as self protection) against trespass, whether by private parties or by state or federal officers, it becomes pertinent to consider the exact extent of the possessory right to which this protection attaches.

<sup>35</sup> Lemhi Indian Reservation, 18 Op. A. G. 865 (1887)

<sup>36</sup> *State v. United States*, 21 F. Supp. 217 (1st C. & D. Cal. 1918)

See also Chapter 9, sec. 6C

<sup>37</sup> *Danforth v. Wear*, 9 Wheat, 878 (1824)

<sup>38</sup> *The New York Indians*, 5 Wall. 761 (1868) See Chapter 13, sec. 1-3

<sup>22</sup> *Danforth v. Wear*, *supra*, *Patterson v. Jenkins*, 2 Pet. 216 (1829)

<sup>23</sup> 62 U. S. 800 (1868)

<sup>24</sup> 6 U. S. Memo. 179 April 28 1955

<sup>25</sup> 1948

<sup>26</sup> *United States v. 1, 1851 Act of Land*, 97 F. 2d 417 (C. C. A. 4, 10-18) And see 12 U. S. Memo. 206 January 14, 1938

<sup>27</sup> Treaty of April 29, 1868, 15 Stat. 695

<sup>28</sup> *Old Winnebago and Crow Creek Reservation*, 18 Op. A. G. 141 (1885)

### SECTION 11 EXTENT OF TRIBAL POSSESSORY RIGHTS

The extent of possessory right vested in an Indian tribe may differ in important respects from that of ordinary private possessory rights. Some of these differences run to the advantage of the Indian tribe, others, to its disadvantage.

Because an Indian tribe is a ward of the Government, it has been held that adverse possession under the statute of limitations does not run against an Indian tribe, even where title to the land is vested in the tribe and the tribe is incorporated under



state law.<sup>14</sup> This rule was slightly modified by Congress, with respect to the Pueblos of New Mexico, in view of the fact that for many years these Pueblos had enjoyed the right to sue and be sued under territorial law.<sup>15</sup> The compromise adopted in the Pueblo Lands Act of June 7, 1924,<sup>16</sup> was to the effect that adverse possession might be established by proof of (a) 'open, notorious, actual, exclusive, continuous, adverse possession of the premises claimed, under color of title from the 16th day of January, 1902, to the date of the passage of this Act' together with proof of tax payments, or (b) such possession "with claim of ownership, but without color of title from the 16th day of March, 1858."

While tribal lands are, like other lands, subject to the federal power of eminent domain,<sup>17</sup> they are not subject to the state power of eminent domain except where Congress has specifically so provided.<sup>18</sup> The constitutionality of congressional acts con-

<sup>14</sup> *United States v. 7001 Miles of Land* 97 F. 2d 417 (C. C. A. 4, 1048), *United States v. Wright*, 51 F. 2d 300 (C. C. A. 3, 1881), *Memo re Eastern Band of Cherokee Indians of North Carolina* 17 L. D. Memo 517, 518, 514 August 4 1906. *Memo re 97 F. 2d 417*, 12 L. D. Memo 206, 210 January 14 1919. *Accord United States v. Gaudin*, 271 U. S. 482, 40 (1926). *United States v. Minnesota* 270 U. S. 181, 106 (1926), *United States v. Sandwell*, 211 U. S. 8, 28 (1919). *Johnson v. United States*, 224 U. S. 476, 438 (1912).

<sup>15</sup> See Chapter 20, sec. 4.

<sup>16</sup> 40 Stat. 638.

<sup>17</sup> *Cherokee Nation v. Southern Kansas Ry. Co.* 146 U. S. 611 (1890). *See also* *United States v. 1000 Acres of Land* 1588 (Interpretation, Act of July 4, 1854, 28 Stat. 75).

<sup>18</sup> *United States v. Minnesota*, 98 F. 2d 168 (C. C. A. 8, 1938) *aff'd* with *note Minnesota v. United States*, 94 U. S. 482 (1939), *United States v. Colwell*, 80 F. 2d 812 (C. C. A. 10, 1937), *Op. Sol. I. D. 34* 20951 October 4, 1938 (Eastern Cherokee), *see* Act of February 25 1919, 40

Stat. 1041, authorizing condemnation of lands of Capitan Grande Reservation by the City of San Diego subject to the approval of the terms of the judgment by the Secretary of the Interior. *Act of June 28 1899*, sec. 11, 30 Stat. 495, 498 (authorizing towns and cities in Indian Territory to condemn tribal lands).

<sup>19</sup> The extent and basis of this power is analyzed in *Federal Reliance Domain* (1919), Secs. 6 and 17N. *See also* *Randolph Reliance Domain* (1891), sec. 80 and cases cited.

<sup>20</sup> *Op. Sol. I. D. 34* 21881 October 10 1919, holding that prospectors taking by claim on Pappago Indian lands under public land mineral laws, must pay title into office use if claim was taken up after passage of Act of June 18 1894, 45 Stat. 994 but not if claim was taken up prior to such act.

<sup>21</sup> *See* Act of July 14 1862, 12 Stat. 586, granting, to white settlers, the right of preemption on lands occupied by tribes which are reserved for Indians, with showing Congress' assumption that the establishment of the Indian reservation would end the claims of the pioneer settlers. *Act of June 4 1874*, 18 Stat. 576 (Alaska), *Act of March 3 1885*, 23 Stat. 457 (*Duck Valley*). *See also* *Act of August 4 1886*, 24 Stat. 476 (retained to entrance of public lands to land office while entry on Indian reservation was subsequently cancelled). *Op. Joint Resolution*, of February 8 1887, 14 Stat. 640 (*Stout*), *Act of February 11 1920*, 41 Stat. 1768 (*Siskiy*), *Act of March 4 1925*, 43 Stat. 1896 (*Lane* and *Vance Desert*).

<sup>22</sup> *See* Act of July 14 1862, 12 Stat. 586, granting, to white settlers, the right of preemption on lands occupied by tribes which are reserved for Indians, with showing Congress' assumption that the establishment of the Indian reservation would end the claims of the pioneer settlers. *Act of June 4 1874*, 18 Stat. 576 (Alaska), *Act of March 3 1885*, 23 Stat. 457 (*Duck Valley*). *See also* *Act of August 4 1886*, 24 Stat. 476 (retained to entrance of public lands to land office while entry on Indian reservation was subsequently cancelled). *Op. Joint Resolution*, of February 8 1887, 14 Stat. 640 (*Stout*), *Act of February 11 1920*, 41 Stat. 1768 (*Siskiy*), *Act of March 4 1925*, 43 Stat. 1896 (*Lane* and *Vance Desert*).

<sup>23</sup> *See* Act of July 14 1862, 12 Stat. 586, granting, to white settlers, the right of preemption on lands occupied by tribes which are reserved for Indians, with showing Congress' assumption that the establishment of the Indian reservation would end the claims of the pioneer settlers. *Act of June 4 1874*, 18 Stat. 576 (Alaska), *Act of March 3 1885*, 23 Stat. 457 (*Duck Valley*). *See also* *Act of August 4 1886*, 24 Stat. 476 (retained to entrance of public lands to land office while entry on Indian reservation was subsequently cancelled). *Op. Joint Resolution*, of February 8 1887, 14 Stat. 640 (*Stout*), *Act of February 11 1920*, 41 Stat. 1768 (*Siskiy*), *Act of March 4 1925*, 43 Stat. 1896 (*Lane* and *Vance Desert*).

## SECTION 12 THE TERRITORIAL EXTENT OF INDIAN RESERVATIONS

In determining the extent of Indian tribal lands, first importance naturally attaches to the treaty, statute, or other document upon which tribal ownership is predicated or by which it is defined. The fixing of boundaries of Indian reservations was a major part of early governmental policy in Indian affairs, as a means of securing peace between Indians and whites and among the Indian tribes themselves.<sup>24</sup> Both by treaty<sup>25</sup> and by statute<sup>26</sup> the United States has endeavored to settle conflicting claims and to resolve ambiguities in the definition of reservation boundaries.<sup>27</sup>

Where the delimitation of tribal lands has proved to be of special difficulty, Congress has occasionally referred the determination of such boundaries to the Court of Claims,<sup>28</sup> or the Secretary of the Interior,<sup>29</sup> or has established a special tribunal to determine such questions.<sup>30</sup>

In interpreting treaties and statutes defining Indian boundaries, the Supreme Court has said:

\* \* \* our effort must be to ascertain and execute the intention of the treaty makers, and as an element in the

effort we have declared that construction must be made to the understanding of the Indians in respect of the differences in the power and intelligence of the contracting parties. *United States v. Winans*, 198 U. S. 371. The present case involves in special degree the principle.<sup>31</sup>

Apart from the foregoing principle, the same rules apply to the resolution of ambiguities in reservation boundaries as are applied to similar ambiguities in other deeds or patents.<sup>32</sup>

It is presumed that the bed of a navigable stream is not conveyed to an Indian tribe but is reserved by the United States for the future state to be established.<sup>33</sup> However, an intent to confer ownership rights upon the Indian tribe in such stream bed may be shown by the context of the boundary description,<sup>34</sup> and such intent appears definitely where territory on both sides of the river is reserved to the Indian tribe. As was said in *Dowdell v. United States*,<sup>35</sup> "It would be absurd to treat the order as intended to include the uplands to the width of one mile to each side of the river, and at the same time to exclude the river" (at p. 259).<sup>36</sup> Tide lands and beds of navigable streams which have been made a part of an Indian reservation

<sup>24</sup> *See* Chapter 8, sec. 8A(2). The fixing of intertribal boundaries was the chief purpose of certain treaties, e. g., Treaty of August 10, 1825, with Chippewas at St. Louis, 22 Stat. 5 Op. A. G. 71 (1848).

<sup>25</sup> *See* Chapter 8, sec. 8A(3).

<sup>26</sup> *Act of March 3 1875*, 18 Stat. 476 (boundary between State of Arkansas and Indian country), *Act of June 8 1894*, 28 Stat. 87 (Yam Springs Reservation), *Act of June 6 1900*, 31 Stat. 673 (conflicting tribal claims of Uchiaw Chicklaw and Comanche, Kiowa, and Apache).

<sup>27</sup> To the effect that the parties to a treaty are authorized to determine its meaning, and to define boundaries which the terms of the treaty leave unclear, *see* *Justice v. Foster*, 14 Tex. 2 (1849).

<sup>28</sup> *Act of January 9 1926*, 43 Stat. 780 (title to Red Pinepoint Quar 1360), *Act of January 28 1898*, sec. 29 30 Stat. 408 518.

<sup>29</sup> *Act of June 7 1874*, 17 Stat. 281 (Sisseton and Wahpeton).

<sup>30</sup> *Act of March 4 1891*, sec. 16, 9 Stat. 881, 974 (Confession private land claims), *Pueblo Lands Act of June 7 1924*, 43 Stat. 636, discussed in Chapter 30, sec. 4.

<sup>31</sup> *Northern Pacific Ry. Co. v. United States*, 227 U. S. 955, at p. 982 (1915), *aff'd* 191 Fed. Op. C. A. 9, 1011.

<sup>32</sup> *Neary v. McClung's Lessee*, 9 Circuit 11 (1816) (holding that unilateral action of United States agents cannot give meaning to treaty, which is a bilateral contract). *See also* 29 Op. A. G. 455 (1013) (Chippewas).

<sup>33</sup> *United States v. Holt State Bank* 270 U. S. 49, 56 (1926), *aff'd* 204 Fed. 161 (C. C. A. 8, 1921).

<sup>34</sup> *United States v. Hutchinson* 292 Fed. 841 (D. C. W. D. Okla. 1916), *aff'd* with *note* *Comptroller v. United States* 270 Fed. 110 (C. C. A. 8, 1920), *app. dismissed* 290 U. S. 775 (land to middle of nonnavigable river included in Osage Reservation). *Accord* *Beeson Elliott Oil & Gas Co. v. United States*, 300 U. S. 77 (1922), *aff'd* 270 Fed. 100 (C. C. A. 8, 1920), and *249 Fed. 908* (D. C. W. D. Okla. 1918).

<sup>35</sup> 228 U. S. 243 (1913).

<sup>36</sup> Followed in 55 I. D. 475 (1896) (Fort Bartholomew Reservation), *Memo Sol. I. D.*, July 5, 1880 (Owitt Lake in Colville Reservation).

by treaty or otherwise 'do not pass to a State subsequently created, as do public lands similarly situated.' Where the high water mark is referred to in designating the boundaries of an Indian reservation, there is no implied reservation of tide lands.<sup>1</sup>

The principles of international law applicable to boundary

<sup>1</sup> *United States v. Boydston*, 53 F. 2d 207 (C. C. A. 9, 1941) 104, 49 F. 2d 810 (D. C. W. D. Wash. 1921) (land between high and low tide awarded for title, not shoreline); *United States v. Kameau*, 295 Fed. 251 (C. C. A. 9, 1919). But cf. *United States v. Shoshone Nat. Boom Co.*, 246 Fed. 112 (C. C. A. 9, 1917).

<sup>2</sup> *United States v. Shotts*, 48 F. 2d 614 (D. C. W. D. Wash. 1940), *Twelve v. United States*, 44 F. 2d 531 (C. C. A. 10, 1939), *Op. Sol. I D. M.* 281,20 March 11, 1940.

<sup>3</sup> *United States v. Holt Nat. Bank*, 270 U. S. 497 (1926) 104, 291 Fed. 161 (C. C. A. 8, 1926); *Payson v. United States*, 41 F. 2d 521 (C. C. A. 9, 1940) cert. den. 283 U. S. 849; *United States v. Ashton*, 170 Fed. 900 (C. C. W. D. Wash. 1909), *sup. decm. sub. man. Bud v. Ashton*, 220 U. S. 604 (1911) without opinion.

### SECTION 13 THE TEMPORAL EXTENT OF INDIAN TITLES

The question of when Indian proprietary rights in a given tract of land come to an end, or, in technical terms, the question of the quantum of the tribal estate in land, has generally been raised in connection with such title as depends upon actual occupancy. The assumption that all possession of lands by Indian tribes is of an identical type has elsewhere been discussed and criticized and need not be reviewed at this point.<sup>4</sup>

Within the diversity of tenures by which tribal lands are held, there undoubtedly exists a type of ownership that ceases when the tribe becomes extinct or abandons the land. Although this circumstance is commonly cited as indicating a peculiar tenement by which Indian lands are held, an examination of the prevailing, doctrines of real property law at the time when the theory of "Indian title" was first advanced, shows that there is nothing novel or peculiar about the legal justification or the practical significance of the doctrine. Under the feudal theory of English law, where the owner of land died without heirs or committed felony, the land escheated to the Crown, or to the mesne lord. This right of escheat was not, strictly speaking, a form of inheritance but a sovereign right superior to the property right of any landlord.<sup>5</sup> The right of escheat became less valuable, with respect to individual landowners, when the statutory right of testamentary disposition was extended to real property. An Indian tribe, however, could not, under British or American law, alienate its land without the consent of the Crown or the Federal Government. Therefore, the possibility that land would be left vacant when a tribe disappeared or abandoned the land was a real possibility and the rule of escheat served the same purpose that it served under early feudal conditions in England. Land held by a tribe in fee simple would be subject to escheat and it is unnecessary to assume any peculiarity of "Indian title" to explain this result.

Although technically the right of escheat was something entirely distinct from a possibility of reversion, there is ample precedent for confusing the two institutions.<sup>6</sup> Thus, although one might say with perfect accuracy that land held by an Indian tribe in fee simple would escheat to the United States when the tribe became extinct or abandoned the property, it became fashionable to refer to this incident as a possibility of reversion, rather than escheat. This use of language was not restricted to Indian tribes, but was applied, in the early nineteenth century, to all corporations under the doctrine that a corporation had

disputes have been invoked in reaching the determination that an island once part of an Indian reservation remains so although it becomes attached to the opposite bank of the river through a sudden change in the stream bed.<sup>7</sup>

In other cases local title has been invoked to settle ambiguities,<sup>8</sup> and it has been held that where, under Minnesota law, the title of the riparian owner stops at the water's edge, the ownership by an Indian tribe of the entire shore line of a lake will not disturb such ownership of the lake bed.<sup>9</sup>

Errors in surviving boundaries, caused by treaties or statutes have occasionally given rise to tribal claims.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>7</sup> *Shesquam Island*, *Missouri River*, 15 Op. A. C. 210 (1885).

<sup>8</sup> *United States v. Ladley*, 1 F. Supp. 780 (11 C. N. D. Idaho 1931).

<sup>9</sup> *Minnesota*, 11 D. December 19, 1916.

<sup>10</sup> See, for example, *Chief Nelson v. United States*, 302 U. S. 620 (1938), 115 S. Ct. 1512. Other aspects of the case are considered in 207 U. S. 103 (1925), 115 S. Ct. 109 and in 97 U. C. 280 (1914).

"only a determinable fee for the purposes of enjoyment. On the dissolution of the corporation, the reversion is to the original grantor or his heirs."<sup>11</sup> It was naturally agreed that "corporations have a fee simple for the purpose of alienation,"<sup>12</sup> but this portion of the doctrine was, of course, inapplicable to Indian tribes.

If these observations are well taken, we should conclude that it makes little practical difference whether we describe in Indian estate as a fee simple absolute subject to the ordinary sovereign right of escheat, or call the Indians' estate a determinable fee with a possibility of reversion in the sovereign, or refer to "Indian title of use and occupancy."

The only point at which these various theories may perhaps diverge lies in the test to be applied to determine when land has been "abandoned."

In *Holden v. Joy*<sup>13</sup> the Indian estate in question was to be, according to the governing treaty, a fee simple, but the patent issued by the President included the condition "that the lands heretofore granted shall revert to the United States, if the said Cheerokees become extinct, or abandon the same."<sup>14</sup> The Supreme Court rejected the argument that such abandonment took place by reason of (a) Cheerokee participation in the Civil War or the part of the Confederacy, or (b) an agreement whereby the Cheerokees allowed Congress to sell the land to their benefit. The Court held that the Cheerokee title continued until, by the agreement in question, title became vested in the United States. The Court further declared:

Beyond doubt the Cheerokees were the owners and occupants of the territory where they resided before the first approach of civilized man to the western continent, deposing their title, as they claimed, from the Great Spirit, to whom the whole earth belongs, and they were unquestionably the sole and exclusive masters of the territory, and claimed the right to govern themselves by their own laws, usages, and customs.

Enough has already been remarked to show that the lands conveyed to the United States by the treaty were held by the Cheerokees under their original title, acquired by immemorial possession, commencing ages before the New World was known to civilized man. Unmistak-

<sup>11</sup> See notes 8, 10, and 18 of this chapter.

<sup>12</sup> See "Escheat," 5 Encyc. Soc. Sci. 591 (T. F. T. Plimmett).

<sup>13</sup> *Op. cit.* note 181.

<sup>14</sup> 2 Kent Commentaries 282. And see 4 Thompson on Corporations, 4d ed., 1927, sec. 2465.

<sup>15</sup> 104.

<sup>16</sup> 17 Wall. 211 (1872).

<sup>17</sup> Quotation from patent 7048.

ably then title was absolute, subject only to the preemption right of purchase acquired by the United States as the successors of Great Britain, and the right also on their part as such successors of the discovery to prohibit the sale of the land to any other governments or their subjects, and to exclude all other governments from any interference in their affairs. (Pp. 243-244.)

Again, the Supreme Court held in *New York Indians v. United States*,<sup>17</sup> that duty in the settlement of new lands did not constitute abandonment.<sup>18</sup> On the other hand, the Supreme Court, holding that the Potawatamies did not own a large part of the city of Chicago, indicated as one basis for its decision the fact that the Potawatamies had, after conveying at least all the lands above the Lake level, abandoned the district for

<sup>17</sup> 170 U. S. 1 (1908) sup. cit. 173 U. S. 404.

<sup>18</sup> *Of The New York Indians v. United States*, 17 Wall. 761 (1860) (holding that interest in open land continues until that land has been taken).

more than half a century.<sup>19</sup> It appears to be settled law that actual removal of an entire tribe from one reservation to another, where such removal is voluntary, constitutes abandonment.<sup>20</sup>

Although various facts may be found assuming that the title of Indian tribes is less, in point of temporal extent, than a fee simple, reliance upon such facts has proven extremely hampered.<sup>21</sup> A realistic analysis of the cases suggests that the really clear distinction between "Indian title" and "fee simple title" lies in the fact that Indian lands are subject to statutory restrictions upon alienation.<sup>22</sup>

<sup>19</sup> *Williams v. City of Chicago*, 212 U. S. 8, 114 (1917).

<sup>20</sup> *Hull v. Northern Pacific Railroad*, 119 U. S. 175 (1886); *Rhode v. Shell Pet. Corp.*, 60 S. 2d 1 (C. C. A. 10, 1934) aff'd 57 P. 2d 696, cert. den., 255 U. S. 636. And see cases cited in note 20, supra.

<sup>21</sup> See, for instance the discussion of "Indian title" in *United States v. Coo*, 10 W. 491, 591 (1871) and extensive discussion based on this discussion which are noted in note 15, supra.

<sup>22</sup> See note 15, supra.

## SECTION 14 SUBSURFACE RIGHTS

Whether the possessory right of an Indian tribe includes minerals depends, as does every other question relating to the extent of Indian possessory rights, upon the treaty, statute, Executive order or other document or course of action upon which the right is based. While a treaty, statute, or Executive order specifically provides that minerals on Indian land shall be reserved to the United States,<sup>23</sup> or where a statute specifies that title to land purchased for an Indian tribe shall not extend to mineral rights,<sup>24</sup> no question is likely to arise. So, too, a treaty or statute may provide that the Indian tribe shall have specified rights of mining or quarrying in land belonging to the United States.<sup>25</sup>

Questions as to the Indian right to minerals have generally arisen where nothing specific appears in the treaty, statute, or other document upon which the Indian claim is based, or where the Indian claim is based simply on aboriginal occupancy. Confirmation of the view that aboriginal occupancy may include subsurface rights as well as surface rights is found in the case of *Cherokee v. Georgia*.<sup>26</sup> A treaty provision by which designated lands were "set apart for the absolute and undisturbed use and occupation of the Cherokee Indians" was held to convey to the Indians full mineral as well as timber rights, in the case of *United States v. Shoshone Tribe*.<sup>27</sup>

Further analyses of the extent of Indian mineral rights is found in the opinion<sup>28</sup> of Attorney General (afterwards Justice)

Stone rendered on May 27, 1924, with reference to the proposal of Section 17 of the Interior Fall to open Executive order reservation lands to mineral entry under the laws governing minerals within the public domain. After analyzing the terms of the general mining laws, the Attorney General decided:

The general mining laws never applied to Indian lands, whether created by treaty, by Congress, or by executive order. *Nashua v. Chisholm*, 119 U. S. 175 (1886); *Kendall v. San Juan River Mining Co.*, 141 U. S. 636; *Wadden v. Mountain View M. & O. Co.*, 97 Fed. 870; *Gibson v. Anderson*, 181 Fed. 39.

In support of this conclusion, based upon the language of the general mining laws, the Attorney General presented an analysis of Indian mineral rights which may well be set forth in full, without comment, as a complete exposition of the subject:

If the extent of the Indians' rights depended merely on definitions, or on deductions to be drawn from descriptive terms, there might be some question whether the right of "occupancy and use" included any right to the hidden or latent resources of the land, such as minerals, or potential water power, of which the Indians in their original state had no knowledge. As a practical matter, however, that question has been solved by the action of the Indians by a uniform series of legislative and treaty provisions beginning many years ago and extending to the present time. Thus the treaty provisions for the allotment of reservation lands all contemplate the final passing of a parcel of fee title to the individual Indians. And, first and foremost, of course, that mineral and all other hidden or latent resources would go with the fee. The same is true of the General Allotment Act of 1887, which applies exclusively to executive order reservations as well as to Indian lands. Beginning many years ago, special acts were passed (with or without previous agreements with the Indians concerned) whereby surplus lands remaining to the tribe after completion of the allotments were to be sold for their benefit. In all these instances Congress has recognized the right of the Indians to receive the full value of the land, including the value of the timber, the minerals, and all other elements of value, less only the expenses of the Government in surveying and selling the land. Legislation and treaties of this character were dealt with in *First v. First*, 187 U. S. 16, 50; *Minnesota v. Hitchcock*, 185 U. S. 873; *Long Wolf v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 638; *United States v. Blendon*, 128 Fed. 910, 918; *Ark. Sheep Co. v. United States*, 252 U. S. 168. And, first and foremost, special provisions have been made in many other cases for the sale of surplus tribal lands, all the proceeds of all elements of value to go to the tribe. In a recent Act for further allotment of Crow Indian lands (41 Stat. 763), the minerals are reserved to the tribe instead of passing to the allottees. (See 8.) And, moreover, unallotted lands chiefly valuable for the development of water power are

<sup>23</sup> See for example Act III of Treaty of August 7, 1820 with the Choctaw Indians, 7 Stat. 200; Act of February 21, 1911, 40 Stat. 1242 (Pawnee Indians) contained in Op. Sol. I. D. M. 2769; *Mich. T.*, 1884, and Op. Sol. I. D. M. 2780, May 7, 1914.

<sup>24</sup> Act of February 17, 1920, 17 Stat. 1186 (Alabama and Choctaw), Act of June 22, 1930, 49 Stat. 1806 (Walton River), Act of June 28, 1936, sec. 1, 49 Stat. 1907 (Ogish and U. S. C. 307 (Oklahoma)).

<sup>25</sup> *Sankton River v. United States*, 61 C. C. 40 (1926). In this case it was held that treaty reservation of the right to quarry phosphate in a given area did not confer upon the tribe reserved a right of occupancy. The suit was brought under § 32 of the Act of April 4, 1916, 39 Stat. 269, 284, on the basis of the Treaty of April 19, 1868, 11 Stat. 743. The decision was reversed on other grounds in 272 U. S. 351 (1926).

<sup>26</sup> 16 How. 208 (1851). Of Joint Resolution of April 10, 1860, 2 Stat. 87, authorizing the President to determine whether Indian title to copper lands adjacent to Lake Superior was "of subsisting, and if so, the terms on which the same can be extinguished." But of discussion of separation of surface and mineral rights under Spanish law, in Op. Sol. I. D. M. 2780, March 7, 1914.

<sup>27</sup> 104 U. S. 113 (1882). *See Shoshone Tribe v. United States*, 85 C. C. 313 (1917); the argument *ante* will be found in a memorandum of the Assistant Attorney General dated December 8, 1927 (11 L. D. Memo 468).

<sup>28</sup> 94 Op. A. G. 151 (1924). This opinion follows that of Solicitor Brown of the Department of the Interior (A. 2665), dated February 12, 1924.



the treaty or statute establishing the reservation has referred to "Indian use and occupancy" or used some similar phrase. These questions were seldom complicated by the interpretations placed on language of the Supreme Court in the cases of *United States v. Cook*<sup>30</sup> and *Pine River Logging Co. v. United States*.<sup>31</sup>

In the former of these cases, timber standing on tribal land was cut by individual Indians, without the authority of the Indian Department.<sup>32</sup> The United States brought an action of replevin against the vendee, and the Supreme Court held that the United States was entitled to recover possession of the timber. The Court based its decision upon the argument that since the timber while standing is a part of the earth, standing timber cannot be sold by the Indians, and only timber rightfully severed from the soil can be legally sold.<sup>33</sup> Whether timber was lawfully severed depended upon whether its cutting resulted in improvement of the land or on the contrary, amounted to waste. Since the facts of the case established the latter situation, the Court held that the possession of the vendee was illegal. The Court did not decide whether in removing the timber of its value, the United States was to hold such timber on funds in trust for the Indians in the country, or whether such recovery was to accrue to the general funds of the United States Treasury.

In the course of its opinion, the Supreme Court, *per* Waite, C. J., declared:

There are familiar principles in this country and well settled, as applicable to tenants for life and a remainderman. But a tenant for life has all the rights of occupancy in the lands of a tenement holder. The Indians have the same rights in the lands of their reservation. What a tenant for life may do upon the lands of a tenement holder the Indians may do upon their reservations, but no more. (P. 394.)

The view thus expressed was affirmed by the Supreme Court in the *Pine River Logging Co.* case,<sup>34</sup> where an action in the nature of trover, brought by the United States against the vendee of and wrongfully cut timber, was upheld by the Court. In the course of its opinion, the Court, *per* Brown, J., declared:

The argument overlooks the fact that the Indians had no right to the timber upon this land other than to provide themselves with the necessary wood for their individual use, or to improve their land. *United States v. Cook*, 10 Wall. 201, expressed so fully as Congress, those to extend such right, that they had no right even to contract for the cutting of dead and down timber, unless such contract was approved by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs; that the Indians in fact were not treated as *tenants*, but even movement made by them, either in the execution of the performance of the contract, was subject to government supervision for the express purpose of securing the better against the abuse of the right given by the statute. (P. 200.)

In the *Pine River Logging Co.* case (and probably in the *Cook* case) the Department of the Interior and the Department of

Justice apparently construed the decision as implying that the timber concerned had no property interest in the timber or in the lands recovered. In an opinion rendered in 1885, the Attorney General answered in the negative the following question presented by the Secretary of the Interior:<sup>35</sup>

(1) Whether the Indians occupying reservations, the title to which is in the United States, have the right, in view of the opinion of the Supreme Court of the United States in the case of *United States v. Cook* (10 Wall. 201), to cut and sell for their use and benefit the dead and down timber which is found to a great or in some extent on many of the reservations and which will go to waste if not used? (Pp. 194-195.)

Two years later the Attorney General told that when timber on land of the United States was cut by trespassers, with the consent of Indian Service officers, the timber should be sold by the Commissioner of the General Land Office, the proceeds to "belong to the Government absolutely."<sup>36</sup>

This view was supported by the argument that, under the *Cook* case, the Indians have "the mere right to use and enjoy the land so occupied" and that, therefore, the Indians have no interest in this timber.<sup>37</sup> The Board of Indian Commissioners had protested immediately after the decision in the *Cook* case, against an interpretation of that case which would "prevent the Indians from cutting and marketing their timber," alleging that such a construction, particularly when applied to dead and down timber, "would prove not only a loss to the Indians, but in absolute damage to the United States."<sup>38</sup> In 1889 Congress enacted a statute authorizing the sale of dead timber on Indian reservations by the Indians of the reservation, under Presidential regulations,<sup>39</sup> thus recognizing an Indian possessory right and leaving its extent still uncertain.

In a later opinion of the Attorney General, it was held that the Indian occupants of an Executive order reservation were entitled to the proceeds of timber sales.<sup>40</sup>

In the case of the *Shoshone Indians v. United States*,<sup>41</sup> the Court of Claims pointed out that the interpretation of the *Cook* case as denying the validity of the Indian interest in timber was unnecessary and unjustifiable. In the *Cook* case, it was pointed out, "The court decided that the members of the Oneida Tribe had no right to cut the timber on the land solely for the purpose of sale, that to do so was waste as in the case of the cutting of timber by a trespasser, and that the United States as the owner of the fee became the owner of the logs." The court further declared:

In that case two points were decided. First, it was decided by analogy to the law relating to the respective rights of life tenant and remainderman, that if the Indians have no right to cut the timber on an Indian reservation for the purpose of sale only, that to do so is waste, and that the

<sup>30</sup> 19 Wall. 603 (1873).

<sup>31</sup> 106 U. S. 270 (1902).

<sup>32</sup> Apparently the Interior Department took the position at that time that tribal timber might be sold by the Indians for the benefit of the tribe and that the tribe itself might give a valid permit for the cutting and marketing of timber. See Ex. Doc. No. 72, 40th Cong., 2d sess., vol. 2, July 5, 1868.

<sup>33</sup> As was said in the case of *Starr v. Campbell*, 208 U. S. 527 (1908), involving timber on ceded lands:

It is alleged that the value of the land, exclusive of the timber was no more than \$1,000, fifteen thousand dollars worth of timber has been cut from the land. The result upon assumption would be reduced to small consequence if it be confined to one sixteenth of the value of the land and fifteen eighths left to the heirs, or unqualified disposition of the Indians. Such is not the legal effect of the case. (P. 534.)

Accord: *United States v. Boyd*, 88 Fed. 847 (C. C. A. 4, 1897).

<sup>34</sup> *Op. cit.*, at p. 286.

<sup>35</sup> Timber on Indian Reservations, 19 Op. A. G. 194 (1888).

<sup>36</sup> Timber Unlawfully Cut on Indian Lands, 10 Op. A. G. 710 (1900).

<sup>37</sup> Letter from the Secretary of the Interior, House Ex. Doc. No. 63, 44d Cong. 2d sess., vol. 12, December 17, 1874. And of remarks of chief in *United States v. Foster*, 25 Fed. Cl. No. 15141 (C. C. B. D., Wash. 1870).

<sup>38</sup> " \* \* \* while, perhaps, there may be some question whether the Indians would have the right to commit waste, properly so called, upon the land, or to use the timber for the purpose of speculation, still there can be no doubt they would have the right to clear the land for cultivation, and if so, it would seem to sell the wood they obtained from the land, and to say that they could have the right to cut and use the wood and timber for these purposes, and that they could not sell it to enable them to obtain necessary articles, such as nails and other materials for the construction of their buildings and fences, would seem to be making a very colored distinction and one not warranted under the construction of the case."

<sup>39</sup> Act of February 16, 1889, 21 Stat. 678, 28 U. S. C. § 198.

<sup>40</sup> Sale of Timber from Ceded Lands of Indian Reservation, 29 Op. A. G. 280 (1911) (White Mountain Agency).

<sup>41</sup> 85 C. Cl. 831 (1907), *aff'd* 804 U. S. 111 (1888).

title to timber on such vests in the United States is the owner of the fee or "ultimate dominion" second that the Indians have in exclusive right of use and occupancy of *unlimited duration*, and the right to cut the standing timber *as during the life of such occupancy* not only for use upon the premises but for the purpose of improving the land in the latter adapting it to convenient occupation;—that the right to sell timber cut to the latter purpose. It is clear therefore that this decision did not hold that the government had the right to cut or dispose of the timber on Indian Reservations, or to sell Indian lands for its own use, and heretofore without accounting therefor to the Indian title. When a reservation is definitely cut out for an Indian tribe by treaty or statute the Government has only the right and power to control and manage the property and affairs of the Indians in and to the tract so inclosed, but is vested by the court in *Shoshone Tribe of Indians v. United States*, 299 U. S. 476.

Power to control and manage the property and affairs of Indians in and to the tract for their betterment and welfare may be exerted in many ways and it thus comes in derogation of the provisions of a treaty *June 30th v. Little Rock* 187 U. S. 555, 564, 565, 566. The power does not extend so far as to enable the Government "to give the tribal lands to others, or to appropriate them to its own purposes, without reimbursement, or assuming an obligation to render, such compensation." But for this would not be an exercise of guardianship, but in act of confiscation." *United States v. Cook*, *Nation*, *supra*, p. 110, 113, 114.

Government counsel argue here that *United States v. Cook*, *supra* decided that the interest of the Indians in the reservation land and timber therein is that of a life tenant and no more. In that case the court did say that "What a tenant for life may do upon the lands of a tenant in fee the Indians may do upon their reservations, but no more." But in thus comparing the position of the Indian with that of a life tenant for the purpose of stating what the Indians may or may not do on their reservations we think the court did not intend definitely to hold that the interest of the Indians in the lands of their reservations is only that of a tenant for life. Such a holding would have been in conflict with the statement of the court in *United States v. Cook*, *supra*, concerning the nature of Indian title, that the Indians have the right of use and occupancy of unlimited duration. We think also that the contention of counsel for defendant is inconsistent with the holding of the Supreme Court in the case at bar—that the power of the government to control and manage the property and affairs of the Indians in good faith for their betterment and welfare does not extend so far as to enable the government to give the land to others or to appropriate them to its own purposes. (Pp. 361-365.)

The decision of the Court of Claims, that the value of Shoshone lands taken by the Government must include the value of the timber thereon, was upheld by the Supreme Court on appeal,<sup>100</sup> and confirmed in the later case of *United States v. Kila Mest Indians*.<sup>101</sup> Following this decision, Congress by special

<sup>100</sup> 304 U. S. 111 (1938). Commenting on the *Cook* case, the Supreme Court declared, per Justice J. (Reed, J. dissenting):

*United States v. Cook*, *supra*, gave no support to the contention that in sacrificing just compensation for the Indian right taken, the value of the timber on the reservation in the reservation should be excluded. That case did not involve adjudication of the value of Indian title to land, minerals or standing timber, but only the right of the United States to replevin logs cut and sold by a few timbered men to the wrongdoers. The United States was entitled to possession. It was not then decided that the timber right of occupancy so positively did not include ownership of the land or mineral deposits or standing timber upon the reservation, or that the timber right was the more equivalent of, or like the title of a life tenant. (P. 118.)

The argument herein is presented in a Memorandum of the Agent Atorney General, dated December 8, 1937, 11 U. S. 20 Memo. 408.

<sup>101</sup> 304 U. S. 110 (1938). In this case, the Court ruled:

The clause declaring that the district retained should, until otherwise directed by the President, be set apart as a reservation for the Indians and the Indian title to the Indian Reservation clearly did not detract from the timber right of occupancy. The worth attributable to the timber was a part of the value of the land upon which it was standing. (P. 138.)

statute directed the Secretary of the Treasury to credit to the tribal funds of the Chippewa Indians the amount of the payment in the *Pine River Logging Case*, which had been erroneously deposited in the Treasury of the United States as public money, together with interest thereon.<sup>102</sup>

It must therefore be taken as settled law at the present time that in the absence of specific language to the contrary the establishment of an Indian reservation for the use and occupancy of the Indians conveys to the Indians an interest in the timber of the reservation is complete in the tribal interest to the land itself, that the cutting, and thenation of such timber is subject to congressional legislation, and that the wrongdoers of individual Indians vendors of timber on lands of the United States Government cannot deprive an Indian tribe of its interest in tribal timber or of its right to receive the proceeds of timber cut and alienated without the consent of the tribe.

These views are supported by the course of congressional legislation relating to timber growing on tribal land. Congress has repeatedly enacted special legislation authorizing disposition of timber on various designated reservations providing always that the proceeds of such disposition should come to the benefit of the tribe concerned.<sup>103</sup>

Apart from these special statutes, Congress has enacted various laws of general application relating to the disposition of tribal timber and providing that proceeds therefrom shall accrue to the benefit of the tribe concerned. Thus section 7 of the Act of June 27, 1910,<sup>104</sup> it reads:

That the mature timber and dead and downy timber on unallotted lands of any Indian reservation may be sold under regulations to be prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior, and the proceeds from such sales shall be used for the benefit of the Indians of the reservation in such manner as he may direct. *Provided*, That this section shall not apply in the States of Minnesota and Wisconsin. (P. 577.)

Again Congress, by the Act of July 3, 1921,<sup>105</sup> provided that the net proceeds derived from the sale of timber on Indian lands should be credited to the funds of the tribe.

Similarly, various treaties have recognized the Indian right in timber on tribal land by providing for payments to the Indian tribe where such timber was destroyed without tribal consent.<sup>106</sup> Many other treaties provide for the establishment of Indian saw mills, and this has been construed as evidencing an understanding that the Indians would own the timber on the reservation.<sup>107</sup> Further recognition of the possessory interest of an Indian tribe in the timber growing upon its land is found in statutory provisions reserving timber on allotted land for the benefit of the tribe,<sup>108</sup> or reserving tribal timberlands from sale, where other lands are offered for sale.<sup>109</sup>

The action of Congress in exercising a large measure of sapel vision, through the Department of the Interior, over the disposition of Indian timber is no more a denial of the Indian

<sup>102</sup> Act of June 15, 1918 52 Stat. 688.

<sup>103</sup> Act of April 25, 1976 19 Stat. 47 (Memomemo), Act of July 5, 1878 19 Stat. 74 (Keweenaw Indians), Act of June 17, 1894, 27 Stat. 82 (Klamath River Indian Reservation), Act of April 23, 1904, sec. 11, 33 Stat. 302, 304 (Flathead Indian Reservation), Act of June 7, 1906, 34 Stat. 212 (Klamath, Camanche, and Apache), Act of March 29, 1908 35 Stat. 51 (Memomemo), Act of May 27, 1908, 35 Stat. 458 (Shoshone).  
<sup>104</sup> 30 Stat. 879. Sec. 27 of this act provides for the sale of pine timber on ceded Chippewa Indian Reservation in Minnesota. See also 29 U. S. C. A. 108.

<sup>105</sup> 44 Stat. 800.

<sup>106</sup> Act of Treaty of March 9, 1860, with Omaha Tribe, 14 Stat. 897, Art. 14 of Treaty of July 4, 1860, with the Delaware Tribe, 14 Stat. 708.

<sup>107</sup> *United States v. Rinnart*, 30 Fed. 84 (C. C. Ore. 1888) (Grand Ronde).

<sup>108</sup> Act of February 27, 1920, 41 Stat. 472.

<sup>109</sup> Act of May 27, 1910, 36 Stat. 440 (Eminence Ridge Indian Reservation), Act of May 30, 1910, 36 Stat. 448 (Rosebud Indian Reservation).

interest in such timber claim is the equally true measure of control over alienation of Indian lands. A denial of the Indian interest in such lands. On the contrary, the underlying purpose of such regulation for many years has been the protection of the interests of the tribe as a whole against over-gracious individual and generation heedless of posterity.<sup>10</sup> It is believed that the first federal law to enshrine the principle of sustained yield timber production was the Act of March 25, 1906,<sup>11</sup> relating to timber cutting on the Monominee Reservation.

Federal control over the disposition of tribal timber applies even where the tribe concerned holds the land in fee simple,<sup>12</sup> which is a clear indication that limitations upon the disposition of Indian tribal timber are in no way inconsistent with a recognition that the full beneficial interest therein is vested in the Indian tribe.

The tribal possessory right in timber may be protected both by civil and by criminal proceedings. Actions in the private of trespass<sup>13</sup> or trover<sup>14</sup> and injunction<sup>15</sup> suits have been brought in the United States, it should be noted, where timber has been disposed of unlawfully. In addition, criminal sanctions have been applied.

Section 1785 of the Revised Statutes, making it an offense to cut timber on lands of the United States reserved for military or other purposes was apparently the only statute on the books that might be construed to make unlawful cutting of Indian tribal timber.<sup>16</sup> A criminal offense, until June 4, 1888, when an amend-

<sup>10</sup> The Department of the Interior in General Forest Regulations dated April 25, 1916, 25 C. & G. 241 states its objects in, otherwise.

The preservation of Indian forest lands in a perpetually productive state by providing effective protection preserving the cutting of such cuttings, and, in turn, adequate provision for the future needs of the nation, timber is to be secured.

Regulation 9 provides for sale of timber only where the volume produced by the forest annually is in excess of that which is payable in development in the Indians or where the land is rapidly deteriorating for its value, and then only after the timber to be sold has been inspected and the contract of sale approved.

<sup>11</sup> 34 Stat. 71. The question of whether the Department of the Interior has complied with the statute has been referred by Congress to the Court of Claims for determination. Act of September 1, 1906, 49 Stat. 1057, amended by Act of April 5, 1916, 39 Stat. 205. *U. S. v. United States, ex rel. B. & W. v. Wash. 40 F. 2d 691 (App. D. C. 1927).*

<sup>12</sup> *United States v. Boyd 51 Fed. 517 (C. A. 1 1897).*

<sup>13</sup> *United States v. Cook supra in 291.*

<sup>14</sup> *Pine River Logging Co. v. United States supra in 296.*

<sup>15</sup> *United States v. Boyd supra in 317.*

<sup>16</sup> See *United States v. Kunkel, 41 Fed. 81, 87 (C. C. Wyo 1890).*

ment to this section was adopted which added to the section the words "on upon any Indian reservation, or lands belonging to or occupied by any tribe of Indians under authority of the United States".<sup>17</sup> In 1909 this statute was incorporated with slight verbal changes in the Penal Code,<sup>18</sup> as section 70. The provision in question is subsequently amended, reads:

SEC. 70. Whoever shall unlawfully cut, or aid in unlawfully cutting, or shall unlawfully attempt to destroy, or procure to be unlawfully injured or destroyed, any trees, growing, standing, or being upon any land of the United States which, in pursuance of law, has been reserved or purchased by the United States for any public use, or upon any Indian reservation or lands belonging to or occupied by any tribe of Indians under the authority of the United States or any Indian allotment with the title to the same shall be held in trust by the Government or while the same shall remain in the public or the private without the consent of the United States, shall be fined not more than five hundred dollars, or imprisoned not more than one year, or both.<sup>19</sup>

The validity of federal penal legislation in this field appears to be beyond question,<sup>20</sup> and its applicability to individual members of the tribe that owns the timber has been maintained even in an extreme case where the count was forced to say:

It is plain that by cutting trees on the reservation Kunkel put himself within the letter of the section is intended. He did not, however, cut the trees for sale or profit. To occupy and cultivate the tract allotted to him in severalty he needed a house and barn, and the trees were cut for the sole purpose of erecting such buildings upon his premises. It seems hardly to visit upon him the penalty of the statute for this act, but the court must administer the law as it finds it.<sup>21</sup>

<sup>17</sup> 35 Stat. 186.

<sup>18</sup> Act of March 4, 1909, 35 Stat. 1086. The Act of June 4, 1888 is included in the type history, clause sec. 543.

<sup>19</sup> Act of June 25, 1926, sec. 6, 43 Stat. 873, 877.

This section is made inapplicable to the Osage Indians and the Five Civilized Tribes by sec. 44 of the same act. Separate criminal legislation relating to the Five Civilized Tribes is found in the Act of June 6, 1906, 34 Stat. 666 as amended by the Act of January 21, 1907, 34 Stat. 774. See 36 Stat. 1. Act of March 21, 1907, 34 Stat. 1927.

<sup>20</sup> *United States v. Kunkel 171 Fed. 1021 (D. C. Wyo 1909).*

<sup>21</sup> *United States v. Kunkel 41 Fed. 64, 66 (C. C. Wyo 1890), *Labadie v. United States 6 Okla. 400 (1897). In the former case the court held erroneous the conviction of a second Indian defendant who had imported and used tribal timber unlawfully cut by the first defendant.**

## SECTION 16. TRIBAL WATER RIGHTS

Whether water rights issue to a tribe and to what extent is largely a matter of judicial interpretation. The early treaties with the Indians seldom mentioned and never defined water rights. And yet, since the Indian economy was built at that time in part on fishing and later on agriculture, it was essential that a tribe be assured some right to the water within or bordering the reservation.

That the Federal Government had the power to reserve the waters flowing through the territories and except them from appropriation under the state laws had early been decided.<sup>22</sup> Thus, when the question of tribal water right first arose the Supreme Court in the case of *Winters v. United States*,<sup>23</sup> held

that where land in territorial status was reserved by treaty to an Indian tribe, there was impliedly reserved for the Indians, and withheld from subsequent appropriation by others, water of the streams of the reservations necessary for the irrigation of their lands.

The reservation was a part of a very much larger tract which the Indians had the right to occupy and use and which was adequate for the habits and wants of a

<sup>22</sup> *United States v. Rio Grande Irrigation Co.*, 174 U. S. 680 (1900), *United States v. Winters*, 198 U. S. 371 (1905), rev'd, 78 Fed. 72 (C. C. Wash. 1898).

<sup>23</sup> 207 U. S. 561 (C. A. 9 1908). Followed in *United States v. Ponder*, 805 U. S. 527 (1930), aff'd, 94 F. 2d 733 (C. A. 9, 1938), mod'd, 16 F. Supp. 175 (D. C. Mont. 1948), *United States v. McIntire*, 107 F. 2d 680 (C. A. 9 1939), rev'd, *McIntire v. United States*, 12 F. Supp. 316 (D. C. Mont. 1947), *United States v. Pashens*,

18 F. 2d 648 (D. C. Wyo 1926), *United States v. Tidwell*, 21 F. 2d 900, 811 (D. C. Idaho 1928), *United States v. Colorado Irrigation Co.* and *United States v. Dry Gulch Irrigation Co.* (Equity Nos. 4427 and 4418 D. C. Utah, 1928—unreported), *United States v. O'Neil Water Ditch Co.* (Equity Docket A-3, D. C. Nev. 1926—unreported), *United States v. Robinson Canal Ditch Co.* (Equity No. 7788, D. C. Colo. 1931—unreported), *Anderson v. Spear Mountain Irrigation Co.*, 78 F. 2d 107 (Mont. 1928), *Omaha Irr. Co. v. United States* 161 Fed. 829 (C. A. 9 1908), aff'd, 166 Fed. 125 (C. C. Mont. 1907), and compare *Altim v. United States*, 278 Fed. 84 (C. C. A. 9, 1921), *Mason v. House* 5 F. 2d 255 (D. C. Wyo. Wash. 1957), *United States v. Wrightman*, 280 Fed. 277 (D. C. Ariz. 1915), *Spicer v. Wa-Wa-Nee*, 86 Or. 617, 186 Pac. 121 (1917).

nomadic and uncivilized people. It was the policy of the Government to "change these Indians, and to become a settled and civilized people."<sup>10</sup> If there should become such the original tract was too extensive but a smaller tract would be made quite without a change of conditions. The lands were arid and, without irrigation, were practically useless. And yet it is contended the means of irrigation were definitely given up by the Indians and definitely accepted by the Government. (P. 776.)

This contention the Court said could not be accepted, especially in view of the rule that agreements with Indians are to be construed in favor of the Indians. The Court rejected also the further contention that the United States had repealed the reservation of water for the Indians by the admission into the Union of Montana, the state in which the reservation was situated. It would be extraneous to believe the Court said that Congress—

... look from them the means of continuing, then did habits yet did not give them the power to change to new ones. (Id. 777.)

The Winters decision effects a prohibition against the diversion of water from a stream above and outside the reservation itself. If such diversion deprives the tribe of water necessary for the irrigation of tribal lands. In other words, these reserved rights are the property of the Indians to be protected by the Federal Government and no appropriation of water either under state or federal law, which reduces the amount of water in a stream within an Indian reservation below the amount necessary for irrigation of Indian lands is valid.

The Winters decision was thus followed in *Gardner vs. United States*.<sup>11</sup>

\* \* \* This Court affirmed the decree in the Winters case, holding that the United States, by treaties with the Indians on the reservation, had implicitly reserved the waters of Snake river for the benefit of the Indians on the reservation to the extent it is reasonably necessary to enable them to irrigate their lands, and that quantities and settlers on public lands outside of their reservation could not acquire under the desert land laws of the United States or the laws of the state of Montana relating to the appropriation of the waters of the streams of that state, the right to divert the waters of Snake river to the prejudice of the rights of the Indians residing upon that reservation. . . . The law of that case is applicable to the present case, and determines the paramount right of the Indians of the Blackfoot Indian reservation to the use of the waters of Birch creek to the extent it is reasonably necessary for the purposes of irrigation and stock raising, and domestic and other special purposes. The government has undertaken, by agreement with the Indians on these reservations, to promote their improvement, comfort, and welfare, in aiding them to become self-sustaining as a peaceable and agricultural people. The lands within these reservations are dry and arid, and require the diversion of waters from the streams to make them productive and suitable for agricultural, stock raising, and domestic purposes.

The doctrine enunciated in the Winters case was applied to reservations created by treaty was later recognized by the courts as applicable to reservations created by Executive order. In *United States v. Walker River Irrigation District*,<sup>12</sup> the Circuit Court of Appeals had this to say:

\* \* \* The trial court thought *Winters v. United States*, distinguishable, as being based on an agreement or treaty with the Indians. Here there was no treaty. It said that at the time the Walker River reservation was set apart, the Paiutes were at war with the whites, hence

no agreement between them and the Government was possible.

(1) In the Winters case, as in this, the basic question for determination was one of intent: whether the waters of the stream were intended to be reserved for the use of the Indians or whether the lands only were to be saved. We are no reason to believe that the intention to reserve need be evidenced by treaty or agreement. A tribe of Indians, even if hostile, upon the reservation may be equally indicative of the intent. While in the Winters case the Court emphasized the treaty, there was in fact no express reservation of water to be found in the document. The intention had to be arrived at by taking a count of the circumstances, the situation and needs of the Indian and the purpose for which the lands had been reserved. (P. 761.)

The views expressed in the foregoing cases are supported by the course of congressional legislation relating to tribal rights in water. Congress has repeatedly enacted special legislation authorizing the construction of irrigation projects on various designated reservations, providing always that the Indians shall be supplied with water from the project.<sup>13</sup>

Again in opening reservation land to mineral entry Congress has expressly excepted lands containing surface water holes, or other bodies of water needed or used by the Indians for watering live stock, irrigation or water power purposes.<sup>14</sup> By the Act of March 7, 1928,<sup>15</sup> Congress provided for the purchase of land with sufficient water right for the use and occupancy of the Tamaulac Band of Homeless Indians. When the Yakima Reservation was reserved, less water than the amount to which it was entitled under the doctrine of the Winters case, Congress appropriated a sum of money for the purchase of an additional water right for the Indians.<sup>16</sup> To protect the water rights of the Indians of the Teton Reservation, Congress has authorized the President to withdraw from city lands within the watershed and to protect such lands from any act or condition which would impair the purity or the volume of the water flowing therefrom.<sup>17</sup> Water from streams on the ceded portion of the Fort Hall Reservation necessary for irrigation of land under cultivation has been reserved to the Indians, more so long as the Indians remain where they now live.<sup>18</sup>

Similarly, various statutes have provided for payment of compensation to be credited to tribal funds in the event Indian water rights are sold, appropriated, or otherwise diminished.<sup>19</sup>

Apart from the foregoing statutes Congress has enacted various laws of general application relating to the water rights of Indian allottees.<sup>20</sup>

<sup>10</sup> Act of January 1, 1849, 25 Stat. 819 (Paiute Reservation), Act of February 12, 1851, 27 Stat. 117 (Omaha Reservation), Act of February 10, 1851, 26 Stat. 715 (Omaha Reservation), Act of February 17, 1863, 27 Stat. 476 (Yukon River Indian), Act of January 20, 1861, 27 Stat. 420 (Yukon Reservation), Act of March 6, 1906, 4 Stat. 51 (Yukon River Indian), Act of March 1, 1908, 45 Stat. 112 (Paiute Indian) further that all present water rights now appurtenant to the . . . \* \* \* irrigated lands be owned individually or as partners. . . . \* \* \* and all rights for the domestic purposes of the Indians and for the stock shall be given and paramount to any rights of the district or of any property holder therein. . . . Act of March 1, 1889, 10 Stat. 924, 941 (Omaha Reservation) and of December 16, 1926, 14 Stat. 922. . . . Act of August 20, 1922, 12 Stat. 52 (Idaho Cattle Brand).

<sup>11</sup> 35 S. Ct. at 200, 207.

<sup>12</sup> Act of August 1, 1911, 36 Stat. 792, 604.

<sup>13</sup> Act of March 27, 1938, 45 Stat. 374.

<sup>14</sup> See note of June 6, 1909, 12 Stat. 672.

<sup>15</sup> Act of August 28, 1927, 49 Stat. 809, Act of March 2, 1927, 44 Stat. 1370 (Cherokee and Chickasaw Indians), Act of March 22, 1906, 14 Stat. 80 (Owhee Reservation), Act of February 12, 1889, 27 Stat. 417 (Omaha Reservation).

<sup>16</sup> Act of February 10, 1851, sec. 7, 24 Stat. 168, 300, 391, Act of May 20, 1908, 35 Stat. 414, Act of March 1, 1889, 25 Stat. 888 (pertaining to both allotted and tribal lands).

<sup>17</sup> See sec. 21, infra and see Chapters 2, 3, and 4.

<sup>18</sup> 161 Fed. 829, 831-832 (C. C. A. 9, 1908), aff'd 176 Fed. 193 (C. C. Mont. 1907).

<sup>19</sup> 104 F. 2d 344 (C. C. A. 9, 1939).



# A TRIBAL RIGHT *versus* STATE RIGHT IN NAVIGABLE WATERS

The ownership by the United States of lands in territorial status extends to the lands underlying all bodies of water there in.<sup>101</sup> Where unreserved, the title to land underlying navigable waters is held to pass to a state upon admission into the Union, while title to the land underlying non-navigable waters remains in the United States.<sup>102</sup>

If navigable waters have not been reserved the title has had a right of use in common with citizens of the state.<sup>103</sup> If he comes pertinent therefore to examine the criteria for determining whether such waters have been reserved to a tribe. Here again questions of intent and of circumstances surrounding the creation of the reservation are of paramount importance. Thus, in holding that the lands underlying the navigable waters within the Red Lake Indian Reservation passed to the State of Minnesota upon its admission into the Union, the Supreme Court said:<sup>104</sup>

We come then to the question whether the lands under the lake were disposed of by the United States before Minnesota became a State. An affirmative disposal is not asserted but only that the lake and therefore the lands under it, was within the limits of the Red Lake Reservation when the State was admitted. The evidence of the reservation is convincing, but that it operated as a disposal of lands underlying navigable waters within its limits is disputed. We are of opinion that the reservation was not intended to effect such a disposal and that there was none. If the reservation operated as a disposal of the lands under a part of the navigable waters within its limits, it equally worked a disposal of the lands under all. Besides Mud Lake, the reservation limits included Red Lake, lying in area of 400 square miles, the greater part of the Lake of the Woods, having approximately the same area, and several navigable streams. The reservation came into being through a succession of treaties with the Chippewas whereby they ceded to the United States their aboriginal right of occupancy to the surrounding lands. The last treaties, preceding the admission of the State were concluded September 30, 1854, 10 Stat 1160, and February 22, 1857, 10 Stat 1107. There was no formal cession, apart of which was not ceded, nor an affirmative declaration of the rights of the Indians thereon nor any attempted exclusion of others from the use of navigable waters. The effect of what was done was to reserve in a general way for the continued occupation of the Indians what remained of their aboriginal territory and thus came to be known and recognized as a reservation. *Muneeba v. Heltchick*, 156 U S 373, 389. There was nothing in this which even approaches a grant of rights in lands underlying navigable waters, nor anything giving us a purpose to deprive from the established policy before stated, at the time such lands as held for the benefit of the future State. Without doubt the Indian were to have access to the navigable waters and to be entitled to use them in accustomed ways, but these were common rights, conferred to all, whether white or Indian, by the only legislation reviewed in *Railroad Co v. Shumway* 7 Wall 272, 287-289, and *Bronomy Light v. Power Co v. United States*, supra pp 118-120, and emphasized in the *Washington Act* under which Minnesota was admitted as a State, c 60, 11 Stat 166, which de-

clared that the rivers and waters bounding the State and the navigable waters leading into the same shall be common highways and forever free, as well to the Indian tribes of said State as to all other citizens of the United States' (Pp 57-59)

A similar result was reached in *Tanah v. United States*<sup>105</sup> on the theory that since the Executive order creating the Quileute Indian Reservation made no express reference to the Quileute River as the northern boundary, no reservation of its waters was intended, nor was exception to the general policy of the Government to hold such property in trust for the future States.

Where a reservation is created after admission of a state into the Union, there is some question as to whether the unappropriated navigable waters within the reservation are reserved to the tribe. An affirmative answer would seem to deprive the state of an acquired right unless it can be said that the creation of the reservation serves as a notice of the appropriation of unappropriated navigable waters within its border for the use of the Indians.

Where California by statute classified a river as non-navigable it has been held that by the subsequent creation of a reservation the waters therein were reserved for the benefit of the Indians.<sup>106</sup>

## B EXTENT OF RESERVED WATER RIGHT

It will be remembered that the Court in the *Winters* case decided only that there was an implied reservation to a tribe of an amount of water reasonably necessary for irrigation and domestic purposes. There was left open the further question of whether the water right impliedly reserved for use for irrigation includes a flow of water sufficient merely to supply the needs of the Indians, if the time of the creation of the reservation, or whether it includes a flow sufficient in quantity to irrigate all the irrigable lands of the reservation.

The policy which underlies the doctrine of implied reservation of water has been given effect by holdings that when an Indian reservation is set apart, the water right impliedly reserved is large enough to irrigate the entire irrigable acreage of the reservation.<sup>107</sup> In *Conrad Irr Co v. United States*,<sup>108</sup> the court granted a right to a designated amount of water with leave to the Government to apply for modification of the decree at any time it might determine that its needs would be in excess of that amount. The District Court decision<sup>109</sup> shows clearly that the water right reserved was based on total irrigable acreage (p 130) and increased need was anticipated only because of probable change in use of the land resulting from the Indians' progress in agriculture (p 120). Likewise, in *Shenav v. United States*,<sup>110</sup> where water was expressly reserved by treaty for irrigation "on land actually cultivated and in use," the court held that the water right reserved was not limited in quantity to the amount of water necessary to the irrigation of such portion of the Indian lands as were at the time of the treaty actually irrigated. The court said (p 95):

The purpose of the government was to induce the Indians to relinquish their nomadic habits and to till the soil and the treaties should be construed in the light of that purpose and such meaning should be given them as will enable the Indians to cultivate eventually the whole of their lands so reserved to them use.

<sup>101</sup> *Missile v. Bowley* 192 U S 1 (1894), *Uchko Pando Phetee v. United States* 248 U S 74 (1918), *op. cit.* 246 Fed 271 (C C A 9 1917).

<sup>102</sup> *Danley v. United States* 228 U S 215 (1913).

<sup>103</sup> *United States v. Utah State Bank* 270 U S 49 (1926), *affg* 215 Fed 161 (C C A 8 1925), *The James G. Swan* 50 Fed 108 (D C Wash 1882).

<sup>104</sup> *United States v. Hall State Bank* 270 U S 49 (1926), *affg* 274 Fed 181 (C C A 8 1925). It has been subsequently held that even in the light of *United States v. Utah State Bank* the reservation of lands for the "use and occupancy" of the Chippewas had the effect of reserving to them the exclusive right of fishing in the waters of the Upper and Lower Red Lakes, a right which the state could neither deprive them of nor regulate. *Id.* 270 U S 49 (1926), June 29, 1926.

<sup>105</sup> *Id.* 270 U S 49 (1926), June 29, 1926. And compare *The James G. Swan*, 50 Fed 108 (D C Wash 1882).

<sup>106</sup> 44 S 8859 (C C A 9, 1900).

<sup>107</sup> *Donnelly v. United States* 228 U S 244 (1911).

<sup>108</sup> *Conrad Irr Co v. United States* 191 Fed 529 (C C A 9, 1909), *affg* 188 Fed 128 (C C Mont 1907), *Shenav v. United States* 277 Fed 95 (C C A 9, 1921), *Op. Sol. I D. M* 15849, May 12, 1927.

<sup>109</sup> *Id.*

<sup>110</sup> *United States v. Conrad Irr Co*, 186 Fed 122, 190-191 (C C Mont 1907), *affd* by 181 Fed 830 (C C A 9, 1909).

<sup>111</sup> *Op. cit. in 347*.

The decision of the Circuit Court of Appeals in the case of *United States v. Walker River Irrigation District*<sup>11</sup> would seem to contradict the foregoing decision. The court there held, in accordance with the *Winters* decision, that by the establishment of the Walker River Reservation in 1859 there was implicitly reserved water to the extent not only necessary to supply the needs of the Indians. However, in determining the quantity of water "to which the United States is entitled" the court held:

"The area of irrigable land included in the reservation is not necessarily the criterion for measuring the amount of water reserved, whether the standard be applied as of 1879 or as of the present. The extent to which the use of the stream may be necessary could only be determined by experience." (P. 340)

The court found from the record that about 3,000 acres were under cultivation as early as 1856, that this area had not been

substantially increased up to the time of trial, and that the number of Indians on the reservation was not increasing. Adverting to the latter finding, that a demand for the cultivation of more than 2,000 acres on a water right of 20.2 cubic feet per second had not been shown the court concluded:

"We are constrained to accept this estimate as a fair measure of the needs of the Government as demonstrated by seventy years of experience." (P. 340)

While these views were reached in this case the questions of water right were confined largely to whether particular waters had been reserved to the tribe. With the growth of the practice of allotting tribal lands to individual Indians there arose the question of whether the allottee, or a party holding under the allottee, was entitled to divert a part of the water reserved under the doctrine of the *Winters* case to the tribe. The problems to which this question gave rise are elsewhere discussed.<sup>12</sup>

See Chapter VI, Sec. 4.

## SECTION 17 TRIBAL RIGHTS IN IMPROVEMENTS

The extent of tribal possessory rights in improvements on tribal land raises two issues: (a) the determination of rights between the tribe and the individual member of the tribe who has made the improvements or who resides on the improved land, and (b) the determination of interests between the tribe and third parties.

Of these issues, the first is an issue internal to the affairs of the tribe and therefore dealt with in accordance with tribal law and customs.<sup>13</sup> except as statute or treaty otherwise provides. The matter has been specially dealt with in several types of statutes and treaties. Perhaps the most common case in which the ownership of improvements must be determined arises in connection with the sale or cession of improved tribal lands. The earlier treaties generally provided that compensation for improvements was to be paid directly to the tribe,<sup>14</sup> thus leaving to the determination of the tribe itself the question of whether any individual Indian should receive special compensation by reason of such improvements. A few treaties and statutes provide for payment by the United States to the member of the tribe who has made the improvements,<sup>15</sup> and others leave

uncertain the manner in which compensation for improvements is to be made.<sup>16</sup> The early practice of making compensation directly to the tribe pointed adjustments between the tribe and the individual concerned, but under modern legislation reserving the use of tribal funds such adjustments became impracticable. Thus when the Act of June 18, 1884,<sup>17</sup> was adopted, continuing a provision opening up the lands of the Pungwa Reservation improved and unimproved to appropriation by mineral prospectors, the requirement that damages should be paid "to the Pungwa Tribe for loss of any improvements on any land located for mining in such a sum as may be determined by the Secretary of the Interior but not to exceed the cost of said improvement," failed to do justice to the individual Indians deprived of their houses, gardens, and farms. Accordingly, following the unanimous vote of the Pungwa Indians favoring the application of the Act of June 18, 1884, to the Pungwa Reservation,<sup>18</sup> immediately legislation was enacted providing that the individual Indians concerned should receive payment for improvements of which they might be deprived.<sup>19</sup>

For many years it was the policy of the Government to encourage the improvement of tribal lands occupied by individual members of a tribe.<sup>20</sup> The Federal Government, having encouraged such improvements, frequently provided, in disposing of improved tribal lands, that the individual Indian who had made, or come to enjoy, the improvements should, if possible, receive the lands improved.<sup>21</sup> Likewise an attempt was sometimes made to safeguard Indian improvements in making or retaining reservation boundaries,<sup>22</sup> and where lands were ceded provision was sometimes made for making improvements on returned or new

<sup>11</sup> 254 U. S. 900, 21 Ind. T. 597, 75 S. W. 191 (1890), and see Chapter 7, sec. 8 and Chapter 9, sec. 1. In the absence of provision as to the contrary and where laws and treaties are silent the Interior Department has taken the position that:

"The tribe does not own the improvements placed upon tribal land by its individuals; the direction of individual members of the tribe." (Memo. Sol. T. D., October 21, 1938 (Edin Springs).)

<sup>12</sup> Art. III of Treaty of September 20, 1816, 7 Stat. 170 (Chickasaw Nation), Art. V of Treaty of July 20, 1851, 7 Stat. 571 (Shawnee and Shawnee), Treaty of February 8, 1814, 7 Stat. 512 (Menominee), Art. V of Treaty of February 28, 1811, 7 Stat. 516 (Seneca), Art. V of Treaty of August 8, 1811, 7 Stat. 527 (Shawnee), Art. V of Treaty of August 20, 1811, 7 Stat. 599 (Ojibwa), Art. III of Treaty of January 10, 1822, 7 Stat. 954 (Wyandotte), Art. IX of Treaty of December 20, 1815, 7 Stat. 478 (Cheyenne), Art. I of Treaty of November 21, 1818, 7 Stat. 611 (Ojibwa), Art. III of Treaty of May 20, 1842, 7 Stat. 860 (Seneca), Art. VI of Treaty of October 27, 1872, 7 Stat. 408 (Kickapoo and Potawatomi), Art. VIII of Treaty of January 4, 1845, 9 Stat. 821 (Kickapoo and Potawatomi), Art. V of Treaty of June 5 and 17, 1816, 9 Stat. 561 (Potawatomi, Chickasaw, and Ottawa), Art. IV of Treaty of June 5, 1854, 10 Stat. 309 (Miami), Art. V of Treaty of March 17, 1851, 11 Stat. 761 (Wyandotte), Art. IV of Treaty of February 5, 1820, 11 Stat. 601 (Menominee), Act of July 25, 1862, 10 Stat. 155 (Potawatomi), Act of July 17, 1854, 10 Stat. 818 (Kickapoo), Art. III of Treaty of July 11, 1863, 12 Stat. 1240 (Chippewas), Act of April 10, 1876, 19 Stat. 28 (Pawnee).

<sup>13</sup> Art. XII of Treaty of February 24, 1868, 7 Stat. 298, 988 (Crow Nation), Art. XIV of Treaty of January 15, 1838, 7 Stat. 750 (New York Indians), Art. III of Treaty of September 3, 1839, 11 Stat. 677 (Menominee), Art. VII of Treaty of November 6, 1837, 13 Stat. 901 (Tonganva Band of Seneca), Act of May 8, 1872, 17 Stat. 85 (Klamath Tribe).

<sup>14</sup> Art. VI of Treaty of December 26, 1854, 10 Stat. 1112 (Sagoyew), Art. VII of Treaty of January 26, 1875, 12 Stat. 933 (Kickapoo), Art. V of Treaty of January 31, 1875, 12 Stat. 989 (Menominee), Art. V of Treaty of June 29, 1878, 12 Stat. 1017 (Shawnee and Wahpeton Bands of Sioux), Art. V of Treaty of November 10, 1881, 12 Stat. 1251 (Crow Indians), Art. VI of Treaty of June 28, 1884, 13 Stat. 823 (Kickapoo), and Art. IV of Treaty of October 18, 1818 with Menominee Tribe, 9 Stat. 912, Act of April 28, 1860, 16 Stat. 137 (Choctaw, Chickasaw, and Seminole).

<sup>15</sup> 16 Stat. 994.

<sup>16</sup> See S. Op. A. G. 121 (1864).

<sup>17</sup> Act of August 23, 1897, 70 Stat. 862.

<sup>18</sup> Art. IX of Treaty of May 27, 1884, 10 Stat. 1069 (Ioway), Art. IX of Treaty of August 7, 1850, 11 Stat. 699 (Bannocks and Crow), Act of May 15, 1888, 25 Stat. 180 (Omaha Tribe).

<sup>19</sup> Act of March 24, 1812, 7 Stat. 560 (Crow), Treaty of February 18, 1841, 7 Stat. 420 (Ojibwa), sec. 4 of Act of June 6, 1900, 31 Stat. 672 (Fort Hall Band of Nez Percés), sec. 4 of the Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 848 (Crow Indians).

<sup>20</sup> Art. II of Treaty of February 8, 1814, 7 Stat. 560 (Onondaga).

lands to take the place of those lost "in not having that portion of the tribe remaining on its original lands compensating emigrants for their improvements on such lands."<sup>1</sup>

The issue of possessory right in improvements that may inure between the tribe and third parties is in issue which depends not on the tribal law and customs of the tribe but rather on the law governing the transaction under which the property in question has come to be recognized as tribal property. Certain statutes providing for the acquisition of land for the benefit of Indians, specifically determine that the improvements thereon shall likewise be acquired for the benefit of the Indians.<sup>2</sup> Under such a statute, there is no question but that the Indians have the same right in the improvements that they have in the land itself.

Where the statute is silent, a more difficult question is presented. Thus where under the Act of January 13, 1929, improved lands used for agency, school, and other purposes were transferred in the Yankton Sioux Tribe, the question was presented whether the buildings on such land thereby became the property of the Indian tribe. The Solicitor of the Interior, by pertinent answering this question in the affirmative declared:<sup>3</sup>

The use of the term "improved" implies that the purpose of Congress was to reserve to the Indians "the title which they held prior to the cession of 1862 that is, the Indian title of occupancy and use, the United States still in fee, and occupies it as secured by the fee title of the sovereign, *United States v. Cook* (19 Wall 501), and the Indians have the full beneficial ownership with all the rights incident thereto. See 84 Op. Atty. Gen. 371. Whether the ownership of the buildings extends to the buildings upon the lands is essentially a question of what was intended and while that intention is not otherwise shown it has been held that the Government will be deemed to have assumed that it, conversely be construed according to the law of the State in which the land lies. See in this connection *Oklahoma v. Texas* (255 U.S. 187, 589). The Act of 1929 contains nothing to indicate any intention upon the part of the Government to retain ownership of the buildings. They are neither excepted nor reserved in the absence of such an exception or reservation, the rule is universal that the buildings are part of and pass with the land. *Indian v. United* (4 Conn. 174, 23 Am. D. 251), *Ortung v. N. Bredford* (210 Mass. 89, 96 N. E. 1097), *Blake v. Full Co. v. Wilson* (19 Ore. 626, 194 Pac. 902), *Holmes v. Null* (222 Pac. 670), *Schultz v. Ferguson* (231 N. W. 378). Under this rule the grant to the Indians carried with it the buildings upon the lands.

<sup>1</sup> Art. VII of Treaty of November 6, 1838, 7 Stat. 580 (Indians), Art. I of Treaty of January 22, 1875, 10 Stat. 1141 (Osage Bands), and Art. III of Treaty of February 27, 1875, 10 Stat. 1172 (Cherokee), Art. II of Treaty of June 6, 1883, 14 Stat. 617 (New France). Treaty of May 6, 1868, 7 Stat. 411 (Cherokee).

<sup>2</sup> Art. 6 of Treaty of May 20, 1942, with Seneca Nation, 7 Stat. 746.  
<sup>3</sup> Act of July 1, 1902, 27 Stat. 61 (Mevlon Indians). The Act of March 2, 1889, 25 Stat. 1014 (United Pottawatomie and Marquette) provides that certain lands, together with all improvements thereon, shall be held as tribal property. Cf. *Danahoe v. Horgan* 4 Ind. T. 483 (1902) (Cherokee landowner selling to "improved improvements").

<sup>4</sup> 15 Ind. 1107.

<sup>5</sup> Op. Sol. I. D., 37-671, March 1, 1931.

Nothing in the legislative history of the enactment is contrary. In regard to the Seneca and Mescalero Comanches on Indian Affairs, recommending that the bill which became the Act of 1929 be not enacted, the Secretary of the Interior called specific attention to the fact that "these forty buildings on the land used in connection with school and administrative activities." See House Report No. 1852 and Senate Report No. 1140 on S. 2702, 70th Congress, 1st sess. The debates before the House and Senate also show that Congress was advised of the existence of the buildings upon the premises. See Congressional Record, Volume 60, Part 8, 70th Congress, 1st Session, page 8877 and Volume 70, Part 1, 70th Congress, 2nd Session, page 2489-2490.

Aside from the fact that the failure of Congress with knowledge of the existence of the buildings to reserve them is equally wasteful, the assumption that no such reservation was intended, the statements of Congressmen in debate and Senator McMillen strongly indicate that it was the understanding of Congress that enactment of the measure would confer upon the Indians ownership of the buildings, along with the lands such ownership under the terms of the statute to take effect when the property was no longer required for agency, school, and other purposes.

It is understood from the information submitted in the present communication of Indian Affairs that the use of the reserved lands for the purposes for which they were reserved has been permanently discontinued and that the lands are no longer needed for any of such purposes. Upon that understanding, I hold, it seems evident above, that the lands and buildings located thereon are now tribal property belonging to the Yankton Sioux Tribe of Indians.

The approach taken in the foregoing opinion suggests that in passing upon any specific tribal claim of possessory right in improvements on tribal land, first resort must be had to the governing statute or treaty. Silence or ambiguity may be resolved (a) by reference to legislative history, or (b) by reference to the state of the common law. In general, it may be said that Congress has repeatedly subordinated the traditional common law rule that improvements run with the land to the equitable principle that one who has built improvements, in good faith, on another's land should not be unfairly deprived of the fruit of his labor. Attempts to do justice to the claims of those who have improved tribal lands, include provisions allowing non-Indians who have improved tribal lands to sell their improvements, at their appraised value,<sup>6</sup> or allowing Indians of another tribe to purchase the lands on which their improvements stand.<sup>7</sup> As a matter of history, the improvements on land conveyed to Indians were frequently most important inducements of reciprocal cessions than the land itself.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>6</sup> Art. of March 2, 1907, 34 Stat. 1220 (unimproved whites on Cherokee lands).

<sup>7</sup> Art. 12 of Treaty of May 6, 1904, with Delaware, 71st 10 Stat. 1018 (for benefit of Christian Indians). Cf. Memo. Sol. I. D., October 20, 1937, and cases cited (log house on Fort Belknap tribal land).

<sup>8</sup> Cf. Art. I of Treaty of January 22, 1836, 10 Stat. 1141.

## SECTION 18 TRIBAL CONVEYANCES

### A RESTRAINTS ON ALIENATION

It is frequently assumed that the inability of an Indian tribe to alienate tribal land is a consequence of the peculiar tenure by which such lands are held.<sup>9</sup> This tenure is commonly designated as "occupancy," "mere occupancy," "possession," or "Indian

title," and these phrases are sometimes deemed a sufficient explanation for the conclusion that Indian lands are inalienable. Careful examination of the cases and of the historical practice of the United States shows that this view is inaccurate. This inaccurate appears most clearly in five situations.

(1) If the inalienability of tribal land is caused simply by the peculiarity that tribal land is not held in fee simple, then an Indian tribe which does hold land in fee simple should be able

<sup>9</sup> See *United States v. Cook*, 19 Wall 501, 692-694 (1875), *Houder v. Moot* 61 N. Y. 202, 271 (1870), *Kearl Real Property* (1900), see 231



to pay them by the only means in their power: a cession of their lands, withheld in regard to the purchase, which by their laws of municipal regulations, was necessary to vest a title. (Pp 75-79)

Again, in the case of *United States v. Price*,<sup>11</sup> the Supreme Court declined, in upholding the validity of a grant made by an Indian pueblo

The transfer of land to the Pecos was made in conformity with the existing regulations established in the protection of the Indians, under the supervision and with the approval of the local authorities, and appears to have been satisfactory to all parties. (P 510)

Again, in the case of *OchotEAU v. Molony*,<sup>12</sup> where it was held that an instrument executed by the Fox Tribe amounted to a promise to make title to a conveyance in fee, the Supreme Court declared

It is true in the case, that the Indian title to the country had not been extinguished by Spain, and that Spain had not the right of occupancy. The Indians had the right to continue it as long as they pleased, or to sell out parts of it—the sale being made conformably to the laws of Spain, and being afterwards confirmed by the king in his representative, the Governor of Louisiana. Without such conformity and confirmation no one could lawfully take possession of lands under the Indian title. We know it was frequently done, but always with the expectation that the sale would be confirmed, and that until it was, the purchaser would have the benefit of the forbearance of the government. We are now speaking of Indian lands, such as those were, and not of those portions of land which were assigned to the Christian Indians for villages and residences, where the Indian occupancy had been abandoned by them, or where it had been yielded to the king by treaty. Such sales did not need a title from the governor, if they were passed before the proper Spanish officer, and put upon record. (Pp 290-297)

Similarly did the various colonies, at least since 1683, make provision for the continuation of Indian conveyances by proper governmental authorities.<sup>13</sup>

Indian grants in Massachusetts Colony, for example, required the approval of the General Court.<sup>14</sup> In New York under the Constitution of 1777, Indian tribal conveyances required the assent of the legislature, or, after the Act of March 7, 1769 of the State Survey-General.<sup>15</sup>

The legislation of the United States in the sale of Indian lands has followed the course thus fixed by European and colonial sovereignties, and under this legislation the existence of a transferable estate in land has not been denied but the method of transfer has been rigidly circumscribed. This regulation of land sales by Indians to non-Indians has been an essential part of the general power of supervision over "Indian intercourse," claimed by each of the European sovereigns exercising dominion in North America. This power the United States likewise claimed, in its Constitution, and to this claim many Indian tribes were induced to give explicit assent.<sup>16</sup> The most substantial

subject of such intercourse was land since this was the most valuable possession of the Indian tribes. The United States asserted the power, as did other sovereign nations, of regulating the sale of land by Indians. In an essential part of such regulation the United States claimed the right either to itself or from the state in which the land was situated, of purchasing land from the Indian tribes, and of exchanging it would be purchased from the market, and various titles asserted to this claim.<sup>17</sup> This policy was parallel to a policy which excluded from the Indian country unlicensed private traders in commodities other than land.

## C FEDERAL LEGISLATION

Section 4 of the first Indian Intercourse Act<sup>18</sup> covered the sale of lands, together with other types of title, and declared

That no sale of lands made by any Indians, or any nation or tribe of Indians within the United States, shall be valid to any person or persons, or to any state, whether having the right of preemption to such lands or not, unless the same shall be made and duly executed at some public treaty held under the authority of the United States.

This provision was reaffirmed in the Second Indian Intercourse Act, approved March 1, 1793,<sup>19</sup> section 8 of which provided

That no purchase or grant of lands, or of any title or claim thereto from any Indians or nation or tribe of Indians, within the bounds of the United States shall be of any validity in law or equity, unless the same be made by a treaty or convention entered into pursuant to the constitution, and it shall be a misdemeanor in any person not employed under the authority of the United States, in negotiating such treaty or convention, punishable by fine not exceeding one thousand dollars, and imprisonment not exceeding twelve months, directly or indirectly to treat with any such Indians, nation or tribe of Indians, for the title or purchase of any lands by them held, or claimed. *Provided nevertheless* That it shall be lawful for the agent or agents of the title, who may be present at any treaty held with Indians, under the authority of the United States, in the present and with the application of the commissioners or commissioners of the United States, appointed to hold the same, to propose to, and sign with the Indians, the compensation to be made for their claims to the lands within such state, which shall be extinguished by the treaty.

This provision was reenacted from time to time with various minor modifications.<sup>20</sup> It should be noted that this provision was

(New Prices), Art. IX of Treaty of March 12, 1808, 12 Stat. 917, 917 (Ponies), Art. IV of Treaty of June 19, 1805, 14 Stat. 1011 (Mandanians and Wahpetians Bands of Sioux), Art. IV of Treaty of June 20, 1805, 12 Stat. 1017 (Sioux and Wahban Bands of Sioux), Art. I of Treaty of April 15, 1809, 12 Stat. 1101 (Winnebagoes), Art. I of Treaty of July 10, 1809, 12 Stat. 1105 (Saw Creek and Biel River Chippewas and Winnebagoes of Chippewas), Art. II of Treaty of February 18, 1809, 12 Stat. 1108 (Alapachos and Chippewas Indians), Art. VIII of Treaty of June 9, 1803, 14 Stat. 647 (New Prices), Art. IV of Treaty of March 9, 1805, 14 Stat. 667 (Omahas), Art. XI of Treaty of July 10, 1806, 14 Stat. 797 (Chokatoes), Art. II of Treaty of October 1, 1809, 16 Stat. 167 (Sacs and Foxes of Mississippi) And see Thompson, *supra*, note 4, at 461.

<sup>18</sup> See for example Art. III of the Treaty of February 8, 1790 with the Winnetoes, Delaware, Ottawa, Chippewas, Pottawatomies, and Sauk Nations, 7 Stat. 28, 29; Art. V of the Treaty of August 3, 1795, with the Winnetoes, Delaware, Chippewas, and other tribes, 7 Stat. 49, 52; Art. VI of the Treaty of September 24, 1797 with the Delaware Tribe, 11 Stat. 720; Art. V of the Treaty of March 12, 1803, with the Pottawatomies, 14 Stat. 667. And see Chapter 8 see also (A) That similar provisions were included in colonial legislation is manifest in the inference of *Atkins v. Jefferson*, 7 U.S. 183, 184 (1793) with the Delaware Tribe in the New Jersey Act of August 13, 1758, section 16, the Delaware Indians from alienating lands reserved to them by agreement.

<sup>19</sup> See Chapter 10, 5 Stat. 829.

<sup>20</sup> Act of March 1, 1793, see 8, 1 Stat. 329, 830, Act of May 10, 1790, see 12, 1 Stat. 409, 472, Act of March 3, 1795, see 12, 1 Stat. 748, 749, Act of March 30, 1805, see 12, 2 Stat. 140, 743, Act of June

<sup>11</sup> 5 Will. 588 (1808). Accord *Parble v. San Juan v. United States*, 47 P. 2d 416 (C. C. 10, 1941), cert. den. 284 U.S. 8, 628.

<sup>12</sup> 10 How. 280 (1850). Compare *United States v. Weeks, Jan of Miner, Miner, and Mining Water Rights* (1877) pp. 93-94.

<sup>13</sup> See 3 Kent, Comment 891 et seq. for an analysis of the colonial legislation.

<sup>14</sup> *Jones v. Yehant* 119 Mass. 495 (1878) (citing colonial authority); *Indin* dec'd dated September 4, 1689. And see *Dennett v. Wapahum*, 108 Mass. 143 (1871).

<sup>15</sup> See *Goodell v. Jackson*, 20 Johns. 688, 722, 788 (1823).

<sup>16</sup> Art. IV of Treaty of December 30, 1849, or Stat. 984 (Utah), Art. VII of Treaty of June 20, 1805, 12 Stat. 1017 (Chickasawes), Art. VII of Treaty of February 22, 1805, 10 Stat. 1103 (Mandanians Bands of Chippewas), Art. VIII of Treaty of February 22, 1805, 10 Stat. 1172 (Winnebagoes), Art. XV of Treaty of August 7, 1806, 11 Stat. 680 (Santones), Art. XIII of Treaty of April 18, 1808, 11 Stat. 748 (Yankton Tribe of Sioux), Art. X of the Treaty of June 11, 1803, 12 Stat. 907

This is the provision, and the constitution states one important fact as the basis, and the sole governing motive for the whole of

and Winnebago), Act of March 3, 1875, 18 Stat. 420, 457 (Sonses and Kaskaskia), Act of March 3, 1884, 22 Stat. 604 (Chickasaw, Pawnee,

by a tribe to its members,"<sup>40</sup> which amounts, of course, to allotment. Other statutes authorizing sales by the Secretary of the Interior are silent on the issue of tribal consent. Statutes of this character are generally limited to surplus lands left after the completion of allotment.<sup>41</sup> Between 1912 and 1982 a number of statutes were enacted authorizing the Secretary of the Interior to sell or otherwise dispose of specific areas of tribal land to numerous tribes, religious bodies, and public utilities, without reference to the wishes of the tribe.<sup>42</sup> Questions raised by these statutes are dealt with separately insofar as they present a question of the extent of federal power over Indian lands.<sup>43</sup> Statutes authorizing the sale of tribal lands were superseded,<sup>44</sup> with respect to Indian tribes subject to the Act of June 18, 1974,<sup>45</sup> by section 1 of that act, which provides:

Except as herein provided to sell, lease, gift, exchange, or other transfer of restricted Indian land or of shares in the assets of any Indian tribe or corporation organized hereunder, shall be made in approved *provided however* That such lands or interests may, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior be sold, leased, or otherwise transferred to the Indian tribe in which the lands or shares are located or from which the shares were derived or to a successor corporation, and in all instances such lands or interests shall descend as devised in accordance with the then existing laws of the State or Federal laws, as here applicable, in which said lands are located or in which the subject matter of the corporation is located, to any member of such tribe or of such corporation or any heir of such member. *Provided further* That the Secretary of the Interior may authorize voluntary exchange of lands of equal value and the voluntary exchange of shares of equal value whenever such exchange, in his judgment is expedient and beneficial for in compatible with the proper consolidation of Indian lands and for the benefit of cooperative organizations.

The prohibitions of that section have been supplemented by prohibitions against alienation contained in tribal constitution adopted pursuant to section 16 of the act and tribal charters adopted pursuant to section 17.

On the other hand, the proviso in section 4 allowing exchange of land of equal value, and section 5 of the act, allowing acqui-

*Pocahontas, Nez Perce (Clow and Mounsett) and Cherokee on the distinction between a sale by one tribe to another, and an alienation of tribes, note Delaware v. Indiana v. Cherokee Nation 38 C. Cl. 274 (1963) at 104 (1) 127 (1961).*

<sup>40</sup> Act of March 3, 1871, 16 Stat. 497 (conveyance to Indian company by Omaha tribe, Wisconsin).

<sup>41</sup> Act of April 20, 1906, 34 Stat. 711 (Blackfeet Indians and Nez Perces).

<sup>42</sup> Act of February 20, 1896, 29 Stat. 17 (Chippewa). Act of February 19, 1912, 37 Stat. 87 (Choctaw and Chickasaw). Act of August 24, 1912, 37 Stat. 497 (Pawnee Tribes). Act of February 14, 1913, 37 Stat. 975 (Standing Rock Reservation). Joint Resolution of December 4, 1913, 38 Stat. 707 (Choctaw Chickasaw). Joint Resolution of January 11, 1917, 39 Stat. 908 (Choctaw Chickasaw). Act of January 23, 1917, 39 Stat. 870 (Choctaw Chickasaw). Act of February 27, 1917, 39 Stat. 944. Act of April 12, 1924, 43 Stat. 162. Act of May 29, 1924, 43 Stat. 883 (Chickasaw Choctaw). On the sale of land deposits in the segregated mineral lands of the Choctaw and Chickasaw tribes, see Memo. Ser. I, D. December 11, 1918, Op. Sol. I, D. 7416, April 3, 1922, Op. Sol. I, D. 7319. See also 1924, Op. Sol. I, D. 2177, November 19, 1928.

<sup>43</sup> Act of July 1, 1912, 37 Stat. 189 (Omaha Reservation). Act of July 10, 1912, 37 Stat. 192 (Pinehead Reservation). Act of September 8, 1910, 36 Stat. 816 (Chippewa). Act of January 7, 1910, 36 Stat. 1061 (Pinehead Reservation). Act of February 28, 1910, 36 Stat. 460 (Chippewa Grande Reservation). Act of April 15, 1920, 41 Stat. 708 (Nez Perce). Act of February 21, 1921, 41 Stat. 1105 (Choctaw and Chickasaw). Act of March 3, 1921, 41 Stat. 1795 (Pawnee Reservation). Act of May 4, 1923, 41 Stat. 146 (Chippewa Grande Reservation). And see Chapter 5, sec. 25.

<sup>44</sup> See Chapter 5.

<sup>45</sup> Memo. Ser. I, D. August 22, 1976 (Pyramid Lake). See 4 does not, however, prevent foreclosure of a lien on land existing when land is received as tribal property under sec. 8 Op. Sol. I, D. M 9791, August 1, 1978.

<sup>46</sup> 48 Stat. 984, 28 U. S. C. 451, 1st sec.

tion of lands by exchange, make it possible for tribes subject to the act to execute valid conveyances of tribal land by deed, approved by the Secretary of the Interior, provided the consideration is land of equal or greater value.<sup>46</sup>

## D INVOLUNTARY ALIENATION

Generally speaking, restrictions on alienation of Indian land apply to involuntary alienation as well as to voluntary alienation. Thus, twenty guarantees of tribal possession are held to protect tribal land against sale by state authorities for nonpayment of taxes and therefore ineffectually to protect such lands against taxation.<sup>47</sup> Restrictions on alienation of tribal lands which prevent a tribe from making a valid conveyance of its property equally prevent individual members of the tribe from conveying such property.<sup>48</sup> Restrictions on alienation of tribal lands likewise operate to prevent partition of such lands by state court at the suit of a tribal member.<sup>49</sup>

## E INVALID CONVEYANCES

Despite all statutes, Indian tribes have, from time to time, executed grants of tribal land. Although such grants are clearly invalid to convey a legal or equitable estate, it would be rash to say that all such grants are meaningless acts that cannot affect any rights. There are at least two federal cases which suggest that rights may accrue under tribal law, though not under federal or state law.

In *Johnson v. McIntosh*,<sup>50</sup> 21 March, 1823, *J.* intimated that an Indian tribe might make a grant under its own laws even though such a grant would not be enforceable in the courts of the United States.

If in individual might extinguish the Indian title for his own benefit, or, in other words, might purchase it, still he could acquire only that title. Admitting then [the Indians'] power to extinguish their laws or usages, so far as to allow an individual to separate a portion of their lands from the common stock and hold it in severalty, still it is a part of their territory and is held under them, by a title dependent on their laws. The grant derives its efficacy from their will, and if they choose to resume it, and make a different disposition of the land, the courts of the United States cannot interfere for the protection of the title. (P. 74.)

A similar view is taken in the case of *Johnson v. Porter*,<sup>51</sup> where it was held that a grant made by an Indian tribe might be invoked by the tribe and that the grantee would have no redress in the courts of the United States.

A purchase, from the natives, at all events, could acquire only the Indian title and must hold under them and according to their laws. The grant must derive its efficacy from their will, and if they choose to resume it and make a different disposition of it, courts cannot protect the right before granted. The purchase incorporates himself with the Indians, and the purchase is to be considered in the same light as if the grant had been made to an Indian and might be resumed by the tribe, and granted over again at their pleasure.

<sup>47</sup> *Mingo* 10 I. D. February 19, 1977. The problem of white officials of a tribe may execute a deed is dealt with in *Pueblo of Santa Fe v. United States*, 315 (1927) rev'd 315 F.2d 382 (App. D. C. 1026) 85 I. D. 24 (1964), *Mingo* 10 I. D. March 11, 1976.

<sup>48</sup> See Chapter 13, sec. 2.

<sup>49</sup> *United States v. Haydon*, 205 Fed. 105 (C. A. 2, 1926) aff'd 205 Fed. 105 (D. C. N. D. N. Y. 1919) app. dismissed 277 U. S. 614 (1928). *Franklin v. Lynch*, 275 U. S. 209 (1928) (holding adopted white member of tribe subject to restraint on alienation). And see authorities cited in Chapter 9, sec. 2.

<sup>50</sup> *United States v. Chief*, 21 F. Supp. 840 (D. C. W. D. N. Y. 1948).

<sup>51</sup> 21 March 1823 (1823).

<sup>52</sup> 31 Fed. Cl. No. 7141 (C. C. N. D. N. Y. 1927). And see 1 *Dumbar Land Titles* (1806), p. 494.







44 Stat 922, 26 U, S C 898



dians under Federal jurisdiction, except those Indians after specifically exempted from the provisions of this Act, may, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, be leased for mining purposes, by authority of the tribal council or other authorized spokesmen and as long as the lands are not to be used in excess of ten years and as long thereafter as minerals be produced in same quantities.

Section 2 of the act (25 U S C 380b) provides for public use of oil and gas leases and otherwise the right of tribes organized and incorporated under sections 16 and 17 of the Act of June 18, 1934<sup>1</sup> to lease lands for mining purposes is therein provided and in accordance with the provisions of any constitution and charter adopted by any Indian tribe pursuant to the Act of June 18, 1934<sup>2</sup>. Section 3 of the act (25 U S C 390c) specifies the type of bond to be furnished by lessees. Section 4 of the act (25 U S C 396d) authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to promulgate regulations for the enforcement of the act. Section 5 (25 U S C 396e) authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to delegate to subordinate officials power to approve leases. Section 6 of the act (25 U S C 390f) provides that the act shall not apply to the Papago Indian Reservation in Arizona, the Crow Reservation in Montana, the ceded lands of the Shoshone Reservation in Wyoming, the Osage Reservation in Oklahoma, nor to the coal and asphalt lands of the Choctaw and Chickasaw Tribes in Oklahoma.<sup>3</sup>

The 1591, 1694, and 1948 acts cover mining leases on all reservations and also grazing<sup>4</sup> and farming leases on lands "bought and paid for" by Indians. There is no comprehensive legislation authorizing agricultural and grazing leases on lands which the Indians never "bought and paid for," or lands held by aboriginal occupancy recognized by treaty. There is no general statute authorizing mineral leases, but timber sales, which serve the purpose of leases, are made pursuant to section 7 of the Act of June 27, 1910.<sup>5</sup> Neither is there any general legislation authorizing leases for purposes other than farming, grazing, and mining.<sup>6</sup> This does not mean, of course, that tribal lands have not been utilized for other purposes, under permits or under mineral tribal leases, for many other purposes, such as trading posts, power sites, summer cottages, and ordinary commercial development. The character of such use will be further considered in connection with the problem of invalid leases and the problem of tribal

leases at points. For the present it is enough to point to the large gaps in the existing law governing tribal leases, a gap which, it is hoped, Congress will soon cover.

But those Indians tribes within the scope of the Act of June 18, 1934 these gaps are largely covered by section 17 of that act which provides that the Secretary of the Interior may issue a charter of incorporation to any tribe applying, therefore, which charter in effect comprehensive power to manage and dispose of tribal property subject to the proviso that tribal lands within the limits of the reservation may not be leased for periods exceeding 10 years. Such charter provisions may or may not provide for departmental approval of tribal leases. Most charters provide for a tribal protest during, which all tribal leases are subject to departmental approval, to be followed by the tribal leasing within the limits prescribed by the act and the protest in charter.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Corporate Charters of the Minnesota Chippewa Tribe, issued by the Secretary of the Interior on September 17, 1937 and ratified by vote of the tribe (1,940 to and 640 against) on November 1, 1937, contain the following provisions on the validity of tribal leases and the termination of departmental supervisory powers over such leases.

7 The Tribe, subject to any restrictions contained in the Constitution and laws of the United States and in the Constitution and By-Laws of the said tribe, shall have the following corporate powers, in addition to all powers already conferred or to be conferred by the tribal Constitution and By-Laws:

• • • (b) To purchase, take or sell, lease, or otherwise own, hold, manage, operate and dispose of property of every description real and personal subject to the following limitations:

• • • (4) No leases, permits, (which terms shall not in the Constitution and laws of the United States and in the Constitution and By-Laws of the said tribe within the boundaries of any reservation of the United States) shall be made or entered into by the tribe on a longer term than ten years, and all such leases and permits shall be approved by the Secretary of the Interior or by his duly authorized representative. • • •

6 Upon the request of the Tribal Executive Committee for the termination of any supervisory power retained by the Secretary of the Interior under sections 2 (b) 5 (c), 5 (d) 8 (f), 6 (h) and section 8 of the Charter, the Secretary of the Interior if he shall approve, such request shall terminate without the question of such termination to the tribe, and to the Indian. The termination shall be effective upon notification by a majority vote of the tribe in which at least thirty per cent of the adult members of the tribe residing on the reservation of the Minnesota Chippewa Tribe shall vote. If at any time after ten years from the effective date of the Charter such request shall be made and the Secretary shall disapprove it or fail to approve or disapprove it within sixty days after its receipt, the question of the termination of any such power shall be submitted by the Secretary of the Interior to the Tribal Executive Committee for prompt reconsideration of the question of the termination of the supervisory power of the Secretary of the Interior over the Minnesota Chippewa Tribe, and if the termination is approved by two thirds of the two thirds of the tribe, shall be effective.

A similar provision, without the 10 year minimum for contract term, is found in the Corporate Charters of the Fort Belknap Indian Community, issued by the Secretary of the Interior on July 29, 1937 and ratified by the Indian community on August 25, 1937.

An alternative form of charter, under which supervisory powers are automatically, after a specified period, have been band to a number of Oklahoma tribes, under the Act of June 20, 1936 (49 Stat 1907, U S Code, title 26 sec 601). A typical charter, that of the Kickapoo Tribe, issued by the Secretary of the Interior on December 11, 1937, and ratified by vote of the tribe on January 18, 1938, contains the following provisions:

1 The Kickapoo Tribe of Oklahoma, subject to any restrictions contained in the Constitution and laws of the United States and in the Constitution and By-Laws of the said tribe, shall have the following corporate powers, in addition to all powers already conferred or to be conferred by the tribal Constitution and By-Laws of the Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act of June 26, 1906:

(a) To purchase, take or sell, lease, or otherwise own, hold, manage, operate and dispose of property of every description, real or personal. • • •

4 The foregoing corporate powers shall be subject to the following limitations:

(b) No tribal land or interest in land shall be leased for a longer period than ten years, and no leases or permits or other leases may be made for longer periods than authorized by law. • • •

<sup>1</sup> 49 Stat 961, 980

<sup>2</sup> "Special charters" govern the exempted reservations. See Act 463, 494, 495, supra. The Crow and Choctaw- Chickasaw Tribes, see Chapter 28. The Papago Reservation in Arizona was created by Executive order on February 1, 1937. The order provided that the mineral lands within the reservation should be open for exploration, location, and patent under the general mining laws of the United States. The subsequent acts of Congress enlarging and extending the boundaries of the Papago Reservation have provided that the lands added thereto should be subject to the proviso of the Executive order concerning mineral entries. Act of February 21, 1931, 46 Stat 1262, Act of July 28, 1947, 60 Stat 980, see also Op Bul 1 D, 12918, October 16, 1948. Since mineral lands of the Papago Reservation are subject to disposition as part of the public domain, the tribe cannot lease them.

<sup>3</sup> For grazing regulations see 26 C F R 71.1-72.18. For leasing of Indian lands for farming, grazing and business purposes see 26 C F R 171.1-171.88.

<sup>4</sup> "The mature living and dead down timber on unallotted lands of any Indian reservation may be sold under regulations to be prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior, and the proceeds from such sales shall be used for the benefit of the Indians of the reservation in such manner as he may direct. Provided, That this section shall not apply to the States of Minnesota and Wisconsin." (26 U S C 407, 36 Stat 867.) Of Act of February 16, 1889, 26 Stat 678, 26 U S C 106, discussed in sec 14, supra, and see Act of March 4, 1913, 37 Stat. 1035, 18 U S C 816 (authorizing sale of burst timber on "public domain") and specifying that the proceeds from the sale of burst timber on lands appropriated to an Indian tribe shall be transferred to the fund of such tribe. On the power of the Secretary to modify timber contracts, see Chapter 6.

<sup>5</sup> But see 26 C F R 171.1, 171.12

Tribal constitutions adopted pursuant to section 16 of the act must be distinguished from charters issued pursuant to section 17. The former determine, primarily, the manner in which the tribe shall exercise powers based upon existing law, and leaving provisions in tribal constitutions are therefore to be read in the light of existing law, tribal charters, on the other hand, involve new grants of power, and leaving provisions are therefore not limited by prior law.<sup>14</sup>

Where a tribe has the power to execute a corporate lease, there are administrative determinations to the effect that ministerial details in the execution of such power may be delegated by the corporate authorities to a federal employee but that general responsibility for the execution of such leases and for fixing the terms thereof cannot be transferred to such an employee.<sup>15</sup>

Under the foregoing statutes it will be seen that the character of tribal ownership is, generally speaking, irrelevant to the question of whether the tribe may lease tribal land. An exception to this general rule must be made respecting the Act of February 28, 1901,<sup>16</sup> which is limited to lands "bought and paid for" by the Indians,<sup>17</sup> and note should be taken of the only law, now superseded,<sup>18</sup> that Pueblo leases are not subject to departmental control.<sup>19</sup>

Within the limits fixed by acts of Congress and regulations issued pursuant thereto, the tribe may specify the terms upon which it will lease land. Thus where improvements on Indian reclamation are placed upon tribal land under the Emergency Appropriation Act of April 8, 1917,<sup>20</sup> the tribe may rent such improved lands to needy members and provide that rentals shall be impressed with a trust for a particular purpose.<sup>21</sup>

Congressional power over the leasing of tribal lands includes the power of controlling the receipts therefrom. It has been held that the tribal interest in rentals is subject to the same measure of plen as congressional control as is the tribal interest in land itself, so that a statute converting the tribal interest in minerals to allottees raises no serious question of constitutionality and no reasonable basis for a suit by the tribe against the mineral lessees.<sup>22</sup> Conversely, where minerals are reserved to a tribe

§ 5 Until ten years from the date of ratification of this Charter, or such other date as may be fixed pursuant to Section 8 the following corporate acts or transactions shall be valid only after approval by the Secretary of the Interior or his duly authorized representative:

(d) Any lease, grazing permit or other contract affecting tribal land, tribal minerals, or other tribal interests in land.

§ 6 At any time within ten years after the ratification of this Charter any power of leasing established by Section 5 may be terminated by the Secretary of the Interior with the consent of the Kickapoo Council. At or before the expiration of this ten year period the Secretary may propose a further extension of this period. Such proposed extension shall be effective unless disapproved by a three fourths vote of the Kickapoo Council.

11 Memo Sol I D, January 12, 1937, and Memo Sol I D, December 11, 1937 (holding that a statutory requirement of Secretary approval for tribal leases applies to tribe organized under act 16 but not to tribe incorporated under sec 17).

12 Memo Sol I D, September 11, 1937, Memo Sol I D, December 22, 1938.

13 28 Stat 795.

14 It has been held by Assistant Attorney General, later Justice, Van Devanter that in order to bring land within the statutory category of "lands bought and paid for by the Indians" cash payment was not necessary, and that an exchange of other lands for other valuable consideration sufficed. United Lands, 25 L. D. 408 (1897). Accord *Shively Valley Cattle Co. v. Chipman*, 45 Pac 318 (1896).

15 United States v. Gonsalves, 271 U. S. 482 (1926). And see Chapter 20.

16 19 L. D. 326 (1894).

17 48 Stat 115. See Presidential Letter No 1829-1, dated January 11, 1933, allocating emergency funds for "the rehabilitation of Indians in stockless rural agricultural areas."

18 Op Sol I D, N. 2381 (1924), ch. 13, 1939.

19 Attorney's Contract to Represent The Seminole Nation, 85 Op A G 421 (1923).

for a given period, with provision that they shall belong to the allottee thereafter, in extension of this period of tribal interest is not unconstitutional and tribal leases thereafter executed have been sustained as valid.<sup>24</sup>

Whatever its power over outstanding tribal leases may be, Congress has in certain cases provided that such outstanding leases shall continue in force despite the allotment of the land leased.<sup>25</sup> The present practice appears to be to include in tribal leases a provision permitting their termination in the event of the allotment of the land leased.

The execution of tribal leases which are not authorized by any existing federal law raises a series of difficult problems as to the legal rights of lessors, lessees, and third parties. The statute which denies legal validity to a lease not made "by treaty or convention entered into pursuant to the constitution" does not prohibit the execution of such a lease, and although the statute imposes a penalty upon private persons who, without tribal authority, attempt to negotiate such treaties or conventions or otherwise "deal with any such nation or tribe of Indians for the title or purchase of any lands by them held or claimed," it has been held that this language does not make it an offense to execute, accept or negotiate for an unauthorized lease. This issue was squarely raised in the case of *United States v. Hunter*<sup>26</sup> which was an action to recover the statutory penalty of \$1,000 for an alleged violation, by a lessee of the Cherokee Nation, of Revised Statutes, section 2116. The court offered the following interpretation of the prohibitory language of this section:

Obviously, it contemplates the casting of a penalty upon one who assumes to act for the United States, and usurping an authority which he does not possess, attempts to negotiate a national compact or treaty with an Indian nation. But there is another clause in the sentence which renders the question of issue doubtful, that denounces the penalty on every person who attempts to treat with any such nation or tribe of Indians for the title or purchase of any lands by them held or claimed. This seems to refer to an attempt, by private contract and personal agreement, to obtain the lands of an Indian nation. But what kind of a private contract is denounced? The description is not as broad as in the first sentence, for there it speaks of purchase, lease, or other conveyance of lands, or of any title or claim therein, while here it is for "the title or purchase of any lands." Does this include a mere lease in grazing purposes? I think not. A leasehold interest may be considered, for some purposes, a title, and sometimes the word "title" is used in a general sense so as to include any title or interest, and thus a mere leasehold interest, but here it is the title, and thus, in common acceptance, means the full and absolute title, for when we speak of a man as having title to certain lands, the ordinary understanding is that he is the owner of the fee and not that he is a mere lessee, and, this being a penal statute, no extended, no strained construction should be put upon the words used in order to include acts not within their plain and ordinary significance. That this is the true construction is sustained by the section immediately following, which reads:

"Every person who drives or otherwise conveys any stock, or horses, mules, or cattle, to range and feed on any lands belonging to any Indian tribe, without the consent of such tribe, is liable to a penalty of one dollar for each animal of such stock."

This imposes a penalty on any one who, without the consent of an Indian tribe, drives his stock to range and feed on the lands of such tribe. This implies that an

<sup>24</sup> *Adams v. George Tribe of Indians*, 59 F. 2d 858 (C. C. A. 10, 1939).

<sup>25</sup> *Adams v. George Tribe of Indians*, 59 F. 2d 858 (C. C. A. 10, 1939). Some later statutes seek to eliminate doubts on this point by expressly reserving to Congress the right to extend the period of tribal mineral ownership. Act of March 3, 1921, 41 Stat 1806 (Port Belknap).

<sup>26</sup> Act of June 4, 1920, 41 Stat 761 (Crow), Act of March 8, 1921, 41 Stat 1806 (Port Belknap).

<sup>27</sup> 2d Fed 615 (C. C. E. D. Mo 1864).

Indian tribe may consent to the use of their lands for grazing purposes, or, at least, if it it does consent to permit it, and, if the tribe may so consent, it may express such consent in writing, and for at least any brief and reasonable time. It was said by counsel for the government that it is lease for any year, but is not a lease, so only one for 999 years, and thus the Indian tribe is actually dispossessed of its land. But, as was stated in the opening of the opinion, the question here is not as to the validity of a lease, long or short, but as to whether this grant of rights, under the above Indian consent, is a thing of the lease. For the reasons I have there given, it seems to me that it cannot be so interpreted, and what ever may be the fact is to the validity of such a lease, and entering into no discussion as to how far it is binding on the Indian nation, or whether it could be set aside at the option of the nation or by the action of the national government, I am of the opinion that the acts charged upon the defendant are not within the scope of this grant of rights. (Pp. 617-618.)

Under this analysis it would appear that the execution by tribal authorities of a lease covering tribal lands is held to be the same consequence as the execution of a lease by an infant, a lunatic or a person under guardianship. The lease cannot be enforced, but the execution of the lease is not an offense, and valid rights may accrue under the lease.

Thus, it was held in *Leannon v. United States*<sup>100</sup> that the United States could not recover rents under an approved lease if rent had already been paid under an invalid lease. The court declared, per Circuit Judge (After Justice) Sanborn:

" \* \* \* it is conceded on all hands that Robert T. Ashley, the United States Indian agent, had authority to collect the rents for these premises, and, if, by his direction, the lessees under the invalid leases paid the rent to a representative of the Winnebago tribe of Indians, who accepted and distributed it, with Ashley's knowledge and consent, among those Indians, the government would undoubtedly be estopped from again collecting rent for the same premises of one who never had accepted them, and to whom it never delivered possession under its lease. The Winnebago tribe of Indians, and its members, were the cestui que trust of the government. They were the parties entitled to the rents. It by the direction of the trustee the rents were collected by a representative of the cestui que trust, and distributed with the consent of the trustee among the cestui que trust, it is difficult to perceive how the trustee can again collect the rents. All this rejected evidence was competent, pregnant, and persuasive upon the issue whether the Flomney Company and Nick Fritz, who occupied during the term of the Common lease, held under her or under their old leases from the Winnebago tribe of Indians, and it should have been received. (P. 652.)

A lease, although invalid, may be sufficient to hush a trespass action against the lessee under Revised Statutes, section 2317, above discussed.<sup>101</sup> Likewise a lessee under a void lease may justify his possession to the point of enjoining a trespasser.<sup>102</sup> Likewise, it has been held by a state court that the lessee under an invalid tribal lease may execute a binding agreement, amounting to a sublease, with a third party and may recover on a note given by such third party as consideration, in accordance with the principle that a lessee may not question the title of his lessor.<sup>103</sup> It has also been held in at least one state case<sup>104</sup>

that the holder of an invalid tribal lease may recover upon a contract for the purchase of cattle upon the land so leased. On the other hand there are some state cases holding that an Indian tribe cannot recover rental under a void lease.<sup>105</sup> It is intimated that a quantum meruit recovery may be had,<sup>106</sup> and that a lessee under such a lease who is not in actual possession of the land leased, cannot secure possession of crops grown thereon.<sup>107</sup>

The foregoing decisions have many gaps in a definition of the rights of lessors, lessees, and third parties under an invalid lease. These questions, however, are not peculiar to Indian law, and courts will probably answer them as they arise, by reference to analogies in the general field of landlord and tenant relations. Such analogies, however, must be used cautiously, in view of the fundamental principle that, in matters affecting tribal affairs, where Congress is silent the law of the tribe rather than the law of the state must prevail.<sup>108</sup> In accordance with this principle, it has been held that the effect of a lease of tribal land must be determined in accordance with the statutes and judicial decisions of the tribe. Thus, in *Oulugh Coal Co. v. McCaleb*,<sup>109</sup> where the plaintiff company, operating under an instrument which, though called a "mineral lease," apparently amounted to a "lease," sought an injunction against a trespasser, the court declined, per Thayer, J.

The bill avers \* \* \* that the Cherokee Nation had theretofore lawfully issued five mineral licenses, pursuant to the laws of the Nation, to certain licensees, therein named, which licenses conferred on said licensees the exclusive right to mine and sell coal on the various tracts of land described in said licenses. \* \* \* that all of the licenses aforesaid were assigned by, and that the assignment thereto was obtained from, the licensees, by the plaintiff company, in accordance with the laws of the Nation. \* \* \* From any point of view, we think that the bill stated a case entitling the plaintiff to some measure of equitable relief. It showed \* \* \* that the plaintiff company had in exclusive right to mine coal on the lands in question. \* \* \* (Pp. 87-88.)

Furthermore, it has been held that the judgment of a tribal court on the validity of a lease involving a member of the tribe, the tribe itself, and a nonmember is *res judicata* and will not be reexamined in a court of the United States.<sup>110</sup>

In the case of *Dalber v. Shannon*<sup>111</sup> the court declared:

Much of the testimony in the record goes to show that the lease from the Cheek Nation under which appellants claim is illegal because not made in compliance with the Creek laws upon the subject, and because the grant was in excess of the authority of the tribal council. The judgment of the Cheek court precludes our consideration of these questions. We cannot review errors of law or practice in such courts, when their judgments are presented to us, unless such errors are jurisdictional. (P. 450.)

Moreover, it has been held that agents of the United States are without authority to remove as trespassers persons holding under an allegedly invalid lease. Thus, in the case of *Quincy v. Stephens*,<sup>112</sup> an Indian agent sought to determine a controversy

of the Indians, and in fact rendered the service to the defendant of quieting his title, he was entitled to compensation therefor.

<sup>100</sup> *Mayes v. Cheches Strip Livestock Association*, 58 Kans. 712, 61 Pac. 218 (1897), and *Light v. Governor*, 10 Okla. 782, 93 Pac. 908 (1901). (Holding that an individual Indian attempting to lease tribal land cannot recover agreed rentals under the invalid lease.) *Langford v. Montclair*, 1 Idaho 612 (1879), 12 Pac. 102 U. S. 148 (1880) (holding that while man attempting to lease tribal land cannot recover rentals), *Thibault v. Gayman*, 2 Dak. 71, 2 N. W. 258 (1878) (holding that while man attempting to lease tribal land cannot recover in quantum meruit).

<sup>101</sup> *Geary v. Low*, 38 Wash. 10, 77 Pac. 1077 (1904).

<sup>102</sup> See Chapter 7.

<sup>103</sup> 58 Pac. 86 (C. A. 8, 1896).

<sup>104</sup> *Palmer v. Shannon*, 1 Ind. T. 100, 49 B. W. 684 (1897).

<sup>105</sup> *Id.*

<sup>106</sup> 8 Ind. T. 206 (1900), and 126 Pac. 148 (C. A. 8, 1908).

<sup>100</sup> 106 Pac. 800 (C. A. 8, 1901).

<sup>101</sup> 18 Op. A. G. 358 (1888).

<sup>102</sup> *Oulugh Coal Co. v. McCaleb*, 58 Pac. 80 (C. A. 8, 1896).

While the opinion in this case refers to a "mineral lease" rather than a "lease," it refers to the "estate" created by the transaction, which indicates that the instrument was a lease rather than a license.

<sup>103</sup> *Cheches Strip Livestock Ass'n v. Owe*, L. & O. Op., 188 Mo. 304, 40 B. W. 107 (1897).

<sup>104</sup> *Kansas & N. M. Land & Cattle Co. v. Thompson*, 57 Kans. 702, 797, 48 Pac. 84 (1897).

Conceding that Thompson had at no time a right, as against the Indians or the government or the United States, to continue in the occupancy of the land, if he was there with the consent

as to the validity of a lease of tribal land executed by the owner of improvements thereon and, reaching the conclusion that the lease was invalid, ordered the removal of the lessee. In a suit in ejectment which the alleged lessee then brought in the United States Court for the Northern District of the Indian Territory, it was held that the action of the agent was without legal authority or justification. "The court declared

But whether the deed was void or valid, the rights of the parties to it, its construction, the disposition of the money, covenants acquired under it, and the law and the equities of the case cannot be passed upon or enforced by an Indian agent. The courts alone possess these powers. The Indian agent commits in his duties "that, if this rule were to prevail, noncitizens could take possession of the country, and practically control the tribes by coming into with them citizens." Whether this be true or not, the fact is—and it is one of common knowledge—that nine tenths of the farms of the Indian Territory have been opened up and made valuable by contracts substantially like this, and the Indian owners have been the direct beneficiaries. The courts here, without passing upon the validity of such contracts, have meticulously held that, until the improvements provided for in the contract were paid for, the Indian lessee was estopped to set up the invalidity of the lease, and recently, in harmony with these decisions, by act of Congress (the Curtis bill—Ind. T. Ann. 87, 1897, §§ 776-777) it is provided that if the lessee shall not be entered until he shall have been paid for his improvements. We hold that the Indian agent had no jurisdiction to fix this case, and, therefore, when, at the instance of the

appellee, he, using his police for that purpose, forcibly ejected the appellant from the premises, and put the appellee in possession, all the parties to the transaction—the appellees as well as the Indian police, who is made a party to this suit—were guilty of an act of forcible entry, and that, therefore, the court below stated in instructing the jury to find them verdict for the appellees. The judgment of the court below is reversed, and the cause is remanded. (P 274)

Whether the foregoing decisions represent sound law may be open to discussion. They raise fundamentally a question that goes beyond the scope of Indian law and involves about the principle that a lessee may not question the title of his lessor.<sup>100</sup> We may, however, in the following section on "Tribal Licenses," obtain some further light on the situation created by legally unauthorized tribal leases.

Whatever else these cases may show, they do indicate that a lease made by a tribe to a member of the tribe, being justiciable only in the courts of the tribe, may be a valid under those laws although null and void under federal or state law. Such a view seems to have been implicitly accepted with respect to leases to tribal members in a number of decisions<sup>101</sup> and in a rather extensive administrative practice.

<sup>100</sup> See *1.211* *my* Landlord and Tenant (1910), §§ 2 and 182.  
*United States v. Rogers*, 23 Fed. Cas. 17131 (C. C. W. D. Ark. 1898).  
*United States v. Foster*, 23 Fed. Cas. No. 17131 (C. C. W. D. Wm. 1870),  
and see also cited *supra*, pp. 407.

## SECTION 20 TRIBAL LICENSES

That an Indian tribe may grant permission to third parties to enter upon tribal land, and may impose such conditions as it deems feasible upon such permission, is a proposition that has been repeatedly affirmed by the Attorney General. Perhaps the most persuasive of the opinions on this issue is that rendered by Acting Attorney General Phillips in 1884.<sup>102</sup> Three years earlier, the validity of the permit laws of the Choctaws and Chickasaws had been upheld in a formal opinion of the Attorney General, and the Interior Department had been advised that its activities in removing intruders should follow the definition of "intruders" provided by tribal law.<sup>103</sup> In 1884, a reconsideration of the question was asked "in consequence of earnest protest against that opinion from among the people of the two nations concerned—the more because such protest is in accordance with the judgments of some members of Congress and other prominent gentlemen from the States adjoining." The Attorney General declined.

In the absence of a treaty or statute, it seems that the power of the nation thus to regulate its own rights of occupancy, and to say who shall participate therein and upon what conditions, cannot be doubted. The clear result of all the cases, as stated in '95 United States Reports, at page 528, is, "the right of the Indians to their occupancy is as sacred as that of the United States, to the fee."

I add, that so far as the United States recognize political organizations amongst Indians the right of occupancy is a right in the tribe or nation. It is of course competent for the United States to disregard such organizations and treat Indians individually, but their policy has generally been otherwise. In such cases preemptively they remit all question of individual right to the definition of the nation, as being purely domestic in character. The practical importance here of that proposition is that in the absence of express contradictory provisions by treaty, or by statutes of the United States, the nation (and not a citizen) is to declare who shall come within

the boundaries of its occupancy, and under what regulations and conditions. (P 48)

Finding no statute or treaty provision compelling variance from this rule, the Attorney General upheld the validity of the tribal laws in question. In answer to a second question put by the Interior Department "whether, supposing these laws to be valid, the United States, through the proper Department, have power to revise them so as to secure reasonableness in the amount of the fees which they require from persons who apply for permits," the Attorney General held:

In conclusion I have to say, that my attention has not been called to any statute by which Congress has delegated to a Department or office of the United States its power to control such taxation. I therefore conclude that no Department or office has such power. (P 59)

While a tribe may thus issue and condition a permit covering entry upon tribal land, it cannot (any more than could a state) grant an exclusive permit which would interfere with interstate commerce and thus trespass upon a field constitutionally reserved to Congress. Thus in the case of *Navajo National Telegraph Company v. Heil*<sup>104</sup> the court held that a purported exclusive tribal license to a telephone company could not be recognized by Congress from issuing a similar license to another company. The validity of the tribal license was not questioned but the claim to exclusiveness "was invalid from the time the grant was made, being an attempt on the part of the nation to exercise a power vitally affecting interstate commerce, which did not belong to it." (P 885, per Thayer, J.)

Under the foregoing analysis the power of a tribe "to declare who shall come within the boundaries of its occupancy and under what regulations and conditions" exists in the absence of treaty or statute as an inherent power of the tribe. We have already noted that such power is not limited by statutes restricting the power to lease.<sup>105</sup> The power to issue permits, while neither

<sup>102</sup> Choctaw and Chickasaw Permit Laws, 18 Op. A. G. 84 (1884).

<sup>103</sup> Intruders on Lands of the Choctaws and Chickasaws, 17 Op. A. G. 184 (1881).

<sup>104</sup> 118 Fed. 882 (C. C. A. 8, 2002), rev'd 4 Ind. T. 18 (1901).

<sup>105</sup> See sec. 10, *supra*.

created not limited by statute, has been occasionally recognized and confirmed by statute.<sup>80</sup>

There are administrative decisions upholding the validity of tribal permits approved by a superintendent, instead of by the Secretary of the Interior, who is required to approve tribal leases,<sup>81</sup> and upholding the validity of a tribal permit issued to a state conservation department for the establishment of a ranger station.<sup>82</sup> Tribal charters of incorporation issued by the Secretary of the Interior pursuant to section 17 of the Act of June 18, 1904,<sup>83</sup> sometimes distinguish between leases and permits, requiring departmental approval of leases but not requiring such approval of permits.<sup>84</sup>

But purposes of administering the payment of soil conservation benefits, the Department of Agriculture has ruled that in the case of grazing leases the lessee may receive conservation benefit payments but that in the case of permit neither the tribe nor the permittee may receive such benefits.<sup>85</sup>

The distinction between a lease and a permit of license received administrative consideration in connection with the validity of assignments made by a Pueblo to members of the Pueblo. The issue, it was stated, thereby must apply equally to transactions between the tribe and third parties.<sup>86</sup>

This distinction has been considered by the courts in a great variety of cases, which seek to distinguish an interest in land from a mere license. A recent decision in the Circuit Court of Appeals for the Eighth Circuit holds:

"A mere permission to use land, dominion over it remaining in the owner and no interest or exclusive possession of it being given, is but a license. (Citing authorities.)" *Tips v. United States*, 70 F. (2d) 625, 626.

The essential characteristic of a license to use real property, as distinguished from an interest in real property, is that in the former case the licensee has no vested right as against the licensor or third parties. He has only a privilege, which the licensor may terminate.

As Justice Holmes pointed out, in *Mauouie v. Thompson-Jordan Club*, 227 U. S. 643, "A contract binds the person of the maker but does not create an interest in the property that it may concern, unless it also operates as a conveyance." But it did not create such an interest, that is to say, a right in rem valid against the landowner and third persons; the holder had no right to enforce specific performance by self help. His only

right was to sue upon the contract for the breach." (At page 643.)

Put in its simplest terms, the rule is that a landowner does not transfer an interest in his land by allowing another to use the land. Thus, for instance, a member of the landowner's family, inasmuch as he is, "a bare licensee of the owner, who has no legal interest in the land," cannot derive from his legal privilege to use the land a right against the landowner or against third parties. *Mahouie v. Thompson-Jordan Club*, 227 U. S. 641 (N. D. 1911). See also *Academy of Music Co. v. Robinson*, 69 N. W. 165 (Wis. 1896). (Pp. 17-19.)

While it is easy to formulate a (theoretical) distinction between a lease and a license, there is actually a large "bright-line zone" in which considerable differences of interpretation may arise. Within this zone the courts have professed to look into the intention of the parties to determine whether the transaction was intended to create a right against the landowner and against third parties, in which case it must be considered a lease, or was intended merely to confer a privilege, in which case a mere license relationship is established.

Even the language of leasing will not suffice to create a lease relationship if the transaction leaves complete power over the land in the hands of the landowner. Thus, in the case of *Tips v. United States*, 70 F. (2d) 625, the court found that an agreement which used the term "license," "permit" or "lease" was nevertheless a mere license because the so-called lessee, the War Department, had no power to lease the property or to grant more than a revocable permit to use the property (P. 19.)

Where the parties intend to create a bare license to use and enjoy tribal property, there is no statute under which the license may be taxed from the use of such property nor can administrative authorities prevent the tribe concerned from periodically leasing such use. Whether, however, such permission would be entitled to any protection against the tribe in the event of a breach of the conditions of the permit by the tribe is a question on which, unfortunately, no decisions are available.<sup>87</sup>

The terms and conditions of tribal permits have generally been agreed upon by the parties immediately concerned and the practical absence of litigation in this field leaves us without an authoritative basis for answering many questions which might be put. It has been administratively determined that a tribe may grant to an Indian a conveyance of a power of attorney to execute grazing permits covering tribal land, but that the Interior Department has no right to cancel the grant of such powers of attorney.<sup>88</sup>

The terms and conditions of tribal permits are prescribed in various of the constitutions and charters issued pursuant to sections 16 and 17 of the Act of June 18, 1904.<sup>89</sup> It has been administratively determined that a grant of a nonexclusive right-of-way across tribal land is not such a transfer of restricted Indian land as is absolutely prohibited by section 4 of the act cited, but that such a grant is a conveyance of an interest in land and therefore, even though the Secretary of the Interior is authorized by statute to grant rights-of-way across tribal land for specified purposes, such a grant by the Secretary is invalid, in the case of a tribe organized under section 16 of the act, unless the tribe consents thereto.<sup>90</sup>

#### Notes

<sup>80</sup> See, for instance Act of January 6, 1937, 44 Stat. 952, which granting is an exclusive right of the States Indians on their reservation in New York the right "to lease permits and licenses for the taking of game and fish."

<sup>81</sup> Memo Sol. I. D., December 11, 1947.

<sup>82</sup> Memo Sol. I. D., December 22, 1948.

<sup>83</sup> 48 Stat. 954-955.

<sup>84</sup> Memo Sol. I. D., November 11, 1947. *Charter of Lac du Flambeau Tribe* sec. 7(b) and 8(b), and of Memo Sol. I. D. May 26, 1947 (reference to tribal members in issuance of grazing permits).

<sup>85</sup> The permit (Form 5-512) prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior by which grazing privileges upon tribal lands may be granted expressly states that "this instrument is not a lease and is not to be taken or construed as granting any hereditary interest in or to the land described herein, but that it is a mere permit terminable and revocable in the discretion of the approving officer." This permittee therefore, in our opinion, has no such legal estate or interest in the land so as to give him control thereof. Furthermore, the operator having only a personal privilege to graze livestock on the land in question, an owner, cash tenant, share tenant nor a person who acts in similar capacity, he is not within the definition of "ranch operator." Whether the fee is or is not held by the United States Government in trust for the Indians, the land after it has been leased is outside the control of the Government or the Department of the Interior except to prevent waste or other injury to the freehold, including the right to limit the number of livestock grazed on such lands by the lessee to the grazing capacity thereof, the lease covering an estate or interest in the land for the period of the lease. The lessee, renting for cash is a ranch operator by definition, and he has such estate or interest in the land upon which he operates as to give him control thereof. Memo Sol. Dept. Agriculture, February 17, 1947.

<sup>86</sup> Op. Sol. I. D., May 29, 1948 August 9, 1939.

<sup>87</sup> The nearest case in point seems to be *Shanook v. Kriger*, 8 Ind. T. 400 (1906) but this situation was governed by sec. 4 of the Curtis Act of June 23, 1906, 30 Stat. 495, applicable only to the Five Tribes, which granted permittees the privilege of remaining on tribal land rent-free long enough to cover the value of their improvements.

<sup>88</sup> Memo Sol. I. D., November 11, 1945.

<sup>89</sup> 48 Stat. 954, 956-957, 25 U. S. C. 477.

<sup>90</sup> Memo Sol. I. D., September 2, 1935.



## SECTION 21 STATUS OF SURPLUS AND CEDED LANDS

In the preceding three sections dealing with the execution of conveyances, leases, and licenses covering Indian tribal lands, we have been primarily concerned with the tribal status of such instruments and with the power of the tribal subject to dispose of private property. When we turn to the subject of Indian land cessions to the United States, the question of validity is no longer a troublesome one, for, as we have noted, most of the historical peculiarities of Indian land law were suggested to encourage the cession of tribal lands to the United States, and the courts have been reluctant to put obstacles in the way of this process.<sup>128</sup> Even where private treaties, great interest that no land cessions would ever be made of that such cessions would be made only with the consent of the families of the Indians concerned, the Supreme Court has held that a subsequent statute providing for the cession of Indian land by a majority is entirely constitutional.<sup>129</sup> The problem in this field is, therefore, primarily one of the construction of treaties, agreements, and statutes, rather than their validity.

In dealing with the status of ceded lands, the basic question that constantly recurs is whether a cession of lands by an Indian tribe has finally and completely ended the interest of the tribe therein, or whether the tribe retains some equitable interest in the land conveyed.<sup>130</sup> Prior to 1880, most of the treaties, agreements, and statutes by which Indian tribes ceded land to the United States provided for an outright and final conveyance, in return for which the Indians received cash payments, annuities, substitute lands, or other things of value.<sup>131</sup>

For about four decades after the adoption of the General Allotment Act an alternative pattern prevails. "Simple" reservation lands, not needed for allotment, are turned over to the Government for the purpose of sale. The Indians are credited with the proceeds only as the land is sold, and the United States is not itself bound to purchase any part of the lands so opened for disposal. Undisposed of lands of this class remain tribal property until disposed of as provided by law.<sup>132</sup>

In between these two recognized patterns of "cession and removal" and "relinquishment in trust," various hybrid forms appear.<sup>133</sup>

The "cession and removal" formula is found in the Treaty of March 10, 1854,<sup>134</sup> with the Omaha Indians, contained in *United States v. Omaha Tribe of Indians*.<sup>135</sup> In this treaty the language of present conveyance is used and the Indians undertake to remove from the land ceded within a year from the ratification of the treaty. The fact that payment was to be made over a

long period of years in the opinion of the Supreme Court, did not deny the presence of title to the United States.<sup>136</sup>

A clear case of the "relinquishment in trust" agreement appears in the Act of April 27, 1904,<sup>137</sup> a statute in agreement with the Cheyenne Indians. This agreement provided that the Indians "ceded, assigned, and relinquished" to the United States all of their "right title, and interest" in the lands described. The United States agreed to sell the land on prescribed terms and to pay the proceeds to the Indians, making semiannual reports as to the status and disposition of the sums realized. The agreement specifically declared "the intention of this Act that the United States shall act as trustee for said Indians to dispose of said lands and to expend and pay over the proceeds received from the sale thereof only as received, as herein provided."<sup>138</sup> Construing these provisions in the case of *Ash Sheep Co. v. United States*,<sup>139</sup> the Supreme Court declared:

It is obvious that the relation thus established by the act between the Government and the tribe of Indians was essentially that of trustee and beneficiary and that the agreement contained many features appropriate to a trust agreement in so far as it sold and devotes the proceeds to the interests of the *res trustae* but not *trustee*. *Atkins v. United States*, 285 U. S. 373, 374, 375.

Taking all of the provisions of the agreement together we cannot doubt that while the Indians by the agreement released their fee simple right to the Government, the owner of the fee, so that, as then stated, it could make perfect title to purchasers, nevertheless, until sales should be made any benefits which might be derived from the use of the lands would belong to the beneficiaries and not to the trustee, and that if the fee were to become "public lands" in the sense of being subject to sale, or other disposition, such a release of land laws. *Union Pacific R. R. Co. v. Harris*, 275 U. S. 98, 99, 100. They were subject to sale by the Government, to be sold, but in the manner and for the purposes provided for in the special agreement with the Indians, which is embodied in the Act of April 27, 1904, § 101, 102, and as to the point the case is cited by the *Trustee* and *Chippewa Indians*, supra. Thus, we conclude that the lands described in the bill were "Indian lands" when the company purchased its sheep upon them, in violation of § 2117 of Revised Statutes, and the decree in No. 212 must be affirmed. (Op. 16, 17, 18.)

Similar circumstances were present in the Act of June 14, 1880,<sup>140</sup> authorizing an agreement in the cession and sale of "Chippewa lands." In construing this agreement the Supreme Court suggested:<sup>141</sup>

... that the United States has no substantial interest in the lands, that it holds the legal title until a contract with the Indians and in trust for their benefit. (Op. 257.)

<sup>128</sup> Accord, *Op. Sol. J. D. M.* 26398 January 8, 1938. In this case the effect of Act I of an agreement with the Yuma Indians, ratified by the Act of August 16, 1864, 28 Stat. 264, 265, was in issue. The Solicitor of the Interior Department noted that although non-transferable lands had been continuously administered as a part of the Indian reservation and leased for grazing and mining purposes for the benefit of the Yuma Indians, this administrative recognition of Indian ownership could not prevail in the face of clear language in the agreement indicating, "in clear and precise terms, a present relinquishment of all of the interest of the Indians in the reservation lands." The unratified cases of *United States v. Sid Johnson* and *John Johnson*, and *United States v. M. O. Walker* and *Mrs. M. O. Walker*, a *decidendum* 2 1915, in the District Court of the United States for the Southern District of California, are cited in support of this ruling.

<sup>129</sup> 22 Stat. 963.

<sup>130</sup> 22 Stat. 852, 861.

<sup>131</sup> 22 Stat. 870 (1890), Act, 250 Stat. 807 (C. C. A. 6, 1916), and 264 Stat. 69 (C. C. A. 6, 1918).

<sup>132</sup> 22 Stat. 612.

<sup>133</sup> *Mumme v. Hirschbach*, 185 U. S. 873 (1902).

<sup>128</sup> These claims have been maintained and established as far west as the river Mississippi by the word. The title to a vast portion of the lands we now hold originates in them. It is not for the courts of this country to question the validity of this title or to require any such action incompatible with it. *Johnson v. McIntosh*, 8 Wheat. 543, 588-789 (1823).

<sup>129</sup> *Lone Wolf v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 569 (1903), *Cherokee Nation v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 524 (1902).

<sup>130</sup> Whether or not the Government became trustee for the Indians or acquired an unrestricted title by the cession of their lands depends in each case upon the terms of the agreement or treaty by which the cession was made. *Mumme v. Hirschbach*, 185 U. S. 878, 894, 899 (1902). *United States v. Little Lee Band of Chippewa Indians*, 220 U. S. 405, 409 (1918). *Ash Sheep Co. v. United States*, 252 U. S. 159, 164 (1920). *affg.* 250 Fed. 971 (C. C. A. 9, 1918) and 254 Fed. 99 (C. C. A. 9, 1918). *Op. Sol. J. D. M.* 26798, June 14, 1938 (Ute) (501 U. S. 340). *Op. Sol. J. D. M.* 26194, January 8, 1938 (Yuma).

<sup>131</sup> See, for example, *Beaulieu v. Goff*, 42 App. D. C. 588 (1909). See also in 94 of this chapter.

<sup>132</sup> *Ash Sheep Co. v. United States*, 252 U. S. 159 (1920), *affg.* 250 Fed. 971 (C. C. A. 9, 1918), and 254 Fed. 99 (C. C. A. 9, 1918).

<sup>133</sup> See note 5-A, supra.

<sup>134</sup> 22 Stat. 1048.

<sup>135</sup> 258 U. S. 276 (1922).

This was not a case, the Court pointed out, where "the interest of the tribe in the land from which it has been removed ceases and the full obligation of the Government to the Indians is satisfied when the pecuniary or utilitarian consideration for the cession is secured to them" (P 401). Under the circumstances the Indians had a right to expect that the ceded tract would be used as declared in the act of agreement.<sup>13</sup>

Various other cases gave effect to the equitable interest found to exist in the Indian title with respect to the land ceded.<sup>14</sup>

Several difficult border line cases were presented when Congress, by section 8 of the Act of June 18, 1894,<sup>15</sup> authorized the Secretary of the Interior "to restore to tribal ownership the remaining surplus lands of any Indian reservation heretofore opened, or authorized to be opened, to sale, or by any other form of disposal by President or proclamation, or by any of the public land laws of the United States." The question arose whether this language was broad enough to cover land ceded to the Colorado Ute Indians under the Act of June 16, 1880.<sup>16</sup> The Solicitor of the Interior Department, holding that such lands came within the permissive scope of the statute,<sup>17</sup> declined

The 1880 cession agreement with the Colorado Ute Indians is one of the early examples of conditional surplus land cessions, in fact the provisions of the 1880 act set forth a plan of allotment and disposal of surplus lands which became stereotyped in later allotment acts. A commission was appointed to make a census of the Indians, to select lands to be allotted, to survey and mark off these lands for allotment, and to cause allotments to be made. The provisions of section 3 of that act, quoted above, are significant in that they provide for the disposal only of those lands within the reservation "not so allotted." The legislative history of this 1880 act makes clear that the chief purpose of the act was the immediate allotment within the Colorado Ute Reservation of the individual Indians of various Ute bands and the opening to disposal of the remaining surplus lands. The opening up of the surplus lands was decidedly an essential in view of the thousands of settlers and prospectors on the borders of the reservation who could not successfully be kept from entering the reservation by military or other means. The plan of allotment of the Indians was favored and bitterly opposed as the entering wedge in the allotment of the tribes generally throughout the United States. In fact, a general allotment act was pending in that session of Congress. (See House debates on the 1880 agreement, Congressional Record, 46th Congress, 2d session, June 7, 1880, pages 1291-1298.)

From the foregoing it definitely appears that the fact that this cession occurred several years before other allotment cessions does not mean that this cession falls within the earlier type of outright cession and removal. This cession was rather a forerunner and a model of later allotment acts and differs in no important respect from these acts. The fact that two of the three main groups of Indians were subsequently not allotted within the borders of the Colorado Ute Reservation does not alter my conclusion. The 1880 act did not provide for establishing new reservations but for supplying the Indians with

allotment, and where allotments occurred outside the reservation, the Indians were to be charged a price of \$1.45 an acre to be paid from the proceeds of the land ceded from the Colorado Ute Reservation. The allotments off the reservation were therefore in the nature of land allotments and in the case of the Thompsons they were made only because of the fact that insufficient agricultural lands were found within the Colorado Ute Reservation. (See Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, 1881, at 29, 323, et seq.)

The fact that the Act of 1880 and the subsequent Act of 1882 provided that the lands ceded "shall be held and deemed to be public lands of the United States," was held not to affect the conclusion that the lands in question were lands in which the Indian title existed in interest.

Surplus lands ceded to be disposed of for the Indians are in fact qualified public lands and also qualified Indian lands. They are public lands in that the United States has the legal title and has secured from the Indians a release of their right of occupancy and has arranged to dispose of them, but they are not public lands in the full sense of the term as they are to be disposed of only in limited ways and upon certain conditions. *Minnesota v. Hitchcock*, *supra*. It should be noted that both the 1880 act and the 1882 acts concerning the Ute land qualified the cede to the land as public land and subject to disposal under the public land laws by stated conditions and restrictions. (Pp 338-339.)

Where ceded lands are held by the United States to be disposed of for the benefit of an Indian tribe, all proceeds from the land belong, in equity, to the Indian tribe.<sup>18</sup> No part of such proceeds accrue to the state in which the lands are located, although such state is entitled to proceeds from the sale of ordinary "public lands."<sup>19</sup> Where such lands are subjected by statute to a flowage easement, Congress has provided for payment of damages to the tribe.<sup>20</sup>

Where surplus lands are disposed of as a result of fraud, the Secretary of the Interior, under proper statutory authorization, may sue on behalf of the tribe to recover the lands lost or the value thereof.<sup>21</sup>

The equitable right to the value of lands erroneously disposed of is vested in the Indian tribe.<sup>22</sup>

Where unceded lands are held to be, in equity, the property of the tribe, it has been affirmatively determined that such lands are within the scope of the leading provisions of approved tribal constitutions.<sup>23</sup>

The equity in ceded lands is vested in the tribe entitled to the proceeds therefrom, rather than the tribe or band making the original cession, and ceded lands restored to tribal ownership pursuant to section 8 of the Act of June 18, 1894,<sup>24</sup> become the property of the tribe entitled to the proceeds therefrom.<sup>25</sup>

The manner in which ceded lands are to be disposed of is for Congress to determine, so long as the promised benefits accrue to

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*, see 401, 402.

<sup>14</sup> *United States v. Bland*, 110 U.S. 688 (1884) (holding ceded lands remain property of Indians, in equity until sold and are therefore not "public lands" within the official duties of an agent designated to sell "public lands"); *United States v. Blackfeather*, 150 U.S. 180 (1894); *United States v. Creek Nation*, 295 U.S. 108 (1935), *rev'd* 77 C. 100 (1888), rehearing den. 295 U.S. 799 (1888); *United States v. White Las Bands of Chippewas*, 229 U.S. 648 (1912) (certain lands ceded for present consideration, others for future disposition under treaty).

<sup>15</sup> 48 Stat. 984. On the scope of sec. 8 of this act, see Memo. Sol. I. D., August 27, 1898 (Southern Ute, unratifying act of June 15, 1890, 21 Stat. 180, Act of February 20, 1890, 26 Stat. 677), and see 54 I. D. 690 (1904).

<sup>16</sup> 51 Stat. 190.

<sup>17</sup> Op. Sol. I. D., 3d 26798, June 15, 1898 (66 I. D. 30). The return was made pursuant to this opinion as superseded by the Act of June 28, 1898, 53 Stat. 1209.

<sup>18</sup> Op. Sol. I. D., 2d 5076, August 5, 1880 (58 I. D. 154) (Hitchcock); *Peter Fickelmeier*, 48 I. D. 440 (1922); *Op. Minnesota National Forest*, 31 Op. A. G. 95 (1917) (ceded lands classified as National Forest under jurisdiction of Secretary of Agriculture); *Chippewas Indians of Minnesota v. United States*, 800 U.S. 849 (1889).

<sup>19</sup> *See*, e.g., *Indian Lands in Kansas*, 39 Op. A. G. 117 (1888).

<sup>20</sup> Act of April 14, 1918, 52 Stat. 215.

<sup>21</sup> *United States v. Blackfeather*, 150 U.S. 180 (1894), *rev'd* 77 C. 100 (1888).

<sup>22</sup> *United States v. Blackfeather*, 150 U.S. 180 (1894), *rev'd* 77 C. 100 (1888).

<sup>23</sup> *United States v. Blackfeather*, 150 U.S. 180 (1894), *rev'd* 77 C. 100 (1888).

<sup>24</sup> 45 Op. Sol. I. D., 26718, February 19, 1898, Memo. Sol. Off. I. D., January 24, 1900.

<sup>25</sup> To the effect that proceeds of ceded lands are due to the tribe making the first cession, in the absence of clear contrary provisions in the governing statute, treaty, or agreement, see *United States v. Choctaw Nation*, 179 U.S. 484 (1900).



property, which we have noted in the field of realty, is parallel in the field of personality.

The distinction between property vested in the tribe is an entity and property held by tribal members in common is likewise regulated in the field of personality.

The question of who composes the tribe in which personal property is vested does not differ in principle from the parallel question which we have considered in the field of real property.

The policies raised by the concept of "equitable ownership" in tribal realty are repeated with respect to equitable ownership of tribal funds and other personal property.

Possibly a peculiar problem is raised in the field of tribal personality by the question of when interest is payable on tribal funds held by the United States, although this problem shows a basic similarity to the problem at the right to the proceeds of land held by the United States in trust for an Indian tribe.

Another problem that may appear peculiar to the field of tribal personality, but is in fact basically analogous to problems in the field of tribal realty, is that of creditors' claims against tribal funds.

Because of these numerous parallels, it should be possible to deal with the foregoing questions rather briefly, relying upon analyses already made with respect to real property.

#### A FORMS OF PERSONAL PROPERTY

The personal property of Indian tribes probably comprises all the forms of personal property known to non-Indians, including bonds, notes, mortgages, monies, credits, shares of stock, choses in action,<sup>101</sup> and debts.<sup>102</sup>

A tribe may have in equitable interest in personal property held by the United States or by some other party, and, conversely, an Indian tribe may have in its possession funds which it holds as trustee.

Thus a tribe may hold funds as a trustee to carry out projects for the rehabilitation of needy Indians.<sup>103</sup>

Of all forms of property held by an Indian tribe, it is probable that a principal focus of discussion and controversy has been the category of choses in action and, in particular, claims against the United States and against other tribes.<sup>104</sup>

#### B TRIBAL PROPERTY AND FEDERAL PROPERTY

As with realty, the distinction between personal property of an Indian tribe and public property of the United States has been recognized in a wide variety of cases.

The distinction between tribal funds and public moneys of the United States was the basis of the decision in *Quick Bear*

*v. Leupp*.<sup>105</sup> In that case the Supreme Court held that payments to the Bureau of Catholic Indian Missions for the care, education, and maintenance of Indian pupils was not in violation of statutory provisions which declared it "to be the settled policy of the Government to hereafter make no appropriation whatever for education in any sectarian school."<sup>106</sup> The Supreme Court said:

"These appropriations are made on different grounds from the gratuitous appropriations of public moneys under the heading 'Support of Schools.' The two subjects were separately treated in each act, and, naturally, they are essentially different in character. One is the gratuitous appropriation of public moneys for the purpose of Indian education, but the 'Treaty Fund' is not public money in this sense. It is the Indians' money, or, at least it is dealt with by the Government as if it belonged to them; it is morally its due. It differs from the 'Trust Fund' in this. The 'Trust Fund' has been set aside for the Indians and the moneys expended for their benefit, which expenditure required no annual appropriation. The whole amount due the Indians in certain land cessions was appropriated in one lump sum by the act of 1880, 21 Stat. 588 chap. 405. This 'Trust Fund' is held for the Indians and not distributed *pro capita*, being held as property in common. The money is distributed in accordance with the direction of the Secretary of the Interior, but really belongs to the Indians. The President declared it to be the moral right of the Indians to have this 'Trust Fund' applied to the education of the Indians in the schools of their choice and the same view was entertained by the Supreme Court of the District of Columbia and the Court of Appeals of the District. But the 'Treaty Fund' has exactly the same characteristics. The moneys belong, in reality, to the Indians. They are the moneys of land ceded by the Indians to the Government. The only difference is that in the 'Treaty Fund' the debt to the Indians created and secured by the treaty is paid by annual appropriations. They are not gratuitous appropriations of public moneys, but the moneys, as we repeat, of the tribe's debt to non-Indians. We perceive no justification for applying the proviso of declaration of policy to the payment of treaty obligations, the two things being distinct and different in nature and having no relation to each other, except that both are technically appropriations." (17 84-85.)

Since the decision in *Quick Bear v. Leupp*, the Bureau of Indian Affairs has continued to make payments to sectarian schools out of Indian "trust" or "Treaty" funds, at the request of the Indian tribes concerned. Justifications for such expenditures have been regularly presented to Congress in hearings on Indian appropriations and regularly approved.<sup>107</sup>

In the case of *United States v. Shumett*,<sup>108</sup> where the United States sought to recover upon an Indian agent's bond by reason of the agent's failure to deposit certain tribal sale proceeds in the United States Treasury, the court turned to the defendant, on this issue, declining

The null at which this matter was saved was entered by the United States for the Indians of this reservation in pursuance of the treaty with the Omahas, of November 29, 1854 (10 Bl. 1324), and that with the Mdowas, of December 21, 1855, (12 Bl. 951), and in fact belongs to them, and therefore, in any judgment, such moneys were not the "property" of the United States, within the purview of section 3618 of the Revised Statutes, which requires the proceeds of any sale thereof to be converted into the treasury, nor was the money recovered therefor, received "for the use of the United States," within the purview of section 3617 of the Revised Statutes. (17 94-96.)

<sup>101</sup> See, for example, Act of June 10, 1872, 17 Stat. 798 (sale of Ottawa tribal assets).

<sup>102</sup> On debts to a tribe created by the appropriation of tribal funds for payment of Indian construction charges on allotted lands see Act of June 4, 1920, sec. 8 41 Stat. 751-753. See also Act of March 3, 1921, sec. 5 41 Stat. 1336 and see Chapter 12 sec. 7. To the effect that a tribe may transfer or assign debts owing from the United States on the same basis as a private person, see *Assuability of Indian Debts—Cherokee Nation* 20 Op. A. G. 749 (1894).

<sup>103</sup> See for example, Act of April 27, 1904, 33 Stat. 352, 353 (Crow).

<sup>104</sup> See Letter of Acting Secretary I. D. to United States Employees' Compensation Commission, July 9, 1937, analyzing loans and grants to Indian tribes made pursuant to the Emergency Relief Appropriation Act of April 8, 1935.

<sup>105</sup> These agreements are known as trust agreements and contain the following significant provisions: The United States grants to the tribe all of the allocation of emergency funds required to cover the cost of the approved projects (counting such part of the cost as represents necessary administrative and supervisory expenses). The grant is made subject to the condition that the trust will be used for only the approved projects and that the projects will be carried on under the regulations and supervision of the Indian Office. And see Sec. 24 of this chapter.

<sup>106</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 6.

<sup>107</sup> 210 U. S. 60 (1909).

<sup>108</sup> Act of June 10, 1870, 21 Stat. 721, 745, Act of June 7, 1897, 30 Stat. 68, 79, similar provisions are found in the recent appropriation acts, e. g., Act of March 3, 1917, 39 Stat. 900, 906.

<sup>109</sup> Op. Sol. I. D., M. 27014, August 1, 1934.

<sup>110</sup> 28 Fed. 84 (C. C. Ors. 1890).

In a somewhat similar case, the United States Supreme Court declared<sup>106</sup>

The moneys paid for the Indian lands were trust moneys, not public moneys. They were at all times in equity the moneys of the Indians, subject only to the expenses incurred in the United States for surveying, managing, and selling the lands. (P. 692)

### C TRIBAL OWNERSHIP AND COMMON OWNERSHIP

Tribal funds, like tribal lands, are the property of the tribe as an entity rather than common property of the individual members.<sup>107</sup>

This general rule, however, does not settle the question of when a particular treaty or statute is to be construed as establishing tribal property rights in a given fund, for instance, and when individual rights are established. The problem is apt to become acute when the treaty or statute in question refers to "Indians" in the plural instead of to a tribe in the singular.

In the case of *Chippewa Indians of Minnesota v. United States*,<sup>108</sup> a possible ambiguity in the original statute<sup>109</sup> requiring payments to "the Chippewa Indians in the State of Minnesota" was resolved by the Supreme Court in view of a claimed course of administrative dealings treating the funds in question as the property of the tribe rather than of individuals.

Originally, a treaty promise to make annuity payments to a tribe *per capita* does not establish vested rights in individual members of the tribe, and no such vested right is established by the general statute requiring that payment of annuities be made directly to the Indians rather than to agents or attorneys.<sup>110</sup> Therefore individual members who separate from the tribe forfeit a legal claim to annuities.<sup>111</sup> As was said in the case of *The Sac and Fox Indians*,<sup>112</sup> *per Indem, J.*

The Government did not deal with individuals but with tribes. *Blackfeet v. United States*, 190 U.S. 468, 377 See *Flaming v. McCutchen*, 215 U.S. 85. The promises in the treaties under which the annuities were due were promises to the tribes. *Treaties of November 4, 1864, 7 Stat. 84, October 21, 1857, 7 Stat. 540, October 21, 1842, 7 Stat. 790. See Treaty of October 4, 1859, 15 Stat. 467 (P. 484).*

The treaty contracts on which the plaintiffs' claims are founded gave rights only to the tribe, not to the members. It was an accepted and reasonable rule, especially in the days when Indians were still very possible and com- mon, that payments to the tribe should be made only if they re-velation and to persons present there. The acts of 1852 and 1867 did not shut the treaty rights from the tribe to the members, create new rights or enlarge old ones. The payments up to 1864 had the sanction of statute. The act of 1864 no more created individual rights than did the acts of 1852 and 1867. It confined

<sup>106</sup> *United States v. Brundage*, 110 U.S. 838 (1884).

<sup>107</sup> *Dallas v. Goodrich*, 15 Fed. Cl. 345 (1904) (holding individual Choctaw has no such interest in tribal property as will justify representative suit to prevent improper additions to tribal rolls), *Seashole Indians—Modification of Agreement With*, 28 Op. A.G. 840 (1907). See *Forbes v. Rowe*, 11 How. 302, 374 (1850). And *Adams v. United States*, 210 U.S. 840 (1911), rev'd 44 C. Cls. 187 (1909) (holding unconditional provision in the Appropriation Act of March 1, 1907, 84 Stat. 1015, 1028, conferring jurisdiction upon the Court of Claims and the Supreme Court to determine the constitutionality of the Act of April 26, 1906, 34 Stat. 197 as amended by Act of June 21, 1906, 34 Stat. 326, adding new members to Choctaw rolls).

<sup>108</sup> 307 U.S. 1 (1939).

<sup>109</sup> Act of January 14, 1880, 21 Stat. 642.

<sup>110</sup> Act of August 40, 1872, sec. 4, 10 Stat. 41, 46.

<sup>111</sup> *Sac and Fox Indians v. United States*, 155 U.S. 481 (1911), aff'd 44 C. Cls. 287 (1910).

<sup>112</sup> *Ibid.*

its benefits to "original Sac and Foxes now in Iowa," and made the Secretary of the Interior the judge (pp. 189-400).

### D TRIBAL INTEREST IN TRUST PROPERTY

Numerous statutes refer to funds held by the United States for an Indian tribe as "trust funds" and to the Secretary of the Treasury as the Secretary of the Interior as "custodian."<sup>113</sup>

The strict language of "trust" is not, however, necessary to establish a trust relationship between the United States and the tribe where tribal personal property is held by the United States.

Incidents of the trust or depositary relationship are found in statutes providing for payments out of the Treasury to replace bonds held by the Secretary of the Interior for an Indian tribe and stolen while in his custody,<sup>114</sup> or to compensate for the default of, or sales on state bonds.<sup>115</sup>

### E THE COMPOSITION OF THE TRIBE

As has been already noted, the question of what individuals are entitled to share in tribal personal property does not differ essentially from the parallel question considered with respect to realty.<sup>116</sup> The chief difficulties with respect to the proper distribution of tribal funds have arisen in connection with the amalgamation of distinct tribes,<sup>117</sup> the splitting of single tribes,<sup>118</sup> and the loss of membership by adoption of particular individuals.

Where several tribes or bands are interested in a single fund, Congress has sometimes provided for distribution in accordance with respective numbers.<sup>119</sup>

The interest of the various groups of Cherokees in national funds has been a source of legislation<sup>120</sup> and litigation<sup>121</sup> for many years.

Special statutes occasionally provide for the payment of shares of tribal funds to persons newly added to tribal rolls.<sup>122</sup>

### F INTEREST ON TRIBAL FUNDS

When tribal funds are held by the United States for the benefit of the tribe, the question frequently arises whether interest on such funds is due to the tribe and, if such be the case, what the appropriate rate of interest may be. Ordinarily this question must be answered by reference to the terms of the treaty, act,

<sup>113</sup> Act of June 10, 1876, 19 Stat. 58, Act of June 10, 1880, sec. 2, 21 Stat. 291, 292 (Grant and Little O. & Co.).

<sup>114</sup> Act of July 12, 1862, sec. 1, 12 Stat. 739, 740 (Kashakias, Potatoes, Pinks, and Weas).

<sup>115</sup> Thus the Act of March 4, 1845, 8 Stat. 786, 777, includes an appropriation "To make good the interest on investments in State stocks and bonds for various Indian tribes not yet paid by the States, to be reimbursed out of the interest when collected." \* \* \* Act of August 31, 1842, 5 Stat. 578 (Wyandott).

<sup>116</sup> See, e.g., Act of January 19, 1861, 16 Stat. 720 (division of money).

<sup>117</sup> See e.g., Treaty of July 19, 1868 with Cherokee Nation 11 Stat. 790 (incorporation of friendly tribes).

<sup>118</sup> Treaty of July 27, 1850, with Comanche, Kiowa and Apache Indians art. 10 10 Stat. 1018 1014 Act of January 18, 1881, sec. 8, 21 Stat. 315 316 (Winnebago) of Treaty of August 27, 1828, art. 2, 7 Stat. 317 310 (Winnebago, Potawatomi, Chippewas and Ottawa Indians), of the Act of March 2, 1850, sec. 2, 21 Stat. 1013, 1016 (United Potatoes and Mammie).

<sup>119</sup> See Act of August 7, 1882, 22 Stat. 402 828 Act of March 8, 1883, 22 Stat. 682, 685-590, Act of August 28, 1884, 28 Stat. 424, 441 443.

<sup>120</sup> Cherokee Nation v. Chickasaw 155 U.S. 218 (1894), Cherokee Nation v. Jeanne 155 U.S. 218 (1894), aff'd 155 U.S. 218 (1894), Cherokee Nation v. Chickasaw 155 U.S. 218 (1894), Cherokee Nation v. Chickasaw 155 U.S. 218 (1894).

<sup>121</sup> Act of June 2, 1924, 43 Stat. 283 (Cheyenne and Arapaho).

of Congress or agreement by which the fund in question was established.<sup>170</sup>

Under some treaties what amounted to interest payments were designated "annuities."<sup>171</sup>

The Act of April 1, 1880<sup>172</sup> authorized the Secretary of the Interior to deposit such funds in the United States Treasury, in lieu of payment, with a provision that interest should be payable "semi-annually . . . at the rate per annum stipulated by treaty or prescribed by law." The Act of February 12, 1919<sup>173</sup> as amended by the Act of June 18, 1930,<sup>174</sup> provides for the payment of simple interest at the rate of 4 per centum per annum on tribal funds, "upon which interest is not otherwise authorized by law."<sup>175</sup>

When tribal funds held by the United States were segregated for pro rata distribution and deposited in banks, section 28 of the Act of May 25, 1918,<sup>176</sup> required as a condition of the deposit that the bank agree to pay interest on such funds "at a reasonable rate." Subsequently, section 231 (c) of the Banking Act of 1935<sup>177</sup> prohibited payment of interest by member banks of the Federal Reserve System on demand deposits, and required "so much of existing law as requires the payment of interest with respect to any funds deposited by the United States . . . as is inconsistent with the provision of this section as amended." It was immediately determined that this statute superseded the requirement of interest payment on funds on demand deposit in such banks, and that such funds might lawfully be deposited in banks not paying interest thereon.<sup>178</sup> This holding was limited to banks which are members of the Federal Reserve System,<sup>179</sup> and had no application to tribal funds not segregated for pro rata distribution, as to which a fixed interest is due to the tribe.

The Act of June 24, 1938<sup>180</sup> authorized the Secretary of the Interior to withdraw from the United States Treasury and to deposit in banks tribal funds "on which the United States is not obligated by law to pay interest at higher rates than can be provided for by the banks."<sup>181</sup>

All through the right of an Indian tribe to interest in connection with recovery against the United States is beyond the scope of this chapter, we may note the general rule laid down by Title C, § 7, in *Onyiah v. United States*,<sup>182</sup> based upon section 177 of the Indian Code:

. . . we should begin with the premise, well established by the authorities, that a recovery of interest

<sup>170</sup> See *Crow Indians of Montana, Modification of Agreement*, 20 Op A.G. 717 (1893).

<sup>171</sup> *United States v. Blackfeather*, 135 U.S. 180 (1904), *rev. Blackfeather v. United States*, 25 C. Cl. 447 (1902), *but cf. Sioux Indians v. United States*, 277 U.S. 434 (1928), 104 S.Ct. 802 (1924).

<sup>172</sup> 21 Stat. 70 25 U.S.C. 101.

<sup>173</sup> 40 Stat. 1104.

<sup>174</sup> 46 Stat. 784.

<sup>175</sup> See 2 of this act fixes the same interest rate for "Indian Money Proceeds of Labor" accounts over \$600 (25 U.S.C. 161b) Secs. 3 and 4 relate to accounting and to deposit of accrued interest. (25 U.S.C. 161a, 161b).

<sup>176</sup> 40 Stat. 791.

<sup>177</sup> 49 Stat. 681 717 715.

<sup>178</sup> Op. Sol. I.D. M. 28281, March 12 1930.

<sup>179</sup> Op. Sol. I.D. M. 28251, May 27, 1930.

<sup>180</sup> 52 Stat. 1017.

<sup>181</sup> 270 U.S. 478, 487 (1926).

against the United States is not authorized under a special Act relating to the Court of Claims, a suit founded upon a contract with the United States unless the contract on the act expressly authorizes such interest.<sup>183</sup>

### G CREDITORS' CLAIMS

The question of whether funds due to or held in trust for the tribe in the United States should be subjected to the claims of creditors has been expressly covered in a number of special statutes relating to the disposition of such funds.<sup>184</sup> In a few cases general payment by the Secretary of the Interior to all of the creditors of a given tribe is authorized, but generally the statute authorizes payment of a designated claim, based either upon tribal agreement,<sup>185</sup> or upon depositions.<sup>186</sup> General legislation on depositions claims authorized the Court of Claims to adjudicate such claims in suits against the United States, with permission to interested Indians to appear as parties defendant.<sup>187</sup> Judgments rendered against Indian tribes were to be satisfied out of annuities, other funds, or any appropriations for the benefit of the tribe, and, if all these sources failed, from the Treasury of the United States, such payments to be refundable out of future tribal annuities, funds, or appropriations. Thereafter the regular appropriation bill authorized the Secretary of the Interior to make payments to successful claimants under the Act of March 1, 1891<sup>188</sup> by deducting such sums from tribal funds, having due regard for the reduction and other necessary requirements of the tribe or tribes affected.<sup>189</sup>

The general rule is that tribal funds held by the United States will not be subjected to claims of third parties unless payment of such claims is clearly authorized by statute or treaty,<sup>190</sup> or by lawful action of the tribe itself.<sup>191</sup>

<sup>182</sup> See an example of such expenditure set *United States v. Blackfeather*, 175 U.S. 150 (1904) *rev. Blackfeather v. United States*, 25 C. Cl. 447 (1902) (holding that where interest is due on the proceeds of land ceded by the tribe to be sold by the Federal Government in public sale, and such lands are in fact sold at private sale at lower price than that demanded, and subsequently under a special judgment it is adjudicated that the tribe is entitled to the difference, the tribe is also entitled to interest thereon, the same being included within the exception in the rule above cited, in a treaty provision for the payment of five per centum on the amount of such balance as an annuity.) (21 Stat. 70).

<sup>183</sup> Act of June 22, 1911 10 Stat. 781 (Sut and Fox). Act of June 10, 1930 21 Stat. 279 277 (Hoytman). Act of May 13, 1931 sec. 1, 18 Stat. 47 (Hoytman).

<sup>184</sup> Act of August 5, 1942 52 Stat. 728 (Annapolis). Act of April 3, 1898, 25 Stat. 79 (Dorwin Indian). Act of May 27, 1902, 32 Stat. 207 (Minomine).

<sup>185</sup> Act of March 3, 1891 26 Stat. 501 807 (Cheyenne and Arapaho), Act of March 3, 1891 21 Stat. 179 498 (Thebanne and Arapaho).

<sup>186</sup> Act of March 3, 1891 21 Stat. 871 (but no discussion of the responsibility of tribes for depositions, see Chapter 11 sec. 3, 6).

<sup>187</sup> Act of August 21, 1894 28 Stat. 321 476. Act of June 8, 1896 29 Stat. 257 300. Act of February 9, 1900 31 Stat. 7 25. Act of February 13, 1902 32 Stat. 5 27.

<sup>188</sup> Claim of Board of Bureau of Indian Affairs under Treaty with the Cheyennes 5 Op. A.G. 265 (1870). The Bureau found that the Cheyennes were entitled to 3 Op. A.G. 131 (1839), proceeds of stocks from the Cheyenne to the Cheyenne Fund 1 Op. A.G. 792 (1840).

<sup>189</sup> To the effect that a tribe may assume collective responsibility for debts incurred by individual members and that the President at the request of the tribe may cause monies funds due to the creditor, see *Contractors of the Bureau of Indian Affairs*, 6 Op. A.G. 19 (1973), *Contractors of Indians*, 6 Op. A.G. 162 (1871).

## SECTION 23 TRIBAL RIGHT TO RECEIVE FUNDS

The right of an Indian tribe to receive funds or other personal property from the United States or from third parties depends, of course, upon the language of the treaty, statute, or agreement, in which such promise of payment appears.<sup>192</sup> In this section

<sup>192</sup> The right of an Indian tribe to recover funds, apart from agreement, by reason of torts committed against it, is treated elsewhere, in

we shall attempt to delineate the principal sources of tribal rights to income, and to analyze the manner in which such payments are handled.

Chapter 14. The right to compensation under eminent domain proceedings is devoted to in sec. 11, *supra*. Powers with respect to taxes and fees are treated in Chapter 7.

## A SOURCES OF TRIBAL INCOME

The principal source of tribal income, at least since the Revolution, has been the sale of tribal resources—chiefly land, timber, minerals, and water power. Since sale of such resources was, for more than a century, largely restricted to the United States, most of the tribal income received prior to 1891, when the first general leasing law was enacted,<sup>18</sup> was paid to the tribe by the United States. Failure to appreciate the basis of such payments helped to create the popular misconception that all payments made by the United States to Indians were matters of charity. An illustration of this sentiment is found in section 3 of the Act of June 22, 1874,<sup>19</sup> which provides that able bodied male Indians receiving supplies pursuant to appropriation acts should perform useful labor "for the benefit of themselves, or of the tribe, at a reasonable rate, to be fixed by the agent in charge, and to an amount equal in value to the supplies to be delivered."

The popular outcry that would have followed the application of a similar rule to white holders of Government lands or pensions may well be imagined.

It is important to recognize that funds due to Indian tribes under treaties and agreements were viewed by the Indians either as commercial debts for value received or as indemnities due from a foe in war. The fact that such payments were otherwise viewed by the public and by many administrators helps to explain some of the bitter controversies which formally were decided on the field of battle and are now decided in the Court of Claims.

In numerous treaties, agreements, and statutes, the United States has agreed to pay money to an Indian tribe, in consideration of land cessions or other disposition of Indian property.<sup>20</sup> Where the tribal organization permitted, provision was frequently made that payment should go directly to the treasurer of the tribe, in other cases payments were to be made to chiefs, or to heads of families, or *per capita* to all adults, in some cases payment was to be made in goods or services.<sup>21</sup>

<sup>18</sup> See sec. 10 *supra*.

<sup>19</sup> 18 Stat. 140, 176 (extended by permanent legislation in sec. 9 of the Act of March 4, 1875, 18 Stat. 140, 549, 25 U. S. C. 197. See Chapter 4, sec. 10, Chapter 18, sec. 4.

<sup>20</sup> Art. 4 of Treaty of November 7, 1827, with Shawnee tribe, 7 Stat. 281, 285; Art. 4 of Treaty of October 27, 1842, with Potomac tribe, 7 Stat. 398, 401; Art. 3 of Treaty of September 10, 1856, with Rogue River tribe, 10 Stat. 918; Art. 8 of Treaty of May 12, 1861, with Menominee tribe, 10 Stat. 1064, 1066; Art. 8 of Treaty of May 10, 1864, with Kaskaskia and Pottaw and Piankashaw and Wenonah tribes, 10 Stat. 1062, 1068; Art. 4 of Treaty of June 9, 1864, with Miami tribe, 10 Stat. 1090, 1094; Art. 4 of Treaty of September 20, 1864, with Chickasaw Indians of Lake Superior and the Mississippi, 10 Stat. 1100, 1110; Arts. 8 and 4 of Treaty of September 3, 1810, with Stockbridge and Munsee tribes, 11 Stat. 777, 778; Art. 7 of Treaty of August 7, 1860, with Creek and Seminole tribes, 11 Stat. 668, 702; Art. 8 of Treaty of March 10, 1866, with Poncey tribe, 11 Stat. 975, 976; Art. 40 of Treaty of April 22, 1868, with Choctaw and Chickasaw, 14 Stat. 769, 780; Art. 11 of Treaty of October 1, 1869, with Sac and Foxes of the Mississippi, 15 Stat. 467, 470; Treaty of February 22, 1867, with Seneca mixed Seneca and Shawnee, Onondaga, Confederated Oneida, Kaskaskia, Weas, and Piankashaw, Miamis, Ottawa, Chickasaw, Potomac, and Roche de Boer, and certain Wyandottis, 15 Stat. 618; Art. of April 15, 1874, 18 Stat. 120 (Seminole), Act of February 19, 1875, 18 Stat. 830, 831 (Seneca Nation), Act of March 9, 1875, 18 Stat. 402, 413 (Oneida), Act of February 26, 1877, 18 Stat. 666 (Cherokee), Act of June 16, 1880, 21 Stat. 276, 248 (Cherokee Nation), Act of July 7, 1884, 22 Stat. 194, 212 (Creek Nation), Act of March 1, 1880, 26 Stat. 757, 769 (Muskogee or Creek Nation), Act of August 10, 1890, 26 Stat. 329 (Omaha tribe), Act of February 13, 1891, 26 Stat. 749, 752 (Sac and Fox and Iowa), Joint Resolution of March 21, 1894, 28 Stat. 670, 690 (Cherokee Nation), Act of February 7, 1908, 32 Stat. 803 (Cottville Indian Reservation), Act of August 26, 1922, 42 Stat. 832 (Agua Caliente Band).

<sup>21</sup> On the scope of obligations thereby assumed by the United States, see *United States v. Omaha Indians*, 259 U. S. 275, 281 (1920), and *United States v. Seminole Nation*, 298 U. S. 417 (1937).

Many of the early treaties provided for payments to be made in goods.<sup>22</sup>

Ordinarily payments promised in a treaty and paid in annual installments called annuities<sup>23</sup> were due to the tribe, and like obligations of one nation to another, were deemed satisfied when the tribal authorities had received the funds in question.<sup>24</sup> For the United States to have assumed to satisfy its obligation by direct payment to the individual members of the tribe would have been a departure from the canons of international law to which the Federal Government was, trying to assimilate its relationship with the Indian tribes. Furthermore payments to tribal authorities saved the Federal Government from the necessity of making difficult adjudications that might lead to dissatisfaction. On the other hand, payments to tribal authorities sometimes led to worse dissatisfactions on the part of individual members of the tribes who considered themselves discriminated against, and so the practice grew up of reserving to the United States, by treaty provision, the right to distribute to the members of the tribe the money or goods owing to the tribe.<sup>25</sup> Occasionally the treaty provided that this distribution was to be made on the basis of an agreement between the tribal authorities and the agents of the Federal Government.<sup>26</sup>

<sup>22</sup> See Chapter 9 *supra*, ¶ (7).

<sup>23</sup> Although it has long been the custom to make new appropriations each year, Congress has made appropriations to Indian tribes payable over extended periods. Act of April 21, 1866, 2 Stat. 407, 410; Act of March 4, 1810, 1 Stat. 517 ("annually for ever"), Act of January 9, 1837, 5 Stat. 135, Act of March 4, 1851, 12 Stat. 680 ("for five hundred dollars").

<sup>24</sup> To be paid annually to the said nations which annuities shall be permanent).

<sup>25</sup> There was no self-evident that most of the early treaties did not mention the fact. A few treaties, however, did make explicit the understanding that distribution of payments made to the tribe was to be in the hands of the tribal authorities. Treaty of September 1, 1846, with the Menominee Nation of Indiana, 7 Stat. 461, 462; Treaty of May 22, 1865, with the Mississippi bands of Chickasaw Indians, 10 Stat. 1105. Other treaties emphasized this understanding without making it explicit by providing that the United States reserve the right to apportion annuities among the different bands or tribes with which a single treaty was made, but reserving no similar right to apportion funds within a band or tribe. Treaty of July 27, 1813, with the Comanche, Kiowa, and Apache tribes or nations of Indiana, 10 Stat. 1011; Treaty of September 10, 1864, with the Chickasaw Indians of Lake Superior and the Mississippi, 10 Stat. 1100.

<sup>26</sup> Art. 3 of this treaty provided simply that the United States might "divide the aid annuity among the individuals of the said tribe." Treaty of December 30, 1865, with the Piankashaw, 7 Stat. 100. In the Treaty of January 9, 1837, with the Chickasaw, 5 Stat. 210, *per capita* distribution is promised in order to avoid "any dissensions which may have arisen in the Cherokee Nation in consequence of six thousand dollars of their annuity having been appropriated annually, for sixteen years, by some of the chiefs for the support of their schools." Other treaties promulgated equal distribution *per capita*. Treaty of October 4, 1842, with the Chickasaw Indians of the Mississippi and Lake Superior, 7 Stat. 691; Treaty of January 4, 1845, with the Creek and Seminole tribes of Indiana, 9 Stat. 821; Treaty of March 17, 1842, with the Wyandott Indians of Indiana, 11 Stat. 681. Little difference gradually evolved, a more comprehensive right in the President of the United States to determine how money due to the Indian tribe should be paid to the members of the tribe or expended for their use and benefit. Treaty of March 16, 1845, with the Omaha tribe of Indians, 10 Stat. 1043; Treaty of May 6, 1851, with the Delaware tribe of Indians, 10 Stat. 1048; Treaty of June 9, 1864, with the Miami tribe of Indiana, 10 Stat. 1098; Treaty of October 17, 1865, with the Blackfoot and other tribes of Indians, 11 Stat. 687; Treaty of January 24, 1875, with the Dacotah and other tribes of Indians in Territory of Washington, 13 Stat. 127; Treaty of January 26, 1895, with the Shoshone, 12 Stat. 695; Treaty of January 13, 1895, with the Akahia tribe of Indians, 12 Stat. 687; Treaty of June 26, 1895, with the Confederated tribes of Indians in Middle Oregon, 12 Stat. 903; Treaty of July 1, 1895, with the Quapaw and other tribes of Indians, 12 Stat. 974; Treaty of February 15, 1891, with the Confederated tribes of Arapaho and Cheyenne Indians, 12 Stat. 1163; Treaty of March 6, 1895, with the Omaha tribe of Indians, 14 Stat. 607; Treaty of September 20, 1864, with the Great and Little Osage Indians, 14 Stat. 687; Treaty of March 2, 1866, with the Cheyenne Indians, 14 Stat. 615.

<sup>27</sup> See, for example, Treaty of September 20, 1864, with the Sioux Nation of Indiana, 7 Stat. 688; Treaty of October 16, 1848, with the

SOME STATES merely provide that funds shall be deposited in the United States Treasury and be subject to appropriations by the Congress for a designated group or tribe of Indians.<sup>67</sup>

Act of June 7, 1924, sec 1, 43 Stat 598 (Pyramid Lake Indian Reservation)

<sup>100</sup> See PAGE 18-20, supra.



said railway company pay to the Secretary of the Interior, for the benefit of the particular nations or tribes through whose lands said line may be located, a specified sum,"<sup>1</sup> which is frequently fixed at \$50 per mile of road. In a few instances, similar language referring to a definite tribe is used instead of the more general language above noted. A few statutes provide that the railway company shall pay the required sum "to the Secretary of the Interior, for the benefit of the particular nations or tribes or individuals through whose lands said line may be located."<sup>2</sup> A few such statutes provide simply for payment directly to the tribe concerned.<sup>3</sup> Other statutes provide for payment without specifying the manner of such payment.<sup>4</sup>

In 1879 the matter of Indian right of way, hitherto dealt with in piecemeal legislation, was covered by a general statute<sup>5</sup> which provided

SEC. 6 That where a railroad is constructed under the provisions of this Act through the Indian Territory there shall be paid by the railroad company to the Secretary of the Interior, for the benefit of the particular nation or tribe through whose lands the road may be located, such an annual charge as may be permitted by the Secretary of the Interior, not less than fifteen dollars for each mile of road, the same to be paid so long as said land shall be owned and occupied by such nation or tribe, which payment shall be in addition to the compensation otherwise required herein.

The various general statutes authorizing the leasing of Indian lands, and other forms of disposition of Indian tribal property which have been analyzed in earlier sections of this chapter, generally provide that the proceeds from such transactions shall be deposited to the credit of the tribe concerned.

The following table shows the various general statutes directing that specified forms of tribal income be deposited to the credit of the tribe.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Act of July 4, 1884, 28 Stat. 97, 71, Act of July 4, 1884, 28 Stat. 74, Act of February 18, 1888, 27 Stat. 33, 37, Act of May 14, 1888, 25 Stat. 140, 142, Act of May 30, 1888, 25 Stat. 102, 108, Act of June 20, 1888, 25 Stat. 206, 207, Act of June 21, 1890, 26 Stat. 170, 171, Act of June 30, 1890, 26 Stat. 184, 185-186, Act of September 20, 1900, 26 Stat. 495, 497, Act of February 24, 1901, 26 Stat. 781, 785, Act of March 3, 1891, 20 Stat. 844, 846, Act of February 27, 1891, 27 Stat. 487, 489, Act of February 27, 1893, 27 Stat. 492, 496, Act of March 1, 1893, 27 Stat. 524, 525-526, Act of December 21, 1891, 28 Stat. 22, 24, Act of August 4, 1894, 28 Stat. 229, 231, Act of April 8, 1898, 29 Stat. 102, 104, Act of January 29, 1907, 30 Stat. 502, 504, Act of March 28, 1898, 30 Stat. 441, 442. The provision in question is found in sec. 5 of each of the foregoing statutes.

<sup>2</sup> Act of January 16, 1889, sec. 5, 25 Stat. 617, 649 (White Mountain band of Chippewas), Act of February 28, 1889, sec. 5, 25 Stat. 684, 685 (Tonkian Indian Reservation), Act of March 2, 1898, sec. 5, 29 Stat. 40, 41 (Choctaw).

<sup>3</sup> Act of March 18, 1890, sec. 5, 29 Stat. 69, 71, Act of March 30, 1890, sec. 5, 29 Stat. 80, 82, Act of February 28, 1890, sec. 4, 29 Stat. 912, 914.

<sup>4</sup> Act of April 23, 1890, 29 Stat. 100 ("Deposit with the treasury of the tribe to which the lands belong").

<sup>5</sup> Act of April 21, 1884, sec. 4, 23 Stat. 90, 91, Act of July 20, 1886, sec. 2, 25 Stat. 750, 851 (Payallup), Act of March 2, 1889, sec. 2, 25 Stat. 1010 (Loach Lake and White River Indian Reservations), Act of February 20, 1898, 27 Stat. 486 (Payallup), Act of July 18, 1894, sec. 2, 28 Stat. 112 (White Mtn. Chippewa, Loach Lake, Chippewa, and Fond du Lac Reservations), Act of August 28, 1894, sec. 2, 28 Stat. 489 (Loach Lake, Chippewa, and Winniebagish Reservations), Act of March 28, 1898, 30 Stat. 77.

<sup>6</sup> Act of March 2, 1890, 30 Stat. 900, 902.

<sup>7</sup> Special acts applying to particular tribes make similar provisions for depositing proceeds of leases, etc., in the United States Treasury to the credit of the designated tribe. Act of April 10, 1914, 37 Stat. 36 (homesteaders' payments on Coteau d'Alene Reservation), Act of August 6, 1910, 36 Stat. 446 (sale of Kiowa town site reserve), Act of May 28, 1908, 35 Stat. 208 (sale of Chippewa timber), Act of May 20, 1908, 35 Stat. 459 (sale of Spokane timber lands), Act of February 18, 1910, 37 Stat. 680 (Kiowa, Comanche, and Apache), Act of June 17, 1910, 36 Stat. 668 (Cheyenne Arapaho).

U S O No	Source of income	Date of act	Statute citation	Provision
28 311	Right of way	May 2, 1890 as amended Feb. 28, 1902	30 Stat. 911	"Payment to the Secretary of the Interior for the benefit of the tribe or nation."
29 110	Right of way for telegraph, etc.	May 4, 1901 sec. 2	31 Stat. 198	"Pay to the Secretary of the Interior for the use and benefit of the Indians, such an annual sum as he may determine."
29 521	Right of way for pipelines	May 11, 1901, as amended Mar. 2, 1917, sec. 1	31 Stat. 95, 40 Stat. 671	"Pay to the Secretary of the Interior, for the use and benefit of the Indians, such annual sum as he may determine."
29 330	Acquisition of land for rail ways for mail and revenue	May 5, 1900	31 Stat. 781	Deposited in the Treasury of the United States to the credit of the tribe or tribes."
29 307	Sale of timber	June 26, 1910 sec. 7	36 Stat. 837	"Shall be used for the benefit of the Indians of the reservation in such manner as he [Secretary of the Interior] may direct."
29 190	Sale of agency electric site	Apr. 12, 1924	19 Stat. 63	"Deposited in the Treasury of the United States to the credit of the Indians owning the same."
29 400a	Mining lease of agency reserves	Apr. 17, 1920	41 Stat. 300	"Deposited in the Treasury of the United States to the credit of the Indians for whose benefit the lands are reserved subject to appropriation by Congress for educational work among the Indians or in paying expenses of administration of reserves."
16 616	Sale of burnt timber on Public Domain	May 4, 1915 as amended July 3, 1926	37 Stat. 1015 44 Stat. 691	"Transferred to the credit of such tribe or other tribe entitled or distributed as by law provided."
30 80	Agricultural use of lands on surplus coal lands	Feb. 27, 1917 sec. 1	40 Stat. 911, 915	"Shall be paid into the Treasury of the United States to the credit of the same land under the same conditions and limitations as are or may be prescribed by law for the disposition of the proceeds arising from the disposal of other surplus lands in such Indian reservation."
16 610	Water power in coal-land	June 10, 1920 sec. 17	41 Stat. 1061, 1072	"Shall be paid to the credit of the Indians of such reservation."

In addition to the foregoing specific provisions, there are other currently effective statutes relating to the leasing of Indian lands which do not specify the manner in which the receipts are to be handled.<sup>8</sup>

The Act of March 3, 1853, as amended,<sup>9</sup> provides

All miscellaneous revenues derived from Indian reservations, agencies, and schools, except those of the Five Civilized Tribes, and the result of the labor of any member of such tribe, which are not required by existing law to be otherwise disposed of, shall be covered into the Treasury of the United States under the caption "Indian moneys, proceeds of labor", and are hereby made available for expenditure, in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior, for the benefit of the Indian tribes, agencies, and schools on whose behalf they are collected, subject, how-

<sup>8</sup> Act of February 23, 1881, sec. 8, 26 Stat. 705, 25 U S C 897 (grazing leases), Act of August 18, 1884, sec. 1, 28 Stat. 805, 25 U S C 402 (farming leases), Act of July 8, 1898, 44 Stat. 894, 25 U S C 402a (lease of fringing land), Act of May 11, 1898, 32 Stat. 847, 25 U S C 890a (mining leases).

<sup>9</sup> Sec. 1, 25 Stat. 590, as amended by Act of March 2, 1887, 24 Stat. 489, Act of May 17, 1926, sec. 1, 44 Stat. 680, Act of May 29, 1928, sec. 1, 46 Stat. 986, 691, 25 U S C A. 155 (Supp.)

ever, to the limitations as to tribal funds imposed by section 27 of the Act of May 18, 1916 (Thirty-ninth Statutes at Large, page 158).<sup>12</sup>

That this act does not limit the power of an Indian tribe to receive payments based on use of tribal land was the view taken by the Department of the Interior in holding that tribes organized under section 16 of the Act of June 18, 1934, but not incorporated under section 17 might deposit such receipts in their own treasury. This conclusion was concurred in by the Comptroller General. The position of the Interior Department and of the Comptroller General is set forth in Opinion of the Comptroller General dated June 30, 1937,<sup>13</sup> from which the following excerpts are taken:

"Under the act of May 27, 1926 (44 Stat. 500), amending the act of March 3, 1883 (22 Stat. 790), governing the use of revenues received by officials or employees of the Interior Department, and its no application to such payments is very lawfully made to tribal officers under the provisions of the act of June 18, 1934, and constitutions adopted thereunder and approved by the Secretary of the Interior. The legislative history of the act of 1883 and the act of 1926 shows that these statutes were designed to control and regulate departmental receipts and accounts. They were not intended to regulate or to prohibit payments made directly to tribal officers."

"The question of whether an organized tribe may enter into negotiations and agreements respecting the use of tribal land and receiving payment to a regularly bonded tribal officer, for the use of such agreements, is primarily an administrative question to be determined by the Secretary of the Interior in consideration of such factors as the experience of the Indian tribe in handling funds, the amount of the funds involved, the extent of the activity undertaken by tribal officers or other members of the tribe in developing sources of tribal revenue, and similar factors."

"Under Article IX, section 3 of the Constitution of the Gila River Pima Maricopa Indian Community, those community funds which are not assigned to particular individuals for private benefit or to groups of individuals operating as districts may be used by the community or may be leased by the council to members of the community, rentals to accrue to the community treasury to be used for the support of the help or other public purposes. This provision empowers prior administrative regulations requiring all leases to be approved by the superintendent of the agency and further requiring that all payments made on the leases should be deposited in the United States Treasury. Under the present constitutional provisions the receipts in question are not revenues or receipts of the United States, the agreements from which they arise are not payments approved by the superintendent and consequently such receipts are not dictated by the act of May 17, 1926, or regulations issued thereunder, with respect to the accounting and deposit of tribal funds."

#### CASE NO. 1

"Article VIII, Section 3 of the Constitution of the Chippewa River Sioux Tribe, above cited, is, in part: 'Tribal funds may be leased by the tribal council, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, for such periods of time as are permitted by law.' Nothing is said in this section or in any other section of the constitution as to whether rentals paid under such leases shall be paid to the disbursing agent of the reservation for deposit in the United States Treasury or to the bonded treasurer of the tribe for deposit in the tribal treasury. Presumably this is left, like the other terms of the lease, to the discretion of the Tribal Council and the Secretary of the Interior."

"The additional powers granted in the new act do not expressly mention the control by the tribe of their own funds, and there is, therefore, some doubt whether such authorization was intended. However, in view of the broad purposes of the act as shown in its legislative history, to extend to Indians the fundamental rights of public life, liberty, and local self-government, and their having been shown the fact that some of the power so granted by the new act would require the use of tribal funds for their accomplishment—being necessary incidents of such powers—the fact that the act of June 25, 1916, 39 Stat. 1948, provides that section 20 of the Permanent Appropriation Report (44 Stat. 121), shall not apply to funds held in trust for individual Indians, associations of individual Indians or for Indian corporations chartered under the act of June 18, 1911, this office would not be required to object to the provisions suggested in your memorandum for the holding of tribal funds of Indian tribes organized pursuant to the said act of June 18, 1911."

Whether the conclusion in which the Secretary of the Interior and the Comptroller General agreed, in the case of an organized tribe, applies equally to unorganized tribe remains uncertain. Implicit in this problem is the question of whether legislation such as the 1931 act has any application to funds in the possession of an Indian tribe. To this question we shall return in the final section of this chapter.

#### B MANNER OF MAKING PAYMENTS TO TRIBE

Although a good deal of the foregoing discussion is dealt in an entirely with the manner as well as the source of payments made to an Indian tribe, it remains to note the various general statutes which have regulated the manner of making such payments. Generally such statutes have been limited to details of payment not covered by the treaty or act under which the payment is due. But in recent years questions have arisen as to the compatibility between the statutes creating the debt and the statutes determining the manner of its discharge.

For the most part, these statutes are designed to guard against fraud and misuses in the distribution of funds and supplies. The Act of June 18, 1911,<sup>14</sup> contained two general provisions covering the payment of Indian annuities:

Sec. 11. *And be it further enacted* That the payment of all annuities or other sums stipulated by treaty to be made to any Indian tribe, shall be made in the checks of such tribe, or to such person as said tribe shall appoint, or if any tribe shall appropriate their annuities for the purpose of education, or to any other specific use, then to such person or persons as said tribe shall designate.

Sec. 12. *And be it further enacted* That it shall be lawful for the President of the United States, at the request of any Indian tribe to which any annuity shall be payable in money to cause the same to be paid in goods, purchased as provided in the next section of this act. (16 Stat. 737.)

As subsequently amended,<sup>15</sup> these provisions are embodied in the United States Code in the following form:

§ 311. Payment of annuities and distribution of goods. The payment of all moneys and the distribution of all goods stipulated to be furnished to any Indians, or tribe of Indians, shall be made in one of the following ways, as the President or the Secretary of the Interior may direct: First. In the checks of a tribe, to the tribe.

Second. In cases where the improvement of the tribe or the individuals intended to be benefited, or any treaty stipulation, requires the intervention of an agent, then to such person as the tribe shall appoint to receive such moneys or goods, or to such person or persons be appointed, then upon the joint order or receipt of such persons.

<sup>12</sup> 48 Stat. 715.

<sup>13</sup> Act of March 9, 1917, sec. 3, D Stat. 203, Act of August 30, 1922, sec. 3, 19 Stat. 41, 56, Act of July 17, 1876, sec. 2 and 3, 19 Stat. 876, 880, 25 U. S. C. 111.

<sup>14</sup> In its code form, the reference is to "secs. 123 and 142 of this title" 16 Stat. 737.

<sup>15</sup> Material in quotations is quoted by the Comptroller General from the Interior Department letter of submission.

Third To the heads of the families and to the individuals entitled to participate in the moneys or goods.

Fourth By consent of the tribe, such moneys or goods may be applied directly, under such regulations, not inconsistent with treaty stipulations, as may be prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior to such purposes as will best promote the happiness and prosperity of the members of the tribe, and will encourage able bodied Indians in the habits of industry and peace.

Various other early statutes still in force require civil and military officers to certify to the actual delivery of goods owing to Indians,<sup>60</sup> authorize the President to require that payments and deliveries be made by the various superintendents,<sup>61</sup> permit payment of moneys in coin,<sup>62</sup> or goods (at the request of the tribe)<sup>63</sup> authorize Indians to visit of use or over to receive moneys,<sup>64</sup> require the Secretary of the Interior to designate disbursement officers to make per cent payments,<sup>65</sup> extend these safeguards to the payment of judgment moneys,<sup>66</sup> require the presence of the "original package" when goods are distributed,<sup>67</sup> and require reports as to the status of tribal funds at all times generally,<sup>68</sup> reimbursable accounts,<sup>69</sup> and attendance records for the occasions when goods are distributed.<sup>70</sup>

The foregoing statutes are designed primarily to protect the Indians against loss or dishonest appropriation. A separate body of legislation is directed against immorality on the part of the Indians.

Section J of the Act of March 3, 1877,<sup>71</sup> as it appears today in title 25 of the United States Code provides:

§ 130 Withholding of moneys or goods on account of intoxicating liquors. No moneys, or moneys or goods, shall be paid or distributed to Indians while they are under the influence of any description of intoxicating liquor, nor while there are good and sufficient reasons leading the officers or agents, whose duty it may be to make such payments or distribution, to believe that there is any species of intoxicating liquor within convenient reach of the Indians; nor until the chiefs and headmen of the tribe shall have pledged themselves to use all their influence and to make all proper exertions to prevent the introduction and sale of such liquor in their country.

The Act of March 2, 1907,<sup>72</sup> still in force, forbids the payment of treaty funds to an Indian tribe which, since the last distribution of funds, "has engaged in hostilities against the United States, or against its citizens \* \* \*". The Act of April 10, 1880, also still in effect, forbids delivery of goods pursuant to treaty to chiefs who have violated a treaty.<sup>73</sup>

We have already noted that the Act of June 22, 1874,<sup>74</sup> required

<sup>60</sup> Act of June 20, 1914, 4 Stat. 716, 747, R. S. § 2088, 25 U. S. C. 112.

<sup>61</sup> Act of March 3, 1867, sec. 3, 11 Stat. 169, R. S. § 2089, 25 U. S. C. 111.

<sup>62</sup> Act of March 8, 1866, sec. 3, 13 Stat. 541, 651, R. S. § 2081, 25 U. S. C. 114.

<sup>63</sup> Act of June 30, 1884, sec. 12, 4 Stat. 785, 787, R. S. § 2082, 25 U. S. C. 115.

<sup>64</sup> Act of March 1, 1880, sec. 8, 20 Stat. 924, 947, 25 U. S. C. 118.

<sup>65</sup> Act of June 10, 1880, sec. 1, 20 Stat. 821, 836, 25 U. S. C. 117.

<sup>66</sup> Act of March 3, 1911, sec. 28, 36 Stat. 1058, 1077, 25 U. S. C. 118.

<sup>67</sup> Act of April 10, 1880, 16 Stat. 18, 39, R. S. § 2090, 25 U. S. C. 132.

<sup>68</sup> Act of March 3, 1911, sec. 27, 36 Stat. 1058, 1077, 25 U. S. C. 143.

<sup>69</sup> Act of April 4, 1910, sec. 1, 36 Stat. 268, 270, amended June 10, 1921, sec. 304, 42 Stat. 20, 24, 25 U. S. C. 147.

<sup>70</sup> Act of February 14, 1878, 17 Stat. 487, 493, R. S. § 2109, 25 U. S. C. 149.

<sup>71</sup> 20 Stat. 208, R. S. § 2087, 25 U. S. C. 130.

<sup>72</sup> 14 Stat. 492, 515, R. S. § 2100, 25 U. S. C. 127.

<sup>73</sup> 18 Stat. 13, 39, R. S. § 2101, 25 U. S. C. 138.

<sup>74</sup> 18 Stat. 140, made permanent by Act of March 3, 1875, sec. 8, 18 Stat. 549, 25 U. S. C. 137.

the beneficiaries of obligations from the United States to perform useful labor in order to secure the sums or supplies owing them. At various times provisions were made that tribes at war with the United States should not receive moneys or appropriations. Thus, section 2 of the Appropriation Act of March 3, 1875,<sup>75</sup> provided:

That none of the appropriations herein made, or of any appropriations made for the Indian service, shall be paid to any band of Indians or any portion of any band while it was with the United States or with the white citizens of any of the States or Territories. (17-440)

Section 1 of the same act, now embodied in the United States Code as section 126 of title 25, provides:

The Secretary of the Interior is authorized to withhold from any tribe of Indians who may hold any captives other than Indians any moneys due them from the United States until said captives shall be surrendered to the tribal authorities of the United States.

A third type of statute governing tribal payments and distributions is concerned with the issue of tribal payments versus individual payments. During the allotment period a persistent effort was made to individualize moneys and funds, for approximately the same reasons that created the desire to individualize land.

The Appropriation Act of March 3, 1877,<sup>76</sup> contained a direction to each agent having supplies to distribute—

to make out rolls of the Indians entitled to supplies at the agency, with the names of the Indians and of the heads of families or lodges, with the number in each family or lodge, and to give out supplies to the heads of families, and not the heads of tribes or bands, and not to give out supplies for a greater length of time than in one week in advance. *Provided, however*, That the Commo- nion of Indian Affairs in 17, in his discretion, issue supplies for a greater period than one week to such Indians as are perceptibly located upon their reservation and engaged in agriculture.

The purpose of this provision was apparently to break down the tribal control that chiefs might exercise through the distribution of food and clothing and to transfer the prestige attached to such offices to the Indian agents.

The Act of March 2, 1907,<sup>77</sup> authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to apportion "tribal or trust funds on deposit in the Treasury of the United States" among the members of the tribe concerned.<sup>78</sup>

General segregation and distribution of tribal funds to members appearing on "final rolls" made by the Secretary of the Interior was authorized by section 28 of the Act of May 25, 1918,<sup>79</sup> and section 1 of the Act of June 30, 1919.<sup>80</sup> The repeal of the distribution features of the latter statute by the Act of June 24, 1938,<sup>81</sup> parallels the termination of the allotment policy.

<sup>75</sup> 18 Stat. 420.

<sup>76</sup> Sec. 2, 19 Stat. 271, 293.

<sup>77</sup> 24 Stat. 1221, 26 U. S. C. 130. See Chapter 4, sec. 18, Chapter 10, sec. 4.

<sup>78</sup> Sec. 2 of this act provides for payments to helpless Indians. 95 Stat. 1,221, amended by Act of May 18, 1918, 39 Stat. 128, 25 U. S. C. 121.

<sup>79</sup> 40 Stat. 581, 691, 25 U. S. C. 192 (segregation of funds). To the effect that the preparation of a "final roll" under congressional direction cannot, in the nature of the case, prevent a later Congress, from authorizing a new roll, see *Op. Sol. I. D.*, 48-7760, January 25, 1955 (Creek). And see Chapter 4, sec. 14, Chapter 10, sec. 4.

<sup>80</sup> 41 Stat. 8, 27 U. S. C. 188 (enrollment).

<sup>81</sup> 62 Stat. 1037, 25 U. S. C. 192, 192a. See Chapter 4, sec. 18, Chapter 10, sec. 4.

Other miscellaneous statutes relating to the handling of funds due from the United States to Indian tribes (give priority to

1898 B. & 2097 25 U. S. C. 122 (Limitation on application of tribal funds). Act of May 28 1916 sec. 27 49 Stat. 123, 358 25 U. S. C. 123 (Expenditure from tribal funds without specific appropriations). Act of April 13 1926 44 Stat. 212 25 U. S. C. 123 (Supp.) (Tribal funds, use to purchase in return for production of tribal property). Act of May 9 1918 sec. 1 52 Stat. 291 47 Stat. 25 U. S. C. 123a (Supp.) (Tribal funds for treatment and expenses). Act of May 24 1922 42 Stat. 752 797 25 U. S. C. 124 (Expenditure from tribal funds of Five Civilized Tribes without specific appropriations). Act of June 10 1919 sec. 17 41 Stat. 10 20 25 U. S. C. 125 (Expenditure of monies of tribes of Empire). B. & 2092 25 U. S. C. 131 (Advances to distributing officers).

methods of accounting procedure and the enforcement of appropriation limitations.<sup>100</sup>

Act of March 1 1907 34 Stat. 2035 106 25 U. S. C. 134 (Appropriations for supplies, including merchandise). Act of March 1 1907 34 Stat. 129 150 25 U. S. C. 135 (Supplies distributed on a fiscal deficiency). Act of July 1 1898 sec. 7 40 Stat. 571 70 25 U. S. C. 136 (Commitment of tribes and other supplies). Act of March 1 1907 34 Stat. 1076 25 U. S. C. 139 (Appropriations for subsistence). Act of March 1 1907 34 Stat. 1005 106 25 U. S. C. 140 (Provision of appropriations for employees and supplies). Act of February 12 1927 sec. 1 44 Stat. 934 939 25 U. S. C. 149 (Supp.) (Appropriations for supplies transferred to Indian Service supply fund expenditure).

## SECTION 24 TRIBAL RIGHT TO EXPEND FUNDS

Since the United States and the Indian tribe have each an interest in tribal funds held in the Treasury of the United States, the normal method of disposing of such funds has been in common consent of the tribe and the Federal Government. So far as treaty funds are concerned, treaty provisions, many of which are still in force, embodied a common agreement concerning the disposition of tribal monies. Following the treaty period, agreements with Indian tribes ratified by act of Congress, served a similar purpose. In recent years various new formulae have made their appearance embodying, in one way or another, the agreement of the tribe and the United States concerning expenditure of tribal funds.

Judgment monies awarded to the Blackfeet Indians by the Court of Claims have been made "available for disposition by the tribal council of said Indians, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, in accordance with the constitution and bylaws of the Blackfeet Tribe."<sup>101</sup> Other statutes provided for the expenditure of tribal funds for objects designated or approved by the tribal council concerned.<sup>102</sup> Perhaps the earliest of such provisions is found in section 3 of the Appropriation Act of February 17 1878,<sup>103</sup> providing for the diversion of various appropriations to alternative uses "within the discretion of the President, and with the consent of said tribes, expressed in the usual manner."<sup>104</sup> This provision was repeated in subsequent appropriation acts<sup>105</sup> and made permanent by the Act of March 1 1907.<sup>106</sup>

There is no implied agreement between federal and tribal authorities in acts authorizing the Secretary of the Interior to appropriate money for the expenses of tribal councils,<sup>107</sup> tribal delegates,<sup>108</sup> and tribal attorneys.<sup>109</sup>

There are, of course, a great number of statutes authorizing the expenditure of tribal funds without express reference to the wishes of the tribe,<sup>110</sup> and the problem of federal power to expend

tribal funds without Indian consent is dealt with elsewhere.<sup>111</sup> It may be noted, however, that the omission of express reference to tribal consent in appropriation provisions relating to tribal funds does not necessarily imply the absence of such consent. In fact many provisions for the appropriation of tribal funds are sought at the request of the tribe concerned, although no reference to this fact appears on the face of the statute.

The present state of the law with respect to the power of an Indian tribe to expend funds or dispose of other personal property held by the United States in trust for the tribe is that any such expenditure must be authorized by act of Congress.<sup>112</sup> The situation is analogous to that of private trust where the trustee must consent to expenditures by the beneficiary out of the trust fund. In the case of the trust funds of an Indian tribe, the power to determine the propriety of expenditures is vested in Congress and only in a very few cases has Congress delegated its power of decision to administrative authorities.<sup>113</sup>

The history of Indian appropriation legislation shows a continuous struggle between two principles: on the one hand, it is

June 28 1906 34 Stat. 547 (Minomame). Act of May 28 1920 41 Stat. 625 (Pie (Red Lake Tribes)).

Expenditure from tribal funds for a wide diversity of purposes could not be left to the tribe are authorized in a vast number of statutes. See, for example, Act of January 31 1877 19 Stat. 221 (Ojaga). The cost of various improvements upon tribal lands has been met out of tribal funds sometimes with a provision that the cost of the improvement shall be repaid to the tribe by the individual Indian benefited. Act of February 21 1921 sec. 2 41 Stat. 1105 1108 (Bad Lake Indian Reservation).

Federal appropriations for improvements upon tribal lands have frequently been made subject to obligations against future tribal funds or against such funds as might accrue from disposal of the lands improved. Act of July 9 1910 30 Stat. 795 (Ojaga and Tobacco Reservation). Act of March 1 1921 sec. 6 41 Stat. 1175 1187 (Fort Belknap). Act of February 14 1923 42 Stat. 1246 (Penne). Act of February 9 1924 43 Stat. 810 (Chippewa).

Various other statutes authorize payments from tribal funds to individual members of the tribe who have particular claims upon tribal property. Act of April 29 1902 32 Stat. 177 (Cheyenne and Arapaho). Act of June 9 1924 43 Stat. 277 (Red Lake Indians). Act of January Resolution of February 11 1906 40 Stat. 669.

Certain tribal funds have been made available for loans to individual members of the tribe. Act of March 4 1925 44 Stat. 1302 (Crow). Act of May 14 1935 48 Stat. 244 (Crow). Between 1910 and 1925 a number of statutes were enacted appropriating tribal funds, or federal funds, to be reimbursed out of future tribal funds for loans, bawls, gambling, public schools, and other public improvements. Act of June 28 1916 40 Stat. 537 (Poncha). Act of August 21 1918 39 Stat. 631 (Spokane). Act of February 20 1917 40 Stat. 920 (Navajo). Act of June 7 1924 43 Stat. 607 (Navajo). Act of February 26 1925 43 Stat. 994 (Navajo).

<sup>100</sup> See Chapter V, sec. 63, 10.  
<sup>101</sup> Funds other than trust funds may be expended without such authorization. See Chapter 6, sec. 10.  
<sup>102</sup> 25 U. S. C. 150, 140.

<sup>101</sup> Joint Resolution of June 20 1880 49 Stat. 1866. Second Act of March 2 1880 25 Stat. 1012 (Yankton).

<sup>102</sup> Act of June 20 1936 49 Stat. 1912 (Crow). Act of March 1 1929 45 Stat. 1439 (Klamath). Act of May 31 1919 sec. 1 48 Stat. 108 (Pawnee).

<sup>103</sup> 20 Stat. 295 315.

<sup>104</sup> See, for example, Act of May 11 1880 sec. 7 21 Stat. 214, 138.

<sup>105</sup> 34 Stat. 1015, 1016, 25 U. S. C. 140.

<sup>106</sup> Act of March 2 1929 45 Stat. 1496 (Crow). Act of June 1 1928, 72 Stat. 608 (Klamath).

<sup>107</sup> Act of March 9 1881 21 Stat. 485, 455 (Miami, Pottaw, Menominee, and Shawanese). Joint Resolution of June 7 1924 43 Stat. 607 (Fort Peck). Joint Resolution of May 10 1920 44 Stat. 408 (Fort Peck). Act of June 14 1920 44 Stat. 741 (Klamath).

<sup>108</sup> Act of April 11 1908 35 Stat. 49 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of June 26 1914 43 Stat. 1128 (New Peace).

<sup>109</sup> See, for example, Act of March 4 1879 17 Stat. 627 (New Peace). Act of June 27 1907 32 Stat. 400 (Chippewa of Minnesota). Act of



with respect to the disposition of tribal moneys and other property may hereby note:

- (1) Limitations contained in tribal constitutions.<sup>14</sup>
- (2) Limitations contained in tribal charters.<sup>15</sup>

<sup>14</sup> See, for example, the following provisions of the constitution and bylaws of the Hopalong tribe (approved December 17, 1948):

ART VI Section 1. The financial affairs of the tribe shall have the following powers:

(c) To deposit all Tribal Council funds to the credit of the Hopalong tribe in an established bank known as the Hopalong Tribe, of the Indian Affairs Agency, such funds to be expended only upon the recommendation of the Tribal Council in record and with a budget listing prior approval of the Secretary of the Interior.

BYLAWS OF THE HOPALONG TRIBE OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

Article 1—Duties of Officers

Section 1. *President*—He "The President shall accept, accept, accept (a) moneys and demands all funds in the custody of the Tribal Council. He shall deposit all funds in such deposits as the Council shall direct and shall make and preserve a faithful record of such funds and shall report on all receipts and expenditures and the control and source of all funds in his possession and custody at such times as requested by the Tribal Council. He shall not give out or dispose of any funds in his possession or custody except in accordance with a resolution duly passed by the Council. The books and records of the President shall be audited if it is not done earlier by a committee in action employed by the Council and at such other times as the Council at the time of the meeting of the tribe may direct. The President shall be required to give a bond satisfactory to the Tribal Council and to the Council of the Indian Affairs. Until the President is bonded the Tribal Council may make such provision for the custody and disbursement of funds as shall seem to them worthy and proper, disbursement and use.

<sup>15</sup> See, for example, the following provisions from sec. 5 of the constitution of the Guadalupe Springs and Koolman tribes of the Flathead Reservation, dated April 25, 1946:

1. The tribe subject to any restrictions contained in the Constitution and laws of the United States, as in the constitution and bylaws of the tribe shall have the following corporate powers, in addition to any powers already conferred or granted by the tribal constitution and bylaws:

(b) To purchase title by gift request or otherwise own hold, manage, operate and dispose of property of every description real and personal subject to the following limitations:

1. No distribution of corporate property to members shall be made except out of net income.

(d) To borrow money from the Indian credit fund in accordance with section 10 of the act of June 18, 1946 (48 Stat. 794) or from any other governmental agency or from any member of the tribe in connection with the tribe and to use such funds directly for productive tribal enterprise or to loan in money thus borrowed to individual members or associations of members of the tribe. Provided That the amount of indebtedness to which the tribe may subject itself shall not exceed \$100,000 except with the express approval of the Secretary at the Interior.

(f) To make and perform contracts and agreements of every description not inconsistent with law or with any provisions of the charter with any person or persons, or corporation, with any municipality of any country, or with the United States, or the State of Montana, including agreements with the State of Montana for the rendition of public

14 Limitations contained in tribal land agreements.<sup>16</sup>

14 Limitations contained in tribal trust agreements.<sup>17</sup>

The grant of funds to Indian tribes for particular uses under the Emergency Appropriation Act of April 8, 1937<sup>18</sup> raised additional questions as to the powers of an Indian tribe in handling funds. In response to the question put by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs whether an Indian tribe might use the proceeds of rentals of land improved through rehabilitation grants to finance additional construction projects or to use of general tribal expenses or to make per capita payments, the Solicitor of the Interior Department ruled:

4. When money has been granted to an Indian tribe to be used for a particular purpose, e. g., the development of springs on tribal land or the construction of houses, the Presidential letter above set forth imposes no duty on the tribe when once the money has been properly expended. The fact that such expenditures may increase tribal income from the sale of products of houses on tribal land, or tribal income from other enterprises, does not subject a part of tribal income or all of it to any lien on the part of the Federal Government. Such income, therefore, is received and it is disposed by the Indian tribe in any manner not prohibited by Federal law or by the constitution, bylaws or charter of the tribe. While the tribe has specifically agreed to use such rentals or income for a specific purpose, it is of course without the power of a tribe to make through its tribal council or other officers, that tribal income available to the tribe shall be used only for designated purposes not inconsistent with law.

Following this determination, the Indian Office entered into trust agreements with various Indian tribes under which the Indian tribe became trustee of the funds granted and the proceeds thereof for the benefit of needy Indians entitled to the benefits of the act in question.<sup>19</sup>

Various and including conflicts with the United States as the State of Montana or any agency of either for the development of the power site within the reservation. *Provided* That all contracts involving the reservation of money by the corporation in excess of \$5,000 in any one fiscal year or involving the development of water power sites within the reservation shall be subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior or his duly authorized representative.

(c) To pledge or assign interests in future tribal income due to be received due to the tribe under any notes, leases or other contracts, whether or not such notes, leases or contracts are in existence at the time. *Provided* That such assignments or pledges or assignments shall not extend more than 10 years from the date of execution and shall not cover more than one-half the net tribal income in any 1 year and shall be subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior or his duly authorized representative.

(h) To deposit corporate funds from whatever source derived in any National or State bank to the extent that such funds are insured by the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation or to be held in a safety bond or other security approved by the Secretary of the Interior, or to deposit such funds in the United States bank or with a bonded clearing office of the United States to the credit of the tribe.

<sup>16</sup> See Chapter 12, sec. 6.

<sup>17</sup> See Chapter 12, sec. 6.

<sup>18</sup> 49 Stat. 115.

<sup>19</sup> 80 Stat. 111, M. 28970 March 29, 1946.

<sup>20</sup> See Chapter 12, sec. 6.

Section 1 History of legislation .....	348
Section 2 Present law .....	349

\*2 Stat 189. Construed in *United States v Douglas*, 190 Fed 462 (C C 4 8, 1011), *United States v Oona* 25 Fed Cas No 14795 (C C Ohio 1877), *Worcester v Georgia* 6 Pet 515 (1882), *United States v Leathers* 26 Fed Cas No 18681 (D C Nev 1879), *Bates v Glush* 83 U S 204, 208 (1877).

This statute<sup>10</sup> made it unlawful for any citizen or other person to reside in Indian towns or hunting camps in a trade or to carry on commercial intercourse with Indians without a license. Suitable trading sales, if it was later provided, were to be designated by Indian agents.<sup>11</sup>

On June 30, 1884 Congress passed an act reversing and repealing the former legislation on the subject and practically defining the term 'Indian country' for the purposes of that act.<sup>12</sup>

Congress has not seen fit to regulate Indian trade outside of 'Indian country'.<sup>13</sup> In the Act of August 33, 1876,<sup>14</sup> the Com-

<sup>10</sup> This act was supplemented by the Act of April 29, 1816, 3 Stat. 332 so as to restrict a number of trading licenses to citizens of the United States and to prohibit the transportation of foreign goods for purposes of Indian trade. The Act of May 6, 1822, 3 Stat. 682 amended various other provisions of this act.

<sup>11</sup> Act of May 25, 1824, 4 Stat. 371.  
<sup>12</sup> Act of June 30, 1884, 1 Stat. 479. On the history of Indian country see Chapter 1, *supra*.

<sup>13</sup> Trade carried on from houses in cities adjacent to a reservation was held not to be trading in Indian country. *United States v. Taylor*, 13 F. 3d 608 (1st C. W. D. Wash. 1879), *rev'd on other grounds*, 44 F. 2d 581 (10th Cir. 284 U.S. 540 (1931)).

<sup>14</sup> In a suit over land which was land of the United States, it was held that Indian title had been extinguished and not considered as Indian country so that Indians located there were not required to be licensed before trading with Indians trading. *Reddy v. Tullum*, 138 Pac. 2 (1914).

<sup>15</sup> *United States v. Gifford Property*, 25 U.S. 518 519 (1877), also held that on license is required to trade with Indians outside of Indian country. The opinion in this case stated that no other type of ordinary Indian legislation is so full of price penalties and forfeitures as that

concerning Indian trade. The Commissioner of Indian Affairs was authorized to license traders to trade with Indians and to make requisite rules and regulations. The Act of July 11, 1852,<sup>16</sup> requirement for a license to trade were extended to include all but "in Indian of the full blood." The Act of March 3, 1891,<sup>17</sup> is amended by the Act of March 4, 1901,<sup>18</sup> provides that a person desiring to trade with Indians on any Indian reservation must satisfy the Commissioner of Indian Affairs that he is a proper person to engage in such trade. In addition from time to time Congress enacted appropriation or legislative acts in connection with Indian trade.<sup>19</sup>

which regulates trade with the Indian. Indian country is the place and no other to which all prices and penalties are applied.

<sup>16</sup> 22 Stat. 170, 200, 27 U.S.C. 261.

<sup>17</sup> 22 Stat. 379, 38, 25 U.S.C. 5, 6, 261.

<sup>18</sup> 27 Stat. 1075, 1076 (1891 Act of March 3), 25 U.S.C. 262.

<sup>19</sup> 22 Stat. 982, 1009, 25 U.S.C. 262. Thus act amended the proviso in the 1901 act so as to make it applicable to all reservations.

<sup>20</sup> Acts appropriation funds for detecting and punishing violations of the Intercourse Act of Congress. Act of March 3, 1857, 27 Stat. 372. Act of March 2, 1897, 25 Stat. 910, Act of June 1, 1907, 34 Stat. 117. Act of July 2, 1909, 36 Stat. 997. Act of March 3, 1909, 36 Stat. 1074. Act of June 6, 1900, 31 Stat. 200. Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 1134. The Treaty of May 7, 1864, with the Chippewa, of the Mississippi and the Pelly, and of the Winnebago, Red River, of Canada, Indians in Minnesota, 1 Stat. 697, 697, 11, provided that no "trader" shall be licensed "who shall not have a family residing with them." "Who shall not have a family residing with them" is a condition upon which a license is granted. A similar provision is found in the Act of February 28, 1877, 19 Stat. 274, 256. Act 7 (New York and Northern Arizona and the Western Indians).

## SECTION 2 PRESENT LAW

At the present time the Commissioner of Indian Affairs continues to exercise sole power and authority in the appointment of traders to the Indian tribes.<sup>20</sup> Under existing regulations,<sup>21</sup> any person who proposes to the satisfaction of the Commissioner that he is a proper person may secure a trader's license.<sup>22</sup> Ordinarily the Commissioner will not issue a license without the approval of the tribal council. Along with approved statements must accompany the application.<sup>23</sup> Any person other than an

Indian of full blood, who attempts to reside in the Indian country, or on any Indian reservation as a trader without a license, or to introduce goods or trade thereon, forfeits all merchandise offered for sale to the Indians or found in his possession and is liable to a penalty of \$300. Licenses are granted for 1 year,<sup>24</sup> and at the end of that time the Commissioner is satisfied that all rules and regulations have been observed, a new license may be issued. Introduction of liquor into the Indian country is statutory ground for the revocation of a trader's license.<sup>25</sup>

In order to prevent the acquisition of a share of the trade without approval of the Indian Service, Congress established the present rule that no appointed Indian trader could sell, share, or convey, in whole or in part, his right to trade with the Indians.<sup>26</sup> A sale of a license being void, has been held not to

<sup>20</sup> See Act of June 17, 1876, 19 Stat. 170, 200, Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 1075, 1076. Act of March 3, 1903, 32 Stat. 982, 1009, 25 U.S.C. 261-262.

<sup>21</sup> Regulations Concerning Licensed Indian Traders, 25 C.F.R. pt. 270. Regulations Concerning Traders on Navajo, Zuni, and Hopi Reservations, 184 F. 277.

<sup>22</sup> See Act of August 11, 1876, sec. 5, 19 Stat. 176, 200, Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 1075, 1076, Act of March 4, 1901, sec. 10, 31 Stat. 982, 1009, 25 U.S.C. 261, 262. The law was expressed in 2 Op. A. 6402 (1860) that no citizen of the United States can obtain exemption from laws of United States by entering Indian Territory and becoming an Indian by adoption and thereby claim the privilege of trade without a license. In 2 Op. A. 404 (1879) it was stated that a trader is a military post in Indian country must be licensed and license cannot be issued by military authorities.

<sup>23</sup> The Act of July 20, 1880, sec. 4, 24 Stat. 275, 280, which required traders to give a bond to the United States in the sum of not less than \$5,000 nor more than \$10,000 was incorporated in sec. 2128 Revised Statutes but omitted from the United States Code of 1926. See 2128, as amended by the Act of March 3, 1905, 47 Stat. 1488. The regulations require a bond in the sum of \$10,000 with at least two approved sureties or a bond of a qualified surety company, 25 C.F.R. 276.10.

<sup>24</sup> 25 U.S.C. 264. The words "of the full blood" and the words "on any Indian reservation" were added to the Revised Statutes by the Act of July 31, 1892, 22 Stat. 170.

Sections 201 and 202 of title 25, United States Code, giving the Commissioner of Indian Affairs authority to regulate trade with Indians, and regulations of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, Indians on any Indian reservation to do so under the authority of the Commissioner, are general in scope and would include the Indians themselves. However, section 206 of title 25 excludes from the enforcement provisions Indians of the full blood. Section 204

in the full of full blood, who attempts to reside in the Indian country, or on any Indian reservation as a trader without a license, or to introduce goods or trade thereon, forfeits all merchandise offered for sale to the Indians or found in his possession and is liable to a penalty of \$300. Licenses are granted for 1 year, and at the end of that time the Commissioner is satisfied that all rules and regulations have been observed, a new license may be issued. Introduction of liquor into the Indian country is statutory ground for the revocation of a trader's license.

<sup>25</sup> See in 11, *supra*.

<sup>26</sup> 8 Stat. 2127-2148. The Act of July 1, 1882, 22 Stat. 179 amended 8 Stat. 211, 25 U.S.C. 264 by excluding the Five Civilized Tribes from its application. It also made non-applicable to these tribes its provisions that unlicensed white clerks could not be hired by Indian traders. The forfeiture provision has been required by the Department of Justice as not permitting a claim for forfeiture of an automobile used as an unlicensed trader to transport merchandise. D. J. File No. 90-5-7-865 Memorandum by O. T. R. July 10, 1939.

<sup>27</sup> Under the special regulations for the Navajo, Hopi, and Zuni Reservations, a 5-year term is allowed. See in 20.

<sup>28</sup> 25 U.S.C. 276.11-277.11.

<sup>29</sup> 25 U.S.C. 264, derived from Act of March 15, 1964, 11 Stat. 29.

<sup>30</sup> 25 U.S.C. 264.

<sup>31</sup> *United States v. Mc Buffalo Robes*, 1 Mont. 459 (1872).



constitute consideration for a note. A contract by a holder of a trading license to pay a third person a portion of the proceeds of the trade in consideration of the third person actually running the business was considered by the courts as tantamount to a subterfuge violating the spirit and intent of the trading statutes.<sup>1</sup> The court, however, appeared in a circumstance whereby a licensed trader formed a partnership and the nonlicensed member of the partnership sought a permit to live on the reservation, to sell to the Indians and to share in the profits.

While the general policy is to encourage resident ownership of Indian trading posts, in some instances the lack of local capital necessities disclude ownership. At the present time as a matter of actual practice a license may be held by a resident manager assisted by a nonresident owner.<sup>2</sup>

To insure integrity of conduct on the part of persons employed in the Indian Service and to protect the Indians no license is issued to any person employed in Indian affairs by the United States.<sup>3</sup>

A license to trade is not required in Alaska. The Act of June 10, 1874, was not extended *ex proprio vigore* to that Territory upon its cession to the United States.<sup>4</sup>

The court, in *United States v. Seelye*,<sup>5</sup> in 1872 decided that this new possession was not Indian country as defined and limited by the Trade and Intercourse Act. After this decision, on March 3, 1873, Congress extended to Alaska the provisions of sections 21 and 22 of this statute, relating principally to the introduction of liquor traffic. The extension seems clear that by singling out liquor, and extending two sections only, the intention of Congress was to withhold or exclude from the Territory all other sections of the act. Apparently Alaska was intended to be considered "Indian country," in connection with Indian trade, only to the extent of that specifically prohibited traffic.

By the regulations of the Department of the Interior products sold to the Indians are required to be good and merchantable and the prices must be fair and reasonable.<sup>6</sup> The President, whenever in his opinion public interest requires is authorized to prohibit the introduction of goods in any particular article into the country of any tribe.

For many years the sale to the Indians of means of warfare has been restricted and regulated.<sup>7</sup> At the present time the Secretary of the Interior may adopt such rules as may be necessary to prohibit the sale of arms and ammunition in any district occupied by uncivilized or hostile Indians.<sup>8</sup> Arms and ammunition may not be sold to the Indians by traders except upon permission of a superintendent of the Indian agency who has clearly established that the weapons are for a lawful purpose.<sup>9</sup>

Congress has provided that no person other than an Indian may within Indian country, purchase or receive of an Indian

in the way of barter, trade or pledge, a gun, knife or other article commonly used in hunting, any instrument of husbandry or cooking, utensil of the kind commonly obtained by Indians in their intercourse with whites, or any article of clothing, except skins or furs.<sup>10</sup>

It is against the rules laid down by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to sell tobacco, cigars and cigarettes to non-Indian traders under 18 years of age.<sup>11</sup> Likewise liquor traffic is suppressed.<sup>12</sup>

Sale of specified harmful drugs is illegal.<sup>13</sup> Gambling is prohibited in trading posts.<sup>14</sup> Trading on Sunday is presenting sufficient cause for revocation of a license.<sup>15</sup>

At the present time credit is given at the trader's risk.<sup>16</sup> Traders may not accept gifts or pledges of personal property by Indians to obtain credit or loans, and Indians may not be paid in store orders or tokens or in any other way than in money.<sup>17</sup>

To protect the Indian traders it is forbidden to buy the trade or have in their possession any munition or other goods which have been purchased or furnished by the Government for the use or welfare of the Indians.<sup>18</sup> The business of a trader must be conducted on premises specified in the license. Tribal or individual Indians used by traders must be treated in the usual manner.<sup>19</sup>

No trader will be allowed to sublet or rent buildings which he occupies without the approval of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs,<sup>20</sup> and, where the tribe is organized, without the consent of the tribal council.

The personal property, including the stock in trade of a licensed trader is ordinarily subject to state taxation although the privilege of doing business with Indians would appear to be exempt from state taxation. As in Indian trade is not in effect of the Government, and its goods are his own private property, which he may sell indiscriminately to Indians or non-Indians, a state tax on the personal property of a licensed trader is not a tax on agency of the Federal Government or an interference with the regulation of commerce with the Indian tribes.<sup>21</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 23 U. S. C. 267 R. S. § 2175. For other restrictions on trade see Chapter 5, sec. 1.

<sup>2</sup> 25 C. F. R. 276.17.

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter 17, Indian Liquor Laws.

<sup>4</sup> 25 C. F. R. 276.19.

<sup>5</sup> 1872, 270.21.

<sup>6</sup> 1872, 270.20.

<sup>7</sup> In *Truitt v. Midland Valley Co.*, 241 U. S. 681 (1914) it was held that a provision in the Indian Appropriation Act of June 21, 1906, § 4 Stat. 327, 366 made it unlawful for Indians on the Osage Indian Reservation to give credit to any individual Indian head of a family for any amount exceeding 75 per centum of his next quarterly allowance. Treaties with various tribes had ample evidence of the kind of traders acquired by loaning of credit to their customers. A large portion of the money from the sale of coal had passed directly to the trader for debts, and these debts in turn mechanics necessitated payment of the trader. See Chapter 5, sec. 7C.

<sup>8</sup> 25 C. F. R. 276.42.

<sup>9</sup> 1872, 270.16.

<sup>10</sup> 1872, 276.14.

<sup>11</sup> See Chapter 5, sec. 9B and 11B. Chapter 13, sec. 7, and Chapter 15, sec. 10.

<sup>12</sup> 25 C. F. R. 276.15.

<sup>13</sup> See Chapter 13, sec. 4 and 5.

<sup>14</sup> *Thomas v. Gay*, 109 U. S. 264 (1884). This case involved a tax on cattle owned by a lessee of Indian land. The court stated: "It is not perceived that local taxation, by a State or Territory, of property of others than Indians, would be an interference with Congressional power." Second *Wagoner v. Mann*, 170 U. S. 688 (1898), *Oathoie Wagoner v. Keesee County*, 200 U. S. 118 (1906), *Barlow Trading Co. v. Cook*, 263 U. S. 647 (1923). In the *Barlow Trading Co.* case the opinion states: "Such severations are part of the State within which they lie and her laws, civil and criminal, have the same force therein as elsewhere within her limits, save that they can have only restricted appli-

<sup>1</sup> *Habbe v. Joughell*, 17 Nch. 536, 21 N. W. 714 (1895).

<sup>2</sup> *Quill v. Kendall*, 15 Neb. 549, 19 N. W. 483 (1884).

<sup>3</sup> *Dunn v. Carter*, 90 Kan. 201, 1 Pac. 466 (1885).

<sup>4</sup> Some traders state they have received resident managers who do not file returns.

<sup>5</sup> 25 C. F. R. 276.6-277.4.

<sup>6</sup> 4 Stat. 729.

<sup>7</sup> *Barilla v. Campbell*, 29 Fed. Cas. No. 37264 (C. C. Ore. 1876). *Act v. United States*, 27 Fed. 473 (C. C. Ore. 1886). *In re Ash Quah*, 11 Fed. 127 (D. C. Alaska 1880), 36 Op. U. S. 161 (1876).

<sup>8</sup> 27 Fed. Cas. No. 10353 (D. C. Ore. 1872).

<sup>9</sup> 17 Stat. 630.

<sup>10</sup> 25 C. F. R. 276.22.

<sup>11</sup> *U. S. v. Adams*, 7, 1679, 19 Stat. 216, R. S. § 2150, 27 U. S. C. 266.

<sup>12</sup> 26 U. S. C. 266, R. S. § 44, 467, 2140.

<sup>13</sup> 25 C. F. R. 276.8.

In view of the fact that Congress has conferred upon the Commissioner of Indian Affairs exclusive jurisdiction with respect to Indian traders, and since tribal customs and generally provide that ordinances dealing with traders shall be subject to departmental review, tribal tax levy may not be made upon

cation to the Indian wards. Tax is properly within such reservation if and belonging to such Indians is subject to taxation under the laws of the State. (11-571). Some state cases on record are: *Moore v. Benson*, 51 Pa. 877 (1868); *Croser v. Affiliated*, 56 Pa. 965 (1869); *Noble v. Lammitt*, 71 Pa. 879 (1864). (Cf. *Justice v. Bond*, 7 Minn. 110 (1862).)

25 U.S.C. 261-262 (derived from Act of August 15, 1876, 19 Stat. 200, and the Act of March 3, 1903 (10-1st Reservation), 32 Stat. 1008, 1066, is amended by Act of March 3, 1903, 32 Stat. 982, 1009).

27 U.S.C. 1146 (1911), 1 Op. A.G. 618 (1821). As the Treaty of November 28, 1785 with the Choctaws, 7 Stat. 28, and the Treaty of July 2, 1791 with the Chickasaw Nation, 7 Stat. 39, provided that the

increased traders unless such tax is authorized by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs.

United States has the sole and exclusive right of regulation, trade with the Indians, the Attorney General herein expresses the opinion that the Choctaws had no right to impose a tribal tax on traders. 17 Op. A.G. 618 (1821) and 18 Op. A.G. 618 (1884) uphold the validity of pecuniary fines of Choctaws and Chickasaws imposed for fees upon increased traders under the provisions of the treaties of June 22, 1857, 11 Stat. 611, and April 25, 1846, 11 Stat. 716 between the Choctaw and Chickasaw and the United States. Also see Chapter 23, sec. 1.

(*U.S. v. Choctaw*, 54 Fed. 126 (C.C. S. 1894). The opinion in this case held a tax imposed by the Choctaw tribe upon increased traders could not be enforced by the United States courts but recommended the power of the Department of the Interior to remove from Indian Territory any increased trader who failed to pay taxes as provided by Indian tribes. *Winters v. Hitchcock*, 194 U.S. 184 (1904). On tribal power to tax see Chapter 7, sec. 7.

## INDIAN LIQUOR LAWS

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 Historical background	372	Section 4 Locality where these measures apply	376
Section 2 Sources and scope of Federal power re liquor traffic	372	Section 5 Enforcement agencies, jurisdiction, and procedure	377
Section 3 Existing prohibitions and enforcement measures	371		

## SECTION 1 HISTORICAL BACKGROUND

Restrictions on traffic in liquor among the Indians began in early colonial times in a few of the colonies.<sup>1</sup> The Indians themselves at various times seemed to curb their consumption of strong drink, and it is worthy of note that the first Federal control measure was enacted, at least in part in response to the verbal plea of an Indian chief to President Thomas Jefferson on January 4 1802.<sup>2</sup>

On January 28, 1802 President Jefferson called upon Congress to take some step to control the liquor traffic with the Indians in the following language:

These people [the Indians] are becoming very sensible of the harmful effects produced on their morals, their health, and existence, by the abuse of alien spirits; and

some of them earnestly desire a prohibition of that article from being carried among them. The Legislature will consider whether the effecting this desire would not be in the spirit of benevolence and policy, which they have hitherto put in use toward these our Indians; and which has had so happy an effect towards reconciling their friendly feelings. It has been found too in experience that the same abuse always frequent gives to incidents tending much to commit our peace with the Indians.<sup>3</sup>

Congress forthwith adopted legislation which authorized the President of the United States "to take such measures, from time to time, as to him may appear expedient to prevent or restrain the vending or distributing of spirituous liquors among all or any of the said Indian tribes, anything herein contained to the contrary thereof notwithstanding."

With control over treaty making, the licensing of trade, and the maintenance of Government trading houses, the Executive had ample power to control the situation without a general ban on prohibition law, and 30 years passed before such a law was enacted.<sup>4</sup>

The considerations of benefit to the Indians and protection to the whites thus suggested in Jefferson's message have since continued to influence the deliberations of Congress in its efforts to suppress the traffic in liquor with the Indians.<sup>5</sup>

AMERICAN STATE PAPERS VOL 7 (Indian Affairs class II vol I) (1793-1815) p 653

<sup>1</sup> Act of March 30, 1802 sec 21 2 Stat 174 118. An excellent account of the development of Indian liquor laws from 1802 to 1911 will be found in Ann Cas 1912 B 1090, 1091.

<sup>2</sup> See in 45 infra

<sup>3</sup> 22 Cong Rec pt 9 p 2197 (1802), 29 Cong Rec pt 2, pp 804-809 (1807). The first treaty liquor control stip in maintaining the peace is supported in the Annual Report of Louis C Mueller Chief Special Officer of the Office of Indian Affairs March 28 1890. The contention that particularly among Indian war since the discovery of America has been raised directly or indirectly by the liquor traffic is put forward by William D Johnson "The Federal Government and the Liquor Traffic" (1911) pp 143 228.

clauses in the Constitution investing Congress with authority to regulate commerce with the Indian tribes,<sup>6</sup> and to dispose of and make all needful rules and regulations respecting the ter-

See also *Worcester v Georgia*, 8 Pet 515 (1834), where Chief Justice Marshall intimated that the authority of the Federal Government to control all intercourse with the Indians is traceable to the clauses in the Constitution relative to war and peace, of making treaties and of regulating commerce, with foreign nations and among the several states and with the Indian tribes. For a further discussion of the sources and limits of Federal power, see Chapter 5 sec 1.

<sup>6</sup> U S Const, Art I, sec 8, cl 1.

<sup>1</sup> Miss Colonial Laws 1600-72 (Whitmore 1899) p 161. The charters of the Province of Pennsylvania and City of Philadelphia (1742) c 100, p 11. Acts of the Council Assembly of the Province of New York 1784-81 (Stoddard 1761) sec 2 p 123.

<sup>2</sup> See F W Hodge Handbook of American Indians II Doc No 928 pt 2 74th Cong, 1st sess (1905-06) p 799, AMERICAN STATE PAPERS VOL 7 (Indian Affairs class II vol I) (1793-1815), p 605.

<sup>3</sup> Act of March 30 1802 sec 21 2 Stat 130.

<sup>4</sup> In the course of his talk to the President the Indian chief Little Turtle among other things, said:

"\* \* \* But father, nothing can be done to restrain upon the great control of the different tribes, now assembled will prohibit any person from selling any spirituous liquors among them and their children."

"\* \* \* \* \*  
Father! Your children are not wanting in industry, but it is the introduction of this fatal poison which keeps them poor. Your children live not that command over themselves which you have the right before inviting them to be done to obstruct their evil must be removed."

"\* \* \* \* \*  
Father! When our white brothers came to this land, our forefathers were numerous and happy, but since their intercourse with the white people and owing to the introduction of the fatal poison we have become less numerous and happy. (AMERICAN STATE PAPERS VOL 7 (Indian Affairs class II, vol I) (1793-1815) p 605.)

## SECTION 2 SOURCES AND SCOPE OF FEDERAL POWER RE LIQUOR TRAFFIC

The power of the Federal Government over traffic in intoxicating liquors with the Indians may be said to be derived from several sources.<sup>1</sup> Among these may be mentioned, first, the

<sup>1</sup> In *United States Express Co v Friedman* 191 Fed 878 (C C S 8, 1912), 147 S 180 Fed 1008 (D C W D Ark 1910), the power was said to be derived from five sources as follows:

"First the treaty making power. Second the power to regulate interstate commerce. Third the power to regulate commerce with the Indian tribes. Fourth the ownership, as sovereign of lands to which the Indian title has not been extinguished. Fifth the plenary authority arising out of its guardianship of the Indians as an alien but dependent people. (At p 874.)

history and other property of the United States,"<sup>10</sup> second the clause in the Constitution relative to the making of treaties,<sup>11</sup> and third the recognized relation of tribal Indians to the United States.<sup>12</sup> The first, of course, relates to the powers of Congress; the second to those of the treaty-making department, and the third, the broadest and most important of all, refers to the powers of both.

"The treaty making power has been exercised in conjunction with the congressional power to carry out the terms of treaties by legislative enactments, to impose prohibitions against the Indians in violation of direct treaties with the Indians, as was done, for example, in the Treaty of October 2, 1863," with the Chipewas, and by the Convention with Russia of April 7-17, 1821.<sup>1</sup> "Treaties and legal acts of the United States are of equal dignity, so that the restrictions against intoxicants in the former have the force of law."<sup>2</sup> Similar in effect to treaties with the Indians are "agreements," which were resorted to after the policy of dealing with the Indians by treaty was abandoned.<sup>3</sup> These agreements, however, received their legal force from acts of Congress<sup>4</sup> affirming and adopting them. They are exemplified by the agreements with the New Peace Indians and the Yakton Indians.<sup>5</sup>

The power to regulate commerce with the Indian tribes is really the constitutional backbone of federal legislation against traffic in liquor with the Indians. The courts have upheld this power with respect to tribal Indians, and the Indian country.<sup>25</sup>

<sup>21</sup> U.S. Const., Art. IV, sec. 3 cl. 2.

2-U.S. Const., Art. II, sec. 3, cl. 2.

19 U.S. CONST., art. II, sec. 2, cl. 2; 28 U.S.C. § 1341 (1988). See also *United States v. Rice*, 241 U.S. 791 (1916), *United States v. Rendo* (1848), 221 U.S. 29 (1918), 100% 708 611 509 (D.C.N.M. 1912), *United States v. McGowan*, 402 U.S. 517 (1974), 100% 89 11 Ad 201 (C.A. 9 1987), affg *United States v. One Chevrolet Sedan*, 16 F. Supp. 463 (D.C. Nev. 1956).

<sup>14</sup> Ratified with amendments March 1 1864 amendments recited to April 12, 1864, proclaimed May 7 1861 1862 1867 Other treaties provisions containing prohibitions against the sale or introduction of liquor are Treaty of April 6, 1824, with Hurons, 8 Stat 302 Art 3, Treaty of May 16, 1846, with the Comanches, Tarascan and Kiowa, 9 Stat 491, Treaty of July 19, 1846, with the Kiowa, Arapaho and Kiowa-Arapaho, 9 Stat 491, Treaty of July 21, 1847, with the Kiowa and Arapaho, 9 Stat 491, Treaty of August 8, 1851, with Mesquias-wak-ton and Wah-pye-koo-yah bands of Dakota, in Sioux Indians, 10 Stat 940 Art 5, Treaty of August 8, 1851, with Mesquias-wak-ton and Wah-pye-koo-yah bands of Dakota, in Sioux Indians, 10 Stat 940, Art 5, Treaty of May 30, 1854, with the united tribes of Kaikashia, 10 Stat 940, Art 5, Treaty of July 19, 1854, with the Kiowa, 10 Stat 940, Treaty of October 17, 1855, with Blackfoot and other tribes of Indians 11 Stat 637, Art 13 Treaty of February 11, 1856 with the Menomonee tribe of Indians 11 Stat 679, Art 3, Treaty of April 19, 1858, with the Yankton Tribe of Sioux or Dacotah Indians 11 Stat 743, Art XII, Treaty of October 14, 1864 with the Kiowa tribe of Indians, 12 Stat 701, and the Yankton tribe of Indians, 12 Stat 701, Art IX.

<sup>15</sup> Ratified with amendments March 1 1804, amendments assented to April 12, 1804, proclaimed May 5, 1804 13 Stat 667

<sup>18</sup>U.S. Const. Art. VI, cl. 2, Willoughby, *The Constitutional Law of the United States* (2d ed. 1926), sec. 103, p. 518. See Chapter 9, sec. 1.

13 See Act of August 15, 1804, 28 Stat. 286. The selling or giving  
14 of intoxicants upon ceded territory is forever prohibited by Art  
15 XVII of the Yankton agreement (p. 81A). Introduction of intoxicants  
16 is prohibited for 25 years by Art. IX of the New Peace agreement  
17 (p. 830).

<sup>2</sup> *United States v. Forty-three Gall. Whiskey*, 108 U.S. 481 (1888),  
94 U.S. 183 (1876); *Ex parte Webb*, 225 U.S. 663 (1912); *United*  
*States v. Wright*, 229 U.S. 226 (1913); *United States v. Sandoval*, 231  
U.S. 28 (1918); *Perlin v. United States*, 232 U.S. 478 (1914);  
*United States v. Shaw Mfg.*, 27 Fed. Cl. No. 10268 (D.C. Cir. 1873).

The power over commerce with the Indians is distinct from that over interstate commerce in that it deals with the Indian tribes and may be regulated regardless of state lines. Thus, the Indian commerce power covers trade which may be wholly within one state.<sup>6</sup>

It is to be noted that regulation under this power is not limited to transactions in which a tribe acts as an entity but extends to transactions with individual members of each tribe.<sup>21</sup> The Supreme Court has stated this principle in the following terms:

Commerce with foreign nations, without doubt means commerce between citizens of the United States and citizens or subjects of foreign governments as individuals. And so commerce with the Indian tribes, means commerce with the individuals composing those tribes."

In consequence of this power to regulate commerce with the Indian tribes, there exists also the authority granted by the Constitution to do all things necessary and proper by way of carrying out its provisions.<sup>1</sup> Pursuant to this power and the power over the territory and other property belonging to the United States,<sup>2</sup> the Federal Government has imposed various restrictions on lands, ceded to it by the Indians when these lands adjoined Indian country.<sup>3</sup> The purpose of this measure was to prevent sale of liquor on the boundaries of the land retained by the Indians. Except for these extensions of the Indian liquor law to "buffer" lands the States would have had the exclusive police power thereon. Such extensions have been repeatedly upheld by the United States Supreme Court.<sup>4</sup> The power last-mentioned so long as Indians are present on the ceded reservation lands, and certain lands of the Government.<sup>5</sup> In 1904, Congress, without limit restrictions from the "buffer" lands,<sup>6</sup>

Congress may also enact such measures to aid in the enforcement of the prohibition statutes, as are "directed at the means and methods used in the accomplishing of the violation of the

*Laurel v. United States*, 110 Fed. 812 (C.C.A. 8 1901), *United States v. Huff*, 28 Fed. Cl. No. 10745 (D.C. Cir. 1974). In *Matter of Huff*, 107 U.S. 188 (1906), the Court held that a citizen allottee was not subject to federal Indian liquor laws. This holding governed the courts from 1906 to 1911 when ignored in *Hallowell v. United States*, 221 U.S. 17 (1911), and expressly overruled by *United States v. Nico*, 241 U.S. 791 (1916).

<sup>9</sup> F H Cooke, *The Commerce Clause of the Federal Constitution* (1908), pp 62-64, 1 Willoughby, *The Constitutional Law of the United States* (2d ed 1920), sec 226, pp 307-308, *Dick v United States* 208 U S 340 (1908), *United States v Forty Thier Gallows of Windsor*, 8d U S 188 (1870), rev'd, 25 Fed Cas No 15136 (D C Minn 1871).

<sup>2</sup> *Browning v. United States*, 6 F.2d 801 (C.C.A. 8, 1925), cert. den. 280 U.S. 588 (1925), *United States v. Shaw Alms*, 27 Fed. Cas. No. 16268 (D.C. Ore. 1878), *United States v. Nix*, 241 U.S. 591 (1916), *United States v. Holliday* 8 Wall. 407 (1865), *United States v. Flynn* 25 Fed. Cas. No. 15124 (C.C. Minn. 1970).

<sup>10</sup> U S Const, Art I, sec 8 cl 18

<sup>2</sup> Act of December 19 1954, 10 Stat 598 (Clapperton), Act of March 1

1897 28 Stat 69; (Indian Territory), Act of March 20 1906 34 Stat 90  
(Shawnee, Comanche, and Apache), Act of June 18, 1908, 34 Stat 267  
(Oklahoma, Indian Territory, New Mexico, and Arizona), Act of May  
6, 1910 36 Stat 348 (Yakima), Act of June 20, 1910, 36 Stat 557  
(New Mexico and Arizona), 11<sup>th</sup> of May 11, 1912 37 Stat 111 (Omaha),  
Act of July 22, 1912, 37 Stat 187 (Colville), Act of February 14, 1913,  
37 Stat 675 (Stranding Rock), Act of May 31, 1918, 40 Stat 592 (Fort  
Hall), Act of June 4, 1920, 41 Stat 751 (Crow)

<sup>21</sup> *Penn v United States*, 282 U S 478 (1914), *Dick v United States*, 208 U S 940 (1908), *United States v Forty-three Gallons of Whiskey*, 108 U S 491 (1888).

<sup>2</sup> Act of June 27, 1934, 48 Stat 1245, 25 U S C 254



Indian in violation of the Government ' or because he mistook him for a Mexican or white."

The second prohibition defined in the statute is directed against the introduction or attempt to introduce any into lands into Indian country.<sup>15</sup> "To offend against the law on introducing liquor it is enough that one is the owner of carrying the liquor within the limits of Indian country knowing of its presence and transportation." "The person so introducing alcohol need not have any interest in it." No need to have any intent to introduce, that is, he need not know that he is entering Indian country.<sup>16</sup> But in intent is necessary to constitute the crime of attempting to introduce liquor into Indian country.<sup>17</sup> In both the introduction and the attempt to introduce, the destination, intentionally or unwittingly, must be the Indian country. The mere transportation through Indian country is not within this act when the destination is beyond it.<sup>18</sup>

As the courts repeatedly held that possession of liquor in Indian country was not alone sufficient to show introduction.<sup>19</sup> Congress in 1916 enacted the following law to bolster this weak spot:

"... possession by a person of introducing liquors in the country where the introduction is prohibited in treaty or Federal statute shall be prima facie evidence of an unlawful introduction."

In 1918, as an additional aid to enforcement Congress provided that possession in Indian country shall be an independent offense.<sup>20</sup> The statute reads:

"... possession by a person of introducing liquors in the Indian country where the introduction is or was prohibited by treaty or Federal statute shall be an offense and punished in accordance with the provisions of the Acts of July twenty third, eighteen hundred and ninety two (Twenty second Statutes at Large, page five hundred and sixty), and January thirtieth, eighteen hundred and ninety seven (Twenty ninth Statutes at Large, page five hundred and six)."

The elements of this offense are possession, which means physical control and power to dispose of liquor, knowledge of possession,<sup>21</sup> and location of the liquor within the limits of Indian country. Apparently, knowledge of possession in another is not enough nor is drinking from the bottle of another enough.<sup>22</sup> But where the accused is found with a full liquor

bottle which he drinks, it has been held that these facts are evidence of possession, knowledge and control.<sup>23</sup> The wording of this statute, though not so detailed in defining prohibited liquors as the Act of June 15, 1938, is apparently as broad, since it covers any intoxicant.<sup>24</sup>

The early Trade and Intercourse Act of 1834 continued a measure to facilitate enforcement of the liquor prohibitions, which is still in force. It provided:

"That if any person whosoever shall within the limits of the Indian country, set up or continue any distillery for manufacturing ardent spirits (here, and other intoxicating liquors named in the Act of February fourth, eighteen hundred and ninety seven (Twenty ninth Statutes at Large, page five hundred and sixty)), he shall forfeit and pay a penalty of one thousand dollars and he shall be the duty of the superintendent of Indian affairs, Indian agent, or sub-agent, within the limits of whose agency the same shall be set up or continued forthwith to destroy and break up the same."

Other enforcing acts, including provisions for search, seizure and forfeiture of goods and vehicles, have been enacted from time to time as conditions required. This legislation also had its inception in the Trade and Intercourse Acts of May 6, 1822,<sup>25</sup> and of June 30, 1834,<sup>26</sup> and their modified provisions are as follows:

Sec 2140 If any superintendent of Indian affairs, Indian agent, or sub agent, or commanding officer of a military post, if he is in suspicion or is informed that it any white person or Indian is about to introduce or has introduced any spirituous liquors of wine (here and other intoxicating liquors named in the Act of January thirtieth, eighteen hundred and ninety seven (Twenty ninth Statutes at Large, page five hundred and sixty)) into the Indian country in violation of law, such superintendent, agent, sub agent, or commanding officer, in virtue of the laws, states, packages, waggons, sleds, and places of deposit of such person to be searched, and if any such liquor is found thereon, the same, together with the bonits, trunks, waggons, and sleds used in conveying the same and also the goods, packages, and peltries of such person, shall be seized and delivered to the proper officer, and shall be proceeded against by libel in the proper court, and forfeited over to the national and the other half to the use of the United States, and if such person be a trader, his license shall be revoked and his bond put in suit. If shall moreover be the duty of any person in the service of the United States, or of any Indian, to take and deliver any ardent spirits or wine found in the Indian country, except such as may be introduced thereon by the War Department. In all cases arising under this and the preceding section [27 Stat 260 and 29 Stat 608, as amended by 52 Stat 688], Indians shall be competent witnesses.

Under this statute federal enforcement officers have the right to search and seize the bonits, stores, packages, waggons, etc., without warrant. But federal officers may not make unreasonable searches as they are subject to the Fourth Amendment to the United States Constitution. And the Act of August 27,

<sup>15</sup> *Hobbs v United States* 28 F 2d 26, 13 C A 8, 1929, *Feely v United States* 298 Fed 903 (C A 8, 1916), *Lott v United States* supra *United States v Stofelo* 8 US 101, 76 Pac 611 (1904). On acts of the Indian Service, however, see instruction to agents double in favor of the vendor in cases involving Indians resembling other nationalities.

<sup>16</sup> An Indian may be convicted of introducing liquor into Indian Territory. *Clayton v United States* 225 U S 361 (1912). See also *Id.* 4, supra.

<sup>17</sup> *Alchord v United States* 212 Fed 146 (C A 8, 1914).  
<sup>18</sup> *Id.*

<sup>19</sup> *United States v Leathers*, 26 Fed Cas No 16531 (D C Nev 1879).  
<sup>20</sup> *United States v Brothers*, 12 Fed 82 (D C Ore 1880).

<sup>21</sup> *Butterfield v United States*, 241 Fed 856 (C A 8 1917), *Town and v United States*, 246 Fed 519 (C A 8 1920) *United States v Tabin*, 211 Fed 400 (D C Ariz 1913).

<sup>22</sup> *Collins v United States* 221 Fed 61 (C A 9 1915), *Chenbiss v United States*, 218 Fed 184 (C A 8 1914), *Parker v United States*, 225 Fed 380 (C A 8 1915), *Goff v United States* 237 Fed 204 (C A 8 1910).

<sup>23</sup> *Act of May 18, 1916* 39 Stat 128, 124 26 U S C 245.  
<sup>24</sup> *Brum v United States*, 286 Fed 828 (C A 8 1920), holds this act constitutional.

<sup>25</sup> *Act of May 25, 1820*, 40 Stat 561, 608 and the Act of June 30, 1834, 41 Stat 4, 25 U S C 244.

<sup>26</sup> *Buchanan v United States*, 15 F 2d 496 (C A 8, 1926), *Colbough v United States*, 18 F 2d 929 (C A 8, 1926).

<sup>27</sup> *Alchord v United States*, 87 F 2d 976 (C A 10, 1919).  
<sup>28</sup> *Colbough v United States*, supra.

<sup>25</sup> *Mossman v United States* 6 F 2d 809 (C A 8 1925).

<sup>26</sup> 52 Stat 608, 25 U S C 241.

<sup>27</sup> *Sharp v United States*, 16 F 2d 876 (C A 8, 1926) aff'g *Re Pacific Sharp* 16 F 2d 571 (D C Nev 1926).

<sup>28</sup> The banded clause was added to this act by the Act of Mar 18, 1918, 39 Stat 124, 124, 25 U S C 252.

<sup>29</sup> *Act of June 30, 1834*, 4 Stat 727, 742, 711 25 U S C 251.

<sup>30</sup> 8 Stat 682.  
<sup>31</sup> 4 Stat 729.

<sup>32</sup> The banded clause was made to apply to this act by the Act of May 18, 1918, 39 Stat 128, 124, 25 U S C 252.

<sup>33</sup> Enacted as it now appears in the R S 4240 which is derived from the Act of March 15, 1864, 13 Stat 28. This act changed the provisions of the Act of June 30, 1834, by omitting necessity for search under regulations provided by the President and by making it the duty to destroy illicit liquor found in Indian country.

1935,<sup>35</sup> imposes criminal liability for unreasonable search of dwelling without a warrant. In case of such unreasonable search the officer civil or criminal, or becomes civilly liable.<sup>36</sup> The only decision of the United States Supreme Court in *Indian Fuel Co. v. United States*<sup>37</sup> determined that this act gave authority to search and seize only in Indian country.<sup>38</sup> As to what might be seized and subject to forfeiture there was some doubt. The courts decided that the goods forfeited would be only those which were the property of the offender, and forfeited only to the extent of his interest. When the automobile became forfeited and wholly used, it became in play in important role in the illicit liquor trade. The Government sought to subject it to the proceedings under the foregoing statute. The courts determined that informants were not known to the test-takers who passed the law in 1934, and that automobile did not enter the circulation of wares, butts, and shods.<sup>39</sup> Congress quickly remedied this defect by the Act of March 2, 1937 which provided:

"That automobiles or any other vehicles or conveyances used in transportation, or attempting to introduce, introduce, receive, or attempt to receive, or which are introduced, is prohibited in title or Federal statute, whether used

by the owner thereof or other person, shall be subject to the seizure, hold, and forfeiture provided in section twenty, ten hundred and forty of the Revised Statutes of the United States."<sup>40</sup>

Thus it is broader than the search and seizure provisions in the Act of 1934 in those respects. (1) Search and seizure may be made outside Indian country when the vehicle taken is used in the attempt to introduce liquor into Indian country; (2) automobiles and any other vehicles are included; (3) "the thing involved (automobile or other vehicle), and not its owner is the offender." "The vehicle is forfeited without regard to ownership. Finally it should be noted that these enforcement measures apply solely to Indian liquor laws and cannot be used as a basis for search, seizure, and hold of goods, vehicles, etc. used in any other illicit traffic."

The passage of the Eighteenth Amendment, the National Prohibition Act, and repeal of both had no effect to supplant or repeal any of the special Indian liquor laws.<sup>41</sup>

<sup>35</sup> 40 Stat. 969, 970.

<sup>36</sup> *One Buick Roadster v. United States*, 275 Fed. 808 (C. A. 8, 1921); *United States v. One Ford Five-Passenger Automobile*, 299 Fed. 645 (D. C. F. D. Okla. 1918).

<sup>37</sup> *United States v. One Buick Roadster Automobile*, 244 Fed. 601 (D. C. E. D. Okla., 1917). See also *Thurkey v. United States*, 26 Fed. 621 (C. A. 8, 1919).

<sup>38</sup> *United States v. One Chevrolet Coupe Automobile*, 58 F. 24, 235 (C. A. 9, 1912). As to constitutionality of this legislation see *supra* note 1 and *Commercial Investment Trust v. United States*, 261 Fed. 40 (C. A. 8, 1919).

<sup>39</sup> *United States v. One Cadillac Coach Automobile*, 205 Fed. 376 (D. C. M. T. Penn. 1913).

<sup>40</sup> *United States v. United States*, 7 F. 2d 847 (C. A. 8, 1925); *United States v. United States*, 17 F. 2d 611 (C. A. 8, 1926); *Acquiesce v. United States*, 257 U. S. 41 (1921) (quotation from *Acquiesce v. United States*, 257 U. S. 41 (1921)).

<sup>41</sup> *United States v. One Cadillac Coach Automobile*, 205 Fed. 376 (D. C. M. T. Penn. 1913).

<sup>35</sup> 40 Stat. 972, 977, sec. 201.

<sup>36</sup> *Bates v. Clark*, 76 U. S. 201 (1877). *Indian Fuel Co. v. United States*, 275 Fed. 808 (C. A. 8, 1921).

<sup>37</sup> *United States v. One Buick Roadster Automobile*, 244 Fed. 601 (D. C. E. D. Okla., 1917).

<sup>38</sup> *United States v. One Chevrolet Coupe Automobile*, 58 F. 24, 235 (C. A. 9, 1912).

<sup>39</sup> *United States v. One Cadillac Coach Automobile*, 205 Fed. 376 (D. C. M. T. Penn. 1913).

<sup>40</sup> *United States v. One Cadillac Coach Automobile*, 205 Fed. 376 (D. C. M. T. Penn. 1913).

## SECTION 4 LOCALITY WHERE THESE MEASURES APPLY

The statutes examined above comprise the existing prohibitions and enforcement measures concerning the Indian liquor traffic. But the picture is not complete without an understanding of the locality where these measures apply. Recent statutes have made this fairly clear with regard to lands within the United States proper. First, the Act of June 27, 1933, provides:

"That hereafter the special Indian liquor laws shall not apply to former Indian lands now outside of any existing Indian reservation in any case where the land is no longer held by Indians under trust patents or under any other form of deed or patent which contains restrictions against alienation without the consent of some official of the United States Government. Provided, however, That nothing in this Act shall be construed to discontinue or repeal the provisions of the Indian liquor laws which prohibit the sale, gift, barter, exchange, or other disposition of beer, wine, and other liquors to Indians of the classes set forth in the Act of January 30, 1897 (29 Stat. L. 600), and see section 241, title 27, of the United States Code.

The purpose of this act is to repeal old treaty and statutory provisions whereby lands ceded to the United States, but not joining Indian lands retained, were subjected to the Indian liquor laws.<sup>42</sup>

<sup>42</sup> 48 Stat. 1245, c. 816. *Acad. Act of June 11, 1934*, 48 Stat. 927 (Minnesota, Chippewa). But of Act of August 31, 1937, 50 Stat. 884 (Crow).

<sup>43</sup> 76d Cong., 2d sess., Sen. Rept. No. 1498 (1934). And see *Memo. Sol. T. D.*, September 28, 1930, holding that the 1934 act exempts from laws prohibiting introduction of liquor into Indian country certain unalienable lands of the Colville Reservation sold to non-Indians.

Second, ordinarily fee patented unrestricted lands are not subject to the Indian liquor laws. Congress has sometimes confirmed the Indian liquor laws in such lands.

Third, the Act of March 2, 1917, brought Osage County, Oklahoma, within the Indian liquor laws.

Fourth, by the Act of March 3, 1904,<sup>43</sup> that part of Oklahoma, formerly known as "Indian Territory," in which all liquor traffic was forbidden by the Act of March 1, 1895,<sup>44</sup> was released from the restrictions of the Indian liquor laws except as to lands on which Indian schools are or may be located. Reservation lands, allotted lands under restrictions or covered by trust patents outside of Indian reservations, and Osage County, in Oklahoma, remain as Indian country in the enforcement of liquor laws.

An interesting question arises with regard to reservation lands newly purchased and set aside for the Indians. Are these lands subject to the Indian liquor laws? This question has been decisively settled in the affirmative in the recent opinion of the United States Supreme Court in *United States v. McGowan*.<sup>45</sup>

<sup>43</sup> See for example, Act of June 4, 1930, sec. 6, 41 Stat. 751, 754 (Crow Reservation).

<sup>44</sup> 30 Stat. 969, 988, amended to exempt the manufacture and sale of industrial and beverage alcohol for lawful purposes, Act of June 15, 1902, c. 245, 47 Stat. 803.

<sup>45</sup> 48 Stat. 868, c. 44.

<sup>46</sup> 38 Stat. 688, 697, sec. 8.

<sup>47</sup> 302 U. S. 555 (1938), rev'g 89 F. 2d 201 (C. A. 8, 1937). *United States v. One Chevrolet Sedan*, 10 F. Supp. 468 (D. C. Nev. 1936). See Chapter 1, sec. 3.

Only two statutory exceptions exist to the prohibitions against liquor in Indian country. The first relates to the use of sacramental wine, as follows:

"It shall not be unlawful to introduce and use wines solely for sacramental purposes, under church authority, at any place within the Indian country or any Indian reservation including the Pechin Reservations in New Mexico."

The second exception permits liquor for lawful purposes in Chickasaw County, Oklahoma.<sup>11</sup>

Both acts still authorize exception may be found in the provisions of the Act of June 10, 1834,<sup>12</sup> making "a2 here" a matter of local option in Oklahoma.

Alaska is not covered by the Indian liquor laws.<sup>13</sup> Congress has always legislated specially for that territory with regard

<sup>11</sup> Act of August 24, 1912 (36 Stat. 518, 519, 25 U. S. C. 232).

<sup>12</sup> Act of June 10, 1834 (2 Stat. 245, 47 Stat. 260) amending the Act of March 2, 1917 (40 Stat. 909, 910, 25 U. S. C. 242).

<sup>13</sup> 18 Stat. 311, c. 107.

<sup>14</sup> The legal status of Alaska natives is discussed in Chapter 21, sec. 0. The Act of July 27, 1898 (30 Stat. 284, 21, R. S. 4, 1933) gave the President power to regulate importation and sale of distilled spirits in Alaska. Four years later the case of *United States v. Beletoff*, 27 Fed. Cas. No. 10455 (D. C. Ore., 1872) decided that Alaska was not

to liquor and has granted the power to control the liquor traffic to the territorial Legislature by the Act of April 30, 1894.<sup>14</sup>

Indian country and that the special Indian liquor laws did not extend to the new territory. In the following year, Congress extended the Indian liquor laws to Alaska by the Act of March 3, 1875, 17 Stat. 760. Again by the Act of May 27, 1884, 23 Stat. 24, Congress prohibited importation, manufacture, and sale of intoxicants to all of Alaska and its inhabitants. This measure was amended by the Act of March 2, 1890, sec. 112, 20 Stat. 1204, 1274 to limit the prohibition to drinking, to Indians.

As amended by the Act of February 6, 1900, 31 Stat. 600, 601, the Act of 1890 remains in force. In answer to the question of the Secretary of the Interior as to whether the Indian liquor laws apply to Alaska, the Acting Solicitor of the Department of the Interior in 1907 gave his opinion that they do not. His opinion revolved the following conclusion:

It is evident, therefore that Congress did not intend these provisions (the Indian liquor laws) to have application to the natives of Alaska, otherwise the enactment of section 112 above (10 Stat. 1274) would not have been necessary. That the territorial Legislature prohibited the sale of wine is shown by the fact that it has also seen fit to deal specially with the subject of liquor control among the Alaska natives (see section 1903, Stat. 1903, 1904, 1905, 1906, 1907, 1908, 1909, 1910, 1911, 1912, 1913, 1914, 1915, 1916, 1917, 1918, 1919, 1920, 1921, 1922, 1923, 1924, 1925, 1926, 1927, 1928, 1929, 1930, 1931, 1932, 1933, 1934, 1935, 1936, 1937, 1938, 1939, 1940, 1941, 1942, 1943, 1944, 1945, 1946, 1947, 1948, 1949, 1950, 1951, 1952, 1953, 1954, 1955, 1956, 1957, 1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1962, 1963, 1964, 1965, 1966, 1967, 1968, 1969, 1970, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1974, 1975, 1976, 1977, 1978, 1979, 1980, 1981, 1982, 1983, 1984, 1985, 1986, 1987, 1988, 1989, 1990, 1991, 1992, 1993, 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997, 1998, 1999, 2000, 2001, 2002, 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, 2007, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2014, 2015, 2016, 2017, 2018, 2019, 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024, 2025, 2026, 2027, 2028, 2029, 2030, 2031, 2032, 2033, 2034, 2035, 2036, 2037, 2038, 2039, 2040, 2041, 2042, 2043, 2044, 2045, 2046, 2047, 2048, 2049, 2050, 2051, 2052, 2053, 2054, 2055, 2056, 2057, 2058, 2059, 2060, 2061, 2062, 2063, 2064, 2065, 2066, 2067, 2068, 2069, 2070, 2071, 2072, 2073, 2074, 2075, 2076, 2077, 2078, 2079, 2080, 2081, 2082, 2083, 2084, 2085, 2086, 2087, 2088, 2089, 2090, 2091, 2092, 2093, 2094, 2095, 2096, 2097, 2098, 2099, 2100, 2101, 2102, 2103, 2104, 2105, 2106, 2107, 2108, 2109, 2110, 2111, 2112, 2113, 2114, 2115, 2116, 2117, 2118, 2119, 2120, 2121, 2122, 2123, 2124, 2125, 2126, 2127, 2128, 2129, 2130, 2131, 2132, 2133, 2134, 2135, 2136, 2137, 2138, 2139, 2140, 2141, 2142, 2143, 2144, 2145, 2146, 2147, 2148, 2149, 2150, 2151, 2152, 2153, 2154, 2155, 2156, 2157, 2158, 2159, 2160, 2161, 2162, 2163, 2164, 2165, 2166, 2167, 2168, 2169, 2170, 2171, 2172, 2173, 2174, 2175, 2176, 2177, 2178, 2179, 2180, 2181, 2182, 2183, 2184, 2185, 2186, 2187, 2188, 2189, 2190, 2191, 2192, 2193, 2194, 2195, 2196, 2197, 2198, 2199, 2200, 2201, 2202, 2203, 2204, 2205, 2206, 2207, 2208, 2209, 2210, 2211, 2212, 2213, 2214, 2215, 2216, 2217, 2218, 2219, 2220, 2221, 2222, 2223, 2224, 2225, 2226, 2227, 2228, 2229, 2230, 2231, 2232, 2233, 2234, 2235, 2236, 2237, 2238, 2239, 2240, 2241, 2242, 2243, 2244, 2245, 2246, 2247, 2248, 2249, 2250, 2251, 2252, 2253, 2254, 2255, 2256, 2257, 2258, 2259, 2260, 2261, 2262, 2263, 2264, 2265, 2266, 2267, 2268, 2269, 2270, 2271, 2272, 2273, 2274, 2275, 2276, 2277, 2278, 2279, 2280, 2281, 2282, 2283, 2284, 2285, 2286, 2287, 2288, 2289, 2290, 2291, 2292, 2293, 2294, 2295, 2296, 2297, 2298, 2299, 2300, 2301, 2302, 2303, 2304, 2305, 2306, 2307, 2308, 2309, 2310, 2311, 2312, 2313, 2314, 2315, 2316, 2317, 2318, 2319, 2320, 2321, 2322, 2323, 2324, 2325, 2326, 2327, 2328, 2329, 2330, 2331, 2332, 2333, 2334, 2335, 2336, 2337, 2338, 2339, 2340, 2341, 2342, 2343, 2344, 2345, 2346, 2347, 2348, 2349, 2350, 2351, 2352, 2353, 2354, 2355, 2356, 2357, 2358, 2359, 2360, 2361, 2362, 2363, 2364, 2365, 2366, 2367, 2368, 2369, 2370, 2371, 2372, 2373, 2374, 2375, 2376, 2377, 2378, 2379, 2380, 2381, 2382, 2383, 2384, 2385, 2386, 2387, 2388, 2389, 2390, 2391, 2392, 2393, 2394, 2395, 2396, 2397, 2398, 2399, 2400, 2401, 2402, 2403, 2404, 2405, 2406, 2407, 2408, 2409, 2410, 2411, 2412, 2413, 2414, 2415, 2416, 2417, 2418, 2419, 2420, 2421, 2422, 2423, 2424, 2425, 2426, 2427, 2428, 2429, 2430, 2431, 2432, 2433, 2434, 2435, 2436, 2437, 2438, 2439, 2440, 2441, 2442, 2443, 2444, 2445, 2446, 2447, 2448, 2449, 2450, 2451, 2452, 2453, 2454, 2455, 2456, 2457, 2458, 2459, 2460, 2461, 2462, 2463, 2464, 2465, 2466, 2467, 2468, 2469, 2470, 2471, 2472, 2473, 2474, 2475, 2476, 2477, 2478, 2479, 2480, 2481, 2482, 2483, 2484, 2485, 2486, 2487, 2488, 2489, 2490, 2491, 2492, 2493, 2494, 2495, 2496, 2497, 2498, 2499, 2500, 2501, 2502, 2503, 2504, 2505, 2506, 2507, 2508, 2509, 2510, 2511, 2512, 2513, 2514, 2515, 2516, 2517, 2518, 2519, 2520, 2521, 2522, 2523, 2524, 2525, 2526, 2527, 2528, 2529, 2530, 2531, 2532, 2533, 2534, 2535, 2536, 2537, 2538, 2539, 2540, 2541, 2542, 2543, 2544, 2545, 2546, 2547, 2548, 2549, 2550, 2551, 2552, 2553, 2554, 2555, 2556, 2557, 2558, 2559, 2560, 2561, 2562, 2563, 2564, 2565, 2566, 2567, 2568, 2569, 2570, 2571, 2572, 2573, 2574, 2575, 2576, 2577, 2578, 2579, 2580, 2581, 2582, 2583, 2584, 2585, 2586, 2587, 2588, 2589, 2590, 2591, 2592, 2593, 2594, 2595, 2596, 2597, 2598, 2599, 2600, 2601, 2602, 2603, 2604, 2605, 2606, 2607, 2608, 2609, 2610, 2611, 2612, 2613, 2614, 2615, 2616, 2617, 2618, 2619, 2620, 2621, 2622, 2623, 2624, 2625, 2626, 2627, 2628, 2629, 2630, 2631, 2632, 2633, 2634, 2635, 2636, 2637, 2638, 2639, 2640, 2641, 2642, 2643, 2644, 2645, 2646, 2647, 2648, 2649, 2650, 2651, 2652, 2653, 2654, 2655, 2656, 2657, 2658, 2659, 2660, 2661, 2662, 2663, 2664, 2665, 2666, 2667, 2668, 2669, 2670, 2671, 2672, 2673, 2674, 2675, 2676, 2677, 2678, 2679, 2680, 2681, 2682, 2683, 2684, 2685, 2686, 2687, 2688, 2689, 2690, 2691, 2692, 2693, 2694, 2695, 2696, 2697, 2698, 2699, 2700, 2701, 2702, 2703, 2704, 2705, 2706, 2707, 2708, 2709, 2710, 2711, 2712, 2713, 2714, 2715, 2716, 2717, 2718, 2719, 2720, 2721, 2722, 2723, 2724, 2725, 2726, 2727, 2728, 2729, 2730, 2731, 2732, 2733, 2734, 2735, 2736, 2737, 2738, 2739, 2740, 2741, 2742, 2743, 2744, 2745, 2746, 2747, 2748, 2749, 2750, 2751, 2752, 2753, 2754, 2755, 2756, 2757, 2758, 2759, 2760, 2761, 2762, 2763, 2764, 2765, 2766, 2767, 2768, 2769, 2770, 2771, 2772, 2773, 2774, 2775, 2776, 2777, 2778, 2779, 2780, 2781, 2782, 2783, 2784, 2785, 2786, 2787, 2788, 2789, 2790, 2791, 2792, 2793, 2794, 2795, 2796, 2797, 2798, 2799, 2800, 2801, 2802, 2803, 2804, 2805, 2806, 2807, 2808, 2809, 2810, 2811, 2812, 2813, 2814, 2815, 2816, 2817, 2818, 2819, 2820, 2821, 2822, 2823, 2824, 2825, 2826, 2827, 2828, 2829, 2830, 2831, 2832, 2833, 2834, 2835, 2836, 2837, 2838, 2839, 2840, 2841, 2842, 2843, 2844, 2845, 2846, 2847, 2848, 2849, 2850, 2851, 2852, 2853, 2854, 2855, 2856, 2857, 2858, 2859, 2860, 2861, 2862, 2863, 2864, 2865, 2866, 2867, 2868, 2869, 2870, 2871, 2872, 2873, 2874, 2875, 2876, 2877, 2878, 2879, 2880, 2881, 2882, 2883, 2884, 2885, 2886, 2887, 2888, 2889, 2890, 2891, 2892, 2893, 2894, 2895, 2896, 2897, 2898, 2899, 2900, 2901, 2902, 2903, 2904, 2905, 2906, 2907, 2908, 2909, 2910, 2911, 2912, 2913, 2914, 2915, 2916, 2917, 2918, 2919, 2920, 2921, 2922, 2923, 2924, 2925, 2926, 2927, 2928, 2929, 2930, 2931, 2932, 2933, 2934, 2935, 2936, 2937, 2938, 2939, 2940, 2941, 2942, 2943, 2944, 2945, 2946, 2947, 2948, 2949, 2950, 2951, 2952, 2953, 2954, 2955, 2956, 2957, 2958, 2959, 2960, 2961, 2962, 2963, 2964, 2965, 2966, 2967, 2968, 2969, 2970, 2971, 2972, 2973, 2974, 2975, 2976, 2977, 2978, 2979, 2980, 2981, 2982, 2983, 2984, 2985, 2986, 2987, 2988, 2989, 2990, 2991, 2992, 2993, 2994, 2995, 2996, 2997, 2998, 2999, 3000, 3001, 3002, 3003, 3004, 3005, 3006, 3007, 3008, 3009, 3010, 3011, 3012, 3013, 3014, 3015, 3016, 3017, 3018, 3019, 3020, 3021, 3022, 3023, 3024, 3025, 3026, 3027, 3028, 3029, 3030, 3031, 3032, 3033, 3034, 3035, 3036, 3037, 3038, 3039, 3040, 3041, 3042, 3043, 3044, 3045, 3046, 3047, 3048, 3049, 3050, 3051, 3052, 3053, 3054, 3055, 3056, 3057, 3058, 3059, 3060, 3061, 3062, 3063, 3064, 3065, 3066, 3067, 3068, 3069, 3070, 3071, 3072, 3073, 3074, 3075, 3076, 3077, 3078, 3079, 3080, 3081, 3082, 3083, 3084, 3085, 3086, 3087, 3088, 3089, 3090, 3091, 3092, 3093, 3094, 3095, 3096, 3097, 3098, 3099, 3100, 3101, 3102, 3103, 3104, 3105, 3106, 3107, 3108, 3109, 3110, 3111, 3112, 3113, 3114, 3115, 3116, 3117, 3118, 3119, 3120, 3121, 3122, 3123, 3124, 3125, 3126, 3127, 3128, 3129, 3130, 3131, 3132, 3133, 3134, 3135, 3136, 3137, 3138, 3139, 3140, 3141, 3142, 3143, 3144, 3145, 3146, 3147, 3148, 3149, 3150, 3151, 3152, 3153, 3154, 3155, 3156, 3157, 3158, 3159, 3160, 3161, 3162, 3163, 3164, 3165, 3166, 3167, 3168, 3169, 3170, 3171, 3172, 3173, 3174, 3175, 3176, 3177, 3178, 3179, 3180, 3181, 3182, 3183, 3184, 3185, 3186, 3187, 3188, 3189, 3190, 3191, 3192, 3193, 3194, 3195, 3196, 3197, 3198, 3199, 3200, 3201, 3202, 3203, 3204, 3205, 3206, 3207, 3208, 3209, 3210, 3211, 3212, 3213, 3214, 3215, 3216, 3217, 3218, 3219, 3220, 3221, 3222, 3223, 3224, 3225, 3226, 3227, 3228, 3229, 3230, 3231, 3232, 3233, 3234, 3235, 3236, 3237, 3238, 3239, 3240, 3241, 3242, 3243, 3244, 3245, 3246, 3247, 3248, 3249, 3250, 3251, 3252, 3253, 3254, 3255, 3256, 3257, 3258, 3259, 3260, 3261, 3262, 3263, 3264, 3265, 3266, 3267, 3268, 3269, 3270, 3271, 3272, 3273, 3274, 3275, 3276, 3277, 3278, 3279, 3280, 3281, 3282, 3283, 3284, 3285, 3286, 3287, 3288, 3289, 3290, 3291, 3292, 3293, 3294, 3295, 3296, 3297, 3298, 3299, 3300, 3301, 3302, 3303, 3304, 3305, 3306, 3307, 3308, 3309, 3310, 3311, 3312, 3313, 3314, 3315, 3316, 3317, 3318, 3319, 3320, 3321, 3322, 3323, 3324, 3325, 3326, 3327, 3328, 3329, 3330, 3331, 3332, 3333, 3334, 3335, 3336, 3337, 3338, 3339, 3340, 3341, 3342, 3343, 3344, 3345, 3346, 3347, 3348, 3349, 3350, 3351, 3352, 3353, 3354, 3355, 3356, 3357, 3358, 3359, 3360, 3361, 3362, 3363, 3364, 3365, 3366, 3367, 3368, 3369, 3370, 3371, 3372, 3373, 3374, 3375, 3376, 3377, 3378, 3379, 3380, 3381, 3382, 3383, 3384, 3385, 3386, 3387, 3388, 3389, 3390, 3391, 3392, 3393, 3394, 3395, 3396, 3397, 3398, 3399, 3400, 3401, 3402, 3403, 3404, 3405, 3406, 3407, 3408, 3409, 3410, 3411, 3412, 3413, 3414, 3415, 3416, 3417, 3418, 3419, 3420, 3421, 3422, 3423, 3424, 3425, 3426, 3427, 3428, 3429, 3430, 3431, 3432, 3433, 3434, 3435, 3436, 3437, 3438, 3439, 3440, 3441, 3442, 3443, 3444, 3445, 3446, 3447, 3448, 3449, 3450, 3451, 3452, 3453, 3454, 3455, 3456, 3457, 3458, 3459, 3460, 3461, 3462, 3463, 3464, 3465, 3466, 3467, 3468, 3469, 3470, 3471, 3472, 3473, 3474, 3475, 3476, 3477, 3478, 3479, 3480, 3481, 3482, 3483, 3484, 3485, 3486, 3487, 3488, 3489, 3490, 3491, 3492, 3493, 3494, 3495, 3496, 3497, 3498, 3499, 3500, 3501, 3502, 3503, 3504, 3505, 3506, 3507, 3508, 3509, 3510, 3511, 3512, 3513, 3514, 3515, 3516, 3517, 3518, 3519, 3520, 3521, 3522, 3523, 3524, 3525, 3526, 3527, 3528, 3529, 3530, 3531, 3532, 3533, 3534, 3535, 3536, 3537, 3538, 3539, 3540, 3541, 3542, 3543, 3544, 3545, 3546, 3547, 3548, 3549, 3550, 3551, 3552, 3553, 3554, 3555, 3556, 3557, 3558, 3559, 3560, 3561, 3562, 3563, 3564, 3565, 3566, 3567, 3568, 3569, 3570, 3571, 3572, 3573, 3574, 3575, 3576, 3577, 3578, 3579, 3580, 3581, 3582, 3583, 3584, 3585, 3586, 3587, 3588, 3589, 3590, 3591, 3592, 3593, 3594, 3595, 3596, 3597, 3598, 3599, 3600, 3601, 3602, 3603, 3604, 3605, 3606, 3607, 3608, 3609, 3610, 3611, 3612, 3613, 3614, 3615, 3616, 3617, 3618, 3619, 3620, 3621, 3622, 3623, 3624, 3625, 3626, 3627, 3628, 3629, 3630, 3631, 3632, 3633, 3634, 3635, 3636, 3637, 3638, 3639, 3640, 3641, 3642, 3643, 3644, 3645, 3646, 3647, 3648, 3649, 3650, 3651, 3652, 3653, 3654, 3655, 3656, 3657, 3658, 3659, 3660, 3661, 3662, 3663, 3664, 3665, 3666, 3667, 3668, 3669, 3670, 3671, 3672, 3673, 3674, 3675, 3676, 3677, 3678, 3679, 3680, 3681, 3682, 3683, 3684, 3685, 3686, 3687, 3688, 3689, 3690, 3691, 3692, 3693, 3694, 3695, 3696, 3697, 3698, 3699, 3700, 3701, 3702, 3703, 3704, 3705, 3706, 3707, 3708, 3709, 3710, 3711, 3712, 3713, 3714, 3715, 3716, 3717, 3718, 3719, 3720, 3721, 3722, 3723, 3724, 3725, 3726, 3727, 3728, 3729, 3730, 3731, 3732, 3733, 3734, 3735,



# CHAPTER 18

## CRIMINAL JURISDICTION

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 Indian Jurisdiction	354	Section 6 Crimes in Indian country by non-Indian	361
Section 2 Crimes in Indian country	356	against non-Indian	361
Section 3 Crimes in Indian country by Indian against Indian	362	Section 7 Crimes in areas within exclusive Federal jurisdiction	361
Section 4 Crimes in Indian country by Indian against non-Indian	363	Section 8 Crimes in which locus is irrelevant	361
Section 5 Crimes in Indian country by non-Indian against Indian	364		

## SECTION 1 INTRODUCTION

Criminal jurisdiction in Indian law involves an allocation of authority among federal, tribal and state courts. This allocation of authority depends in general upon three factors: subject matter, locus, and person.

Jurisdiction of the federal courts must be based in every instance upon some applicable statute, since there is no federal common law of crimes. From the standpoint of areas of application, the federal criminal statutes relating to Indian affairs are of three types:

- Those that apply regardless of the locus of the offense, such as the crime of selling liquor to an Indian.
- Those that apply within areas under the exclusive

jurisdiction of the Federal Government, such as the offense of receiving stolen goods,<sup>1</sup> and

(c) Offenses punishable only when committed within the Indian country<sup>2</sup> or within "in Indian reservation," such as, for example, the offense of possessing intoxicating liquors in the Indian country.<sup>3</sup>

The jurisdiction of tribal courts depends also upon the factors of subject matter, locus, and person, and the same may be said of state court jurisdiction. Since this study is primarily devoted to federal Indian law, only incidental attention will be paid to tribal and state penal laws relating to Indian affairs. Limitations upon the application of such laws contained in federal statutes will, however, be examined.

<sup>1</sup> 18 U. S. C. § 537. Act of March 4, 1909, c. 285, § 5 Stat. 1089, 1145, 17 U. S. C. 407.  
<sup>2</sup> See 25 U. S. C. 344 and see Chapter 17, sec. 1.

<sup>3</sup> On civil jurisdiction see Chapter 19.  
<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 17, sec. 1.

## SECTION 2 CRIMES IN INDIAN COUNTRY

Since there is a considerable body of federal legislation punishing various acts committed on Indian reservations or within Indian country, the question may be raised in any case involving such legislation whether the offense charged was in fact committed within in Indian reservation or in the Indian country. The definition of these terms has been considered elsewhere.<sup>4</sup> For present purposes it is enough to summarize the general conclusions which are elsewhere noted:

- (1) Tribal land is considered Indian country for purposes of federal criminal jurisdiction.<sup>5</sup>
- (2) An allotment held under patent in fee and subject to reversion against alienation is likewise considered Indian country for purposes of federal criminal jurisdiction.<sup>6</sup>
- (3) An allotment held under trust patent, with title in the Government, is likewise considered Indian country during the trust period.<sup>7</sup>

- (4) Right of way across an Indian reservation is considered "Indian country" for some or all purposes of federal criminal jurisdiction.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>5</sup> The Act of June 28, 1934, 47 Stat. 498, amended sec. 548 of title 19 of the United States Code which originally applied "within the limits of any Indian reservation so as to apply 'on and within any Indian reservation under the jurisdiction of the United States Government, including rights of way running through the reservation'". Interpreting this phrase the Solicitor of the Interior Department declared:

"... it is my opinion that the amendment should be given its apparent and normal meaning, namely, that the phrase referring to rights of way was intended to provide for Federal jurisdiction over all rights of way running through any Indian reservation. This is reinforced by the proper position for this Department to take in view of the following considerations:

"The probable judicial construction of the amendment would be that the amendment was intended to include within Federal jurisdiction all rights of way, inasmuch as the previous division of jurisdiction over rights of way in Indian reservations. Prior to the passage of the amendment the courts had concluded that rights of way to which the Indian title had not been extinguished remained part of the reservation and within Federal jurisdiction, whereas other rights of way to which such title had been extinguished were considered to be outside jurisdiction. A court would presume that in view of this state of the law any amendment referring to rights of way actually would be intended to provide a uniform rule. If only a statement of existing law had been intended the reference in the amendment would rather have been to rights of way to which the Indian title had not been extinguished, or no mention of the subject would have been made at all.

Moreover it would be presumed by a court that this Depart-

<sup>4</sup> See Chapter 1, sec. 3; Chapter 3, Chapter 8.  
<sup>5</sup> See Chapter 1, sec. 1.  
<sup>6</sup> United States v. Burton, 217 U. S. 291 (1909), rev'd 365 Fed. 273 (D. C. E. D. Wash., 1908), *Heilouff v. United States*, 221 U. S. 817 (1911), *United States v. Pichon*, 222 U. S. 442 (1914), *See note* Para. 96 F. 2d 28 (C. A. 7, 1938). *See also Van Moore*, 221 Fed. 964 (D. C. D., 1915).

(7) It is questionable whether land held by an Indian under a fee patent without restriction is Indian country for purposes of federal criminal jurisdiction, the weight of authority is that the land is not Indian country within the meaning of federal penal statutes.<sup>10</sup>

The territorial limits of the jurisdiction of tribal courts and courts of Indian offenses<sup>11</sup> have not been considered in detail in any reported case. The following discussion is taken from an administrative ruling by the Solicitor for the Interior Department dealing with the question.<sup>12</sup>

May an Indian court exercise jurisdiction over acts committed by Indians on unrestricted lands within an Indian reservation, where the Indians concerned are properly before the court?

Questions of court jurisdiction frequently turn on upon analysis to be a confused mixture of questions dealing with international law, constitutional law, statutory construction and common law principles. It is important, therefore, that we define the question that comes up, as is clearly and explicitly possible. In asking whether an Indian court has "jurisdiction" over acts committed in certain areas we are concerned to ascertain whether such a court commands a recognized act, that is to say, an act which is punishable or cognizable in a State or Federal court, if it occurs in the land and punishment of an Indian who is before the court, on the basis of an act which that Indian has performed in the area designated. A question of jurisdiction arises when an Indian who is before an Indian court claims that the judges of such court are acting without proper authority and that such action, therefore, constitutes assault, libel, imprisonment, trespass, or some similar offense under State or Federal law. If so, the court is necessary in passing upon such a jurisdictional question to inquire into the basis of authority upon which an Indian court acts. This is a subject which has been dealt with elsewhere at some length.<sup>13</sup>

Whether the Indian Court is an administrative law court of Indian Offenses in a tribal court, it appears that each has sufficient authority to decide in its jurisdiction the final

and Congress would have been concerned to do away with the unsatisfactory situation resulting from the uncertain status of jurisdiction over Indians on Indian reservations. This would be in conformity with the basic principle of statutory construction that legislation is intended to correct existing evils. The evil to be remedied in this instance was the uncertainty and confusion resulting from the fact that the reservation was a number of rights of way, whose ownership status depended on different statutes and regulations, and the title to which could be definitely stated only through judicial investigation and that although the title to the land had been determined there was still the administrative difficulty arising from differences in jurisdiction over small strips of territory. This administrative difficulty was pointed out in the Supreme Court decision in *United States v. Adkins*, 248 U. S. 630 in which Justice Brandeis said that to except the highway strip from the reservation would cut the reservation in two and make it more difficult, if not impossible to protect the Indians as the criminal statute intended.

If the amendment is given its obvious construction that of covering all strips of way under Federal jurisdiction the construction made is in conformity with the policies of the Department based upon its own research and that of responsible organizations. The survey of law and order within Indian reservations on the Northwest and in the Institute for Governmental Research and Administration, a Subcommittee of the Committee on Indian Affairs, United States Senate 72d Congress, 1st session, Part 20, pages 141-142, recommended that legislation be drafted defining the Indian reservation for purposes of Federal jurisdiction as including all rights of way regardless of their ownership. The Law and Order Regulations of the Department approved November 27, 1935 and based upon a survey made in 1934 and 1935, recommended prohibition of Indian reservations for the purpose of tribal jurisdiction at including public and other parts of the reservation not necessarily in Indian ownership. This type of provision has likewise been included in many tribal law and order codes. (Memo. Sol. I. D. 1940)

<sup>10</sup> *Of Eugene Sol Louis v. United States* 274 Fed. 47 (C. C. A. 9, 1921), *State v. Monroe* 89 Mont. 536, 274 Pac. 101 (1929)

<sup>11</sup> See for regulations on Law and Order on Indian Reservations, 25 C. P. 2 151-1-161 800

<sup>12</sup> Memo. Sol. I. D., April 27, 1939

<sup>13</sup> See Chapter I, sec. 8

and punishment of offenses by Indians which were committed on unrestricted land.

If on the one hand Courts of Indian Offenses be considered, as suggested in the *Chapoy* case, to be not regular judicial bodies but "more educational and disciplinary instrumentalities," the propriety of educational and disciplinary action which such courts might exercise depends upon the relationship between the court and the person disciplined. On this view the location of the offense to which the discipline is directed becomes unimportant. An Indian Service hospital if treats a diseased Indian regardless of where the disease was contracted. An Indian Service school may control the conduct of its pupils and administer discipline on a school at Indian land, though Texas, as well as on restricted Indian land. (See *Pick v. U. S. & N. P. Ry Co.*, 91 S. W. 324) An Indian will be regarded as situated at directed a member of a given tribe in eligible candidate for a certain position in office regardless of where the acts leading to such a personal status may have taken place. So, if action of a Court of Indian Offenses is regarded as "educational and disciplinary" rather than strictly judicial, such action is not restricted in its horizon to given territory. The Indian who commits his flow transgression on fee patented land within the reservation is subject to disciplinary action by the Court of Indian Offenses in the same manner as if the offense had been committed on restricted Indian land. Perhaps the closest analogy to this "educational and disciplinary" theory of the functions of a Court of Indian Offenses is to be found in the common law of domestic relations. The common law still operates as a disciplinary power upon parents with respect to their children. To a certain extent landlords actually may exercise such power over their wards. In none of these cases is the exercise of such authority limited by mere consideration of the locality of the transgression. See *Townsend v. Kendrick* 4 Minn. 414, 77 Am. C. 531

In *United States v. Burt*, 17 Fed. 75, it was held that an Indian in and out of the reservation in which he was in the charge of an Indian agent was subject to the power of forbidding the sale of liquor to such Indians. In *Peters v. Indian* 111 Fed. 244, the court stated that wherever Indians are found within the tribal relations, the control and management of their affairs is in the Federal Government irrespective of the title to the land upon which they might, for the time being, be located. In that case the State law of guardianship was held not to apply to tribal Indians either at an individual school or the reservation or at a reservation the title to which was in the Government of Iowa. Moreover, the State criminal law was held not to apply to the removal of a child from a reservation and his detention from a Government school, indicating that these acts outside the reservation were of concern to the Federal Government because of the personal relationship between the Government and its wards. "The relation of dependency existing between tribal Indians and the national government does not grow out of the ownership of the land either by the Indians or the government." (Page 270)

This principle has been followed in administrative practice since the beginning. "The Superintendents and the Courts of Indian Offenses have not in the past refrained from using coercive measures for violations of the regulations because the violations occurred on restricted land. It may be doubted whether the Indian courts have ever made a practice of inquiring into the title of the land where the violation occurred. Nor have the departmental regulations required such inquiry and restriction." The 1904 law and order regulations of the Indian Office (sections 584-591, Regulations of the Indian Office, 1904) gave the Courts of Indian Offenses original jurisdiction over Indian offenses, including participation in the Sun Dance, contract for a plural marriage, procuring the attendance of children at school, and other misdemeanors committed by Indians "belonging to the reservation," without any limitation as to where the offense might be committed. It was not intended that Indians could dance the Sun Dance and practice polygamy with impunity merely because they did so on non-reserved land. Such a distinction would have defeated the educational purpose of the regulations. On the contrary, the 1904 regulations went so far as to

authorize police surveillance of the Indians leaving the reservation and to contemplate their arrest and punish them for infraction of the rules outside the reservation (sections 285-289).

However, whatever may be the disciplinary authority of the Secretary of the Interior over the conduct of Indians wards outside an Indian reservation, the Indian reservation itself has been considered an area peculiarly set apart as a domain within which the Federal Government exercises guardianship over the Indians. This guardianship is extended to all the Indians within the reservation, regardless of their residence or temporary location on unrestricted land. In the early days after the allotment of these lands a tendency to withdraw protection from all and to protect Indians. This tendency was later reversed and Federal guardianship over tribal Indians has been recognized in spite of citizenship, possession of the plots or residence on unrestricted land. A recent and interesting recognition of administrative supervision over all Indians within the boundaries of the reservation is found in the case of *United States v. Deery County*, 11 F. (2d) 781 (D. U. S. D. 1926). *Aldrich County v. United States*, 26 F. (2d) 445 (C. C. 8th, 1928). The following quotations which uphold the authority of the Department to make rules and regulations governing all the Indians on the reservation, particularly for Indians residing on fee patented lands, are set forth by way of their peculiar applicability to the questions involved.

"In the belt of the plain determination of the question of the right the power and the duty of Congress to terminate the relation of guardianship and wind the free patent Indians named in the commission must be to be made by the government unless there is legislation of Congress clearly indicating the intent and purpose to terminate the relation. Defendant neglects consideration of the Act of June 23, 1910 (34 Stat. 576)."

"This in my opinion is a short of a congressional declaration that the relationship of guardianship and wind shall be the issue of the [free] patent. It is simply a step recognizing some progress by the Indians as being competent to handle the particular part of land, and the act affords to him only the power to manage and dispose of the particular land. There is neither language plainly expressing nor from which it may be reasonably inferred, that there is any intent or purpose that they should be taken out of the title of Indians, that their tribal relations should cease and they should have no further interest in the tribal lands or in the matters to be paid for such lands. That they should, from that time forward, be subject to the agent provided for the benefit of Indians to which they belong so to the rules and regulations promulgated by the Indian Department as to the government of the reservation and all of the Indians thereon the education of their children, and the policy that the agent is required to work out with and for the members of the tribes."

"In the absence of further declaration on the part of Congress that the guardianship of the government shall terminate as to those Indians, it seems clear that it must be so held as to those Indians, whom [free] patents have been issued, who are found by this record to be members of the Cheyenne band of Sioux Indians, that they all had their allotments, that they all resided on their [free patent] allotments or near them within the original lands of the Cheyenne Reservation, and some of them within the diminished portions thereof, that all of said Indians, at all times mentioned in the complaint, appeared on the rolls at the Cheyenne River agency, that they are entitled to participate and receive of tribal funds and of the rents and profits of all tribal lands, together with the fact that the government maintains an agency and agent in charge of said tribe of Indians, including these particular Indians named in the complaint, are still wards of the government, that the government is still the guardian of all of these Indians, with control of their property, except in so far as that

control of their property is released by the legislation above referred to and the Indians are thereby granted the power to manage and control the particular piece of land involved in the fee simple patent." (The case supplied.)

The foregoing authorities make it clear that if Indian courts are viewed as administrative agencies of the Interior Department then authority is not limited to offenses committed on restricted land.

If, on the other hand, the Indian courts are viewed as tribal courts, deriving their power from the investment of elements of tribal sovereignty, it must be recognized that this sovereignty is primarily a personal rather than a territorial sovereignty. The tribal court has no jurisdiction over non-Indians, unless they consent to such jurisdiction. Its jurisdiction is solely a jurisdiction over persons. We must therefore beware of reading into the statute of this jurisdiction the common law principle of the territoriality of criminal law. As was said in the case of *Booth v. Taylor*, 174 W. 304, 2 End. T. R.

If the Creek Nation derived its system of jurisdiction through the common law, there would be much plausibility in this reasoning. But they are strangers to the common law. They derive their jurisdiction from an entirely different source and they are as much entitled to their own terms and conditions as they are with Shoshone or the Navaho.

We must recognize that the general common law doctrine of the territoriality of criminal law has validity in justice only insofar as it is embodied in our criminal statutes. It is not a principle of logic or eternal reason. There are numerous well recognized exceptions to this doctrine.

There are, in the first place, certain offenses for which citizens of the United States are punishable in United States courts no matter where the offenses are committed (see, 18 U. S. C. Secs. 1-7). The power of the Federal Government to detain and punish its citizens should in subjecting them when they return to this jurisdiction, to trial and punishment for offenses committed abroad has never been successfully challenged. (See *The Appalto*, 2 Wheat. 462, at 470.) If this power has been exercised, not only in exceptional cases, but is because as a matter of policy it is generally believed that the power to punish for extrajurisdictional offenses should be invoked only under special circumstances.

A second departure from the general rule of territoriality is presented by the jurisdiction vested in Congress over Indian affairs. It is well settled that this Congressional jurisdiction does not apply simply to the "Indian country" but applies to offenses no matter where committed.

"The question is not one of power in the national government, for, as it has been shown, Congress may provide for the punishment of the same wherever committed in the United States. Its jurisdiction is co-extensive with the subject-matter—the intercourse between the white man and the tribal Indian—and is not limited to place or other circumstances." (*United States v. Johnston*, 22 Fed. 288.)

Again, it is a matter of policy, and not of law, to say how far Congress should extend its laws over Indians "off the reservation." The Indian liquor laws are the outstanding instance of a jurisdiction not limited to offenses committed within the reservation. (23 U. S. C. Sec. 241.)

A third recognized departure from the territorial principle is found in the application of Federal laws to citizens in certain Eastern countries. Americans committing offenses in unincorporated countries, for instance, are liable before United States courts (22 U. S. Code, Sec. 150). And Americans committing offenses in China are liable in the United States Court for China (*Biddle v. United States*, 135 Fed. 739) on which the Circuit Court of Appeals for the Ninth Circuit exercises appellate jurisdiction (22 U. S. Code, Secs. 191-202).

A fourth important limitation upon the doctrine of territoriality is the rule that in civil cases a court which has jurisdiction over the parties may consider all the elements of the case regardless of geographical considerations.

If then an Indian court is to be considered a judicial organ of Indian tribal sovereignty, we must recognize that this sovereignty is not a strictly territorial sovereignty, but primarily a personal sovereignty. We may therefore approach the problem of defining the scope of this sovereignty without begging the question by assuming, in advance, that the sovereignty is limited to any particular kind of land. The recognized exceptions to the general rule of territoriality are closely to the situation here presented than the rule itself.

In defining the powers of an Indian tribe we look to Federal laws and treaties and for the basis of sovereignty but for the limit thereof on tribal powers.<sup>10</sup>

In the absence of Federal law to the contrary, it is for the tribe to decide as a matter of its own public policy whether members of the tribe who may properly appear before the judicial organs of the tribe shall be liable and punishable for acts committed on unceded land. The answer given to this question in the Law and Order Regulations promulgated by the Secretary of the Interior November 27, 1911, and approved by numerous tribal councils before and after that date is unmistakable, section 1 of chapter 1 reads:

"A Court of Indian Offenses shall have jurisdiction over all offenses committed in Chapter 5 which are committed by an Indian within the reservation or reservation land in which the Court is established."

With respect to any of the offenses committed in chapter 5 over which Federal or State courts may have lawful jurisdiction the jurisdiction of the Court of Indian Offenses shall be concurrent and not exclusive. It shall be the duty of the said Court of Indian Offenses to refer delinquents to the proper authorities of the State or Federal Government or of any other tribe or reservation, for prosecution any offender there to be dealt with according to law or regulations authorized by law, where such authorities are not to exercise jurisdiction lawfully vested in them over the said offender.

"For the purpose of the enforcement of these regulations, in Indian shall be deemed to be any person of Indian descent who is a member of any recognized Indian tribe now under Federal jurisdiction, and a reservation shall be taken to include all territory within reservation boundaries including fee patented lands, lands, waters, bridges, and lands used for agency purposes."

The question remains, then, whether this statement of authority is in conflict with any Federal law.

That the original sovereignty of an Indian tribe extended to the punishment of a member by the proper tribal officers for depredations, or other forms of wrongs that committed outside the territory of the tribe, may be challenged. Certainly we cannot read into the laws and customs of the Indian tribes a principle of territoriality of jurisdiction with which they were totally unfamiliar, and which the country has adopted as an absolute rule. That Indian tribes friendly to the United States acted to punish their members for depredations committed against whites outside of the Indian country is a matter of historical record. Will any one claim that such punishment was unconstitutional? The fact is that the United States, over a long period, encouraged the Indian tribes to help in controlling the conduct of their members outside of the Indian country, and in order to encourage such control made the tribe responsible for such individual offenses.

The analysis of Federal laws applicable to the situation under consideration indicates that the right of Indian tribal authorities to punish certain members of the tribe for offenses, no matter where committed, has not only never been denied but has been positively recognized. The act of June 30, 1884 (48 Stat. 731), which is still in many respects the basis of Indian administration, placed upon the Indian "nation or tribe" the responsibility of securing redress for depredations committed by individual

members of the nation or tribe outside of, as well as within, the Indian country.<sup>11</sup>

This provision places responsibility upon the tribal authorities for the wrongs of individual Indians committed outside of the reservation clearly contemplates that the tribal authorities will do it in proper fashion with such individual Indians. While the occasion that gave rise to this legislation may have disappeared, the practical basis of tribal action which the legislation assumed has never been challenged.

Provisions similar to that above quoted are found in many treaties with Indian tribes. (See, for instance, *Treaty with the Kiowa, et al.*, July 24, 1874 (47 Stat. 511) Secs. 3, 5, Treaty with the Comanches, et al., July 27, 1851 (10 Stat. 1014), Art. 5, Treaty with the Kiowa, Arapaho, Indians September 10, 1875 (10 Stat. 1018), Art. 6, Treaty with the Blackfoot, October 17, 1855 (41 Stat. 667), Art. 11.)

Federal laws affecting the personal status of Indians have no direct bearing upon our present problem. The Civil Allotment Law of February 8, 1887 (24 Stat. 390), is modified by the act of May 8, 1906 (34 Stat. 182), provides:

At the expiration of the first period, and when the lands have been conveyed to the Indians by patent in fee as provided in section 488 then each and every allottee shall have the benefit of and be subject to the laws, both civil and criminal, of the State or Territory in which they may reside. (25 U. S. C. Sec. 489.)

Because of this provision fee patent allottees have been held to be subject to the laws of the State wherever they may be within the reservation. *Boyer, Not a Law v. United States*, 274 Fed. Tr. 116 (C. A. 9th, 1922). *United States v. Montano*, 83 Mont. 676, 274 P. 590 (1923). However, this fact does not mean that so long as the fee patent Indians live within the outer boundaries of the reservation and maintain tribal relations they are not also subject to the rules and regulations of the Department and to the tribal ordinances governing tribal members. That they are so subject is stated in the recent case of *United States v. Deacy County*, from which extensive quotation to this effect is given above.

Moreover, the allotment act certainly did not make a fee patented allotment a place of sanctuary on which even unallotted members of the tribe may commit offenses without the risk of intense punishment at his tribe. Fee patented lands are undeniably subject to State jurisdiction, but in the words of the Supreme Court, there is "no denial of the personal jurisdiction of the United States" (*United States v. Celestine*, 217 U. S. 275, 281), and neither is there any denial of the personal jurisdiction of the tribe. It is for the Federal Government itself to decide whether it shall retain jurisdiction over certain offenses by Indians, e. g., liquor offenses on fee patented land, and relinquish to the State jurisdiction over certain other offenses. Likewise, it is for the Indian tribe itself, subject only to limitation by Congress, to decide whether it shall retain jurisdiction over certain offenses committed by members of the tribe on such land.

The fact that Federal courts have refrained from taking jurisdiction of Indian offenses on fee patented lands does not negative the jurisdiction of the Indian courts. Since the fallacy of identifying the jurisdiction of the one with the other is a ready one, an analysis of the fundamental distinctions between them is desirable.

The Federal District Courts have been authorized by Congress to exercise jurisdiction over specific crimes committed by Indians or white people near Indians in the "Indian country" and in "Indian reservations." The Federal courts have no jurisdiction other than that granted by Federal statute. On the other hand, the Indian tribes retain all their original jurisdiction over their members except as may be limited by Federal statutes. Likewise, the authority of the Department to exercise administrative supervision over Indians is not based

<sup>10</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 2

267786—41—25

<sup>11</sup> See R. S. § 2126, 26 U. S. C. 226

upon a statutory specification of crime and committed in jurisdiction but, as previously indicated, upon a statutory duty of extradition and Congressional authorization to mind in order on Indian reservations. See *United States v. Quire*, 241 U. S. 662, at 667.

The Federal court exercises in absolute and exclusive jurisdiction over Indians when their crime falls within the criminalities created by the Statute. There is no statutory authority for concurrent jurisdiction of State and Federal courts when an Indian in Indian land becomes subject to State jurisdiction. All the Federal courts have jurisdiction, the State court do not, and vice versa. Therefore, there is no prohibition on a Federal opinion by the Indian Department to exercise protective measures over Indians within the reservation when the State has jurisdiction but refuses to handle the case or upon a determination by the tribe that members unprotected by State action shall be subject to correction by the tribal court.

Furthermore, the Federal court in exercising judicial power is courts established by Congress pursuant to the United States Constitution, whereas the Department through the Court of Indian Offenses is not exercising judicial power but administrative supervision power and the tribe is exercising tribal power over the persons of its members. The establishment of an Indian court and the extent of its jurisdiction is, therefore, in both cases an administrative policy question. No court is established where there is little restricted land. Courts are established, however, where there is much restricted land within a reservation. The Federal courts are delegated to take jurisdiction of crimes coming within the Federal statutes upon restricted lands regardless of administrative need. It would not be argued that there is any obligation on the part of the Department to exercise protective measures on such restricted lands if it is not advisable or necessary. In other words it has often been recognized that the jurisdiction of the Federal courts and of the Indian courts does not coincide, since they derive their authority from different powers and function for different purposes.

I have reviewed the Federal laws which might be viewed as restricting or limiting the power of the Indian court to try and punish in Indian land an offense committed on restricted land within a reservation. I find no Federal law imposing any such limitation.

In these provisions of the Federal Constitution that preclude such exercise of jurisdiction? Would such an exercise of authority, in an area where the State may exercise a concurrent jurisdiction, constitute "double jeopardy" and violate the Fifth Amendment to the Federal Constitution?

Even if it could be maintained, in the face of the decision in *Tolson v. Allen*, 144 U. S. 310, that constitutional limitations under the "due process" clause are applicable to an Indian court, there is no force in the argument that the exercise of jurisdiction by such a court in these cases would subject the offender to "double jeopardy." The fact that an offense committed outside of restricted Indian lands may be subject to punishment in State courts does not make it unconstitutional for the court of another sovereignty to punish the same person for the same act.

The decided cases clearly establish the principle that an individual who in a single act offends against the laws

of several jurisdictions may be constitutionally punished by the agencies of each jurisdiction.<sup>21</sup>

In view of these decisions of the United States Supreme Court it is clear that in fact it is punishable in State courts as well as in punishment in an Indian court. There remains, of course, a question of public policy to be considered in asserting jurisdiction over acts which are subject to neither jurisdiction. This question is met by a specific provision in the Law and Order Regulations that set forth, under which cases in which Indian tribal jurisdiction is concurrent with State jurisdiction are to be turned over to State authorities, if such authorities are willing to exercise jurisdiction. This is undoubtedly a reasonable provision in view of the fact that the State may be, in many cases, unwilling to exercise even an admitted jurisdiction over Indians with respect to acts committed on unrestricted Indian lands within a reservation.

It should further be noted that the Law and Order Regulations do not purport to cover offenses committed outside of Indian reservations. There is therefore no immediate occasion to consider the legal and administrative problems that would be raised by any such exercise of jurisdiction. It is enough for all present purposes to note that the exercise of jurisdiction by an Indian court, under the departmental law and order of tribal courts, does not diminish the jurisdiction of State courts, does not subject the offender to "double jeopardy," and is not prohibited by any known Federal statute.

There remains the final question whether the action of an Indian court in trying and punishing in Indian land an offense committed within the jurisdiction of the State courts may violate the State law. While it is impossible to decide an issue of this sort in the abstract with entire certainty, it is enough to say that I know of no State legislation which would prohibit with such exercise of jurisdiction by an Indian court, and since the writer is one that concerns the relations between an Indian and his tribe it would appear to be a matter on which State legislation would be ineffective. *Thacker v. State of Georgia*, 6 Cal. 711, *United States v. Quire*, 241 U. S. 662, *United States v. Hamilton*, 238 Fed. 685, *In re Macdonald*, 100 Fed. 189, *In re Lincoln*, 124 Fed. 247, and see Opinion M. 28769, approved December 31, 1936, on the right of State game warden to make watches on an Indian reservation. In view of the foregoing authorities, I am of the opinion that an Indian court which orders the trial and punishment of an Indian before the court, on the basis of acts committed on unrestricted lands within an Indian reservation, does not offend against any State or Federal law.<sup>22</sup>

In certain offenses the nature of the offense and the character of the laws in force establish federal jurisdiction without reference to the question whether the accused or the injured party is an Indian.<sup>23</sup> In other offenses, jurisdiction depends among other things upon the persons involved. In the following sections (3-6) we shall deal with jurisdiction over offenses in Indian country as affected by the character of the parties.

<sup>21</sup> See *Young v. Minolta*, 14 Nov. 13, 10 (1892), *United States v. Lanza* 280 U. S. 377, 379-380, 382 (1922).

<sup>22</sup> Further discussion in the memorandum cited reaches the conclusion that Indian police may make arrests of Indians on unrestricted lands within a reservation.

<sup>23</sup> "In this offense (intoxicating liquor into Indian country) neither race or color are significant." *United States v. Burton*, 215 U. S. 302, 306 (1909). Accord *Perin v. United States*, 235 U. S. 478 (1914).

<sup>24</sup> This statement must now be qualified because of the passage of the act of June 8, 1910, Public No. 310—76th Cong., which conferred jurisdiction on the State of Kansas over offenses committed by an against Indians on Indian reservations in the State.

### SECTION 3. CRIMES IN INDIAN COUNTRY BY INDIAN AGAINST INDIAN

Offenses committed by Indians against Indians within the Indian country are ordinarily subject to the jurisdiction of tribal courts. This is a consequence of the doctrine of tribal self government.<sup>24</sup> In determining whether an offense by an Indian against an Indian falls within the jurisdiction of tribal

courts, we look to Federal laws and treaties only for the limitations on tribal authority. The most important of such limitations is found in the Act of March 8, 1885.<sup>25</sup> This act brought

<sup>25</sup> 23 Stat. 982, 988, 18 U. S. C. 548. Later amendments of this act and problems raised in its application are discussed in Chapter 7, notes 2 and 9.

<sup>26</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 9.

under the jurisdiction certain offenses committed by Indians against Indians, notably murder, manslaughter, rape, assault with intent to kill, arson, burglary, and larceny. In later years robbery, incest, and assault with a dangerous weapon were added to this list. A few other federal statutes relating, mostly to non-Indians as well as Indians are applicable to offenses by non-Indians against Indians committed on an Indian reservation.

It has been held that where jurisdiction over murder or manslaughter is thus conferred upon the federal courts such jurisdiction is exclusive, and the tribal courts may not act to punish a member of the tribe who has killed another member.<sup>1</sup> Authority on this point, however, is not conclusive, and it would be a

<sup>1</sup> Act of March 4, 1909, sec. 828, 36 Stat. 1088, 1181, Act of June 28, 1902, 32 Stat. 490, 537.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter V, fn. 226.

<sup>3</sup> United States v. Whalley, 37 Fed. 145 (C. C. S. D. Cal. 1888), and see Chapter V, fn. 227.

## SECTION 4. CRIMES IN INDIAN COUNTRY BY INDIAN AGAINST NON-INDIAN

An Indian committing offenses in the Indian country against a non-Indian is subject to the Act of March 3, 1885, section 8,<sup>2</sup> which, with an amendment, became section 326 of the United States Criminal Code of 1910 and now is section 548 of title 18 of the United States Code,<sup>3</sup> providing for the prosecution in the federal courts of Indians committing, within Indian reservations, any of 10 (formerly 7, then 8) specially mentioned offenses whether against Indians or against non-Indians.<sup>4</sup> Apart from

<sup>1</sup> 23 Stat. 402, 453, 18 U. S. C. 748. Interpreted *On Hay He Pits* (1901), 130 U. S. 448 (1889).

<sup>2</sup> Under this section, as originally enacted the enumerated crimes were within the jurisdiction of territorial courts when sitting as such and not when sitting as federal district or circuit courts. *On Hay He Pits*, 130 U. S. 448 (1889). This was true regardless of whether the offense was committed within an Indian reservation. *Captain Jack*, 130 U. S. 864 (1889). For a complete history of this act see *United States v. Kagame*, 118 U. S. 876 (1886).

<sup>3</sup> Murder committed by an Indian against a non-Indian on a United States Indian reservation is a crime against the authority of the United States and within the cognizance of federal courts without reference to the citizenship of the accused. *Appas v. United States*, 238 U. S. 897 (1914). For the purposes of enforcement of 18 U. S. C. 548, the son of an Indian mother and a half-breed father, both of whom were recognized as Indians and maintained tribal relations, and who himself lived on a reservation and maintained tribal relations and was recognized as an Indian, was an "Indian" within the meaning of the federal statute. *Re Foster*, 90 U. S. 22 (1875) (C. C. A. 9, 1888), cert. den. 90 U. S. 843. Also see *Rebery v. United States*, 162 U. S. 490 (1896).

<sup>4</sup> It is not clear whether or how far the Act of 1885 applied to the so-called "Indian Territory." By Art. 18 of the Cherokee Treaty of July 19, 1866, 14 Stat. 799, 803 (see Chapter 1, sec. 2), the establishment of a court of the United States in the Cherokee territory was provided for.

\* \* \* with such jurisdiction and organized in such manner as may be prescribed by law. Provided: That the judicial tribunals of the nation shall be allowed to retain exclusive jurisdiction in all civil and criminal cases arising within their country in which members of the nation, by nativity or adoption shall be the only parties, (italics added) or where the cause of action shall arise in the Cherokee nation, except as otherwise provided in this treaty.

Further, sec. 80 of the Act of May 2, 1890, 26 Stat. 811, 84, providing a temporary government for the Territory of Oklahoma and annexing the jurisdiction of the United States court in the Indian Territory, provided:

\* \* \* That the judicial tribunals of the Indian nations shall retain exclusive jurisdiction in all civil and criminal cases arising in the country in which members of the nation by nativity or by adoption shall be the only parties (italics added). \* \* \*

and sec. 81 declared that:

\* \* \* nothing in this act shall be so construed as to deprive any of the courts of the civilized nations of exclusive jurisdiction over all cases arising between members of said nations, whether by treaty, blood, or adoption, are the sole parties, (italics added) nor as to deprive the federal courts of the power of civilized nations to punish said members for violation of the statutes and laws enacted by their national councils where such laws are not contrary to the treaties and laws of the United States.

such instances that a tribe is precluded from dealing with such matters is partly thereby between members of a tribe.

While, it is noted, the jurisdiction of the tribe over offenses between Indians does not depend upon title of statutory authority, it may be noted that the policy of the Federal Government to respect such tribal jurisdiction is embodied in a series of statutes stretching back to the Act of March 3, 1817, which, after establishing federal jurisdiction over Indian offenses, declared:

*Provided*, That nothing in this act shall be so construed as to affect any treaty now in force between the United States and any Indian nation, or to extend to any offense committed by one Indian against another, within any Indian boundary.

Early treaties guaranteeing tribal jurisdiction over matters affecting only Indians have been elsewhere discussed.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>5</sup> 48 Stat. 493. See also fn. 1.

<sup>6</sup> See Chapter 3, sec. 4D and fn.

These ten major crimes<sup>6</sup> in Indian committing offenses in the Indian country against a non-Indian is subject to the code of federal territorial offenses,<sup>7</sup> except in two situations: (a) Where he "has been punished by the local laws of the tribe," and (b) "where, by treaty stipulations, the exclusive jurisdiction over such offenses is or may be secured to the Indian tribes respectively." The substance of the present law on this subject goes back to early treaties, some of which indicated the Federal Constitution, stipulating that Indians committing offenses against citizens of the United States should be delivered up by their tribes to the nearest post, to be punished according to the ordinances of the United States.<sup>8</sup>

The first federal enactment dealing generally with crimes by Indians against non-Indians in Indian country was the Act of March 3, 1817.<sup>9</sup> This provision was subsequently incorporated in section 25 of the Trade and Intercourse Act of 1834,<sup>10</sup>

It will be noted that this act omits that portion of the thirteenth article of the treaty, wherein is reserved to the judicial tribunals of the nation exclusive jurisdiction "while the cause of the action shall arise in the Cherokee Nation," and to that extent apparently supersedes the treaty. Considering the word "nation" in meaning parties to the crime and not simply to the prosecution of the crime, it would appear that the Act of 1817 would apply to the "Indian Territory" only in cases where the offense was one of an Indian against a non-Indian. See *United States v. Liberty*, 159 U. S. 129, 130 (1896). Followed in *Noble v. United States*, 161 U. S. 697 (1897). In an indictment for murder in the Chickasaw Nation, Indian Territory, availing both deceased and accused were white men, proof that the deceased was a white man establishes the jurisdiction, and the averment as to the citizenship of the accused is surplusage. *Stevens v. United States*, 58 Fed. 108 (C. C. A. 5, 1896), *rev. 162 U. S. 812* (1896). In a case where the Indian defendant is treated as the sole party, the Indian courts would have jurisdiction whether the victim of the crime was Indian or a non-Indian. This was done in a case of adultery, in which the name of the prosecuting witness did not appear and some there was no adverse party, the woman being a consenting party, the Indian defendant was regarded as the sole party to the proceeding. *In re Moughtel*, *Penitentiary*, 141 U. S. 107 (1891).

<sup>11</sup> 25 U. S. C. 217-218. See sec. 7, infra.

<sup>12</sup> See § 9, Act IX of Treaty of January 21, 1785, with the Windeats and others, 7 Stat. 16, 17, Art. VI of Treaty of November 28, 1785, with the Cherokee, 7 Stat. 18. And see Chapter 1, sec. 3, fn. 48.

<sup>13</sup> 5 Stat. 334, designating as a crime any act committed by any person in the Indian country which, under the laws of the United States, would be a crime if committed in a place over which the United States had sole and exclusive jurisdiction. That this act comprehended crimes by Indians is indicated by the fact that the general language was qualified by a proviso excepting crimes by Indians against other Indians. The proviso further declared that existing treaties were to remain unaffected.

<sup>14</sup> Act of June 30, 1834, 4 Stat. 729, 788. Section 29 of this act contained a repealer of the 1817 act. Murder committed by an Indian

and became part of section 4 of the Act of March 27, 1874,<sup>1</sup> from which section 2175 of the Revised Statutes, now 25 U. S. C. 217, was derived.

The first of the two exceptions noted—that relating to Indians punished by the local law of the tribe—first appears in the 1851 act.

"Against a non-Indian without the limits of the State and district of Arkansas and within Indian country in the absence of a treaty attaching to the Indian country west of Arkansas there was held not to fall within the jurisdiction of the court which had no jurisdiction over such country. *Trotter State v. Trotter*, 21 Fed. Cas. No. 14426 (C. C. Ark. 1841). The child of an Indian mother and white father was considered to be of the condition of the mother for the purposes of the criminal provisions of the 18-4 Intercourse Act. *United States v. Sanders*, 27 Fed. Cas. No. 13620 (C. C. Ark. 1837).

"10 Stat. 461-470. An offender is punishable for the crime of robbery only in the laws of the United States in accord with Art. 13 of Treaty of 1807, 19 Feb. with the Cherokee, 14 Stat. 799. *Do not Manifest Potentness*, 141 U. S. 107 (1901). Also see *Alberty v. United States*, 132 U. S. 499

The second of the exception noted—involving cases where treaties have provided for exclusive tribal jurisdiction—has its origin in the 1817 act.

(1796) *Anders v. United States*, 364 U. S. 637 (1897), *Famous Smith v. United States*, 171 U. S. 50 (1904) (otherwise, Indian citizenship in itself does not preclude jurisdiction of tribal). A white man incorporated with an Indian tribe at a nation by adoption does not thereby become an Indian so as to be liable to the laws of the United States but he must become entitled to certain privileges in the tribe and also make himself amenable to their laws and usages. Therefore an article of treaty providing, all offense committed by citizens of the Cherokee Nation against the nation had the effect of punishing an Indian who had previously committed murder in the Cherokee country against a white man who had been adopted by that tribe. *United States v. Ragsdale*, 27 Fed. Cas. No. 16113 (C. C. Ark. 1847). Murder committed by an Indian against a non-Indian in the Indian country, within the boundaries of the territory and coming within any of the exceptions is within the exclusive jurisdiction of the United States in such of the territorial districts (cont.). *United States v. Hunt*, 138 U. S. 273, 11 Dec. 47 (1891); *Put of United States v. Hunt*, 28 Fed. Cas. No. 10452 (C. C. Ark. 1840).

## SECTION 5 CRIMES IN INDIAN COUNTRY BY NON-INDIAN AGAINST INDIAN

Generally speaking, offenses by non-Indians against Indians are punishable in federal courts when the offense is one specified in the federal code of territorial offenses.

This was not always the rule. Early treaties frequently provided that non-Indians committing offenses in the Indian country against Indians should be subject to punishment by tribal authorities.<sup>2</sup> This rule, which followed the usual practice in international treaties, was abandoned after a few years of treaty making and many of the later treaties expressly provide that white offenders shall be delivered up to the federal authorities for prosecution.<sup>3</sup>

The exercise of federal jurisdiction over non-Indian offenders against Indians in the Indian country was first put on a statutory basis by the original Trade and Intercourse Act, the Act of July 22, 1790.<sup>4</sup> The relevant sections declared:

"Sec. 7 That if any citizen or inhabitant of the United States, or of either of the territorial districts of the United States, shall go into any town, settlement or territory belonging to any nation or tribe of Indians, and shall there commit any crime upon, or trespass against, the person or property of any personable and friendly Indian or Indians, which, if committed within the jurisdiction of any state, or within the jurisdiction of either of the said districts against a citizen or white inhabitant thereof, would be punishable by the laws of such state or district, such offender or offenders shall be subject to the same punishment, and shall be proceeded against in the same manner as if the offense had been committed within the jurisdiction of the state or district in which he or they may be found, against a citizen or white inhabitant thereof.

"Sec. 6 That for any of the crimes or offenses aforesaid the like proceedings shall be had for apprehending, imprisoning or bailing the offender, as the case may be, and for recognizing the witnesses for their appearance to testify in the case, and where the offender shall be committed, or the witnesses shall be in a district other than that in which the offense is to be tried, for the removal of the offender and the witnesses or either of them as the case may be, to the district in which the trial is to be had as by the act to establish the judicial courts of the United States, are directed for any crimes or offenses against the United States.

These provisions were recited with minor modifications in the later temporary Trade and Intercourse Acts of 1798, 1796,

and 1799,<sup>5</sup> and were embodied in the first permanent Trade and Intercourse Act of 1802,<sup>6</sup> in sections 2 to 10 inclusive. The general rule established by these statutes was confirmed in the Act of March 3, 1817,<sup>7</sup> which provided:

"That if any Indian, or other person or persons, shall, within the United States, and without any treaty, compact, or territory belonging to any nation or nation, tribe or tribes of Indians, commit any crime, offense, or misdemeanor, which, if committed in any place or district of country under the sole and exclusive jurisdiction of the United States, would be within the laws of the United States, be punishable with death or any other punishment, every such offender, on being thereof convicted, shall suffer the like punishment as is provided by the laws of the United States for the like offense, if committed within any place or district of country under the sole and exclusive jurisdiction of the United States.

"Sec. 2 That the superior courts in each of the territorial districts, and the circuit courts and other courts of the United States of similar jurisdiction in territorial cases, in each district of the United States, in which any offender against this act shall be first apprehended or brought for trial, shall have, and are hereby invested with, full power and authority to hear, try and punish, all crimes, offenses, and misdemeanors against this act, such crimes, offenses, and misdemeanors, in the same manner as if such crimes, offenses, and misdemeanors, had been committed within the bounds of their respective districts, *Provided* That nothing in this act shall be so construed as to affect any treaty now in force between the United States and any Indian nation, or to extend to any offense committed by one Indian against another, within any Indian boundary.

"Sec. 3 That the President of the United States, and the governor of each of the territorial districts, where any offender against this act shall be apprehended or brought for trial, shall have, and exercise the same powers, for the punishment of offenses against this act, as they can severally have and exercise by virtue of the fourth tenth and fifteenth sections of an act, entitled "An act to regulate trade and intercourse with the Indian tribes, and to preserve peace on the frontiers," passed thirtieth March, one thousand eight hundred and two, for the punishment of offenses therein described.

The Trade and Intercourse Act of June 8, 1834,<sup>8</sup> reenacted the rule developed in the earlier statutes. This rule was subsequently

<sup>1</sup> See sec. 7, infra.

<sup>2</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 9 to 212, Chapter 3, sec. 3D(1).

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>4</sup> Secs. 5 and 6, 1 Stat. 137, 138. See Chapter 4, sec. 2, Chapter 15, sec. 10A.

<sup>5</sup> Acts of March 1, 1793, 1 Stat. 329, May 10, 1790, 1 Stat. 460, March 3, 1799, 1 Stat. 748. See Chapter 4, sec. 2, Chapter 15, sec. 10A.

<sup>6</sup> Act of March 3, 1802, 2 Stat. 139. See Chapter 4, sec. 3, Chapter 15, sec. 10A.

<sup>7</sup> 3 Stat. 383.

<sup>8</sup> 4 Stat. 729. See Chapter 4, sec. 6, Chapter 15, sec. 10A.

incorporated in the Revised Statutes as section 2117 and in title 25 of the United States Code as section 217. The exceptions contained in title 25 of the United States Code, section 218 relating to offenses by Indians against Indians and to offenders punished by tribal law have no application to offenses committed by non-Indians against Indians. The third exception in section 218, dealing with the case of a treaty where the exclusive jurisdiction over such offenses is ceded to the Indian tribes, might

have current application, but no such treaty provisions appear to be now in force.

Apart from the foregoing general statutes, Congress has, from time to time enacted various laws to punish particular offenses committed by non-Indians against Indians within the Indian country.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>11</sup> See Chapter 7 sec. 9, in 225

## SECTION 6 CRIMES IN INDIAN COUNTRY BY NON-INDIAN AGAINST NON-INDIAN

Ordinarily offenses committed by a non-Indian against a non-Indian in the Indian country are of no concern to the Federal Government and are punishable by the state.<sup>12</sup> For purposes of criminal jurisdiction where Indians are not involved, an Indian reservation is generally considered to be a portion of the state within which it is located.<sup>13</sup> Exceptions to this rule exist where

Congress has specifically provided for exclusive Federal jurisdiction over certain areas.<sup>14</sup>

That of the Congress of the United States "does not amount to reservation by the United States of jurisdiction over crimes committed on such lands by non-Indians against non-Indians and does not deprive the state of its power to try such offenses." *Diaper v. United States*, 161 U.S. 240 (1896).

<sup>12</sup> *United States v. McIntosh*, 104 U.S. 621 (1881). And see Chapter 6.

<sup>13</sup> The provision of the enabling act of Montana that all Indian lands within the state shall remain under the absolute jurisdiction and con-

<sup>14</sup> 18 U.S.C. 749 (Act of February 2, 1901, 32 Stat. 793; Act of March 4, 1909, sec. 329, 35 Stat. 1085, 1151; Act of March 3, 1911, sec. 291, 36 Stat. 1067, 1167). In this connection also see 18 U.S.C. 2504 (Act of March 3, 1911, sec. 291).

## SECTION 7 CRIMES IN AREAS WITHIN EXCLUSIVE FEDERAL JURISDICTION

Section 217, title 25,<sup>15</sup> extends to Indian reservations, with exceptions already noted, the general laws of the United States as to the punishment of crimes committed in any place within the sole and exclusive jurisdiction of the United States, except the District of Columbia.<sup>16</sup> A list of such offenses will be found in chapters 11 and 13 of title 18, United States Code.<sup>17</sup>

This list is meager and inadequate in comparison with most state codes. It is supplemented by section 468 of title 28, United States Code,<sup>18</sup> which makes it, not made penal by any other laws of Congress, committed upon land within the exclusive jurisdiction of the United States subject to Federal jurisdiction whenever made criminal by state law.

<sup>15</sup> Act of June 30, 1934, sec. 25, 48 Stat. 735 as amended by the Act of March 27, 1931, sec. 3, 46 Stat. 209, 270, 18 U.S.C. 2145.

<sup>16</sup> The list of the statutes embodied in this list appears to be the Act of April 10, 1900, 3 Stat. 312.

<sup>17</sup> 18 U.S.C. 1911; Act of July 7, 1908, sec. 2, 35 Stat. 717; Act of March 4, 1909, sec. 299, 35 Stat. 1069, 1135 as amended by the Act of June 15, 1943, 48 Stat. 162. See Chapter 6 sec. 2A.

## SECTION 8 CRIMES IN WHICH LOCUS IS IRRELEVANT

There are certain offenses covered by federal statutes regarding Indian affairs which are subject to federal jurisdiction regardless of the locus of the offense. Several such offenses are

purchasing Indian cattle without permission,<sup>19</sup> selling liquor to Indians,<sup>20</sup> making prohibited contacts with Indian tribes.<sup>21</sup>

The power of Congress to punish such crimes outside the Indian country is well established.<sup>22</sup>

<sup>19</sup> Act of March 3, 1897, sec. 8, 33 Stat. 541, 552, 18 U.S.C. 2138 as amended by the Act of June 30, 1930, sec. 1, 41 Stat. 3, 9, 48 U.S.C. 214.

<sup>20</sup> See Chapter 17, sec. 8.

<sup>21</sup> Act of March 3, 1871, sec. 9, 16 Stat. 544, 570, 18 U.S.C. 2107.

<sup>22</sup> See Chapter 6 sec. 8.



# CHAPTER 19

## CIVIL JURISDICTION

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
<i>Section 1 Introduction</i> .....	365	<i>Section 2—Federal courts—Continued</i>	
<i>Section 2 Federal courts</i> .....	365	<i>A Jurisdiction dependent upon parties—</i>	
<i>1 Jurisdiction dependent upon parties</i> .....	365	Continued	
<i>(1) United States as plaintiff</i> .....	365	<i>(4) Indian tribe as party litigant</i> .....	371
<i>(2) Indian cases</i> .....	366	<i>(5) Individual Indians as party</i>	
<i>(a) Generally</i> .....	367	<i>litigant</i> .....	372
<i>(b) Indian census</i> .....	367	<i>B Jurisdiction dependent upon character</i>	
<i>(c) State meeting land</i> .....	367	<i>of subject matter</i> .....	373
<i>(d) Suits involving personal property</i> .....	369	<i>Section 3 Court of Claims</i> .....	373
<i>(e) Office suits</i> .....	369	<i>Section 4 Federal administrative tribunals</i> .....	375
<i>(f) Effect of judgment</i> .....	369	<i>Section 5 State courts</i> .....	379
<i>(3) United States as defendant</i> .....	370	<i>Section 6 Tribal courts</i> .....	382
<i>(8) United States as intervenor</i> .....	371		

### SECTION 1 INTRODUCTION

As applied to the courts, jurisdiction may be defined as the power of a court to hear and determine matters or controversies of a justiciable nature arising within the limits to which the

<sup>1</sup> On federal jurisdiction see Chapter 18. On the constitutional power of federal state and tribal government see Chapters 5, 6, and 7.

judicial power of those courts extends. We may consider the subject of civil jurisdiction<sup>2</sup> from the standpoint of the federal courts, including constitutional and legislative courts, such as the Court of Claims, and federal administrative tribunals, and also from the standpoint of the state courts, and the tribal courts.

### SECTION 2 FEDERAL COURTS

Speaking generally, it may be said that the judicial power of the United States is vested by the Constitution in the Supreme Court and such other courts as Congress shall from time to time ordain and establish.<sup>3</sup>

In considering the jurisdiction of the federal courts, it may be observed that under the Constitution<sup>4</sup> and laws<sup>5</sup> of the United States the federal courts exercise jurisdiction in two different classes of cases—cases where the jurisdiction depends upon the character of the parties, and cases where the jurisdiction depends upon the subject matter of the suit. The distinction between these two classes of cases has been recognized from the beginning. Thus, in *Cohens v. Virginia*<sup>6</sup> the Supreme Court of the United States, speaking through Mr. Justice Marshall, said:

In one description of cases, the jurisdiction of the court is founded entirely on the character of the parties, and the nature of the controversy is not contemplated by the constitution—the character of the parties is everything the nature of the case nothing. In the other description of cases, the jurisdiction is founded entirely on the character of the case, and the parties are not contemplated by the constitution—in these, the nature of the case is everything, the character of the parties nothing. \* \* \*

(P. 398)

<sup>1</sup> U. S. Const., Art. III, sec. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Art. III, sec. 2.

<sup>3</sup> 28 U. S. C. § 41.

<sup>4</sup> 6 Wheat. 204 (1821).

Taking this proposition as a point of departure, we shall consider the subject briefly, in so far as the Indians are concerned, under the following headings:

A Cases where the jurisdiction of the court depends on the character of the parties, including the United States as plaintiff, defendant or intervenor, cases where an Indian tribe is plaintiff, defendant or intervenor, cases where individual Indians are plaintiffs, defendants or intervenors.

B Cases where the jurisdiction of the court depends on the character of the subject matter.

#### A JURISDICTION DEPENDENT UPON PARTIES

##### (1) United States as plaintiff

(a) *Generally*—It may be stated as a general proposition that under subdivision 1 of section 41 of title 28 of the United States Code, the district courts of the United States have jurisdiction of all suits of a civil nature, at common law or in equity, in which the United States is the plaintiff. Ordinarily the general jurisdiction of the district court is established by the mere fact that the United States is plaintiff. Thus, in *United States v. Board of County Commissioners of Grady County, Oklahoma*,<sup>7</sup> wherein the United States sought to enjoin the defendants from

<sup>7</sup> 54 F. 2d 598 (C. C. A. 10, 1931).

directing water to drain water from a state public highway over an Indian allotment the Circuit Court of Appeals for the Eighth Circuit overruled the claim of the defendants and the decision of the court that the suit was virtually one against the State of Oklahoma and could not be maintained, upheld the jurisdiction of the district court, sitting.

There was no tenable objection to the general jurisdiction of the District Court. It was expressly conferred by title 25, § 41, subd. 1, of the U. S. Code, 25 U. S. C. § 41 (1) in providing that the District Courts shall have jurisdiction, first, of all suits of a civil nature, of common law or in equity, brought by the United States, "and . . ."

Nevertheless, it is asserted above in order for the United States to maintain a suit so that the court may pass upon the merits of the case and enter a judgment therein it must be shown where the United States is authorized to maintain. In cases where the United States is seeking to enforce a measure of government entered in the exercise of its constitutional powers, there is no such question as to the authority of the United States to apply to its own courts for relief.<sup>1</sup> In cases where the United States sues for the benefit of a third party, it may be stated that, in a general rule it must have an interest in the subject in order to purpose of the suit and the relief sought. This interest does not necessarily have to be a pecuniary one if it is sufficient that it is a governmental one.<sup>2</sup>

(b) *Indian cases*.—A pecuniary interest of the United States, itself need not exist in cases involving restricted Indian lands<sup>3</sup> or land in which the United States is trustee.<sup>4</sup> It is well settled that the United States, by virtue of its peculiar relations with the Indians—often called "guardianship"<sup>5</sup>—as trustee of their property, has the capacity and the duty to effectuate Government policies by protecting and enforcing their rights in property held by it as trustee,<sup>6</sup> or by the Indians themselves in fee simple, subject to restrictions on alienation.<sup>7</sup>

The United States acts in behalf of itself and is trustee in guardianship for the Indians.<sup>8</sup> When proceeding on its own behalf the United States is (a) protecting its guardianship over the Indian and (b) removing unlawful obstacles to the fulfillment of its obligations.<sup>9</sup> In *United States v. Fitzgerald*<sup>10</sup> the court said:

The United States may lawfully maintain suits in its own courts to prevent interference with the means it adopts to exercise its powers of government and to carry into

<sup>1</sup> See cases cited in note 181 of sec. 41 (1) of 28 U. S. C. A.

<sup>2</sup> See *McMahon v. United States*, 224 U. S. 418 (1912), and cases cited therein.

<sup>3</sup> On the general question of the right of the United States to institute suit for the benefit of a third party, see *United States v. San Jacinto*, 171 U. S. 125 U. S. 273, 286 (1898); *Quinn v. United States*, 149 U. S. 687, 691-693 (1893). On the general subject of the right of the Government to sue, see *In re Debs*, 108 U. S. 864, 864 (1886).

<sup>4</sup> *McMahon v. United States*, 224 U. S. 413 (1912), also see 25 *Harv. L. Rev.* 741, 740 (1912).

<sup>5</sup> *Morrow v. United States*, 248 Fed. 864 (C. C. A. 8, 1917).

<sup>6</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 9.

<sup>7</sup> *United States v. Gaudin*, 217 U. S. 482 (1926).

<sup>8</sup> *Grant v. United States*, 224 U. S. 498 (1912); *Forney Insurance Co. v. United States*, 224 U. S. 471 (1912); *Heckman v. United States*, 224 U. S. 418 (1912). The United States represents its own interest in enforcing laws for the protection of Indians to whose benefit the suit was brought. *Heckman v. United States*, 224 U. S. 418, 444-446 (1912). Also see *United States v. Henson*, 270 U. S. 181 (1926).

<sup>9</sup> By virtue of its own interest and the interest of the tribe, see *Briscoe Willott Oil & Gas Co. v. United States*, 200 U. S. 77 (1922), by virtue of its interest in maintaining restrictions and Indians in possession. *Prentiss v. United States*, 206 U. S. 301 (1924). Also see *Heckman v. United States*, 224 U. S. 418 (1912); *United States v. Feltz Insurance Co.*, 288 U. S. 475 (1924); *Geopie County Motor Co. v. United States*, 38 F. 2d 221 (C. C. A. 8, 1929), cert. den. 280 U. S. 577.

effect its policies. It may maintain such suit, although it has no pecuniary interest in the subject matter thereof, for the purpose of protecting and enforcing its governmental policies, and to aid in the execution of its governmental policies. (P. 296-297.)

The right of maintaining a suit arises pursuant to provisions in treaties with Indian tribes<sup>1</sup> or congressional laws, or by virtue of the fact that legal title to land is vested in the United States, subject to the Indian right of occupancy or by reason of the fact that the Indian enjoys a vested right, granted by the Government, to hold land for a specified period.<sup>2</sup> Usually the property involved is restricted land held by an Indian under a trust or other patent from the United States, or purchased for an Indian out of lands derived from the sale of allotted land and restricted by the Secretary of the Interior,<sup>3</sup> or by a trust treaty of occupancy, title being in the United States. Sometimes the case involves personal property furnished by the Government to the Indian, to be used by him in connection with an allotment, without the right of disposal except to other Indian, or held in trust by the United States for him, or affected by such trust.

(c) *Trusts involving land*.—It has often been held that the United States lacks the capacity to sue regarding lands held by Indians which have been freed from restrictions,<sup>4</sup> because it is under no duty to the Indians and has no interest in the matter.<sup>5</sup> However, the Government has a duty and an interest to protect the right of the Indian to hold his land free from taxation for the first period of 21 years, and the relationship between the United States and the Indian with respect to this vested right is regarded as the legal relationship of trusteeship which gives the United States the capacity to sue on behalf of the Indians,

<sup>1</sup> See *Hopkins County v. United States*, in *United States v. Monahan*, 270 U. S. 191, 193 (1926) and

<sup>2</sup> "The United States has a legal and fiscal interest in the matter, as well as its guardianship over the Indians and out of its right to invoke aid and a court of equity in removing unlawful obstacles to the fulfillment of the obligations, and in both aspects the interest is one which is vested in it as a sovereign." *Heckman v. United States*, 224 U. S. 413, 447-441; *United States v. Geopie County*, 288 U. S. 126, 130-131; *United States v. Feltz Insurance Co.*, 288 U. S. 477, 479; *United States v. Henson*, 270 U. S. 219, 232; *United States v. Brown*, 265 U. S. 142-141; *United States v. New Orleans Pacific Ry. Co.*, 248 U. S. 507, 518.

And see *United States v. Asheville, Chattanooga & Seaboard Ry. Co.*, 118 U. S. 120, 122 (1893).

<sup>3</sup> 201 *Id.* 206 (C. C. A. 8, 1913). This case was quoted with approval in *Quinn v. United States*, 201 U. S. 218, 233-235 (1906).

<sup>4</sup> See *United States v. Winans*, 108 U. S. 871 (1900); *Shurtz Bros. Co. v. United States*, 249 U. S. 104 (1919) (suits brought to protect interference with Indian fishing rights secured by treaty).

<sup>5</sup> The Circuit Court of Appeals in the case of *United States v. O'Leary*, 60 F. 2d 412 (C. C. A. 4, 1937) said:

"It is no question as to the right of the United States to institute suit for the protection of the rights of these wards of the nation in and to their property." (P. 814.)

But cf. *Ely v. G. M. Smith, Smith & Co.*, 401 (1904).

<sup>6</sup> *United States v. Brown*, 265 U. S. 204 (C. C. A. 8, 1923), cert. den. 270 U. S. 641 (1926), but cf. *McQuay v. United States*, 248 U. S. 281 (1918).

<sup>7</sup> During *Investment Co. v. United States*, 226 U. S. 471 (1912); *Mullan v. United States*, 224 U. S. 448 (1912); *Grant v. United States*, 224 U. S. 495 (1912); *United States v. Waller*, 248 U. S. 452 (1917). Accord *United States v. Donnell*, 265 U. S. 72 (1914); *United States v. Chase*, 245 U. S. 68 (1917). Also see *United States v. Henson*, 270 U. S. 219 (1926). Contr. *United States v. Apple*, 382 Fed. 200 (D. C. Kan. 1919).

<sup>8</sup> When an Indian is granted full title, including the right of alienation, and when he conveys such property, the United States cannot maintain suit to have the benefit to cancel the deed on the ground that it was conveyed by fraud. *United States v. Waller*, 248 U. S. 452 (1917). Also see *United States v. Henson*, 270 U. S. 219 (1926), and *Louisiana v. Pugh*, 278 U. S. 481 (1928).

to recover alleged taxes or to limit collection of tax levied on land freed from restrictions.

The United States may sue to enjoin the imposition of local or state taxes on allotted lands or to prevent enforcement thereon of present property taxes levied from the United States and used by the Indians on the allotted lands. The Indians, as in which the United States obtained in opposition against county officials attempting to levy allotted lands during the first period is the case of *United States v. Ruckelt*.<sup>1</sup> The Supreme Court said:

We do not perceive that the Government has any remedy at law that could be at all efficacious for the protection of its rights in the property in question and for the attainment of its purposes in reference to these Indians. It is the personal property and the structures on the land were sold for taxes and possession taken by the purchaser, then the Indians could not be brought into the allotment, and the Government, unless it abandoned its policy to maintain on these Indians on the allotted lands, would be compelled to appropriate money money and apply it to the creation of other necessary structures on the land and in the purchase of other stock required for purposes of cultivation. And so on (cited). It is manifest that no proceedings at law can be brought and efficacious for the protection of the rights of the Government and that remedy relief can only be had in a court of equity, which by a comprehensive decree, in finally determining once for all the question of validity of the possession and taxation in question and thus give security against any action upon the part of the local authorities tending to interfere with the complete control and only of the Indians by the Government but of the property supplied to them by the Government and in use on the allotted lands. *Pedroco Co v. Lechman*, 22 Wall 144, *Congress Mining Co v. South Carolina*, 144 U S 570 (1894-95).

Some objections may be made that are applicable to the whole case. It is said that the State has conferred upon these Indians the right of suffrage and other rights that ordinarily belong only to citizens, and that they ought, therefore, to share the benefits of government like other people who enjoy such rights. These are considerations to be addressed to Congress. It is for the legislative branch of the Government to say when these Indians shall cease to be dependent and assume the responsibilities attaching to citizenship. That is a political question which the courts may not determine. We can only deal with the case as it exists under the legislation of Congress.

The Supreme Court, in holding that the United States may sue to enjoin discriminatory state taxes levied on allotments of non-competent Osage Indians, said:

Criticism is it that is the United States as guardian of the Indians has the duty to protect them from spoliation and therefore the right to prevent them being illegally deprived of the property rights conferred under the Act of Congress of 1906, the power vested in the officials

<sup>1</sup> *United States v. Ruckelt*, 243 Fed. 874 (C. C. 8 1917). *McDonnell v. United States*, 264 U. S. 454 (1924). Also see *Bond of County from measures of Public County Oklahoma v. United States*, 94 F. 2d 10 (C. C. 10 1918), and *United States v. Moore*, 25 Fed. 80 (C. C. 1 9 1922) in which the United States brought suit to recover royalties paid under an agreement allegedly made during the period of reversion from after the period had expired. The court said, in *United States v. South American Co.*, 9 F. 2d 94 (C. C. 8 D. Okla. 1923).

\* \* \* removal of restrictions against the alienation of allotted land does not preclude the United States from maintaining an action to remove a third illegally placing the land in the restricted period. This action is properly brought in the name of the United States. (P. 608.)

*United States v. Gray*, 201 Fed. 501, (C. C. 8 1912), and *United States v. Ruckelt*, 243 Fed. 874 (C. C. 8 1917).

The Federal Government may sue to recover taxes, illegally levied upon personal property such as livestock and farm implements, which it issued to members of or to the United States. *United States v. Dwyer*, 211 U. S. 274 (1908) and *U. S. v. Dwyer*, 120 F. 2d 104 (C. C. 8 D. Okla. 1923).

<sup>2</sup> 228 U. S. 432 (1912) (C. C. 8 1908).

<sup>3</sup> *United States v. Owen County*, 251 U. S. 128 (1919).

of the United States to invoke relief for the recovery of land on the purchase of land. Indeed, the Act of Congress of 1917 provides, on the appointment of the lands in question by necessity implies that it not in express terms, it is the power of the officers of the United States to assist the official possession as undisturbed. And the act in fact of power in the United States to sue which is thus established dispenses of the proposition that because of remedies allowed to individuals under the sale law the authority of a court of equity could not be invoked by the United States. This necessity follows because in the first place, is the authority of the United States extended to all the non-competent members of the tribe it obviously resulted that the interpretation of a court of equity to prevent the wrong, committed by a tribal in order for to avoid a multiplicity of suits (see *Union Pacific Ry Co v. Chicago*, 111 U. S. 576, *Smith v. Ames*, 109 U. S. 166, 317, *Cranch Bank v. Bluff*, 170 U. S. 71, 81, *Rouse v. Jefferson City*, *Boise City*, 211 U. S. 276, 283, *Greene v. Louisville & Indianapolis R. R. Co.*, 241 U. S. 100, 705) in the second place because is the wrong which upon was not a mere mistake or error committed in the enforcement of the state tax laws, but a systematic and intentional disregard of such laws by the state officers for the purpose of destroying the rights of the whole class of non-competent Indians who were alleged to the protection of the United States, it follows that such class wrong and disregard of the state statute gave rise to the right to invoke the interpretation of a court of equity in order that an adequately remedy might be obtained. *Channing v. National Bank*, 101 U. S. 8 163, *Reagan v. Turner's Loan & Trust Co.*, 154 U. S. 782, 380, *Pittsburgh etc. Ry Co v. Banks*, 154 U. S. 421, *Ondick v. Louisville & Nashville R. R. Co.*, 196 U. S. 91, *Reynolds v. Chicago River & Portage Co.*, 207 U. S. 8 20, *Greene v. Louisville & Indianapolis R. R. Co.*, 241 U. S. 490, 707. In fact the subject is fully covered by the ruling in *Union Pacific R. R. Co. v. Wild County*, 247 U. S. 282 (pp. 193, 194).

Where restrictions on land are transgressed the Government can choose such legal remedies as it is necessary to protect the Indian. It may warrant in action to quiet the title to land, "to seek conveyances made prior to the expiration of the first period restore possession to the Indian even though the allottee is a citizen, or where title has been vested in the allottee but the right of alienation is restricted." The Government may bring suit to cancel deeds and mortgages "to set aside conveyances" to annul a patent issued by the United States in order to establish possessory rights of individual Indians, "to set aside unqualified contracts," to sue for a cancellation of a mining lease and assignment of rents and royalties arising therefrom "to cancel oil and gas leases." The Government may sue a lessee and a sheriff company which signed a faithful performance bond for a breach of a lease, involving trust funds, made

\* Title to distributed land claimed by or thought to be the property of an Indian may be determined by suit brought by the United States to quiet Indian title. *United States v. Wilcott*, 244 U. S. 111 (1917), *United States v. Atkins*, 200 U. S. 220 (1922), *United States v. Tulsa Investment Co.*, 205 U. S. 472 (1921), *United States v. Jackson*, 280 U. S. 181 (1930).

*Honoring v. United States*, 219 U. S. 128 (1911) and *Pope v. Western Investment Co.*, 221 U. S. 280 (1911). *Kroeger, Legal Status of the American Indian and His Property* (1922). 7 F. L. R. pp. 232, 240. The Act of June 25 1910, 36 Stat. 703 711 and the Act of July 1 1916, 39 Stat. 362 312 and subsequent appropriation acts provided for the expenses of such suits.

\* All controversies of which land made prior to the expiration of the restriction on alienation to avoid. *United States v. Noble*, 237 U. S. 71 (1915).

<sup>2</sup> *Deering Investment Co. v. United States*, 221 U. S. 471 (1912).

<sup>3</sup> *United States v. First National Bank*, 241 U. S. 245 (1914).

<sup>4</sup> *Greene v. United States*, 261 U. S. 219, 220-228 (1923).

<sup>5</sup> *United States v. Boyd*, 95 Fed. 377 (C. C. W. D. N. C. 1905).

<sup>6</sup> *United States v. Ashb.*, 237 U. S. 74 (1915).

<sup>7</sup> *Becker v. Elliott Oil and Gas Co. v. United States*, 200 U. S. 77 (1922).

by an allottee and approved by the Secretary.<sup>1</sup> The United States may sue to enjoin trespassing on tribal lands and on restricted allotments.<sup>2</sup> It may enjoin the issuance of rights under leases of restricted allotments or of land held by the United States in trust for a title obtained from an Indian with out conforming to the Secretary and administrative requirements, and may enjoin the negotiation of such unlawful leases in the future.<sup>3</sup>

Even where unrestricted Indians are entitled the federal court has jurisdiction over cases based on statutory provisions.<sup>4</sup> The right of the United States to bring suits in behalf of Indians involving their lands after the period of first restrictions has expired and to which the United States has no title, is upheld in many cases, among them *United States v. Mead*,<sup>5</sup> in which the United States brought suit to recover royalties paid under an assignment of rights made during the period of restrictions, the suit being brought after the period had expired.<sup>6</sup>

(d) *Suits involving personal property*—The United States may maintain an action for trespass, an action to recover timber cut by a few members of a tribe from a part of a reservation not occupied in severalty, and made into a log and sold to a third party,<sup>7</sup> and to recover a team of horses brought in the unemployment of an Indian agency with the first money of an incompetent Indian, where the bill of sale recited the source of the purchase money even though the defendant had incurred expenses for veterinary services and for care of the team while it was in the control of the Indian.<sup>8</sup>

The United States may recover damages for the wrongful taking of wool shorn from sheep furnished by an Indian for the Government to be used on his allotment,<sup>9</sup> and for the recovery of funds disbursed after a certificate of competency was issued.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *United States v. Gray*, 201 Fed. 291 (C. C. 8, 1912).  
<sup>2</sup> *A. H. Sheep Co. v. United States*, 252 U. S. 179 (1920). Also see *Taylor v. United States*, 44 F. 120, 531 (C. C. 9, 1900).

<sup>3</sup> *United States v. Planning Lumber Co. and Real Estate Co.*, 71 Fed. 771 (C. C. 9th, 1896). Also see *Becker, Elliott and Gay Co. v. United States*, 260 U. S. 77 (1922).

<sup>4</sup> In *United States v. Arizona*, 213 Fed. 871 (C. C. 8, 1917), suit was brought by the United States not as guardian but as trustee of lands for a mixed blood Indian against Becker County, Mann officials to recover collection of taxes levied upon certain allotted lands. In this case the Government had terminated the guardianship over the Indian owner with respect to his lands by the Act of June 21, 1906, § 4, 34 Stat. 126-133 and March 1, 1907, § 14 Stat. 1017-1014. The court held that the right of the Indian to hold his land free from taxation for the first period of 20 years was a vested right which the Government could not take and that hence when the Indian was claiming no right under the Act of June 21, 1906 and March 1, 1907, but was in actual, open holding, his land under the first protest his land could not be taxed by the state. The relationship between the United States and the Indian with respect to this vested right was looked upon by the court as the legal relationship of trusteeship, giving the United States capacity to sue in behalf of the Indian.

<sup>5</sup> 234 Fed. 88 (C. C. 8, 1923).

<sup>6</sup> See also *United States v. Gray*, 201 Fed. 291 (C. C. 8, 1912) and *United States v. Southern Lumber Co.*, 9 F. 264, 604 (D. C. Okla. 1907) in which it was said,

"\* \* \* removal of restrictions against the alienation of allotted land does not preclude the action of the United States to maintain a suit to remove a cloud illegally placed on such title during the restricted period. This action is properly brought in the name of the United States." (C. 1905.)

And see *United States v. Rheebarne Mercantile Co.*, 65 F. 2d 189 (C. C. 9, 1903).

<sup>7</sup> *Pine River Logging and Improvement Co. v. United States*, 140 U. S. 270 (1902).

<sup>8</sup> *United States v. Oosh*, 19 Wall. (88 U. S.) 581 (1877).

<sup>9</sup> *United States v. O'Donnan*, 287 Fed. 146 (C. C. 8, 1923).

<sup>10</sup> *United States v. Fitzgerald*, 201 Fed. 297 (C. C. 8, 1912).  
<sup>11</sup> In the case of *United States v. Washburne*, 72 F. 2d 367 (C. C. 10, 1894), the court said,

"But we entertain no doubt that a court of equity has the power to cancel it (certificate of competency) effective from the date of

and may bring action for rent on behalf of an individual Indian or a tribe." If it is recovered restricted funds deposited in a trust bank, such indefiniteness of the trust being in indefiniteness to the United States and entitled to priority over other deposits.

(e) *Other suits*—The right of the United States to bring suit on behalf of Indians has been upheld in a variety of cases not involving restricted property. Thus it has been held that the Government may recover in a suit filed in connection with a contract of employment of Indians in a wild west show. The damages would include breach of contract and expenses incurred returning the Indians to the agency, as well as the amount due the Indians.<sup>11</sup>

(f) *Effect of judgment*—The Government is not bound unless it is a party to the litigation.<sup>12</sup> No judgment of any court, state or federal, rendered in a suit between an Indian and a private party, involving property under the control of the Government, to which the Government is a stranger, can bind the Government or its administrative officers.<sup>13</sup> Where the Government has employed and paid a special attorney to represent the Indians, or the United States Attorney has joined as associate counsel with the attorneys representing the Indians in the litigation and filed a motion to vacate the judgment, the United States is bound as effectively as if it were a party, by the judgment in a suit instituted and prosecuted to final judgment by this special attorney.<sup>14</sup>

its liability as to persons participating in the acts involved, the execution of or having knowledge of the facts and acquiring rights with that knowledge." (P. 480.)

<sup>1</sup> *United States v. Chase*, 247 U. S. 5, 49 (1917).

<sup>2</sup> *Lang v. United States*, 260 U. S. 524 (1922).

<sup>3</sup> *Bismuth v. U. B. Fidelity Co.*, 236 U. S. 183 (1916).

<sup>4</sup> *United States v. Pamphrey*, 11 App. D. C. 44 (1897).

<sup>5</sup> *Handeland v. United States*, 236 U. S. 226 (1924). *Pratt v. United States*, 250 U. S. 301 (1921). The United States is an indispensable party to condemnation proceedings brought by the state to acquire a right of way over lands which the United States holds in trust for Indian allottees. *Minnesota v. United States*, 303 U. S. 582 (C. C. 8, 1909).

<sup>6</sup> *Banking v. United States*, 303 U. S. 529 (1914). *United States v. Board of Missions of Presbyterian Church*, 97 U. S. 26, 274 (C. C. 10, 1920).

<sup>7</sup> *United States v. Condit*, 271 U. S. 9, 432 (1926). Also see *Op. Fed. T. D. 87788*, August 8, 1914. For other examples of a special attorney employed to represent in the conduct of legal proceedings, see claims in behalf of Osage Indians for the recovery of royalties on oil produced from tribal lands. Act of August 23, 1897, 30 Stat. 489, Act of March 2, 1898, 30 Stat. 84, 890-890, Act of June 4, 1897, 30 Stat. 11, 98, Act of July 1, 1898, 30 Stat. 707, 641, Act of March 1, 1899, 30 Stat. 1074, 1214, Act of June 25, 1910, 30 Stat. 708, 744, Act of August 24, 1912, 37 Stat. 417, 464, Act of August 1, 1914, 88 Stat. 609, 078, Act of March 4, 1915, 39 Stat. 822, 808, Act of July 1, 1916, 39 Stat. 282, 212, Act of June 22, 1917, 40 Stat. 107, 169, Act of July 19, 1919, 41 Stat. 166, 208, Act of March 4, 1921, 41 Stat. 1467, 1413.

<sup>8</sup> *Justice Van Dewater*, in the case of *United States v. Condit*, 1914, said,

"The Indians of the public use wards of the United States, and hold their lands subject to the restriction that the same cannot be alienated in any way without the consent of the United States, which operates directly or indirectly to transfer the land from the Indians, where the United States has not authorized or approved in the suit instituted for jurisdiction. The United States has an interest in maintaining and enforcing the restriction which cannot be affected by such a judgment or decree. Thus the court has held in dealing with a like situation 'It necessarily follows that as a violation of the allotted lands contrary to the prohibition of Congress would be a violation of the governmental rights of the United States arising from its obligation to a dependent people to supervision, contracts, or judgments imposed upon suits to which the Government is a stranger, can affect its interest. The authority of the United States to enforce the restraint lawfully created cannot be impaired by any action with out its consent.' *Banking v. United States*, 303 U. S. 529, 534, and that nothing has been recognized and even cited in other cases. *Pratt v. United States*, 250 U. S. 302, *Handeland v. United States*, 236 U. S. 226, 231 (C. 1914-484)."

But as it appears that in many years the United States has employed and paid a special attorney to represent the Pueblo



extends to cases in which a state of the Union is the plaintiff. Thus in *Minnesota v. United States*,<sup>18</sup> the Supreme Court held that the United States could not be made a party defendant in proceedings instituted by the State of Minnesota to condemn allotted lands held in trust by the United States for the allottees. The court said:

"A proceeding against property in which the United States has an interest is a suit against the United States. *The State v. Wall*, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162 U. S. 275; *Comp. Utah Power & Light Co. v. United States*, 218 U. S. 389. It is consequently the owner of the fee of the Indian allotted lands and holds the same in trust for the allottees. As the United States owns the fee of these parcels, the right of way cannot be condemned without making it a party (P. 356).

But the United States cannot be made a party in such a suit without its consent. The court further said:

"The exemption of the United States from being sued with out its consent extends to a suit by a State. *Comp. Kansas v. United States*, 204 U. S. 831, 842; *Arizona v. California*, 278 U. S. 338, 355, 371, 372; *Comp. Minnesota v. Hutchinson*, 185 U. S. 371, 382-387; *Oregon v. Hutchinson*, 202 U. S. 60. Hence Minnesota cannot maintain this suit against the United States unless authorized by some act of Congress (P. 387).

If the required consent is given, the objection being removed, the court may settle the controversy involved."

The United States is improperly joined as a party defendant in a suit against an Indian in the matter of a special act authorizing the Court of Claims to consider and adjudicate such claim where neither the special act nor any general statute authorized suit against the United States, although the United States is joined in the suit in the capacity of trustee for an Indian tribe.<sup>19</sup>

Terms and conditions on which consent is given may be prescribed and must be met.<sup>20</sup> Not only in the sovereign prescribe the terms and conditions on which it consents to be sued, but it may also determine the manner in which the suit shall be conducted and may withdraw its consent whenever it supposes that justice to the public requires such withdrawal.<sup>21</sup>

The cases in which the United States has expressly given its consent to be sued in Indian matters, either in the Court of Claims or in the district courts, are numerous.<sup>22</sup>

Cases in which consent to be sued seems to have been attributed to the United States without express authority from Congress are not so numerous. An instance is the case of *United States*

*v. Aquinable Trust Co.* In that case a suit was instituted by a next friend in behalf of an incompetent full-blood Creek Indian under guardianship to recover accumulated lost dues which had come into the hands of the Secretary of the Interior in trust for the Indian and were subsequently distributed upon a written request in the name of the Indian procured by him and the United States intervened in the litigation. By this act, the Supreme Court held, it implicitly consented to receive the allowance for salaries and expense, even if the fund was subject to statutory restrictions. This decision, however, may be explained by the fact that the United States had intervened in the suit in the character of a party plaintiff.

(8) *United States as intervenor*—In view of the established doctrine that the United States cannot be sued without its consent, the question arises whether the United States can become a party in a pending suit by intervention, and if so, under what circumstances. It appears that where intervention places the Government in the position of a plaintiff, as in *New York v. New Jersey and Oklahoma v. Texas*,<sup>23</sup> the Government may properly become an intervenor. It is clear, however, that if by such intervention the Government would become virtually a defendant in the suit, its appearance as an intervenor would come in direct conflict with the ruling that the United States cannot be sued. The consent of the United States cannot be given by any other of the United States unless authority to do so has been conferred upon him by some act of Congress. This proposition is illustrated in the case of *Stanley v. Shanley*,<sup>24</sup> in which the Supreme Court said:

"The United States, by various acts of Congress, have consented to be sued in their own courts in certain classes of cases, but they have never consented to be sued in the courts of a State in any case. Neither the Secretary of War nor the Attorney General, nor any subordinate of either, has been authorized to waive the exemption of the United States from judicial process, or to submit the United States, or their property, to the jurisdiction of the court in a suit brought against them officials. *Cox v. Texas*, 11 Wall. 109, 202; *Osage v. United States*, 96 U. S. 433, 438; *United States v. Lee*, 106 U. S. 196, 205 (P. 270).

In other words, in the absence of congressional authority no officer of the United States can bind the United States as a party defendant, whether in an original suit or by way of intervention. Instances in which the United States has given such consent are to be found in the Act of February 5, 1901,<sup>25</sup> permitting suits for allotment in the district courts by the United States, providing for service of process upon the Attorney General and requiring the District Attorney, upon whom service is also to be made, to appear and defend the interests of the United States in the suit, and in the Act of April 10, 1906,<sup>26</sup> providing a process whereby the United States may be compelled to appear and defend its interests in any suit pending in the federal or state courts of Oklahoma in which included members of the Five Civilized Tribes are parties. The practice adopted under this statute is for the United States Attorney to appear for and in behalf of the United States, within the statutory period, upon service of the notice upon the superintendent as provided by the statute.

(4) *Indian tribe as party litigant*—As already seen,<sup>27</sup> the Indian tribes within the territory of the United States, while

<sup>18</sup> 205 U. S. 832 (1908).

<sup>19</sup> *National Casket Co. v. United States*, 209 Fed. 846 (D. C. R. D. N. Y., 1920); *Kaskas & Hamilton Bridge Co. v. United States*, 200 U. S. 125 (1922). See also 3, *supra*.

<sup>20</sup> *Tulac v. United States*, 218 U. S. 934 (1919). Cf. *Green v. Wisconsin*, 238 U. S. 808 (1916). Also see *Winton v. Ames*, 208 U. S. 871 (1912).

<sup>21</sup> *First v. Farmers Loan & Trust Co.*, 185 Fed. 760 (C. C. A. 2, 1911); *Reid Wracking Co. v. United States*, 209 Fed. 214 (D. C. N. D. Ohio 1912).

<sup>22</sup> *United States v. Cimko*, 8 Pet. 486 (1834); *Murray's Lessee v. Hoboken Land & Improvement Co.*, 18 How. 272 (1855); *Burt v. Alameda*, 20 How. 527 (1857); *Judd v. Holman*, 61 U. S. 72 (1859).

<sup>23</sup> See *infra* under § Court of Claims here also Act of December 21, 1911, 37 Stat. 46 (amendment of Act of August 15, 1894, 28 Stat. 286, 305, as amended by Act of February 6, 1901, 31 Stat. 780, and Act of March 3, 1911, 36 Stat. 1094, 25 U. S. C. 845) conferring jurisdiction upon the district courts of the United States of.

\* \* \* all actions, suits, or proceedings involving the right of any person, in whole or in part of Indian blood or descent, to any allotment of land made under any law or treaty

and authorizing and directing that the United States be made a party to such suit. This act followed the decision of the Supreme Court in the case of *Zyzyus vs. the United States*, 184 U. S. 401 (1904) and *McKay v. Kalston*, 204 U. S. 458 (1907), in which the Supreme Court had held that the United States was not a necessary party to such suit for allotment. And see 2n 284, *supra*.

<sup>24</sup> 238 U. S. 738 (1915).

<sup>25</sup> 256 U. S. 206 (1921).

<sup>26</sup> 239 U. S. 974 (1922).

<sup>27</sup> 102 U. S. 295 (1880).

<sup>28</sup> 81 Stat. 790, 25 U. S. C. 845.

<sup>29</sup> 44 Stat. 269.

<sup>30</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 3.

having some of the attributes of sovereignty usually possessed by independent communities, have been derived in the Supreme Court not to be other states of the Union or foreign nations within the meaning of Article III, section 2 of the United States Constitution giving original jurisdiction to the Supreme Court in controversies in which a state of the Union or a citizen thereof and a foreign state or subjects and citizens thereof are parties. Consequently an Indian tribe as such cannot sue or be sued, or intervene in any case where the original jurisdiction of the Supreme Court is invoked.<sup>10</sup>

Whether a tribe can sue or be sued under the diversity of citizenship clause of section II (1) of title 28 of the United States Code in the federal courts is a moot question. An Indian tribe as such is not a citizen within the meaning of that clause. If it were incorporated under the laws of the United States it could not sue or be sued under the diversity of citizenship clause unless there were in fact Congress providing that a tribe should be considered as possessing a state citizenship for jurisdictional purposes.<sup>11</sup>

The statutes which confer upon tribes a capacity to sue or to be sued, and the question of whether in the absence of such a statute such suits may be maintained are elsewhere treated.<sup>12</sup>

(7) **Individual Indian as party litigant.**—As a general rule, an Indian irrespective of his citizenship or tribal relations, may sue in any state court of competent jurisdiction to redress any wrong committed against his person or property outside the limits of the reservation.<sup>13</sup> But the mere fact that the plaintiff is an Indian does not vest jurisdiction in the federal courts.<sup>14</sup>

This being true, the only grounds upon which a federal court could take jurisdiction of a suit by an Indian would be either because of diversity of citizenship between the plaintiff and defendant or because the cause of action arose under the Constitution, treaties or laws of the United States. In *Duck v. St. Lawrence River Power Company*,<sup>15</sup> the rule as to the first branch of this proposition is succinctly stated:

Diversity of citizenship is not relied upon to grant jurisdiction. Nor may this action be maintained merely because the appellant is an Indian.<sup>16</sup> (P. 361.)

Originally the members of an Indian tribe were not regarded as citizens, unless naturalized, either collectively or individually under some treaty or law of the United States, and, consequently they could not sue in the federal courts on the ground of diversity of citizenship.<sup>17</sup> In cases, however, where an individual Indian, although a member of a tribe, was a citizen of the United States by virtue of some treaty or law of Congress, it all other

elements of federal jurisdiction were present, he could sue under this clause.<sup>18</sup>

## B JURISDICTION DEPENDENT UPON CHARACTER OF SUBJECT MATTER

As to the character of the subject matter as an element of federal jurisdiction, it is to be observed that the cases are considerably in conflict in determining whether in action arises under the Constitution, treaties or laws of the United States. It is quite clear, however, that the federal question must appear by specific allegations in the bill of complaint and not from facts developed either in the answer or in the course of the trial.<sup>19</sup>

A number of general statutes confer jurisdiction on provisions conferring jurisdiction over defined subjects of Indian concern upon the federal courts.<sup>20</sup>

See *Pelaez v. Patrick*, 115 U. S. 317 (1885) wherein the Supreme Court said:

It is clearly necessary to say in this connection that while until this time the granting of citizenship under Art. VI, Treaty of April 30, 1869, § 1, Act of March 3, 1875, § 1, and the laws of the United States capable of doing so, such as the Federal courts, the courts of Nebraska were open to them as they are to all citizens irrespective of race or color. *Thompson v. Rogers*, 8 Kan. 374, 12 *Blue Jacket v. Johnson County*, 4 Kansas 289, *Wiley v. Rebeck*, 15 Kansas 91 (P. 332).

Article Chapter 8, sec. 6.

*Schulthies v. McDonough*, 225 U. S. 914 (C. C. A. 8, 1912).

In sustaining the contention that the suit was one arising under the laws of the United States, the court pointed out that the plaintiff owned the waters (see *McDonough v. Schulthies*, 1901 U. S. 101, 6 Oth. 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000).

A suit to enforce a right which takes its origin in the laws of the United States is not necessarily so, for that reason alone, one arising under those laws. For a suit does not so arise merely as to really and substantially involves a dispute or controversy respecting the validity, construction or effect of such a law upon the determination of which the result depends. This is especially so, if a suit involving rights to land accrued under a law of the United States. If it were not, every suit to establish title to land in the central and western States would so arise as all titles in these States are traceable back to those of 1789. See *Gold v. Gold* and *Waters*, 10 U. S. 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000).

Where a bill involving the right to a lease of Indian land fails to show that the right depended upon construction of an act of Congress but the parties and counts below proceeded upon the theory that it did so the Supreme Court of the United States may permit amendment of the bill so as to allege that fact, and to establish jurisdiction. *Smith v. McDonough*, 270 U. S. 445 (1926). See also *Woodhouse v. Bud*, 70 F. 2d 61 (C. C. A. 4, 1934).

Act of June 30, 1884, § 1, 23 Stat. 728, 729, 734 (trade and intercourse); Act of March 30, 1862, § 1, 18 Stat. 145 (trade and intercourse); Civil Rights Act of July 1, 1875, 18 Stat. 805; Naturalization and citizenship Act of June 30, 1906, § 8, 34 Stat. 596; Bankruptcy Act of July 1, 1908, § 301 Stat. 544, 11 U. S. C. 11, 110; Statutes of limitation Act of May 31, 1902, § 2 Stat. 284, 28 U. S. C. 847.

Right to allotment Act of February 3, 1901, § 1, 31 Stat. 780, 28 U. S. C. 145; Act of December 21, 1911, 37 Stat. 1601.

"And the judgment or decree of any court not in favor of any claimant to an allotment of land shall have the same effect, when

<sup>10</sup> *Cherokee Nation v. Georgia*, 5 Pet. 1 (1831).

<sup>11</sup> Congress cannot refer directly to the Supreme Court for adjudication of the claim of an Indian tribe for that court would be equalized to invoking an original jurisdiction which that court cannot exercise under the Constitution but the matter may be referred to an inferior court and brought to the Supreme Court by appeal at the necessary legislation to that end is provided. *Yankton Sioux Tribe v. United States*, 272 U. S. 351 (1926).

<sup>12</sup> See *Bank's Grant Co. v. Tex. & Pac. Ry.*, 241 U. S. 293 (1916). The words "citizens" and "aliens," as used in the statutory acts have been considered as including corporations. *Emory & Co. v. Kane*, 170 U. S. 100 (1898).

<sup>13</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 6.

<sup>14</sup> *Wiley v. Rebeck*, 6 Kan. 94, 110 (1870); *Am-Du-De-Ring v. Beaulieu*, 98 Minn. 98, 100, 107 N. W. 820 (1900); *Brown v. Anderson*, 61 Okla. 136, 180 Pac. 724, 726 (1919); *Y. & P. Ry. v. Rebeck*, 41 Okla. 287 (C. C. D. Iowa 1900); *Pelaez v. Patrick*, 145 U. S. 317, 380 (1892). See Chapter 8, sec. 6.

<sup>15</sup> *United States v. Scales*, 274 Fed. 946, 274 Fed. 946, 950 (D. C. W. D. N. Y. 1921).

<sup>16</sup> 82 F. 2d 650 (C. C. A. 2, 1926).

<sup>17</sup> *Wilk v. Wilkins*, 112 U. S. 94 (1884). See Chapter 8, sec. 2.

Other statutes contain provisions conferring jurisdiction over various matters upon territorial courts or courts of the United States in the territories.<sup>35</sup>

property claimed to be the title of the Indians as if such allotment of land to an individual Indian and approved in law, but this provision shall not apply to any lands now or hereafter held by either of the Five Civilized Tribes, the Osage Nation of Indians, nor to any of the lands within the Company Indian Agency. Provided that the right of appeal shall be allowed to either party as in other cases.

And see Chapter 13, sec. 2 Chapter 4, sec. 12. *Re Taylor and Son v. Smith* 194 U. S. 101 (1904) the Supreme Court held that the United States was not a necessary party to a suit brought under this statute. Approval of expenditures made by landowners and trustees of Indian nations of Indians and boundary matters. Joint Resolution of July 14, 1870 to Stat. 200.

*Indian Territory* Act of July 1, 1864, 22 Stat. 118. *Mountain Territory*—statutes from construction of railroad Act of July 10, 1864, 22 Stat. 137.

*Indian Territory* Act of March 1, 1889, 25 Stat. 781, 794 (entire of court's jurisdiction). Act of October 1, 1890, 26 Stat. 655, 656, Act of March 4, 1891, 26 Stat. 820. Act of March 1, 1895, 26 Stat. 883, 604. Joint Resolution of March 2, 1895, 26 Stat. 974. Act of May 7, 1890, 13 Stat. 170, Act of February 18, 1901, 31 Stat. 754. Act of February 9, 1896, 29 Stat. 6. Act of June 7, 1897, 30 Stat. 62, 53. Act of June 28, 1898, 30 Stat. 495, 496, 497. Act of July 1, 1898, 30 Stat. 607, 509. Act of March 1, 1901, 31 Stat. 861, 869. Act of March 24, 1904, 62 Stat. 60. Act of June 4, 1902, 32 Stat. 500, 501. Act of March 7, 1904, 33 Stat. 90. Act of April 28, 1905, 33 Stat. 577. Act of June 23, 1906, 35 Stat. 832, 834. Act of March 3, 1909, 35 Stat. 836.

*Territory of Oklahoma* Act of May 2, 1890, 26 Stat. 51, 86. Act of June 7, 1897, 30 Stat. 62, 70-73. Act of June 10, 1900, 34 Stat. 267, 277. *Michigan Territory* Act of January 10, 1852, 8 Stat. 722.

See following chapters concerning laws Indian trust lands. Act of June 9, 1892, 27 Stat. 769.

Prohibiting, preventing suits by Public Indians in certain cases. Act of May 31, 1894, 48 Stat. 108, 111.

Cancellation of leases on lands upon Shoshone Indian Reservation. Act of August 21, 1919, 39 Stat. 519.

Finally, numerous special statutes contain jurisdictional provisions, relating to specific subjects.<sup>36</sup>

To quiet and finally settle the titles to the lands claimed by or under the Black Rob Band of Shawnee Indians in Kansas. Joint Resolution of March 3, 1879, 20 Stat. 488.

Controversies between the Post Smith and Chocktan Bridge Co. and the Chocktan tribe of Indians. Act of March 2, 1899, 26 Stat. 884. *Price* the land claims. Act of March 1, 1901, 26 Stat. 854.

Controversies between the Public lands in the State of New Mexico. Act of May 30, 1926, 44 Stat. 498.

Confirmation of Indian lands in the Colville Reservation in the State of Washington. Act of July 1, 1892, 27 Stat. 62, 64, and see Act of April 6, 1890, 26 Stat. 45.

Accounts under any trust created under the act involving Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes. Act of January 27, 1883, 17 Stat. 777, 778. Cancellations of trust created under the act involving Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes. Act of January 27, 1883, 17 Stat. 777, 778-779. Approval to disclaim claims from approval by county courts of conveyances of unclaimed lands by full-blooded Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes. Act of January 27, 1883, 17 Stat. 777, 779.

Partition of Kickapoo Indian lands. Act of June 29, 1936, 49 Stat. 536.

Ownership of Pipestone Reservation. Act of August 13, 1894, 28 Stat. 258, 257-258.

Entitlement of certain lands in title of Kansas. Act of March 3, 1875, 17 Stat. 622, 623.

Removal of restrictions upon lands of members of the Eastern Band of the Cherokee Indians of North Carolina not to affect jurisdictions of United States courts to restrain suit by United States to protect such lands. Act of June 4, 1924, 44 Stat. 476, 481.

Quitting title to lands of certain Indians. Act of May 29, 1906, 46 Stat. 444, 445.

To quiet title to lands of certain Indians of New Mexico under certain conditions. Act of June 7, 1911, 41 Stat. 688, 687.

Process for making United States suits in certain suits involving Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes. Act of April 30, 1926, 44 Stat. 239, 240.

### SECTION 3. COURT OF CLAIMS

While the United States cannot be sued without its consent,<sup>37</sup> yet it may be sued with its consent in any court or tribunal which Congress shall create or designate for the purpose, upon such terms or conditions and regulations as Congress shall see fit to prescribe, and the jurisdiction thus conferred must be held to be subject to whatever limitations are prescribed in the act of resolution of Congress conferring such jurisdiction.

So far as the Court of Claims is concerned its jurisdiction rests upon these general propositions, and therefore the extent of that jurisdiction is to be measured by the provisions of the jurisdictional act of Congress by which it is conferred in particular instances where such jurisdiction is invoked.<sup>38</sup> In other words, the Court of Claims has no general jurisdiction over claims against the United States, and can take cognizance only of those which by the terms of some act of Congress are committed to it.<sup>39</sup> Statutes which extend the jurisdiction of the Court of Claims and permit the Government to be sued are usually strictly construed, and the grant of jurisdiction therein contained must be

shown clearly to cover the case and if it does not it will not be applied.

With reference to claims by Indians against the United States the rule is not different from that stated above, since "the moral obligations of the Government toward the Indians, whatever they may be, are for Congress alone to recognize, and the courts can enforce only such jurisdiction over the subject as Congress may confer upon them."<sup>40</sup> In *Klamath Indians v. United States*<sup>41</sup> the Supreme Court, in construing the Act of May 28, 1920,<sup>42</sup> conferring jurisdiction upon the Court of Claims to adjudicate "all claims of whatsoever nature" of the Klamath Indians against the United States, "which had not theretofore been determined by that Court," declared that jurisdictional acts conferring upon an Indian tribe the privilege of suing the United States in the Court of Claims, are to be strictly construed and held, accordingly, that the Act of 1920 did not embrace a claim which the Indians had settled with the Government before and for which they had given a valid release, even though the consideration for this release was grossly inadequate. In this connection the Supreme Court said:

If the release stands, no money or property in due plaintiffs, for the settlement and release wiped out the claim.

<sup>35</sup> See Section 24 (2) supra.

<sup>36</sup> See *De Groot v. United States*, 3 Wall. 419 (1869). *See also*, *Reverell*, 13 Wall. 684 (1871), *McBirath v. United States*, 104 U. S. 426 (1880), *United States v. Gleason*, 124 U. S. 255 (1887), *Johnson v. United States*, 160 U. S. 546 (1896), *Thompson v. United States*, 282 U. S. 469 (1914), *Harley v. United States*, 198 U. S. 239 (1905), *Kendall v. United States*, 107 U. S. 128 (1882), *Stewart v. United States*, 222 U. S. 88 (1911).

<sup>37</sup> *Thompson v. United States*, 282 U. S. 469 (1914), citing *Johnson v. United States*, 160 U. S. 546, 560 (1896). Note, however, that under 28 U. S. C. 237 (Entire Code, sec. 161), either house of Congress may refer a pending bill to the Court of Claims for a report on the law and facts. *See Ock Nation v. United States*, 74 C. Cl. 688 (1892) for a discussion of the conditions under which such report will be made.

<sup>40</sup> *Blackfeather v. United States*, 100 U. S. 398 (1905). *Of Shillinger v. United States*, 155 U. S. 168 (1894).

<sup>41</sup> *Blackfeather v. United States*, 150 U. S. 368, 373 (1903), *Klamath Indians v. United States*, 206 U. S. 244 (1905). *Of Johnson v. United States*, 160 U. S. 546 (1896), *Yule v. United States*, 173 U. S. 480 (1899).

<sup>42</sup> 41 Stat. 628 (1920).

<sup>43</sup> 41 Stat. 628 amended by Act of May 15, 1906, 49 Stat. 1276, and see *United States v. Klamath Indians*, 804 U. S. 119 (1888).





determination of the amount of sums due or claimed to be due the Indians from the United States under any treaty or law of Congress."<sup>111</sup>

To most nearly meet the jurisdiction is conferred to him to examine, and render judgment,<sup>112</sup> or "to hear and determine and to render final judgment,"<sup>113</sup> or to hear, examine, and adjudicate, and render judgment,<sup>114</sup> or to hear, adjudicate, and render

judgment,<sup>115</sup> or "to hear, determine, adjudicate, and render final judgment,"<sup>116</sup> or "to consider and determine,"<sup>117</sup> or "to hear, examine, adjudicate, and render final judgment,"<sup>118</sup> or "to consider and adjudicate,"<sup>119</sup> or "to hear and determine,"<sup>120</sup> or "to try and determine,"<sup>121</sup> or "to try and render judgment,"<sup>122</sup> or "to determine and report from findings of fact reported before,"<sup>123</sup> or "to proceed upon findings of fact already made,"<sup>124</sup> or "to hear and enter up judgment,"<sup>125</sup> or "to hear and report a finding of fact,"<sup>126</sup> or "to hear, consider, and determine,"<sup>127</sup> or "to hear, ascertain, and report" to Congress.<sup>128</sup>

In many of the cases, the court is to take jurisdiction notwithstanding the lapse of time or statutes of limitations.<sup>129</sup> and

annulled by Joint Resolution of May 10, 1940, 44 Stat. 565. Joint Resolution of February 19, 1929, 45 Stat. 1429, and Act of August 16, 1939, 50 Stat. 670. Act of June 7, 1924, 43 Stat. 611 (Shoshone). Act of February 12, 1924, 43 Stat. 546 (Indians in State of Washington). Act of March 4, 1925, 43 Stat. 1181 (Indians on Klamath). Act of February 25, 1925, 45 Stat. 1754. Act of May 11, 1926, 44 Stat. 565 (Chippewa). Amended by Act of April 21, 1928, 45 Stat. 1224. Act of May 15, 1928, 45 Stat. 601. Act of June 15, 1934, 48 Stat. 1079. Act of May 4, 1936, 49 Stat. 1274, and Act of July 10, 1936, 49 Stat. 1276. Act of March 1, 1926, 45 Stat. 1121. Act of July 2, 1926, 45 Stat. 1011 (Potomac Indians). Act of July 2, 1926, 45 Stat. 907 (Crow tribe). Amended by Joint Resolution of August 23, 1927, 45 Stat. 612. Act of March 1, 1927, 45 Stat. 1261 (Assiniboin). Amended by Joint Resolution of June 9, 1930, 45 Stat. 521. Act of March 4, 1927, 44 Stat. 1449 (Shoshone tribe of Wind River Reservation). See *Shoshone Tribe v. United States*, 299 U. S. 475 (1937). Act of December 17, 1924, 45 Stat. 1027 (Winnemucca). Act of February 25, 1925, 45 Stat. 1707 (Shoshone). Act of March 3, 1931, 46 Stat. 1197 (Ojibwa and Band of Chippewa). Act of April 25, 1932, 47 Stat. 177 (Bellevue Cheyenne and Western Cheyenne on Old Bellevue Reservation). Act of June 10, 1934, 48 Stat. 972. Act of August 26, 1937, 49 Stat. 801 (Indians on Oregon).

<sup>111</sup> Act of April 11, 1916, 39 Stat. 47 (Bellevue and Wind River). See *Shoshone Indians v. United States*, 85 C. Cls. 802 (1924) with den. 275 U. S. 725, and *Shoshone Indians v. United States*, 277 U. S. 1 (1928). Act of March 4, 1917, 39 Stat. 1207 (Mud-wagon and Wah-shoo-ah-ah). Act of February 13, 1920, 41 Stat. 404 (Fort Belknap Indians). Act of April 20, 1920, 41 Stat. 822 (Klamath, etc.) amended by Act of May 15, 1926, 49 Stat. 178. See *Klamath Indians v. United States*, 266 U. S. 244 (1925), and *United States v. Klamath Indians*, 304 U. S. 119 (1938). Act of June 10, 1930, 45 Stat. 738 (Sour). Amended by Act of June 21, 1932, 46 Stat. 761, and by February 6, 1921, 41 Stat. 1007 (Oregon Indians). Act of March 8, 1931, 46 Stat. 1487 (Pillager Band of Chippewa). Act of June 10, 1930, 45 Stat. 738 (Pillager and Haida Indians). Act of August 10, 1935, 49 Stat. 1040 (Chippewa). Act of June 28, 1938, 52 Stat. 1212 (Red Lake Band of Chippewa).

<sup>112</sup> Act of March 2, 1897, 28 Stat. 878, 898 (Choctaw and Chickasaw). See *United States v. Choctaw Nation and Chickasaw Nation*, 179 U. S. 494 (1900), 1st of June 1, 1902, 31 Stat. 872, 880 (Choctaw and Chickasaw). Act of March 8, 1905, 33 Stat. 982, 1020, 1011. See *United States v. Choctaw Nation*, 202 U. S. 301 (1906). 1st of June 22, 1910, 36 Stat. 474 (Omaha tribe). See *United States v. Omaha Tribe*, 248 U. S. 475 (1918). Act of April 11, 1916, 39 Stat. 47 (Shoshone and Washoe). See *Shoshone Indians v. United States*, 85 C. Cls. 802 (1924) (den. 275 U. S. 628), and *Shoshone Indians v. United States*, 277 U. S. 424 (1928), Act of April 28, 1920, 41 Stat. 885 (Lone tribe), amended by Act of January 21, 1929, 45 Stat. 1073, and Act of March 26, 1929, 45 Stat. 632 (Klamath etc.), amended by Act of May 15, 1926, 49 Stat. 178. See *Klamath Indians v. United States*, 266 U. S. 244 (1925), and *United States v. Klamath Indians*, 304 U. S. 119 (1938). Act of June 3, 1920, 41 Stat. 788 (Sour) amended by Act of June 24, 1928, 45 Stat. 761. Act of February 6, 1921, 41 Stat. 1007 (Oregon Indians). Act of February 7, 1925, 45 Stat. 818 (Delaware Indians). Act of March 3, 1931, 46 Stat. 1487 (Pillager Band of Chippewa). Act of June 10, 1930, 45 Stat. 738 (Pillager and Haida Indians).

<sup>113</sup> Act of March 4, 1917, 39 Stat. 1186 (Mud-wagon and Wah-shoo-ah-ah). Act of January 9, 1925, 43 Stat. 72 (Poncha tribe). Act of February 12, 1924, 43 Stat. 836 (Indians in State of Washington). Act of May 18, 1936, 49 Stat. 692 (Indians of California). Act of June 28, 1938, 52 Stat. 1200 (Ute). Act of June 28, 1938, 52 Stat. 1212 (Red Lake Band of Chippewa).

<sup>114</sup> Act of March 19, 1924, 43 Stat. 27 (Cheyenne), amended by Joint Resolution of May 10, 1920, 43 Stat. 688. Joint Resolution of February 19, 1929, 45 Stat. 1229, Act of June 16, 1934, 48 Stat. 972, and Act of October 10, 1937, 50 Stat. 900. Act of May 20, 1924, 43 Stat. 123 (Seminole), amended by Joint Resolution of May 18, 1929, 45 Stat. 698, Joint Resolution of February 19, 1929, 45 Stat. 1229, and Act of August 10, 1937, 50 Stat. 900. Act of May 24, 1924, 43 Stat. 108 (Creek), amended by Joint Resolution of May 10, 1928, 44 Stat. 605, Joint Resolution of February 19, 1929, 45 Stat. 1229, and Act of August 18, 1937, 50 Stat. 900. See *United States v. Creek Nation*, 266 U. S. 187, 188 (1925). Act of June 7, 1924, 43 Stat. 837 (Choctaw and Chickasaw), amended by Joint Resolution of May 10, 1920, 43 Stat. 688, Joint Reso-

lution of February 19, 1929, 45 Stat. 1229, and Act of August 16, 1939, 50 Stat. 670. Act of June 7, 1924, 43 Stat. 644 (Shoshone). Act of March 9, 1926, 43 Stat. 1183 (Klamath or Kew) amended by Act of February 22, 1929, 45 Stat. 1228, Committee on Resolution No. 21 of June 7, 1924, 43 Stat. 1612 (Choctaw and Chickasaw). Act of May 14, 1926, 44 Stat. 577 (Chippewa) amended by Act of April 11, 1928, 45 Stat. 423. Act of May 18, 1928, 49 Stat. 601, Act of June 18, 1934, 48 Stat. 979. Act of May 16, 1936, 49 Stat. 1274 and Joint Resolution of June 22, 1936, 49 Stat. 1246. Act of March 2, 1926, 44 Stat. 1208 (Assiniboin), amended by Joint Resolution of June 7, 1910, 36 Stat. 731, Act of March 4, 1927, 44 Stat. 1449 (Shoshone tribe of Wind River Reservation). See *Shoshone Tribe v. United States*, 299 U. S. 475 (1937). Act of December 17, 1924, 45 Stat. 1027 (Winnemucca tribe). Act of April 25, 1932, 47 Stat. 177 (Bellevue Cheyenne and Western Cheyenne on Old Bellevue Reservation), amended by Act of June 10, 1934, 48 Stat. 972. Act of August 30, 1935, 49 Stat. 1010 (Chippewa).

<sup>115</sup> Act of July 2, 1926, 44 Stat. 807 (Crow), amended by Joint Resolution of August 25, 1925, 45 Stat. 675. Act of February 28, 1920, 45 Stat. 1407 (Shoshone).

<sup>116</sup> Act of March 1, 1927, 44 Stat. 1075 (Shi and Poy), Act of February 20, 1929, 45 Stat. 1249 (New River).

<sup>117</sup> Act of March 4, 1900, 35 Stat. 793, 796 (Ute). Act of March 14, 1924, 43 Stat. 21 (Indians in Montana Idaho, and Washington). Amended by Act of February 4, 1914, 38 Stat. 1040.

<sup>118</sup> Act of February 23, 1925, 45 Stat. 1265 (Indians of State of Oregon). Amended by Act of June 14, 1914, 47 Stat. 907. Act of December 23, 1910, 36 Stat. 1075 (Idaho Oregon or White Springs Tribe). Act of August 26, 1937, 49 Stat. 801 (Indians in Oregon). Act of September 8, 1935, 49 Stat. 1085 (Alumineum) amended by Act of April 8, 1938, 52 Stat. 204.

<sup>119</sup> Act of June 25, 1910, 36 Stat. 849 (Chippewa).

<sup>120</sup> Act of October 1, 1890, 26 Stat. 646 (Shawnee, Delaware and freedmen of Cherokee Nation), amended by Act of July 6, 1892, 27 Stat. 56. See *Blackfeather v. United States*, 300 U. S. 968 (1930). Act of March 3, 1891, 26 Stat. 889, 1031 (Ojibwa).

<sup>121</sup> Act of February 25, 1925, 45 Stat. 1754 (Old Settlers or Western Chippewa). Act of June 6, 1900, 31 Stat. 972 (Fort Hall Indian Reservation).

<sup>122</sup> Act of March 8, 1881, 21 Stat. 501 (Choctaw Nation). See *Choctaw Nation v. United States*, 118 U. S. 1 (1886). Act of March 19, 1890, 26 Stat. 34 (Potomac).

<sup>123</sup> Act of January 9, 1925, 43 Stat. 70 (Yankton Sioux).

<sup>124</sup> Act of January 25, 1890, 27 Stat. 428 (New York Indians).

<sup>125</sup> Act of January 28, 1894, 27 Stat. 438 (New York Indians).

<sup>126</sup> Act of April 4, 1910, 36 Stat. 209, 210 (Sioux).

<sup>127</sup> Act of March 8, 1910, 40 Stat. 1310 (Cherokee Nation).

<sup>128</sup> Act of March 4, 1901, 31 Stat. 1068, 1076.

<sup>129</sup> Act of March 3, 1891, 28 Stat. 980, 1021 (Potomac). Act of June 22, 1910, 36 Stat. 660 (Omaha). Act of February 11, 1920, 41 Stat. 494 (Fort Belknap Indians). Act of March 4, 1927, 44 Stat. 1263 (Klamath, etc.), amended by Act of April 15, 1930, 45 Stat. 1278. See *Klamath Indians v. United States*, 266 U. S. 244 (1925) and *United States v. Klamath Indians*, 304 U. S. 119 (1938). Act of June 3, 1920, 41 Stat. 788 (Sour) amended by Act of June 24, 1928, 45 Stat. 761.

<sup>130</sup> Act of February 6, 1921, 41 Stat. 1007 (Oregon Indians). Act of March 18, 1924, 43 Stat. 21 (Indians in Montana Idaho, and Washington).

<sup>131</sup> Amended by Act of February 4, 1914, 38 Stat. 1040. Act of May 20, 1924, 43 Stat. 128 (Seminole), amended by Joint Resolution of May 20, 1929, 45 Stat. 698, Joint Resolution of February 19, 1929, 45 Stat. 1229, and Act of August 10, 1937, 50 Stat. 900. Act of May 24, 1924, 43 Stat. 123 (Creek), amended by Joint Resolution of May 10, 1928, 44 Stat. 605, Joint Resolution of February 19, 1929, 45 Stat. 1229, and Act of August 18, 1937, 50 Stat. 900. See *United States v. Creek Nation*, 266 U. S. 187, 188 (1925). Act of June 7, 1924, 43 Stat. 837 (Choctaw and Chickasaw), amended by Joint Resolution of May 10, 1920, 43 Stat. 688, Joint Reso-

<sup>132</sup> Act of June 7, 1924, 43 Stat. 837 (Choctaw and Chickasaw), amended by Joint Resolution of May 10, 1920, 43 Stat. 688, Joint Reso-



in such language as to "inquire into and finally adjudicate"<sup>110</sup> to "hear, adjudicate, and render judgment"<sup>111</sup> to "hear, consider and adjudicate"<sup>112</sup> to "to hear, determine, and render final judgment,"<sup>113</sup> to "retain, decide, determine, and finally adjudicate,"<sup>114</sup> to "take and record and determine the action filed" therein by the claimant,<sup>115</sup> or to "invest it," comes so far as the same pertain to the claim of the claimant, upon facts as previously found and returned by the court and is authorized to enter judgment in said case in favor of the plaintiff,<sup>116</sup> or a claim is referred to the court together with the record or papers in a previous case formerly tried in said court and the court is authorized and directed "to order proof to be taken" with respect to the claim.<sup>117</sup>

In some instances the court has been authorized and directed to exercise jurisdiction in Indian depredation claims<sup>118</sup> or a private claimant has been authorized to prosecute an Indian's depredation claim pending in that court and to receive judgment thereon.<sup>119</sup> In the claimant is authorized to bring suit in the Court of Claims against the United States.<sup>120</sup>

By section 182 of the Indian Code<sup>121</sup> in any case brought in the Court of Claims under any act of Congress by which that court is authorized to render a judgment or decree against the United States or against any Indian tribe or any Indians, or against any fund held in trust by the United States for any Indian tribe or for any Indians, the claimant, or the United States or the tribe of Indians or other party in interest shall have the same right of appeal as is conferred by the other sections of the code and such a right is to be exercised only within the time and in the manner that is prescribed.

In individual claims with respect to Indian lands alleged by the claimant to have been appropriated by the United States Government without right or title thereto, and without authority either in law or in equity, the jurisdiction is conferred on the Court of Claims "to proceed, according to the principles and rules of both law and equity, to find the facts" embracing the matter that is to be paid to the claimants.<sup>122</sup>

While Congress may refer to the Court of Claims on any other tribunal which it may create or designate any Indian claim for adjudication, it cannot refer such claims directly to the Supreme Court for that purpose. The reason is that under the Constitution the original jurisdiction of the Supreme Court extends only to cases "affecting Ambassadors, other public Ministers and Consuls, and those in which a State shall be party,"<sup>123</sup> and Congress can neither enlarge nor restrict that jurisdiction.<sup>124</sup> Thus, it having been already decided in *Cherokee Nation v. Gov-*

*ern*,<sup>125</sup> that an Indian tribe is not a State in the sense that this word is used in the Constitution, the Supreme Court has held that Congress cannot refer directly to it, for adjudication, the claim of an Indian tribe, for that it would be to invoke a jurisdiction which that Court cannot exercise under the Constitution, although the matter might be referred to the Court of Claims in the first instance, and brought to the Supreme Court by way of appeal if the necessary congressional legislation to that end was provided.<sup>126</sup>

Nor has Congress constitutional authority to enlarge the appellate jurisdiction of the Supreme Court by allowing appeals from judgments of the Court of Claims in cases not of a judicial nature, for conceding that Congress may confer upon the Court of Claims extra-judicial power as it has in numerous instances, yet the appellate jurisdiction of the Supreme Court under the Constitution is strictly judicial, and any attempt on the part of Congress either to enlarge or to diminish that jurisdiction would be unconstitutional and void, is an exercise in excess of the judicial power vested by the Constitution in that tribunal.<sup>127</sup>

With respect to so-called moral claims, or claims based on a supposed moral obligation of the United States toward the Indians, whatever the circumstances under which they may arise, if they exist at all, it is for Congress to consider whether they shall be recognized, and hence political in nature they would seem to fall outside the jurisdiction of the courts.<sup>128</sup> It is believed, however, that Congress may properly refer such claims to the Court of Claims for adjudication.<sup>129</sup> Whether it may also allow an appeal from the decision of the Court of Claims to the Supreme Court is a question upon which the Supreme Court has not passed. But if Congress should provide in appropriate legislation a definite standard upon which the validity of the claim could be determined and proper relief afforded to the parties to the suit as a matter of law, there would seem to be no objection to the allow use of the appeal, for then the judicial power of the United States would be called into play in any case or controversy arising under such legislation and submitted to the Court of Claims in the first instance, and the Supreme Court on appeal for adjudication. In other words, the claim under such legislation would be justiciable in nature, and therefore cognizable by the Court.<sup>130</sup>

<sup>110</sup> 5 Stat. 1 (1851).

<sup>111</sup> *Yankton Sioux Tribe v. United States*, 271 U. S. 871, 18 (1926).

<sup>112</sup> By the Act of March 1, 1884, the claims of the New York Indians for the value of certain lands in Kansas set apart for them under the Treaty of February 15, 1858, 7 Stat. 560 were referred to the Court of Claims with direction to report its proceedings to the Senate. The Court reported the findings to the Senate on January 16, 1892, and thereupon on January 28, 1893, Congress passed an act authorizing the Court of Claims "to hear and determine these claims and to enter up judgment as it is had original jurisdiction of this case without regard to the statute of limitations," with the right of appeal by either party to the Supreme Court. *New York Indians v. United States*, 170 U. S. 1 (1908). See also *supra* 21(2) *supra*.

<sup>113</sup> *See Brunswick Indians v. United States*, 70 C. Cl. 510 (1084) cert den 205 U. S. 755, *Blackfeet Indians v. United States*, 81 C. Cl. 101 (1045). These cases would seem to hold, in effect, that in the absence of congressional legislation the Court of Claims has no power to award a judgment based upon a moral claim by an Indian tribe or tribes against the United States.

<sup>114</sup> *See* *supra* 21(2) *supra*.

<sup>115</sup> *See* *supra* 21(2) *supra*.

<sup>116</sup> The judicial power of the United States, vested by the Constitution in the federal courts, embraces all controversies of a justiciable nature, except so far as they are limited by express or implied consent to the general grant of judicial power. *Kansas v. Colorado*, 309 U. S. 40 (1937). A case or controversy in order that the judicial power of the United States may be exercised therein, implies the exist-

<sup>117</sup> Act of March 3, 1891, 26 Stat. 851 amended by Act of January 11, 1915, 38 Stat. 791. See *Johnson v. United States*, 180 U. S. 546 (1896), *Leighton v. United States*, 161 U. S. 201 (1895), *Meike v. United States*, 161 U. S. 297 (1896), *Culley v. United States*, 173 U. S. 79 (1899), *Conditon v. United States*, 178 U. S. 280 (1900), *Montgomery v. United States*, 180 U. S. 261 (1901), Act of February 9, 1907, 34 Stat. 2411.

<sup>118</sup> Act of May 29, 1909, 35 Stat. 444, 445. See *Gauland's Heirs v. Cherokee Nation*, 266 U. S. 430 (1921), *Green v. Minnecumee Tribe*, 288 U. S. 558 (1914).

<sup>119</sup> Act of June 28, 1881, 48 Stat. 1407.

<sup>120</sup> Act of May 29, 1909, 35 Stat. 444, 445, Act of February 6, 1928, 42 Stat. 1788, Act of April 4, 1910, 36 Stat. 280, 287.

<sup>121</sup> Act of April 28, 1850, 19 Stat. 125.

<sup>122</sup> Act of June 30, 1902, 32 Stat. 1402, c. 1319.

<sup>123</sup> Act of June 30, 1902, 32 Stat. 1402, c. 1340.

<sup>124</sup> Act of February 9, 1907, 34 Stat. 2411.

<sup>125</sup> *See* *supra* 21(2) *supra*.

<sup>126</sup> Act of June 6, 1900, 31 Stat. 1617.

<sup>127</sup> Act of June 4, 1880, 21 Stat. 544.

<sup>128</sup> Act of March 3, 1911, 36 Stat. 1087, 1149, 25 U. S. C. 288.

<sup>129</sup> Act of February 24, 1903, 38 Stat. 713, 808.

<sup>130</sup> *U. S. v. Cram*, 311 U. S. 1, 2.

<sup>131</sup> *Krusatz v. United States*, 219 U. S. 116 (1911). And *see* *supra* 2A (4), *supra*.

Ordinarily the Supreme Court will not review a finding of fact of the Court of Claims.<sup>119</sup> and the opinion of the Court of Claims will not be rechecked to for the purpose of taking out, controlling or modifying the scope of the findings.<sup>120</sup> The Supreme Court has repeatedly held that the findings of the Court of Claims in an action at law determine all matters of fact, like the verdict

rate of interest on possible advance payees whose contributions are submitted to the court on stipendium (*Cherokee v. Georgia* 210 U.S. 113 (1922)). A case arises under the Constitution on laws of the United States whenever its decision depends upon the correct construction of either: (*United States v. What* 201 379 (1821), *Osborn v. Bank of the United States* 9 Wheat 738 (1824)).

<sup>119</sup> *The Revolution v. Washington Indians*, *United States*, 208 U.S. 501 (1908), *United States v. What* 201 379 (1821), *Osborn v. Bank of the United States*, 9 Wheat 738 (1824), *United States v. What* 201 379 (1821), *Osborn v. Bank of the United States*, 9 Wheat 738 (1824), *United States v. What* 201 379 (1821), *Osborn v. Bank of the United States*, 9 Wheat 738 (1824), *United States v. What* 201 379 (1821), *Osborn v. Bank of the United States*, 9 Wheat 738 (1824).

## SECTION 4 FEDERAL ADMINISTRATIVE TRIBUNALS

While the judicial power of the Federal Government is vested by Article III of the Constitution in the Supreme Court, and in such inferior courts as the Congress may from time to time or claim and establish with respect to cases therein enumerated, yet there are many matters relating to the execution of powers delegated to Congress by other provisions of the Constitution which are susceptible of judicial determination, and these Congress may or may not find within the compass of the federal courts, as it may deem proper.<sup>121</sup> That Congress may refer such matters to special tribunals and clothe them with functions deemed essential or helpful in carrying into execution other powers delegated to it by other articles of the Constitution, would seem to be beyond question.

With reference to the Cherokee and Chickasaw Citizenship Court, otherwise known as the Dawes Commission, which was originally created by the Act of March 3, 1888,<sup>122</sup> the Supreme Court said in the case of *Es parte Bakelite Corp.*<sup>123</sup>

" \* \* \* It was created to hear and determine controverted claims to membership in two Indian tribes. The tribes were under the guardianship of the United States, which in virtue of that relation was proceeding to distribute the lands and funds of the tribes among their members. How the membership should be determined rested in the discretion of Congress. It could commit the task to officers of the department in charge of Indian Affairs, to a commission or to a judicial tribunal. As the controversies were difficult of solution and large properties were to be distributed, Congress chose to create a special court and to authorize it to determine the controversies. In *Wallace v. Adams*, 204 U.S. 415, this was held to be a valid exertion of authority belonging to Congress by reason of its control over the Indian tribes (P. 417).

When a matter has been entrusted by an act of Congress to the exclusive cognizance of a special tribunal or administrative officer, and the decision of that tribunal or officer made exclusive, the federal courts have no jurisdiction to determine it for alleged errors of law. Thus in *Hollenell v. Comstock*,<sup>124</sup> in which the question involved was as to the jurisdiction of the federal courts under the Acts of August 15, 1894,<sup>125</sup> and

of a jury, and that while there was evidence of a fact which they find, and no exception is taken, their finding is final.<sup>126</sup> Not will findings of mixed fact and law be reviewed by the Supreme Court on appeal from the Court of Claims.<sup>127</sup>

It may be added that after the Supreme Court has received a judgment of the Court of Claims and affirmed it, the Court of Claims, like any other court whose judgment has been reviewed by the Supreme Court, must give effect to it and carry it into effect according to the mandate, without variation or other for the relief.<sup>128</sup>

<sup>121</sup> *United States v. What* 201 379 (1821), *Osborn v. Bank of the United States*, 9 Wheat 738 (1824), *United States v. What* 201 379 (1821), *Osborn v. Bank of the United States*, 9 Wheat 738 (1824), *United States v. What* 201 379 (1821), *Osborn v. Bank of the United States*, 9 Wheat 738 (1824), *United States v. What* 201 379 (1821), *Osborn v. Bank of the United States*, 9 Wheat 738 (1824).

February 6, 1901,<sup>129</sup> to review a decision of the Secretary of the Interior determining the heirs of a deceased allottee under the Act of June 25, 1910,<sup>130</sup> the Supreme Court, in affirming the decree of the court below dismissing the bill for want of jurisdiction, said:

It is unnecessary to consider whether there was jurisdiction when the suit was begun. By the act of June 25, 1910, c. 431, § 814, 857, it was provided that in a case like this of the death of the allottee intestate during the trust period the Secretary of the Interior should ascertain the legal heirs of the decedent and his decision should be final and conclusive, with considerable discretion as to details. This act restored to the Secretary the power that had been taken from him by acts of 1894 and February 6, 1901, c. 217, § 814, 857. *At Kay v. Zolner*, 204 U.S. 468, 408 (1907). It made his jurisdiction exclusive in terms, it made no exception for pending litigation, but purported to be universal and so to take away the jurisdiction that for a time had been conferred upon the courts of the United States.<sup>131</sup>

The judgment of a special tribunal empowered to pass upon judicial questions cannot be attacked for fraud or mistake unless the fraud alleged and proved is such as to prevent a full hearing. Thus in *United States v. Athens*,<sup>132</sup> the Supreme Court held that the Dawes Commission in enrolling a name as that of a Creek Indian alive on April 1, 1890, when duly approved by the Secretary of the Interior as provided by the Act of June 10, 1896,<sup>133</sup> amounted to a judgment in an adversary proceeding, establishing the existence of the individual and his right to membership, that such judgment was not subject to attack and could not be annulled for fraud unless the fraud alleged and proved was such as to have prevented a full hearing within the doctrine approved in former decisions of the Court.<sup>134</sup>

<sup>121</sup> 31 Stat. 700.

<sup>122</sup> 26 Stat. 565, 28 U.S.C. 872, 378.

<sup>123</sup> See in the same case *Lane v. United States ex rel. McLeod and Trevelick*, 241 U.S. 201 (1916), *First Moon v. White Wolf*, 270 U.S. 245 (1926), *United States v. Boulton*, 266 U.S. 484 (1925).

The power to determine heirs given to the Secretary of the Interior by the Act of 1910 terminates when the trust patent is terminated and a patent in the second *Lester v. Pease*, 270 U.S. 474 (1926). See also *Shaw v. Hitchcock*, 178 U.S. 478 (1900), *Lane v. United States ex rel. McLeod and Trevelick*, 241 U.S. 201, 207 et seq. (1916). Also see Chapter 8 sec. 11 C.

<sup>124</sup> 200 U.S. 230 (1922). See also Chapter 5 sec. 12.

<sup>125</sup> 39 Stat. 321, 329, amending Act of March 3, 1898, 27 Stat. 812, 845. See *United States v. Throckmorton*, 98 U.S. 61 (1878), *Pence v. Burbank*, 101 U.S. 614 (1870), *Hilton v. Guyot*, 109 U.S. 118 (1886).

<sup>126</sup> *Miner's Lessee v. Hoboken Land and Improvement Co.*, 18 Nov. 272 (1866).

<sup>127</sup> See 12, 27 Stat. 812, 845, as amended by Act of June 10, 1896, 29 Stat. 321, 329, 342. And see Chapter 5, sec. 6.

<sup>128</sup> 279 U.S. 488 (1929).

<sup>129</sup> 249 U.S. 500 (1918).

<sup>130</sup> 28 Stat. 286.



right, title or interest thereto whether by way of purchase or descent, including wills, partition, condemnation, or judicial decree.<sup>19</sup> As stated by the Supreme Court in *McKay v. Kallayan*:<sup>20</sup>

"The *Reckitt* case [158 U. S. 412, 157 (1915)] settled that it is the necessary result of the alienation of Congress, the United States acquired such control over allotments as is essential to ease the allotted land to come during the period in which the land was to be held in trust, for the sale and benefit of the allottee.<sup>21</sup> As observed in the *Smith* case [191 U. S. 48, 148 (1903)] and *McKay v. Kallayan*, 194 U. S. 401, 405 (1911) prior to the passage of the Act of 1891 [Act of March 3, 1891, 26 Stat. 256 amended by the Act of February 6, 1901, 31 Stat. 760], the sole authority for setting aside, confirming, abolishing, reselling in the Secretary of the Interior. This being settled it follows that prior to the act of March 3, 1891 amendments necessarily involving a determination of the title and materiality of the right to the possession of land in allotments while the same were held in trust by the United States were not primarily exercisable by any court, either State or Federal. (U. S. 408.)

As to the question of jurisdiction to determine heirs and effect a distribution or partition of allotted land, a distinction must be noted as between lands held under a trust patent and lands held under a patent in fee. As to the latter it is sufficient to note that after the patent has been issued all questions relating to the transfer of title to the allotted lands must be determined by the laws of the state where the land is located.<sup>22</sup> The reason for this is simply that the allottee holds the land in his individual capacity and is to that land he has become incorporated, and since the land is located within the limits of the state the federal laws as opposed to the state laws cannot reach that land.<sup>23</sup>

As to lands held by the allottee under a trust patent it will be observed that the provisions of section 4 of the General Allotment Act are silent as to the question of jurisdiction to determine heirs or to determine a partition of lands. Since Congress has conferred upon the Secretary of the Interior full authority to determine heirs and to effect the partition of such lands<sup>24</sup> it is

<sup>19</sup> Although the federal right was first limited in the state court in the petition for rehearing of the question was raised was necessarily involved and was considered and decided adversely by the state court, this court has jurisdiction under Rev. Stat. § 700.

<sup>20</sup> The United States has sometimes sought control over the allotments in Indiana that except as provided by acts of Congress controversies involving the determination of title and right to possession of Indian allotments while the same are held in trust by the United States are not primarily exercisable by any court, State or Federal.

<sup>21</sup> The act of August 15, 1894, 28 Stat. 456 delegating to Federal courts the power to determine questions involving the rights of Indians to allotments did not confer upon state courts authority to pass upon any questions over which they did not have jurisdiction prior to the passage of such act. (Hitt, 15 to 17c, to the allotment, or the new possession thereof which is of necessity dependent upon the title.) (*McKay v. Kallayan*, 204 U. S. 475 (1907).)

<sup>22</sup> 201 U. S. 408 (1907).  
<sup>23</sup> See *Dickson v. Luck Land Co.*, 214 U. S. 271 (1917), *United States v. Hitt*, 241 U. S. 475 (1917). As to wills see *La Motte v. United States*, 254 U. S. 770 (1921).

<sup>24</sup> The judicial determination of controversies concerning lands allotted to Indians in severalty and held by the United States in trust for the allottee has been commonly committed exclusively to federal courts and not to the state courts. *United States v. Dredge*, 105 U. S. 482 (1880). *McKay v. Kallayan*, 204 U. S. 408 (1907), yet after the issuance of a fee patent in the name of a deceased allottee under the General Allotment Act of February 6, 1891, 24 Stat. 498, as amended by the Act of March 3, 1899, 31 Stat. 152 all questions pertaining to the title to the allotted land is subject to examination and determination by the courts—appropriately those in the state where the land is situated. And see *United States v. Weller*, 244 U. S. 452, 460 (1917) wherein the doctrine of partial condemnation is clearly recognized. See also and compare *Lynch v. French*, 279 U. S. 431 (1928).

<sup>25</sup> Act of June 26, 1914, ch. 817 § 75. See Chapter 5, sec. 11 and Chapter 12, sec. 6.

that that no court, state or federal has jurisdiction to determine heirs with respect to allotted Indian lands while the title therein remains in the United States. See *La Motte v. United States*, whether state or federal, any jurisdiction to partition or distribute such lands.<sup>25</sup> And the same principle is to lands allotted to Indians under fee simple patents subject to restrictions upon alienation under the approval of the Secretary of the Interior or some other federal agency selected by Congress for the purpose.<sup>26</sup>

<sup>26</sup> *McKay v. Kallayan*, 204 U. S. 475 (1907). *Little v. Bennett*, 64 Wash. 670, 127 Pac. 451 (1911). *Gray v. McKnight*, 75 Okla. 265, 183 Pac. 197 (1919).

<sup>27</sup> The federal courts in 1 assumed jurisdiction in matters involving inheritance of Indian lands after the passage of the Act of August 15, 1891, 28 Stat. 456 is amended by the Act of February 6, 1901, 31 Stat. 760, 29 U. S. C. § 417 providing, that one who claimed to have been unlawfully excluded or excluded from any allotment to which he claimed lawfully to be entitled make any claim or act of conveyance, such claim, deed and account or defend any action suit or proceeding in relation to his right therein in the proper court court (district court in the United States, and that the judgment or decree of any such court in favor of any claimant should have the same effect when properly certified to the Secretary of the Interior as if such allotment had been allowed and approved by him. This act however did not apply to the Free Cession tribes nor to any lands within the Quapaw Indian Agency. But clearly the purpose of the act was to confer jurisdiction upon the federal courts in matters of inheritance or descent in such cases where the land had reference merely to the right of an Indian to sue in these courts for an original allotment. *McKay v. Kallayan*, 204 U. S. 478 (1907), and *Wheeler v. United States*, 191 U. S. 934 (1904). As to the determination of heirs the Act of 1901, which in 1902 amendments, is applicable at all was repealed by the Act of June 25, 1910 to § 417 containing jurisdiction in such matters upon the Secretary of the Interior. *Board v. United States*, 183 Fed. 611 (C. C. Okla. 1910). *Pel Hottel v. United States*, 708 Fed. 687 (C. C. Idaho N. D. 1911). *First v. Collier*, 107 Fed. 102 (C. C. A. 9, 1912). The Act of 1910 did not repeal how (a) the Act of 1894 nor the mandatory act of 1902 with respect to the right of Indians to sue in the federal courts for an allotment. *United States v. Rogers*, 254 U. S. 140 (1921). *First v. Collier*, 107 Fed. 102 U. S. 241 (1920). Nor did the Act of 1910 make new law respecting the jurisdiction of the Secretary to determine heirs since it was merely declaratory of the previously existing law. See *Mallored v. Commons*, 240 U. S. 706 (1916). And under the Act of 1914 nor the Act of 1901 affected the authority of the Secretary of the Interior but only gave to the federal courts concurrent jurisdiction in such matters. *Daugherty v. McDaniel*, 408 U. S. 166 N. W. 141 (1918). The method and procedure adopted by the Secretary of the Interior in exercising his authority under the Act of 1910 is thus stated in his decision in the *Gray* Case, 442 U. S. 497, 105-6 (1913).

The Secretary of the Interior is to act upon counsel for both plaintiff and defendant as well as judge upon the bench. He does not wait for a case to be brought before him but on the contrary institutes the necessary proceedings himself. He had representatives in the field collect the necessary evidence which may be in the form of decrees of the State courts, a report or interrogatory answers etc. and undergo his division on legal and equitable grounds. The Secretary is not bound by the scope of his duties specifically provided for his department. "It is his duty," says rules and regulations as in many precedents. "If evidence indicates that the Secretary is not bound by the decrees or decrees of any court in inheritance matters within Indian land and that the Secretary is not bound by the evidence submitted, as to the determination of Indian heirs."

<sup>28</sup> *Daugherty v. McDaniel*, 408 U. S. 166 N. W. 141 (1918). *United States v. Hitt*, 182 Fed. 102 (C. C. D. Okla. 1910). See *McKay v. Kallayan*, 204 U. S. 478 (1907). In the *Bills* case supra it was held that the proviso in the General Allotment Act adopting the laws of descent of the state was merely in the purpose of providing a rule by which the heirs should be determined and the partition statutes were adopted only so far as they applied to the division of the land in case the heirs could not agree to hold it in common and that was no intention of allocating the trust in any case, and the clause "except as herein otherwise provided" evidenced the application of a general rule of state inheritance statutes authorizing a sale of the land where it could not be otherwise only divided and sold, a sale of land in the Indian Territory, although under an order of court based on the Kansas statute was null and void.

<sup>29</sup> Partition of Indian lands constitutes an "alienation" within the meaning of federal laws imposing restrictions on the sale of land. *Bartlett*, 65 Okla. 71, 162 Pac. 788 (1917). *Leone v. Gilford*, 70 Okla. 231, 173 Pac. 2196 (1916). In *Eysenbach v. Nohrbeck*, 111 Okla. 217,

A suit for the possession of allotted Indian lands instituted under state laws is not within the jurisdiction of the state courts regardless of the merits of the controversy so long as the title to those lands is in the United States.<sup>30</sup> That state courts have no jurisdiction to entertain a suit for the condemnation of allotted Indian lands held by the United States in trust for the allottee unless such jurisdiction is specifically conferred by an act of Congress has been settled by the Supreme Court in *Minnesota v. United States*, decided in 1919,<sup>31</sup> and the same rule applies in cases involving tribal lands.<sup>32</sup> With respect to lands allotted in severalty to Indians while the title remains in the United States it is to be observed that under the second paragraph of section 3 of the Act of March 1, 1901,<sup>33</sup> such lands may be condemned for any public purpose under the laws of the state or territory where they are located "in the same manner as land owned in fee, may be condemned," and the money awarded as damages is to be paid to the allottee. But this provision does not authorize a suit in the courts of a state to condemn such land if thereby Indians' condemnation for "any public purpose under the laws of the State or Territory where located."<sup>34</sup>

The fact that such a suit may have been removed to a federal court on petition of the United States and that a stipulation may have been entered into by its attorney in relation thereto is without legal significance for where jurisdiction has not been conferred by Congress no other of the United States has power to give to any court jurisdiction of a suit against the United States.<sup>35</sup>

As Congress has not given its consent to the institution of a condemnation suit of this sort in the state courts, the federal courts are therefore without jurisdiction upon its removal for the jurisdiction of the federal court upon such removal is, in a limited sense, a derivative jurisdiction and where the state court lacks jurisdiction of the subject matter or of the parties, the federal court requires none, although in a like suit originally brought in a federal court it would have had jurisdiction.<sup>36</sup>

<sup>30</sup> See 608 (1926) modifying opinion 310 Okla. 207, 486 Pac. 610 (1926). A decree in partition rendered by the United States Court for the Western District of the Indian Territory, or substituted land between full blood citizens of the Chick Nation was held to be void for want of jurisdiction of the subject matter since section 2 of the act of Congress of April 29, 1908, 34 Stat. 1337, restricted the unallotted land of full blood citizens of Chick, 140e against alienation and the decree in attempting, in partition the land was in effect "an alienation" of certain portions of the land away from within heirs and vesting the title in other heirs.

<sup>31</sup> See *McKay v. Kayles*, 201 U. S. 458 (1907). In that case the Supreme Court held:

"The suggestion made in argument that the controversy here presented involved the mere possession and not the title to the allotted land is without merit, since the right of possession awarded or awarded is dependent upon the existence of an equitable title in the claimant under the legislation of Congress to the ownership of the allotted lands. Indeed that such was the case plainly appears from the excerpt which we have made from the concluding portion of the opinion of the Supreme Court of Oregon:

"Because from the considerations previously stated we are convinced that from the courts here that the court below was without jurisdiction to maintain the controversy, we must not be considered as interfering with the opinion that we again that the court applied by the court in disposing of the merit of the case were erroneous." (P. 460)

<sup>32</sup> 308 U. S. 382.

<sup>33</sup> See *United States v. Coleman*, 80 F. 2d 812 (C. C. A. 4, 1927).

<sup>34</sup> 511 F. 1078, 1081-1084.

<sup>35</sup> *Minnesota v. United States* 307 U. S. 382, 389 (1939).

<sup>36</sup> *Minnesota v. United States*, 307 U. S. 382, 389 (1939). *Idaho v. Terrell*, 11 Wall. 176, 202, 40 U. S. 176, 10 U. S. 442, 443-445, *Penn. v. United States*, 129 U. S. 227, 232-239, *Shaw v. Schofield*, 162 U. S. 255, 270, *United States v. Garbutt Oil Co.*, 302 U. S. 828, 834-835 (P. 869).

<sup>37</sup> *Minnesota v. United States*, 307 U. S. 382, 389 (1939), *Idaho v. Terrell*, 11 Wall. 176, 202, 40 U. S. 176, 10 U. S. 442, 443-445, *Penn. v. United States*, 129 U. S. 227, 232-239, *Shaw v. Schofield*, 162 U. S. 255, 270, *United States v. Garbutt Oil Co.*, 302 U. S. 828, 834-835 (P. 869).

The controlling principle which prevents a court within the state or federal, from exercising any power or jurisdiction to adjudicate any matter involving the transfer of any right, title, or interest in or to restricted allotted Indian lands is that the United States in the exercise of its plenary and exclusive power over the Indians and their property may adopt such measures as it may deem necessary and proper for their welfare and protection<sup>37</sup> and the state courts without legislative authority have no power or jurisdiction to interfere with or circumvent those measures.<sup>38</sup> Consequently the mere fact that the lands involved in a suit brought in a state court may have been allotted to an Indian is not sufficient to oust the state court jurisdiction. It must also appear that such lands are either held by the United States in trust for the allottee or his heirs, or that they are subject to restrictions against alienation under some act of Congress or treaty of the United States with the Indians. It is to be observed also in this connection that the mechanics of a suit in court require that the facts showing the exercise of some exercise of jurisdiction shall appear. Thus if the bill makes out a case within the jurisdiction of the court that jurisdiction is not ousted or defeated merely because the defendant may allege in its answer that the land or other property is restricted, for it is only upon the determination of a fact upon which the court necessarily must pass in order to determine whether it can proceed, and if the court's decision on that issue is in favor of the defendant the suit, of course, must be dismissed for want of jurisdiction, otherwise the court may proceed to judgment, and that judgment, unless appealed from and reversed by the appellate court will be binding on the parties, whether the decision is right or wrong.<sup>39</sup>

The United States, however, would not be concluded by such judgment if it were not a party to the suit or did not give its consent thereto.<sup>40</sup>

<sup>38</sup> See *United States v. Barker*, 188 U. S. 132 (1903), *Irishman v. United States*, 224 U. S. 411 (1912).

<sup>39</sup> *Idaho Oil Co. v. Flanagan*, 97 Okla. 371, 209 Pac. 729 (1922) writ of error dismissed 261 U. S. 414 (1924). *Cotton v. Alford*, 148 Okla. 483, 203 Pac. 150 (1927). *Ribby v. Nelson*, 140 Okla. 217, 206 Pac. 700 (1926). *Brink v. Campbell*, 75 Okla. 189, 187 Pac. 224 (1919) cert den 25 U. S. 495 (1920). *Miller v. Tulul Oil Co.*, 104 Okla. 124, 233 Pac. 690 (1927). *Northwestern Energy Co. v. Forsyth*, 115 Okla. 188, 147 Pac. 408 (1926).

<sup>40</sup> In jurisdiction § 111 all is a matter of power and competency and wrong decisions. *Faint v. Jam*, 230 U. S. 230, 234-235 (1914), *Barnet v. Deane*, 7 U. S. 1282, 228 U. S. 140, 247 (1912). Even in cases where the jurisdiction of the court depends upon the subject matter it has repeatedly been held by the Supreme Court that if the allegations of the bill or declaration make a claim that it will found is within the jurisdiction of the court it is within that jurisdiction whether well founded or not. *East v. Northville Machine*, 262 U. S. 271, 274 (1924). *Louisville & Nashville R. R. Co. v. J. R. 247 U. S. 201, 203 (1918). Great Northern Manufacturing Co. v. Karpis & Bros.*, 238 U. S. 261, 268 (1915). *The Fish v. John D. & Sons*, 228 U. S. 22, 25 (1913). In *Georgia Furniture Manufacturing Co. v. Karpis & Bros.*, *supra*, the Supreme Court said that jurisdiction is.

"... the power to consider and decide on way of the other as the law may require and as not to be declined merely because it is not necessary with certainty that the outcome will be in the plaintiff's favor." (P. 260)

And in *East v. Northville Machine*, upon the Supreme Court said:

"The jurisdiction of the District Court is the only matter to be considered on this appeal. That is determined by the allegations of the bill and mainly if the bill or declaration makes a claim that it will found is within the jurisdiction of the court it is within that jurisdiction whether well founded or not." (P. 277)

<sup>41</sup> *Boonville v. United States*, 224 U. S. 628 (1914). *Priority v. United States*, 260 U. S. 301 (1923). *Sundeland v. United States*, 260 U. S. 20 (1924). See also *United States v. Long*, 104 U. S. 246 (C. C. O. 1904). *United States v. Goodland*, 271 U. S. 439 (1926). *United States v. Mohankashaw*, 72 F. 2d 867 (C. C. A. 10, 1934), *Idaho v. Terrell*, 11 Wall. 176, 202, 40 U. S. 176, 10 U. S. 442, 443-445, *Penn. v. United States*, 129 U. S. 227, 232-239, *Shaw v. Schofield*, 162 U. S. 255, 270, *United States v. Garbutt Oil Co.*, 302 U. S. 828, 834-835 (P. 869).



Of course, if it appears from the record that the court had no jurisdiction the judgment must be regarded as absolutely void,<sup>100</sup> and may be attacked either directly or collaterally.<sup>101</sup>

<sup>100</sup> *Elbert v. Perot*, 1 Fed. 28 (1828); *Williamson v. Bost*, 49 U. S. 495 (1836); *In re Sawyer*, 121 U. S. 200 (1888); *Roth v. Union Nat. Bank*, 78 Okla. 601, 100 Pac. 707 (1916); *Morgan v. Ketcher*, 81 Okla. 210, 197 Pac. 1 (1921); *Wynona Oil Co. v. Barnes*, 85 Okla. 245, 200 Pac. 951 (1921); *Crane v. Nat. Oil & Development Co.*, 93 Okla. 237, 201 Pac. 177 (1921).

<sup>101</sup> *United States v. Britton*, 182 Fed. 161 (U. S. 1st Cir. 1910); *James v. Gilford*, 70 Okla. 231, 171 Pac. 13, 16 (1915); *Wynona Oil Co. v.*

*White Indian Territory* within the physical boundaries of a state has been excluded from the state by treaty and statute, the state courts have no jurisdiction even over non-Indians thereon.<sup>102</sup>

*Barnes*, 8 Okla. 248, 200 Pac. 951 (1921); *Eschbach v. Nahawick*, 114 Okla. 127, 246 Pac. 603 (1926).

A court having jurisdiction over the subject matter and the parties, is competent to decide questions arising as to its own jurisdiction and its decisions on such questions are not open to collateral attack. *In re Pacific Building*, 219 U. S. 23, 107, 309 (1911) (citing *Dugan v. Applegate*, 162 U. S. 227, 177 (1916)); and *Horn v. Moore*, 215 U. S. 103 (1910). *Harkness v. Hude*, 68 U. S. 176 (1875) qualified in *Lansford v. Mansfield*, 102 U. S. 147 (1860).

## SECTION 6 TRIBAL COURTS

That in Indian title lies power to confer upon its own courts jurisdiction over controversies involving Indians is a proposition supported by authorities which have been already analyzed.<sup>103</sup> That "full faith and credit" is due to decisions rendered by tribal courts in cases properly within their jurisdiction, is a second basic principle in the field of civil jurisdiction which is supported by authorities elsewhere analyzed.<sup>104</sup> There remains the question how far the power to confer upon tribal courts such jurisdiction has been actually exercised.

This is a matter on which there are few federal statutes; the question having been left primarily to the action of the tribes themselves. One of the few federal statutes which refer to tribal jurisdiction over civil cases is section 229 of title 25 of the United States Code.<sup>105</sup> This statute provides that where injuries to property are committed by an Indian application for redress shall be made by the appropriate federal authorities "to the nation or tribe to which such Indian shall belong, for satisfaction." It has been noted by the Solicitor for the Interior Department "that this provision assumes that the Indian tribe has the means of compelling return of stolen property or other forms of satisfaction where its members have violated the rights of non-Indians."

Apart from this general statute, special provision has been made by federal law with respect to the tribal courts in the Indian Territory. The jurisdiction of these courts, both in civil and in criminal matters, over Indians belonging to the same tribe, was specifically recognized by the Act of May 2, 1890,<sup>106</sup> which provided for a temporary government for the Territory of Oklahoma and enlarged the jurisdiction of the United States court in the Indian Territory.

Under sections 30 and 31 of this act, the exclusive jurisdiction preserved to the judicial tribunals of the Indian nations in all civil and criminal cases is limited to those cases in which "members of said Nations" are the sole parties, which creates an ambiguity as to the meaning of the words "only parties" or "sole parties." This ambiguity, however, is dispelled by the Supreme Court in the case of *Albertus v. United States*.<sup>107</sup> In this connection the court said:

The real question as respects the jurisdiction in this case is as to the meaning of the words "sole" or "only

"parties." These words are obviously susceptible of two interpretations. They may mean a class of actions as to which there is but one party, but as these actions, if they exist at all, are very rare it can hardly be supposed that Congress intended to legislate with respect to them to the exclusion of the much more numerous actions to which these two parties. They may mean actions to which members of the Nation are the sole or only parties, to the exclusion of white men or persons other than members of the Nation; and as respects civil cases at least, this seems the more probable construction. (P. 508.)

Under section 6 of the Act of March 1, 1889,<sup>108</sup> creating the United States court in the Indian Territory, that court had jurisdiction of a suit brought by a citizen of the United States who had become a member and citizen of the Chickasaw Nation against another citizen of that nation.<sup>109</sup>

The termination of the authority of the tribal courts of the Five Civilized Tribes is elsewhere discussed.<sup>110</sup>

A typical provision of a contemporary Indian code relating to civil jurisdiction is the following provision from the tribal code of the Rosebud tribe:<sup>111</sup>

The Supreme Councils of the Rosebud Sioux Tribe shall have jurisdiction of all suits wherein the defendant is a member of the tribe or tribes within their jurisdiction, and of all other suits between members and non-members which are brought before the Courts by stipulation of both parties. \* \* \*

In general, tribes which have not adopted ordinances of their own on the subject and which have Courts of Indian Officers, are governed by the following regulation of the Department of the Interior:<sup>112</sup>

The Courts of Indian Officers shall have jurisdiction of all suits wherein the defendant is a member of the tribe or tribes within their jurisdiction and of all other suits between members and nonmembers which are brought before the Courts by stipulation of both parties. \* \* \*

Judgments in civil cases rendered by Courts of Indian Officers may be satisfied out of restricted Indian moneys if the order of the Secretary of the Interior and such judgments are considered lawful debts in probate proceedings held by the Interior Department or by Courts of Indian Officers.<sup>113</sup>

<sup>102</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 9.

<sup>103</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 9 (Chapter 11, sec. 2).

<sup>104</sup> U. S. 12150, derived from Act of June 30, 1834, sec. 17, 4 Stat. 720 731, amended Act of February 28, 1875, sec. 8, 11 Stat. 388, 401.

<sup>105</sup> 25 U. S. 124, 68 (1934).

<sup>106</sup> 26 Stat. 81. The relevant provisions, secs. 30 and 31, are quoted in Chapter 18, sec. 4.

<sup>107</sup> 109 U. S. 499 (1895).

<sup>108</sup> 25 Stat. 751, 764.

<sup>109</sup> *Raff v. Burney*, 168 U. S. 218 (1897).

<sup>110</sup> See Chapter 23, sec. 6.

<sup>111</sup> Ordinance No. 4, adopted April 8, 1917, approved by superintendent April 18, 1917, approved by Secretary of the Interior July 7, 1917, Rosebud Tribal Court and Code of Offenses, Chapter 2, sec. 1.

<sup>112</sup> 25 C. F. R. 161, 22.

<sup>113</sup> 25 C. F. R. 161, 28.

## CHAPTER 20

# PUEBLOS OF NEW MEXICO <sup>1</sup>

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
<i>Section 1 Status of Pueblos under Spanish law</i> . . . . .	383	<i>Section 5—The Pueblos in the State of New Mexico—Cont</i>	
<i>Section 2 The Pueblos under Mexican rule</i> . . . . .	384	C The Pueblo Lands Act . . . . .	390
<i>Section 3 The Pueblos under the New Mexican territorial government</i> . . . . .	385	D The development of Federal control . . . . .	391
A History of Pueblo legislation . . . . .	385	<i>Section 5 Pueblo self-government</i> . . . . .	393
B History of judicial and executive attitudes towards Pueblos . . . . .	387	<i>Section 6 Pueblo land titles</i> . . . . .	395
<i>Section 4 The Pueblos in the State of New Mexico</i> . . . . .	389	<i>Section 7 The relation of the Pueblo to the Federal Government</i> . . . . .	395
A The Sandoval decision . . . . .	389	<i>Section 8 The relation of the Pueblos to the state</i> . . . . .	395
B Effect of the Sandoval decision . . . . .	389	<i>Section 9 The Pueblo as a corporate entity</i> . . . . .	399

The peculiarities of federal Indian law with respect to the Pueblos of New Mexico arise primarily from the peculiar status which is accorded to the Pueblos under Spanish and Mexican law. It is necessary, therefore, in order to understand the

present legal status of these Pueblos to allude to certain basic principles developed prior to the acquisition of New Mexico by the United States.

## SECTION 1 STATUS OF PUEBLOS UNDER SPANISH LAW

When the Spaniards entered the Rio Grande Valley in the sixteenth century they found certain Indian groups or communities living in villages and these Indians they designated 'Indios de las Villas' or 'Indios de los Pueblos' to distinguish them from the 'Indios Errantes' by which term the nomadic and nomadic Indians of the region were designated. The Indians who were called Pueblo Indians were not of a single tribe and they had no common organization or language. Each village maintained its own government, its own irrigation system, and its own closely integrated community life.

From its early date the Spanish Government enacted legislation to protect the lands of the Pueblos from trespass. Grants were made to the individual Pueblos for the purpose of defining and protecting the boundaries of pueblo lands. The general practice developed of fixing Pueblo boundaries at one league in each of the cardinal directions from the central church. Thus each grant normally comprised a square league or 17,712 acres. The policy of the Spanish Government towards the Pueblo In-

dians of New Mexico is set forth and documented in a recent study of "Pueblo Indian Land Grants of the 'Rio Arriba,' New Mexico" (1939) by Herbert O. Brayer of the University of New Mexico,<sup>2</sup> from which the following summary of the status of the Pueblos is excerpted:

- 1 The Pueblo Indians of New Mexico were considered wards of the Spanish crown.
- 2 The fundamental legal basis for the Pueblo land grants lies in the royal ordinances. The 1680 grants, purporting to convey land to the Indians, are spurious.
- 3 Only the viceroy, governors, and captains general could make grants to the Indians, and only these officials had the authority to validate sales of land by the Indians.
- 4 All non-Indians were expressly forbidden to reside upon Pueblo lands.
- 5 The Spanish Government provided legal advice, protection, and defense for the Indians. Provincial officials had the authority to appeal cases directly to the audiences in Mexico.
- 6 The Indians had riparian water rights to all streams, rivers, and other waters which crossed or bordered their lands.
- 7 The Pueblo Indians held their lands in common, the land being granted to the Indians in the name of their pueblo.

The most important of the Spanish laws governing the Pueblo Indians are the Act of March 21, 1561,<sup>3</sup> providing that the Indians should not be separated in the mountains, deprived of spiritual and temporal benefits, but should all be brought to

<sup>1</sup> The phrase "Pueblos of New Mexico" is commonly used to designate the Rio Grande Pueblos, which at the present time comprise Acoma, Cochiti, Isleta, Jemez, Laguna, Nambe, Pojoaque, Picuris, Sandia, San Felipe, San Ildefonso, San Juan, Santa Ana, Santa Clara, Santo Domingo, Taos, Tesuque, Zia.

The Zuni Indians of New Mexico and the Hopi Indians of Arizona are classed as Pueblo Indians, anthropologically, but administratively and politically they have frequently been excluded from rules and laws applicable to the Rio Grande Pueblos. For this reason they are not considered within the scope of this chapter except as particularly noted.

The Pueblo of Pecos, nearly extinct in fact, was merged with the Pueblo of Jemez by the Act of June 19, 1906, 40 Stat. 1838. A similar legislative merger of the Pueblos of Pojoaque and Numbata was accomplished in a report on the "Status of Pueblo of Pojoaque" submitted on November 8, 1932, by George A. H. Fraser, Special Attorney.

<sup>2</sup> The University of New Mexico Bulletin No. 234, p. 16.

<sup>3</sup> Recopilacion de las Indias, law 1, title 2, book 6.

live in villages (the best). In Acts of December 1, 1771, and October 10, 1781, defining the rights and rights of the Pueblos, the royal cedula of June 4, 1687 authorizing the viceroy and president of the royal audience to define the rights of land granted to the Indians and mestizos, the monarchs likewise granted which is in part intended so as to reduce the areas in question by the royal cedula of July 12, 1695, the Statute<sup>1</sup> requiring sales of land and of personal property by Indians to be made before a judge and by public authorities, the decree of February 2, 1781 prohibiting unlicensed sales of real property by Indians, the decree of February 7, 1817, for the protection of Indians in their personal property, and Decree of February 9, 1817, concerning the Indian and Spanish residents in New Spain until political equality with the European Spaniards.<sup>2</sup>

"Through this course of legislation one finds the same problems

<sup>1</sup> Compilation Laws title 1 book 6.

<sup>2</sup> Compilation Laws title 1 book 6.

<sup>3</sup> These laws are translated and discussed in chaps 7 and 8 of Hall's *Laws of Mexico* (1853).

that are dealt with by Congress in the Public Lands Act of June 7, 1921. The Indians complain that the areas of land granted them by the central government are intruded upon by then non-Indian neighbors. The non-Indian neighbors claim that lands which they have acquired and improved in good faith are subsequently claimed by the Indians. The central government is grieved to find that while such owners "are entangled upon the lands of the latter Indians," (think, the same men) from which by land violence, in reason of the poor Indians abandoning their houses and settlements, thus leaving the Spaniards land for sale and use." Through the impasse of all the laws and decrees enacted for the protection of the Indians there runs in implied recognition that past laws to achieve this protection have not been adequately enforced and the implied hope that more adequate enforcement will attend the new legislation.

<sup>4</sup> 54 Stat. 636. See sec. 16.

<sup>5</sup> Royal cedula June 4, 1687 translated in Hall's *Laws of Mexico* (1853) p. 64.

## SECTION 2 THE PUEBLOS UNDER MEXICAN RULE

The status of the Indians under Mexican rule is well summarized in the opinion of the Supreme Court of the Territory of New Mexico in *Terrell v. Tipton & Pappas*.<sup>1</sup> In this case the court, after noting that the Pueblo Indians "seem to have been considered by the Spanish as ward of the government and entitled to special privileges and protection," went on to declare, *per* Pinkney, J.

"On a complete change took place in the status of these people when Mexico threw off the Spanish yoke. Among those engaged in the struggle for independence, this latter race for unnumbered the Mexicans, and its success was due in a large measure to their efforts. It was but natural and fitting, that in the formation of the new government they should take a prominent, if not a leading, part and that they should be placed upon an equal footing as to civil and political rights. And so we find that the revolutionary government of Mexico, February 21, 1821, a short time before the dissolution of Spanish power, adopted what is known as "The Plan of Iguala" (Iguala was the place of the revolutionary army headquarters), in which it is declared that "All the inhabitants of New Spain, without distinction, whether Spaniards, Mexicans or Indians, are citizens of this monarchy, with the right to be employed in any post according to their merit and virtues" and that "The person and property of every citizen will be respected and protected by the government." 1 Ordens y Decretos, by Galvan, page 8, *U. S. v. Ratache*, 17 How. (11 F. 521, 538, *U. S. v. Ratache* supra [1 N. M. 122 (1897)].

The same principles were reaffirmed in the Treaty of Cordoba of August 24, 1821. 1 Ordens y Decretos, by Galvan, page 8, and in the Declaration of Independence, at October 4, 1821. *Id.*, page 8.

The Mexican Congress thereafter followed with at least four acts in which of which "The Plan of Iguala" was reaffirmed considered as a fixed principle of Mexican law. *U. S. v. Ratache*, supra. 2 Ordens y Decretos, pages 1 and 82, and 1 *Id.* page 85.

This latter act was passed August 18, 1824, only twenty four years before the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, when we acquired this Territory and these people. (Pp. 112-113).

The United States Supreme Court in *United States v. Ratache*,<sup>2</sup> in 1854 commented on the foregoing Mexican statutes in the following terms, *per* Nelson, J.

"The Indian race having participated largely in the struggle resulting in the overthrow of the Spanish power,

and in the election of an independent government, it was natural that in laying the foundations of the new government, the previous political and social distinctions in favor of the European or Spanish blood should be abolished, and equality of rights and privileges established. Hence the article to this effect in the plan of Iguala, and the decree of the first Congress declaring the equality of civil rights, whatever may be their race or country. These solemn declarations of the political power of the government had the effect, necessarily, to invest the Indians with the privileges of citizenship as effectually as had the declaration of independence of the United States, of 1776, to invest all those persons with these privileges residing in the country at the time, and who adhered to the interests of the colonies. 3 *Id.*, 96, 121."

The historian Bayler presents persuasive evidence<sup>3</sup> that the grant of citizenship to the Pueblo Indians, under Mexican rule, did not dissolve the status of wardship or the limitations upon land alienation established under Spanish sovereignty. It would be beyond the scope of this work to enter into this controversial field of historical research, but the conclusions of the historian cited are worthy of notice.

1 That the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico were still considered wards of the government even though they were given the title "citizens."

2 Only the most important of the government officials could authorize the sale of Indian lands. That the local officials in New Mexico continued to exercise the same powers as they had during the Spanish regime throughout the entire period of Mexican sovereignty.

3 That the Spanish laws in force previous to 1821, relative to the Pueblo Indian and to land policy, remained in full force.

4 That because of the laxity on the part of local officials during the Mexican period a great many non-Indians were able to obtain holdings on Indian lands. The legality of such holdings needs little consideration, but the failure of the Mexican government to take action left the problem up to the United States after 1848.

5 That the title to the Pueblo lands remained in the name of the individual Pueblos, and that no individual Indian held the title to any portion thereof.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See also *United States v. Lugo*, 1 N. M. 429, 488-489 (1896).

<sup>2</sup> Pueblo Indian Land Grants of the "Rio Abajo," New Mexico (1886) pp. 18-19.

<sup>3</sup> Pueblo Indian Land Grants of the "Rio Abajo," New Mexico (1896), pp. 19-20.

<sup>4</sup> 12 N. M. 199, 79 Pac. 807 (1904).

<sup>5</sup> 17 How. 525, 550-540 (1854).

## SECTION 3 THE PUEBLOS UNDER THE NEW MEXICAN TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENT

In Article 9 of the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo<sup>14</sup> the residents of the territory ceded by Mexico were given the option of retaining their Mexican citizenship by declaring such intention within a year from the date of exchange of ratifications.

1. And those who shall remain in the said territories after the expiration of that year, without having declared their intention to retain the character of Mexicans, shall be considered to have elected to become citizens of the United States.

None of the Pueblo Indians elected to retain Mexican citizenship, according to the opinion in the *Lugo* case.

Colonel Washington made proclamation requiring the people to elect by signing a declaration before the clerk of the courts in the different districts, if they wished to retain the title and rights of Mexican citizens. In that text, which is a public printed document, the point is not found of a single Pueblo Indian, and hence by the express terms of the eighth article of the treaty they became citizens of the United States as they were previously citizens of the Mexican Republic. (P. 410)

While the conclusion that the Pueblo Indians thus became citizens of the United States cannot be considered free from doubt, in view of the comment<sup>15</sup> of the Supreme Court in *United States v. Randall* "it remains an open question whether they have become citizens," it would appear that the historical evidence supports the claim that the Pueblo Indians did enjoy citizenship both under Mexican and under United States rule.<sup>16</sup> It seems clear, in any event that, as Mexicans, they were protected by section 9 of the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo which promised, eventually, "all the rights of citizens of the United States" and, immediately, "free enjoyment of their liberty and property."<sup>17</sup>

## A HISTORY OF PUEBLO LEGISLATION

For several years following the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, Congress apparently took little notice of the Pueblo Indians. Until 1854, at least, the local authorities appear to have legislated in pueblo matters with such congressional approval as was given by silence. The course of this local legislation was thus summarized by the Chief Justice of the territorial supreme court, in *United States v. Lugo*:<sup>18</sup>

"I, J. Genesio Kearney, after taking possession of New Mexico, eighteenth of August, 1846, established a system of civil government in New Mexico, organized courts, appointed judges, and convened a legislative body, and in December, 1847, that legislative assembly passed the following act:

## "INDIANS

"SECTION 1 That the inhabitants within the territory of New Mexico, known by the name of Pueblo Indians, and living in towns or villages built on lands granted to such Indians by the laws of Spain and Mexico, and conceding to such inhabitants certain lands and privileges to be used for the common benefit, are severally hereby created and constituted bodies politic and corporate, and shall be known in the law by the name of the pueblo de ——— (naming it) and by that name they and their successors shall have perpetual succession, and be sued, plead and be impleaded, bring and defend in any court of law or

court all such actions, pleas, and matters whatsoever proper to recover, protect, reclaim, demand, or assert the right of such inhabitants, or any individual thereof, to any lands, tenements, or hereditaments possessed, occupied or claimed, contrary to law, by any person whatever, and to bring and defend all such actions, and to resist any encroachment, claim or trespass made upon such lands, tenements, or hereditaments belonging to said inhabitants, or any individual." See *Compiled Laws of New Mexico*, 470.

On the tenth of January, 1853, a law was passed, prohibiting the sale of liquor to Indians, with a proviso, "that the pueblo Indians that live among us are not included in the word Indian." See *Compiled Laws*, p. 472, see 5 January 21, 1861, an act was passed, acquiring the pueblos of Indians to work *acacias* (ditches) and highways, and extending the 1st of January 1860, over the pueblo Indians as to trespasses of their stock on the fields of their neighbors. See *Id.* 470, 171. On the sixteenth of February, 1851, the legislative assembly of New Mexico passed the following act, section 70. "That the Pueblo Indians of this territory for the present, and until they shall be declared by the congress of the United States to have the right, are excluded from the privilege of voting at the popular elections of the territory, except in the elections for overseers of districts to which they belong, and in the elections proper to elect their own pueblos to elect their officers according to their ancient customs." The seventh section of the organic act of September 9, 1850, vests the legislative assembly of New Mexico with the power to legislate upon all rightful subjects of legislation consistent with the constitution of the United States, and the provisions of that act, and further provided that "all laws passed by the legislative assembly and government, shall be submitted to the congress of the United States and if disapproved, shall be null and of no effect."

As this act of the sixteenth of February, 1851, passed by the legislative assembly of New Mexico, has never been disapproved by congress, it must be regarded as in force in New Mexico, and deprives the pueblo Indians of one of the dearest and most valued rights, the right to be heard by their billots in the selection of agents to make laws for their government. (Pp. 438-440)

By the Act of July 22, 1854, Congress provided for the appointment of a Surveyor General for New Mexico who was, "under such instructions as may be given by the Secretary of the Interior, to ascertain the origin nature character, and extent of all claims to lands under the laws, usages, and customs of Spain and Mexico, . . . \* \* \* shall also make a report in regard to all pueblos existing in the Territory, showing the extent and locality of each, stating the number of inhabitants in the said pueblos, respectively, and the nature of their titles to the land." (P. 804) This reference to "Pueblos" made no distinction between Indian Pueblos and non-Indian Pueblos.

The Pueblo Indians are mentioned in the annual Indian Dependent Appropriation Acts of August 30, 1892,<sup>19</sup> and July 31, 1894.<sup>20</sup> The former of these acts contains this item:

For defraying expenses incident to the visit of the Pueblo Indians and their attendants from New Mexico to Washington, and to defray their expenses in their homes, the sum of seven thousand five hundred dollars. (P. 55)

The second of the acts cited contains a provision

For the expenses of making presents of agricultural implements and farming utensils to the bands of Pueblo Indians in the territory of New Mexico, ten thousand dollars. \* \* \* (P. 380)

<sup>14</sup> Signed February 2, 1848 ratification exchanged May 30, 1846, pro claimed July 4, 1848 9 Stat. 622

<sup>15</sup> 211 U. S. 28, 30 (1913) See also *United States v. Joseph*, 94 U. S. 614, 618 (1876), *Jagoe v. United States*, 29 C. Cl. 172, 178 (1864)

<sup>16</sup> *Briggs*, op. cit. 17-18, 28-24

<sup>17</sup> See Ch. 14, supra

<sup>18</sup> 1 N. M. 422 (1869)

<sup>19</sup> 10 Stat. 808

<sup>20</sup> 10 Stat. 41

<sup>21</sup> 10 Stat. 816

The Pueblo Indians are next mentioned by Congress in the Indian Department Appropriation Act of March 3, 1877, which contains this provision:

For expenses of surveying and marking the external boundaries of Indian pueblos, in the Territory of New Mexico three thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars. (P 181)

On December 22, 1875 Congress acted favorably upon the report of the Survey General for the Territory of New Mexico, continuing public land claims of the following Pueblos: Jemez, Acoma, San Juan, Pecos, San Felipe, Pecos, Cochiti, Santo Domingo, Tiro, Santa Clara, Tesuque, San Ildefonso, Poyupaque, Zuni, Santa Fe, and Nambé.<sup>1</sup>

This congressional confirmation of pueblo titles is subject to the usual proviso "That this confirmation shall only be construed as a relinquishment of all title and claim of the United States to any of said lands and shall not affect any otherwise valid rights, should such exist."

To the foregoing list of confirmed pueblo claims there was added, in 1899 the claim of the Pueblo of Santa Ana.<sup>2</sup> Many years later a similar patent was issued to the Zuni Pueblo Indians.

All that the United States could give was a quiet claim deed transferring to the Pueblo Indians its own title; it could not transfer property from one private owner to another.

The courts of the United States would always give the right, on due consideration of all the facts involved, to determine the actual ownership of any given piece of land. But it has never been within the power of either the legislative or the executive to change private land titles. The judicial power alone could settle the question of the encroachments upon the lands of the Pueblo Indians—encroachments dating back for centuries, arising partly from greed, partly from misadventurous policy from the need of a common defense against "Indian braves." Some of these settlers outside the pueblo walls claimed title from Mexican and Spanish grants, as did the Pueblos themselves; some had obtained their land by purchase from the Indian communities, some were missionaries' grant and simple no doubt some, beginning with a valid title had skillfully enlarged their holdings by less lawful means. All these problems came as an unhappy legacy to the new government of the land.<sup>3</sup>

In the Appropriation Act of July 15, 1870,<sup>4</sup> a sum is appropriated "to be expended in establishing schools among the Pueblo Indians," and similar provisions appeared in later acts.

In the Act of May 29, 1872,<sup>5</sup> the Indian Department Appropriation Act for 1873 and regularly in succeeding appropriation acts,<sup>6</sup> provision is made for pay of an Indian agent at the Pueblo Agency. Thereafter congressional appropriations for the work of the Indian Department among the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico are gradually elaborated.

In the Indian Department Appropriation Act for 1875<sup>7</sup> and in subsequent appropriation acts provision is made for pay of interpreters at the Pueblo Agency.

The Appropriation Act for 1883<sup>8</sup> contains the following provision embodying the first assumption of federal responsibility for "civilizing" the Pueblo Indians:

For civilization and instruction of the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico, including pay of teachers and purchase of

seeds and agricultural implements, seven thousand five hundred dollars, and of this sum not exceeding one thousand five hundred dollars may, in the discretion of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, be used in constructing irrigating ditches at Zuni and Tamez Pueblos. (P 88)

The foregoing provision is substantially repeated in subsequent Indian Department appropriation acts.<sup>9</sup>

The next addition to the scope of congressional responsibility for the Pueblo Indians appears in the appropriation act for 1891<sup>10</sup> which establishes the post of "special attorney for the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico" by virtue of the following provision:

To enable the Secretary of the Interior to employ a special attorney for the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico, one thousand five hundred dollars.

This provision is repeated in substance in succeeding appropriation acts.<sup>11</sup>

The Appropriation Act of March 3, 1907, for the fiscal year 1908 contains the following item of permanent legislation, called forth, apparently by the decision of the New Mexico Territorial Court rendered on March 3, 1904, in the case of *Trinidad v. The Inhabitant Tarapacá*:<sup>12</sup>

That the lands now held by the various villages or pueblos of Pueblo Indians, or by individual members thereof, within Pueblo reservations or lands, in the Territory of New Mexico, and all personal property furnished said Indians for the United States, or used in cultivating said lands, and any cattle and sheep now possessed or that may hereafter be required by said Indians shall be free and exempt from taxation of any sort whatsoever, including, taxes heretofore levied, said, until Congress shall otherwise provide. (P 1000)<sup>13</sup>

Up to the admission of New Mexico to statehood, there is no other federal legislation for the Pueblo Indians of that state except in the Indian Department appropriation acts (redesignated, beginning with the Act of April 4, 1910,<sup>14</sup> as the Bureau of Indian Affairs appropriation acts). These acts include special appropriations for irrigation for the Zuni Pueblo,<sup>15</sup> and for the building of two bridges across the Rio Grande at or near Isleta and San Felipe Indian Pueblos, with preference given to Indian labor.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Act of March 1, 1857, 22 Stat. 438, Act of July 4, 1884, 28 Stat. 76, Act of March 3, 1885, 23 Stat. 452, Act of May 15, 1886, 24 Stat. 79, Act of March 2, 1887, 24 Stat. 449, Act of June 28, 1888, 25 Stat. 217, Act of March 2, 1889, 25 Stat. 930, Act of August 18, 1890, 26 Stat. 586, Act of March 3, 1891, 26 Stat. 969, Act of July 15, 1892, 27 Stat. 120, Act of March 3, 1893, 27 Stat. 613, Act of March 3, 1895, 28 Stat. 876, Act of June 10, 1896, 29 Stat. 541, Act of June 7, 1897, 30 Stat. 82, Act of July 1, 1898, 30 Stat. 671, Act of March 1, 1899, 30 Stat. 624.

<sup>2</sup> Act of July 1, 1898, 30 Stat. 571, 574.

<sup>3</sup> Act of March 1, 1899, 30 Stat. 944, Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 1068, Act of May 27, 1902, 32 Stat. 245, Act of March 3, 1903, 33 Stat. 982, Act of April 21, 1904, 33 Stat. 189, Act of March 4, 1905, 33 Stat. 1048, Act of June 21, 1906, 34 Stat. 325, Act of March 1, 1907, 34 Stat. 1018, Act of April 30, 1908, 35 Stat. 70, Act of March 3, 1909, 35 Stat. 781, Act of April 4, 1910, 36 Stat. 260, Act of March 3, 1911, 36 Stat. 1068, Act of August 24, 1912, 37 Stat. 518, Act of March 3, 1913, 38 Stat. 77, Act of August 1, 1914, 38 Stat. 659, Act of May 18, 1916, 39 Stat. 124, Act of March 2, 1917, 39 Stat. 995, Act of May 25, 1918, 40 Stat. 681, Act of June 30, 1919, 41 Stat. 8, Act of February 14, 1920, 41 Stat. 408, Act of March 3, 1921, 41 Stat. 1225, Act of May 24, 1922, 42 Stat. 652, Act of January 24, 1923, 43 Stat. 1174, Act of June 5, 1924, 43 Stat. 930, Act of December 8, 1924, 43 Stat. 704, Act of March 3, 1925, 43 Stat. 1141, Act of May 10, 1926, 44 Stat. 493, Act of January 12, 1927, 44 Stat. 884, Act of March 7, 1928, 45 Stat. 209, Act of March 4, 1929, 45 Stat. 2562, Act of May 16, 1930, 45 Stat. 277, Act of February 14, 1931, 46 Stat. 1119, Act of April 22, 1932, 47 Stat. 91, Act of February 17, 1938, 47 Stat. 820.

<sup>4</sup> 11 N. 199, 70 Pac. 107 (1904). See p. 884, supra.

<sup>5</sup> 48 Stat. 1048, Of Chapter 18, sec. 2.

<sup>6</sup> 35 Stat. 260.

<sup>7</sup> Act of April 30, 1908, 35 Stat. 70, March 3, 1909, 35 Stat. 781.

<sup>8</sup> Act of March 3, 1911, 36 Stat. 1068.

<sup>1</sup> 11 Stat. 180.

<sup>2</sup> 11 Stat. 874.

<sup>3</sup> Act of February 10, 1880, c. 26, 18 Stat. 388.

<sup>4</sup> Act of March 4, 1891, c. 138, 40 Stat. 1500.

<sup>5</sup> Burnout, Land Office in the Pueblo Indian Country (1894), 10

A. B. A. Jour. 86, 88.

<sup>6</sup> 16 Stat. 936, 937.

<sup>7</sup> 17 Stat. 105.

<sup>8</sup> See *Barrios v. United States*, 34 C. Cls. 51 (1889).

<sup>9</sup> Act of June 22, 1874, 18 Stat. 149.

<sup>10</sup> Act of May 17, 1882, 22 Stat. 68.

## B HISTORY OF JUDICIAL AND EXECUTIVE ATTITUDES TOWARDS PUEBLOS

During the period which the foregoing history of federal legislation covers, judicial and executive attitudes towards the Pueblos were undergoing a gradual change parallel to the gradual increase in the activities of the Indian Bureau among the Pueblo Indians.

From its very inception the accession of New Mexico to the Union were not considered Indian tribes within the meaning of existing statutes. During the 23 years that elapsed between the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo and the Act of March 3, 1875<sup>1</sup> which terminated the practice of making treaties with Indian tribes, no treaty was ever negotiated with any of the Pueblos. The reasons for distinguishing between the Pueblo Indians and other aboriginals are set forth at length and in colorful terms by the Supreme Court of New Mexico Territory, in the case of *United States v. Lucero*,<sup>2</sup> decided in January 1869. That case involved an attempt by the United States to invoke section 11 of the Indian Intercourse Act<sup>3</sup> of June 10, 1831 which made unauthorized settlement of tribal lands a federal offense, as extended by section 7 of the Appropriation Act of February 27, 1851<sup>4</sup> "over the Indian tribes in the Territories of New Mexico and Utah."

The territorial court dismissed the suit on demurrer, declining, per *Watts*, C. J.

"... If these pueblos twenty-one in number, were locally included in the provisions of the Intercourse Act, intended for a different class of Indians, the Indian department, during the last twenty years that they have been under their pitiless control, would have had spread upon our statutes at large certainly not less than eighty treaties with these twenty-one quasi nations (P. 437).

"... It will thus be seen by a reference to the acts of congress above cited, that no person has ever been authorized by congress to be appointed agent for the pueblo Indians, nor has any one even been commissioned as agent for them, and the designation of an agent for the pueblos by the Indian department is without any authority of congress or the decision of any judicial tribunal authorized to pass upon the question, and the transfer of eight thousand of the most honest, industrious, and law-abiding citizens of New Mexico to the provisions of a code of laws made for savages, by the simple stroke of the pen of an Indian commissioner, will never be assented to by congress or the judicial tribunals of the country so long as vigorous treaties and human laws afford any protection to the liberty and property of the citizens (P. 438).

After reviewing the history of territorial legislation with regard to the pueblo Indians of New Mexico, the court continued:

"... it is the right and duty of the courts to see that every citizen of the Territory of New Mexico, in conformity with the ninth article of the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, "shall be maintained and protected in the free exercise of their liberty and property, and secured in the free exercise of their religion without restriction."

This court, under this section of the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, does not consider it proper to assent to the withdrawal of eight thousand citizens of New Mexico from the operation of the laws, made to secure and maintain them in their liberty and property, and consign their liberty and property to a system of laws and trade made for wandering savages and administered by the agents of the Indian department. If such a destiny is in store for a large number of the most law-abiding, sober, and industrious people of New Mexico, it must be the result

of the direct legislation of congress or the mandate of the supreme court. This court feels itself incompetent to construe them into any such condition. This court has known the conduct and habits of these Indians for eighteen or twenty years, and we sit, without the fear of successful contradiction that you may pick out one thousand of the best Americans in New Mexico, and one thousand of the best Mexicans in New Mexico, and one thousand of the worst pueblo Indians, and there will be found less, vastly less, murder, robbery, theft, or other crimes among the thousand of the worst pueblo Indians than among the thousand of the best Mexicans or Americans in New Mexico. The assent of justice now beside me, Hon. Josh Houghston has been judge and lawyer in this territory for over twenty years, and the chief justice for over seventeen years, and during all that time not twenty pueblo Indians have been brought before the courts in all New Mexico accused of violation of the criminal laws of this territory. For the Indian department to insist, as they have done in the last fifteen years, upon the reduction of these citizens to a state of savagery under the Indian intercourse act, is passing change. A law made for wild, wandering savages, to be extended over a people living to these remains in fenced, houses, and cultivating the soil to the maintenance of themselves and families, and giving, in example of virtue, honesty, and industry to their more civilized neighbors, in this enlightened age of progress and proper understanding, of the civil and moral man, is considered by this court as wholly applicable to the pueblo Indians of New Mexico (Pp. 441-442).

It has already been shown that if the people of Cochiti are a corporate body and that a civil and assent remedy is given them to protect and defend their title to their individual and common lands, and that they do not need any assistance from the main statutes of the United States to accomplish that purpose, the Indian department have merely asked them control the twenty-one pueblos of New Mexico, and get the laws of trade and intercourse, devised to regulate the commerce of the country with savages, extended over these peaceful and industrious citizens, and in less than six months they will have fifty lawyers on hand about questions settled by a former government fifty years ago (Pp. 441-445).

One of the grounds of the *Lucero* decision was demolished when the Appropriation Act of May 29, 1872,<sup>5</sup> made provision for an agent for "the Pueblo agency," thus leaving the Pueblos on a parity with other tribes. The United States then, upon renewed the effort that had been defeated in the *Lucero* decision, to invoke the Act of June 30, 1854, for the protection of pueblo lands against encroachment. Again the territorial court denied the applicability of the statute to the Pueblos,<sup>6</sup> and this time the United States took an appeal to the Supreme Court. The Supreme Court, in *United States v. Joseph*,<sup>7</sup> affirmed the decision of the territorial court, affirming these reasons for its holding:

The character and history of these people are not obscure but occupy a well known place in the story of Mexico, from the conquest of the country by Cortes to the cession of this part of it to the United States by the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo. The subject is tempting and full of interest, but we have only space for a few well considered sentences on the question of the chief justice of the court whose judgment we are reviewing.

"For centuries," he says, "the pueblo Indians have lived in villages, in fixed communities, each having its own municipal or local government as far as their history can be traced, they have been a peaceful and agricultural people, raising stocks and cultivating the soil. Since the introduction of the Spanish Catholic mission into the country, they have adopted mainly not only the Spanish language, but the religion of a Christian church. In every

<sup>1</sup> 18 Stat. 544, 556.

<sup>2</sup> 1 N. M. 422 (1869).

<sup>3</sup> Act of June 30, 1854, sec. 11, 4 Stat. 729, 730.

<sup>4</sup> Stat. 374.

<sup>5</sup> 17 Stat. 105.

<sup>6</sup> *United States v. Ransbottom*, 1 N. M. 588 (1874); *United States v. Fortino*, 1 N. M. 798 (1874); *United States v. Esquivel*, 1885, *United States v. Joseph*, *id.*

<sup>7</sup> 94 U. S. 614 (1876).

pueblo erected a church dedicated to the worship of God, according to the form of the Roman Catholic religion, and in early life it is to be found a priest of this church, who is recognized as their spiritual guide and advisor. They manifest a hearty belief in their temples, clothing and food, and in other implements. As integrity and fidelity among them is fostered and maintained, they are in no wise inferior to the civilized and polished nations of the Territory, so far as the general records of the courts of the Territory so far contain the name of a pueblo Indian. In short, they are a peaceable, industrious, intelligent, honest and virtuous people. They are Indians only in finite complexion and a few of their habits, in all other respects superior to all but a few of the civilized Indian tribes of the country and the equal of the most civilized nations. This description of the pueblo Indians I think will be deemed by all who know them to be faithful and true in all respects. Such was their condition at the time of the acquisition of New Mexico by the United States, such is their character now.

At the time the act of 1848 was passed there were no such Indians as these in the United States, unless it be one of two tribes of Indians, such as the Senecas and Oneidas of New York to whom it is then the seventh section of the statute could have no application. (Pp 616-617.)

The tribes for whom the act of 1848 was made were those semi-independent tribes whom our government has always recognized as exempt from our laws, whether within or without the limits of an organized State or Territory, and, in regard to their domestic government, left to their own rules and traditions, in whom we have recognized the capacity to make treaties, and with whom the government, state and national deal, with a few exceptions only, in their national or tribal character, and not as individuals.

If the pueblo Indians differ from the other inhabitants of New Mexico in holding lands, in common, and in a certain patriarchal form of domestic life they only resemble in this regard the Slavians and other communistic societies in this country, and cannot for that reason be classed with the Indian tribes of whom we have been speaking.

We have been urged by counsel, in view of these considerations, to declare that they are citizens of the United States and of New Mexico. But abiding in the rule which we think ought always to govern this court in deciding nothing beyond what is necessary to the judgment we are to render, we leave that question until it shall be made in some case where the rights of citizenship are necessarily involved. But we have no hesitation in saying that their status is not, in the face of the facts we have stated, to be determined solely by the circumstance that some officer of the government has appointed for them an agent, even if we could take judicial notice of the existence of that fact, suggested to me by argument.

Turning our attention to the tenure by which these communities hold the land on which the settlement of defendant was made, we find that it is wholly different from that of the Indian tribes to whom the act of Congress applies. The United States have not recognized in these titles any other than a passing title with right of use, until by treaty or otherwise that right is extinguished. And the ultimate title has been always held to be in the United States, with no right in the Indians to transfer it, or even their possession, without consent of the government.

It is this fixed claim of dominion which lies at the foundation of the act of founding the white man to make a settlement on the lands occupied by an Indian tribe.

The pueblo Indians, on the contrary, hold their lands by a title superior to that of the United States. Their title dates back to grants made by the government of Spain before the Mexican revolution, a title which was fully recognized by the Mexican government, and protected by it in the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, by which this country and the allegiance of its inhabitants were transferred to the United States. (Pp 617-618.)

If the defendant is on the lands of the pueblo, without the consent of the inhabitants, he may be ejected, or punished civilly by a suit for trespass, according to the

laws regulating such matters in the Territory. If he is there with their consent or license, we know of no injury which the United States suffers by his presence, nor any state which he violates in that regard. (P 619.)

Some justices of the Supreme Court would exclude the views expressed in 1876 in the *Joseph* case to mislead information,<sup>40</sup> but for nearly ten decades the *Joseph* case fixed the law governing the New Mexico Pueblos.<sup>41</sup>

In 1901, the Attorney General ruled<sup>42</sup> that federal statutes authorizing the Commissioner of Indian Affairs to license and regulate Indian traders "had no application to the Pueblos."

In 1901, the Assistant Attorney General for the Department of the Interior ruled that laws relating to the approval of leases of Indian tribal land had no application to the Pueblos.<sup>43</sup>

In 1900 in the case of *Pueblo of Nambé v. Romero*, the territorial court, in a suit to quiet title brought by an alleged owner of pueblo lands, issued a decree against the Pueblo, having such decree upon a finding that the Pueblo had validly granted away the land in question and upon a holding that the territorial statute of limitation<sup>44</sup> in 1848 against the Pueblo.

In 1904, in the case of *Pueblo of San Mateo v. Delinquent Taxpayers*,<sup>45</sup> the attempt to collect taxes on pueblo lands was upheld by the territorial court on the basis of the reasoning in the *Luzero* and *Joseph* cases. This ruling, however, as we have seen, was reversed by congressional enactment.<sup>46</sup>

In 1907 in *United States v. Mierck*,<sup>47</sup> the territorial court held that the Pueblo Indians were not covered by Indian liquor laws,<sup>48</sup> making it in effect to sell or give away lots to Indian lands to whom allotment of land has been made while the title to the same shall be held in trust by the government, or to any Indian ward of the government under charge of any Indian superintendent or agent, or any Indian, including mixed bloods, over whom the government, through its department, exercises guardianship.<sup>49</sup>

This ruling again, was reversed by Congress, in the New Mexico Enabling Act, which will be treated in the following section.

By way of summary, it may be said that during the period from the accession of New Mexico to the granting of statehood, the Pueblos had a legal status sharply distinguished from that of most other Indian tribes and comprehended under Indian legislation only where Congress had expressly so provided, as in the matter of agency maintenance, "civilization" appropriations, and tax exemption. In all other respects, each Pueblo had a status substantially similar to that of any other municipal corporation of the territory.<sup>50</sup>

<sup>40</sup> See *United States v. Boudon* at 211 U. S. 29 48 (1911). See infra, sec. 4.

<sup>41</sup> The effect of this decision was to confirm the opinions and judgment that had before that time been rendered with respect to the Pueblo Indians. As they were far from advanced in civilization than the nomadic tribes better known in the arts and industries of ordinary life, so they were recognized as deserving the status of uncivilized and industrious people. But with the greater freedom and privilege of their status was a greater responsibility. If these lands were their own, they must carry their own judgment in the disposition of it. The Supreme Court had decided that the United States had no right to interfere.

Our highest tribunal had spoken. Through many years the decision was unshaken. The Pueblo governments managed the lands of their people as they had good sense and a love of order. It was the conscience of the Supreme Court that they had a perfect and complete right to make it. (See *San Juan Pueblo v. Pueblo Indian Country* [1874] 10 A. B. 1 (vol. 36, p. 3).)

<sup>42</sup> 20 Op. A. G. 215 (1891).

<sup>43</sup> Act of August 20, 1876, c. 5, 19 Stat. 176, 200, July 31, 1882, 22 Stat. 379.

<sup>44</sup> 10 U. S. 248 (1891).

<sup>45</sup> 10 N. M. 38 (1st P. 122 (1900)).

<sup>46</sup> N. M. Compiled Laws (1897) c. 2028.

<sup>47</sup> 22 N. M. 130, 70 P. 916 (1904).

<sup>48</sup> *Supra*, p. 368.

<sup>49</sup> 14 N. M. 1 88 P. 1128 (1907).

<sup>50</sup> Act of January 30, 1897, 20 Stat. 606.

<sup>51</sup> See, however, 1st, 1876, supra.

## SECTION 4 THE PUEBLOS IN THE STATE OF NEW MEXICO

While New Mexico was a territory and thus in agency of the Federal Government there was a tendency to leave to the territorial government control of the Pueblos, and the territorial authorities sought generally to assimilate the Pueblos to the status of other municipal corporations of the territory. This tendency, as we have seen, was checked in the matter of taxation, but in all other respects the relation of the Pueblos to the federal executive was extremely tenuous.

With the admission of New Mexico to statehood, however, a sharp distinction occurred in these tendencies. The formation of the territorial government created a clear distinction between state and federal authority and the center of control over the Pueblos shifted from Santa Fe to Washington. Thus the Pueblos came to be treated more and more as other Indian tribes.

The last important step in this direction was taken in the New Mexico Enabling Act, which contained a specific provision that "the terms 'Indian' and 'Indian country' shall include the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico and the lands now owned or occupied by them."<sup>12</sup>

## A THE SANDOVAL DECISION

The constitutionality of this extension of federal control over the Pueblos was upheld in 1913 in the case of *United States v. Sandoval*.<sup>13</sup> That case involved a prosecution for the offense of introducing liquor into the Indian country. The Supreme Court held that Congress had expressed a clear intent to reverse the rule laid down by the territorial court in *United States v. Morris*.<sup>14</sup> On the question of the constitutionality of this extension of federal control the court pointed out that neither the outright ownership of land by the Pueblos nor the claim of the Pueblo Indians to citizenship (the validity of which was not here passed upon) stood as an obstacle to the exercise of federal guardianship by Congress. The court declared, *per Van Devanter, J.*

Of course, it is not meant by this that Congress may bring a community or body of people within the range of

<sup>12</sup> Act of June 20 1910 88 Stat. 507. The pertinent portions of the act provide:

Sec. 2. . . . that . . . the end convention shall be and is hereby authorized to form a convention and provide for a state government and to select representatives to all the manner and under the conditions contained in this act . . .

And valid convention shall provide for an ordinance receivable without the consent of the United States and the people of said state . . .

First. That . . . the sale, barter, or giving of intoxicating liquors to Indians and the introduction of liquors into Indian country, which term shall include all lands now owned or occupied by the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico, are forever prohibited . . .

Second. That the people inhabiting said proposed State agree and declare that they forever disclaim all right and title . . . to all lands lying within said boundaries as claimed by any Indian or Indian tribes the right or title to which shall have been acquired through or from the United States or any prior sovereignty and that until the title of such Indian or Indian tribes shall have been extinguished the same shall be and remain subject to the disposition and under the absolute jurisdiction and control of the Congress of the United States . . . but nothing herein or in the article hereinafter shall . . . shall prohibit the said State from claiming its other lands and other property as free, dry lands and other property outside of an Indian reservation owned or held by any Indian or any and except such lands as have been granted or secured as store-land or as may be granted or confirmed to any Indian or Indians under any Act of Congress and said ordinance shall provide that all such lands shall be exempt from taxation by said State so long and to such extent as Congress has prescribed or may hereafter prescribe . . .

Third. That whenever hereafter any of the lands contained within Indian reservations or allotments in said proposed State shall be allotted, sold, reserved or otherwise disposed of, they shall be subject to the control of two-thirds of each land as by agreement, sale, reservation or other disposal to all the laws of the United States prohibiting the introduction of liquor into the Indian country, and Indians or Indians under any Act of Congress and said ordinance shall provide that all such lands shall be exempt from taxation by said State so long and to such extent as Congress has prescribed or may hereafter prescribe . . .

<sup>13</sup> 231 U. S. 28 (1913).

<sup>14</sup> 14 N. M. J. 191 (1907). See also 98, *supra*.

this power by arbitrarily calling them an Indian tribe, but only that in respect of distinctly Indian communities the questions whether to admit, extend, and for what time they shall be recognized and dealt with by dependent tribes requiring the guardianship and protection of the United States are to be determined by Congress, and not by the courts. (P. 10.)

We are not unmindful that in *United States v. Joseph*, 91 U. S. 614, there are some observations not in accord with what is here said of these Indians, but as that case did not turn upon the power of Congress over them in their property, but upon the information and purpose of a statute not really so comprehensive as the legislation now before us, and as the observation there made respecting the Pueblos were evidently based upon statements in the opinion of the territorial court, then under review, which are at variance with other recognized sources of information, now available, and with the long continued action of the legislative and executive departments, this case cannot be regarded as holding that these Indians or their lands are beyond the range of Congress' special power under the Constitution. (Pp. 48-49.)

## B EFFECT OF THE SANDOVAL DECISION

The effect of the *Sandoval* decision was to spread consternation among the people of New Mexico who held lands to which the Pueblos had claim. The situation is thus described in a letter to the Attorney General, dated June 11, 1920, from George A. H. Fraser, who served for some years as special assistant to the Attorney General.

The great majority of the claimants had bought and possessed their lands in good faith and in reliance on a series of decisions of the Territorial Supreme Court at Santa Fe beginning in 1859 and extending to about 1908, to the general effect that the Pueblo Indians were emancipated, that they had the right to sell their lands and the liability of losing them by adverse possession, and that the Nonintercourse Act of 1854 did not apply to them. The last mentioned view was supported by the Joseph case in 84 U. S. decided in 1872, in which the United States was defeated in an attempt to remove settlers from the Pueblo of Taos under the provisions of said Act. Up to 1913, therefore, when the *Sandoval* case was decided (231 U. S. 28), all the law there was, including that announced by the highest tribunal, was to the effect aforesaid. The *Sandoval* decision came as a great surprise, and it was natural that any proceedings interfering with titles so long supposed to be valid should be resisted in every possible way.

Michael O'Brien, author of the leading history of Pueblo land status,<sup>15</sup> comments on the *Sandoval* decision in these terms:

From the *Sandoval* decision, in 1913, to the passage of the Pueblo lands act of 1921, every possible means to evade the consequences of the supreme court decision was utilized by those non-Indians who were in possession of Pueblo lands.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>15</sup> Lozano, *Desert Drama* (Boston 1928), pp. 75-111.

The constant friction between the non-Indian claimants and the Pueblo Indians finally culminated in an investigation by the sixtieth congress. This investigation disclosed that there were approximately three thousand non-Indian claimants to lands within the extensive boundaries of the Pueblos of New Mexico. It was estimated that these three thousand claimants represented families aggregating twelve thousand persons. With the seriousness of the situation impressed upon them by these figures, congress began to seek a remedy for the situation. Senator John O. Edwards of New Mexico introduced into the senate of the sixtieth congress a bill entitled, "An act to quiet title to lands within Pueblo Indian land

<sup>16</sup> *Id.* 3 File No. 285644.

<sup>17</sup> Pueblo Indian Land Grants of the "Rio Abasco," New Mexico (The Univ. of New Mexico Bulletin No. 464 1930), pp. 28-29.



counts and for other purposes. On the surface the bill seemed to be just what was needed. A close study of the Bureau bill disclosed, however, that it would have served to place the non-Indian holders of Indian land in a favorable position to obtain a clear title to holdings within the Pueblo limits, and to leave out the burden of disproving the title of the private land holders upon the government. This would have entirely reversed the usual procedure with regard to land claims. The burden of proof in such cases is always upon the claimant. The authorities, already based in favor of the Indians, distinctly changed in attitude on the part of Senator Burton and the secretary of the Interior at that time Albert B. Fall of New Mexico, to provide in every manner in which the non-Indian could make certain of obtaining a title to their lands which could be forever secured.

The Bureau bill received the backing of the Indian administration and second draft for enactment. To the defense of the Indians and to the aid of the Bureau proposed a strong opposition developed led by two groups: the small New Mexico Association on Indian Affairs and the general federation of women's clubs. The latter organization, in 1921, introduced a committee on Indian welfare under the leadership of Mrs. Patricia M. Atwood, this organization employed Mrs. John Collier, a student of Indian affairs as their representative. As legal counsel the services of Ernest C. Wilson of Santa Fe were obtained. Two congressional committees heard the case against the Bureau bill. The arguments, presented by Mr. Wilson were strong and convincing, and together with the testimony of many who opposed the enactment of the proposed law succeeded in "killing" the bill.

A counter-proposal known as the Jones Lathrop bill was suggested by the representatives of the Bureau act, but this measure also failed to obtain the approval of the Congress. Proposed by constituents from New Mexico, Senator Burton introduced a new measure on December 30, 1923, which called for the appointment of a commission to investigate Pueblo land titles. Congress failed to pass the measure during the 1923 session. In 1924, however, the act was passed and approved by Congress on June 7. Known as the *Pueblo Lands Act* this measure provided the means by which a final solution was made of the thousands of non-Indian claims within the bounds of the Pueblo Indians.\*

#### C THE PUEBLO LANDS ACT

The Pueblo Lands Act established a "Pueblo Lands Board" consisting of the Secretary of the Interior, the Attorney General, and a third member appointed by the President. This board was by section 2 of the act, given the duty of determining "the exterior boundaries of any land granted or confirmed to the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico by any authority of the United States of America, or by prior sovereignty, or acquired by said Indians as a community by purchase or otherwise," and to determine the status of all lands within such boundaries, subject to the requirement that a finding that Indian title had been extinguished required a unanimous vote of the board.

The Attorney General was directed, in section 3 of the Pueblo Lands Act, to bring suit to quiet title to all lands listed as pueblo lands by the Lands Board.

Section 4 of the act provided that non-Indian claimants, in order to substantiate their claims, must demonstrate either (a) continuous adverse possession under color of title since January 6, 1902, supported by payment of taxes on the land, or (b) continuous adverse possession since March 10, 1889, supported by payment of taxes, but without color of title.

With respect to all lands and water rights found to have been lost by the Pueblos which might have been recovered by reasonable prosecution on the part of the United States, the United States was to reimburse the Pueblos the fair market value of

the lands and water rights. (See § 6) On the other hand, the land was to revert back to Congress, the due of all improvements lost by non-Indian claimants whose claims were rejected (See § 7, 15).

Other provisions of the Pueblo Lands Act provided for the filing of suit by the United States "in its sovereign capacity as guardian of said Pueblo Indians" in the nature of a bill of discovery (see 1), the investigation of lands and improvement of successful non-Indian claimants which might be purchased for the benefit of the Pueblos (see 8), the patenting of lands to successful non-Indian claimants (see 13), the adjudication of non-Indian claims superior to the original Pueblo grants and the limits of recommendations by the Secretary of the Interior respecting such recommendations (see 14), and various other matters of procedure (see 6, 9, 10, 11, 12, 15, 20).

Where lands to which the Pueblo title was confirmed were unconventionally located, the Secretary of the Interior "with the consent of the governing authorities of the pueblo" might order them to be sold and the proceeds, after deducting the value of improvements of a losing claimant were to be paid over to the proper officer, or officers, of the Indian community." (See 16)

Section 17 of the Pueblo Lands Act is a measure of substantive law directed to the prevention of future disputes rather than to the settlement of past disputes.

Inasmuch as past disputes had arisen generally out of controversies concerning the validity of purported transfers of land or interests in land by pueblo authorities or individual Pueblo Indians, this section laid down an absolute rule that no such title should be of any validity in the future, unless approved in advance by the Secretary of the Interior. Thus the final step was taken in resuming pueblo lands to the status of original tribal lands. This section in question declares:

No right, title or interest in or to the lands of the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico to which their title has not been extinguished as hereinbefore determined shall hereafter be acquired or initiated by virtue of the laws of the State of New Mexico, or in any other manner except as may hereafter be provided by Congress, and no sale, grant, lease of any character, or other conveyance of lands, or any title or claim thereto, made by any pueblo as a community, or any Pueblo Indian living in a community of Pueblo Indians, in the State of New Mexico, shall be of any validity in law or in equity unless the same be first approved by the Secretary of the Interior.\*

The constitutionality of the Pueblo Lands Act was upheld in a series of cases in the federal courts in which its provisions were applied.† The end results of the Pueblo Lands Act are thus described in the study of Herbert O. Baynes ‡

Following the final adjudication of the pueblo titles, the special attorney for the Pueblo Indians was faced with

\* See Chapter 15, sec. 18, for a discussion of the restrictions upon alienation of tribal lands generally.

† The possible application of this statute to internal pueblo affairs is discussed in sec. 6 of this chapter.

‡ *United States v. Wooten*, 40 F. 2d 882 (1930), holding that tax payments under the statutory requirement, need not have been made prior to delinquency, *Gonzalez v. United States*, 48 F. 2d 873 (1930), discussed in p. 398, *infra*, *Pueblo de San Juan v. United States*, 47 F. 2d 446 (1931) holding binding an upon Pueblo to show error in finding of Pueblo Lands Board that lands lost by Pueblo could not have been recovered by reasonable prosecution on the part of the United States, *Pueblo de Poosah v. State of New Mexico v. Aboya*, 80 F. 2d 12 (1931), discussed in p. 397, *infra*, *Pueblo de Taos v. Goodrich*, 70 F. 2d 721 (1931), holding that redemption of land by claimant after tax sale is not payment of taxes within the requirements of the statute, *United States v. Agudones Land Co.*, 62 F. 2d 359 (1931), holding claimant's adverse possession under color of title presumably extends to entire area covered by such title, *Pueblo de Taos v. Archuleta*, 64 F. 2d 897, *Rams v. Aragon* (1943), dismissing pueblo suit for want of reasonable prosecution whose pendancy constituted cloud on title's title. See also Op. Sol., I D, M. 2889, December 15, 1936, interpreting sec. 13.

§ Pueblo Indian Land Grants of the "Big Abajo," New Mexico (The Univ. of New Mexico Bulletin No. 834, 1930), pp. 50-51.

\* *Chase Lee Lee*. See *Chase* was connected with the Indian service for many years, serving as agent to the Hopi and Navajo Indians in Arizona and New Mexico. He was one of the agents for the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico.

† *An Act to Repeal the Laws, and to Amend the Pueblo Indian Land Grants, and for Other Purposes*, 48 Statutes 688.

the tremendous task of settling those claimants whose titles had been declared invalid. This official and the superintendent of the United Pueblo Lands, acting without any action in this regard until the records made by the Pueblo Lands Board had been provided for by the congress of the United States and paid to the holders of the rejected claims. Following this settlement the special attorney began the tedious process of clearing the Indian lands of all persons having no right to be upon them. At this writing, August 10, 1938, the special attorney for the Pueblo Indians, Mr. William Murphy of Albuquerque states that all non-Indian claimants have been removed. For the first time, therefore, now live in the nineteenth century, the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico are free from land controversies.

Under a special acquisition program the Indian Service is proceeding rapidly to purchase such lands as were confirmed to non-Indians by the Pueblo Lands Board and the claims which were deemed desirable for the needs of the Indians. With the conclusion of this program the Pueblo Indians will have no grounds for further disputes over lands granted them by the Spanish authorities and confirmed by the United States.

The Pueblo Lands Act is implemented by a series of enactments culled into effect the purposes of that act. Sums of money were appropriated for the expenses of the board<sup>14</sup> and for payments to the Pueblos and to non-Indian claimants, in the cases covered by the Pueblo Lands Act and in other cases which Congress deemed worthy of special consideration because of inadequacy of awards or special hardships.<sup>15</sup>

The Pueblo Lands Act was further supplemented and amended by the Act of May 31, 1938,<sup>16</sup> a comprehensive measure directed primarily to the execution of awards under the original act. Section 1 of the Act of May 31, 1938, provides that appropriations for awards to the Pueblos:

\* \* \* shall be expended by the Secretary of the Interior, subject to approval of the governing authorities of each pueblo in question, at such times and in such amounts as he may deem wise and proper, for the purchase of lands and water rights to replace those which have been divested from said pueblos under the Act of June 7, 1924, or for the purchase or construction of levees, dikes, irrigation works, or other permanent improvements upon or for the benefit of the lands of said pueblos.

Section 2 of the act authorizes awards in addition to those made by the Pueblo Lands Board to the following Pueblos: Jemez, Nambé, Taos, Santa Ana, Santo Domingo, Sandia, San Felipe, Isleta, Pecos, San Ildefonso, San Juan, Santa Clara, Cochiti, and Pojoaque. The Secretary of the Interior is directed to report back to Congress errors or omissions in the authorizations contained in this section "measured by the present fair market value of the lands involved" (p. 108-109).

Section 3 of the act authorizes money awards to white settlers and non-Indian claimants whose claims have been rejected by

the Pueblo Lands Board (p. 109). Again the Secretary of the Interior is directed to report back to Congress errors in the amount specified measured by the present fair market value of the lands involved (p. 109).

Section 4 of the act directs the Secretary of Agriculture to issue a permit to the Pueblo of Taos "upon application of the governor and council thereof," such permit to grant to the Pueblo the right to use certain designated lands "upon which lands said Indians depend for water supply, for use for their domestic livestock, wood and timber for their personal use and as the scene of certain of their religious ceremonies" (p. 109).

Section 5 of this act regulates the manner in which the Secretary of the Interior may dispose funds involved to the Pueblo in purchasing lands, water rights, options, etc. (p. 110). This section contains the following provisions establishing the policy of public control, subject to departmental consent, in the utilization of pueblo funds:

"That the Secretary of the Interior shall not make any expenditures out of the pueblo funds resulting from the appropriation of such lands, water, or other appropriations for the same purpose, without first obtaining the approval of the governing authorities of the pueblo affected. And provided further, That the governing authorities of any pueblo may institute matters pertaining to the purchase of lands in behalf of their respective pueblos, which matters, or conflicts relative thereto, will not be binding or conclusive until approved by the Secretary of the Interior." (p. 110)

Section 6 of this act safeguards the right of the Pueblos to present independent suits for the recovery of lands claimed by third parties. This section also provides that the Pueblos may enter into agreement with the Secretary of the Interior to abandon such suit and to accept instead awards provided by this act.

Section 7 of the act amends section 16 of the Act of June 7, 1924, the original Pueblo Lands Act, providing that the Secretary of the Interior may, "with the consent of the governing authorities of the pueblo," order the sale of land to the highest bidder where such land although awarded to the Pueblo is not wanted (p. 111).

Section 8 of the act regulates the fees of attorneys employed by the Pueblos (p. 111).

Section 9 safeguards existing water rights (p. 111).

Section 10 provides that the awards authorized to be appropriated under section 2 of this act to the Pueblos shall be appropriated in three annual installments beginning with the fiscal year 1937 (p. 111).

## D THE DEVELOPMENT OF FEDERAL CONTROL

The development of plenary federal control over the Pueblos of New Mexico, inaugurated in the Enabling Act, continued in the *Brandenburg* case, and carried into effect by the Pueblo Lands Act and supplementary statutes, characterizes congressional legislation, judicial decisions, and administrative policies in the period from 1910 to the present. This period in the legal history of the Pueblos is characterized by several legislative developments which parallel the solution of pueblo land problems.

(1) A marked increase in the federal services provided for the New Mexico Pueblos by the Bureau of Indian Affairs, under authority of the regular appropriation acts.

(2) As a corollary of this extension of federal services, the imposition of various debts and liens against the Pueblos.

(3) A prohibition against the alienation of pueblo lands.

(4) A number of lesser statutes further defining the status of the Pueblo Indians.

<sup>14</sup> Act of January 20, 1926, 48 Stat. 733; Act of February 27, 1926, 48 Stat. 1014; Act of March 8, 1926, 48 Stat. 161; Act of April 20, 1926, 44 Stat. 850; Act of February 24, 1927, 44 Stat. 1178; Act of February 15, 1928, 45 Stat. 61; Act of May 29, 1928, 45 Stat. 888; Act of February 15, 1928, 45 Stat. 1094; Act of April 18, 1930, 46 Stat. 173.

<sup>15</sup> Act of December 22, 1927, 45 Stat. 2; Act of March 4, 1929, 45 Stat. 1862; Act of May 14, 1930, 46 Stat. 270; Act of February 14, 1931, 46 Stat. 1115; Act of March 4, 1931, 46 Stat. 1565; Act of April 22, 1932, 47 Stat. 91; Act of July 1, 1932, 47 Stat. 825; Act of February 17, 1933, 47 Stat. 820; Act of June 16, 1933, 48 Stat. 274; Act of June 18, 1933, 48 Stat. 254; Act of May 9, 1935, 49 Stat. 170; Act of August 26, 1935, 49 Stat. 800; Act of June 4, 1936, 49 Stat. 1468; Act of June 22, 1936, 49 Stat. 175; Act of May 18, 1939, 49 Stat. 2264; Act of August 9, 1937, 50 Stat. 554; Pub. No. 15, 70th Cong., 1st sess. (March 28, 1939), Pub. No. 68, 70th Cong., 1st sess. (May 10, 1939).

<sup>16</sup> 48 Stat. 108. An exhaustive analysis of the reasons for this legislation will be found in pt. 20 of the *Survey of Conditions of the Indians in the United States* (Tribal Control, 20 sess., Hearings, Sen. Subcommittee of Comm. on Ind. Affs., pt. 11083-11517. And see *American Indian Life*, Bulletin No. 10 (January 1938), pp. 1-7.

<sup>17</sup> 47 Act of March 27, 1928, c. 285, 45 Stat. 972, protecting the watershed of Taos Pueblo within the Carson National Forest.

A brief commentary on these developments in the law governing the Pueblos is in order.

(1) The increase of federal services administered for the benefit of the Pueblos through the Department of the Interior is evident upon a reading of the appropriation acts for the Bureau of Indian Affairs and, beginning with the Act of May 23, 1922,<sup>41</sup> for the Department of the Interior. The most important of the federal appropriations for the Pueblos, since 1910, are for migration,<sup>42</sup> drainage of public lands,<sup>43</sup> increased educational facilities for the Pueblo Indians,<sup>44</sup> construction of bridges and roads,<sup>45</sup> and the establishment of a settlement for the Pueblo Indians.<sup>46</sup>

A number of difficult questions have arisen in connection with the reclamation of public lands through the Middle Rio Grande Conservancy District. This is a political subdivision of the State of New Mexico. Within the act of its operations, be the lands of seven of the Pueblos. The Act of February 14, 1927,<sup>47</sup> authorized an appropriation of federal funds for reclamation work on the lands of Concho, Santa Domingo, San Felipe, Santa Ana, Sandia, and Isleta Pueblos. Upon the completion of the survey, thus authorized,<sup>48</sup> there was enacted the Act of March 18, 1928,<sup>49</sup> which authorized the Secretary of the Interior to enter into a contract with the Middle Rio Grande Conservancy District for conservation migration, drainage, and flood control work covering public lands. The statute fixed a maximum construction cost of \$1,504,331, payable in not less than five annual installments. Such payments were to be made by the United States subject to reimbursement under such rules and regulations as may be prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>50</sup> To ensure such payments, the statute imposed a lien upon newly reclaimed public lands and declared that reimbursement should be made out of rentals of newly reclaimed lands, or, if such lands were ever sold, out of the proceeds of the sale. No lien for construction costs was imposed on those lands already irrigated by the Pueblo Indians, and it was provided that "such irrigated area of approximately 8,840 acres shall not be subject by the district or otherwise to any pro rata share of the cost of future operation and maintenance or betterment work performed by the district." Further protection of Indian rights is contained in provisions insuring the priority of Indian water rights, preference to Indian lessees in the leasing of newly reclaimed lands, and free leasing of 4,000 acres of such lands to Indians cultivating the same.

Under the foregoing statute a contract was executed between the Secretary of the Interior and the Middle Rio Grande Conservancy District on December 14, 1928.

As construed by the Solicitor of the Interior Department, the statute and the contract permitted the district to charge operation and maintenance costs on public lands outside of the 8,840

acres already irrigated but did not authorize the payment of such charges either by the United States or by the Pueblos.<sup>51</sup> This omission was remedied in the Act of August 27, 1935,<sup>52</sup> which authorized the Secretary of the Interior to contract for the payment of operation and maintenance costs on the newly reclaimed lands for 5 years on a reimbursable basis.

Appropriations have been made from time to time by Congress to meet the obligations, to the Middle Rio Grande Conservancy District, assumed under the 1928 and 1935 acts.<sup>53</sup>

(2) A number of the appropriations, above discussed, in, by the express language of the appropriation acts, reimbursable in accordance with rules and regulations which the Secretary of the Interior shall prescribe.

(3) While section 17 of the Pueblo Lands Act,<sup>54</sup> as we have noted, lists 11 masters of pueblo land not approved in advance by the Secretary of the Interior, section 4 of the Act of June 18, 1934,<sup>55</sup> goes further and lists all masters of tribal land except such as are made in exchange for lands of equal value.<sup>56</sup>

The Act of June 18, 1934, applies to all the Pueblos of New Mexico except the Pueblo of Jemez, as a result of referendum elections held in each Pueblo pursuant to section 15 of the act. The present situation, therefore, is that the Pueblo of Jemez, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, may alienate pueblo lands or interests therein, but that the other Pueblos can alienate lands or interests in land only where two conditions are met. Land of equal value must be received in exchange, and the approval of the Secretary of the Interior must be obtained in advance.

(4) The admission of New Mexico to statehood is promptly followed by a series of legislative measures designed to prevent the further expansion of Indian lands within the state. The Appropriation Act of June 30, 1911,<sup>57</sup> attached the following proviso to the regular appropriation for the survey and allotment of lands in severalty:

*Provided, That no part of said sum shall be used for survey, resurvey, classification, appraisement, or allotment of any land in severalty upon the public domain to any Indian, whether of the Navajo or other tribes, within the State of New Mexico and the State of Arizona. (P. 78)*

<sup>41</sup> Op. Sol. I. D. M. 27612 February 20, 1925.

<sup>42</sup> Act 715, 40 Stat. 887.

<sup>43</sup> This authorization was extended to 1935 by sec. 5 of the Act of June 20, 1918, 52 Stat. 778-779. There is also authorized outright (nonreimbursable) federal appropriations for construction costs and part and future operation and maintenance charges on lands of the Albuquerque School authorized payment on a reimbursable basis for reclamation work not contemplated in the original plan, and authorized reimbursable payments on lands newly acquired. 77 Op. Sol. I. D. M. 28109 March 18, 1930, holding that the Secretary may contract for payment of construction costs on newly acquired lands.

<sup>44</sup> Act of May 29, 1928, 45 Stat. 881-900. Act of March 4, 1929, 45 Stat. 1821, 1840. Act of March 20, 1930, 46 Stat. 90, 104. Act of May 11, 1930, 46 Stat. 279, 292. Act of February 14, 1931, 46 Stat. 1115, 1128. Act of March 4, 1931, 46 Stat. 1572, 1587. Act of April 22, 1932, 47 Stat. 91, 102. Act of February 17, 1933, 47 Stat. 820, 831. Act of March 5, 1934, 48 Stat. 362-371. Act of June 19, 1934, 48 Stat. 1021, 1034. Act of May 9, 1935, 48 Stat. 176, 188. ("Final payment"), Act of June 22, 1936, 49 Stat. 1737, 1770. Act of August 9, 1937, 50 Stat. 694, 699. Act of August 26, 1937, 50 Stat. 755, 756. Act of May 0, 1938, 52 Stat. 291, 306. ("Final payment").

<sup>45</sup> See, for example, Act of February 14, 1920, 41 Stat. 408, 429, and as amended in preceding footnote. And see Chapter 13, sec. 7.

<sup>46</sup> 48 Stat. 961, 25 U. S. C. 484. See Chapter 15, sec. 18C.

<sup>47</sup> On the effect of the act of June 18, 1934, in the event that any of the Pueblos should be chartered thereafter, see Chapter 15, sec. 18.

<sup>48</sup> 38 Stat. 77.

<sup>42</sup> Stat. 552.

<sup>41</sup> Presently all regular appropriation acts from statehood to date. Act of February 14, 1920, 41 Stat. 408, 429. Act of March 8, 1921, 41 Stat. 1227, 1239. Act of May 24, 1922, 42 Stat. 552. Act of January 24, 1923, 42 Stat. 1174, 1198. Act of June 5, 1924, 42 Stat. 800, 401. Act of May 10, 1925, 43 Stat. 453, 468. See Act of January 12, 1927, 44 Stat. 943, 948.

<sup>43</sup> Legislation governing appropriations for a road through the Santa Clara Pueblo establishing a special contract over the admission to the Puye Cliff Dwellings for the benefit of the Pueblo. Act of March 4, 1920, 45 Stat. 1622, 1688-1697.

<sup>44</sup> Act of March 26, 1930, 46 Stat. 90, 104.

<sup>45</sup> 41 Stat. 1098.

<sup>46</sup> The report in question, transmitted by the Secretary of the Interior on January 12, 1928 (House Doc. No. 147, 70th Cong. 1st sess.), estimated that the project would benefit approximately 122,000 acres, of which approximately 28,000 acres were Pueblo Indian lands. Of the latter, approximately 8,840 were found to be under cultivation.

<sup>47</sup> 46 Stat. 419. For regulations adopted pursuant to this law see 25 C. F. R. 1291.

This purpose is repeated in every regular Indian Bureau and Interior Department appropriation act up to and including the appropriation act of February 17, 1933.<sup>11</sup>

In the Appropriation Act of May 25, 1918,<sup>12</sup> the following item of personal substantive law appears:

That hereafter no Indian reservation shall be created, nor shall any additions be made to one heretofore created, within the limits of the States of New Mexico and Arizona, except by Act of Congress. (P. 570)

The Appropriation Act of June 22, 1930,<sup>13</sup> continued a third limitation on the expansion of Indian lands in New Mexico, in the form of a proviso attached to the appropriation for land purchases pursuant to section 5 of the Act of June 18, 1934. This proviso, which has been substantially reiterated in each succeeding appropriation act, declared:

Provided, That within the States of Arizona, New Mexico, and Wyoming no part of said sum shall be used for the acquisition of land outside of the boundaries of existing Indian reservations. (P. 1765)

While these legislative barriers were being erected against acquisition of non-Indian lands for Indian use, the acquisition of Indian lands for non-Indian use was prohibited by the Act of May 10, 1922,<sup>14</sup> entitled "An Act to provide for the condemnation of the lands of Pueblo Indians in New Mexico for public purposes, and making the laws of the State of New Mexico applicable to such proceedings." Under this act public lands may be condemned for any public purpose and for any purpose for which lands may be condemned under the laws of the State of New Mexico. Condemnation proceedings under this act must be brought in the federal courts and notice of suit must be served upon the superintendent or other officer in charge of the public lands in which the land is situated.<sup>15</sup>

This act is substantially similar to the general statute governing condemnation of allotted lands, but there is no parallel state government tribal lands generally, so that the Pueblos are subjected to a type of action from which other tribes are immune.

<sup>11</sup> Act of August 1, 1914, 88 Stat. 582; Act of May 18, 1916, 40 Stat. 124; Act of March 2, 1917, 40 Stat. 909; Act of May 25, 1918, 40 Stat. 761; Act of June 30, 1919, 41 Stat. 7; Act of February 14, 1920, 41 Stat. 408; Act of March 4, 1921, 41 Stat. 1235; Act of May 24, 1922, 42 Stat. 552; Act of June 7, 1923, 43 Stat. 390; Act of March 4, 1925, 43 Stat. 1341; Act of May 10, 1926, 44 Stat. 478; Act of January 15, 1927, 44 Stat. 934; Act of March 7, 1928, 45 Stat. 200; Act of March 1, 1929, 45 Stat. 1650; Act of May 14, 1930, 46 Stat. 270; Act of February 18, 1931, 46 Stat. 1115; Act of April 22, 1932, 47 Stat. 61; Act of Feb. 17, 1933, 47 Stat. 820.

<sup>12</sup> 40 Stat. 561. A year later a general prohibition against the creation of Indian reservations, except by act of Congress, was included in the Appropriation Act of June 30, 1919, sec. 97, 41 Stat. 584 which was later supplemented by the Act of March 9, 1927, sec. 4, 44 Stat. 1347 prohibiting the alteration of reservation boundaries except by act of Congress. See Chapter 15, sec. 7.

<sup>13</sup> 46 Stat. 1187.

<sup>14</sup> Act of August 6, 1920, 90 Stat. 664, Pub. No. 68, 70th Cong., 1st sess. (May 10, 1928).

<sup>15</sup> 42 Stat. 48, 44 Stat. 498.

By the Act of April 21, 1925,<sup>16</sup> federal laws governing the acquisition of rights of way through Indian lands<sup>17</sup> were made applicable to the Pueblos of New Mexico.

The extension of Indian liquor laws to the Pueblos, effected by the building Act of 1910,<sup>18</sup> called forth a special reference to the Pueblos in a provision of the Appropriation Act of August 24, 1912,<sup>19</sup> exempting sacramental wine from such laws.<sup>20</sup>

A further piece of special legislation for the Pueblo Indians is found in the Appropriation Act of March 2, 1917,<sup>21</sup> which contains a proviso to the effect that no part of the sum appropriated for pay of judges of Indian courts "shall be used to pay any judge for the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico, and that no such judge shall be appointed for such Indians in any United States office or employee."

This account of legislation peculiarly affecting the Pueblo Indians during the period of settlement, would not be complete without a reference to the course of legislation affecting the expenditure of tribal funds. At first, the funds awarded to the Pueblos under the Pueblo Lands Act were expendable in the Secretary of the Interior for the purchase of land and other rights for such Indians.<sup>22</sup> The purposes for which such funds might be expended were included in subsequent appropriation acts to cover fencing, irrigation, improvement, and the improvement of federal loans to Pueblos for "industry and self-support,"<sup>23</sup> and purchase of agricultural machinery.<sup>24</sup> Until the Act of May 11, 1931, however, discretion in the expenditure of pueblo funds was vested in the Secretary of the Interior. The act of that date made the consent of the governing authorities of the Pueblo concerned a condition precedent to the expenditure of pueblo funds. The principle thus established was generalized a year later in section 10 of the Act of June 18, 1934.<sup>25</sup>

For eight decades the Pueblos had faced the choice of being treated like other Indian tribes and subjected to federal control of their internal affairs or being treated like non-Indians and finding themselves cut loose from federal services and their lands cut loose from federal protection. Recent legislation and administration have overcome this dilemma by recognizing the right of self-government to be an inherent right of the Pueblos and of other tribes, and by increasing the scope of federal supervision in the field of Indian affairs, so that the Pueblos, like other tribes, may enjoy federal services and federal protection without surrendering control over their internal municipal life.

<sup>16</sup> 43 Stat. 400, 45 Stat. 442. The reasons for this enactment are set forth in H. Rept. No. 810, 70th Cong., 1st sess.

<sup>17</sup> 21 U. S. C. 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 517, 818, 919, 921, 19 U. S. C. 914-920.

<sup>18</sup> Act of June 20, 1910, 36 Stat. 757. See p. 189, *supra*.

<sup>19</sup> 37 Stat. 518.

<sup>20</sup> See Chapter 17, sec. 6.

<sup>21</sup> 39 Stat. 969, 972.

<sup>22</sup> Act of December 22, 1907, 46 Stat. 2, 41 Stat. 17-18.

<sup>23</sup> Acts of March 4, 1929, 46 Stat. 1669; May 14, 1930, 46 Stat. 270.

<sup>24</sup> Acts of February 14, 1931, 46 Stat. 1116; July 1, 1932, 47 Stat. 528; February 17, 1933, 47 Stat. 830.

<sup>25</sup> 48 Stat. 951, 689, 32 U. S. C. 478. See Chapter 5, sec. 10.

## SECTION 5 PUEBLO SELF-GOVERNMENT<sup>26</sup>

At least since the *Randolph* decision, in 1913, there has been no room for doubt that the Pueblos of New Mexico are Indian

<sup>26</sup> Although in matters of self-government each pueblo is autonomous, mention should be made of the all-Pueblo Council, which has functioned as a consultative body in matters of common concern to the New Mexico Pueblos since 1922. On the operation of this body, see American Indian Life, Bulletin No. 10 (October-November 1927), pp. 7-13.

tribes entitled to the same rights of self-government under the Constitution and laws of the United States, as other Indian tribes. The scope of these rights of self-government has been outlined in Chapter 7 of this volume and need not be discussed further at this point. The actual exercise of these rights, however, by the Pueblos has given rise to at least three legal problems which deserve special mention, namely: (1) The legal au-

thority of pueblo officers, (2) the status of religious liberties of pueblo members, in view of the intimate connection between religious and political affairs in the pueblo system of government, and (3) the right of the Pueblo to control occupancy rights of individual members in pueblo lands.

(1) The question of the authority of pueblo officers has generally arisen in connection with the validity of agreements partially executed on behalf of a Pueblo. The case of *Pueblo of Santa Rosa v. Hall*<sup>119</sup> turned on the issue of whether the appointment of an alleged Pueblo in the State of Arizona had authority to act for the Pueblo in executing a contract affecting tribal claims in land. The Supreme Court held that according to the custom of the Pueblo the appointment would have no authority to act on behalf of the Pueblo in a matter of this importance, declaring:

"But Luis was without power to execute the papers in question for lack of authority from the Indian council, in that opinion is well established. (17p 810-820.)"

The suit, based upon the alleged agreement with the pueblo council, was ordered dismissed "without prejudice to the bringing of any other suit hereafter by and with the authority of the alleged Pueblo of Santa Rosa." (17p 321.)

The rule announced in the case of the Pueblo of Santa Rosa has been applied to the Pueblos of New Mexico. The Solicitor of the Department of the Interior held, in a memorandum of March 11, 1926, that a grant of a right of way executed by the Governor of Pogoquo, Pueblo was invalid for the reason that "According to the custom of the pueblo, a grant of lands cannot be made by the governor, but only by the sovereign and council, or by an assembly of the entire pueblo."

In matters of lesser importance than in the disposition of pueblo lands and claims, pueblo authority will generally be exercised by the civil officers or the civil council of the Pueblo. Among the Rio Grande Pueblos the roster of officers generally includes a governor, the chief executive of the Pueblo, a lieutenant governor, and one or more war captains (who in addition to their religious duties, generally act as police officers), fiscales (who are charged with care of graveyards and church property), and sheriffs (messengers of the Governor and council), all elected to 1-year terms. The civil council will generally include the officers and a number of "principales." The status of "principales" is a more or less permanent status generally conferred upon those who have held the post of governor and sometimes upon those who have held other elective offices in the Pueblo.

Within this general framework of pueblo government there are, of course, many variations of structure and except in the Pueblos of Laguna and Santa Clara, which operate under written constitutions,<sup>120</sup> questions of governmental structure and authority would require specific inquiry into the custom of the particular Pueblo.

(2) Questions involving religious aspects of pueblo social life are fraught with such difficulty and complexity that it would be rash to attempt to formulate the law governing this field of pueblo life except in terms of very specific fact situations. It may be worth while, however, to note several caveats against hasty and tempting conclusions in this field.

In the first place, it must be recognized that while the Spaniards insisted upon a separation of religious and lay authority within each Pueblo, and the regular civil officers and civil

council were set up in response to this insistence, this separation has probably nowhere been completely carried through, except in the Pueblo of Laguna. Thus one may find that nominations to civil office are made by the councils, the native religious leaders of the Pueblo and in some Pueblos always elected unanimously thereafter by the pueblo assembly.

In the second place, it should be noted that the distinction between religious and civil services required of pueblo members is a distinction on which two extremes will seldom agree.

Finally, it should be remembered that the doctrine of separation of church and state, although fundamental in the government of the United States, has never been imposed by Congress as a formula to which the Pueblos must adhere.

In view of these difficulties, efforts to apply to the Pueblos canons of religious liberty which would apply to federal or state governments must be viewed with extreme reserve.

The memorandum submitted to Assistant Attorney General Bith by Special Assistant to the Attorney General G. A. Iverson, on October 1, 1926 dealing with suppression of the use of a vote in the Pueblo of Taos illustrates the difficulties of the subject and provides a useful guide for further inquiries of this nature. In this case (an Indian usage, peyote in violation of a tribal custom or ordinance had been tried by the pueblo council and punished by having their land assignments taken away from them. The Iverson memorandum deals with the question of whether the Federal Government might intervene to correct an official injustice done to the peyote users of the Pueblo.

The memorandum reaches the conclusion that the Pueblo Indians are entitled to the protection of the First Amendment guaranteeing religious liberty but that this amendment is inapplicable to the action of the Pueblo authorities themselves, as distinguished from the action of federal authorities,<sup>121</sup> that the authority of the tribal court of the Pueblo was clear, that the executive officers of the United States would have no authority to interfere with the administration of justice by the pueblo court in matters affecting relations between members of the Pueblo,<sup>122</sup> that the revocation of an assignment by the Pueblo council, which had been imposed as a penalty, was in violation of the Act of June 7, 1924,<sup>123</sup> so that the Secretary of the Interior would be justified in taking the position "that the attempted coercion is invalid and without force and effect",<sup>124</sup> and finally, that the Federal Government would not be able by any judicial proceeding to interfere with the action of the tribal council in these cases.<sup>125</sup>

The Iverson opinion apparently assumed that the occupancy interest of the Indians concerned was an interest in land within the meaning of the Act of June 7, 1924, which governs the transfer of interests in land of the Pueblo Indians. The factual correctness of this assumption with respect to the land of the Pueblo Indians of Taos is perhaps open to question.<sup>126</sup> This does not affect the validity of the argument presented in the Iverson memorandum that the officials of a Pueblo would not be authorized to transfer interests in land from one individual to another. If, however, no such action is attempted, that is to say, if what the individual pueblo member has is not an interest in land but a privilege of use terminable at the will of the Pueblo itself, it would appear that the limitation referred to in the Iverson memorandum is of no practical importance in the situation dealt with. If in point of fact the individual member has only a privilege of occupancy terminable at the will of the Pueblo, then the Pueblo

<sup>119</sup> 275 U. S. 515 (1927).

<sup>120</sup> That of Laguna was adopted by the Laguna Indians on January 1, 1908 without any specific congressional authorization or deposit mental supervision. That of Santa Clara Pueblo was adopted by the Indians on December 14, 1906, and approved by the Secretary of the Interior on December 20, 1906 pursuant to the Act of June 18, 1904 48 Stat. 984, 25 U. S. C. 461 et seq.

<sup>121</sup> 8 Memoranda Lands Division D. T. (1918), 220, 221-223.

<sup>122</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 271-278.

<sup>123</sup> 48 Stat. 686.

<sup>124</sup> 8 Memoranda, Lands Division D. T. (1918), p. 230.

<sup>125</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 240.

<sup>126</sup> See pp. 295-300, *infra*.

would clearly be justified in terminating the occupancy without the approval of the Secretary of the Interior.

The Indian opinion contains an illuminating analysis of the judicial authority of the Pueblo council.

The Indian officials who assumed to dispose of the con-  
veyances in the instant case obtained their authority,  
whereas it was from the Indian tribe, under the govern-  
mental policy of self-development or self-determination.  
They constituted a determining body as part of a local  
government which in its principal aspects continued the  
elements of representative government in that form is  
understood in our system. It appears to have been created  
upon either the action on the part of the tribe, and while  
its exercise of authority was necessarily limited by various  
and sundry acts of Congress, it rested upon what appears  
to have been a custom of long duration. True, it is not a  
court with such dignity as that for example of the Seneca  
Indians of New York who had adopted a constitutional  
charter relating to various domestic subjects connected  
with domestic relations, not even property rights. (*See v.  
Hurtley, 2 Fed. Supp. 667*) but perhaps the degree of  
finality or regularity of procedure is not a requirement  
going to or affecting the validity or binding force and  
effect of conclusions reached or judgments pronounced  
within the scope of the limited authority of such an  
institution.

In what has been said above it is assumed that it was by  
the Indians and the exercise of relations examines  
the internal affairs of the Indians. It is a condition,  
if the use of power was unqualified is preclusive to the val-  
idity of the Indians the right of the Indian Council to  
regulate its use or prevent it altogether cannot be ques-  
tioned. It seems to me that the question in other  
event presents a tribal matter and must stand the author-  
ties be left to tribal determination. True, the present  
Council may be wrong. It may be rectified by laws or  
judges against the members of the Native American  
Church. It may be that their actions were influenced by  
ill motives and that a wrong should be corrected, but  
as before stated, the Indians themselves created the tri-  
bunal and custom and usage support the validity of its  
judgments. Next year another election will probably be  
held and a different tribunal inducted into office. The  
government of the Indians in this case being in a measure  
at least representative, they should be left in matters of  
this character to their own devices. There being no appeal  
from the judgment of the court, the right of appeal being  
purely statutory, the judgment cannot be reviewed, but  
this fact does not affect either the jurisdiction of the  
power.

(3) The right of the Pueblo to control occupancy rights of  
individual members in pueblo lands is essentially similar to the  
right of other tribes with respect to tribal lands, discussed in  
Chapter 9 of this volume. Although, as noted, the Indian mem-  
orandum held that the council of the Pueblo could not, without  
the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, revoke or transfer  
in interest in land possessed by a member of the Pueblo, the  
assumption that individual tribe Indians held such interests  
in land is not supported by any facts set forth in the Indian memo-  
randum. A recent memorandum of the Solicitor of the Interior  
Department on this point<sup>222</sup> declares, after setting forth the  
language of section 17 of the Act of June 7, 1924<sup>223</sup> that

Under the foregoing language, it must be held that if an  
assignment in fee simple of a Pueblo allotment to a trans-  
fer of right, title, or interest in real property, any pur-  
ported assignment, whether to an Indian or to a non-  
Indian, made by the Pueblo without the prior approval of the  
Secretary of the Interior is without validity in law or  
equity.

On the other hand, if an assignment does not  
convey an interest in the land itself, it does not fall within

the scope of the statute cited. It becomes important,  
therefore, to distinguish between the transactions which  
convey an interest in real property and those transactions  
which, while relating to the use of real property, do not  
create an interest therein.

This distinction has been considered by the courts in a  
great variety of cases which seek to distinguish an interest  
in land from a mere license. A recent decision in the  
Circuit Court of Appeals for the Eighth Circuit holds:

"A mere permission to use land dominion over it re-  
sulting in the owner and no interest or exclusive prop-  
erty of the land is a mere license. (Citing authorities.)"  
(*Thompson v. United States, 70 F. (2d) 525, 526*)  
(9 C. A. 7, 1944)

The essential characteristics of a license to use real prop-  
erty, as distinguished from an interest in real property, is  
that in the former case the licensee has no vested right in  
the use of the land or third parties. He has only a  
privilege, which the licensor may terminate.

As Justice Holmes pointed out in *Masterson v. Squire*,  
*27 U. S. 534*, "A contract binds the maker but does not create an interest in the  
property if it is in contract, unless it also operates as a  
conveyance." But if it did not create such an  
interest, that is to say, a right to use land against the  
landowner and third persons, the holder had no right to  
enforce specific performance by self-help. His only right  
was to sue upon the contract for the breach." (At p. 539)

But in its simplest terms, the title is that a licensee  
does not become an interest in his land by allowing an  
other to use the land. Thus, for instance, a member of  
the landowner's family, inasmuch as he is a heir of the  
owner, who has no legal interest in the land,  
cannot derive from his legal privilege to use the land a  
right against the landowner or against third parties. *See also*  
*Easton v. Easton, 81 W. 701 (N. H. 1911)*. See also  
*Quinn v. Quinn, 100 W. 100 (N. H. 1916)*.

The distinction established by the cases between a  
license and an interest in land is entirely consistent with  
the purpose of the Pueblo Land Act of June 7, 1924.

A reading of the legislative history of that act shows  
that it is designed to stop the loss of pueblo lands by  
sweeping transactions from which a claim against the  
pueblo might ultimately be derived. Thus if a pueblo,  
under the guise of making assignments, should in effect  
grant a life estate or even a leasehold interest to an indi-  
vidual member of the pueblo, there would be a transaction  
upon which a claim adverse to the pueblo might be  
founded either by the individual or by a third party to  
whom he might convey his rights. On the other hand, the  
action or function of the pueblo authorities in permitting  
a pueblo member to use a designated area of pueblo land  
would not of itself create any interest in land adverse to  
the title of the pueblo itself, any more than the decision  
of a family council to allot certain rooms or buildings to  
certain members of the family would constitute a transfer  
of an interest in land.

In between these two extremes difficult "twilight zone"  
cases may appear. In these cases the courts have looked  
to the intention of the parties to determine whether the  
transaction was intended to create a right against the  
landowner and against third parties. If it was so in-  
tended, the transaction must be regarded as a conveyance  
of an interest in real property. If not, a mere license  
relationship is established.

Even the language of leasing will not suffice to create  
a lease relationship if the transaction leaves complete  
power over the land in the hands of the landowner. Thus,  
in the case of *Thompson v. United States, 70 F. (2d) 525* (9 C.  
A. 7, 1944), the court found that an instrument which  
used the terms "landlord," "tenant," "lease," etc., was  
nevertheless a mere license, because the so-called lessee,  
the War Department, had no power to lease the property  
or to grant more than a leaseable permit to use the  
property.

It would be entirely improper for me to attempt to  
apply the general principles, above set forth, to an  
imaginary assignment that may be made to an imaginary  
Indian under an assignment that has not yet  
been passed. When an actual assignment is made or pro-

<sup>222</sup> 2 Memoranda, Lands Division D. J. [1940], 220, 220, 227-228.

<sup>223</sup> Memo Acting Sec. J. D., April 14, 1939.

<sup>224</sup> 43 Stat. 686, discussed at p. 890, *supra*.

posed and the bylaws, ordinances, unwritten customs or expressed intentions of the pueblos which bear upon the issues there presented, the land before me. I shall be glad to render an opinion on the question of whether such assignment involves a conveyance of an interest in land and is therefore invalid without prior Secretarial approval.

The foregoing discussion however should make clear

the right of the pueblo to grant a mere license for the use of lands to the members of the pueblo. It should be equally clear, under the principle above set forth, that the pueblo lacks power to grant more than a mere license and that any oral transaction or written instrument purporting to grant an interest in land valid against the pueblo itself or against third parties would be void at law and in equity.

## SECTION 6 PUEBLO LAND TITLES

Without further reference to the history of pueblo land titles, dealt with in the earlier sections of this chapter, we may attempt a statement of the incidents of pueblo land ownership today. At the present time the land ownership of the Pueblos is of two types. There is, in the first place, land to which the Pueblos hold fee title under grants of the Spanish, the Mexican, or the United States Governments or by a series of purchases made by the Pueblo. In the second place there is land to which legal title is held by the United States, the equitable ownership of which is vested in the Pueblo. Such lands include statutory reservations<sup>108</sup> and Executive order reservations of lands formerly part of the public domain.<sup>109</sup> Likewise, lands purchased by the United States for the benefit of the Pueblo, whether through the use of pueblo funds or through the use of granty appropriations may fall under this category. In its relations to third parties however, the rights of the Pueblo are not substantially affected by the distinction between the two forms of title.<sup>110</sup> As a legal owner or as an equitable owner the Pueblo has all the ordinary rights of a landowner with respect to third parties except the right of alienation. The Pueblo has the right to exclude third parties from its land,<sup>111</sup> and it has the right to

quarantine this exclusion in specific conditions under which third parties will be permitted to enter upon pueblo lands. As a land owner the Pueblo may insist that its members pay a sum of money for the privilege of entering the pueblo lands, and that while they are within the pueblo boundaries they refrain from certain types of conduct which the pueblo authorities classify as offensive. As a landowner the Pueblo may also revoke the rights of occupancy, grazing, permits, or other licenses to nonmembers, provided that no property interest is thereby identified and subject to the approval of the Interior Department where such approval is required by existing law. Likewise, the Pueblo may lease pueblo lands to members or to outsiders subject to the approval of the Secretary of the Interior. The necessity of obtaining the consent of the United States to any transaction involving alienation of a property interest, whether by sale, mortgage, exchange, gift, or lease is a matter to which we have already given consideration at pages 290 and 295.

The legal authority of the Pueblo to exercise the rights of a landowner does not depend upon the peculiar facts with respect to the legal title of pueblo land and lands. Its rights are cognate with the rights of other tribes, which have been analyzed in Chapter 15 of this volume.

The limitations upon these rights, which generally similar to the limitations placed upon land ownership by other tribes, are made specific by the terms of the Pueblo Lands Act of June 7, 1924, which has been discussed on page 390. Briefly summarized, it may be said that in its relations with the States, the Federal Government, the members of the Pueblo, and third parties generally, the Pueblo is the owner of lands granted or reserved to it, except that it does not have the right to dispose of the land or any interest therein without the approval of the United States.

## SECTION 7 THE RELATION OF THE PUEBLOS TO THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT

That the Pueblos are wards of the United States in the sense in which that phrase was first used, i. e., that Congress possesses plenary power to govern the Pueblos, is a proposition that has not been cast in doubt since the *Bandolac* case.<sup>112</sup> There remains the question how far Congress has exercised this power and, in particular, how far Congress has conferred upon the Executive branch of the Federal Government authority over the Pueblos. The question of the scope of Executive power with respect to the Pueblos is dealt with in a recent opinion of the Solicitor of the Interior Department<sup>113</sup> from which the following passage is quoted:

One of the points on which administrative control is clearly established relates to the disposition of real property. Here the cases hold that the Pueblos have no power to dispose of real property except with the consent of the United States. Such consent may be given expressly by the Secretary of the Interior, or implicitly through a legal action involving pueblo lands. In the latter case the United States must be a party to the action, or else the

Pueblos must be represented by an attorney appointed by the United States, if the decree against the Pueblo is to have validity.

The chief authority cited in this statement is the case of *United States v. Candelaria*<sup>114</sup> in which the following question was certified to the Supreme Court:

1. Are Pueblo Indians in New Mexico in such status of tutelage as to their lands in that State that the United States, as such guardian, is not barred either by a judgment in a suit involving title to such lands begun in the territorial court and passing to judgment after statehood or by a judgment in a similar action in the United States District Court for the District of New Mexico, where, in each of said actions, the United States was not a party nor was the attorney representing such Indians therein authorized so to do by the United States? (P. 488.)

Thus question the Supreme Court answered in the following terms, per Mr. Devantez, J.

Many provisions have been enacted by Congress—some general and other special—to prevent the Government's

<sup>108</sup> 231 U. S. 28 (1913) discussed at pp. 889-900, *supra*.

<sup>109</sup> Op. Sol. I. D., M. 20699, August 6, 1938.

<sup>114</sup> 271 U. S. 452 (1926).

Indian lands from improvidently disposing of their lands and becoming homeless public chieftains. One of these provisions, now embodied in section 2110 of the Revised Statutes, declares: "No purchase, gift, lease, or other conveyance of lands, or of any title or claim therein from any Indian nation or tribe of Indians, shall be of any validity in law or equity unless the same be made by treaty or convention entered into pursuant to the Constitution." This provision was originally adopted in 1817, c. 161, sec. 12, § 80 of 7 Stat. 49, and others "regulating trade and intercourse with the Indian tribes," was extended over the Indian tribes of New Mexico in 1851, c. 14, sec. 7, § 81 of 1857.

While there is no express reference in the provision to Pueblo Indians, we think it must be taken as including them. They are plainly within its spirit and in our opinion fairly within its words, "any tribe of Indians." Although sedentary, industrious and disposed to peace, yet the Indians in our country and domestic government, they have lived in isolated communities and are a simple, unimproved people, ill prepared to cope with the intelligence and guile of other races. If therefore it is difficult to believe that Congress in 1851 was not intending to protect them but only the nomadic and savage Indians then living in New Mexico, a more reasonable view is that the term "Indian tribe" was used in the act—since in 1817 and 1851 in the sense of "a body of Indians of the same or a small number united in a community under one leadership or government, and inhabiting a particular though sometimes detached territory." *Alouqua v. United States*, 150 U. S. 203, 209. In that sense the term easily includes Pueblo Indians.

Under the Spanish law Pueblo Indians, although having full title to their lands, were regarded as, in a state of tutelage and could alienate their lands only under governmental supervision. See *Chavez v. Alouqua*, 40 How. 201, 227. Text writers have differed about the situation under the Mexican law, but in *United States v. Pico* 5 Wall. 550, 550, this Court, speaking through Mr. Justice Field, who was specially informed on the subject, expressly recognized that under the laws of Mexico the government "extended a special guardianship" over Indian pueblos and that a conveyance of pueblo lands to be effective must be "under the supervision and with the approval" of designated authorities. And there was the ruling in *Sumner v. Beaman* 1 Cent. 274, 274 of 99. Thus it appears that Congress in imposing a restriction on the alienation of these lands, as we think it did, was but continuing a policy which prior governments had deemed essential to the protection of such Indians.

With this explanation of the status of the Pueblo Indians and their lands and of the relation of the United States to both, we came to answer the questions propounded in the certificate.

To the first question we answer that the United States is not authorized. Our reasons will be stated. The Indians of the pueblo are wards of the United States, and hold their lands subject to the restriction that the same cannot be alienated in any way without its consent. A judgment or decree which operates directly or indirectly to transfer the lands from the Indians to the United States has not authorized or appeared in the suit, intimates that restriction. The United States has an interest in maintaining and enforcing the restriction which it must be deemed by such a judgment or decree. This Court has said in dealing with a like situation: "It necessarily follows that as a transfer of the allotted lands, contrary to the inhibition of Congress, would be a violation of the governmental rights of the United States, arising from its obligation to a dependent people, no stipulations, contracts, or judgments rendered in suits to which the Government is a stranger, can affect its interest. The authority of the United States to enforce the restraint lawfully created cannot be impaired by any action which it consents." *Bowling and Iowa Improvement Co. v. United States*, 228 U. S. 622, 634. And that ruling has been recognized and given effect in other cases. *Pickett v. United States*, 256 U. S. 231, 234, *Sundestrom v. United States*, 209 U. S. 230, 232.

But, as it appears that for many years the United States has employed and paid a special attorney to rep-

resent the Pueblo Indians and look after their interests, our answer is made with the qualification that, if the decree was rendered in a suit begun and prosecuted by the special attorney so employed and paid, we think the United States is effectively concluded as if it were a party to the suit. *Summitry v. Compagnie des Bauxites*, 237 U. S. 477, 486, *Lorcy v. Murray*, 3 Wall. 2, 18, *Clapham v. Pitcher*, 7 Fed. 871, 882, *Alouqua v. United States*, Fed. 402, 404, *Jewett v. Grandview Iron Co.*, 107 Fed. 397, 411. (Pp. 441 to 444.)

The decision reached in the *Concluding Case* has been followed in a number of cases arising on appeals from decrees of the Pueblo Lands Board.<sup>12</sup>

The opinion of the Solicitor of the Interior Department quoted above goes on to analyze the scope of Federal executive power over the Pueblos in the following terms:

"The power of the Executive extends to the bringing of suits on behalf of a pueblo in matters affecting pueblo lands and controlling the conduct of such litigation. The heads of such power is set forth in the passage above quoted from *United States v. Condit*, in which Mr. Justice Van Devanter said: "The suit was brought on the theory that these Indians are wards of the United States and that it therefore has authority and is under a duty to protect them in the ownership and enjoyment of the Pueblo Lands Act which provides that 'the United States of America, in its sovereign capacity is guardian of and pueblo Indians' shall institute certain restraints to quiet title of pueblo lands, a number of suits have been brought on behalf of Indian pueblos."

See for example *United States v. Board of National Missions of Presbyterian Church*, *supra*, *Guana v. United States*, *supra*, *Pueblo of Pecos v. United States*, *supra*.

In the last cited case the question was raised whether the pueblo itself was precluded from appealing an adverse decision sustained in an action instituted by the United States on behalf of the pueblo. The Court declared:

"It thus appears that at any time prior to the filing of the field notes and plans by the Secretary of the Interior in the office of the Surveyor General of New Mexico (Pueblo Lands Act, sec. 19, 48 Stat. 640 [27 U. S. C. § 391 note]) either the United States or the pueblo may maintain an action involving the title and right to lands of the pueblo, but a decree rendered in a suit brought by the pueblo does not bind the United States, while a decree rendered in a suit brought by the United States does bind the pueblo."

"The statutory power of the United States to institute actions for the Pueblo Indians necessarily involves the power to control such litigation. If the private attorneys of the pueblo could dictate the avowals of the bill, or could prevail in questions of judgment in the introduction of evidence, there would be no substance to the guardianship of the United States over the Indians. There cannot be a divided authority in the conduct of litigation divided authority results in hopeless confusion. If the United States has power to dismiss with prejudice prior to trial, as has been held, it certainly has power to decline to appeal after trial if it believes the decision of the trial court is without error." (At pp. 13 to 14.)

In view of the foregoing authorities it is clear that the United States is empowered by virtue of its relation to the pueblo and pursuant to special legislation based on that relationship to conduct and control litigation on behalf of the pueblos concerned for the protection of pueblo lands.

No attempt will be made in this opinion to analyze exhaustively the realm in which the Executive arm of the

<sup>12</sup> *United States v. Board of National Missions of the Presbyterian Church*, 37 F. 26 273 (C. C. A. 10, 1929), *Guana v. United States*, 43 F. 26 878 (C. C. A. 10, 1930), *Pueblo of Pecos v. Axtell*, 50 F. 26 12 (C. C. A. 10, 1931).



Federal Government is empowered to supervise acts of the pueblo government. It is enough for the present to point out the one kind to the foregoing cases applying such supervision in matters affecting the disposition of pueblo lands and litigation with reference to such lands and to note on the other hand that pueblo rights of self-government in matters internal to the pueblo have been consistently recognized in all the decided cases. In the Constitution of the Santa Clara Pueblo approved by the Secretary of the Interior on December 20, 1947, an attempt was made to distinguish between matters over which the pueblo has sovereign power under existing Federal law and matters over which the Interior Department has final control. This attempt is embodied in the fifth numbered paragraph of Article IV, section I of the Pueblo Constitution. This paragraph deals with powers which are not specifically enumerated in section 16 of the act of June 15, 1941 but which are comprehended under the general phrase "all powers vested in any Indian tribe or band of Indians by existing law," words as follows:

"To chief ordinances not inconsistent with the constitution and laws of the pueblo, for the maintenance of law and order within the pueblo and for the punishment of members and the exclusion of nonmembers violating any such ordinances, for the raising of revenue, and the appointment of officials for the various purposes for the regulation of trade, inheritance, landholding, and private delinquencies in land within the pueblo for the conduct of the officers of the pueblo in all their duties, and authority for the payment of the salaries of the pueblo and for the execution of all other powers vested in the pueblo by existing law provided that no ordinance which affects persons who are not members of the pueblo shall not take effect until it has been approved by the Secretary of the Interior, a some officer designated by him."

A third point in the relation of the pueblo to the Federal Government is raised by the question whether the pueblos may resort to legal proceedings against the United States or its officers. While this question is essentially a question of legal procedure the substantive rights of the pueblos must depend in a very large degree upon the answer given to this question. The question is difficult and unmistakably answered in the opinion of the Supreme Court laid in *At. Torrey v. De Vetter*, *supra*, *Lone v. Pueblo of Santa Rosa* [240 U. S. 110 (1916)], *supra*. In that case the pueblo of Santa Rosa was recognized as entitled to bring suit against the Secretary of the Interior to enjoin that official from offering, leasing or disposing of, its public lands of the United States, certain lands claimed by the Indian pueblo.

Again, in the case of *Pueblo de San Juan v. United States* [47 F. 2d 416 (C. C. A. 10, 1941)], *supra*, the right of a pueblo to bring suit against the United States, under the Pueblo Lands Act (43 Stat. 837), was upheld.

In accordance with the familiar rule it must be that

United States must be based upon legislation through which the United States has decided to be sued. Suits against officers of the United States based on alleged title acts require no such statutory authority.

A final question which the relation of the pueblo to the Federal Government has raised is the question whether the pueblos are entitled to the protection of the Federal Constitution with respect to acts done under Federal authority.

The opinion of the Supreme Court in the above-cited case of *Lone v. Pueblo of Santa Rosa* presents this question in the following terms:

"The defendants assert with much earnestness that the Indians of this pueblo act within the United States—recognized as such by the legislative and executive departments—and that in consequence the disposals of their lands are just within their own control, but subject to such regulations as Congress may prescribe for their benefit and protection. Assuming, without so deciding, that this is all true, we think it is not material on the point we are considering. Certainly it would not justify the defendants in treating the lands of these Indians—to which, according to the bill they have a complete and perfect title—as public lands of the United States and disposing of the same under the public land laws. That would not be an exercise of lawful power, but an act of confiscation. Besides the Indians are not here seeking to establish any power or capacity in themselves to dispose of the lands, but only to prevent a threatened dispossession by disavowing any ownership or of their full ownership. Of their capacity to maintain such a suit we entertain no doubt. The existing widowship is not an obstacle as is shown by repeated decisions of this court, of which *Lone Wolf v. Hitchcock*, 187 U. S. 758, is an illustration." (At pp. 418 to 414.)

Again it was held in the case of *Garcia v. United States*, *supra*, that Congress could not constitutionally deprive a pueblo of the right to plead a New Mexico statute of limitations. The court declared:

"We conclude that such Indian pueblos were entitled to the benefits of the New Mexico statutes of limitation and that the United States is their guarantor, may plead such statutes in their behalf."

"It thus be true, then the Pueblo of Tros having acquired fee simple title to the Tenorio tract under section 1701, *supra*, prior to the adoption of the Pueblo Lands Act, could not be deprived of that title by legislative fiat." (At p. 878.)

In accordance with the foregoing decisions it is plain that while the Indian pueblos have been considered for certain purposes as wards of the Federal Government they are entitled not only to bring suit against that Government and its officers but to sue and be sued as citizens and officers the protections guaranteed by the Federal Constitution.

## SECTION 8. THE RELATION OF THE PUEBLOS TO THE STATE

We have already noted that the forum upon which New Mexico was admitted to Statehood left no room for a claim by the State to governmental power over the Pueblos. The general rule that the Pueblos are not subject to State control must, however, be qualified in several respects.

In the first place, as noted in Chapter 6 of this volume pueblo lands, like other Indian reservations, are part of the State in which they are situated for purposes of State jurisdiction over non-Indians.

In the second place, Congress has made various State laws, such as laws respecting health and education,<sup>124</sup> applicable on Indian reservations, and these laws are as applicable to the Pueblos as to other Indian tribes.<sup>125</sup>

In the third place, the judgments and decrees of the Pueblo in

matters properly within its jurisdiction would appear to merit the same faith and credit that is owing to other recognized agencies of tribal government under the decisions discussed elsewhere in this volume.<sup>126</sup>

A second problem of the relation of the Pueblos to the State of New Mexico is raised by the possibility of suit by a Pueblo in a State court.<sup>127</sup> On this question in opinion of the Solicitor of the Interior Department,<sup>128</sup> we declare:

If has occasionally been assumed that where a State has no jurisdiction over the land of an Indian pueblo, the

<sup>124</sup> See Chapter 14, sec. 3.

<sup>125</sup> Examples of such suits in state or territorial courts are *Pueblo of Laguna v. Pueblo of Acoma*, 1 N. M. 220 (1867), dispute over possession of sacred picture, *Vutor de la O v. Pueblo of Acoma*, 1 N. M. 226 (1867), dispute over possession of document of title, *Pueblo of Isleta v. Pueblo and Pecos*, 18 N. M. 988, 1st Pac. 96 (1918), condemnation of right of way.

<sup>126</sup> See *Op. Sol. I. D.*, 11, 20960, August 8, 1939.

<sup>124</sup> 25 U. S. C. 251.

<sup>125</sup> See Chapter 6, sec. 2.



are corporations, with power to bring suits against third parties, and liability to suits brought by third parties.<sup>1</sup>

It is not so clear what meaning of corporation the pueblos are. The most explicit characterization found in any of the Federal cases heretofore decided is found in the case of *Tribal v. United States*, supra, where the Pueblo of Ties is classified under the category of "municipal or public corporations".<sup>2</sup>

It is by the Act of December 1847, Rev. St. N. M. 1857, § 420, sections 69-101, N. M. Stat. Ann. Comp. 1929, the Indians Pueblos were given the status of bodies politic and corporate and, as such, are protected by suit in respect of their lands. *Lease v. Pueblo of Santa Rosa*, 249 U.S. 133, 19 S. Ct. 195, 61 L. Ed. 561. A statute of limitation in the absence of provision there to the contrary, runs not only for and against municipal or public corporations. *Metropolitan R. Co. v. Dist. of Columbia*, 132 U.S. 1, 11-12.

1-60 is included by the Act of June 26, 1976, 90 Stat. 1976) is affirmed in two of the opinions of the Solicitor of the Interior Department which contain an exhaustive analysis of Pueblo corporate status. Op. Sol. I.D. M-2909, February 11, 1957; Op. Sol. I.D. M-2977, May 14, 1958. On the general problem of the corporate status of Indian tribes see Chapter 11, sec. 3.

<sup>1</sup> Op. Sol. I.D. M-2976, August 9, 1959.

<sup>2</sup> Further, as the quoted statement indicates that a Pueblo has local capacity to defend an action, the statement is amply supported by the language of the Supreme Court in the *Lease* and *Cochran* cases, above quoted, and by certain decisions of the Territorial Court. (See fn. 127, supra.) The inference, however, that a Pueblo may be sued without its consent would find no support in these opinions of the Supreme Court and would run counter to the rule that a sovereign body is immune from suits to which it has not consented. The application of this rule in the civilised tribe cases has been upheld. *Turner v. United States*, 249 U.S. 354 (1918); *Idaho v. Murphy*, 185 F.2d 964 (C.C.A. 9, 1950); *Two by v. Cherokee Tribe of Indians*, 60 Fed. 172 (C.C.A. 8, 1895), and see *United States v. United States Fidelity Co.*, 106 F.2d 809 (C.C.A. 10, 1940). That a similar holding would be reached in the case of the New Mexican Pueblos is indicated by *United States v. Randall*, 251 U.S. 35, 48 (1919).

10 S. Ct. 19, 34 L. Ed. 231. *Idaho v. United States*, 249 U.S. 354, 185 F.2d 964, 10 S. Ct. 19, 34 L. Ed. 231, 216 N.W. 212, 215. We conclude that such Indian Pueblos were entitled to the benefits of the New Mexico Statute of limitation and that the United States, as their landlord, may plead such a statute in their behalf. (P. 578.)

While the Pueblos of New Mexico fall within certain definitions of "municipal corporations,"<sup>3</sup> it is not intended to suggest that they are municipal corporations of the State of New Mexico within the meaning of state statutes on the rights and powers of such corporations. Such an inference would run counter to the basic doctrines of tribal self-government and congressional sovereignty in Indian affairs. The term "public corporation" is therefore perhaps more appropriate as a characterization of the legal status of the Pueblos. The content of this term of characterization, however, must depend largely upon judicial decisions which have not yet been rendered.

<sup>3</sup> A *municipal corporation* in its strict and proper sense is the body politic and corporate constituted by the incorporation of the inhabitants of a city or town for the purposes of local government thereof. *4 C. J. 101*. We now therefore define a *municipal corporation* in its historical and legal sense to be the incorporation by the authority of the government of the inhabitants of a particular place, on all right and authorizing them in their corporate capacity to exercise subordinate specified powers of legislation and regulation with respect to their local and internal concerns. This power of local government is the distinctive purpose and the distinguishing feature of a municipal corporation proper. 1 *Dillon on Municipal Corporations* (9th ed. 1911) sec. 72-73. The essential feature of local self-government has been discussed under its broader name. The fact that the Pueblo is a membership corporation rather than a stock corporation is too obvious to call for discussion. The relation of the corporation to a particular area of land and the inhabitants thereof is made clear in the territorial statute establishing the corporate status of the Pueblos which has been quoted above.

# CHAPTER 21

## ALASKAN NATIVES

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

Section 1 Classification of Alaskan natives.....	401
Section 2 Classification of natives under Russian rule.....	402
Section 3 Treaty of cession.....	402
Section 4 Sources of federal power.....	403
Section 5 Citizenship.....	403
Section 6 Status of natives.....	403

Section 7 Education.....	406
Section 8 Property rights.....	407
A Fishing and hunting rights.....	407
B Reservoir ownership.....	409
C Lands.....	411
Section 9 Tribes and associations.....	414

### SECTION 1 CLASSIFICATION OF ALASKAN NATIVES

The term "Natives of Alaska" has been defined to include members of the aboriginal races inhabiting Alaska at the time of its annexation to the United States, and their descendants of the whole or mixed blood.<sup>1</sup> Important native groups comprise the Eskimos, which are distinct from, although related to, the American Indian, the kindred Aleuts, and the Indians. Among the

Indian groups<sup>2</sup> are the Athapascans, Tlingits,<sup>3</sup> Hupas, and Tsimshians, which include the Metlakathlans.<sup>4</sup> According to many reputable anthropologists, all these strains migrated to the New World by way of Bering Strait.<sup>5</sup>

The Eskimos (including the Aleuts)<sup>6</sup> constitute almost two thirds of the natives.<sup>7</sup> They inhabit the shores of the Arctic

<sup>1</sup>The following are some of the statutory provisions defining this term. The Act of June 25, 19, 9 Stat. 1169, providing the Alaska game law defines "Indian" to include "Natives of our soil or more Indian blood" and "Eskimo" to include "Natives of our soil or more Eskimo blood."

<sup>2</sup>Sec. 2 of the Act of April 10, 1934, 48 Stat. 994, 596, which grants special fishing privileges to native Indians, defines "native Indians" to mean "members of the aboriginal races inhabiting Alaska when it was moved to the United States and their descendants of the whole or half blood." The term "Indian" is defined similarly in section 142 of the Act of March 3, 1909, 35 Stat. 1273, 1274.

<sup>3</sup>Sec. 17 of the Reindeer Act of September 1, 1907, 35 Stat. 900, 902, defines the term "natives of Alaska" as meaning—

(the native Indians, Eskimos, and Aleuts of whole or part blood inhabiting Alaska at the time of the Treaty of Cession of Alaska to the United States, and their descendants of whole or part blood together with the Indians and Eskimos who since the year 1867 and prior to the year of 1867 have migrated into Alaska from the Dominion of Canada, and their descendants of the whole or part blood.

<sup>4</sup>Sec. 10 of the Act of June 18, 1894, 28 Stat. 984, 986, provides "For the purposes of this Act, Eskimos and other aboriginal peoples of Alaska shall be considered Indians."

<sup>5</sup>C. 80, sec. 102, title 142 of the United States Code of Laws, Act of February 6, 1909, 35 Stat. 600, 601, which makes the sale of liquor to Indians a crime, provides

"That the term 'Indians' \* \* \* shall be construed to include the aboriginal Indians and Eskimos who have migrated to the United States, and their descendants of the whole or half blood, who have not become citizens of the United States."

<sup>6</sup>The Indians of Alaska and Eskimos (mainly half within the category of Natives of Alaska). *For Alaska* 2 Alaska 200 (1901), 49 L. D. 892 (1921), 92 L. D. 997 (1923), 91 L. D. 891 (1922).

<sup>7</sup>Dr. Alfr. Hrdlicka, Director of Physical Anthropology Smithsonian Institution, in the *Comparative Man from Asia in the Light of Recent Discoveries*, Annual Report Smithsonian Institution for 1908, U. S. Doc. No. 384, pt. 1, 74th Cong., 2d sess. (1908), p. 469, expresses the opinion that the Eskimo, though a lower corner to Alaska, is a blood relation of the Indian.

The Eskimo appears to be a later offshoot from the same old stock that gave us the Indian. He came later and in two main types, one native to the other, rather than from the Indian. The relation of the Indian and the Eskimo may best perhaps be represented by a hand with outstretched fingers. The diverging fingers at the different tips of the Indian, the thumb, which should be double represented, the Eskimo. The thumb as a separate part and outstretched hand, which is the old or paleo Asiatic yellow-brown skin, a strain that gave us the ancestry of all the aboriginal Americans.

<sup>8</sup>"Later studies by ethnologists have resulted in discovering all the natives except the Eskimos as remote offshoots of the North American Indian stock." *Encyclopedia Britannica* (11th ed. 1889), p. 502.

<sup>9</sup>The 1910 census reports native Indians and Eskimos under six lineal groups—namely, Eskimo, Aleut, Indian, Tsimshian, Tlingit, and Tsimshian. All other Indians come under United States or Canadian stocks.

<sup>10</sup>See Tenen A study of the Things of Alaska (1914).

<sup>11</sup>See Summary of the Conditions of Indians in the United States, pt. 35 (Metlakathla Indians) 74th Cong., 2d sess. Hearings Sen. Subcommittee on Ind. Affairs (1908). For an account of the conversion and civilization of these people through the indefatigable efforts of the missionary William Halliday, see *Witnesses: The Apostle of Alaska* (1909) and *Wellcome, The Story of Metlakathla* (2d ed. 1908). Also see *The Metlakathla*, vol. 1, Nos. 1-4 (1888-91), a magazine published at Metlakathla. The more recent history of the people is discussed in *Alaska Pacific Fisheries*, United States 248 U. S. 78 (1918) aff'd 240 Fed. 274 (C. C. 9, 1917) and *Treaty of Alaska*, *Journal of the Alaska Fur Co.* 259 Fed. 871 (C. C. 9, 1923) cat. den. 203 U. S. 708 (1923).

<sup>12</sup>The chief deduction of American ethnologists is in the substance of which all nations, without exception, in that the continent was populated exclusively from northwestern Asia. The deduction is based on the facts that man could not have originated in the New World and hence must have come from the old world, and that the American "aborigines" are throughout of one fundamental type, the ancient Asiatic type, to which exist to this day the most primitive of the eastern and northern Asia, and that the only race which must have been in such a cultural state as to have lived here in the time of the first coming to America was that between northwestern Asia and Alaska.

Hrdlicka, op. cit., Annual Report Smithsonian Inst. for 1915, H. Doc. No. 224, 74th Cong., 2d sess. (1916), p. 469. See also Weyl, *The American Indian* (1922), pp. 86-100. Tenen, *Anthropology—Historical Cultural Views from Asia to America*, 10 Ann. Washington Academy of Sciences No. 1 (1940), pp. 1-15.

<sup>13</sup>Senator Charles Sumner alluded to this theory on April 9, 1867, in a speech before the Senate at the United States in the institution of the treaty between the United States and Russia in the purchase of Alaska. *At the Works of Charles Sumner* (1877), p. 264. This speech (pp. 186-407) is an excellent summary of the contemporary knowledge of Alaska.

<sup>14</sup>Fiftieth Census of the United States (Including Territories and Possessions) (1914), pp. 19, 20. (In 1914, 1920 there were 19,028 Eskimos (including the Aleuts) and 10,999 natives of other immigrant stock. The total population was 92,978 of which the natives total slightly over half, or 29,988. For a discussion of the composition and distribution of the population, see *Alaska, Its Resources and Development*, U. S. Doc. No. 495, 74th Cong., 2d sess. (1908), pp. 36-38, 195. The more liability of much of the contemporary writings on Alaska at the time of its purchase is evidenced by the fact that its population was then variously estimated at from 54,000 to 400,000. Probably the former figure was more accurate, for it was adopted by the "Almanac de Gotha" for 1867 and the "Les Peoples de la Russie," the best authority at that time. It was estimated that there were not more than 2,500

Ocean, the islands of Bering Sea and the Aleutian chain, and one third of them live north of the Arctic circle.<sup>1</sup>

The Alutians inhabit the Aleutian Islands and the adjacent mainland while the Athapascan Indians, perhaps the most primitive, occupy the interior, reaching the coast only at Cook's Inlet. The coast Indians, which include the Tlingits,<sup>2</sup> a race of manly nomads, the isolated Hlids, and the Tsimshians have their

Russian and Greek and 9,000 aborigines under the direct government of the Russian American Co. and between 10,000 and 50,000 other aborigines who had only a temporary or casual contact with the company for purposes of trade. *At the Works of Charles Sumner* (1876) pp. 263-267.

See 246 of Art. I (Charter) of the Russian American Company defines Creoles as follows:

Children born of a European or Siberian father and a native American mother, or of a native American father and a European or Siberian mother, shall be held as creoles, equally with the children of those tribes of whom a special article is provided. See *For the Journal*, 2 Alaska 200-214 (1904).

1. *At the Works of Charles Sumner* (1876) p. 577 estimates that the population of Alaska (except 1847) was 20,000, of whom 25,411 were natives and 1,321 creoles of both bloods. At present the mixed blood population is increasing. *At the Works of Charles Sumner* (1917) p. 269.

2. *Speeches, The Constitutional Status and Government of Alaska* (1927) p. 99. *Journal of the Department of the Interior, Alaska, & Russia in the Matter of Civilization* V *Geographical Review* (1915) pp. 80-101.

3. *Ground*, the Division of the Northern Athapascan Indians, *University Publications in Anthropology*, No. 7 (1906), *Ethnography of the Frontier*, Vol. 16 (1917).

4. *Speech and Child*, *The Aborigines of Southwestern Alaska* (1886).

## SECTION 2 CLASSIFICATION OF NATIVES UNDER RUSSIAN RULE

In determining the status of the natives with respect to civilization and citizenship, the courts have given considerable weight to their ethnology, the status of their civilization and their relationship to the antecedent Russian Government.<sup>1</sup> During the 67 years prior to acquisition by the United States of Alaska,<sup>2</sup> the Russian American Company, exercised practically absolute dominion over this country.<sup>3</sup> The Imperial Law of Russia recognized the settled natives, including the Alutians, Kodiaks, Eskimos, and Tlingits, who embraced the Christian faith, as Russian citizens, on the same footing as white subjects.

\* 1 the independent tribes of pagan faith who acknowledged no restraint from the Russians, and prac

2 *In re Afnook*, 2 Alaska 200 (1904), *United States v. Berrien*, 2 Alaska 412 (1906).

3 Before its cession this territory was called Russian America.

4 *Unpublished* in 1799 under a charter from the Russian Emperor. See *The Works of Charles Sumner* (1875), p. 247. The company failed to renew its charter in 1808. *Clark, History of Alaska* (1910) pp. 50-59. See *Andrews, Alaska* Under the Russians, VII *Washington Historical Quarterly* (1916), pp. 275-297.

homes along the coast line of Cook's Inlet, the Gulf of Alaska, and the shores of Southeast Alaska.<sup>4</sup>

The natives reside in small, widely separated villages,<sup>5</sup> communities, or fishing camps, scattered along the 25,000 miles of coast and on the great rivers, principally along the southern and far northwest coast. For the most part they do not fall into well defined tribal groups occupying a fixed geographic area.<sup>6</sup> Most of them are engaged in hunting and fishing, some times supplementing these occupations by agriculture. The raising of furs provides subsistence for some and is expected to become more important in the future economy.<sup>7</sup> An increasing number of natives are finding wage employment.<sup>8</sup>

5 *Anderson and Ellis, Alaska Natives* (1915) p. 6, *et seq.* *King's Indian Villages of Southeast Alaska*, Annual Report Smithsonian Inst. for 1917 II Doc No. 65 pt. I 70th (cons. 1st sess. 1st sess. 1917) pp. 167-494 also see *Clark, History of Alaska* (1910) pp. 22-31.

6 A discussion of the time village is contained in *Anderson and Ellis, op. cit.* pp. 1-17. Also see *Anderson, My Talk with the Eskimo* (1914).

7 *Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs in Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior* (1917), pp. 200-201.

8 *See also* *Section 145, Alaska - Its Resources and Development, op. cit.* p. 41.

9 *Alaska - Its Resources and Development, op. cit.* p. 41. For a table of the number of natives lawfully employed in all industries see, *Director Census of the United States Outlying Territories and Possessions* (1932) p. 27. Also see before the subcommittee of the House Committee on Appropriations, on the Interior Department Appropriations Bill for 1911, pt. I pp. 573-578.

used their ancient customs—were classed as uncivilized native tribes by the Russian laws.<sup>9</sup>

The interest of the Russian Government in trade with the natives<sup>10</sup> is indicated by the treaty made with the United States on April 27, 1824,<sup>11</sup> which deals incidentally with the natives of Alaska. Article I permitted the citizens, or both contracting powers to navigate and fish in the Pacific Ocean and Article IV permitted trading with the natives. Article V excepted from this commerce the sale of "liquors, liquors, fire arms, other arms, powder, and munitions of war of every kind."<sup>12</sup> See Civil Code 111, *Articles* implemented this treaty by the Act of May 19, 1828,<sup>13</sup> which provided for the punishment of violators of Article V.

10 *In re Afnook*, 2 Alaska 200 218 (1904).

11 See *Sumner, op. cit.* pp. 203-204.

12 *Stat. Int.* 102. Ratified January 11 1825, proclaimed January 12, 1825.

13 *Act IV* limited to 10 years the navigation of ships in the interior seas for the purpose of fishing and trading with the natives.

14 *C. 77* 4 *Stat.* 278.

## SECTION 3 TREATY OF CESSION

Alaska was ceded to the United States by Russia for \$7,200,000 in gold by the treaty concluded March 30, 1867.<sup>1</sup> Article III, which dealt with the inhabitants makes no distinction based on color or racial origin. It provides:

The Inhabitants of the ceded territory, according to their choice, retaining their natural allegiance may remain in Russia within three years, but if they should prefer to remain in the ceded territory, they, with the exception of uncivilized native tribes, shall be admitted to the

enjoyment of all the rights, advantages and immunities of citizens of the United States, and shall be maintained and protected in the free enjoyment of their liberty, property, and religion. The uncivilized tribes will be subject to such laws and regulations as the United States may, from time to time, adopt in regard to aboriginal tribes of that country.

The Treaty thus divided the Alaskan inhabitants into the following three classes:

- (1) Those who returned to Russia within 3 years, and thereby resumed their natural allegiance,
- (2) Those who remained in the territory, except "uncivilized native tribes", and
- (3) "Uncivilized native tribes"

\* 16 Stat. 638. Ratified by the United States May 28, 1867, exchanged June 20, 1867, proclaimed by the United States June 20, 1867. For further details concerning the history of the purchase, see the bibliography cited, pp. 116, 117, in *Sumner, op. cit.* Also see *Clark, op. cit.*, pp. 80-80.

## SECTION 4 SOURCES OF FEDERAL POWER

The primary sources of federal power over the Alaska natives are three. First, since Alaska is a recognized territory,<sup>1</sup> it is subject to the paramount and plenary authority of Congress to enact laws for the government of the territory and its inhabitants. Section 3 of the Organic Act of August 24, 1912,<sup>2</sup> provides:

"That the Constitution of the United States, and all the laws thereof which are not locally inapplicable, shall have the same force and effect within the said Territory as elsewhere in the United States."

Second, the vacant, unoccupied and unappropriated land at the date of the cession has been a part of the public domain of the United States.<sup>3</sup> Hence 99 percent of Alaska consists of public lands,<sup>4</sup> the federal control over its property is civil source of power.

Third, it is said that Congress may enact its legislation it deems proper for the benefit and protection of the natives of Alaska because they are wards of the United States<sup>5</sup> in the sense that they are subject to the plenary power of Congress over Indian affairs.

It has been said that from the viewpoint of congressional power the question of the Indian or non Indian origin of the natives is unimportant.<sup>6</sup> In view of the broad powers over territories and wards, this statement is accurate. However, where the congressional power is derived from a source wholly applicable to Indians such as the power to regulate commerce with Indian tribes,<sup>7</sup> the distinction between Indians and non Indians must be borne in mind.

This exercise of federal power over territories, public property, and wards has been judicially sustained in two cases. The first, the *Alaska Pacific Fisheries* case,<sup>8</sup> involved the right of the President to issue a proclamation without express statutory authority withdrawing from the public domain the waters adjacent to the Annette Islands and reserving the waters within 4,000 feet from the shore at mean low tide. The purpose of this reservation was to develop an Alaska fishing industry.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Op. Sol., 1 D M 29147 May 9 1897. See Chapter 5 sec 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Stromberg Equipping v United States*, 183 U S 345, 352 (1906).

<sup>3</sup> See Chapter 5 sec 5.

<sup>4</sup> See 387 57 Stat 512.

<sup>5</sup> 54 U S 49 46 (1923).

<sup>6</sup> *United States v. Brimley*, 2 Alaska 442 448 (1905).

<sup>7</sup> *Alaska, Its Resources and Development*, op cit, p 148.

<sup>8</sup> *Alaska Pacific Fisheries v United States*, 248 U S 78 (1918) aff'd 240 Fed 274 (C C A 9, 1917), *Territory of Alaska v Annette Island Packing Co*, 289 Fed 671 (C C A 9, 1923), *United States v. Burroughs*, 2 Alaska 442 (1905), *United States v. O'Connell*, 4 Alaska 125 (1914), *Noble v United States*, 191 Fed 141, 142 (C C A 9, 1911), 49 L D 102 (1924), 70 L D 115 (1924), 81 L D 195 (1928), 14 L D 607 (1929), 61 L D 793 (1924), 61 L D 15 (1914) (op Sol., 1 D M 29347 May 6 1917. See also cases cited herein).

<sup>9</sup> 54 U S 39 (1912), 51 U S 793, 798 (1923).

<sup>10</sup> U S Const., Art I sec 8, cl 9. See Chapter 5 sec 3.

<sup>11</sup> See in example of the exercise of this power see Chapter 16.

<sup>12</sup> 240 Fed 274 (C C A 9, 1917) aff'd 248 U S 78 (1918).

<sup>13</sup> The Proclamation of April 28 1918 89 Stat 1777 reserving the Annette Island Fisheries Reserve provided:

"... the waters within three thousand feet from the shores of the Annette Islands, including the Annette Island, Walrus Island, Lower Island, Spiral Island, Island Island, and adjacent rocks and reefs... and the beds of said islands, rocks and reefs are hereby reserved for the benefit of the Metlakatla Indians and such other Alaskan natives as have joined them or may join them."

The Supreme Court of the United States sustained the defendant corporation from maintaining a fish trap in the navigable waters within the territorial limit, holding that the creation of the reservation was a valid exercise of federal power, and that the reservation included the adjacent submerged land and deep waters supplying fisheries essential to the welfare of the Indians who must otherwise become a starving throng.

The decision was based on the judicial conclusion that Congress, intended to treat the Indians in their effort to become self-sufficient, civilized and that Congress undoubtedly had the power to reserve waters which were the property of the United States, since it protected the food supply of the Indians in this manner, this decision, the Court stated that it was influenced by the following considerations:

"... the circumstances in which the reservation was created, the power of Congress in the premises, the location and that title of the islands the situation and needs of the Indians and the object to be attained." (P 87.)

The Circuit Court of Appeals in *Idaho* case<sup>14</sup> involving the attempt of the Territory of Alaska to encroach upon the federal control of the Indians by leaving in occupation title on the output of a private salmon cannery on the Annette Island Reservation, upon opening under license executed by the Secretary of the Interior, held that the Territory of Alaska was not authorized to levy such a tax, on the ground that the license was an instrumentality of the Government to assist the Metlakatla Indians to become self-sufficient. The power of the Secretary of the Interior to execute the license was thus sustained.<sup>15</sup>

The exercise of federal power over other natives of Alaska has been similarly upheld. Thus by virtue of his power to supervise the public business relating to Indians, the Secretary of the Interior may supervise a reservation created to enable the Department through the Bureau of Education to maintain a school, and may enter into a lease with a third party for the operation of a salmon cannery.<sup>16</sup>

Furthermore, even prior to the extension of the Wheeler-Hoover Act<sup>17</sup> to Alaska, it was recognized that Congress possessed the power to create Indian reservations in Alaska.<sup>18</sup>

When in residence on these islands to be used by them under the special fisheries laws and regulations of the United States, as administered by the Secretary of Commerce.

The Court also approved the portion of the regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior in 1915, reserving the Indians as the only persons to whom permits may be issued for crooking salmon traps at these islands. See 25 C D R 14 15 (1915).

*Territory of Alaska v Annette Island Packing Co*, 289 Fed 671 (C C A 9, 1923) cert den 203 U S 708 (1923).

<sup>14</sup> Accord 49 L D 592 (1924). See Op Sol., 1 D M 28078 April 19 1917 which discusses the *Alaska Fisheries Co v Alaska Pacific Fisheries*, 1 Alaska 188 192 (1901), 103 *Alaska v. Burroughs*, 119 Fed 93 (C C A 9, 1902). The court said that "... no other persons than the natives can acquire such exclusive title either in navigating small waters or fishing therein."

<sup>15</sup> *Alaska Pacific Fisheries v United States*, 248 U S 78 (1918) aff'd 240 Fed 274 (C C A 9, 1917), *Territory of Alaska v Annette Island Packing Co*, 289 Fed 671 (C C A 9, 1923), 49 L D 592 (1923) (aff'd in 54 U S 694 (1928)).

<sup>16</sup> See a discussion of the Wheeler-Hoover Act and Alaska see sec 9 infra.

<sup>17</sup> 38 Op A G 797 (1887), 54 U S 508 802 (1922). *Alaska Pacific Fisheries v United States*, 248 U S 78 (1918), aff'd 240 Fed 274 (C C A 9, 1917).

## SECTION 5. CITIZENSHIP

The Treaty of Cession provided for the collective naturalization of the members of the civilized native tribes of Alaska. Congress implicitly consented to this contract which obligated it to incorporate the inhabitants, except uncivilized tribes, as citizens of the United States, by extending certain laws to the

Territory and by passing the Organic Acts of 1894 and 1912.<sup>19</sup> The difficulty of defining civilization made the legal status

<sup>19</sup> Act of May 31, 1894, 28 Stat 24 providing for a partial civil government. Act of August 24, 1912, c 857, 37 Stat 512, providing for a civil government. See Spink, op cit, pp 24-26.

of the natives of Alaska is a matter of much doubt and uncertainty. The Minook case<sup>1</sup> throws some light on the distinction between civilized and uncivilized tribes. In denying the application for citizenship of the son of a Russian father and an Eskimo mother, and the husband of a native woman, Judge Wickersham held that the applicant was not a Russian citizen though he was born in Alaska in 1849 and together with his parents was a member of the Greek Church and a subject of Russia at the time of the decision. The court held that Minook was a citizen of the United States by virtue of the third article of the treaty with Russia either as one of those inhabitants who accepted the benefits of the proffered civilization, or as a member of an uncivilized native tribe who has voluntarily taken up his residence separate from any tribe of Indians and has adopted the habits of civilized life.<sup>2</sup>

In order to discover the intentions of the signatory nations, Judge Wickersham quoted and discussed portions of the charter of the Russian American Co. He also drew upon the science of ethnology to determine whether the tribe was civilized and quoted Prof. W. H. Dall<sup>3</sup> of the Smithsonian Institution as to which natives were civilized. The next text he quoted was again in proof from this opinion and again used the same technique to prove that natives belonging to the Athapascan stock were uncivilized at the time of the decision and hence as wards of the Government, were entitled to an injunction against the trespasses of white men on their property.<sup>4</sup>

The General Allotment Act gave to two additional classes of

<sup>1</sup> *In re Minook*, 2 Alaska 200 (1904).

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* pp. 219, 220.

<sup>3</sup> *See* fn 7 *supra*.

<sup>4</sup> *United States v. Brington*, 2 Alaska 432 (1905).

Alaskan natives the status of citizenship: (1) Allottees; and (2) non-allottees who secured tribal relation ship and adopted the habits of civilization.<sup>5</sup>

The Territorial Act of April 27, 1917,<sup>6</sup> provided a method whereby a non-allottee could secure a certificate of citizenship.<sup>7</sup> This procedure included proof of his growth up in this status as a voter, his total abandonment of tribal customs, and his adoption of the culture of civilization.

This statute became obsolete with the passage of the Citizenship Act<sup>8</sup> which included the Alaskan natives,<sup>9</sup> and was finally repealed in 1929.<sup>10</sup>

In the case of *United States v. Lynch*,<sup>11</sup> the court held that though the members of the Tlingit tribe were made undoubtedly have been classed as uncivilized, under the provisions of Article III of the Treaty of 1784 when they fought with other native Indian tribes of the United States, were collectively slain there by the Citizenship Act. Consequently proof of civilization is no longer a condition precedent to citizenship.

<sup>5</sup> The case of *Angie v. United States*, 391 Fed. 143 (U. S. A. 9 1911) held that see 6 of the Act of February 4 1847 21 Stat. 349-50 known as the General Allotment Act in conferring citizenship on Indians, who could their tribal relation and adopted the habits and customs of civilized life, applied to the Territory of Alaska. *Curtis In re Incorporation of Dennis Worsam*, 11 Alaska 755 (1905).

<sup>6</sup> 24 Laws of Alaska 1917 p. 72, repealed by c. 31, Laws of Alaska, 1919 p. 7.

<sup>7</sup> For the effect of citizenship on Indians of the Alaskan natives see *see* 8C *infra*.

<sup>8</sup> Act of June 2 1924, c. 21, 43 Stat. 283. For a discussion of citizenship see Chapter 8 *see* c. 2.

<sup>9</sup> 19 U. S. 698 (1928).

<sup>10</sup> c. 31 Laws of Alaska 1919 p. 73.

<sup>11</sup> 1 Alaska 608 (1917).

## SECTION 6 STATUS OF NATIVES

The legal position of the individual Alaskan natives has been generally assimilated to that of the Indians in the United States.<sup>12</sup> It is now substantially established that they occupy the same relation to the Federal Government as do the Indians residing in the United States; that they, their property, and their rights are under the protection of the Federal Government, that Congress may enact such legislation as it deems fit for their benefit and protection, and that the laws of the United States with respect to the Indians resident within the boundaries of the United States proper are generally applicable to the Alaskan natives.<sup>13</sup>

For example, it has been administratively held that the general laws enacted by Congress empowering the Secretary of the Interior to prohibit the exhumation of deceased Indians are applicable to Alaskan natives.<sup>14</sup>

<sup>12</sup> 48 U. S. 902 (1923), 53 U. S. 991 (1901).  
Deleete A. T. Hammond of Alaska has said (183) *Come Rec.* pt. 4 p. 170-180 77th Cong. 3d sess. (1918).

<sup>13</sup> "The special appropriations for the education and medical welfare of the natives of Alaska" "can be based only upon the theory that the Government and therefore Congress does owe a special duty to the natives of Alaska" (p. 190).

<sup>14</sup> "The Government" "is bound in honor and good faith to enter suitable measures for their benefit and their own native welfare" (p. 180).

<sup>15</sup> 52 U. S. 207 (1927), 53 U. S. 992 (1922), *Alaska Pacific Fisheries Case* *supra*, *United States v. Brington*, 2 Alaska 432 (1905), *United States v. Oudoux*, 5 Alaska 125 (1914), *Territory of Alaska v. Annette Island Packing Co.*, 288 Fed. 671 (C. C. A. 9, 1922), *cert. den.* 288 U. S. 708 (1922).

<sup>16</sup> *Op. Sol. I. D.* 18 27127 July 28 1932, and *see* 1931, *Compiled Laws of Alaska*, 1933, referring to ward Indians. Also *see* 64 U. S. 16 (1862), in which the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior

the plank of the Alaskan natives on the same footing as other American Indians, was the culmination of a shifting policy which has been well described in an opinion of the Solicitor for the Department of the Interior.<sup>17</sup>

In the beginning, and for a long time after the creation of this Territory Congress took no particular notice of these natives, but soon undertook to hamper their individual movements, confine them to a locality or reservation, or to place them under the immediate control of its officers, as has been the case with the American Indians, and no special provision was made for their support and education until comparatively recently. And in the earlier days it was repeatedly held by the courts and the Attorney General that these natives did not bear the same relation to our Government, in many respects, that was borne in the American Indians. (*U. S. v. Alf. Ben*, 11 U. S. 19 (1910), *United States v. Finkert*, 181 F. 2d 311, 312, *Hugh Walters v. James B. Campbell* (181) *U. S. 121*, *John Brady* *et al.* (191) *U. S. 323*).

With the exception of the act of March 3, 1867 (20 Stat. 1079, 1100), which set apart the Aleutian Islands as a reservation for the use of the Melikshians, a band of British Columbian natives who immigrated onto Alaska as a body, and also except the authorization given to the Secretary of the Interior to make reservations for landing places for the canoes and boats of the natives, Congress has not created or directly authorized the creation of reservations of any other character for them.

<sup>17</sup> Indeed that although the provisions of the Act of June 25 1910, 36 Stat. 865 as amended, which relate to the administration of the restricted property of deceased Indians, are applicable to Alaskan natives, a sub ordinate officer, such as an employee of the Reindeer Service, lacks the power to settle such estates.

<sup>18</sup> 49 U. S. 922 924-925 (1928). This portion of the opinion was quoted with approval in 51 U. S. 79, (1932). Also *see* 64 U. S. 89 (1932). But of 19 U. S. 122, 124-125 (1864).

Likewise, however, Congress began to directly recognize these natives as being, to a very considerable extent at least, under our Government's guardianship and created laws which protected them in the possession of the lands they occupied, made provision for the allotment of lands to them in severalty similar to those made to the American Indians, gave them special hunting, fishing, and other particular privileges, to enable them to support themselves, and supplied them with rations and medical aid to their population. Congress has also supplied funds to these natives medical and hospital treatment and finally made and is still making extensive appropriations to defray the expenses of both their education and their support.

Not only has Congress in this manner treated these natives as being wards of the Government but they have been repeatedly so recognized by the courts. See *Alaska Pacific Fisheries v. United States* (215 U. S. 78), *United States v. Burton et al.* (2 Alaska Reports, 442), *United States v. Anderson et al.* (5 id. 125), and the unpublished decision of the District Court of Alaska, Division No. 1, in the case of *Tribute of Alaska v. United Islands Packing Company et al.* rendered June 15, 1922.

From this it will be seen that these natives are now unquestionably considered and treated as being under the guardianship and protection of the Federal Government, at least to such extent as to bring them within the spirit, if not within the exact letter, of the laws relative to American Indians, and this conclusion is supported by the fact that in creating the territorial government of Alaska, and vesting it with the powers of legislation and control over its internal affairs, including public schools, Congress expressly excluded from that legislation and control the schools maintained for the natives and declared that such schools should continue to remain under the control of the Secretary of the Interior.

An explanation of the reasons for this changing policy will be helpful in understanding the legal position of the Alaska natives. The United States, it first followed the example of Russia. From 1867 to 1884, when the Organic Act of 1884<sup>1</sup> made Alaska a civil and judicial district, this vast land lay in the shadow of a civil government and was little more than a geographical subdivision of the United States.<sup>2</sup> Save for the occasional activity of the military authorities, the natives shifted for themselves. This neglect is indicated by the failure of the United States to provide a regular agent for them, as in the case of Indians generally. The responsible duties of such an official were delegated to a military commandant.<sup>3</sup>

One of the few exceptions to the failure to enact legislation was the extension of prohibitory liquor laws to Alaska.<sup>4</sup> However, these laws were flagrantly violated and little attempt to enforce them was made during the first two decades of American rule.<sup>5</sup>

Although the purchase of Alaska on June 20, 1867, occurred while the United States still was making treaties with Indian tribes,<sup>6</sup> no attempt was made to enter into treaties with the

natives. This was primarily because the reasons which were responsible for treaty making by the Federal Government with the American Indians<sup>7</sup> were not present in Alaska, where there was plenty of land and little danger of serious hostilities. Alaska was not considered Indian country<sup>8</sup> until 1873 when sections 20 and 21 of the Trade and Intercourse Act,<sup>9</sup> prohibiting liquor traffic in Indian country and with the Indians, were extended to include this territory. There was therefore no necessity for treaties and treaties extinguishing Indian title. The legal theory was adopted of considering these Indians subjects and not dependent or domestic nations having titles to be extinguished. Reservations were not established with the exception of the Aleutic Island Reservation and those for educational purposes.<sup>10</sup>

There was an absence of federal laws in most fields,<sup>11</sup> and even the few which were considered applicable to Alaska were not enforced. Questions concerning the title of tribal lands and customs were rarely raised. In *the Ship Ouch* was one of the few cases in which this issue was directly involved. In granting a writ of habeas corpus to the petitioner, a slave of a Thlingit Indian, the court said:

What, then, is the legal status of Alaska Indians? Many of them have connected themselves with the mission churches, married a settler, and taken the education of their youth, and have adopted civilized habits of life. Their condition has been gradually changing, until the attributes of their original sovereignty have been lost, and they are becoming more and more dependent upon and subject to the laws of the United States, and yet they are not citizens within the full meaning of that term. (428-429.)

The United States, then, at no time recognized any tribal independence in relations among these Indians, but was treated with them in any capacity, but from every act of Congress in relation to the people of this territory it is clearly inferable that they have been and now are regarded as dependent subjects, amenable to the penal laws of the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction of its courts. Upon a careful examination of the habits of these natives, of their modes of living, and their traditions, I am inclined to the opinion that their system is essentially patriarchal, and not tribal, as we understand that term in its application to other Indians. They are practically in a state of pupillage, and sustain a relation to the United States similar to that of a ward to a guardian, and have no such independence or supremacy as will permit them to sustain and enforce a system of forced servitude at variance with the fundamental laws of the United States. (P. 329.)

Nevertheless, tribal custom and law is recognized in some cases.<sup>12</sup> In the absence of federal legislation, a marriage between the natives belonging to the uncivilized tribes, such as the Athapascans, when entered into according to long established

<sup>1</sup> Act of May 17, 1884, 23 Stat. 24. For a discussion of the history and interpretation of this act, see Nichols, *Alaska* (1924), pp. 71-118.

<sup>2</sup> Clark, *op. cit.* pp. 61-97.

<sup>3</sup> That the (the Alaska Indians) are (so little known, and their relations to other inhabitants of that country and to our own government so little understood, as to make it practically impossible to consider them as a people without Law (1891) 68 *American Monthly* 569, 561. See also Hootenthal, *The Alaska Melodrama* (1906), pp. 284, *et seq.*

<sup>4</sup> The Attorney General upheld the validity of such legislation by the President. 14 Op. A. G. 878 (1876). See also *2 Reports*, 5 Fed. Cas. No. 5492 (D. C. Ore. 1877), involving a false imprisonment by a military officer.

<sup>5</sup> For a discussion of these laws see Chapter 17, *supra*.

<sup>6</sup> Wickham, *Old Yukon* (1908), p. 128.

<sup>7</sup> Act of March 3, 1871, 16 Stat. 544, 550, declared it to be the policy of the United States not to treat further with the Indian as tribes. See Chapter 8, *supra*.

<sup>8</sup> See Chapter 8, *supra*.

<sup>9</sup> See Chapter 1, *supra*, and Chapter 17, *supra*.

<sup>10</sup> Act of June 10, 1884, 48 Stat. 728, 732-733, Act of March 3, 1879, 21 Stat. 519, 540.

<sup>11</sup> Because of the restriction of native activities which accompanied the reservation policy among the Indians of the continental United States, the natives of Alaska, with the exception of the transplanted colony of Aleuts, have not actively opposed the development of reservations in Alaska. This opposition was part of an instinctive resistance to racial discrimination.

<sup>12</sup> *Alaska, Its Resources and Development*, *op. cit.*, p. 10.

<sup>13</sup> A license to trade in Alaska is not required. See *Waters v. Campbell*, 28 Fed. Cas. No. 12704 (C. C. Ore. 1876), and see Chapter 16, *supra*.

<sup>14</sup> 61 Fed. 397 (D. C. Alaska 1880), for a discussion of the power of the Federal Government over tribes see *Kay v. United States*, 27 Fed. 351 (C. C. Ore. 1888), modified *United States v. Kay*, 20 Fed. Cas. No. 15629A (D. C. Alaska 1880), *United States v. Seisold*, 37 Fed. Cas. No. 16282 (D. C. Ore. 1872), *United States v. Lynch*, 2 Alaska 508 (1927).

<sup>15</sup> 64 U. S. 99 (1852).





The territorial legislature was first granted power over schools by the Act of March 8, 1917,<sup>101</sup> which empowered it "to establish and maintain schools for white and colored children and children of mixed blood who lead a civilized life."

Pursuant to this act a writ of mandamus was granted<sup>102</sup> compelling the city of Kotzebue, Alaska, to admit to its schools attended by the whites a resident child of mixed blood who led a civilized life, although she could attend in Indian school in the city, and thence make room for the attendance of non-resident white children. The court said:

"The legislative power of the territory of Alaska with regard to schools derived from this section makes no provision as to the segregation of races, nor does it refer to the race or color of the children to be provided for in the municipal schools, and such distinction necessarily be maintained in the light of the section quoted limiting the authority of the Legislature to provide schools for white and colored children and children of mixed blood. (P. 147.)"

Only mission schools existed between 1867 the date of the purchase of Alaska and 1884.<sup>103</sup> Thereafter, until 1900, annual federal appropriations, totaling from a few thousand dollars to \$50,000 were made for the education of native and white children.<sup>104</sup> For the next years education was supported by a license tax. Schools in incorporated towns were under local control, while the Secretary of the Interior continued to direct rural schools. Beginning with 1903, annual appropriations in increasing amounts were made enabling the Secretary of the Interior, in his discretion, to provide for the education and support of the natives of Alaska.<sup>105</sup> The territorial schools established in 1905 were supported by territorial and federal funds

and fishing expeditions of the native bands. Apparently the court did not recognize that hunting and fishing were occupations of social distinction among the whites and a source of livelihood for some whites and many natives.

<sup>101</sup> C 167 39 Stat 1181

<sup>102</sup> The schools were under the general supervision of the Territorial Board of Education authorized by the Legislature of Alaska, Special Act, p. 68

<sup>103</sup> Jones v. Mills, 8 Alaska 140 (1929)

<sup>104</sup> Beatts, The Federal Government and the Education of Indians and Eskimos, Journal of Negro Education vol. 7, No. 4 (July 1948), p. 271  
<sup>105</sup> The first statute, the Act of July 4, 1884, 23 Stat. 78, 81, appropriated \$10,000. Some appropriation acts, during this period, authorized the Secretary of the Interior to use a specified sum from the general education appropriation "for the education of Indians in Alaska," e. g., Act of March 2, 1886, 28 Stat. 876, 904.

<sup>106</sup> Act of March 8, 1905, 43 Stat. 1159, 1188. See also Act of June 30, 1906, 34 Stat. 897, 728; Act of May 24, 1922, c. 199, 42 Stat. 952, 953. From 1884 to 1934 the United States has spent almost nine million dollars for native education and welfare. Anderson and Bells, op. cit. p. 227.

and served white children and "children of mixed blood who lead a civilized life."

The Indian Service maintains schools in approximately 100 villages.<sup>107</sup> During the fiscal year 1933-1934, 4,298 native children were enrolled in the federal schools, 1,874 in the territorial schools, and approximately 1,000 in mission schools.<sup>108</sup>

By the Act of May 14, 1930,<sup>109</sup> the Secretary of the Interior was authorized to contract with school boards which maintained schools in certain cities and towns to educate their children of non-enfranchising natives, including those of mixed native and white blood, to lease school buildings owned by the United States Government to such boards, and to pay such boards for services rendered an amount not in excess of the cost of operating a school for natives under present appropriations in such town. Chapter 55, Laws of Alaska, 1935, authorized the Territorial Board of Administration of the Territory of Alaska to enter into a contract or contracts with the Secretary of the Interior for educational and welfare work among the Alaskan natives.<sup>110</sup>

The Act of May 31, 1938,<sup>111</sup> authorized the Secretary of the Interior to withdraw and permanently reserve small tracts of land not exceeding 640 acres each of the public domain in Alaska for schools, hospitals, and other necessary purposes in administering the affairs of the natives.<sup>112</sup>

Congress has recognized that in many places the Alaska school service is the only federal agency in daily contact with the natives. The Act of March 4, 1909,<sup>113</sup> authorized the Attorney General to appoint in special police offices employees of the educational service designated by the Secretary of the Interior. These officers were endowed with the ordinary authority of a policeman to arrest natives charged with the violation of any provision of the Criminal Code of Alaska or white men charged with the violation of any of its provisions to the detriment of any native of the Territory.<sup>114</sup>

<sup>107</sup> Act of January 27, 1905, sec. 7, 38 Stat. 216, 219

<sup>108</sup> Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs in Annual Report, Interior Department (1939) p. 28; Annual Report of the Governor of Alaska (1939), pp. 47-49

<sup>109</sup> Information supplied by Alaska Section, Office of Indian Affairs, Department of the Interior. The present appropriation for native education exceeds \$900,000 annually. Hearings before subcommittee of House Committee on Appropriations, 76th Cong., 82nd Cong., on Interior Department Appropriation Bill H.R. 1941, Pt. II, pp. 277 et seq.

<sup>110</sup> C 275 40 Stat. 279, 324  
<sup>111</sup> This statute was passed to secure the benefits of the Johnson O'Malley Act of April 10, 1934, 48 Stat. 590. See Chapter 12, sec. 2A.

<sup>112</sup> C 94 43 Stat. 938

<sup>113</sup> This authority is proving of material assistance in the development of the Alaska program. Report of Commissioner of Indian Affairs in Annual Report, Interior Department (1938), p. 213.  
<sup>114</sup> 35 Stat. 857

<sup>115</sup> Thus described by the District of Alaska

## SECTION 8 PROPERTY RIGHTS

Problems relating to the property rights of Alaskan natives arise out of their activities in hunting and fishing, their use and ownership of land and their ownership of reindeer. Land, except mineral land, is comparatively unimportant in the Alaskan economy.<sup>116</sup> This is due to the fact that the population is sparse (averaging one person per 10 square miles)<sup>117</sup> and that most of

the land is unsuitable for agriculture.<sup>118</sup> Therefore, much greater attention must be paid to other forms of property.

### A FISHING AND HUNTING RIGHTS<sup>119</sup>

Fishing is the most important industry of Alaska<sup>120</sup> and from time immemorial has been the principal source of food for the

<sup>116</sup> Although the gross area of the land and water of Alaska is 696,400 square miles, only about 65,000 square miles are suitable for agriculture, *ibid.*, p. 7, and see Alaska, Its Resources and Development, op. cit., p. 114.

<sup>117</sup> See 8 of the Organic Act of Alaska, Act of August 24, 1912, c. 387, §1 Stat. 612, provides that the authority granted to the legislature of the Territory shall not extend to general laws of the United States or to the "game, fish, and fur-meat laws and laws relating to fur-bearing animals of the United States applicable to Alaska." 7-11

<sup>118</sup> Alaska, Its Resources and Development, op. cit. pp. 17, 41, 85-74. See Pacific Fisherman Yearbook (1938). There were 20,331 persons

<sup>119</sup> Clark, op. cit. pp. 190-190, Anderson and Bells, op. cit. pp. 193-202; Thomas, Economic Rehabilitation of the Indians of Alaska with Special Reference to Fishing, Trapping, and Reindeer, Indian of the United States (Indians at Work, April 1940, Supp.), p. 54; Brooks, The Future of Alaska, Annals of the Association of American Geographers (December 1929), p. 178; Department of the Interior, The Problem of Alaskan Development (April 1940).

<sup>120</sup> Fifteenth Census of the United States, Outlying Territories and Possessions, (1929), p. 7.

atives.<sup>111</sup> "For production is found in that of all commodities in Alaska as to total value."<sup>112</sup> Fur trading was the primary occupation of the Russians who came to Alaska during the latter half of the eighteenth century.<sup>113</sup> Since that time the natives have depended on the fur trade for a substantial part of their livelihood.<sup>114</sup>

The Bureau of Fisheries formally with the approval of the Secretary of Commerce, and now with that of the Secretary of the Interior, drafts fishing regulations specifying the areas in which traps may be operated and their number.<sup>115</sup> A license for a trap must be obtained from the territorial treasurer, and to prevent obstructions to navigation, the Secretary of War must authorize the traps. In 1927 the number of traps in operation reached almost 800, but there has subsequently been a steady decline in this figure.

Tribal and primitive commerce has been taken of the importance of fishing and hunting in the native economy. The Supreme Court of the United States in the *Alaska Pacific Fishery Case*<sup>116</sup> said:

"They (the Alekians) were largely fishermen and hunters, accustomed to live from the returns of those vocations, and looked upon the islands as a valuable location for their colony because the fishery adjacent to the shore would afford a primary means of subsistence and a promising opportunity for industrial and commercial development." (p. 88)

engaged in the fishing industry in Alaska in 1937, salmon which is the backbone of the Territory's economy, accounted for 77 percent of the total weight and 90 percent of the total value of its fish and fish products in 1937. Annual Report of Secretary of Commerce (1938) p. 154. Also see reports on Alaska's fishing and fur seal industry collected in Bulletin of the Bureau of Fisheries, vol. XLVII No. 11 (1914).

<sup>112</sup>The salmon found one of the important food supplies for the natives from prehistoric times. Bulletin of Bureau of Fisheries, vol. XLIV No. 1041 (1915) p. 41. *Alaska Pacific Fisheries v. United States*, 245 U. S. 78 (1918), aff'd 210 U. S. 271 (C. C. A. 9, 1917); *Protector of Alaska v. Aleutian Island Packers Co.*, 289 Fed. 671 (C. C. A. 9, 1921), cert. den. 208 U. S. 708 (1913). Also see *Hickman v. Butler*, 110 Fed. 81 (C. C. A. 9, 1902), *aff'd* Butler v. *Hickman*, 1 Alaska 194 (1901) in which the court said: "The fact that time the Indians and other occupants of the country largely made their living by fishing was no doubt well known to the legislative branch of the government." \* \* \* (p. 99). See also *United States v. Lynch*, 8 Alaska 185 (1929), and *Johnson v. Pacific Coast & S. Co.*, 2 Alaska 224 (1904).

<sup>113</sup>The Commissioner of Indian Affairs in his Annual Report for 1907 p. 282 notes the destruction of the inland primitive economy of the natives, instead of fishing and hunting for their own needs they fish for or work in the canneries. See also Hearings on Alaskan Fisheries, held pursuant to H. R. 162 76th Cong. 1st sess. (1907), pp. 118-122, 444-449, 590. On employment of natives in canneries, see *ibid.* p. 947.

<sup>114</sup>Alaska, Its Resources and Development, *op. cit.*, p. 107. Also see pp. 84-90, 108.

<sup>115</sup>Alaska, Its Resources and Development, *op. cit.*, p. 208; Alaska, Its Resources and Development, *op. cit.*, p. 81.

The marine aquatic mammals had been ruthlessly exploited during the period of Russian occupancy and were facing extinction at the time of the cession. Alaska, Its Resources and Development, *op. cit.*, pp. 54-56.

Until the development of the gold industry, the fur resources were considered the most valuable by the Americans. It is therefore not surprising that prior to 1864 legislation for the new territory was mainly confined to the protection of the seal fisheries and other fur interests of the District. See *Doc No. 142*, 60th Cong., 1st sess. (1905-1906), p. 7.

<sup>116</sup>Annual Report Chief of Bureau of Biological Survey, Department of Agriculture (1907), p. 85.

<sup>117</sup>Act of June 6, 1924, 43 Stat. 464, c. 272, sec. 1, amended by Act of June 18, 1926, 44 Stat. 762. The preparation and enforcement of these regulations are difficult tasks, by the Americans. It is therefore not surprising that prior to 1864 legislation for the new territory was mainly confined to the protection of the seal fisheries and other fur interests of the District. See *Doc No. 142*, 60th Cong., 1st sess. (1905-1906), p. 7.

<sup>118</sup>Alaska Pacific Fisheries v. United States, 245 U. S. 78 (1918), *aff'd* 210 U. S. 271 (C. C. A. 9, 1917); also see *Johnson v. Pacific Coast & S. Co.*, 2 Alaska 224 (1904); Act of May 14, 1898, sec. 10, 30 Stat. 409, 418.

In many conservation statutes the natives are given special privileges. The Act of July 1, 1890,<sup>119</sup> makes no mention of the killing of fur seals upon the Pribilof Islands except during the months of June, July, September, and October in each year, and the killing of such seals at any time by the natives. The privilege of killing young seals necessary for food and clothing and old seals necessary for clothing and boots by the natives for their own use was permitted, subject to regulations of the Secretary of the Treasury.<sup>120</sup>

The validity of section 6 of the Act of July 27, 1868,<sup>121</sup> which prohibits the killing of fur-bearing animals within the limits of the Territory, or in the waters thereof, and empowers the court in its discretion, to condemn any vessel violating this statute was upheld in *The James O. Smith*.<sup>122</sup> The court sustained the law for the taking of a boat owned by an Indian of the Alekian Tribe despite the contention that such taking violated a treaty with this tribe.<sup>123</sup>

The Act of April 6, 1914,<sup>124</sup> prohibits the killing of fur seals by United States citizens in waters of the Pacific Ocean surrounding the Pribilof Islands. It also prohibits the killing of fur seals from May 1 to July 31 in a circumscribed part of the Pacific Ocean, including Bering Sea.<sup>125</sup>

Section 6 permits Indians dwelling on the coasts of the United States to take fur-bearing seals in open, unpatented boats not manned by more than five persons using primitive methods, excluding firearms. Such fishing may not be done pursuant to a contract of employment.<sup>126</sup> The Act of December 29, 1917,<sup>127</sup> prohibiting the killing of fur seals in the North Pacific Ocean contained a similar exemption.

Section 9 of the Act of April 21, 1910,<sup>128</sup> provides that whenever seals are taken, the natives of the Pribilof Islands shall be employed in such killing and shall receive fair compensation. Section 6 permits the natives of those islands to kill such young seals as may be necessary for their own clothing, and the manufacture of boots for their own use, subject to regulations prescribed by the Secretary of Commerce. Section 9 authorizes this official to furnish food, clothing, shelter, and other necessities to the native inhabitants, and to provide for their education.<sup>129</sup>

The Act of August 24, 1912,<sup>130</sup> gave effect to the Convention of July 7, 1911,<sup>131</sup> between the United States, Great Britain, Japan,

<sup>119</sup>30 Stat. 188 Stat. 180.

<sup>120</sup>The Act of July 27, 1868, 15 Stat. 45 authorized the Secretary of the Treasury to study the fur trade in Alaska and the conduct of the people or natives, especially those upon whom the successful prosecution of the fisheries and fur trade is dependent. \* \* \* By Act of April 6, 1914, 38 Stat. 48, the Secretary was authorized to study the condition of the seal fisheries of Alaska. See Alaska, Its Resources and Development, *op. cit.*, p. 90.

<sup>121</sup>15 Stat. 210, 241, 18 U. S. 1198.

<sup>122</sup>United States v. *James O. Smith*, 30 Fed. 105 (D. C. Wash. 1902).

<sup>123</sup>Treaty of January 21, 1866, 12 Stat. 989.

<sup>124</sup>Act 1, 26 Stat. 62.

<sup>125</sup>Id. Act 2.

<sup>126</sup>The Alekian Indians are subject to the prohibition of this act save for the exception of sec. 6. 21 Op. A. G. 460 (1897).

<sup>127</sup>Sec. 6, 20 Stat. 228.

<sup>128</sup>Sec. 188, 36 Stat. 626.

<sup>129</sup>In this and subsequent acts, Congress has made appropriations for this purpose. More than 400 natives of these islands are largely dependent upon the United States for subsistence. Alaska, Its Resources and Development, *op. cit.*, p. 90.

<sup>130</sup>34 Stat. 471, 472.

<sup>131</sup>At Stat. 1914. To terminate the gross economic waste which threatened to destroy all the herds of fur seals, the United States urged a conference of interested nations known as the International Fur Seal Conference which convened from May 11 to July 7, 1911. This meeting adopted the Convention of July 7, 1911, 37 Stat. 1912 between the United States, Great Britain, Japan, and Russia. Ratification advised July 24, 1911. Ratified by the President November 24, 1911. Ratified by Great Britain August 25, 1911. Ratified by Japan November

and Russia in prohibiting citizens and subjects of the United States from killing in seals, but by sections 3 and 11 natives of the islands were permitted to kill annually a sufficient number of seals to provide food and clothing.

As early as 1902 Congress passed conservation legislation containing special exceptions for the natives of Alaska and the white residents. The Act of June 7 1902,<sup>118</sup> is amended by the Act of May 11, 1904,<sup>119</sup> prohibits the wanton destruction of wild game animal or wild birds for the purpose of shipment from Alaska. It also provides that—

Nothing in this Act shall . . . prevent the killing of any game animal or bird for food or clothing at any time in Alaska, or by natives or explorers, when in need of food, but the same animals or birds so killed during closed season shall not be shipped or sold.

Section 1 of the Act of June 14, 1904,<sup>120</sup> as amended by the Act of June 25, 1906,<sup>121</sup> without changing the provisions respecting natives, prohibits all companies, corporations, or associations not authorized to transact business under federal, state, or territorial laws, and aliens without valid permits for catching or killing except with rod, spear or gaff any fish of any kind or species in any of the waters of Alaska under the jurisdiction of the United States. By amendments to section 4 of the act for the protection and regulation of the fisheries of Alaska,<sup>122</sup> killing of any species of salmon except in hand rod, spear, or gaff in any streams of Alaska or near their mouth, is unlawful excepting in the Kuskokwim, Ugashik, Yukon, and Kuskokwim Rivers. The exception of the two last named rivers is applicable only to native Indians and permanent white inhabitants (Alaska, gold salmon under conditions prescribed by the Secretary of Commerce (now in the Secretary of the Interior).<sup>123</sup>

Article II, clause 3 of the treaty between the United States and Great Britain for the protection of migratory birds in the United States and Canada provides:<sup>124</sup>

The close season on other migratory nongame birds shall continue throughout the year, except that Eskimos

and Indians may take it any season ducks, anacks, snails, moos, murres, and puffins and their eggs, for food and then skins for clothing, but the birds and eggs so taken shall not be sold or offered for sale.

Regulations prohibiting the killing of whales, walrus, and sea lions have special provisions regarding natives.<sup>125</sup> Many other rules regarding refuges and hunting of migratory birds grant special privileges to the natives.<sup>126</sup>

The Alaska Game Law<sup>127</sup> regulates the taking of food game during the regular season, but exempts the natives from the necessity of securing hunting, and trapping or fish dealers in cases. Native competitive in mission stores are also exempt.<sup>128</sup> And, subject to regulations of the Secretary of the Interior regarding animals whose extinction is imminent, the law permits them to take game during the closed season when in absolute need of food and other game is not available.<sup>129</sup> Section 5 empowers the Secretary of Agriculture, upon Secretary of the Interior, to safeguard the livelihood of the natives and conserve the fur animals requiring noneed to it types to reside 3 years in the territory instead of one, before becoming eligible for resident trapping license.

### B REINDEER OWNERSHIP

Reindeer constitute one of the most valuable assets of the natives, supplying them with food and clothing and acting as

<sup>118</sup> Alaska, Its Resources and Development, op cit p 67, Department of Commerce Circular No. 286 Ninth Edition June 29 1949 pp 1 and 3, amended Act of February 11 1901, 46 Stat 1111, and Act of June 29, 1919, 32 Stat 1319.

<sup>119</sup> 50 C F R 92.4. See Act of January 13 1923, 48 Stat 710, sec 11 which provides for exemption for natives residing that they purchase any bird or game of Indian or Eskimo blood, from the resident hunting and trapping license. Bureau of Biological Survey, Regulations for the Yukon Island Reservation, Alaska (1939) Regulation 7, provides—

\* \* \* in transacting business for fur and for farming and other uses, permits consideration shall be given to the welfare of native villages and communities of the Yukon Chain. Permits involving a native or native interest shall be issued or renewed only for the benefit of the community or village of which he is a member.

An exemption of native residents from requirement of permit to export certain game see Bureau of Biological Survey Regulations for the Administration of the Yukon Island Reservation, Alaska (1940) Regulation 3 Bureau of Biological Survey, Department of the Interior Wildlife Circular 1 (1936) Regulations Relating to Migratory Birds and Certain Game Mammals, Regulation 7 provides—

In Alaska Eskimos and Indians may take in any manner and at any time and in any places and in any numbers any birds, game, mammals and poultry and their eggs and skins for use of themselves, and their immediate families for food and clothing.

and see 50 C F R 91.3.

Also see Cameron The Bureau of Biological Survey (1927), p 104.

<sup>120</sup> Act of January 18 1927, 48 Stat 710, amended by Act of February 14, 1931, 48 Stat 1111, and Act of June 25, 1906, 52 Stat 3169. For a list of the laws protecting wildlife in Alaska and regulations of the Alaska Game Commission, Tundra Alaska, see circulars issued by this Commission. For history of Alaskan game legislation, see Cameron, The Bureau of Biological Survey (1927), pp 110-124. On work of Alaska Game Commission see Annual Report of Governor of Alaska (1909), pp 28-30.

<sup>121</sup> Act of January 13 1923, c 75, sec 1111, 48 Stat 789 745, amended Act of February 14, 1931, c 183, sec 10 40 Stat 1111, 1118, and Act of March 3, 1938, sec 8, 52 Stat 1166, 1171-1172. The Consolidated Fur, Game, and Shipping Unit, Division of Wildlife and Fisheries, Fish and Game, Department of the Interior, acts as agent for the native to operate stores buying their supplies, and selling, for their benefit, such items as sealion meat and hides, fur, and walrus. The purchasing procedure is similar to that used by it in procuring supplies for government agencies.

<sup>122</sup> A resident citizen or Alaskan native must obtain a registered guide license when acting as guide for a nonresident in any section of the Territory where the regulations of the Alaska Game Law and Game Commission and regulations to supervisors of guides (Consolidated Laws of Alaska, 1923, sec 51D. See Act of January 13, 1923, sec 11D, 48 Stat 789, 744, 745.

6, 1911. Ratified by Russia October 22, 1911. Ratifications exchanged December 12 1911. Proclaimed December 14 1911. A treaty between the United States and Great Britain, concluded February 7 1912, 37 Stat 1584, providing for the preservation and protection of fur seals became effective on December 14 1911, the date of the proclamation of the treaty between the United States, Great Britain, Japan, and Brazil.

<sup>122</sup> 52 Stat 827.

<sup>123</sup> 40 Stat 102. See 10 of the Alaska Game Law Act of January 18, 1927, 48 Stat 710 amended Act of February 11, 1931, 46 Stat 1111 and Act of June 27 1938, 52 Stat 1169. Empowers the Secretary of Agriculture to make regulations for taking game animals except upon consultation with the Alaska Game Commission but except as provided such regulations shall not prohibit

\* \* \* any Indians or Eskimos protection on travelers to take animals or birds during the closed season when he is in absolute need of food and other food, is not available, but the shipment of sale of any mammals or birds or parts thereof so taken shall not be permitted except that the hides of animals so taken may be sold within the Territory.

<sup>124</sup> 34 Stat 269.

<sup>125</sup> 52 Stat 1174.

<sup>126</sup> Act of June 25, 1906, 54 Stat 479 amended by Act of June 6, 1924, c 272, 43 Stat 464, and Act of April 10 1934, 48 Stat 594.

<sup>127</sup> Pursuant to the Reorganization Act of April 3 1909, 35 Stat 561, Reorganization Plan No. 2 transmitted May 9, 1909, 35 Stat 1451, and Public Resolution No. 20, 76th Cong., 1st sess., approved June 7, 1909, the Bureau of Fisheries was transferred from the Department of Commerce to the Department of the Interior, effective July 1 1909. On the same date, the Bureau of Biological Survey was transferred to the Interior Department from the Department of Agriculture. By Plan No. 8 April 3 1940 the two Bureaus were consolidated under the name Fish and Wildlife Service, II Doc No 881, 76th Cong., 8d sess.

<sup>128</sup> 50 Stat 1702, signed August 15, 1936, ratification advised by the Senate August 29 ratified by the President September 1, and by Great Britain October 20, ratifications exchanged December 7 and proclaimed December 8, 1936.

herds of reindeer.<sup>11</sup> The reindeer were first introduced into Alaska from Siberia from 1901 to 1902 by Dr. Sheldon Jackson, the United States General Agent in Alaska.<sup>12</sup> The original purpose of importation then was to augment the dwindling source of native food supply consisting of game and fish which had been seriously depleted by the whites. The total importation by 1902 when shipments ceased was about 1,250 head and by 1918 the original stock expanded into a reindeer population estimated at 600,000 head.<sup>13</sup>

The Federal Government, in recent years, has conducted numerous experiments on the cross breeding of reindeer and native caribou<sup>14</sup> on the control of predatory animals, and on market grazing.<sup>15</sup>

The Federal Government has passed many statutes to protect the natives against food shortage due to predatory depredation of game or sea food and to ensure the free trading of reindeer for their own subsistence and eventually for sale on the market.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>11</sup> Supplement No. 9 to the Public Health Reports, December 12, 1913, p. 4. Alaska, Its Resources and Development, *op cit* p. 123. The importance of the reindeer industry in the social and economic welfare of the native people can scarcely be overestimated. Also see *op cit* p. 11, *Speaker's report*, *op cit*, pp. 29-39.

<sup>12</sup> The District Court considered the importance of the reindeer to the natives in the construction of the Act of April 27, 1904, c. 141, § 191, 902, 913, which provided that each land owner in Alaska shall acquire all milk payments between the ages of 18 and 70 to work on the public lands for 2 days or to be subject to a road tax. In the discretion of the owner the tax could be performed by the men with a team of dogs, horses or a reindeer team of not less than two reindeer and such a cart. In holding that an Eskimo was subject to this duty the court said that the legislative intent to include the Eskimo was "by way of the problem concerning reindeer." *United States v. Siatungook*, 4 Alaska 667 (1918). Also see Annual Report of the Secretary of Interior (1937) p. 311. Annual Report of the Governor of Alaska (1919) p. 71.

<sup>13</sup> The wild reindeer was an important part of the Eskimo food supply before the coming of whites but, \* \* \* the introduction of firearms quickly decimated them, reducing the Eskimos almost to starvation. Anderson and Lillis, *Alaskan Native*, *op cit* p. 195. Also see American Bureau of Biological Survey (1929) pp. 117-118 and the annual reports of the United States Bureau of Education 1931-1933.

<sup>14</sup> Alaska, Its Resources and Development, *op cit* p. 122. The sixteenth Census of the United States Outhing Reindeer and Caribou (1922) p. 60 contains an estimate of 712,000 reindeer as of 1910. No longer as in the past a source of starvation, some of the Eskimos have gained a livelihood by raising reindeer. Alaska, Its Resources and Development, *op cit* p. 41. Although it has been estimated that the Territory was capable of grazing between three and four million animals (Bureau of Biological Survey) The Bureau of Education estimated ten million. Cameron, *op cit*, p. 1171, the predatory animals like wolves and coyotes have, in recent years killed many reindeer especially on the Arctic Coast. This menace increased because the reindeer formerly herded by attendants has been allowed in recent years to roam and are corralled only at certain seasons. By this change in herd management the reindeer waste widely over the ranges, and increase numbers of wolves and coyotes have seriously intruded the industry. The territorial legislature by special bounty appropriations has cooperated with the Reindeer Service, the Forest Service, Office of Indian Affairs, the Alaska Game Commission, and the Bureau of Biological Survey which since 1937, has resumed its work in investigating and reducing depredations of predatory animals. (Report of the Chief of the Bureau of Biological Survey (1937), pp. 59-60. *Ibid* (1938) p. 88.) Despite these efforts toward predator control a recent survey indicated that coyotes and wolves are increasing and that their depredations on reindeer herds are becoming more serious. (*Ibid* (1939) p. 67.)

<sup>15</sup> Report of Chief of the Bureau of Biological Survey (1917) p. 51.

<sup>16</sup> Reindeer in Alaska, Department of Agriculture Bull. No. 1080 (1922) and Progress of Reindeer Grazing, Investigations in Alaska, Bull. No. 1421 (1928). Also see Cameron, *op cit* (1929), pp. 118-119, 173, 194, 196-197.

<sup>17</sup> 51 U. S. D. 155, 157 (1925), see Act of March 4, 1907, 84 Stat. 1295, 1888, Act of May 24, 1922, 42 Stat. 652, 654, Act of January 24, 1928, 42 Stat. 1174, 1205, Act of June 5, 1924, 43 Stat. 890, 427, Act of March 1, 1926, 44 Stat. 43, 411, 1181, Act of January 12, 1927, 44 Stat. 684, 685. Also see *United States v. Siatungook* (Alaska 667 (1918)), 51 U. S. D. (1910), 54 U. S. D. 15 (1912). Outside capital eventually established a commercial reindeer business. Alaska, Its Resources and Development

The Bureau of Indian Affairs<sup>17</sup> gives instructions to the natives and distributes reindeer on terms which enable them eventually to acquire a qualified ownership. The Government, however, retains a reversionary ownership so that an act of the territorial legislature imposing a tax upon each reindeer killed for market would be inapplicable to reindeer killed for market by natives in Alaska.<sup>18</sup>

It has been administered by the fact that Congress had conferred upon the Secretary of the Interior the power to make regulations and impose restrictions upon the disposition of reindeer transferred to the natives by the Government, and these regulations may be enforced by suit to recover the annual illegally transferred on its value.

Despite the stigmas created by salaried and administrative titles, by 1920 almost a quarter of all the reindeer in Alaska was owned by whites.<sup>19</sup>

The most important law relating to reindeer is the Act of September 1, 1937,<sup>20</sup> which is designed to establish for the natives of Alaska a self-sustaining economy by requiring for them the reindeer business, and to develop native activity in all branches of the industry. The Secretary of the Interior is empowered to require by purchase or other lawful means, including condemnation, reindeer, reindeer management equipment, chabotons, cold storage plants, warehouses, and other property, real or personal, the acquisition of which he determines to be necessary to the effective operation of the purposes of this Act<sup>21</sup> (see 2), and to make distribution thereof to the natives or to their organizations<sup>22</sup> under such conditions as he may prescribe (sec. 8). He is also

<sup>18</sup> *op cit*, p. 12. In the Report of the Governor of Alaska for 1928, p. 65 it was estimated that of the 200,000 reindeer in Alaska, two thirds belonged to the natives. In the 1938 Report, p. 46, it was estimated that of the 544,000 reindeer 57 percent were owned by the natives.

<sup>19</sup> The Act of March 4, 1921, 41 Stat. 1867, 1400, authorizes the Commissioner of Education to sell male reindeer and invest the proceeds in the purchase of female reindeer for distribution by him among the natives who had not been supplied with them.

<sup>20</sup> In 1929 the supervision of the reindeer was turned over to the Governor but on July 2, 1937, the reindeer service was transferred from his supervision to the Office of Indian Affairs. Governor's Report for 1938, p. 46. Direct supervision of herds and the business of the native cooperative teams had been handled by a herd of workers and hence full responsibility for the reindeer service was placed under the Education Division of the Indian Office. Annual Report of the Secretary of the Interior 1937 p. 212.

<sup>21</sup> 51 U. S. D. 175, 107-108 (1936).

<sup>22</sup> The following discussion by the Solicitor of the regulations gives an idea of the administrative system.

As has already been intimated the absolute ownership of all reindeer in Alaska was in the Government originally and such activities in them as are held by the natives grow out of contractual relations between the individual natives and the United States, based on regulations issued for that purpose. By these regulations the natives who hold reindeer are divided into two classes one known as "applicants" to whom a stated number of reindeer is issued by the Government from its herds, and the other as "herders." The regulations provided that the reindeer issued to these natives shall revert to the Government in the event of the death of either an applicant, or a herder without heirs, or with heirs who are not competent or do not manifest a desire to continue the business of herding reindeer. In the event of the death of either a herder or his heirs, the reindeer are to be sold and the proceeds of the sale to be divided among the members of his family who are competent to control the herd and fail to provide a competent herder. The regulations and herder is required to enter into a contract with the Government of which the regulations mentioned are made a part, and in which there are other stipulations calling for the revision of the herd to the Government under certain contingencies.

<sup>23</sup> *op cit* 51 U. S. D. 20890 September 10, 1931.

<sup>24</sup> Cameron, *op cit*, pp. 117-118.

<sup>25</sup> 50 Stat. 900. See Annual Report of Secretary of Interior (1937) pp. 49-50.

<sup>26</sup> Alaska, Its Resources and Development, *op cit* p. 123.

A survey by that Department (Department of the Interior) in 1941 showed 79 native reindeer herds with 3,578 reindeer, owning herds varying in size from a few hundred to many thousand head. Less than 20 of these herds were owned by other than natives.

authorized to issue rules and regulations to prevent the transfer or devise of land to non natives" (sec 10) and regulate the granting of land on public lands (sec 14).<sup>11</sup> Criminal sanctions are provided for violations of this statute (sec 10 and 11), and \$2,000,000 is authorized to be appropriated for expenditure by the Secretary of the Interior in carrying out the provisions of this act (sec 16).<sup>12</sup> By the Acts of May 9, 1934,<sup>13</sup> and June 25, 1938,<sup>14</sup> a total of \$30,000 was appropriated for survey and appraisal of the property and land to be acquired for the natives. This study has been made under the supervision of a congressional committee authorized by the Act of May 9, 1934, which recommended to Congress that funds be made available to carry out the purposes of the Reindeer Act.<sup>15</sup> By the Third Defense Appropriation Act, fiscal year 1939,<sup>16</sup> \$720,000 was appropriated for the purchase of land, equipment, buildings, outfalls, etc., owned by non natives and \$75,000 was appropriated for administrative expenses. Payments for land to natives are limited to an average of \$4 per head.<sup>17</sup>

### C LANDS

Congress and administrative authorities have consistently recognized and respected the rights of the natives of Alaska in the land occupied by them.<sup>18</sup> The rights of the natives in many respects the same as those generally enforced by the Indians residing in the same States, viz. the right of use and occupancy, with the fee in the United States.<sup>19</sup>

Article III of the Treaty of Cession<sup>20</sup> provides that the members of the civilized native tribes shall be protected in the free enjoyment of their property.

Section 8<sup>21</sup> of the Act of May 17, 1884,<sup>22</sup> establishing a civil government in Alaska and extending to it the laws of the United

<sup>11</sup>Of the estimated 315,000 square miles of grazing land in Alaska 400,000 square miles are considered suitable only for reindeer grazing. Alaska, Its Resources and Development of the Dept. of the Interior, 121-126.

<sup>12</sup>Id.

<sup>13</sup>62 Stat. 201, 213.

<sup>14</sup>62 Stat. 1114, 1115.

<sup>15</sup>Hearings before the Subcommittee of the House Committee on Appropriations, 76th Cong., 2d session on the Interior Department Appropriation bill for 1919, pt. II, pp. 547 et seq. Also see hearings before same committee on the bill for 1941, pt. II, pp. 460 et seq.

<sup>16</sup>Act of August 9, 1934, 48 Stat. 1301, 1316. Act of May 10, 1939, 51 Stat. 688, 708 appropriated \$3,000,000 out of the \$75,000 appropriation for reindeer service, for the purchase and distribution of reindeer.

<sup>17</sup>This limitation does not apply to the purchase of land located on Nunivik Island. Act of August 9, 1934, 48 Stat. 1301, 1315.

<sup>18</sup>United States v. Hooten, 2 Alaska 448 (1908), 13 L. D. 120 (1891), 23 L. D. 939 (1896), 26 L. D. 617 (1899), 28 L. D. 427 (1899), 37 L. D. 344 (1910), 50 L. D. 315 (1924), 62 L. D. 507 (1929), 68 L. D. 194 (1940), 88 L. D. 598 (1942).

<sup>19</sup>The following acts of Congress contain provisions protecting the Alaska natives in the use and occupancy of land occupied by them at the time:

Act of May 17, 1884, 23 Stat. 24, 26. Act of March 1, 1891, 26 Stat. 1055, 1100. Act of June 8, 1900, 31 Stat. 421, 500. The Act of June 10, 1900, 31 Stat. 488 authorizes the Mayor and Indian Indians of Alaska to sue the United States to determine property claims.

For a discussion of the power of Congress over land, see sec. 4, supra and Chapter 5, sec. 5.

<sup>20</sup>50 L. D. 515 (1924).

<sup>21</sup>15 Stat. 686, 642 (1887). The full text of this provision is set forth in section 8 of this chapter.

<sup>22</sup>This section provides in part:

"That the Indians or other persons in said district shall not be disturbed in the possession of any lands actually in their use or occupation at now claimed by them but that the terms under which such persons may acquire title to such lands is reserved for future legislation by Congress."

Section 12 empowers the Secretary of the Interior to select two officers, who together with the Governor shall constitute a Commission to examine and report on the condition of the Indians, "what lands, if any, should be reserved for their use," etc.

<sup>23</sup>28 Stat. 24.

States relating to mining claims is the first legislation which recognizes the rights of Alaska Indians to the possession of lands in their actual use and occupancy.<sup>24</sup> In interpreting this provision the court in *Hooten v. Hutter*<sup>25</sup> said:

The prohibition contained in the act of 1884 against the disturbance of the use of possession of any Indian or other person of any land in Alaska is framed by them is sufficiently general and comprehensive to include tide lands as well as lands above high water mark. Nor is it surprising that Congress in first dealing with the then sparsely settled country, was disposed to protect its few inhabitants in the possession of lands, of whatever character, by means of which they eked out their hard and precarious existence. The fact that at that time the Indians and other occupants of the country largely made their living by fishing, was no doubt well known to the legislative branch of the government, as well as the fact that that business, if conducted on any substantial scale necessitated the use of pits or the tide flats in the putting out and hauling in of the nets. It is not surprising that Congress was proper to protect by its act of 1884 the possession and use by these Indians and other persons of any and all land in Alaska against intrusion by third persons, and so it has never deemed it wise to otherwise provide (Pg. 88-89).

A subsequent judicial decision<sup>26</sup> also stresses the importance of interpreting the statute in the light of the communal habits of the natives.

It is well known that the native Indians of this country have peculiar habits, peculiar to the natives of this country, some of which they maintain most of the year and in others during certain summer months, that while their habits are somewhat migratory, they have well settled places of abode, and these usually are not abandoned, though they may vacate them for a few months at a time. The history of the habits of these people is well understood (P. 289).

It is believed that the language of this act does not refer to lands held by Indians in severalty, but as to holdings by them collectively in their villages and such places as were occupied by them, that their methods of life were well understood by the twinkling power, and that they were understood to occupy lands in communal life in villages where they lived, or for fishing, hunting, and like purposes.

No doubt it think exists as to the rights of those Indians who had occupied some particular tract of land solely and exclusively by themselves, and had actually occupied the same continuously before and at the time and since the passage of the act of May 17, 1884. He could maintain his possessory right to this property by virtue of this act, and the rights of the native might and should have priority under such circumstances. But it is evident to the court that the native Indians who occupied the land in dispute, if they occupied it exclusively and continuously, if they were in the actual undisputed possession thereof at the time the act of 1884 went into effect, were occupying it as a village, where a number had settled, and were there as common occupants, and not as individual claimants to any particular portion of the same. If they occupied the same exclusively as a village or otherwise, their right to the same must be protected, if protected at all, under section 8, above referred to. If the Congress of the United States have made no provision for this class of landowners requiring title to lands since the act of 1884, then they may not obtain title.<sup>27</sup> (Pg. 239-240).

<sup>24</sup>*Hooten v. Hutter*, 119 Fed. 88 (C. C. A. 9, 1903), aff'd *subseq.*, 1 Alaska 188 (1901). *United States v. Hooten*, 2 Alaska 442 (1905), 37 L. D. 934 (1908), 49 L. D. 692 (1928).

<sup>25</sup>*Johnson v. Pacific Coast S. S. Co.*, 2 Alaska 224 (1904).

<sup>26</sup>Of the following except from an administrative holding, 37 L. D. 885, 890-891 (1908):

Congress had a purpose in withholding from those Indians the title to their possessions especially without restraint upon alienation. It protects them in their possessions under the legal title they have in the United States by the act of May 17, 1884, and that they shall not be disturbed in the possession of any lands

This act protects land held by Indians and other persons in Alaska at the time of its passage and not lands subsequently acquired,<sup>100</sup> nor land occupied within a public reservation.<sup>101</sup>

The Act of March 3, 1901,<sup>102</sup> which extends the Homestead Law to Alaska and provides for the acquisition by an individual group or association of 160 acres of land for trade or manufacturing purposes, expressly excepts "any lands . . . to which the natives of Alaska have prior rights by virtue of actual occupation . . ."<sup>103</sup> The possessory rights of the natives cannot be interrupted by the granting of townships.<sup>104</sup>

Section 1 of the Act of May 25, 1906,<sup>105</sup> authorizes the township trustee to issue a restricted deed in Alaska in native, for a tract in a township occupied and set apart for him. Section 3 provides that whenever the Secretary of the Interior shall find unoccupied public lands to be claimed and occupied by natives as a town or village, he may issue a patent therefor to a trustee who shall convey by a restricted deed such land to the individual native, exclusive of that claimed used in streets or alleys.

The determination of persons eligible to receive patents under this act was delegated to the Department of the Interior, which has frequently changed its interpretation of the natives eligible to acquire title to the public domain. Regulations<sup>106</sup> were promulgated providing that the act applied only to natives who had not secured certificates of citizenship under the Territorial Law.<sup>107</sup> Although the wisdom of permitting the issuance of unrestricted deeds to natives, solely because of their citizenship was questioned,<sup>108</sup> such regulations were authorized by law.<sup>109</sup>

Though the statute provided that all of the deeds should contain restrictions on alienation, levy, sale, and encumbrances, the township trustees exercised discretion as to whether natives should receive restricted or unrestricted deeds, and they reached in understanding with the General Land Office that natives leading a civilized life should be treated in all respects as white citizens, but that the lands possessed by other Indians or natives should not be assessed nor conveyed but should be set apart for them as Indian possessions.<sup>110</sup>

Section 10 of the Act of May 14, 1898,<sup>111</sup> extending the homestead laws of the United States to Alaska, authorizes the Secretary of the Interior to reserve for the use of the natives of Alaska,

suitable tracts of land along the water front of any stream, inlet, bay, or wharve shore for landing places, for cranes and other craft used by such natives . . .

actually in their actual use or occupation, or claimed by them at the date of that act.

Such recognition by Congress of a right of occupancy and possession prevents the acquisition of title to such lands without legislative authority and while the title remains in the Government, the Indians' right to occupancy cannot be impaired nor can the land be assessed for taxes or charged or burdened with any obligation or encumbrance that could not be lawfully imposed upon public lands of the United States or other lands to which it holds the title. It was evidently contemplated by the act that these Indians should enjoy every right and privilege of a land owner except the right to encumber the land or to convey title thereto.

<sup>100</sup> *Johnson v. Rutter* 119 Fed. 99 (C. C. A. 9, 1902), aff'd *Rutter v. Johnson* 1 Alaska 188 (1901) *Columbia Contracting Co. v. Hampton* 161 Fed. 60 (C. C. A. 9, 1908), 18 L. D. 120 (1891), 37 L. D. 314 (1908).

<sup>101</sup> 28 L. D. 104 (1898).

<sup>102</sup> 28 Stat. 1095, 1100. Discussed in Memo Acting Sol. I. D. February 17, 1930.

<sup>103</sup> 23 L. D. 427 (1899), 28 L. D. 545 (1899). "The Department of the Interior has refused to approve townships which would interfere with the native use of water for domestic purposes, 24 L. D. 812 (1897) or which would interfere with the native use of a light of way, 26 L. D. 612 (1898)." 44 Stat. 620.

<sup>104</sup> 60 L. D. 27, 40 (1928).

<sup>105</sup> Memo Acting Sol. I. D., February 17, 1930.

<sup>106</sup> *Idid*. For a discussion of citizenship see see 5, supra.

<sup>107</sup> 50 L. D. 27, 40 (1928), 51 L. D. 902 (1929).

<sup>108</sup> Memo Acting Sol. I. D., February 17, 1930.

<sup>109</sup> 30 Stat. 409, 413.

Title to such reserved land cannot be acquired by any individual or group of individuals even with Indian consent.<sup>112</sup>

In the case of *United States v. Lynga*,<sup>113</sup> it was held that an order of the Secretary of the Interior reserving certain tide lands for a landing place for the boats of the natives did not reserve any land for any particular native and that the United States was the proper party to sue in an action of trespass. The court stressed the communal nature of the tide and occupation of the Indians is a guide to congressional intention.

There has been no legislation by Congress particularly applicable to the lands occupied by the Indians of Alaska on May 7, 1881. It is true that there is a provision for the Indians of the United States to enter lands under the Homestead Act 24 Stat. 90 (43 U. S. C. A. § 180). This act is also applicable to the Indians of Alaska who may enter lands under the Homestead Act, but the entry of lands under the Homestead Act is necessarily restricted to lands above the line of ordinary high water mark. There is no specific provision of legislation relative to the acquisition of title to public lands by Indians occupying them on May 17, 1884, that I am aware of.<sup>114</sup> (P. 373.)

Section 27 of the Act of June 16, 1900,<sup>115</sup> establishing a civil government for Alaska, provides that—

The Indians . . . shall not be disturbed in the possession of any lands now actually in their use or occupation.

The case of *United States v. Duggan*<sup>116</sup> held that this statute not only prohibits an entry under the land laws, upon land occupied by the natives but also forbids any other action which will disturb their possession and renders any attempt to dispossess them by contract. The court also held that the United States, and not an individual Indian, was the proper party to sue out a mandatory injunction against trespass on Indian land.

Under the Act of May 17, 1906,<sup>117</sup> the Secretary of the Interior may allot unoccupied land not exceeding 160 acres to any native who is the head of a family or who is 21 years of age. It also provides that such allotment shall be deemed the homestead of the allottee and his heirs forever and shall be unalienable and nontransferable until Congress provides otherwise.

Title remains in the United States,<sup>118</sup> and monies received from trespass on timber on such allotted land is not paid to the allottee, but must be deposited in the public funds of the United States.<sup>119</sup>

After the approval of an allotment, the allottee's rights are

<sup>112</sup> 50 L. D. 315 (1924), 44 L. D. 862 (1921), 32 L. D. 597 (1920), modified by 55 I. D. 194 (1930).

<sup>113</sup> 1 Alaska 508 (1907).

<sup>114</sup> An alien-native holding 50 L. D. 815, 817-818 (1924), interpreting the provision.

\* \* \* there is no authority under existing law by which these lands can be sold. \* \* \* As previously shown until Congress grants some greater title the lands of the natives in Alaska is simply one of use and occupancy. Nor does the reservation of a fractional area for their benefit result in placing actual title in the Indians. \* \* \* the tide or other lands occupied by or reserved to the Indians at Ketchikan, Alaska, cannot be disposed of under existing law but that the power rests with Congress, by treaty with or without the consent of the Indians to provide for the ultimate disposal of those lands.

See 44 L. D. 431 (1915), for a discussion of the riparian rights of the natives.

<sup>115</sup> 31 Stat. 921, 930.

<sup>116</sup> 2 Alaska 442 (1905). Accord *United States v. Oudow* 5 Alaska 128 (1914).

<sup>117</sup> Also see *United States v. Oudow*, 5 Alaska 128 (1914).  
<sup>118</sup> C. 2489, 14 Stat. 197. Only a small area is held by beneficiaries under the act. Land Use in Alaska, Preliminary Report, Advisory Committee on Land Use and Subcommittees to Alaska Planning Council (1928), p. 60.

<sup>119</sup> See 50 L. D. 815 (1924).

<sup>120</sup> 44 L. D. 118 (1913). The trespass occurred prior to the approval of the allotment.

not defeated by a subsequent reservation in Executive order of a tract of land, which includes the allotment.<sup>114</sup>

In the words of a recent administrative holding<sup>115</sup>

That Congress did not intend that an allottee's right should be less than a "vested right," or be subject to extinction at the pleasure of the Executive branch of the Government, is very clearly shown by the fact that it went further in the act conferring rights than it has done in other kindred statutes by declaring in emphatic words that "the land so allotted shall be deemed the home stead of the allottee and his heirs in perpetuity."

Actual occupancy and continuous use of a tract of land by a native, prior to its inclusion within a national forest, confer, upon the occupant a preference right to an allotment, even though the application for an allotment was filed subsequent to the creation of a reservation.<sup>116</sup>

The Allotment Act<sup>117</sup> does not limit the use of the land by the allottee nor the duration of his occupancy, nor the character of his improvements.<sup>118</sup>

The Secretary of the Interior was empowered by section 2 of the Act of May 1 1891<sup>119</sup> to

... to designate as an Indian reservation any tract of land which has been reserved for the use and occupancy of Indians or Eskimos by section 5 of the Act of May 17, 1884 (23 Stat. 30), or by section 14 or section 15 of the Act of March 3 1801 (26 Stat. 1101), or which has been heretofore reserved under any executive order and placed under the jurisdiction of the Department of the Interior or any bureau thereof, together with additional public lands adjacent thereto, within the Territory of Alaska, or any other public lands which are actually occupied by Indians or Eskimos within said Territory. *Provided*, That the designation by the Secretary of the Interior of any such area of land as a reservation

shall be effective only upon its approval by the vote, by secret ballot, of a majority of the Indian or Eskimo residents thereof who vote at a special election duly called by the Secretary of the Interior upon thirty days' notice. *Provided*, however, That in each instance the total vote cast shall not be less than 30 per centum of those entitled to vote.

A provision is also made that this act shall not affect existing rights.

"There have already been a number of administrative interpretations of this act. It has been held that a reservation may include sufficient water frontage to protect and provide for the fishing, occupations of the Indians.<sup>120</sup> Although water in connection with the reservation of the uplands cannot be independently reserved under section 2, waters adjacent to my lands, already reserved or being reserved may be reserved for the natives occupying the tract of the reservation.<sup>121</sup> Waters may be withdrawn extending in line from the shore as the territorial limits of Alaska.

Adopting the test formulated by the Supreme Court in the *Alaska Pacific Fisheries* case<sup>122</sup> it was held to be the intent of Congress that under section 2 only those adjacent waters may be reserved which are essential for the effective use and are an integral part of the reserved land. A recent opinion<sup>123</sup> on this question advised

It appears that for all practical purposes the extent of water designated by the President in connection with the Amelte Island Reservation, namely, 3,000 feet from the shore at its low tide, should be used as the standard and even as the minimum unless it is shown that the natives have been using, and actually need a further area (pp. 9-10)

The principal part of each reservation must be land upon which the natives are actually residing.<sup>124</sup>

<sup>114</sup> Op. Sol. I. D. M. 28978 April 10, 1937.

<sup>115</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>116</sup> *Alaska Pacific Fisheries v. United States*, 248 U. S. 78 (1918), aff'd 240 Fed. 274 (C. C. 9 1917). This case is more fully discussed in sec. 4, *supra*.

<sup>117</sup> Op. Sol. I. D. M. 28978 April 10, 1937.

<sup>118</sup> Memo. Sol. I. D., September 11, 1907. Op. Sol. I. D., M. 28978 April 10, 1937.

## SECTION 9 TRIBES AND ASSOCIATIONS

Indian villages have been organized under the Municipal Incorporation Law of Alaska<sup>125</sup> and the Indian Village Act.<sup>126</sup> It is reported that some Indian villages not organized under either of these laws have an informal organization with a council, usually elected annually.<sup>127</sup>

Section 19 of the Act of June 18, 1891<sup>128</sup> provides that Eskimos and other aboriginal peoples of Alaska shall be considered Indians for the purpose of the act, and section 19 provides that sections 9, 10, 11, 12, and 16 shall apply to the Territory of Alaska. These provisions relate to tribal organization, loans for economic development and for tuition in vocational schools, and preference to Indians for positions in the Indian Service. The Act of May 1 1890<sup>129</sup> extends to Alaska all the remaining sections

except sections 2, 8, 4, and 18, relating to tribal lands and reservations, which are largely applicable to this territory. This act offered a new source of federal protection to the natives "who in the past," according to Commissioner of Indian Affairs Collier, "have been their land rights almost universally disregarded, their fishing rights increasingly invaded, and their economic situation grow each year more desperate."<sup>130</sup>

The Act of May 1 1890, was passed to remedy the failure of the Act of June 18, 1891 to extend the incorporation and credit privileges of that act to the organizations in Alaska and, what was equally important, to authorize a type of organization more suited to the existing native groupings and activities than the organizations authorized for Indians in the States.

By an oversight, apparently, of the congressional conference committee considering the Act of June 18, 1891, section 17 of that act providing for incorporation of tribes, was omitted from the list of sections made applicable to Alaska, and thus resulted in the ruling that the credit funds made available by section 10 to incorporated organizations could not be made available in Alaska in the absence of the privilege of incorporation.<sup>131</sup> The

<sup>125</sup> Compiled Laws of Alaska 1 for 1911 ch. 44. Pursuant to this act Klawock was organized as a city of the first class and Eklabang and Serman, as cities of the second class.

<sup>126</sup> Session Laws of Alaska for 1916, ch. 11, amended Session Laws of Alaska for 1917, ch. 28, amended Session Laws of Alaska for 1929, ch. 23, villages like Angoon and Koonah, organized before the repeal of this law, continue to function although their status is doubtful.

<sup>127</sup> Most, if not all, of these villages are within the area of the Tongass National Forest Reserve.

<sup>128</sup> 48 Stat. 684.

<sup>129</sup> C. 254, 40 Stat. 1260.

<sup>130</sup> Annual Report of Secretary of Interior (1896) p. 188.

<sup>131</sup> Op. Sol. I. D., M. 28978, April 19, 1937.



omission was remedied in the Act of 1946 by the express extension of section 17 to Alaska organizations and in the provision that the group of Indians authorized to organize may receive charters of incorporation and credit loans in accordance with the Act of June 18, 1933.<sup>10</sup>

The type of organization authorized by the latter act was the organization of Indian bands or tribes or the Indians residing on a reservation. However, since most of the natives in Alaska do not live on reservations, and are not grouped in bands or tribes, it is the belief<sup>11</sup> that since most of the natives live in native villages or communities and many groups of natives work in particular kinds of occupations or have other ties that bind their interests so that it was provided in section 1 of the Act of May 1, 1946, that

groups of Indians in Alaska and hereinafter recognized as bands or tribes, but having a common bond of occupation, or association or residence within a well defined neighborhood community or in industrial or other units to adopt constitutions and bylaws and to receive charters of incorporation and Federal loans under sections 16, 17 and 18 of the Act of June 18, 1933 (48 Stat. 934)

The criterion of organization was adopted from section 9 of the Federal Trusts Union Act,<sup>12</sup> and the interpretation of this language by the authorities demonstrating that it is looked to for guidance in determining the eligibility of native groups seeking to organize.

Under the interpretation and application of the Act of May 1, 1946, the Interior Department has held as a matter of law and policy that, like a band or tribe, a group which may organize under the act must be a previously existing group, bound by common interests or economic ties and not a newly formed group established solely for the purpose of receiving benefits under the Indian Reorganization Act. The Interior Department has also held that in the organization of a band or tribe the group organizing acts as a unit and includes at the outset all those natives who belong to the group, although in dividends may withdraw later from the organization.

The instructions on organization in Alaska approved by the Secretary of the Interior on December 22, 1947 set forth the kinds of organization possible under the act:

(1) A group consisting of all the native residents of a locality may organize to carry on municipal and public activities as well as economic enterprises. This type of organization would be suitable for exclusively native villages. Authority for municipal activities is based on the provision of section 16 of the

<sup>10</sup> From the standpoint of the Alaskan economy, this means that credit funds may be loaned to finance such enterprises as fishing, trading, land use operations and reforestation development. Report of Governor of Alaska for 1938, p. 46.

<sup>11</sup> Annual Report of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs (1947), pp. 200-201.

The native villages vary from 80 to 10 to 300 or 400 persons. Living in southern ten Alaska these villages are widely separated and have little or no communication with each other. The village and not the "tribe" is the unit. Letter by R. L. Wilbur in Hearings before the Senate Committee on Indian Affairs on March 23, 1946, on S. 1106, 72nd Cong., 1st sess., p. 16.

\* \* \* It was established that the villages in Alaska were the natural form of Indian organization and that no tribal organization existed as they are known in the United States. It was found that the word "tribe" was used in Alaska to denote ethnic or language groups and did not mean "domestic groups of natives" as the tribes were recognized to be in the United States (Alaska Sol. 1, May 26, 1946).

\* \* \* While the native organizations and associations in Alaska do not have the character of tribes or tribes, they may equally be considered instrumentalities of the United States where they are operated under a loan agreement from the United States or are organized and chartered as Federal corporations under the Indian Reorganization Act (Alaska Sol. 1, June 16, 1946).

<sup>12</sup> Act of June 28, 1894, c. 750, 48 Stat. 1216, 1219, 12 U. S. C. 1769.

Act of June 18, 1934 providing that the constitutions may contain all powers of an Indian group recognized under existing law. The best example of this type of organization is the organization of the Pitmea villages.<sup>13</sup>

(2) Groups comprising all the native residents of a locality may organize solely for business purposes without contemplating municipal activities. This type of organization is especially suitable in the case of Indian groups residing in white communities, which communities already provide for municipal activities. Examples of such an organization are the organizations at Chuk<sup>14</sup> and Sitka.<sup>15</sup>

(3) A group comprising all the residents of a locality but comprising persons having a common bond of occupation or association may organize to carry on economic activities. In the case of such organizations, competitive and democratic features in the method of organization are encouraged and as wide a basis among the natives is sought as is possible in the circumstances of the case. An example of such an organization is the Hydang Cooperative Association, composed of resident Native fishermen of Hydang who have a "common bond of occupation in the fish industry, including the catching, processing and selling of fish and the building of fishing boats and equipment."<sup>16</sup>

As of February 1, 1941, 38 native groups had organized and received charters under the Alaska act.<sup>17</sup>

Although the Alaskan Native Brotherhood, is neither a tribe nor a group organized under the Act of May 1, 1946, it must be considered in any survey of native organizations. The Brotherhood was organized in the fall of 1913 with the announced objective of preparing the natives of Alaska to exercise the rights and duties of citizenship. The Brotherhood is governed by an annual convention composed of delegates from its "local camps."

<sup>13</sup> See for example, Constitution of the Native Village of Shishmaref ratified August 2, 1949 and charters ratified on the same date.

<sup>14</sup> Constitution of the Chuk Community Association ratified October 9, 1948, and charter ratified on the same date. This association, composed of about 200 members of the Pitmea and Pitmea tribes residing in the neighborhood of Chuk, granted loans to many members with which they bought new boats, made repairs and renovated their old boats. See Alaskan Fisheries Hearings, II, Reel 162, 76th Cong., 1st sess. pt. II (1940), p. 629.

<sup>15</sup> Constitution of the Sitka Community Association ratified October 11, 1939 and charters ratified on the same date.

<sup>16</sup> Constitution of the Hydang Cooperative Association ratified April 11, 1948 and charter ratified on the same date. Also see Annual Report Governor of Alaska (1948), pp. 90-91.

<sup>17</sup> Act of May 1, 1946 sec. 1, 49 Stat. 1270-48 U. S. C. 982.

Hydang Cooperative Association of Alaska constitution and charter ratified April 11, 1948, Kikrook Cooperative Association of Alaska October 4, 1948, Chuk Community Association of Chuk Alaska October 8, 1938, Sitka Community Association of Alaska October 11, 1939, Organized Village of Kasaan October 15, 1948, King Island Native Community, January 31, 1949, Native Village of Atka, May 28, 1939, Native Village of Nikolai, June 12, 1949, Native Village of Wales, July 29, 1939, Native Village of Shishmaref, August 2, 1949, Native Village of Kaktik August 23, 1949, Eemah Indian Association, October 23, 1939, Nookoon Community Association November 15, 1939, Nome Bekhoon Community, November 24, 1949, Native Village of Elna, November 24, 1949, Native Village of Gambell, December 25, 1939, Native Village of Fort Yukon, January 2, 1940, Native Village of Nomesethuk, January 2, 1940, Native Village of Kwethluk, January 11, 1940, Native Village of Venetie, January 25, 1940, Katchikan Indian Corporation, January 27, 1940, Native Village of Ektchuk, January 27, 1940, Native Village of Diomedea, January 31, 1940, Native Village of Chagat, February 8, 1940, Native Village of Kivalina, February 7, 1940, Native Village of Point Hope, February 28, 1940, Native Village of Selawik, March 16, 1940, Native Village of Barrow March 21, 1940, Native Village of Tetlin, March 28, 1940, Native Village of Makoryuk, August 24, 1940, Native Village of Barrow, January 14, 1941.

Executive offices, including the Grand Secretary who is the administrative head, are elected annually.<sup>1</sup> The Grand President becomes a member of a permanent "Executive Committee" which exercises the powers of the council from between sessions.

This society takes an active interest in legislation and other matters which affect the natives.<sup>2</sup>

Unique among native communities is that of the Metlakathli Indians. Brought here by federal officials about 500 of these Indians migrated in 1857 to the Annette Islands in southeast Alaska from their homes in Metlakathli British Columbia.<sup>3</sup> A ruling of the Attorney General<sup>4</sup> held that the President of the United States lacked authority to establish a reservation for these Indians on the public domain without congressional sanction, because they were there, born outside of the boundaries of the United States proper. In the Act of March 3, 1891,<sup>5</sup> Congress created a reservation for the rest of these immigrants and such other Alaskan natives as might join them to be used in common under rules and regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>6</sup> By the Act of March 3, 1907,<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> For a brief discussion of this organization see testimony by John Wickeshead before the Senate Committee on Indian Affairs on March 2, 1912 on S. 1196, 61st Cong., 1st sess., pp. 10-11.

<sup>2</sup> The significance of the Brotherhood as the representatives of an important portion of the natives is shown by the fact that the Legislature from Alaska declined to sponsor legislation extending the Wheeler Howard Act to Alaska until learning its views, 53 Cong. Rec. pt. 6, p. 154 (1938).

<sup>3</sup> At the outset a number of "local camps" and many others had vigorously opposed the provisions of the Wheeler Howard Act, claiming, in Indian reservations, because they thought that these provisions would deprive them of some of their rights of citizenship. When it was demonstrated that this was in fact groundless, the Executive Committee approved the measure. *Ibid.* 180.

<sup>4</sup> For a brief account of the development of the colony see Department of the Interior, The Problem of the Alaskan Development (April 1940), pp. 44-47. See also pp. 7, 10, 11.

<sup>5</sup> 18 Op. A. G. 977 (1897).

<sup>6</sup> 26 Stat. 1095-1101.

<sup>7</sup> Secretary of the Interior have issued such rules and regulations on January 28, 1917. 53 Op. R. 11-1-68.

<sup>8</sup> C. 2020 14 Stat. 1414.

Congress permitted these Indians to be licensed as masters, pilots and engineers of steamboats and as operators of motor boats as if citizens of the United States. Congress granted collective naturalization by the Act of May 7, 1934.<sup>8</sup> In the Metlakathli and the Indians who emigrated from British Columbia not later than January 1, 1900 and resided continuously in Annette Island.

The community has flourished; it owns a salmon cannery<sup>9</sup> which is operated under a lease from the Department of the Interior. Out of their earnings they have built up a large trust fund<sup>10</sup> in the Treasury of the United States, bearing 4 percent interest.

The community income is used by the directors of the town council for civic improvements, care of dependents, etc. From the profits, the community has built and equipped a hydro electric plant which furnishes each house with electricity free of charge.

The privilege of joining the Metlakathli community and occupying any part of the Island is subject to vote of the Metlakathli Council. To obtain membership, except by birth, requires the approval of three-fourths of the members of the town council. The land and resources of the reservation are held in common; individuals occupy land by payments from the council. Local self government is recognized in rules and regulations of the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>11</sup>

C. 221 45 Stat. 667. The Alaska Reclamation and Water Conservation Act granted citizenship to these Indians. H. Rept. 100, 60th Cong., 1st sess., p. 10. See also 1934 Act of April 18, 1934, 48 Stat. 1209.

<sup>9</sup> See Survey of Conditions of the Indians of the United States, pt. 35 (Metlakathli Indians Alaska) 74th Cong. 2d sess., Hearings, S. Subcomm. on Ind. Affs. The success of this community is discussed in Hearings on Alaskan Fisheries, held pursuant to H. Res. 362 70th Cong., 1st sess. (1928) pp. 178, 199, 618, 652, 699, 719-725, 996-998.

<sup>10</sup> Act of August 28, 1937, 50 Stat. 971.

<sup>11</sup> 25 Op. R. pt. 1 (Rules and Regulations for Annette Island Reserve Alaska 1917).

# CHAPTER 23

## NEW YORK INDIANS

### TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
<i>Section 1 Historical background</i> . . . . .	116	<i>Section 1 Historical background—Continued</i>	
<i>A Resistance by Iroquois to French</i> . . . . .	117	<i>F Federal management of New York Indian affairs—Continued</i>	
<i>B Affairs of Iroquois as affecting all colonies</i> . . . . .	118	<i>1 State encroachment on ceded reservations</i> . . . . .	420
<i>C Shift of control of Iroquois affairs from Albany to Albany to Crown</i> . . . . .	118	<i>7 Federal recognition of Seneca sovereignty</i> . . . . .	421
<i>D National and international aspect of Iroquois as affecting Federal Constitution</i> . . . . .	118	<i>6 Separation from Seneca Nation of Tuscarora band</i> . . . . .	421
<i>1 Iroquois in Revolutionary War</i> . . . . .	118	<i>7 Indian lands</i> . . . . .	421
<i>2 Importance to nation of peace negotiations with Iroquois</i> . . . . .	118	<i>Section 2 The present status of tribal government</i> . . . . .	421
<i>3 Effect of treaties of 1789 and 1793</i> . . . . .	119	<i>A Seneca Nation</i> . . . . .	422
<i>F Federal management of New York Indian affairs</i> . . . . .	419	<i>B Tonawanda band of Senecas</i> . . . . .	423
<i>1 Education and civilization</i> . . . . .	419	<i>C St Regis Mohawks</i> . . . . .	423
<i>2 Restrictions on alienation of lands</i> . . . . .	419	<i>D Tuscarora Nation</i> . . . . .	424
<i>3 Removal to the West—Treaties of 1838 and 1842</i> . . . . .	420	<i>E Onondaga Nation</i> . . . . .	424
		<i>F Cayuga Nation</i> . . . . .	424
		<i>G Shawnee Indians</i> . . . . .	424
		<i>H Powhatan Indians</i> . . . . .	424

There are more Indians in the State of New York than there are in Wyoming, Colorado, and Utah combined.<sup>1</sup> Because of the persistence of traditional forms of tribal organization, and because of treaty arrangements with New York which preceded the Federal Constitution and special dealings with the state since that time, the various New York tribes have a peculiar status which has been the subject of a series of cases federal<sup>2</sup>

and state,<sup>3</sup> and at least two excellent legal studies.<sup>4</sup> While the complexity of the subject and limitations of space and time preclude an exhaustive analysis of the status of the New York tribes in this work, two aspects of the subject may be briefly treated: the history of federal and state relations and the present status of these tribes with respect to local government.

<sup>1</sup> As of January 1, 1918 the Indian population of these states was according to the Indian Office: New York 6610, Wyoming 2,425, Colorado 656, Utah 2,184.

<sup>2</sup> See American Ass'n of Indian Affairs, Inc. News Letter Supplement May 15, 1919.

<sup>3</sup> *Pellens v. Blacksmith* 10 How. 366 (1850) (denying right of allotment of allotment fee to Seneca Indians); *New York ex rel. Ostrer v. Noble* 21 How. 466 (1853) (A writ of the bill of New York making it unlawful for any other than Indians to settle upon tribal lands in New York is not contrary to the constitution as a deprivation of federal power. It is within of state power to make police regulations); *New York Indians v. Wall* 761 (1860) (denying power of New York to tax land of New York Indians); *Seneca Nation v. Christy* 163 U. S. 383 (1900) (Seneca Indians denied by statute of limitation in the suit under New York statutes to invalidate county units of land to private individuals); *New York Indians v. United States*, 170 U. S. 1 (1908) (Under Treaty of Buffalo Creek January 15, 1828 7 Stat. 750 the New York Indians were held entitled to value of certain lands in Kansas set apart for these Indians and later sold by the United States, as well as for amounts of money agreed to be paid

upon their removal); *Onondaga Indians of Canada v. United States*, 40 C. Cls. 116 (1903) (Onondaga Indians of Canada claim to share in fund under decision of Supreme Court in 1790 U. S. 1); *New York Indians v. United States*, 40 C. Cls. 148 (1903) (claiming status of alleged unceded stipulations of the Treaty of Buffalo Creek of January 15, 1828, 7 Stat. 750); *New York Indians v. United States*, 11 C. Cls. 402 (1906) (claim of New York Indians excluded from the membership rolls to share in fund under decision in suit reported in 40 C. Cls. 148); *Seneca v. Becker*, 241 U. S. 578 (1916) (limiting and defining rights of Seneca Indians on ceded lands); *United States ex rel. Academy v. Taylor*, 209 U. S. 33 (1902) (Native count jurisdiction over lands and members of the Seneca Tribe); *Seneca v. United States* 64 C. Cls. 641 (1908) (claim of New York Indians not considered in the absence of jurisdictional act). See also, on power of state and federal government over New York Indians note, Ann. Cas. 1914-15, 652, 671-674; note, Ann. Cas. 1916-17, 373.

<sup>4</sup> See Peterson v. Council of Seneca Nation, 345 N. Y. 444, 137 N. E. 2d 1027 and cases cited.

<sup>5</sup> Rice, The Position of the American Indian in the Law of the United States (1934), 16 J. Comp. Leg. 78, Pound, Nationals without a Nation (1922), 22 Colum. L. Rev. 67.

### SECTION 1 HISTORICAL BACKGROUND<sup>1</sup>

The Iroquois Indian Confederacy, sometimes called the Five Nations or the Six Nations, consisted of the Seneca, Cayuga, Onondaga, Oneida and Mohawk tribes of Indians, and, during the

later period of its existence, the Tuscarora tribe. They occupied all of what is now northern and western New York, and their league is acknowledged by historians as being the triumph of

<sup>1</sup> Material on the historical background of the New York Indians and their relations with various colonial governments and the United States

is taken almost in its entirety from the brief in the case of *United States v. Ostrer*, 28 F. Supp. 846 (D. C. W. D. N. Y. 1938), cited by the

Indian legislation. Not only did the Iroquois maintain their Indians north of Mexico in their political institutions, but they were likewise the most powerful. Their territory at one time extended from the hills of New England to the Mississippi River and from upper Canada into North Carolina. Other tribes occupying this extensive space were either annihilated, expelled, subjugated, absorbed or absorbed by the Iroquois. The Iroquois' possession of the strategic water routes (the natural gateway to the interior), their wars with power and control over the interior in the last half of the 17th century to the Iroquois position in history which has a profound influence on the present day status of all Americans in America.

The controlling object and interest of the Dutch who settled New York was to trade with the Indians. This means needs for food did not affect the Iroquois who were situated to the north and west of Albany (Fort Orange) and in their desire for trade they took particular pains to cultivate the friendship of the

Department of Justice on behalf of the United States. The statements therein contained the contribution by statements found in *New York Indians' United States*, 1701-181 (1898).

An intense race against the Dutch was taking place in New York during the early colonial period, some of whom were in the state is contained in a memorandum of John B. T. Rieve, Chief Counsel Office of Indian Affairs which appears in *Ex Doc No 1300 66d Cons. 6d sec (1015)* and reads as follows:

Early document in which is now written in New York found the country more or less settled, acquainted with the names of various tribes principally the Seneca, Cayuga, Onondaga, Oneida, and Mohawks. The Seneca, Cayuga, Onondaga, Oneida, and Mohawks were known among themselves as the Six Nations, but generally designated by the name of the Seneca, the most powerful of the tribes, the last day. In the Iroquois council the Onondaga, as the founders of the league kept the central fire, the Mohawks guarded the eastern end and the Seneca the western end. The Oneida and Cayuga were stationed between the central fire and the east, while the Seneca occupied a similar position in the west.

About 1710 the Tuscaroras, then living in North Carolina, became involved in quarrels with white settlers and adjoining Indian tribes. They fled from their several Indian tribes and finally fled to New York and were finally united with the five tribes just mentioned, thus making the Six Nations of New York, by which name these Indians are now most commonly known. At the period of the greatest strength—the latter part of the seventeenth century—the Iroquois league numbered 15,000 souls and own to this day the union still continues to some extent although the component membership as to tribes has materially changed.

With the exception of the Oneida and a part of the Senecas, these Indians sided with the mother country in the Revolution and were not mentioned and unwelcome for in the treaty of peace between Great Britain and the United States. Not until considerable time elapsed among them at the close of the Revolution due to the fact that in the main they had sided with the losing party in the great struggle. The Mohawks moved to Canada and settled on lands provided for them in the British Government, while a part of the Seneca and Cayuga lived in the Albany area. The Cayuga and Seneca tribes who lived to any land in New York were subsequently the Six Nations were finally adopted by the Six Nations in place of the Mohawks.

The Cayuga also sold their land to the State and gradually migrated westward, locating first in the Ohio Valley but finally returning to the Indian Territory and becoming affiliated with other tribes there. The Cayuga still remain in New York, residing mainly with the Seneca and Tuscaroras—the latter in addition, of the Seneca Tribe—being frequently designated the "Tuscarora Band of Seneca Indians." The State paid the Cayuga at the rate of 4 shillings per acre and thereafter sold the land for 10 shillings per acre. About 1841 some members of the tribe began to petition the State for the difference in price between the land sold to them and that received by the Cayuga. In 1869 the legislative assembly authorized the land commissioner to conduct and settle the claim of the Cayuga Indians against the State for a sum not exceeding \$297,181.50 with an additional allowance of \$27,141.20 for legal expenses incurred.

The Cayuga tribes sold all of their land except about 300 acres, to the State and received for the reservation in Wisconsin. From the Seneca Indians are known no more in the Federal Government. The 950 acres in New York belonged to the Cayuga have long since been divided in severalty under the State laws and as to these Indians are known no more in that State. Six tribes still remain in New York to be regarded as of any importance at the time, viz. the Seneca, Tuscaroras, Oneida, Onondaga, Cayuga, and Shawnee, the latter, however, never had a distinct unit in the Six Nations although at one time they did pay tribute to the Mohawks. \* \* \* (P 11)

how appendix of B Doc No 1090, 66d Cons, 6d sec, supra, for a list of treaties, statutes, documents, and cases relating to the New York Indians. For a detailed treatise between New York State and the New York Indians see *Seneca Nation of Indians v. Chieftain*, 196 N. Y. 123, 27 N. E. 276 (1891).

Iroquois and accordingly afforded them the status of independent nations which they demanded.

When the English took over the Dutch colony in 1664, they were careful to continue a trade which was to make Albany the capital of North America during the latter part of the seventeenth and the early part of the eighteenth centuries.

### A RESISTANCE BY IROQUOIS TO FRENCH

The French fully appreciated the importance of the Iroquois. The Iroquois and Dutch (later the English) possession of New York made necessary for the French a chain of forts some 2,000 miles in length, and it was even the purpose of the French to reduce the length of forts to about 800 miles by taking possession of New York.

Division of land due to the English was effected by the Iroquois from as far as what is now Illinois and Wisconsin, and this along with the Iroquois occupation of northern and western New York was an obstacle to the trade and territorial interests and ambitions of France.

The official French attitude toward these Indians might well be considered as summed up in a letter written by Du Chesneau in 1681:

There is no doubt, and it is the universal opinion, that if the Iroquois are allowed to proceed they will subdue the Illinois, and in a short time render themselves masters of all the Ottawa tribes, and direct the trade to the English, so that it is absolutely necessary to make them out friends or to destroy them.

Failing to cultivate a friendship which was detrimental to the Iroquois independence and trading interests, the French spent about a hundred years in trying to destroy the Iroquois. In this they failed.

The Iroquois resisted every attempt upon their institutions and independence with unparalleled tenacity and with very little aid from their allies, the English, until quite late in the struggle, when the English, at the request of the Iroquois, established one or two under manned forts in their territory.

New York was cognizant of the importance of the Iroquois, both from the standpoint of trade and colonial defense.

The friendship of these Indians was a highly important, if not a decisive, factor in the struggle of France and England to this Continent. The history of this struggle, as enacted in America, is largely the history of these Indians, who in defending their own lands, played an international role which brought their recognition in treaties between France and England. It is no wonder that the Iroquois were "counted and conciliated" by England and that their national character was scrupulously observed and recognized.

\* Brodhead, *Documents Relative to the Colonial History of the State of New York* (1865) (Revised by E. B. O'Callaghan), vol. 9, p. 161.

\* Lieutenant Governor Clark, in an address to the Assembly on April 15, 1741, said:

"He shows at Onondaga being of highest importance to the full trade, sought by all means to be preserved from falling into the hands of the French. \* \* \* If you suffer Onondaga to fall into the hands of the French I much fear you will lose the Six Nations an event which will expose the whole country to the merciless and barbarous cruelty of a savage enemy, \* \* \* where there is any evidence Onondaga ought to be maintained, that the fidelity of the Six Nations may be preserved. \* \* \* (New York Assembly Journal 1691-1748 (1801 ed.), 22d Assembly, 6th session, p. 709).

\* This is illustrated by the following excerpt from a memorandum of the Lands Division of the Department of Justice:

In 1768 acting under a Commission of the British Crown, Sir William Johnson entered into a treaty with the Six Nations by the terms of which the boundaries of the Iroquois Confederacy were defined and the lands of the Six Nations were divided and duly set apart from the lands of the Colony of New York. By this treaty the Indians sold and granted to the King "all that Tract of Land situate in North America at the Back of the

## B AFFAIRS OF IROQUOIS AS AFFECTING ALL COLONIES

With their territory dominant and influence extending into many of the colonies, intercourse with these Indians inevitably affected the interests of the colonies as well as the Crown.

The international aspect of the Iroquois resulting, from the extent of their territory and influence made relations with them of serious concern to all of the northern and central colonies, and more than one treaty with these Indians was negotiated by several of the colonies acting together. Such was the Treaty of 1745 between the Iroquois and New York, Massachusetts, Connecticut and Pennsylvania. Brinkh's Union-Plan of Union of the colonies was proposed at one of the joint congresses held in June 1754 at Albany at the States of New York, Massachusetts, Connecticut, Pennsylvania, New Hampshire, Rhode Island and Maryland for the purpose of treating with the Six Nations, and conceiving a scheme of general union of the British American Colonies.<sup>1</sup>

Another factor favoring control in the central authority of the Crown was the conflict of land settlements and title. More than one self-seeking colony would act in such a manner for sanction from the throns of its settlers or leaders) is to embroil the entire frontier in Indian wars—the consequences of which it would be borne by all of the colonies.

## C SHIFT OF CONTROL OF IROQUOIS AFFAIRS FROM ALBANY TO COLONY TO CROWN

Relations with the Iroquois were in the beginning for the most part a matter of trade and nominally conducted in the name of the King of England. In fact, the actual management of affairs with the Iroquois was with the city of Albany. The charter of this city of 1686 gave to Albany the

Sole & only Management of the Trade with the Indians, as well within this whole Country as without the same to the Eastward Northward and Westward thereof so far as his Majesty's Dominion here does or may extend.

Though Albany was the financial capital of North America during colonial days, the regulation of affairs with these Indians was not a municipal matter as is readily seen from the foregoing, and accordingly the colony assumed an ever increasing control until the charter was finally revoked. But regulation of the relations with the Iroquois was no more a colonial matter than it was a municipal proposition and therefore the Crown of England abandoned its nominal control in favor of an active and actual supervision.

## D NATIONAL AND INTERNATIONAL ASPECT OF IROQUOIS AS AFFECTING FEDERAL CONSTITUTION

1. *Iroquois in Revolutionary War*.—At the beginning of the Revolutionary War the Confederate Government took immediate steps to secure the neutrality of the Iroquois, and though the League remained neutral, the several tribes took sides, some with the colonies, some with their traditional ally, the Crown,

and some fought on both sides.<sup>2</sup> The Seneca participated throughout the war with England.

Salisbury's campaign against the hostile tribes of the Iroquois was one of the major military operations of the Revolutionary War against Indians. The long years of incessant warfare with the French and the havoc wrought by Salisbury's expedition had broken the power of the Iroquois, and they were left by England at the end of the war to make their separate peace with the newly created Union.

### 2. Importance to terms of peace negotiations with Iroquois.

The treaty of peace between the United States and the Iroquois was considered of considerable importance to the Central Government. Washington, in 1753, made a personal trip to the lands of the Iroquois to familiarize himself with conditions. The negotiations of peace in 1784 were closely followed by Washington in Virginia and Jefferson in Paris, and such personalities as James Madison, James Monroe, Lafayette, and General Butler were present as negotiators or observers.

The Iroquois insisted on acting in their collective capacity and, though they had been harried by Salisbury's expedition, any effort to exploit the hostile tribes of the Iroquois from their present lands or any attempt to break up the League into its several tribes, would have been attended by a prolonged conflict in which the new Union was not prepared to prosecute.

The controlling purpose of the Central Government was to make peace with the Iroquois and to draw a wedge between them and the western tribes—to separate the Iroquois from the subjugated western tribes and to undermine the influence of the League over them.

New York on the other hand was more than anxious to rid the state of the hostile Senecas, Onondagas, Oneidas, and Mohawks, and to move the friendly Oneidas and Tuscaroras to a small part of the lands of the Seneca in western New York. She considered herself as "savage" (under the Articles of Confederation) in dealing with the New York Indians and intended to separate the different tribes of the Iroquois. In her futile attempt to carry out these purposes she stopped at nothing, even mistaking agents of the Confederate Government who were trying to negotiate the treaty of peace.<sup>3</sup>

Had New York's attempts in obstructing the peace treaty prevailed over the efforts of the Central Government in this respect, New York would have probably consolidated the Iroquois instead of dividing them, and this might well have resulted in a united League serving as the spear head of a cruel, prolonged, and costly Indian war of all of the western Indians (more than 85 tribes) under the influence and leadership of the Iroquois.

Though under the Articles of Confederation there was a question of whether the Confederate Government was invading the rights of the State of New York relative to the Iroquois, the necessity of the times and the importance of these Indians in relation to all of the states made it imperative that the Central Government take definite action.

<sup>1</sup> "When the Revolution came the Six Nations as a whole determined on neutrality but left the constituent tribes to make with either party, which they did." *McDonnell vs United States*, 25 F. 2d 71, 72 (C. C. A. 8, 1898).

<sup>2</sup> Richard Henry Lee, later President of the Continental Congress, in writing to George Washington concerning the efforts of New York to obstruct the treaty, said:

"... I understand, from Mr. Wolcott that the commission of the United States met many difficulties, thrown in their way by New York which they overcame, at last, by much address and perseverance. It is unfortunate when private views obstruct public measures, and more especially when a spirit is carried opposed to the States because it seems to confine the predilections of those who wish us not well and who cherish hopes from a distant wrong from different interests." (Baldwin, James Ouelts, *The Letters of Richard Henry Lee* (1811), vol. 2, p. 205.)

British Settlements, bounded by a line which we have now agreed upon, and do hereby establish as the boundary between us and the British colonies in America. This is followed by a description of the boundaries with its beginning and ending. (New York Colonial Documents Vol. 8, p. 149. [Bibliology Bureau Report No. 2, 1897, p. 84].) (1, 2 D Memo 76 (1642).)

<sup>3</sup> Massachusetts Historical Society Collections (1886), series III, vol. 6, p. 6.

<sup>4</sup> N. Y. Colonial Laws, vol. 1, pp. 195, 211.

The ensuing treaty was in effect three treaties: "(a) A treaty of peace and general amnesty between the Iroquois and the United States with provisions for prisoners of war and a relinquishment of their claim to roughly all lands west and south of what is now New York, (b) a treaty with Pennsylvania relinquishing all lands in that State, and (c) a treaty between New York and the Oneidas and Tuscaroras relinquishing certain of their lands.

In the drafting of the Federal Constitution, Madison, who had attended the Treaty of 1784 and realized the importance of placing the management of affairs of the Iroquois Indians in the hands of the proposed United States Government, introduced a resolution on August 18, 1787, intending to give Congress the power:

To regulate affairs with the Indians as well within as without the limits of the United States.<sup>1</sup>

The principles of this resolution are embodied in the Constitution of the United States.

### E EFFECT OF TREATIES OF 1789 AND 1794

The United States entered into the treaties of 1789<sup>2</sup> and 1794<sup>3</sup> with the Iroquois (Six Nations) Indians, recognizing the Indians as distinct and separate political communities capable of managing their internal affairs as they had always done. These treaties were entered into for the purpose of meeting a serious situation confronting the United States. Great Britain still retained possession of certain forts in New York and the Northwest Territory in violation of the treaty of peace, and was apparently encouraging and provoking the western Indians and the Iroquois to hostilities against the United States—even providing them with arms with which to resist encroachments upon their lands.

The settlement of the Northwest Territory brought the usual friction between the Indians and the settlers which broke out into frontier wars. The Iroquois felt a responsibility toward these western tribes since they believed that part of the fifth culture of these tribes, which were once dependent on the Iroquois was due to the sale by the Iroquois of all of their western lands. The problem confronting the Federal Government was to make peace with the Iroquois, and particularly the Senecas, before the almost inevitable strife began and thus prevent the Iroquois from acting as a spear head in a united general offensive by the scores of western Indian tribes (once subjects of the Iroquois) under their leadership and directing influence.

The Treaty of 1790<sup>4</sup> granted to the Iroquois a substantial annuity and they in turn agreed to continue at peace. These after certain of the influential Seneca chiefs were induced to go to the West on behalf of the peace efforts of the United States. These western Indian wars, nevertheless, created a decided unrest, particularly among the Senecas, and the United States prudently entered into a third treaty with the Iroquois (Six Nations) in 1794,<sup>5</sup> of mutual peace, and a ceding certain of the Seneca's lands to them within the State of New York west of a line drawn due south from Buffalo to the Pennsylvania line.

These several treaties<sup>6</sup> guaranteed to the Iroquois (Six Nations) the right of occupancy of their well defined territories and had the effect of placing the tribes and their reservations beyond the operation and effect of general state laws.

### F FEDERAL MANAGEMENT OF NEW YORK INDIAN AFFAIRS

1 *Education and civilization*.—Some of the first efforts and experiments of the United States Government in educating Indians were with the New York Indians. For a number of years the only effort to educate these Indians was by the aid rendered by the Federal Government and private philanthropy. By about 1800, the State had been making slight efforts to educate the Indians in the State but such efforts were admitted by the State to have done probably as much harm as good.

Aside from the sporadic and the State gave to the Indians nothing in the way of education, the State left the Indians to manage their own internal affairs as they saw fit, as had been implicitly guaranteed by federal treaty. Such activities merely confer a privilege on the Indians and are not an attempt to regulate their internal affairs or tribal matters.

2 *Restrictions on alienation of lands*.—Pursuant to the specific delegation of authority by the Constitution to regulate Indian commerce, Congress immediately imposed restrictions upon the alienation of Indian lands. Where the States claimed the fee title subject to Indian occupancy as claimed by Georgia, or the "preemption right" as claimed by New York, all purchases were prohibited except at treaty under supervision of the United States.

Many, but not all, purchases from the Seneca Nation of Indians (with the exception of one very small tract of a few acres), whether by the State of New York or its grantee of the "preemption right," were made by treaties under the supervision of United States agents appointed for that purpose pursuant to the restrictive act of Congress. Approximately four million acres

<sup>1</sup> Treaty of October 22, 1784, January 9, 1789 and November 11, 1794 *supra*.

<sup>2</sup> For a further discussion see Chapter 12, sec. 2.

<sup>3</sup> "From time to time New York has enacted sundry laws pertaining to the Indians within her borders, has provided schools for their youth, appointed attorneys to protect their interests, and has designated commissioners in some instances to her courts to entertain their complaints." (II Dec No 1800, 8th Cong, 3d sess, 1915, p. 14.)

The State of New York has for 100 years or more legislated for and dealt with the Indians within its borders. The Revised Statutes of the State of New York of 1882, pp. 272-286, show the extent and purport of the legislation. Beginning with chapter 89 of the Laws of 1814 (N. Y.), prohibiting the purchase or occupancy of any Indian lands in New York by any person without the consent of the Legislature, these statutes contain provisions for the improvement of the reservations, to prevent the destruction of timber on the same for the appointment of commissioners on certain reservations and giving them jurisdiction of actions for divorce, and to hear actions to determine title to real estate between Indians, to authorize certain Indians to hold land in severalty and to sell and buy the same, provisions for the appointment of attorneys to represent the Indians, and for the support of schools, ministers and churches on the reservations to authorize the construction of roads upon Indian lands, to prohibit the sale of liquor to the Indians to establish laws of descent among them, and to provide the manner of conveying their lands and restricting conveyance of the same, police regulations, and for the purchase of lands of Indians by the State. 1 L. D. Mann 85 D. (1898).

See also *United States v. Kennedy v. Tyler*, 200 U. S. 33 (1905), *United States v. Waldo*, 204 Fed. 111 (C. C. W. D. N. Y., 1902), and *Seneca v. United States*, 44 Fed. 178 (C. C. N. D. N. Y., 1890).

<sup>6</sup> See Chapter 15, sec. 15.

<sup>1</sup> Treaty October 22, 1784, with the Six Nations, 7 Stat. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Elliot, Jonathan, The Debates in the National State Conventions on the Adoption of the Federal Constitution, vol. 5, (1887 ed.), p. 439.

<sup>3</sup> Treaty of January 9, 1789, 7 Stat. 33.

<sup>4</sup> Treaty of November 11, 1794, 7 Stat. 44.

<sup>5</sup> Treaty of January 9, 1789, 7 Stat. 33.

<sup>6</sup> Treaty of November 11, 1794, 7 Stat. 44, interpreted in 1 Op. A. G. 485 (1821).

of land from time to time were thus purchased from the Seneca Indians under Federal authority.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>2</sup> *Removal to the West—Treaties of 1818 and 1827*—In 1817, and perhaps before, Governor Tompkins of New York was advising for the removal of the New York Indians by the United States to the West. The question of removal was obviously a function which could be exercised only by the Federal Government. Whether the Indians were to be removed at all and if so where to could only be determined by the Federal Government.

On February 12, 1816, the Secretary of War, in authority of the President, gave the New York Indians permission to negotiate with the western tribes, at their own expense, for the purchase of lands. In 1810 and 1811, the Government had some 10 Indians, representing certain New York Indian tribes in expediting Wisconsin with a view of selecting lands and making arrangements with the Indians to cede them for a portion of their country.<sup>3</sup>

On August 19, 1821, the Menomonee Indians (ceded to the Stock Board, Oneida, 1821), the Seneca, St. Regis and Muncie Nations lands in Wisconsin for a consideration paid by these tribes. All but the last named of these tribes were New York Indians. The settlement of members of these tribes on the lands was one of the first removals in the Federal Government's policy of removal of Indian tribes to the West. The uncertain right of the New York Indians in these western lands was in dispute. On February 9, 1841, the United States to settle conflicting claims, negotiated a treaty with the Menomonee,<sup>4</sup> and Winnebago for the benefit of the New York Indians. The lands in which they were previously entitled to share with the other tribes were reduced to exclusive possession and two parcels, one of 500,000 acres and one of 59,120 acres, were purchased for a consideration of \$20,000 paid by the United States, and set aside for the New York Indians.

These lands were set apart in Wisconsin for the future home of the New York Indians provided they removed thereto within 8 years. However, most of the New York Indians failing to migrate had already moved to the West.

In the meantime, Wisconsin was being settled by whites and this Indian reserve was needed for expansion. Accordingly, a treaty was negotiated with the New York Indians to exchange these lands in Wisconsin for lands in Kansas and by treaty of January 17, 1838,<sup>5</sup> this exchange was made. Those of the New York Indians who had already migrated to Wisconsin were secured in the possession of their lands. The first allotment of lands in severally in the United States was to these Indians, an action which anticipated by almost 40 years the general policy of the Federal Government as embodied in the general allotment act of 1887.<sup>6</sup>

The treaty negotiated by the Federal Government with the New York Indians made an exchange of 1,524,000 acres of land in fee simple in Kansas for 485,000 acres at Green Bay, Wisconsin.

<sup>1</sup> The State of New York acquiesced with the Indians all the western one-half of that state by nearly 200 treaties not participated in by the United States Government. (See list of Plaintiffs in *State v. Boyles v. United States*, 36 U.S. 111, vol. 20, p. 8 answering petition to dismiss, Records and Briefs in United States cases, United States Supreme Court.) 1 L. D. Memo. D. 785 (1829). This memorandum analyzes many of the decisions of the New York courts concerning the New York Indians. Indian Office Letter Book C, p. 471.

<sup>2</sup> *New York Indians v. United States*, 30 C. Cls. 413, 414, 415 (1868) 17 Stat. 742.

<sup>3</sup> 7 Stat. 650, interpreted in *New York Indians v. United States*, 170 U.S. 81 (1898), *United States v. New York Indians*, 178 U.S. 464 (1900), *New York Indians v. The United States*, 60 C. Cls. 448 (1908), and 8 Op. A. G. 624 (1841).

<sup>4</sup> Act of February 8, 1837, 24 Stat. 388, 26 U.S.C. 381, et seq.

san. In addition, Congress was to appropriate the sum of \$400,000 for the use of the Indians in emigrating from New York to Kansas and in establishing themselves after arriving in Kansas.

All of the New York tribes of Indians assented to this treaty. However, the St. Regis Indians with their reservation lying in New York and Canada entered into a supplemental article to the effect that they would not be compelled to remove unless they chose to do so.<sup>7</sup> No difficulties were encountered in the negotiation of the treaty except with the Seneca Indians. With these Indians, there was also a deed to the Ogden Land Co., so called (grantee of New York's exemption bill), of all of the Seneca's lands, consisting of the valuable Buffalo Creek Reservation of 49,920 acres, some of which land comprises the site of the city of Buffalo, as well as the Tonawanda Reservation of 12,800 acres it existed at that time, and the Cattaraugus (21,080 acres) and Allegany (90,469 acres) is they now exist.

This deed to the Ogden Land Co., so called, was denounced by the Indians on the ground that it had not been signed by a majority of the chiefs of the Seneca Nation, and that Indian, honor, and fraud had been used and practiced by the Ogden Land Co. in securing many of the signatures of the chiefs to the deed. The treaty was nevertheless recognized as binding by the Federal Government.

The Seneca Nation refused to move to the West to leave its reservations and the Federal Government was not inclined to repeat in respect to the New York Indians any such forced removal as was experienced by the southern Indians a decade before. The Ogden Land Co. accordingly negotiated the compromise Treaty of May 20, 1842,<sup>8</sup> whereby the company released to the Seneca the Allegany and Cattaraugus Reservations and the Seneca released the Buffalo Creek and Tonawanda Reservations. The original consideration was proportionately reduced. The value of the improvements of the individual Indians was to be determined by appraisers appointed by the Secretary of War and the Ogden Land Co.

The Senecas on the Buffalo Creek Reservation gradually withdrew to the Cattaraugus and Allegany Reservations.

In 1815, the United States appointed a special agent for the removal of such of the New York Indians as desired to move to their western lands. He enrolled 271 Indians of whom 78 did not leave New York with the party. He arrived in Kansas on June 15, 1848, with 191 and 17 arrived later. Of this number, 17 returned to New York. Only 42 received patent or certificates of allotment in accordance with the terms of the treaty, and of those, none settled permanently in Kansas.<sup>9</sup> A council was called by the Indian Commissioner June 2, 1846, to determine the final disposition of the Indians on emigration. Only 7 persons requested to be enrolled.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>4</sup> *State encroachment on ceded reservations*—The Legislature of the State of New York, expecting the Indians to remove from the ceded reservations, in 1840 and 1841, enacted laws for the assessment and collection of taxes and for the surveying of the lands, laying out roads and the construction of bridges on the ceded reservations. The Act of May 9, 1840, was declared void by the state courts on the theory that the state could not tax the lands of the Indians, and the Supreme Court of the United States, in *The New York Indians*,<sup>11</sup> in considering the "saving clause" of the Act of May 4, 1841, said:

"\* \* \* But no sale for the purpose of collecting said taxes shall in any manner affect the right of the Indians to occupy said lands." It is true that this clause underlines

<sup>5</sup> Supplemental articles of February 18, 1837, 7 Stat. 651.

<sup>6</sup> 7 Stat. 639.

<sup>7</sup> Sen. Rep. No. 910, 52d Cong., 1st sess., pp. 5-6.

<sup>8</sup> *New York Indians v. United States*, 80 C. Cls. 413, 427 (1898).

<sup>9</sup> 5 Wall. 761 (1868).

to save this right, which the act of 1840 did not, but the rights of the Indians do not depend on this in any other statutes of the State, but upon treaties which are the supreme law of the land, it is to these treaties we must look to ascertain the nature of these rights, and the extent of them (1770s)

5 *Federal recognition of Seneca constitution*—In 1848 a convention of the Seneca Nation was called which promulgated a complete constitution, which provided for the isolation of the chiefs, the establishment of an elective council and courts, and in general altered and modified the entire tribal form of government, though not abolishing it.

There was some question of whether this constitution represented the wishes of the majority of the Indians, and the United States investigated the matter and decided to recognize the new form of government as it might apply to the Indians on the Allegany and Cattaraugus Reservations. William Medill, Commissioner of Indian Affairs, by letter of February 2, 1840, directed the United States Indian agent for New York as follows:

The new form of Government of the Indians on the Cattaraugus and Allegany Reservation having been adopted by a majority, will be recognized by the Government, and so far as it is necessary, the relations of the Government with those Indians, will be made to conform thereto.

6 *Separation from Seneca Nation of Tonawanda band*—As to the Tonawanda Reservation, the compromise Treaty of 1842 did not assist the Ogden Land Co. in gaining possession. The Indians on that reservation protested that they had not been a party to the treaty of either 1838<sup>1</sup> or 1842 and refused to move. In fact none of the chiefs of this band of the Seneca Nation had signed either treaty and the other bands of the Seneca Nation (Cattaraugus, Allegany, and Buffalo Creek), by "selling out" the Tonawanda Reservation, had caused the latter band to split off from the Seneca Nation, an action which was recognized by the Federal Government when the Seneca Nation (Allegany and Cattaraugus) adopted their constitution. The appraisers appointed by the Government and the Ogden Land Co. had attempted to appraise the lands and improvements of the Tonawanda Reservation pursuant to the treaty stipulations:

but had been prevented from so doing by the Indians in possession, and had been removed and left off the land, the Indians not even delaying to procure legal process<sup>2</sup>.

The Ogden Land Co., however, paid into the United States Treasury the whole amount awarded by the arbitrators, and "by force attempted to eject some of the Indians from possession." The Indians brought the matter into the courts by the action of *Blacksmith v. Fellows*,<sup>3</sup> which reached the United States Supreme Court in 1858 in *Fellows v. Blacksmith*.<sup>4</sup> The Supreme

<sup>1</sup> 7 Stat. 598 *supra*

<sup>2</sup> 7 Stat. 550, *supra*

<sup>3</sup> N. Y. State Assembly, Doc. 51, vol. 8 1880, p. 80

<sup>4</sup> 17 N. Y. 402 (1837)

<sup>5</sup> 10 How. 886 (1860)

The Indian reservations now occupied by the New York Indians are the Allegany, Cattaraugus, Oil Springs, Conspicuous,<sup>5</sup> Tonawanda, St. Regis, Tuscarora, Onondaga,<sup>6</sup> Shinnecock,

<sup>5</sup> Material in this section is based, except where otherwise noted, on a report of Paul Gordon on New York Indians (Indian Office Files, 1896)

<sup>6</sup> The Conspicuous Reservation is actually in Pennsylvania, but residents are recognized by Seneca of the Allegany and Cattaraugus Reservations

Coast decided that even though the Indians had sold their lands they were to be considered as on the land under their original right of possession and entitled to the protection of treaties and that they could be removed only by the United States Government.

The formal recognition by the United States of the Tonawanda tribe of Indians, by the Treaty of 1876,<sup>7</sup> as a separate and distinct tribe of Indians, independent of the Seneca Nation on the Allegany and Cattaraugus Reservations, is significant in view of the history of the bands of the Seneca Indians. The Tonawanda were situated with their chiefs who had refused to participate in the sale of their lands, and this tribe has continued to regulate its internal affairs under its original tribal form of government and has continued to enforce its ancient laws, usages, and customs as modified by practice.

7 *Indian leases*—Prior to 1875, the village of Salamanca on the Allegany Reservation grew up through numerous alleged leases of Indian lands, ostensibly under state laws and authority, but contrary to federal laws. A careful consideration of the validity of these leases under state authority led state courts to the conclusion that such leases were void as being in violation of federal restrictions on Indian lands against leasing or alienation. To place these illegal leases on a legal basis, the state legislature passed a concurrent resolution as follows:

Whereas, The Legal title of the State of New York lies at different times, divided and confirmed leases between Indian and white settlers on the Allegany Indian reservation in said State, and

Whereas, The courts of this State have decided that said Indian title is null and void, the Congress of the United States alone possessing power to deal with and for the Indians in said State, now therefore,

Resolved (if the Senate concur), That our Senators and Representatives in Congress are requested to lay the matter before Congress, at an early day, and procure the passage of a law, or take some action for the relief of said white settlers.

Resolved (if the Senate concur), That a copy of this resolution be furnished to each of the members of the Senate and Congress from this State.<sup>8</sup>

Congress legislated part of these leases for 5 years and provided for the establishment of certain villages on the Cattaraugus and Allegany Indian Reservations, and further provided for new and renewal leases.<sup>9</sup> Provision was also made for the extension of the highway laws of the State of New York over the Allegany and Cattaraugus Reservations of the Seneca Nation "with the consent of said Seneca Nation in council." By this act, as amended by Act of September 30, 1870,<sup>10</sup> and Act of February 28, 1901,<sup>11</sup> the Federal Government has regulated leases on the Allegany and Cattaraugus Indian Reservations and continues to do so.

<sup>7</sup> Treaty of November 5, 1875, 11 Stat. 785

<sup>8</sup> N. Y. Session Laws, 1875, 98th sess., p. 819

<sup>9</sup> Act of February 13, 1875, 18 Stat. 490 (Seneca), discussed in *Seneca v. United States*, 44 Fed. 178 (C. C. N. D. N. Y. 1900)

<sup>10</sup> 23 Stat. 558 (Seneca Nation)

<sup>11</sup> 21 Stat. 519 (Seneca Nation) Also applicable to Oil Springs Reservation

and Poospatuck. All save the Shinnecock and Poospatuck, which are on Long Island, are inhabited by descendants of the famous Iroquois League of Six Nations (originally Five Nations, the sixth, the Tuscarora, joining the League in 1722). The Tuscarora and Onondaga Reservations are held by the Tuscarora and Onondaga Nations. The St. Regis Reservation

<sup>12</sup> For a discussion of the Onondaga Reservation, see Memo by C. B. Collett, 5 L. D. Memo D. J. 179, April 20, 1895

## SECTION 2. THE PRESENT STATUS OF TRIBAL GOVERNMENT<sup>12</sup>



vation is held by the St. Regis Mohawks, the Tonawanda by the Tonawanda Band of Senecas, and the Allegany, Chautauque, and Oil Springs Reservations by 'The Seneca Nation of Indians,' a corporate body under the laws of New York. The Compulsory Reservation of Pennsylvania is held by the descendants of Continental settlers who unite with the Seneca Nation of Indians affecting that nation. The Indians of this reservation are grouped with those of the Allegany Reservation for purposes of local government and voting.

## A SENECA NATION

The Government of the Seneca Indians is covered by Articles 4 and 5 of the New York Indian Code.<sup>10</sup> The constitution now in force among these Indians provides for three departments of government: executive, legislative and judiciary. The legislative power is vested in a council of 16 members elected biennially, 8 from the Cattaraugus Reservation and 8 from the Allegany Reservation.<sup>11</sup>

The executive power is vested in a president who presides, fills vacancies, and has a casting vote.<sup>1</sup>

The Judiciary power is vested in peacekeepers' and surrogate courts. The peacekeepers' courts are composed of three members each from the respective reservations. Peacekeepers' courts are given powers to enforce the attendance of witnesses in the same manner as provided for courts of justices of the peace of the state.<sup>1</sup> Peacekeepers, by statute, may punish

<sup>a</sup>Members of the several nations have intermarried and have taken up residence "abroad" with the result that members of every nation are found on every reservation.

<sup>20</sup> McKinney's Con. Laws of New York Annotated, Bk 25 New York Indian Code

The Allegany Reservation, claimed by the Seneca Indians, contains 90,000 acres, and is located on both sides of the Allegany River. It is about 40 miles long, and averages from 1 to 2 miles in width. It is a part of the state specifically reserved to the Seneca Indians in the treaty with Robert Morris at "Big Tree" September 17, 1797. This entire reservation is subject to the preemption right of claim or purchase by the Federal Land Co., to which interests in the same have been fully made.

The Cattaraugus Reservation contains 21,650 acres, located principally in Blue County, a small part lying in each of the counties of Cattaraugus and Chautauque. This reservation was conveyed to the Seneca Indians by William Wulnick et al in preference of the Ogden Land Co., by a patent dated June 9, 1880, (7 Stat. 70), in return for which the Seneca Indians surrendered to the company certain other lands, which have been conveyed to them by the latter at Big Tonsil, and which were also conveyed to the company in payment of the Ogden Land Co. with right being specifically retained in the agreement referred to.

[illegible]

<sup>42</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 41-42. See amended constitution of the Seneca Nation, 1891 which provides for annual election of councilors (sec. 2).

<sup>52</sup> New York Indian Code, *supra* note 41, sec. 41.

<sup>26</sup> *Ibid.* - sec 48. Although the New

vides for similarity in proceedings only insofar as compelling attendance

to grant divorces between Indians residing on the reservations and to determine all questions between individual Indians involving title or possession of lands.<sup>24</sup> Appeal may be taken to the Council.<sup>25</sup>

The surrogate court is composed of one person from the Allegheny and one from the Cattaraugus Reservation, elected by voters of each reservation for a term of 2 years. The procedure is the same as in the surrogate court of the State, and appeals may be taken to the court.

Tierly making is declared to be a prerogative of the council, subject to approval by three-fourths of the legal voters and consent of three-fourths of the members of the assembly.<sup>45</sup> The constitution provides for a clerk and a treasurer,<sup>46</sup> and permits the council to provide for highway commissioners, overseers of the poor, assessors and policemen.<sup>47</sup> Officers may be removed for cause.<sup>48</sup>

Male Indians of 21 or over who shall not have been convicted of a felony, are eligible to vote and hold office.<sup>61</sup>

of witnesses is concerned the 1891 constitution provides for such uniformity also in procedure and proceedings. (See 4)

<sup>11</sup>On the power of the paramount courts of the Seneca Indians of the Cattaraugus Reservation see *Washington v. Parker*, 7 F Supp 120 (C D W D N Y 1934). In the absence of congressional legislation the federal courts lack jurisdiction over internal questions relating to property rights of individual Indians of the Cattaraugus Reservation. *United States v. Seneca Nation*, 274 Fed 948 (C D W D N Y 1921). *See v. Mayhew*, 6 F Supp 669 (C D W D N Y 1935).

The court in *Rice v. Mayhew* 2 F Supp 809 (D C W D N Y, 1938) described the Seneca government as follows:

[illegible]

The Peacemakers' Court did not originate with the state. It was the creation of the Indians themselves. As the court in *Williams v. Snow*, *supra*, said "It is an Indian court which has been recognized and given strength and authority by statute. It does not owe its existence to the state statute and is only in a qualified sense a state court." *Matter of Patterson v. Council of Seneca Nation*, 245 N. Y. 498, 157 N. E. 784. (P. 671.)

<sup>10</sup> New York Indian Code, *supra*, sec 50

<sup>10</sup> Amended Constitution, *supra* note 4.

of *Idol*, p. 5

<sup>20</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 6

<sup>100</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 8.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, sec 9

The council is given power to make laws not inconsistent with the Constitution of the United States, the State of New York, or the Seneca Nation.<sup>1</sup>

The constitution may be altered or amended at any time by a prescribed process.<sup>2</sup>

#### B TONAWANDA BAND OF SENECA

The government of the Tonawanda band is separate and distinct from that of the rest of the Seneca Nation.<sup>3</sup>

The legal division of the government of this band is placed in a council of the chiefs,<sup>4</sup> who are typically chosen as in the days of the Confederate League of the Iroquois. The power and jurisdiction of this council is recognized and supported by the Indian code of the New York State law.<sup>5</sup> The council is given power to pass bylaws not inconsistent with this law and is given jurisdiction over animal trespasses, lands, and fences.<sup>6</sup>

The judiciary appears to be in the hands of three peacekeepers elected annually by Tonawanda Senecas, males over 21 years of age may vote. Peacekeepers try cases involving local offenses and differences among Indians, and hear suits for divorce.

Additional officers are a president, clerk, treasurer, and militia.

#### C ST REGIS MOHAWKS<sup>7</sup>

The local government of the St Regis Mohawks<sup>8</sup> is covered by a separate article of the Indian code of the State of New York.<sup>9</sup> This permit and supports a local government limit of three elected chiefs, and three sachems, who serve when the

chiefs are unable to do so.<sup>10</sup> One chief and one sachem are elected each year, to serve for a period of 3 years,<sup>11</sup> by male Indians 21 or over residing on the American side of the international boundary, and entitled to draw yearly annuity money.<sup>12</sup>

The three chiefs have power to pass bylaws not inconsistent with law, relating to common land, fences and animal trespasses.<sup>13</sup> Five jurisdiction over allotment of lands,<sup>14</sup> then consents is necessary for sales of timber,<sup>15</sup> and they may hear differences arising among Indians regarding trespass and titles to land.<sup>16</sup> The only other elective officer provided for is that of clerk.<sup>17</sup>

#### D TUSCARORA NATION

The Tuscarora Reservation is governed by chiefs of the Tuscarora Nation,<sup>18</sup> fully recognized by the New York code,<sup>19</sup> who have been given power to allot lands,<sup>20</sup> and control timber sales.<sup>21</sup> The statute does not provide for a peacekeepers' court on the Tuscarora Reservation. The statute provides no mechanism for election of chiefs and they appear to be chosen by ancient methods.

<sup>1</sup> Ind. sec. 109, 110

<sup>2</sup> Ind. sec. 110

<sup>3</sup> Ind. sec. 105

<sup>4</sup> Ind. sec. 107

<sup>5</sup> Ind. sec. 102

<sup>6</sup> Ind. sec. 101, 104

<sup>7</sup> Ind. sec. 106

<sup>8</sup> An attorney is appointed by the Governor who acts as treasurer and prosecutor for the band.

<sup>9</sup> The Tuscarora Reservation lies in Niagara County about 9 miles north of Niagara Falls and contains 6,349 acres. The Tuscarora Indians have been adopted by the Iroquois League as one of the Six Nations, by deed dated March 30, 1790, the Seneca Nation granted 1 square mile (640 acres) to the Tuscarora Indians. (Liber 1, folio 50, Land Books of Niagara County.) It is reported that subsequently the Holland Land Co., assignee of Robert Morris' title, this grant and gave to the Tuscarora 1,240 acres, more, but no record of any paper title to this effect can be found. At any rate, the Tuscarora occupy and claim these lands as a part of their present tenure, which are subject to the preemption right of the Ogden Land Co. (7 Stat. 560) although the Indians deny this, basing their claim on a decree of the State court in Buffalo handed down in 1850. This suit resulted from an agreement with the Federal Government, January 15, 1834, under which the Six Nations were to remove west of the Mississippi River and in anticipation of their removal the chiefs of the Tuscarora Tribe executed a deed to Thomas Ludlow Ogden and Joseph Fellows, purchase-men of the Ogden Land Co., giving to them and Ogden and Fellows, as owners of the preemption right, the 1,240 acres here referred to. The deed was placed in the hands of Hiram B. Potter, in escrow, pending the performance of certain conditions precedent to delivery. The expected removal failed to materialize and in 1849 Hiram B. Potter et al., chiefs of the tribe, instituted suit against Hiram B. Potter and Joseph Fellows (Thomas L. Ogden then being deceased), looking to a surrender and cancellation of the deed. A verdict in favor of the Indians was rendered and the deed canceled by the decree of the court, which resulted only in placing the matter in statu quo as far as the preemption right of Ogden and Fellows was concerned. The execution of the deed was an admission of the acceptance of the preemption right and the contention of the Indians that the decree of the court canceling the deed also effectually extinguished the right of preemption in the Ogden parties does not appear well founded. The title in the case still rests on file in the county clerk's office at Buffalo.

About the year 1800 a delegation of Tuscarora Indians visited the governor of North Carolina and negotiated a sale of their lands in that State for approximately \$15,000, which money was deposited with the United States Treasury. In 1804 Congress authorized the Secretary of War to purchase with this money additional land for these Indians. With these funds 4,829 acres, lying to the south and east of the 1,240 acres already occupied by them, was purchased for the Tuscarora Indians. Title to these lands was taken by the Secretary of War in trust for the Indians, but subsequently (January 5, 1809) the lands were conveyed directly to the Tuscarora Tribe who now own the fee (Book "A" p. 6 Niagara County Clerk's office). (H. Doc. No. 270, 69th Cong., 2d sess., 1925, pp. 12-18.)

<sup>18</sup> New York Indian Code, supra, art. 7

<sup>19</sup> Ind. sec. 95

<sup>20</sup> Ind. sec. 90, 98

<sup>1</sup> Amended Constitution supra, sec. 19. The statute (supra, in art. 8, sec. 74) limits the legislative power of the council to the passing of bylaws and ordinances relative to common land, fences, trespass of animals.

<sup>2</sup> Ind., sec. 10

<sup>3</sup> Cf. New York Indian Code supra in 49 which deals with the Tonawanda Senecas separately, in art. 6.

<sup>4</sup> The Tonawanda Reservation now comprises but 7,540 acre lying partly in Erie Genesee and Niagara Counties. Originally it comprised upward of 45,000 acres, being a part of the lands reserved to the Seneca Indians in the sale to Robert Morris at Big Tree. This reservation was conveyed to Thomas Ludlow Ogden and Joseph Fellows by agreement with the Six Nations, dated January 15, 1834 (7 Stat. 530), and the subsequent treaty with the Senecas of May 20, 1842 (7 Stat. 686). The lands embraced within the present reserve were purchased from Ogden and Fellows for the sum of \$100,000, in accordance with article 6 of the treaty with the Tonawanda Indians, dated November 5, 1837 (11 Stat. 716). Title was first taken in the Society of the Interior who held the lands until February 14, 1862, on which date, by deed they were conveyed to the commission of the State of New York in trust and in fee for the Tonawanda Indians. This settlement originally extinguished whatever preemption right the Ogden Land Co. ever had in and to the lands within this reservation. (H. Doc. No. 1880, 63d Cong. 2d sess. 1916 p. 12.)

<sup>5</sup> Ind., sec. 82. Although this section provides for the filling of vacancies in elective offices by the chiefs it does not specifically provide that only a chief may be elected.

<sup>6</sup> Ind. art. 80

<sup>7</sup> See Memo of C. B. Collett, S. L. D. Memo D. J. 248, May 14, 1886

<sup>8</sup> Ind.

<sup>9</sup> Subsequent to an act of the New York Legislature in 1791 authorizing the sale of waste lands in New York, Alexander McComb attempted to purchase all lands between Lake Champlain and the St. Lawrence proposing to enclose a tract of 6 miles square for the St. Regis Indians. His offer was rejected. In 1795, 1798, and 1794 the Seven Nations of Canada, Iroquois, who had sided with the British in the Revolution, waited upon the Governor of New York asserting their rights to a greater tract, but without favorable results. In 1798 the New York Legislature authorized the Governor to appoint a commissioner to arrange with the Indian title to lands in the northern part of the state. On May 31, 1798, 7 Stat. 65, a treaty was made before Ogden as Commissioner for the United States by which the St. Regis Indians ceded all lands to the United States except an area of 6 miles square at St. Regis, a mile square on the Salmon River, reserving \$3,500 and an annuity of \$250.

<sup>10</sup> New York Indian Code, supra, art. 8

## E ONONDAGA NATION

The governing body of the Onondaga Nation appears to be a council of chiefs, chosen and met chief according to dictates of ancient tradition. This body is recognized by reference by the Indian Code of the New York State law.<sup>11</sup> It has jurisdiction to lease lands, with the consent of the Agent,<sup>12</sup> and its consent is necessary before timber may be removed.<sup>13</sup> It also settles disputes among Indians.

## F CAYUGA NATION

The Cayuga Nation<sup>14</sup> has no reservation of its own,<sup>15</sup> but maintains a tribal organization of chiefs, and chiefs forming the governing body, with headquarters on the Cattaraugus Reservation.<sup>16</sup>

## G SHINNECOCK INDIANS

The Shinnecock Indians,<sup>17</sup> occupying the 450 acre Shinnecock Reservation on Long Island, have always been distinct and

<sup>11</sup>Ind. Art. 3, sec. 22, 23 and 24.

<sup>12</sup>The Onondaga Reservation contains 6100 acres and is located in Onondaga County about 5 miles south of the city of Syracuse. Prior to 1784 this reservation embraced something over 67,000 acres. March 11 of that year however, the Indians sold over three fourths of their reservation to the State, and by subsequent treaties in 1793, 1817 and 1822 the reservation was reduced to its present area. Under State laws, the Indians are authorized to lease land owned or possessed by individuals, and small tracts within the reservation are so leased. The lands within this reservation are not covered by the claim of the Ogden Land Co. (H. Doc. No. 1890, 69d Cong. 2d sess. 1915 p. 12).

<sup>13</sup>Ind. sec. 24.

<sup>14</sup>Ind., sec. 22.

<sup>15</sup>By the Treaty of February 27, 1790, the Cayuga Nation sold certain lands to the State of New York, leaving only 100 square miles around Cayuga Lake a small parcel on Seneca River and a square mile at Cayuga Ferry. These reservations were later sold to the State, on July 27, 1795. The larger portion of the Cayuga Indians removed to the west of the Mississippi but approximately 200 remain in New York. They live for the most part with the Senecas, but a few are with the Tourondags.

<sup>16</sup>For reference to the reservation of the Cayuga and Seneca who removed to Indian Territory see Chapter 29.

<sup>17</sup>The Cayugas are not listed by the New York Indian Code.

<sup>18</sup>There are about 100 persons belonging to this tribe.

separate from the Iroquois League, although at one time it is said they paid tribute to the Mohawks.

The New York Indian Code<sup>18</sup> provides for the election of three trustees by the adult males who have lived on the Shinnecock Reservation for 10 months prior to the election date.<sup>19</sup> These trustees have authority over tribal land and timber matters.<sup>20</sup> Authority, however, is vested in the justices of the peace in the town of Southampton to pass on leases of tribal lands proposed by the trustees.<sup>21</sup>

## H POOSEPATUCK INDIANS

About a dozen families were reported in 1936 to occupy the 50 acre Poosapatuck Reservation on Long Island.<sup>22</sup> There appears to be no extant statutes specifically relating to this reservation, which had its origin in a grant by Governor William Smith in 1700.<sup>23</sup> Land matters are managed by a board of trustees elected annually in April<sup>24</sup> under authority of the General Provisions<sup>25</sup> of the New York State Indian Law.<sup>26</sup>

The Shinnecock Reservation, containing some 450 acres is located on a neck of land running into Shinnecock Bay Long Island. Southampton is an early colonial town established in the seventeenth century and the town trustees negotiated with 'Shinnecock' chief of the tribe for a site for the tribe. Tribal tradition has it that the chief sold out to the whites and slipped with the money. While this does not comport with accepted ideas of the honesty and integrity of aboriginal chiefs yet it is a matter of record that the town trustees of Southampton in the early days gave a lease for a thousand years to the Shinnecock Indians covering some 4000 acres, known as the Shinnecock Hills and Shinnecock Neck. Matters stood thus until about the middle of the nineteenth century when the town had developed to such an extent that a more satisfactory arrangement was desired. Accordingly, in 1879 the state authorized the town trustees to negotiate with the Indians for a cession of their household estate. An agreement was reached under which the Indians surrendered the hills in exchange for which they received in fee the Shinnecock Neck. (H. Doc. No. 1990, 69d Cong., 2d sess. 1915, p. 14.)

<sup>18</sup>New York Indian Code, *supra* Art. 0.

<sup>19</sup>Ind., sec. 120.

<sup>20</sup>Ind. secs. 121, 122.

<sup>21</sup>Ind., sec. 121.

<sup>22</sup>Report on the Shinnecock and Poosapatuck Indian Reservations in Relation to the Reorganization Act, by Allan G. Hooper, January 1936 (Indian Office files).

<sup>23</sup>Ind.

<sup>24</sup>Ind.

<sup>25</sup>New York Indian Code, *supra* Art. 2.

## SPECIAL LAWS RELATING TO OKLAHOMA

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page		Page
Section 1 Oklahoma tribes.....	425	Section 10 Trusts of restricted funds of number of Five Tribes.....	444
Section 2 Removal.....	426	Section 11 Inheritance among Five Civilized Tribes.....	444
Section 3 Self-Government.....	426	A Intestate succession.....	444
Section 4 Government of Indian Territory.....	427	B Wills.....	443
Section 5 Statehood.....	428	C Probate jurisdiction.....	445
Section 6 Termination of tribal government—Five Civilized Tribes.....	429	D Partition.....	446
Section 7 Enfranchisement—Five Civilized Tribes.....	430	Section 12 Special laws governing Osage Tribe.....	446
Section 8 Alienation and taxation of allotted lands of Five Tribes.....	434	A Allotments.....	447
A Cherokees.....	434	B Headrights and complicity.....	450
B Choctaws and Chickasaws.....	435	C Inheritance.....	454
C Chickasaws.....	437	D Leasing.....	454
D Seminoles.....	438	1 Tribal oil and gas and mineral leases.....	454
E Five Civilized Tribes as a group.....	439	2 Agricultural leases of restricted lands.....	455
Section 9 Leasing of allotted lands of Five Civilized Tribes.....	442	Section 13 The Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act.....	455

The laws governing the Indian of Oklahoma are so voluminous that analysis of them would require a lifetime in itself. In fact, two volumes have already been written on the subject<sup>1</sup> and at least two more are in the course of preparation. No attempt, therefore, will be made in this volume to deal *in extenso* with this mass of legislation or with the thousands of state and federal cases in which that legislation is applied and construed. It must be recognized, however, that in many respects the statutes and legal principles discussed in other chapters of this work are generally applicable to Indians of the United States, also apply to Oklahoma Indians, while in other respects Oklahoma Indians, or certain groups thereof, are excluded from the scope of such statutes and legal principles. In order to

clarify the scope of the laws, decisions and rulings discussed in other chapters of this work, it is therefore deemed appropriate to survey the most important fields in which Oklahoma Indians have received distinctive treatment and which present distinctive legal problems.

These fields include enrollment, property laws affecting the Five Civilized Tribes' taxation and among the Osages, questions of heir rights, complicity, wills, and leasing. In each field our effort will be to note how its principles, generally applicable to Indians, are applicable or inapplicable in Oklahoma, rather than to explore the distinctive problems of the various Oklahoma tribes, many of which are still unsettled by the courts.

Before proceeding to this survey, however, it is useful to pass over in brief review the historical background out of which the peculiarities of Oklahoma Indian law emerge.

<sup>1</sup> *Miller Oklahoma Indian Land Laws* (2d ed. 1924). *Reidson Indian Land Laws* (2d ed. 1921).

## SECTION 1 OKLAHOMA TRIBES

Reference is sometimes made to the Five Civilized Tribes (the Cherokees, Choctaws, Chickasaws, Creeks and Seminoles), and the Osages, as if they were the only tribes resident in the State of Oklahoma.<sup>2</sup> In fact, the Indian tribes residing in the State include also the Cheyenne, Arapaho, Apache, Comanche, Kiowa, Kiowa-Apache, Wichita, Kaw, Otse, Ponk, Pawnee, Pawnee-Pontic, Shawnee, Ottawa, Quapaw, Seneca, Wyandotte, Iowa, Sac and Fox, Kickapoo and Potawatomi.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>2</sup> Former Commissioner of Indian Affairs Leupp after a blunder by a Congressman who drafted an amendment which exempted from the operation "the Indians of the Indian Territory" out of which the State of Oklahoma was later carved and of its passage by the House of Representatives in the belief that the Five Civilized Tribes were the only Indians in the Territory. Leupp, *The Indian and His Problem* (1916), p. 303.

<sup>3</sup> See Act of June 18, 1894, sec. 13 48 Stat. 984, 988 which excluded from its provisions these tribes in the State of Oklahoma. The tribes in the Oklahoma number not less than 100,000 members (Hearings before the Comm. on Ind. Aff. on H. R. 2531, 74th Cong., 1st sess., 1935, p. 9). There are 75,000 members of the Five Civilized Tribes of whom about 28,000 are half to full blood (ibid. p. 90). The Osage number over 8,000, of which about 650 are full bloods (ibid. p. 113). The remaining

Many general statutes are expressly made applicable to the Five Civilized Tribes<sup>4</sup> or the Osages<sup>5</sup> or to these nations and the Osages<sup>6</sup> as to all tribes in Oklahoma.<sup>7</sup> Congress has passed many special laws for Oklahoma tribes, especially for the Five Civilized Tribes and the Osages.<sup>8</sup>

Indians of Oklahoma number about 100,000 of which about 70 percent are of half or more Indian blood. (Hearings before the Comm. on Ind. Aff. on H. R. 2531, 74th Cong. 1st sess., 1935, p. 21).

<sup>4</sup> Act of July 31, 1882, 22 Stat. 179, R. S. 2133 25 U. S. C. 284. Act of January 6, 1883, 22 Stat. 400, Act of August 9, 1888, 25 Stat. 892, 25 U. S. C. 181.

<sup>5</sup> Act of June 24, 1893, sec. 1 32 Stat. 1037 47 U. S. C. 104a.

<sup>6</sup> Act of June 25, 1910, sec. 88, 36 Stat. 853, 858, 25 U. S. C. 955, similarly, amendment by the Act of February 14, 1913, Stat. 875, 879. Also see Act of June 30, 1910, sec. 1, 41 Stat. 8, 25 U. S. C. 168, which is also inapplicable to the Chippewas of Minnesota and the Menominee of Wisconsin.

<sup>7</sup> Act of June 18, 1894, sec. 13 48 Stat. 984, 988, 25 U. S. C. 478.

<sup>8</sup> See other sections of this chapter. On Five Civilized Tribes also see Act of March 1, 1897, 34 Stat. 1035 1037 25 U. S. C. 139; Act of May 24, 1902, 43 Stat. 252, 270, 25 U. S. C. 124. For an example of a special law applying to lesser known Oklahoma tribes see Act of June 30, 1919, sec. 17, 41 Stat. 3 20 25 U. S. C. 125 (Quapaw Agency).

## SECTION 2 REMOVAL

Few of these tribes were indigenous to this part of the country. It was to Oklahoma, originally "Indian Territory," that Indians residing on lands desired by other purposes migrated or were moved by the United States Government.<sup>1</sup> Attorney General Lincoln<sup>2</sup> described the conditions under

See Chapter 7, sec. 3. Tribes were moved to Oklahoma from the Atlantic seaboard, many from the Middle West, and even as far north as western New York. References being to the Comm on Ind Affs on H P 62 1 7th Cong, Sess 1855 p 91. The Attorney General said:

"The Choctaws were among the most powerful of the aboriginal nations, and occupied the principal part of the country now comprising the States of South and North Carolina, Georgia, Alabama and Tennessee. It was as the result of several treaties that they relinquished their soil to the United States and were finally moved to the Indian Territory now occupied by them and which was set apart for them in 1830, for the territory they had abandoned and ceded to the United States.

"The Indians thus accepted the United States by repeated treaties, and in 1830 shall be a permanent home (Act of Jan 11, 1830, paragraph 7 Stat 431) in the Choctaws, and be and remain their territory" (ibid) and guarantee that "the land and people shall remain in the country, and that it shall be conveyed to them by patent subject to the single condition that the lands ceded shall be ceded to the United States, by law the Indian tribes shall become extinct or shall abandon their territory (18th April 1834 7 Stat 431, Act of 29 July 1834 sec 3 4 Stat 411) (Cited in 19 Op A G 42 44-44 11887.)

See 44 Op A G 275 (1921) for the history of the Choctaw removal see 5 Op A G 320 (1851), *Holmes v Jay* 17 Wall 211 (1874). Kinney, A Centennial Law—A Civilization Work (1917) pp 27-50 discusses the action for the removal of Indians. See also Chiles. The Office of Indian

which the Five Civilized Tribes migrated to Oklahoma in the 1830's.

When the Southern portion of the United States east of the Mississippi was settled, the three civilized tribes (Choctaws, Chickasaws, Chickasaws, Cheeks, and Seminole) were occupying and claiming ownership of all that territory.

By treaty and the use of a delicate force in justice, the Indians agreed to take up their land, the land that was afterward designated as Indian Territory. It was a part of the consideration for the removal that they should possess the said land unmolested for ever in its independent people with their own forms of government and should not in its future time be molested by having extended around them the lines of, or by having placed over them the jurisdiction of a Territory or State or by being encroached upon by the extension in any way of the limits of an existing Territory or State.

The westward migration of these and other tribes has been considered elsewhere.<sup>3</sup>

Affairs, His History Activities and Organization (1927) pp 89-142 discuss the removal of the Five Civilized Tribes, Indian Territory and Oklahoma. On removal of Indians to Oklahoma, see also *ibid* pp 25-34. And see *Indian Territory* in the Removal of the Five Civilized Tribes of Indians (1921), Lumsden, Removal of the Choctaw Indians from Georgia (1907).

See Chapter 1, sec. 4B and Chapter 17, sec. 6.

SECTION 3 SELF-GOVERNMENT<sup>4</sup>

Nations guarantees of tribal self-government and of territorial integrity were made to induce the Indians to sign the moral treaties. The Supreme Court in the case of *Atlantic and Pacific Railroad Company v. United States* described some of the guarantees:

"... a reference to some of the treaties, under which if the Indian Territory is held by the Indians indicates, that it stand in an entirely different relation to the United States from other Territories, and that for most purposes it is to be considered as an independent country. Thus in the treaty of December 29, 1817, 7 Stat 476, with the Choctaws, whereby the United States acquired and conveyed by patent to the Choctaws a portion of this territory, the United States, in article 5, covenanted and agreed that the land ceded to the Choctaws should "in no future time without their consent be included within the territorial limits or jurisdiction of any State or Territory," and by further treaty of August 16, 1810, 9 Stat 871, provided (Art 1) "that the lands now occupied by the Choctaw Nation shall be secured to the whole Choctaw people for their common use and benefit, and a patent shall be issued for the same." So too by treaty with the Choctaws of September 27, 1830, 7 Stat 333 granting a portion of the Indian Territory to them, the United States (Art 4) secured the "Choctaw Nation of Red People the jurisdiction and government of all the persons and property that may be within their limits west, so that no Territory or State shall ever have the right to pass laws for the government of the Choctaw Nation of Red People, and their descendants, and that no part of the land granted shall ever be included in any Territory or State, but the United States shall forever secure said Choctaw Nation from, and against, all laws except such as from time to time may be enacted in their own national councils, not inconsistent," etc. And in a treaty of March 21, 1852, 7 Stat 396, with the Cheeks (Art 14) the Cheek country west of the Mississippi

was solemnly guaranteed to these Indians, "that shall any State or Territory ever have a right to pass laws for the government of such Indians, but they shall be allowed to govern themselves, so far as may be compatible with the general jurisdiction which Congress may think proper to exercise over them."

Under the guarantees of these and other similar treaties the Indians have proceeded to establish and carry on independent governments of their own, enacting and executing their own laws, punishing their own criminals, appointing their own officers, raising and expending their own revenues. Their position, as early as 1875, is indicated by the following extract from the opinion of this court in *Marley v. Cox*, 18 How 300, 308:

"A question has been suggested whether the Cherokee people should be considered or treated as a foreign state or territory. The fact that they are under the Constitution of the Union and subject to acts of Congress regulating trade, is a sufficient answer to the suggestion. They are not only within our jurisdiction, but the faith of the nation is pledged for their protection. In some respects they bear the same relation to the Federal Government as a Territory did in its own and grade of Government under the ordinance of 1787. Such Territory passed its own laws, subject to the approval of Congress, and its inhabitants were subject to the Constitution and acts of Congress. The principal difference consists in the fact that the Choctaws enact their own laws, under the restriction stated, appoint their own officers, and pay their own expenses. Thus, however, is no reason why the laws and proceedings of the Choctaw Territory, so far as relates to rights claimed under them, should not be placed upon the same footing as other Territories in the Union. It is not a foreign, but a domestic territory, a Territory which organized under our Constitution and laws."

Similar language is used with reference to these Indians in *Holmes v. Jay*, 17 Wall 211, 212 (1874) (17 Op 436-437).

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 7 and Chapter 9, see EA and B.

<sup>2</sup> 106 U S 415 (1897).

Practically all of the Oklahoma tribes were well organized when they moved to the Indian Territory, and in the new land

4 " They maintained complete governments, particularly in the East, five tribes here, they had their own schools, their own legislative assemblies, their own courts. And they did the job well. Under all the conditions, they made a record which would have been creditable to any municipality or State in this country."

Certain of the Five Civilized Tribes adopted the political forms of the white world,' and administrative rulings and opinions have frequently upheld their power of self government "

<sup>24</sup> Hearings before the Comm on Ind Aff on S 2047, 74th Cong, 1st sess 1885 p 10 With the exception of the Seminoles all the Five Civilized Tribes had written and printed constitutions and laws. Schmedlunet, The Office of Indian Affairs, Its History Activities and Organisation (1927), p 127 But see Leupp The Indian and His Problem (1910), p 332

The Attorney General in advising the Secretary of the Treasury that a national bank cannot lawfully be established at Muscogee a town in the territory of the Creek Nations said

The right of the Creek Nation to govern itself, so carefully guarded and protected by these treaties, is a right founded on a consideration of great value, moving directly from the Creek Nation to the United States, and the faith of the latter is pledged for the protection of the Creeks in all the rights secured to them by the treaties mentioned (19 Op. A. G. 842-844 (1889)).

The Supreme Court in *Turner v. United States*, 219 U.S. 474 (1919), said

The Chick or Muskogee Nation or Tribe of Indians had in 1890 a population of 10,000. Subject to the control of Congress, they then exercised within a defined territory the powers of a sovereign people by having a tribal government known as the Council of Chiefs and a court system with a chief and benches, executive, legislative, and judicial. The territory was divided into six districts, and each district was provided with a judge. (Pp. 854-856.)

The Supreme Court in the case of *Mulla v. Denallen* 276 U. S. 34, 60-61 (1928) said

For many years the Creeks maintained a government of their own, with executive legislative and judicial branches. They were located in the Indian Territory and occupied a large dis-

## SECTION 4 GOVERNMENT OF INDIAN TERRITORY

As a result of the adherence of the Five Civilized Tribes to the Confederacy during the Civil War, the President of the United States was empowered to abrogate existing treaties with these Indians.<sup>17</sup> Accordingly, during 1866 new treaties were negotiated with each of the tribes.<sup>18</sup> For the purpose of forming a federal Indian government of the tribes, certain identical provisions were inserted in each treaty.<sup>19</sup> Though the plan failed to materialize,<sup>20</sup> the territory intended to be thus organized became known as the Indian Territory.<sup>21</sup>

Soon it was apparent that the seclusion and isolation which the Indians sought was to be disturbed. Land hungry whites

<sup>25</sup> Act of July 5, 1862, 12 Stat 512-528.

<sup>22</sup> For further details, see Chapter 3, sec 4, Chapter 8 and previous provisions in some of the treaties for the removal by the United States Government of freedom from the Indian Territory were not fulfilled (The Cherokee Freedmen, 193 U S 115, 126 (1904)), and provisions for the granting of tribal membership and other rights to freedmen were often not complied with by the tribe or completed after a long delay. See Wadwell, A Political History of the Cherokee Nation (1989), p. 106. The Cherokee Freedmen, 193 U S 115, 126 (1904). The Freedmen of the Cherokee Nation is discussed in *Choctaw and Chickasaw Nations v United States*, 81 Ct Cl 69 (1988), which cites many leading cases. Also see *Keresthough Society v Lone*, 41 App D Ct 719 (1914).

<sup>18</sup> See Miller, *op cit*, pp 2-3

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 8

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid*. The reduced Indian Territory after the separation of Oklahoma Territory was described by meter and bounds in the Act of May 2, 1890, sec 29, 26 Stat 81, 98. Also see Chapter 1, sec 8.

[illegible]

The Supreme Court in the case of *Voisin v. Hitchcock*, 194 U.S. 381, 68-180 (1904), *per* Mr. Justice White, said

While it is understood that by the Constitution the United States Congress is vested with paramount power to regulate commerce with the Indian tribes, yet it is also undoubted that the Government has no authority to deprive the Indians of that right to control the present within the territory assigned to it of persons who might otherwise be treated as criminals. It is also understood that the Government has no authority to justify the Indians' from satisfaction by other Indians, and that the Government has no authority to deprive the Indians of their right to control the present within the territory assigned to it of persons who might otherwise be treated as criminals. It is also understood that the Government has no authority to justify the Indians' from satisfaction by other Indians, and that the Government has no authority to deprive the Indians of their right to control the present within the territory assigned to it of persons who might otherwise be treated as criminals.

Also see brief submitted by Commissioner of Indian Affairs relating to power of Commissioner over Indians: Litigation, before the Comm on Ind Aff, United States Senate 74d Cong., 2d sess, on S 2776 and S 3046, pt 2 (1934) pp 263, 269-270, 19 Op A G 34 (1881). Twenty of June 14 1860 Act 14 § 1st 785 788, Reports of the Comm on Ind Aff (1555) pp 11, 111, (1789), p 202, (1800) pp 90, 90, (1811), vol I, pp 240-241.

Excerpts from the constitution of the Chickokres are contained in *Chickoke Nation v. Foreman*, 153 U. S. 196 (1894). For a decision holding that certain lands were "occupied" by the Chickoke Nation for the purpose of criminal and trading jurisdiction see *United States v. Rogers*, 28 Fed. Cl. 854 (D. C. W. D. Ark. 1885). In existing treaties the view of the United States, and not of the Chickoke council governs federal action. 16 Op. A. G. 404 (1879).

referred into the Indian Territory and treated about as a quarter of a million at the beginning of the last decade of the nineteenth century. Despite treaty obligations, many whites steadily desired to substitute their own methods of government for those of the tribes. In part this was due to the fact that Indian laws and courts had no jurisdiction over the white settlers, and the Indian Territory became the refuge for criminals from neighboring States. By the Act of May 2, 1890, a portion of the Indian Territory was created into the Territory of Oklahoma. This act provided that until after the adjournment of the first territorial assembly the provisions of the compiled laws of Nebraska with respect to probate courts and decedents, so far as locally applicable and consistent with the laws of the United States and that act, should be in force in the Territory of Oklahoma. The act also provided that as to the portion of the Indian Territory which was not included in the new Territory of Oklahoma, the laws of the United States and the laws of the Civilized Tribes, and lands owned by other tribes and certain other lands described in the act, the laws of Arkansas, as published in Mansfield's Digest for 1884, including descent and distribution, should be operative therein until Congress should otherwise provide, insofar as those laws were not locally in

\* 84 Op. A. G. 375 (1924)

<sup>21</sup> 38 Stat. 81. For a discussion of the provisions of this law relating to courts, see Chapter 18, sec. 4 and Chapter 19, secs. 2B and 6.

applicable not in conflict with any law of Congress or the provisions of the act.

Under the provisions of this act the highest office of the Territory of Oklahoma during its first session which expired on December 21, 1890, passed laws of descent in succession which became effective on that date. Concerning the laws of this portion of the Indian Territory which continued to be so designated, Assistant Attorney General for the Interior Department John A. McGowan, in a memorial dated October 21, 1898, after pointing out that the laws of descent and distribution of Arkansas were in conflict with the provisions of the General Allotment Act referred to above, held that such laws, under the 1890 Act were applicable to the estates of Indian allottees in the Indian Territory and therefore that the laws of Kansas, as provided in the General Allotment Act did not apply to the Quapaw tribe. The Arkansas law, under the Act of 1890 applied to the Indians of that time. After this preliminary legislation in 1897 Congress manifested a policy of maintaining the tribal existence and government of the Five Civilized Tribes and allotting them lands in severalty. Agreements were negotiated by the Dawes Commission with each of the tribes in order to carry out these objectives. The Supreme Court has described this condition and the resulting legislation in the case of *Math v. Lonell*.

In time the tribes came, through advancing settlements, to be surrounded by a large and increasing white

Act of March 8, 1891, sec. 10, 27 Stat. 612, 647.

See *Id.* 27 Stat. 647, 648, 649.

27 Stat. U. S. 95 (1923). The court established in 1890 had jurisdiction of all offenses committed in the Indian Territory against any of the laws of the United States, not just those with which it was concerned at that time. On the same occasion, see *Id.* 27 Stat. 647, 648 (1891). In *Id.* 27 Stat. 647, 648 (1891). The court also possessed jurisdiction of all civil actions where the amount involved was \$100 or more except when both parties were members of Indian tribes.

As to what constitutes a marriage under the laws of the tribal members of the Indian nation within the meaning of the act of May 2, 1890, c. 142, sec. 10, 26 Stat. 81, 98 see *Casey v. Chapman*, 247 U. S. 102 (1918). In *Teak Grove Manufacturing Co. v. Vickers*, 45 Fed. Cl. 65 (C. C. A. 8, 1897). The Circuit Court of Appeals in interpreting the act of May 2, 1890, sec. 10, 26 Stat. 81, 98 said:

"Section 9061 of Mansfield's Digest is the law of the Indian Territory just as much as if it had been enacted by Congress. It is a mistake to suppose that Chapter 40 containing the act in question is to be applied to the Indian Territory as an Arkansas statute as would be the case if a question should arise under it in the courts of the United States for the district of Arkansas. The act of Congress adopting an entire code of laws for the Indian Territory is not to replace the limited and restricted constitution placed upon the previous acts (section 914, Sec. 41) which merely required the circuit courts to conform the practice and procedure in those cases to the practice and proceedings in the civil courts in order to carry out the act." (29, 98-100.)

See *Id.* *Ading v. Ading*, 243 U. S. 417 (1914). *Jones v. Patterson*, 271 U. S. 544 (1927). *Keown v. Frazar*, 48 Fed. 172 (C. C. A. 9, 1891). *Bluebird v. Incorporated Town of Muskogee*, 117 Fed. 127 (C. C. A. 8, 1902).

For a detailed account of the history of the courts see *Interv. v. Airt*, 135 U. S. 273 (1901).

For other cases interpreting this law see *United States v. Pridmore*, 153 U. S. 48 (1894). *Liberty v. United States*, 152 U. S. 499 (1896).

population many of the whites entering their districts and having their some of Indian Territory stock owners and merchants and others were adventurers. The United States then perceived a need for making a large use of its powers. *Richman v. United States*, 234 U. S. 513, 45-47. See *Casey v. Chapman*, 247 U. S. 102, 446. What it did in that regard has a bearing on the questions before stated. (P. 61.)

By an act of March 1, 1898, c. 333, 27 Stat. 768, a special court was established for the Indian Territory and given jurisdiction of many offenses, it named the United States and of civil cases where not wholly between persons of Indian blood. By an act of May 2, 1890, c. 142, sec. 10, 26 Stat. 91, that jurisdiction was enlarged and several general studies of the State of Arkansas, published in Mansfield's Digest were put in force in the Territory so far as not locally inapplicable or in conflict with laws of Congress, but those provisions were restricted by others in the effect that the courts of each tribe should retain exclusive jurisdiction of all cases wholly between members of the tribe, and that the adopted Arkansas statutes should not apply to such cases. By an act of March 1, 1894, c. 209, 27 Stat. 675, a commission to the five civilized tribes was created and specially authorized to conduct negotiations with each of the tribes, looking to the allotment of a part of its lands among its members, to some appropriate disposal of the remaining lands, and to further administrative jurisdiction to the dissolution of the tribe. By an act of June 7, 1897, c. 9, 30 Stat. 41-42 the special court was given exclusive jurisdiction of all future cases, civil and criminal, and the laws of the United States and the State of Arkansas in force in the Territory were made applicable to "all persons therein, irrespective of race," but with the qualification that any act or agreement negotiated by the commission with any of the five civilized tribes, when ratified, should supersede as to such tribe any conflicting provision in the act. By an act of June 26, 1897, c. 117, 30 Stat. 26 and 28, 30 Stat. 197, the enforcement of tribal laws in the special court was for Indian and the tribal courts were abolished.

Thus the congressional enactments at steadily came to the point where they disposed of the tribal laws and put in force in the Territory a body of laws adopted from the statutes of Arkansas and intended to reach Indians, as well as white persons, except as they might be inapplicable in particular situations or might be superseded as to any of the five civilized tribes by treaty agreements. (29, 61-62.)

By the Act of April 28, 1904,<sup>1</sup> it was provided that

All the laws of Arkansas heretofore put in force in the Indian Territory are hereby continued and extended in their operation, so as to embrace all persons and estates in said Territory, whether Indian, freedmen, or otherwise, and full and complete jurisdiction is herein conferred upon the district courts in said Territory in the settlement of all estates of decedents the guardianships of minors and incompetents, whether Indian, freedmen, or otherwise. \*\*\*

*Reynolds v. Reynolds*, 94 Fed. 721 (C. C. A. 8, 1897). *McClough v. Smith*, 243 Fed. 825 (C. C. A. 6, 1917). The estate did not appear to the court to entitle an action against the Choctaw Nation. *Thompson v. Choctaw Tribe of Indians*, 66 Fed. 972 (C. C. A. 8, 1897). Not until the act of February 18, 1888, (25 Stat. 97) *Graham v. Harlow*, 166 Fed. 575 (C. C. A. 8, 1899). For an analysis of what cases might be considered in exclusive jurisdiction of the tribal court, see *Orbison v. Madden*, 54 Fed. 426 (C. C. A. 8, 1898).  
\*\* 88 Stat. 578 sec. 2

## SECTION 5 STATEHOOD

The virtual dissolution of the tribal governments in the Indian Territory cleared the way for the creation of another state. Accordingly on June 10, 1906,<sup>2</sup> an act was passed making possible the admission into the Union of both Indian Territory and Oklahoma Territory as the State of Oklahoma. This was called

<sup>1</sup> Act of June 18, 1906, 34 Stat. 207.

enabling act has been well summarized by the Supreme Court in *Jefferson v. Pink*.

By the enabling act of June 10, 1906, c. 3385, 34 Stat. 287, provision was made for admitting into the Union

<sup>2</sup> 347 U. S. 288, 292 (1915).

At the time of the enabling act there was a large population of Indians in the Indian Territory, but a much larger population of whites

both the Territory of Oklahoma and the Indian Territory as the State of Oklahoma. Each Territory had a distinct body of local laws. Those in the Indian Territory, as we have seen had been put in force there by Congress. Those in the Territory of Oklahoma had been created by the territorial legislature. Denying, it better that the new State should come into the Union with a body of laws applying with practical uniformity throughout the State. Congress, provided in the enabling act (4-13) that "the laws in force in the Territory of Oklahoma, so far as applicable, shall extend over and apply to said State until changed by the legislature thereof" and also (§ 23) that "all laws in force in the Territory of Oklahoma at the time of the admission of said State into the Union shall be in force throughout said State except as modified or changed by this act or by the constitution of the State." The people of the State, taking the same view provided in their constitution (Art. 27 § 2) that "all laws in force in the Territory of Oklahoma at the time of the admission of the State into the Union which are not repugnant to this Constitution and which are not hereby inapplicable, shall be extended to and remain in force in the State of Oklahoma until they expire by their own limitation or be altered or repealed in law." (pp. 292-293)

It should be noted that the act expressly provided that federal authority over the Indians should in no way be impaired nor should the property rights of the Indians be impaired.

On November 16, 1907, the Territory of Oklahoma and the Indian Territory were admitted into the Union as the State of Oklahoma under the enabling act passed by Congress on June 16, 1906,<sup>1</sup> as amended by the Act of March 4, 1907.<sup>2</sup> The enabling act and the constitution of the new state united in declaring that with certain exceptions, not material here, the

*Joplin Mercantile Co v United States*, 238 U S 543 544-545 (1915). Under section 14 of the Curtis Act of June 22, 1898, 30 Stat. 495-496 (which had been amended and was growing rapidly, much of the land had been allotted.

The requirement by Congress and the acceptance by the State that "all members of any Indian nation or tribe located within the State should be permitted to participate in the organization and conduct of its government of the State constituted upon all such Indians citizenship in the state and in the United States."

Allotments to the members of the various Indian tribes in Oklahoma had been substantially completed at the time of the admission of Oklahoma to statehood. \* \* \* (Blackwell Indian Land Laws, (Ed ed 1913), p 37)

"Under acts 16 and 20 of the Oklahoma Enabling Act the state took the place of the United States in regard to a presentation for admission, recovery in Indian Territory in one of the temporary courts of the United States, and all essential parts of the presentation provided to the state *Southern Railway Co v Oklahoma*, 241 U S 882 (1916)

<sup>1</sup> 34 Stat. 267

## SECTION 6 TERMINATION OF TRIBAL GOVERNMENT—FIVE CIVILIZED TRIBES

The Commission to the Five Civilized Tribes, first known as the Dawes Commission, prepared the groundwork for the termination of the tribes by procuring agreements with the several nations relative to the allotment of their lands.<sup>3</sup> Commissioner Collier has said:

\* \* \* the time came when the pressure of white population made inevitable a break up of the Indian territory, a break-up of the Indian ownership of that vast domain. That break up was sought through allotting the land in severalty. In addition the tribal governments were practically abolished by statute. And the tribal treasuries were amalgamated with the United States Treasury but the fundamental technique was allotting the lands in

severalty and that was done and at various times, testate laws were lifted and methods were applied in various parts of the State different from those applied to the tribes in the West. And there grew up roughly two bodies of Indian law, one affecting the five tribes, and largely the Osage, the other affecting the tribes of the West, and who had mostly come from the plains area.

The general condition existing in the State of Oklahoma at the time of its admission to the Union has been described as follows:

Oklahoma, with 1,500,000 population became a State on November 16, 1907, upon a pledge contained in her constitution that she would never question the jurisdiction of the Federal Government over the Indians and their lands or its power to legislate in law or regulation concerning their rights or property. Immediately she had a delegation in Congress and at once began a determined campaign for further repeal of the laws enacted for the protection of the Indians. The main argument employed was that the Indians were competent to care for their property and needed no legislative protection against improvidence, that the State could be trusted to afford them all the protection they required and that Federal guardianship and supervision should cease, as an interference with the personal privileges and rights of citizens of Oklahoma.

This fight required in the enactment of a law on May 27, 1908 effective July 27, 1908, repealing the restrictions on the sale of a large class of land, including all homesteads of freedmen and of mixed bloods of less than half blood, freeing from restrictions all sold over 972,000 acres. It provided also that all homesteads, as well as all lands from which restrictions against sale were removed, should become taxable the same as lands of white people, whether sold by the allottee or not. This late act violated the terms of the agreement made with the Indians under which the homesteads of the Cheeks and the allotments of parts thereof, of the Choctaw and other tribes, were exempted from taxation for a given period. (The American Indian, by Walter K. Moench, the American Press, Anderson, Mich., p. 142)

<sup>2</sup> 34 Stat. 1298

<sup>3</sup> *Blackwell v. Meyer*, 203 U S 143 (1905), not for rehearing denied, 204 U S 661 (1905)

<sup>4</sup> Quoted from Hearings before the Commission on Indian Affairs, House of Representatives, 74th Cong., 1st sess. on H. R. 6234 (1905) pp. 71-72

The termination of the tribal governments is described by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs Leupp:

\* \* \* by successive acts of Congress the Five Civilized Tribes were shown at their governmental functions, their courts were abolished and United States courts established, their chief executive officers were made subject to removal by the President, who was authorized to fill

<sup>1</sup> See sec 8 "The work of this commission as described in 34 Op. A. G. 276 (1904), and in *Ward v. Doherty*, 228 U S 884 (1912).  
<sup>2</sup> Hearings before the Sen. Comm. on Ind. Affs. United States Senate, 74th Cong., 1st sess., on S. 2047, 1905, pp. 10-11. Also see sec. 4-B

<sup>3</sup> "The Indian and His Problem" (1910). It should be noted that the termination of tribal government was finally effectuated by agreements with the interested tribes. See sec. 81-82



by appointment the vicinities thus created, provision was made for the suppression of those tribal schools by a public school system maintained by and at its own. Then tribal taxes were abolished, the sale of their public buildings and lands was ordered, their traditions were forbidden to continue in less than thirty days in any one year, and every restrictive act administered and it only then was declared null and void unless it received the approval of the President. The only present shadow of freedom of the survival of the tribes is that the land, the occupation full of their property in the proceeds thereof can be distributed among the individual members. As one of the federal judges has summed it up thus: "A continuance of the tribes in their local effect just as many States corporations are continued as legal entities after they have ceased to do business and are practically dissolved for the purpose of winding up their affairs" (19 P. 146-147).

"The Act of June 25, 1898," commonly known as the Curtis Act abolished tribal courts," and declared Indian law mandatory in federal courts." The Supreme Court in the case of *Morris v. Hitchcock*,<sup>1</sup> explained the purpose of the Curtis Act in regard to one of the Five Civilized Tribes.

Verum, the Curtis Act in the light of the previous decisions of this court and the dealings between the Chickasaws and the United States we are of opinion that one of the objects occasionally, the abolition of that act by Congress, having in view the peace and welfare of the Chickasaws, was to put an end to the continued exercise by the legislative body of the tribe of such a power as is here complained of, subject to a veto power in the President over such legislation as is a preventive of arbitrary and unjudicious action. (P. 401)

By agreement<sup>2</sup> or statute<sup>3</sup> provisions were made for the termination of the tribal governments by March 4, 1906. It was thought that by that time the tribal land would be allotted. However, the necessity for the continuance of the tribes became apparent before the date set for their demise, and the Joint Resolution of March 2, 1906,<sup>4</sup> provided for the continuance of tribal existence and government of these tribes until the distribution of the tribal property "unless hereafter otherwise provided by law." The next month a comprehensive law was passed covering all the tribes.

The Act of April 26, 1906,<sup>5</sup> provided for the final disposition of the affairs of the Five Civilized Tribes. It provided for the completion by the Secretary of the Interior of the enrollment of the tribal members, one set comprising the freedmen and the second the remaining members. It empowered the President of the United States to remove the principal chief of the Choctaw,

Cherokee, Creek, or Seminole tribe, or the governor of the Chickasaw tribe for failure to perform his duties, and to "fill any vacancy arising from removal or death of the incumbent by appointment of a citizen by blood of the tribe." The Secretary of the Interior was granted considerable power in regard to tribal affairs including control of tribal schools,<sup>6</sup> the collection of tribal revenues,<sup>7</sup> and funds,<sup>8</sup> sale of certain tribal lands, buildings, and other property of the tribes,<sup>9</sup> and the per capita distribution of tribal funds.<sup>10</sup> Section 27 provided that the lands of the Five Civilized Tribes upon their dissolution "shall be held in trust by the United States for the use and benefit of the Indians" of each of the tribes, "and their heirs" as shown by the final rolls.

Section 28 provided for the continuance of tribal existence and the present tribal governments with limited powers. Their actions were made subject to the approval of the President of the United States.<sup>11</sup>

Mr. Justice Van Dusen in the case of *Southern Railway Company v. Oklahoma*,<sup>12</sup> described the formation of the State of Oklahoma, and contrasted it with the previous government of the Territory by Congress.

By reason of the conditions arising out of the presence of the Five Civilized Tribes no organized territorial government was ever established in the Indian Territory. Up to the time it became a part of the State of Oklahoma it was governed under the immediate direction of Congress, which legislated for it in respect of many matters of local or domestic concern which in a State are regulated by the state legislature and also applied to it many laws dealing with subjects which under the constitution are within Federal rather than state control. In what was then Congress did not contemplate that this situation should be of long duration, but on the contrary that the Territory should be prepared for early inclusion in a State. Courts designated as "United States courts" were temporarily established and invested with a considerable measure of civil and criminal jurisdiction and they were also provided for beginning public prosecutions before subordinate magistrates. There being no organized local government, such prosecutions, regardless of their nature, were commenced and conducted in the name of the United States, and in taking bail bonds it was named as the obligee.

The Enabling Act, June 20, 1906 c. 3385, §4 Stat. 267, March 4, 1907, c. 2911, §2 Stat. 1280, provided that the new State should embrace the Indian Territory as well as the Territory of Oklahoma. It contemplated that the State by its constitution, would establish a system of courts of its own, and provided for dividing the State into two districts and creating therein United States courts like those in other States. The temporary courts were to go out of existence and this made it necessary to provide for the disposition of the business pending before them in various stages. (Pp. 381-383)

<sup>1</sup> 104 U.S. 495. The constitutionality of this act was upheld in *Stephens v. Cherokee Nation*, 174 U.S. 445 (1909). *Cherokee Nation v. Hitchcock*, 187 U.S. 294 (1902).

<sup>2</sup> Sec. 28.

<sup>3</sup> Sec. 20.

<sup>4</sup> 194 U.S. 984 (1904).

<sup>5</sup> Choctaw-Chickasaw Agreement in the Act of June 25, 1898, 30 Stat. 497-512, Civil Agreement of March 2, 1901, pp. 46-11 Stat. 661, 672. *Cherokee Agreement in the Act of July 1, 1902*, c. 63, 32 Stat. 710-729.

<sup>6</sup> Act of March 2, 1907, sec. 8 (Seminole), 32 Stat. 1002-1006.

<sup>7</sup> 84 Stat. 822.

<sup>8</sup> 84 Stat. 187.

<sup>9</sup> Sec. 10.

<sup>10</sup> Sec. 11.

<sup>11</sup> Sec. 18.

<sup>12</sup> Secs. 12 and 15.

<sup>13</sup> Sec. 17.

For examples, see statement of D. H. Johnson, Governor of the Chickasaw Nation, relating to *Chickasaw*, 71-74. *Stat. of Indians in the United States* (1881), pp. 5362-5365 and of Ben Dwyer, Chief of the Choctaw, *ibid.*, pp. 5371-5380.

<sup>14</sup> 241 U.S. 582 (1916).

## SECTION 7 ENROLLMENT—FIVE CIVILIZED TRIBES

The general policy of the Federal Government for a number of years had been to bring about the allotment in severalty of tribal property with certain restrictions upon alienation, and to confer citizenship, state and national, upon allottees.<sup>1</sup> The

Dawes Commission, appointed by virtue of the Act of March 3, 1893,<sup>2</sup> had undertaken to negotiate with the Five Civilized Tribes for such a purpose. However, after three years of attempt

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter 8, sec. 4G, Chapter 4, sec. 11, Chapter 11, sec. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Act of March 3, 1893, 27 Stat. 612, 645, supplemented by Act of March 2, 1895, 28 Stat. 910, 939.

ing to each agreement with the Indians which would provide for allotment in severalty, Congress departed of recording Indian law action and directed the commission, in the following paid chapters of the Act of June 10, 1896, "to prepare rolls of the tribes.

That said commission shall further authorize and directed to proceed at once to hear and determine the application of all persons who may apply to them for citizenship in any of said nations, and after such hearing they shall determine the right of such applicant to be so admitted and enrolled. *Provided, however,* That such application shall be made to such Commissioners within three months after the passage of this Act. That said commission shall decide all such applications within ninety days after the same shall be made. That in determining all such applications said commission shall accept of all laws of the several nations or tribes, not inconsistent with the laws of the United States, and all treaties with effect of said nations or tribes, and shall give due force and effect to the rolls, usages, and customs of each of said nations or tribes. And provided further, That the rolls of citizenship of the seven tribes as now existing are hereby confirmed, and any person who shall claim to be entitled to be added to said rolls as a citizen of either of said tribes and whose right thereto has either been denied or not acted upon, or any citizen who is within three months from the date of the passage of this Act desire such citizenship, may apply to the legally constituted court or committee designated by the several tribes for such citizenship and such court or committee shall determine such application within thirty days from the date thereof.

In the performance of such duties, said commission shall have power and authority to administer oaths, to examine process for and compel the attendance of witnesses, and to send for persons and papers, and all depositions and affidavits, and take evidence in any form whatsoever, and to take where the witnesses appear, said testimony as to and on record beyond the limits of said Territory, and to use every fair and reasonable means within their reach for the purpose of determining the rights of persons claiming such citizenship, or to protect any of said nations from fraud or wrong, and the rolls so prepared by them shall be hereafter held and considered to be the true and correct rolls of persons entitled to the rights of citizenship in said several tribes. *Provided,* That if the tribe, or any person, be aggrieved with the decision of the tribal authorities or the commission provided for in this Act, if he may appeal from such decision to the United States district court. *Provided, however,* That the appeal shall be taken within sixty days, and the judgment of the court shall be final.

That the said commission, after the expiration of six months, shall cause a complete roll of citizenship of each of said nations to be made up from their records, and add thereto the names of citizens whose right may be conferred under this Act, and said rolls shall be, and are hereby, made rolls of citizenship of said nations or tribe subject, however, to the determination of the United States courts, as provided herein.

The commission is hereby required to file the lists of members of the tribes finally approved them with the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, to remain there for use as the final judgment of the duly constituted authorities. And said commission shall also make a roll of freedmen enrolled in citizenship in said tribes and shall include therein names in the lists of members to be filed with the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. And said commission is further authorized and directed to make a full report to Congress of license, tribal and individual, with the area, amount and value of the property leased and the amount received therefor, and by whom and from whom said property is leased, and by whom directed to make a full and detailed report as to the excessive holdings of members of said tribes and others.

It is hereby declared to be the duty of the United States to establish a government in the Indian Territory which

will rectify the many inequalities and discriminations now existing in said Territory and afford equal protection to the lives and property of all citizens and residents thereof.

The following further provisions regarding enrollment were made the next year in the Act of June 7, 1897:

That said commission shall continue to exercise all authority heretofore conferred on it by law to negotiate with the Five Tribes, and any agreement made by it with any one of said tribes, when ratified, shall operate to suspend any provisions of this Act if in conflict therewith as to said nation. *Provided,* That the words "roll of such nation," as used in the Act of June tenth, eighteen hundred and ninety six making appropriations for current and contingent expenses of the Indian Department and fulfilling treaty stipulations with various Indian tribes for the fiscal year ending June thirtieth, eighteen hundred and ninety seven, shall be construed to mean the list of the qualified rolls of each tribe which have been approved by the council of the nation and the descendants of those appearing on such rolls and such additional names and their descendants as have been subsequently added called for by the council of such nation, the duly authorized authorities thereof, or the commission under the Act of June tenth, eighteen hundred and ninety six. And all rolls made appearing upon such rolls shall be open to investigation by such commission for a period of six months after the passage of this Act, and any name appearing on such rolls and not confirmed by the Act of June tenth, eighteen hundred and ninety six, is hereby confirmed, and may be stricken therefrom by such commission where the party affected shall in ten days previous notice that said commission shall investigate and determine the right of such party to remain upon such roll as a citizen of such nation. *Provided, also,* That any one whose name shall be stricken from the roll by such commission shall have the right of appeal if is provided in the Act of June tenth, eighteen hundred and ninety six.

The determination of Congress to proceed with allotment with out the consent of the tribes found expression in the Act of June 28, 1898, "commonly called the Curtis Act." This Act contained elaborate stipulations regarding enrollment, providing for two rolls for each of the Five Tribes, one tracing rights through former lives called the Freedmen roll, the other tracing such rights through Indian blood, called the Indian roll, "for making the rolls descriptive of the persons thereof" and for making them "alone constitute the several tribes which they represent."

<sup>1</sup> Act of June 7, 1897 50 Stat. 62-64

<sup>2</sup> 80 Stat. 496

<sup>3</sup> The tribes, bitterly opposed this act which was strongly advocated by the Commissioner to the Five Civilized Tribes. Miller, op. cit. p. 9

<sup>4</sup> Act of April 21, 1904 sec. 1 38 Stat. 280-294. On matter of freed men see Schneider, The Office of Indian Affairs (1897), p. 211.

<sup>5</sup> Thorpe v. Fuel 22 F. 2d 786 (C. C. A. 1897).

<sup>6</sup> Act of May 27, 1908, sec. 3 35 Stat. 222 provided that the rolls of Freedmen of the Five Civilized Tribes approved by the Secretary of the Interior shall be conclusive evidence of the quantum of Indian blood or any

enrolled freedman of said tribe and the enrollment records of the Commissioner, conclusive evidence of this act. After being entered on rolls made and approved by the Secretary of the Interior in accord

ance with a statute a freedman acquired rights, which could not be divested without notice of hearing essential to due process of law.

<sup>7</sup> *Goefield v. Goldsby* 213 U. S. 249 (1908). Notice to an attorney of such freedmen is insufficient if given a few hours before a hearing of a motion to strike out his name on the ground that his enrollment was procured by perjury.

<sup>8</sup> *United States v. Wilson*, 222 U. S. 294 (1911).

<sup>9</sup> See 21. *See United States v. Mid-Continent Petroleum Corp.*, 67 F. 2d 87, 48-49 (C. C. A. 10, 1918). Also see Chapter 5, sec. 18.

<sup>10</sup> See 21. *See Kemoah v. Shafter Oil & Refining Co.*, 38 F. 2d 695 (C. C. N. D. Okla. 1900).

<sup>11</sup> 28 Stat. 281-340. Also see Act of July 1, 1888, 20 Stat. 671, 601, Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 1068-1077.

The effect of the enrollment statutes has been considered from time to time. In the case of *United States v. Marks*,<sup>1</sup> the Supreme Court said:

In *United States v. Widdell*, 214 U. S. 711, 718, 179, it was insisted that the Indian died prior to April 1, 1899, and that his enrollment is of that date, was beyond the jurisdiction of the Dawes Commission and void without the doctrine of *Scott v. McLeod*, 174 U. S. 34. Much consideration was given to the statutes creating and defining the powers of the Commission and the effect of an enrollment. This Court said:

"There was thus constituted a quasi-judicial tribunal whose judgments within the limits of its jurisdiction were not subject to attack for fraud or such misdeed of law or fact as would justify the holding that its judgments were voidable. Congress, by this legislation evidenced an intention to put an end to controversy by providing a tribunal before which those interested could be heard and the rolls authoritatively made up of those who were entitled to participate in the partition of the tribal lands. It was to the interest of all concerned that the beneficiaries of this division should be ascertained. To this end the Commission was established and endowed with authority to hear and determine the matter. . . ."

"When the Commission proceeded in good faith to determine this matter and to act upon information before it, not admitted but according to its best judgment, we think it was the intention of the act that the matter upon the approval of the Secretary, should be finally concluded and the rights of the parties forever settled, subject to final attack, as could successfully be made upon judgments of this character to find an mistake."

"We cannot agree that the case within the principles decided in *Scott v. McLeod*, 174 U. S. 34, and limited cases in which it has been held that in the absence of a subject in fact of jurisdiction an adjudication that there was such is not conclusive, and that a judgment based upon action without its proper subject being in existence is void. . . ."

"We think the decision of such tribunal in when not impeached for fraud or mistake conclusive of the question of membership in the tribe when followed, as was the case here, by the action of the Interior Department confirming the allotment and ordering the patents conveying the lands which were in fact issued."

It must be accepted now as finally settled that the enrollment of a member of an Indian tribe by the Dawes Commission, when duly approved, amounts to a judgment in an adversary proceeding determining the existence of the individual and his right to membership subject, of course, to impeachment under the well established rules where such judgments are involved. (Pp. 224-226)

Shortly after the passage of the Curtis Act, Congress, by Act of July 1, 1898,<sup>2</sup> adopted the agreement concluded with the Seminoles on December 16, 1897. Concerned now of the failure of resistance, other tribes followed suit, until by the end of 1902 all of the Five Civilized Tribes had become parties to agreements with the United States, providing for allotment to land in severalty.<sup>3</sup> Most of these agreements<sup>4</sup> contained pro-

visions concerning enrollment. Sections 25 to 31 of the Cherokee Agreement<sup>5</sup> are perhaps typical.

SEC. 25 The roll of citizens of the Cherokee Nation shall be made as of September first, nineteen hundred and two, and the names of all persons then living and entitled to enrollment on that date shall be placed on said roll by the Commission to the Five Civilized Tribes.

SEC. 26 The names of all persons living on the first day of September, nineteen hundred and two, entitled to be enrolled as provided in section twenty five hereof shall be placed upon the roll made by said Commission, and no child born thereafter to a citizen and no white person who has intermarried with a Cherokee citizen since the sixteenth day of December, eighteen hundred and ninety five, shall be entitled to enrollment or to participate in the distribution of the tribal property of the Cherokee Nation.

SEC. 27 Such rolls shall in all other respects be made in strict compliance with the provisions of section twenty one of the Act of Congress approved June twenty eighth, eighteen hundred and ninety eight ("Thirtieth Statute, page four hundred and ninety two"), and the Act of Congress approved May thirty-first, nineteen hundred ("Thirty first Statute, page two hundred and twenty one").

SEC. 28 No person whose name appears upon the roll made by the Dawes Commission as a citizen or fullblood of any Indian tribe shall be entitled as a citizen of the Cherokee Nation.

SEC. 29 For the purpose of expediting the enrollment of the Cherokee citizens and the allotment of lands as herein provided the said Commission shall from time to time and as soon as practicable forward to the Secretary of the Interior lists upon which shall be placed the names of those persons found in the Commission to be entitled to enrollment. The lists thus prepared when approved by the Secretary of the Interior, shall constitute a part and parcel of the full roll of citizens of the Cherokee tribe, upon which allotment of land and distribution of other tribal property shall be made. When these lists have been submitted to and approved by the Secretary of the Interior lists indicating the names of all those lawfully entitled to enrollment, the roll shall be deemed complete. The roll so prepared shall be made in quadruplicate, one to be deposited with the Secretary of the Interior, one with the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, one with the principal chief of the Cherokee Nation, and one to remain with the Commission to the Five Civilized Tribes.

SEC. 30 During the months of September and October, in the years nineteen hundred and two, the Commission to the Five Civilized Tribes may create appropriate lists for enrollment of such infant children as may have been born to recognized and enrolled citizens of the Cherokee Nation on or before the first day of September, nineteen hundred and two, but the application of any person whose name for enrollment shall be received after the thirty first day of October, nineteen hundred and two.

SEC. 31 No person whose name does not appear upon the roll prepared as herein provided shall be entitled to in any manner participate in the distribution of the common property of the Cherokee tribe, and those whose names appear thereon shall participate in the manner set forth in this Act. *Provided* That no allotment of land or other tribal property shall be made to any person, or to the heirs of any person, whose name is on said roll and who died prior to the first day of September, nineteen hundred and two. The right of such person to any interest in the lands or other tribal property shall be deemed to have become extinguished and to have passed to the tribe in general upon his death before said date and any person or persons who may conceal the death of anyone on said roll is aforesaid for the purpose of putting by said concealment, and who shall knowingly reserve any portion of any land or other tribal property or of the proceeds so arising from any allotment prohibited by this section, shall

<sup>1</sup> 260 U. S. 920 (1923).

<sup>2</sup> 30 Stat. 567, supp. by Act of June 2, 1900, 81 Stat. 250.

<sup>3</sup> Act of June 28, 1898, 80 Stat. 463 (Cheyenne and Arapaho); Act of March 1, 1901, 91 Stat. 861, supp. by Act of June 30, 1902, 82 Stat. 600 (Crows); Act of July 1, 1902, 82 Stat. 716 (Cherokee).

<sup>4</sup> Act of June 2, 1900, 81 Stat. 260 (Seminoles); Act of March 1, 1901, 91 Stat. 861 (Crows); Act of June 30, 1902, 82 Stat. 598 (Cheyenne); Act of July 1, 1902, 82 Stat. 601 (Chickasaw); Act of July 1, 1902, 82 Stat. 716 (Cherokee).

<sup>5</sup> See 90 of the Act of July 1, 1902, 92 Stat. 613 was checked by the court in *Gorfield v. Goldsby*, 211 U. S. 249 (1908).

<sup>6</sup> Act of July 1, 1902, 82 Stat. 716.

he deemed guilty of a felony and shall be proceeded against as any be provided in other cases of felony, and the penalties for this offense shall be equivalent at final trial for a period of not less than one year nor more than five years, and in addition thereto a forfeiture to the Cherokee Nation of the lands either initial property, and proceeds so obtained.

The Cherokee- Chickasaw Agreement\* contained in mutual enrollment device. A quasi judicial body was established in sections 31-33 which has been described as follows:

It appears that the agreement in these provisions provides for the establishment of the Cherokee and Chickasaw Citizenship Court and gives it jurisdiction of a first trial to annul and vacate the decisions of the United States courts in the Indian Territory identifying persons to citizenship and enrollment is citizens of the Cherokee and Chickasaw as it then respects itself, on the ground of a writ of notice to both of said nations and because the United States courts tried such cases *de novo* with a right in the event such judgments should be annulled because of either on both of the irregularities mentioned on the part of any party thus deprived of a favorable judgment to remove his case in the Citizenship court, where such further proceedings were to be had therein as ought to have been had in the court in which the same was taken on appeal from the Commission of the Five Civilized Tribes, and if no judgment or decision had been rendered therein, and also appellate jurisdiction over all judgments of the courts in Indian Territory rendered under said act of Congress of June third, eighteen hundred and ninety-six admitting persons to citizenship or to enrollment in either of said nations. In the exercise of such appellate jurisdiction the citizenship court was authorized to consider, review, and reverse all such judgments, both as to findings of fact and conclusions of law, and may whenever in its judgment substantial justice will thereby be subserved, permit either party to any such appeal to take and present such further evidence as may be necessary to enable said court to determine the very right of the controversy.

It will be noted that the agreement further provides (paragraph 33) that "the judgment of the citizenship court in any or all of the suits or proceedings so committed to its jurisdiction shall be final" (P 111).

Congress was now anxious to bring to a close the work of enrollment, and in 1904, 1905, and 1906 legislative steps were taken to bring this about. These have been summarized by the Attorney General.\*

By the act of April 21, 1904 (31 Stat. 189-204), it was provided that the Commission to the Five Civilized Tribes should continue its work, and terminate on or before July 3, 1905, and cease to exist on that date, the powers theretofore conferred upon it being continued.

By the act of March 3, 1905 (33 Stat. 1045, 1046), it was provided that the work of completing the unfinished business of any of the Commission to the Five Civilized Tribes shall devolve upon the Secretary of the Interior, and that all the powers heretofore granted to the said Commission to the Five Civilized Tribes be hereby conferred upon the said Secretary on and after the first of July, nineteen hundred and five.

By the act of April 26, 1906 (34 Stat. 187), it was provided

"That after the approval of this act no person shall be enrolled as a citizen or freedman of the Cherokee, Chickasaw, Cherokee, Creek, or Seminole tribes of Indian Territory, except as herein otherwise provided, unless application for enrollment was made prior to December first, nineteen hundred and five, and the records in charge of the Commissioner to the Five Civilized Tribes shall be conclusive evidence as to the fact of such application, and no motion to reopen or reconsider any citizenship case, in any of said tribes, shall be entertained unless

filed with the Commissioner to the Five Civilized Tribes within sixty days after the date of the order on decision sought to be reconsidered except in those cases such motion shall be made within sixty days after the passage of this act."

By that act the rolls of citizenship at the several tribes were required to be completed by March 4, 1907 (Pp. 112-141).

The Act of May 27, 1906,\* made conclusive the enrollment records of the Commissioner to the Five Civilized Tribes as to the title of the citizens and freedmen. At the request of Mr. Bledsoe, the Commissioner prepared the following statement of what constituted the enrollment records in his office:

The enrollment records in the matter of the enrollment of any person as a citizen or freedman of the Five Civilized Tribes, consist of the application made for their enrollment, together with all of the records, evidence and other papers filed in connection therewith prior to the rendition of the decision granting the application.

In the early days of enrollment in the Five Civilized Tribes, applications were made by the Commission at various places in the different nations at which the Indians and freedmen appeared to make application for enrollment. At that time the applicants were duly sworn before a notary public, but their testimony was not taken orally and placed upon a card, with the exception of Cherokees. Written testimony was taken in all Cherokee cases. In a great majority of the early enrollments, except Cherokee cases, the only records shown by the applicants that were taken were the affidavits of applicants personally and placed on the cards, which constitute the enrollment record together with any other evidence that may have been obtained. In a great many instances, at that time where there is doubt as to the rights of the applicants to enrollment, and they could not then be identified from the tribal rolls, the written testimony of the applicants was taken and made a part of the record. Additional testimony was also taken at later dates.

As the work proceeded, and the enrollment of all citizens in blood or intermarriage, and freedmen, who were clearly identified upon the tribal rolls was completed, written testimony was taken in all doubtful cases. Written testimony was also taken in all applications made for the identification of Mississippi Cherokees and in practically all other cases as the work neared completion.

The tribal rolls of the various nations came into the possession of the Commissioner to the Five Civilized Tribes, and were used for identification and as a basis for enrollment.

As enrollments were completed, the names of all persons whom the Commission had decided were entitled to enrollment were placed on the rolls. These rolls show the name, age, sex, degree of blood, and the number of the census card, which is generally known as the "enrollment card," on which each citizen was enrolled, and a number was placed opposite each name appearing on this roll, beginning at 1 and running down until the final number was completed. This roll was made out in quadruplicate and forwarded to the Secretary of the Interior by his approval, who approved same if he found no objections thereto and returned three copies for the files at this office. The roll thus approved is known as the "approval roll," and is the basis on which the citizenship certificates, except in the cases of a large number of Cherokees, to whom allotments were made before the approval of their enrollment, which allotments were subsequently confirmed by Congress.

The Secretary of the Interior holds, for the purposes of the government, that the date of the application for enrollment shall be continued as the date of the annu-

\* Act of July 1, 1902, 33 Stat. 643 (Cherokee-Chickasaw).

\* 28 Op. A. G. 128 (1907).

\* 28 Op. A. G. 127 (1907).

\* 35 Stat. 812, sec. 4.

\* Of the applicants 101,228 were enrolled. Of these, 9,506 were in intermarriage persons, 28,368, freedmen, 50,671, mixed bloods, and 24,680 full bloods. Rept. Comm. Ind. Aff., 1907, p. 113.

\* Bledsoe, op. cit., p. 130.













### E FIVE CIVILIZED TRIBES AS A GROUP

Shortly after the passage of these special allotment acts Congress began to legislate for the Five Civilized Tribes as a group.<sup>100</sup>

The link between restrictions and tax exemptions is clearly demonstrated by the Act of April 26, 1906,<sup>200</sup> providing for the

<sup>100</sup> For many years there was a congressional committee on the Five Civilized Tribes in addition to the Committee on Indian Affairs. See, for example, Act of April 17, 1900, 31 Stat. 86, 98, Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 900-911.

By this legislation as found in the acts of April 20, 1906, (34 Stat. 137) and May 27, 1908, (35 Stat. 332), Congress set up a new and uniform set of restrictions applicable alike to all of the Five Civilized Tribes. Without discussing the provisions of this later legislation in detail it is sufficient for present purposes to point out that the restrictions against selling, leasing, or otherwise disposing of land to non-Indians, including toll-bills, and their death-bands, not theretofore removed by an understanding prior law were continued to April 26, 1911, and the restrictions as to cession of other lands were removed with the provisions that such lands should thereafter become subject to taxation by the State. (Id. 30.)

Other statutes dealing with allotments of the Five Civilized Tribes include

Act of August 24 1912 c 562 37 Stat 497 Amending Act of April 20 1900 31 Stat 137 Cited in Memo Sol I D May 19 1916.  
*Rowley v United States*, 299 Fed 498 (C C A 1924). This act authorized the Secretary of the Interior to sell land and timber reserved from allotment under sec 7 of the Act of April 26, 1906, 34 Stat 137 *infra*, fn 301.

The Act of June 28 1898 30 Stat 495 *see* 78 *supra* 1898  
The disposition of timber belonging to these tribes was also dealt with  
in the Act of January 21 1903 32 Stat 774 Supplementing the  
Act of February 18 1897 26 Stat 408 *see* May 27 1902 32 Stat 215  
Repeated in part by the Act of March 3 1903 31 Stat 1048 Sup-  
plementing the Act of March 3 1900 31 Stat 982, Act of June 21 1920  
34 Stat 325 Cited *Op. Atty. Gen.* 1921 April 12 1927 *Unborn  
v. Anderson*, 211 Fed. 30 (C. C. 9 1904) *United States v. Gray*  
201 Fed. 291 (C. C. 9 1912), *supra* 203 U. S. 680, *Ute Indians v.  
United States*, 65 C. Cl. 440 (1901).

of March, 1911, 98 Stat. 310 as amended by the Act of March 2, 1921, 11 Stat. 2024, which provided for the drainage of Indian allotments of the Five Civilized Tribes, for other matters dealing with the Five Civilized Tribes, and for the purpose of supplementing the Act of March 1, 1901, 31 Stat. 853, 803, Act of June 10, 1902, 32 Stat. 300, 303, Act of March 8 1908, 32 Stat. 682, 690, Act of April 21, 1904, 34 Stat. 189, 204, Act of April 30, 1906, 34 Stat. 137, 138, Act of March 3, 1909, 35 Stat. 121, 122, which validated certain debts, excepted by members of the Five Civilized Tribes, and sec. 4091 of title 25 of the U. S. Code, derived from the Act of March 2, 1901, 31 Stat. 484, which authorized the Secretary of the Interior to make such regulations as may be required for state, county, or municipal improvements, or sold to other persons from taxation of land purchased with money received by the allottees of the Five Civilized Tribes, June 30, 1932, 47 Stat. 474, this statute.

The Act of May 26 1920 41 Stat 625 as amended by Act of January 7, 1926, 43 Stat 728, empowered the Secretary of the Interior to pay out of any funds of the Creek, Cherokee, Choctaw Chickasaw and Seminole Nations part of the cost of town improvements. The 1926 act amended the Act of June 30 1917, 88 Stat 77, 96.

For an example of a provision found in many appropriation statutes we list of Rebinals 14, 1020 and 18, 11 Stat 408, 428

Some provisions applied to all the Five Civilized Tribes, but the Seminoles. See, for example, the Appropriation Act of May 31, 1900 (Stat. 221, 236-238). For regulations relating to removal of restrictions and sale of lands of members of the Five Civilized Tribes and conversion of funds in nontaxable lands, see 25 C.F.R. 241.94-241.18.

<sup>20</sup> See Sec. 19, 84 Stat 187, 144. This act also contained many other important provisions dealing with the leasing of allotments (secs 19 and 20, also see sec 9 of this chapter), authorizing adult heirs to alienate inherited allotments (sec 22), and providing for descent (sec 5), reversion to tribe in default of heirs (sec 21), and devise of allotments (sec 23).

The Act of April 26, 1906, supplemented the Act of May 31, 1900, 31 Stat 221, Act of February 28 1902, 32 Stat 48, Act of February 19, 1903 32 Stat 841, Act of March 3, 1906 38 Stat 1048 Amended by Act of June 21, 1908, 34 Stat 925, Act of May 27, 1908, 35 Stat

and disposition of the affairs of the Five Civilized Tribes. This statute imposes restrictions against alienation on allotments of full bloods for 25 years unless removed sooner by Congress, and provides that

3. All lands, upon which restrictions are removed shall be subject to taxation, and the other lands shall be exempt from taxation as long as title remains in the original allottee.

12. List of Aliens 24 1912 27 Stat 497, Act of April 10, 1926  
14 Stat 238 Act of May 10 1928 47 Stat 105 Supplem. by  
Act of March 7 1907, 4 Stat 1015, Concurrent Resolution of April  
19 1900 44 Stat 2542 Act of April 80, 1908, 45 Stat 70 Act of  
April 1909 46 Stat 100 Act of February 19 1912 37 Stat  
67 Act of August 24, 1912, 36, 37 Stat 497 Act of August 24  
1922 43 Stat 81 Act of June 24, 1931 48 Stat 1407 United  
C. 1911, 7 Decree and Proclamation in Latin America (1912),  
1913, 20 Op A 208 Op A 209, 20 Op A 210 (1907),  
26 Op A C 361 2007, 27 Op A C 750 (1909), 29 Op A C 11  
(1911), 29 Op A C 231 (1911), 34 Op A C 273 (1924), 34 Op  
A C 902 (1924), Op Sol 1, D M 7900 August 2, 1928, Op R  
1928, 1929, 1930, 1931, 1932, 1933, 1934, 1935, 1936, 1937,  
1938, 1939, 1940, 1941, 1942, 1943, 1944, 1945, 1946, 1947,  
1948, 1949, 1950, 1951, 1952, 1953, 1954, 1955, 1956, 1957,  
1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1962, 1963, 1964, 1965, 1966, 1967,  
1968, 1969, 1970, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1974, 1975, 1976, 1977,  
1978, 1979, 1980, 1981, 1982, 1983, 1984, 1985, 1986, 1987,  
1988, 1989, 1990, 1991, 1992, 1993, 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997,  
1998, 1999, 2000, 2001, 2002, 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, 2007,  
2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2014, 2015, 2016, 2017,  
2018, 2019, 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024, 2025, 2026, 2027,  
2028, 2029, 2030, 2031, 2032, 2033, 2034, 2035, 2036, 2037,  
2038, 2039, 2040, 2041, 2042, 2043, 2044, 2045, 2046, 2047,  
2048, 2049, 2050, 2051, 2052, 2053, 2054, 2055, 2056, 2057,  
2058, 2059, 2060, 2061, 2062, 2063, 2064, 2065, 2066, 2067,  
2068, 2069, 2070, 2071, 2072, 2073, 2074, 2075, 2076, 2077,  
2078, 2079, 2080, 2081, 2082, 2083, 2084, 2085, 2086, 2087,  
2088, 2089, 2090, 2091, 2092, 2093, 2094, 2095, 2096, 2097,  
2098, 2099, 2100, 2101, 2102, 2103, 2104, 2105, 2106, 2107,  
2108, 2109, 2110, 2111, 2112, 2113, 2114, 2115, 2116, 2117,  
2118, 2119, 2120, 2121, 2122, 2123, 2124, 2125, 2126, 2127,  
2128, 2129, 2130, 2131, 2132, 2133, 2134, 2135, 2136, 2137,  
2138, 2139, 2140, 2141, 2142, 2143, 2144, 2145, 2146, 2147,  
2148, 2149, 2150, 2151, 2152, 2153, 2154, 2155, 2156, 2157,  
2158, 2159, 2160, 2161, 2162, 2163, 2164, 2165, 2166, 2167,  
2168, 2169, 2170, 2171, 2172, 2173, 2174, 2175, 2176, 2177,  
2178, 2179, 2180, 2181, 2182, 2183, 2184, 2185, 2186, 2187,  
2188, 2189, 2190, 2191, 2192, 2193, 2194, 2195, 2196, 2197,  
2198, 2199, 2200, 2201, 2202, 2203, 2204, 2205, 2206, 2207,  
2208, 2209, 2210, 2211, 2212, 2213, 2214, 2215, 2216, 2217,  
2218, 2219, 2220, 2221, 2222, 2223, 2224, 2225, 2226, 2227,  
2228, 2229, 2230, 2231, 2232, 2233, 2234, 2235, 2236, 2237,  
2238, 2239, 2240, 2241, 2242, 2243, 2244, 2245, 2246, 2247,  
2248, 2249, 2250, 2251, 2252, 2253, 2254, 2255, 2256, 2257,  
2258, 2259, 2260, 2261, 2262, 2263, 2264, 2265, 2266, 2267,  
2268, 2269, 2270, 2271, 2272, 2273, 2274, 2275, 2276, 2277,  
2278, 2279, 2280, 2281, 2282, 2283, 2284, 2285, 2286, 2287,  
2288, 2289, 2290, 2291, 2292, 2293, 2294, 2295, 2296, 2297,  
2298, 2299, 2300, 2301, 2302, 2303, 2304, 2305, 2306, 2307,  
2308, 2309, 2310, 2311, 2312, 2313, 2314, 2315, 2316, 2317,  
2318, 2319, 2320, 2321, 2322, 2323, 2324, 2325, 2326, 2327,  
2328, 2329, 2330, 2331, 2332, 2333, 2334, 2335, 2336, 2337,  
2338, 2339, 2340, 2341, 2342, 2343, 2344, 2345, 2346, 2347,  
2348, 2349, 2350, 2351, 2352, 2353, 2354, 2355, 2356, 2357,  
2358, 2359, 2360, 2361, 2362, 2363, 2364, 2365, 2366, 2367,  
2368, 2369, 2370, 2371, 2372, 2373, 2374, 2375, 2376, 2377,  
2378, 2379, 2380, 2381, 2382, 2383, 2384, 2385, 2386, 2387,  
2388, 2389, 2390, 2391, 2392, 2393, 2394, 2395, 2396, 2397,  
2398, 2399, 2400, 2401, 2402, 2403, 2404, 2405, 2406, 2407,  
2408, 2409, 2410, 2411, 2412, 2413, 2414, 2415, 2416, 2417,  
2418, 2419, 2420, 2421, 2422, 2423, 2424, 2425, 2426, 2427,  
2428, 2429, 2430, 2431, 2432, 2433, 2434, 2435, 2436, 2437,  
2438, 2439, 2440, 2441, 2442, 2443, 2444, 2445, 2446, 2447,  
2448, 2449, 2450, 2451, 2452, 2453, 2454, 2455, 2456, 2457,  
2458, 2459, 2460, 2461, 2462, 2463, 2464, 2465, 2466, 2467,  
2468, 2469, 2470, 2471, 2472, 2473, 2474, 2475, 2476, 2477,  
2478, 2479, 2480, 2481, 2482, 2483, 2484, 2485, 2486, 2487,  
2488, 2489, 2490, 2491, 2492, 2493, 2494, 2495, 2496, 2497,  
2498, 2499, 2500, 2501, 2502, 2503, 2504, 2505, 2506, 2507,  
2508, 2509, 2510, 2511, 2512, 2513, 2514, 2515, 2516, 2517,  
2518, 2519, 2520, 2521, 2522, 2523, 2524, 2525, 2526, 2527,  
2528,



The Act of May 27, 1908,<sup>32</sup> together with the 1906 Act,<sup>33</sup> and the Acts of April 12, 1920,<sup>34</sup> May 10, 1928,<sup>35</sup> May 24, 1928,<sup>36</sup> and January 27, 1933,<sup>37</sup> are the principal statutes defining restrictions, and the corresponding tax exemptions, with reference to the property of the Five Civilized Tribes. Without detailed discussion, the only general statement that can be made is that Congress has sought to protect from taxation and alienation.

[illegible]

This exemption related to land and not to income derived from the investment of surplus income from land *Superintendent v Thomas*  
1905, 295 U S 418, 421 (1935)

Section 1 of the Act of May 27, 1908, 35 Stat 812, declared that

\* \* \* all allotted lands of \* \* \* enrolled mixed bloods of three quarters or more Indian blood, \* \* \* shall not be subject to alienation, contract to sell power of attorney or any other incumbrance prior to April twenty sixth, nineteen hundred and thirty one. \* \* \*

In *Johnson v. United States*, 64 F. 2d 674 (C. C. A. 10, 1983), the Circuit Court defined the purpose of this statute as follows:

The purpose of the statute was to release restrictions from much of the empire occupied by the Five Civilized Tribes, and put it on the tax rolls. (P. 877.)

In *United States v. Bartlett*, 235 U. S. 72 (1914), it was held that this extension upon the restriction on alienation was not intended to reimpose restrictions on lands on which the original restriction upon alienation had expired before its passage.

<sup>101</sup> 35 Stat 812, *supra*, in 102

1044 Stat 230 Supplementing Act of April 26, 1906, 84 Stat 187, 145 Amending Act of May 27, 1908, 85 Stat 812, 815 Supplemented

by Act of May 10, 1928, 45 Stat 495 Cited in Memo Sol I D, Sep  
tember 15, 1984, Memo Sol I D, January 14, 1985, Memo Sol I D,  
June 4, 1985, Memo Sol I D, September 21, 1985 Letter of Asst Secy

to A. G. October 15, 1936, 58 I D 687 (1932), *Anderson v Peak*, 53 F 2d 257 (D C N D Okla, 1981), *Base v Scott*, 24 F Supp 806 (D C E D Okla, 1988), *Board of Comm'rs of Tulsa County, Okla v United States*, 94 F 2d 450 (C C A 10, 1938), *Brown v United States*.

homesteads in the hands of Indians who have high percentages of Indian blood, at the same time subjecting excess land holdings, lands in the hands of mixed-blood heirs of original allottees (up to 1938),<sup>210</sup> and lands in the hands of Indians of lesser degrees of Indian blood, to state taxation

The Act of May 27, 1908<sup>15</sup> provided that no homesteads of mixed bloods of half or more than half Indian blood and no allotted lands of enrolled full bloods and enrolled mixed bloods of three quarters or more Indian blood should be subject to alienation or any other encumbrance prior to April 26, 1951, except that the Secretary of the Interior might remove such restrictions for the benefit of the Indian.

\* \* \* the death of any allottee of the Five Civilized Tribes shall operate to remove all restrictions upon the alienation of said allottee's land \* \*

but required that the conveyance of any interest of a full blood be approved by the court having jurisdiction over the estate of the decedent.<sup>21</sup>

27 F 2d 274 (C A 8, 1928), *Wingfield v. Neill*, 108 F.2d 247 (C A 10 1940), *Oncale v. Bugarelli*, 303 F.2d 504 (C A 10 1959), *Duranio v. Schaefer*, 8 F.Supp. 678 (D C D Okla 1948), *In re Palmer*, Will, 11 F.Supp. 501 (D C D Okla 1948), *Kile v. United States*, 614 2d 977 (C A 10, 1984), *King v. Fokor*, 64 F.2d 979 (App D C 1941), *Stratton v. Krues*, 208 U.S. 403 (1907), *Heating den* 298 U.S. 661 (1955), *United States ex rel Warren v. Kates*, 73 F.2d 844 (App D C 1944), *United States v. Mid Continent Petroleum Corp.* 27 F.2d 626 (C A 10, 1928), *U.S. v. 270 U.S. 102 (1913)*, *United States v. Walshe*, 120 F.2d 428 (C A 10 1949), *Whitcomb v. Tompford*, 92 F.2d 110 (C A 10 1937).

45 Stat 497, Supplementing Act of April 20 1906 34 Stat 197  
Act of May 27, 1908 35 Stat 412, Act of April 10, 1920, 41 Stat 287  
Resolving in part, Act of April 10 1920 41 Stat 288 Amended by  
Act of April 10, 1920 41 Stat 289  
46 Stat 1198, Act of March 12 1970 40 Stat 1190 Supplementated by  
Act of January 27, 1933, 47 Stat 777 Cited in Op Biol I D M 22478,  
June 26, 1929, 50 Stat I D 3, 34 27158, August 9 1932, Memo Sol I D,  
January 26, 1933, 51 Stat 100, 52 Stat 100, 53 Stat 100, 54 Stat 100,  
I D January 18, 1937, Memo Sol I D January 28 1937, Memo  
Sol I D, May 14 1938, 57 I D 148 (1940) 78 I D 471 (1931), 78  
I D 472 (1931), 61 I D 70 (1932), 64 I D 188 (1934), Bond v  
U S, 295 F 2d 819 (9th Cir 1962), 308 F 2d 819 (9th Cir 1963),  
34 78 C C 10 (1930), 184 Stat 64, May 1, 1938 General, Budgets,  
103 P 2d 703 (3 C 10 1939) *Opinion v. Shaw* 290 U S 883  
1933, 295 F 2d 819 (9th Cir 1962), 308 F 2d 819 (9th Cir 1963),  
60 Sup Ct 120, *Xung v. Jones* 44 F 2d 2078 (App D C 1985), United  
States v. Equitable Trust Co 284 U S 735 (1931), United States v.  
Welch, 104 F 2d 428 (C C 10, 1939), *Whitcomb v. Chasford*,

<sup>201</sup> 45 Stat 748 Amending Act of May 10, 1928, 45 Stat 495, 496  
Cited in 53 I D 49 (1930), 59 I D 471 (1991), 58 I D 502 (1981),

38 I D 687 (1962) *King v. Iches*, 64 F 2d 978 (App D C 1933)  
 47 Stat 777 Supplementing Act of May 27, 1908 35 Stat 312,  
 Act of May 10, 1928, 45 Stat 496 Cited in *Hearings*, Sen Comm, on  
 Ind Aff, 72d Cong, 1st sess, S 1899, 37 Op A G 193 (1938), Memo  
 Sol I D, October 25, 1938, Memo Sol I D June 4, 1936. Op Sol

Sol I D, October 23, 1986; Memo Sol I D June 2, 1986, Op Sol  
I D M 28125 August 12, 1986, Memo Sol I D October 23, 1986,  
Memo Sol I D, May 1, 1986, Memo of Conum: August 11, 1986,  
Sol I D, October 23, 1986, Memo Sol I D, January

Letter of Asst Secy to A G, October 15 1910, Memo Sol I D, January 18, 1917, Memo Sol I D January 28 1917, Memo Sol I D, February 5, 1917. Memo Sol I D April 8, 1917 Memo Acting Sol I D, May

11, 1937, Memo Sol I D, May 14, 1938, Memo Sol I D, November 28 1938, 54 I D 810 (1938), 54 I D 382 (1934), *Bond v Tom*, 25 F

Supp 157 (D C N D Okla, 1938), *Burgess v Natl*, 108 F 2d 87 (C C A 10, 1939) rehearing den May 1, 1939, 108 F 2d 37, *Danks v Jones* 69 F 2d 281 (App D C 1984), *Green v Lewis* 105 F 2d 898

*Jones*, 68 F 2d 281 (App D C 1984), *Graham v Lewis*, 108 F 2d 898 (C C A 10, 10d9), cert den 60 Sup Ct 120, *Jones v United States ex rel Perry*, 64 F 2d 982 (App D C 1988), *In re Palmer's Will*, 11 F

Supp 901 (D C H D Okla, 1995), *King v Ioket*, 64 F 2d 970 (App D C 1933), *United States ex rel Warren v Ioket*, 78 F 2d 814 (App D C 1933).

<sup>108</sup> 1st of January 27, 1933, 47 Stat 777, *supra*, fn 108

<sup>131</sup> Act of May 27, 1908, 35 Stat 312, 315. It has been held under this section that lands allotted to a half blood Choctaw Indian, and

This section contained a proviso that as to allotments of Indians of one-half or more Indian blood who died leaving issue born since March 1, 1906, the homestead should remain inheritable for the life of the issue on until April 26, 1931, unless the removal of restrictions should be sooner authorized by the Secretary of the Interior.<sup>132</sup> By the Act of May 10, 1928,<sup>133</sup> restrictions on alienation of allotments of allottees of half blood or more were extended until April 26, 1936. The Act of May 24, 1928,<sup>134</sup> amending section 3 of the Act of May 10, 1928, limited the tax exemption to 160 acres of land to be selected by the Indian, who shall receive a certificate designating it.<sup>135</sup> The exemption was to continue so long as the title remained in the Indian designated or in any full blood heir or devisee of the land. The May 10, 1928 Act also continued a provision that nothing in the act

upon his death and the descent of the title to his minor heirs of less than half Indian blood. The fact of minority of the heir does not seem to continue the restriction and therefore the tax exemption is removed by this section. *Mooney v. Whitehead*, 283 Fed 540 (C C A 8 1918). Cf. *Wynn v. Wynn*, 209 Pac. 600 (1911).

This section was amended in minor particulars by the Act of April 10, 1926. 44 Stat. 239 in 105 *supra*. The court in *United States v. Lee*, 24 F. Supp. 818 (D. C. B. D. Okla., 1938) and 409 F. 2d 848 (C C A 10 1919), held that if allottee's surviving issue born since March 4, 1906, died before April 26, 1931, the homestead allotment descends into from restriction because of the language of the proviso in the 1908 Act even in the hands of full blood heirs.

<sup>132</sup> See 1-45 Stat. 400 *supra*, fn 108. It was provided that the Secretary of the Interior may remove the restrictions upon applications of the Indian owners in whole or in part under such rules and regulations as he shall prescribe. Prior to April 26, 1931, allotted lands held by the original allottee and allotted lands acquired by full blood Indians through devise or inheritance from an allottee and held by the heir or devisee were unrestrictable. See sec 4 Act of May 27, 1908, 40 Stat. 512, 418, *supra*, fn 102; *Powell v. City of Ida* 61 F. 2d 281 297 (C C A 10 1922). Contra *Wynn v. Wynn* *supra*. On the death of the allottee allotted lands, except those passing by devise or inheritance, to full blood Indian heirs become subject to taxation. *United States v. Shock* 157 Fed. 870, 871, 573 (C C B. D. Okla., 1911).

<sup>133</sup> 45 Stat. 733 *supra* fn 107.  
<sup>134</sup> 45 Stat. 408, *supra*, fn 106. Sec 8 of the May 10, 1928 Act, as amended by the Act of February 14, 1931, 46 Stat. 1108, and the Act of March 14, 1936, 50 Stat. 1150 provides:

• • • That all minerals including oil and gas produced on or after April 26, 1911, from restricted allotted lands of members of the Five Civilized Tribes in Oklahoma, or from inherited restricted lands of full blood Indian heirs in devisee of such lands shall be subject to all State and Federal taxes of every kind and character the same as those produced from lands owned by other citizens of the State of Oklahoma, and the Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized and directed to cause to be paid from the individual Indian funds held under his supervision and control and belonging to the Indian owner of the lands, 25 per cent or more as he deemed advisable the royalty interest of the respective Indian owners in such oil, gas, and

should be construed to exempt from taxation any lands subject to taxation under existing law.<sup>136</sup>

The first indication of the swing in policy toward extension of exemptions is found in the Act of March 2, 1931,<sup>137</sup> providing that where non-taxable land of a restricted Indian of the Five Civilized Tribes is sold under existing law, the Secretary of the Interior may convey the proceeds to other land, which will be non-taxable and restricted from alienation. Under the Act of June 30, 1932,<sup>138</sup> it was provided that the restrictions should appear in the deed.

The Act of January 27, 1933,<sup>139</sup> provided that:

• • • where the entire interest in any tract of land restricted and tax exempt land belonging to members of the Five Civilized Tribes is acquired by inheritance, devise, gift, or purchase, with restricted funds, by or for restricted Indians, such lands shall remain restricted and tax exempt during the life of and as long as held by such restricted Indians, but not longer than April 26, 1936, unless restrictions are removed in the meantime in the manner provided by law.

The act also provided

That such restricted and tax exempt land held by anyone, acquired as herein provided, shall not exceed one hundred and sixty acres, and provided further, That all minerals including oil and gas, produced from said land so acquired shall be subject to all State and Federal taxes as provided in section 3 of the Act approved May 10, 1928 (45 Stat. L. 495).

other mineral production. *Provided*, That nothing in the Act shall be construed to impose or provide for double taxation and in those cases where the machinery or equipment used in production of oil or other minerals or other Indian lands is subject to the ad valorem tax of the State of Oklahoma for the fiscal year of June 30, 1931, the above production tax which is in lieu thereof shall not be imposed prior to July 1, 1931. *Provided further*, That in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior, the tax or taxes due the State of Oklahoma may be paid in the manner provided by the statutes of the State of Oklahoma.

<sup>136</sup> See 45 Stat. 403 *supra*, fn 108.

<sup>137</sup> 46 Stat. 1471, *supra*, fn 100.

<sup>138</sup> 47 Stat. 474 25 U. S. C. 404a, amending Act of March 2, 1931, 46 Stat. 1471. Cited in *Alamo Sol I D*, December 21, 1916. *Memo Sol I D*, November 29, 1937. *Minnesota v. United States*, 305 U. S. 589 (1934).

<sup>139</sup> 47 Stat. 777 *supra* fn 108. In *Glen v. Lewis*, 105 F. 2d 598 (C C A 10 1919), cert den 60 Sup. Ct. 110 the court held that this act was intended to restrict lands of half blood or more acquired by inheritance and hence, the court upheld in an Indian homestead allotment which a seven eighth blood Choctaw Indian inherited was restricted and mortgage and deed executed by a Choctaw Indian with her approval of the Secretary of the Interior or the Oklahoma County court were invalid.

## SECTION 9 LEASING OF ALLOTTED LANDS OF FIVE CIVILIZED TRIBES

Some of the allotment agreements permitted allottees to lease their allotments for specified purposes and periods.<sup>140</sup> Section 19 of the Act of April 26, 1908,<sup>141</sup> in extending for 25 years the restrictions upon alienation by full-blooded allottees, provided that such allottees might lease any lands other than homestead, for more than one year under rules and regulations prescribed by the Secretary of the Interior, "and in case of the inability of any full blood owner of a homestead, on account of infirmity of age, to work on farms his homestead, the Secretary of the Interior, upon proof of such inability, may authorize the leasing of such homestead under such rules and regulations." Section 20 required all leases and rental contracts of full-blood allottees to be in writing and approved by the Secretary of the Interior,

except (1) if for not exceeding a year for agricultural purposes, for lands other than homestead, (2) the proper court might rent or lease allotments of minors or incompetents. All leases for a period exceeding a year were required to be recorded in conformity to the law of the Indian Territory.

Section 2 of the Act of May 27, 1908,<sup>142</sup> provided

• • • That all lands other than homesteads allotted to members of the Five Civilized Tribes from which restrictions have not been removed may be leased by the allottee if an adult, or by guardian or curator under order of the proper probate court if a minor or incompetent, for a period not to exceed five years, without the privilege of

<sup>132</sup> For example, the Original Creek Agreement of March 1, 1901, sec. 87, 31 Stat. 851, 872, and the Muskogee Allotment Agreement, of July 1, 1902, sec. 73, 42 Stat. 716, 726-727.

<sup>133</sup> 24 Stat. 187, 144, *supra*, fn 101.

<sup>136</sup> 95 Stat. 812 813 fn 102 *supra*. For a criticism of this provision see *Medien, The Problem of Indian Administration* (1928) pp. 801-802.

<sup>137</sup> For a discussion of its interpretation see *Hedden, op. cit.*, pp. 241-245. By sec. 6, laws of restricted lands in violation of the law before or after the approval of this act were made null and void. For regulations relating to leasing of restricted lands for mining, see 25 C. B. B. 188 1-186 49.

renewal. Provided, That leases of restricted lands for oil, gas, or other mining purposes, leases of restricted home steads for more than one year, and leases of restricted lands for periods of more than five years, may be made, with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, under rules and regulations provided by the Secretary of the Interior, and not otherwise. And provided further, That the jurisdiction of the probate courts of the State of Oklahoma over lands of minors and incompetents shall be subject to the foregoing provisions, and the term minor or minors, as used in this Act, shall include all males under the age of twenty-one years and all females under the age of eighteen years.

Section 15 of the Act of February 14, 1901,<sup>1</sup> authorized the Superintendent for the Five Civilized Tribes to approve, reject, or disapprove all uncontested leases (except oil and gas leases), but permitted an aggrieved party the right to appeal from the decision of the Superintendent to the Secretary of the Interior within 30 days from the date of the decision.

Changes in laws relating to alienation have created many problems in the field of leasing. For example section 1 of the Act of January 27, 1913,<sup>2</sup> quoted at the end of the preceding section, affects leases as well as sales.

The effect of this provision on leases was thus analyzed by the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior:

In my opinion of March 14, 1904 (54 I D 382), it was held that the foregoing provision was not retrospective and applied only to acquisitions after the date of the enactment. Accordingly, the status of lands acquired by inheritance, devise, etc., prior to that enactment is determined by the laws then in force. Under those laws which it is unnecessary to cite here, the death of an allottee terminated all restrictions if the heirs or devisees were less than the full blood, but if the lands passed to full bloods the restrictions were relaxed to permit conveyances by them with the approval of the county court having jurisdiction of the settlement of the deceased allottee's estate. Accordingly, lands acquired prior to January 27, 1904, by Indians of less than full blood, whether such lands were restricted and tax exempt or restricted and taxable, passed to their heirs from all restrictions. Such lands, therefore, are subject to sale or lease without the approval of the Secretary of the Interior or the county court, unless, of course, some disability rested upon the owner under the State law. If, however, the heirs or devisees are of the full blood, any conveyance of that interest or an oil and gas lease there of must not only receive the approval of the county court having jurisdiction of the settlement of the deceased allottee's estate (section 9 of the act of May 27, 1908, 35 Stat. 512, as amended by the act of April 12, 1906, 34 Stat. 239, *United States v. Gypsy Oil case*, 10 Fed. (2d) 487), but such approval must be given in open court after notice in accordance with the rules of procedure in probate matters adopted by the Supreme Court of Oklahoma in June 1914 (section 8, act of January 27, 1908). The rules just stated apply also to lands acquired after January 27, 1908, unless such lands are both restricted and tax exempt and the entire interest therein is acquired by a restricted Indian or restricted Indians.

The first proviso of section 1 of the act of January 27, 1908, is without application unless the lands involved are both restricted and tax exempt and the entire interest therein is acquired by restricted Indians. The language immediately preceding the first proviso shows that the term "restricted Indians" was intended to embrace Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes of one-half or more Indian blood. In my opinion of March 14, 1904, it was pointed out that the lands to which the first proviso of the act of 1908 applied fall into two classes, first, restricted allotments of living allottees which have been designated by them as tax exempt under the act of May 10, 1928 (45 Stat. 486), which lands were under the jurisdiction

of the Secretary of the Interior and could be leased for oil and gas mining purposes only with his approval and not otherwise under section 2 of the act of May 27, 1908, and second, lands inherited by or derived to full blood Indians prior to January 27, 1904, and designated by them as tax exempt under the act of 1908, which lands were subject to the restriction that no conveyance by the full blood should be valid unless approved by the county court having jurisdiction of the settlement of the deceased allottee's estate, and which lands could be leased by the full blood for oil and gas mining purposes with the approval of the said court and without the approval of the Secretary of the Interior.

It was further pointed out in my opinion of March 14 that the first proviso of the act of 1908 was designed to preserve the existing restrictions and not to impose restrictions once removed or to change the form of existing restrictions. Accordingly, where the entire interest in lands of the first class is acquired by Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes of one-half or more Indian blood, they take the same subject to the same restrictions which rested upon the lands of the allotted. Such lands, therefore, continue to be subject to lease for oil and gas mining purposes only with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, and not otherwise. The county court having jurisdiction of the settlement of the deceased allottee's estate has no authority to approve a conveyance or lease of such lands. The only jurisdiction which the probate courts may exercise in this class of cases is confined to conveyances and leases made by guardians of minors and incompetents, and in such cases the conveyance or lease must be made under order of the proper probate court. See sections 2 and 6 of the act of May 27, 1908.

Where the entire interest in lands of the second class—that is, tax exempt lands acquired by full blood heirs or devisees prior to January 27, 1904—passes into the hands of Indians of one-half or more Indian blood after that date, such Indians take the lands subject to the restriction resting upon the previous owner, namely, they cannot convey without the approval of the county court having jurisdiction of the settlement of the deceased allottee's estate. With such approval they may convey or lease, but such approval as to the interest of any full blood must be given in open court after notice, as provided by section 8 of the act of January 27, 1908.

The Act of February 11, 1906,<sup>3</sup> provided that leases of restricted lands on behalf of minors and Indians *non compos mentis* of the Five Civilized Tribes may be made, for periods not exceeding 5 years for farming and grazing purposes, by the superintendent or other official in charge of the Five Civilized Tribes Agency, and empowered other Indians to make such leases, subject to the approval of such official.

Several questions arising under this act have been recently discussed by the Solicitor of the Department of the Interior:

A Do farming and grazing leases require approval by this office?

(1) Where the allottee died prior to January 27, 1908?

(2) Where any heir is less than half blood and the other heirs are one-half blood or more?

(3) Where the land is not tax exempt?

B Do farming and grazing leases by full-blood adult heirs require approval by the County Court or by this office?

\* \* \* the foregoing act applies to restricted lands belonging to Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes of one-half or more Indian blood. Ownership by an Indian of one-half or more Indian blood is not sufficient to bring the case within the statute. The lands must also be restricted.

<sup>1</sup> 31 Stat. 408, 26 U. S. C. 869.

<sup>2</sup> 37 Stat. 777. See in 106, supra.

<sup>3</sup> Memo Sol. I. D., June 4, 1906, also see 54 I D 382 (1904).

<sup>1</sup> 49 Stat. 1128, 25 U. S. C. 398a. Cited in Memo Sol. I. D., August 7, 1906, Memo Sol. I. D., January 18, 1917, Memo Sol. I. D., May 14, 1908, *Glen v. Leno*, 108 F. 2d 808 (C. C. A. 10, 1909), cited den. 60 Sup. Ct. 130. For regulations see 25 C. F. 174.1-174.24.

<sup>2</sup> Memo Sol. I. D., August 7, 1906.

<sup>3</sup> Memo Sol. I. D., January 18, 1907.

Save for the requirement that the Superintendent must approve, all leases of restricted lands, belonging to Indians of the degree of blood mentioned, the act makes no change in the prior laws dealing with the restrictions on lands of Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes and we must look to those laws for the purpose of ascertaining whether the lands in any particular case are or are not restricted.

The act of January 27, 1933 (43 Stat. 777), will be first considered. That act is confined to the restrictions on restricted and exempt lands inherited by restricted Indians, that is, Indians of one-half or more Indian blood. The act has no application to lands or interests therein inherited prior to the date of the enactment. Solicitor's Opinion of March 14, 1934 (34 I. D. 382). It is further without application unless (1) the lands are both restricted and tax exempt, and (2) the entire interest is inherited by Indians of one-half or more Indian blood. Questions A (1), (2), and (3) will all be cases to which the act of January 27, 1933 has no application and the question of whether the inherited interest be determined by the laws in force prior to January 27, 1933. Under section 9 of the act of May 27, 1908 (35 Stat. 312), as amended April 22, 1920 (43 Stat. 917), the death of an allottee of the Five Civilized Tribes removed all restrictions against alienation except where the heirs are of the full blood and as to such full blood heirs, the restrictions

are not removed but relaxed to the extent of sanctioning conveyances made with the approval of the proper county court. As the county court in approving such conveyances, acts as a Federal agency, the inherited interest of the full blood heir remained restricted. *Parker v. Richard* (259 U. S. 237). Accordingly, questions A (1), (2), and (3) are answered by stating that while the heir is a full blood, a lease of his inherited interest under the act of February 11, 1930, requires the approval of the Superintendent. Interests inherited by heirs of less than the full blood are unrestricted and may be leased without approval.

Answering question B it may be said that lands inherited by a full blood heir prior to January 27, 1933, or in any case to which the act of January 27, 1933, has no application, are restricted in the sense that a Federal agent, the county court, must approve the conveyance. If the entire interest in a tract of restricted and tax exempt land is inherited by an Indian or Indians of one-half or more Indian blood after January 27, 1933, the existing restrictions are preserved by the act of that date. Solicitor's Opinion of March 14, 1934, *supra*. It is immaterial whether the approving agency is the county court or the Secretary of the Interior, as in either case the inherited interest is restricted and a finding and granting lease thereon to be valid must, under the act of February 11, 1930, *supra*, receive the approval of the Superintendent.

## SECTION 10. TRUSTS OF RESTRICTED FUNDS OF MEMBERS OF FIVE TRIBES

The Act of January 27, 1933,<sup>121</sup> provided that all funds and other securities held under the supervision of the Secretary of the Interior belonging to Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes in Oklahoma of one-half or more Indian blood, enrolled or unenrolled, shall be restricted and shall remain under the jurisdiction of the Secretary until April 30, 1936, "subject to expenditure in the meantime for the use and benefit of the individual Indians" who own them, under rules and regulations prescribed by the Secretary.

The Secretary was empowered<sup>122</sup> to permit any adult Indian of the Five Civilized Tribes to create and establish out of restricted funds or other property under the Secretary's supervision, trusts for a maximum period of 21 years after the death of the last survivor of the named beneficiaries in the respective trust period, for the benefit of such Indian, his heirs or other designated beneficiaries, by contracts or agreements between the Indian and incorporated trust companies or banks.

No trust company or bank may act as a trustee in any trust created under this act "which has paid or promised to pay to any person other than an officer or employee on the regular pay roll thereof any charge, fee, commission, or remuneration

for any service or influence in securing or attempting to secure for it the trusteeship in any trust." Trust agreements or contracts made prior to January 27, 1933, the day of this law's approval, and not approved prior to such enactment by the Secretary of the Interior, are declared void.<sup>123</sup>

The Secretary is authorized to transfer the funds or property required by the terms of an approved trust agreement to the trustee,<sup>124</sup> which must keep these assets segregated from all other assets.

None of the restrictions upon the corpus under the terms of the trust agreement may be released during the restrictive period except as provided by such agreement, and neither the corpus of said trust nor the income derived therefrom, during the restrictive period, provided by law, is alienable.<sup>125</sup>

The trustee is to render an annual accounting to the Secretary and the beneficiary.<sup>126</sup>

Such trust agreements are irrevocable except with the Secretary's consent.<sup>127</sup> If a trust agreement is annulled, the corpus of the trust estate with all accrued and unpaid interest must be returned to the Secretary as restricted individual Indian property.

Illegally placed trusts are to be cancelled by proceedings instituted by the Attorney General in the Federal courts.<sup>128</sup>

<sup>121</sup> 47 Stat. 777 *supra* par. 108. For a discussion of this act, see 84 I. D. 352 (1934), *Dart v. Jones*, 80 F. 2d 331 (App. D. 1934), *United States ex rel. Warren v. Jones*, 75 F. 2d 844 (App. D. C. 1934), *Burges v. Neal*, 103 F. 2d 87 (C. C. A. 10, 1930), rehearing den. 108 F. 2d 87.

For regulations regarding creation of trusts for restricted property, see 25 C. F. 227.1-227.2.

<sup>122</sup> Act of January 27, 1933, sec. 2 and 7, 47 Stat. 777, *supra*, par. 108.

<sup>123</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 2.

<sup>124</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 3.

<sup>125</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 4.

<sup>126</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>127</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 5.

<sup>128</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 6.

## SECTION 11 INHERITANCE AMONG FIVE CIVILIZED TRIBES<sup>129</sup>

### A INTESTATE SUCCESSION

Among the Five Civilized Tribes, as among all other tribes, tribal law governs descent in the absence of congressional

<sup>129</sup> The Act of June 25, 1910 (36 Stat. 855, 858, which provides, among other things, for the determination of heirs of deceased Indians provides the Five Civilized Tribes (sec. 38) except for the following provision:

Sec. 32. Where there is no tribal law in the Five Civilized Tribes laws then or may be used, in pursuance of any tribal

legislation.<sup>130</sup> The General Allotment Act<sup>131</sup> did not apply to the Five Civilized Tribes, and so its provisions on inheritance have no application to these tribes.

agreement of Act of Congress to a person who had died, or who hereafter dies before the approval of such deed, the title to the land designated therein shall mine to and become vested in the heirs, devisees or assigns of such deceased grantee as if the deed had been made to the deceased grantee during his

<sup>130</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 6.

<sup>131</sup> Act of February 8, 1887, 24 Stat. 888.

The Supreme Court in the case of *Johnson v. Pink*,<sup>130</sup> summarized the early congressional legislation regarding descent and distribution as follows:

By acts passed in 1800, 1803, 1807 and 1808, Congress manifested its purpose to allot or divide in severalty the lands of the Five Civilized Tribes with a view to the ultimate cession of a State embracing the Indian Territory, but in force in the Territory several statutes of Arkansas, including Chapter 49 of Mansfield's Digest relating to descent and distribution, provided that those statutes should apply to all persons in the Territory, irrespective of race, and substantially absorbed the laws of the several tribes, including those relating to descent and distribution. Acts May 2, 1800, c. 2, 152, 26 Stat. 81, § 31, March 8, 1803, c. 200, 27 Stat. 615, § 16, June 7, 1807, c. 8, 90 Stat. 83, June 28, 1808, c. 617, 30 Stat. 492, §§ 11 and 26. This was the situation when the Act of 1801, known as the Original Creek Agreement, was adopted. That act in the course of providing for the allotment in severalty of the lands of the Creeks revived their tribal law of descent and distribution by making it applicable to their allotments, §§ 1 and 26. But the revival was only temporary, for the Act of 1802, known as the Supplemental Creek Agreement, not only repealed so much of the Act of 1801 as have effect to the tribal law but re-enacted the Arkansas law with the qualification that Creeks were such, should take to the exclusion of others.<sup>131</sup> *Washington v. Miller*, 245 U. S. 429, 427-428. The allotment in question was made and the tribal deeds issued shortly after the Act of 1802 became effective. And this was followed by the Act of April 28, 1804, c. 182, 33 Stat. 573, § 2 declaring that all statutes of Arkansas theretofore put in force in the Indian Territory should be taken "to embrace all persons and estates in said Territory whether Indian, freedmen or otherwise" (§ 201-202).

The repeating and restating portion of the act was as follows:

"The provisions of the act of Congress approved March 1, 1801 (5 Stat. L. 861) in so far as they provide for descent and distribution according to the laws of the Creek Nation are hereby repealed and the descent and distribution of land and money provided for by said act shall be in accordance with chapter 49 of Mansfield's Digest of the Statutes of Arkansas now in force in Indian Territory. Provided, That only citizens of the Creek Nation male and female and then Creek descendants shall inherit lands of the Creek Nation. And provided further, That if there be no person of Creek citizenship to take the descent and distribution of said estate then the inheritance shall go to next of kin in the order named in said chapter 49."

There was a like provision, but without the proviso, in the Act of May 27, 1802 c. 888, 32 Stat. 258.

Referring to the purpose with which the Arkansas statutes were put in force in that Territory and to the statutes there, the court said in *Shawyer v. McDougal*, 225 U. S. 561, 571: "Congress was then contemplating the early inclusion of that Territory in a new State, and the purpose of those acts was to provide, for the time being, a body of laws adaptable to the needs of the locality and its people in respect of matters of local or domestic concern. There being no local legislature, Congress alone could act. Plainly, its action was intended to be merely provisional."

By the enabling act of June 16, 1900, c. 8335, § 4 Stat. 287, provision was made for admitting into the Union both the Territory of Oklahoma and the Indian Territory as the State of Oklahoma. Each Territory had a distinct body of local laws. Those in the Indian Territory, as we have seen, had been put in force there by Congress. Those in the Territory of Oklahoma had been enacted by the territorial legislature. Deeming it better that the new State should come into the Union with a body of laws applying with practical uniformity throughout the State, Congress provided in the enabling act (§ 13) that "the laws in force in the Territory of Oklahoma, as far as applicable, shall extend over and apply to said State until changed by the legislature thereof" and also (§ 23) that "all laws in force in the Territory of Oklahoma at the time of the admission of said State into the Union shall be in force throughout said State, except as modified or changed

in this act or by the constitution of the State." The people of the State, making the same view, provided in their constitution (§ 11, 23, § 2) that "all laws in force in the Territory of Oklahoma at the time of the admission of the State into the Union, which are not repugnant to this Constitution, and which are not locally inapplicable, shall be extended to and remain in force in the State of Oklahoma until they expire by their own limitation or are altered or repealed by law."

The State was admitted into the Union November 10, 1907, and thereupon the laws of the Territory of Oklahoma relating to descent and distribution (Re Stat. Okla. 1903, c. 26, art. 4) became laws of the State. These after Congress, by the Act of May 27, 1908, c. 180, §§ Stat. 312, § 9, recognized and treated "the laws of descent and distribution of the State of Oklahoma" as applicable to the lands allotted to members of the Five Civilized Tribes (§ 9, 293-293).

# B WILLS

Section 23 of the Act of April 28, 1906,<sup>132</sup> provided for the making of wills, but mandated a will of a full-blood Indian which disinherit the parent, wife, spouse, or children, unless acknowledged before and approved by a judge of the United States Court for the Indian Territory or a United States Commissioner.<sup>133</sup> In *Blandin v. Wallace*,<sup>134</sup> the Supreme Court said in interpreting this section:

"The general policy of Congress prior to the adoption of § 23, plainly had been to consider the local law of descent and wills applicable to the persons and estates of Indians except in so far as it was otherwise provided. Thus, by § 2 of the Act of April 28, 1901, c. 182, 33 Stat. 573 the laws of Arkansas, theretofore put in force in the Indian Territory, were expressly 'continued and extended in their operation, so as to embrace all persons and estates in said Territory, whether Indian, freedmen, or otherwise' and jurisdiction was conferred upon the courts of the Territory in the settlement of the estates of decedents, etc., whether Indian, freedmen, or otherwise."

Section 28 must be read in the light of this policy, and, in reading it, we agree with the ruling of the state supreme court that Congress intended thereby to enable "the Indian to dispose of his estate on the same footing as any other citizen, with the limitation contained in the proviso thereto." The effect of § 23 was to remove a restriction (theretofore existing upon the legislative power of the Indians, leaving the regulatory local law free to operate as in the case of other persons and property (§ 276).

# C PROBATE JURISDICTION

The Act of May 27, 1908,<sup>135</sup> was enacted at the request of the Oklahoma delegation, as part of the plan for removal of restrictions from Indian lands of the Five Civilized Tribes.<sup>136</sup> Section 6 conferred jurisdiction upon the probate (county) courts of the State of Oklahoma over the estates of Indian minors and incompetents of the Five Civilized Tribes.<sup>137</sup> The probate court was

<sup>130</sup> 24 Stat. 187, *supra* fn 101.

<sup>131</sup> Amended by Act of May 27, 1908, see c. 8, 35 Stat. 812, 815, to include "in a single act of a county court of the State of Oklahoma."

<sup>132</sup> 297 U. S. 373 (1925).

<sup>133</sup> 28 Stat. 312, *supra*, fn 102. The Act of April 28, 1904, sec. 2, 33 Stat. 573 conferred jurisdiction upon the district court to settle estates of decedents and the guardianship of minors and incompetents of the Five Civilized Tribes, see *Taggart v. Parke*, 225 U. S. 84 (1914).

<sup>134</sup> By sec. 22 of the Act of April 28, 1906, 34 Stat. 187, 145 adult heirs of a deceased allottee of the Five Civilized Tribes, was permitted to sell and convey lands inherited from the decedent, and minor heirs were permitted to join in the sale of such inherited lands by a guardian appointed by the appropriate court for the Indian Territory.

<sup>135</sup> See *Mastin*, The Problem of Indian Administration (1928) pp. 749-801, which criticizes this law.

<sup>136</sup> Interspersed in *Shawyer v. McDougal*, 224 U. S. 108 (1920). On the jurisdiction of the county courts over Oklahoma constitution, art. 7, secs. 12-14, and United States v. *Bond*, 108 F. 2d 504 (C. C. A. 10, 1936).



also given, by Section 9, authority to approve conveyances by full blood heirs.<sup>107</sup>

Provisions were also made for the appointment of probate attorneys by the Secretary of the Interior, with prescribed duties relating to restricted lands.

Section 8 of the Act of January 27, 1913,<sup>108</sup> makes it the duty of these probate attorneys to appeal and represent any restricted member of the Five Civilized Tribes in both the county courts or in the appellate courts.<sup>109</sup>

Section 7 of the act of June 11, 1918,<sup>110</sup> vested in the state courts jurisdiction to probate wills and determine heirs in accordance with state laws of any deceased citizen of either of the Five Civilized Tribes who died leaving restricted heirs. However, to the extent that creditors, attorneys, and personal representatives must depend on restricted property and funds for

payment of fees and claims the Secretary of the Interior retained sole jurisdiction to pass upon the reasonableness of their claims.

## D PARTITION

Section 2 of this law<sup>111</sup> also made the "lands of full blood members of any of the Five Civilized Tribes" subject to the laws of the State of Oklahoma providing for the partition of real estate.

It did not find that an equitable partition is impossible, it may order the sale of the land and the division of the proceeds among the heirs.<sup>112</sup>

This provision has been interpreted as follows:<sup>113</sup>

"The wide sweep of the language contained in the statute [see 2 Act of June 14, 1918, *supra*] expressly subjecting the lands of full blood Indians to the laws of the State for partition fails to indicate a legislative purpose to limit the grant of consent of jurisdiction to district courts in proceedings affecting lands of living Indians, to the extension of proceedings in the county court in the administration and settlement of estates of deceased full bloods." (P 507.)

"If [see 1, Act of January 27, 1913, 47 Stat 777] does not narrow this part of the Act of 1918, *supra*, which consists in the making of the land of full blood members of the Five Civilized Tribes subject to the laws of the State of Oklahoma relating to the partition of real estate land, it provides that the restrictions there imposed upon restricted and tax-exempt land belonging to a member of such tribes which is acquired by or lot restricted Indians by inheritance, gift, or purchase with restricted funds, shall remain restricted during the period fixed therein, unless the restrictions are removed in the meantime in the manner provided by law. At least two separate and distinct methods existed at that time for the removal of restrictions against alienation. One was by the Secretary of the Interior, and the other was by partition and sale in the county court in the course of the administration and settlement of the estate of a deceased full blood Indian. The concluding language in the proviso is plainly broad enough to include both." (P 509.)

"28 U S C 855. It also provided that any land allotted in partition proceedings to a full blood Indian, or conveyed to him upon his election to take the same at the appraisement shall remain subject to all restrictions upon alienation and taxation obtaining prior to such partition but "in case of a sale under any decree, or partition, the conveyance thereunder shall operate to relieve the lands described of all restrictions of every character."

"For discussion of restricted status of proceeds from a partition sale, see Chapter 10, sec 8.

"*United States v Bond*, 108 F 2d 804 (C C A 10 1939) aff'd *Bond v Bond*, 28 F Supp 197 (C C N D Okla, 1939). Accord *Memo Sol I D*, September 21, 1938.

## SECTION 12 SPECIAL LAWS GOVERNING OSAGE TRIBE<sup>114</sup>

The special laws governing the Osage Tribe and the decisions applying and construing them are of a complexity and volume that preclude any detailed treatment in this work.

"For a history of the Osages see *United States v Aaron*, 188 Fed 347 (C C W D Okla, 1910); *Labadie v United States*, 6 Okla 400, 51 Pac 668 (1897). The Osage lands were purchased by the United States pursuant to Art. 16 of the Treaty of July 19, 1806, 14 Stat 709, 804, in which the Cherokee Indians in the Indian Territory agreed that the United States might purchase part of their lands for the purpose of settling friendly Indians thereon.

Many special statutes were enacted concerning the lands of the Osage Nation in Kansas. The following statutes concern the sale of Osage Indian lands in that state, Act of May 9, 1872, 17 Stat 80 R 11 2284 2284, 2285 superseded by Act of June 28, 1874 18 Stat 288, Act of May 28, 1880, 21 Stat 143, Act of June 10, 1880, 21 Stat 201, Act of March 3, 1881, 21 Stat 598, Act of March 6, 1884, sec 28, 26 Stat 1085, 1102, Act of June 8, 1900 21 Stat 659. The following act dealt with the sale of land of the Great and Little Osage Tribe in Kansas, Joint Resolution of April 10, 1880, 18 Stat 55, Act of August 11, 1876,

There may be some value, however, in a bird's-eye view of the special legislation beginning in 1806 which was designed to secure the individualization of Osage lands and funds while maintaining tribal ownership of the very valuable minerals that were found to underlie the Osage Reservation.

A good introduction to the subject is found in the opinion of Justice Brandeis in the case of *McOmby v United States*.<sup>115</sup>

The Osage Tribe of Indians consisted in 1906 of two thousand persons. Their reservation, located in Oklahoma Territory, between the Arkansas River and the Kansas state line, contained about a million and a half acres of

10 Stat 157. The following laws dealt with rights of way through the Osage Reservation. Act of February 17, 1867, 29 Stat 589. Act of February 28, 1902 sec 22, 32 Stat 48 50 51, 25 U S C 512, Act of April 21, 1904, 38 Stat 240, cited in *Moore v Baugher*, 197 Fed 826 (C C B Okla, 1906).

"246 U S 268 (1918). Also see *Wash v United States* 91 Fed Mosser, 261 U S 462 (1928).

the title well water pump land and a heavily timbered land, hill lands, largely undisturbed with petroleum, natural gas, coal and other minerals. At the time the United States reserved the title a trust fund of \$8,974,098.34, reserved for the benefit of the Indians, was established. The United States also owned other lands. The annual income of the tribe from interest on this trust fund and from rentals of grazing oil, and gas lands was only \$1,000,000, that is \$500 for every man, woman and child. The Government was not to be benefited. Congress, considering apparently that the Indians were enjoying of wealth without responsibility was determined to take the title to the Osages, decided upon the policy of gradual emancipation. By Act of June 28, 1906, 34 Stat. 593, it was provided that the trust fund was to be divided into 100 equal shares and the title to the land was to be divided by placing to the credit of each member of the tribe the proportionate share which should thereafter be held for the benefit of himself and his heirs for the period of 25 years. The money was then paid over to them respectively in \$8.94 and 51¢.

<sup>1</sup> Annual Reports Dept Interior (1005), pp 306-312, (1900)  
pp 118-131  
Footnote omitted

The lands were to be divided by giving to each member of the tribe one-half of the land to make, from the tribal lands, three selections of 160 acres each and to designate which of these should constitute his homestead. A commission was appointed to divide among the members, also the remaining lands, and to divide the lands into 160-acre lots and other small reservations. The oil, gas, coal and other minerals rights were reserved to the tribe for the period of twenty years with provision for leasing the same. The homesteads were made unalienable and not taxable for twenty-five years or until otherwise provided by Congress. The lands not reserved for the homesteads, "surplus lands," were made unalienable for twenty years, and not taxable for three years, except that power was reserved with the Secretary of the Interior to issue to any adult member, upon his petition, a certificate of competency authorizing him to sell all of his surplus land, and upon the expiration of the surplus lands became immediately taxable.

## A ALLOTMENTS

The Osage Allotment Act of June 28, 1906,<sup>128</sup> providing for the distribution of Osage lands<sup>129</sup> in severalty, allowed each member of the tribe to make three selections of 160 acres each, one of which was to be designated as a homestead to be "taken

<sup>120</sup> 84 Stat 539. This statute is discussed at length in *Leovigildale Lead & Zinc Mining Co v Coleman*, 241 U S 432 (1916) which held that the restrictions on alienation imposed by law do not apply to land owned by white men who are not members of the tribe.

The General Allotment Act was inapplicable to territory occupied by the Osages. Sec 8 of the Act of April 28, 1904 33 Stat 299, refers to "the Osage Nation or allottees therein." The Act of March 3, 1898, 30 Stat 1049 reserved from selection and allotment certain lands, including selections for townsites.

28 Sept. 288, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000, 1001, 1002, 1003, 1004, 1005, 1006, 1007, 1008, 1009, 1010, 1011, 1012, 1013, 1014, 1015, 1016, 1017, 1018, 1019, 1020, 1021, 1022, 1023, 1024, 1025, 1026, 1027, 1028, 1029, 1030, 1031, 1032, 1033, 1034, 1035, 1036, 1037, 1038, 1039, 1040, 1041, 1042, 1043, 1044, 1045, 1046, 1047, 1048, 1049, 1050, 1051, 1052, 1053, 1054, 1055, 1056, 1057, 1058, 1059, 1060, 1061, 1062, 1063, 1064, 1065, 1066, 1067, 1068, 1069, 1070, 1071, 1072, 1073, 1074, 1075, 1076, 1077, 1078, 1079, 1080, 1081, 1082, 1083, 1084, 1085, 1086, 1087, 1088, 1089, 1090, 1091, 1092, 1093, 1094, 1095, 1096, 1097, 1

able and non-taxable until otherwise provided by act of Congress." 22 After each member had made the three selections, the remaining lands of the tribe, except as otherwise provided in the act were to be divided as equally as practicable among the tribal members by a commission to be appointed Under the latter provision each Indian received an additional tract averaging between 175 and 200 acres.

[illegible]

This included only surface rights, all oil, gas, and other minerals being reserved to the tribe for 25 years. The Act of March 3, 1909, 36 Stat 778, *infra* fn 182, authorized the Secretary of the Interior to sell part or all of the surplus lands of members of the Osage Tribe, "Provided, That the sale of the Osage lands shall be subject to the reserved rights of the tribe in oil, gas, and other minerals."

Act of June 28, 1906, sec 2, 34 Stat 590, 541 see in 156 *supra*,  
sec 3 of this act was amended by Act of March 8, 1921, 41 Stat 1214  
The Joint Resolution of February 27, 1909, 35 Stat 1167, designated lands  
which might constitute homesteads The Appropriation Act of May  
28, 1918, 40 Stat 661, 679 provided

That the allottees of the Omaha Nation may change the present designation of homesteads to an equal use of their unappropriated surplus lands, upon application to and under such regulations as the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe. Provided, That each time the change and designation shall take the status of the other as it existed prior to the change in designation as to alienation, taxation, or otherwise, and that any order of change or designation shall be recorded in the proper office of

The lands which the homestead were made inalienable<sup>124</sup> for 25 years, except that in his discretion the Secretary of the Interior, at the request of an adult member, might issue a certificate of competency authorizing him to sell any of the lands outside of the homestead, which was to run in inalienable and non-taxable for a period of 25 years, or during the life of the homestead allottee. Upon the issuance of the certificate of competency the surplus lands became alienable and subject to taxation.<sup>125</sup> Subdivision 7 of section 2 of this statute also provided:

That the surplus lands shall be non-taxable for the period of this certificate from the approval of this Act, except while certificates of competency are issued or in case of the death of the allottee.

The Act of March 3, 1909,<sup>126</sup> authorized and empowered the Secretary of the Interior, upon application, to sell, under rules and regulations to be prescribed by him, part or all of the surplus lands of any member of the Osage Tribe. This Act provided that such sales should be subject to the reserved rights of the tribe in oil, gas, and other minerals.

The Act of April 18, 1912,<sup>127</sup> section 3, conferred jurisdiction on the county courts of the State of Oklahoma in probate matters affecting the property of deceased and of orphan minors, insane, or other incompetent allottees of the Osage Tribe with

the provision that no land should be sold or alienated under that section without the approval of the Secretary of the Interior. Section 6 conferred jurisdiction on the courts of Oklahoma to partition Osage allotted lands but provided that no partition or sale of the restricted land of a deceased Osage allottee should be valid until approved by the Secretary of the Interior. It also removed the restrictions from lands held by heirs having certificates of competency or who were nonmembers of the tribe. Section 7 secured the lands allotted to members of the tribe against any lien for any debt or obligation contracted or incurred prior to the issuance of a certificate of competency, or removal of restrictions on alienation. It also provided that no lands or money inherited from Osage allottees shall be subject to lien or taken in satisfaction to secure the payment of any indebtedness incurred by such heirs prior to the time such lands and money were turned over to them. Section 8 of the act authorized the disposition by will by any adult member of the Osage Tribe of his estate, real, personal, or mixed, including trust funds, from which restrictions on alienation had not been removed, in accordance with the laws of the State of Oklahoma, except that no such will should be admitted to probate or have any validity unless approved before or after the death of the testator by the Secretary of the Interior.

The Appropriation Act of May 25, 1918,<sup>128</sup> authorized Osage allottees in accordance with regulations of the Secretary of the Interior, to change the present designation of homesteads in an equal area of their unencumbered surplus lands, each tract, after the change of designation, to take the status of the other as it existed prior to such change as to alienation, taxation, or otherwise. This act also authorized the Secretary of the Interior, where it would be for the best interest of the Osage allottee, to permit the sale of homestead and surplus allotments, wholly or in part, under regulations to be prescribed by him.

The Act of March 3, 1921,<sup>129</sup> amending the 1906 act,<sup>130</sup> declared the Osages citizens of the United States, and removed

Osage County. *Provided further* That the Secretary of the Interior be and he is hereby authorized where the same would be for the best interest of Osage allottees, to permit the sale of surplus and homestead allotments, wholly or in part of Osage allottees under such rules and regulations as he may prescribe and upon such terms as he shall approve.

<sup>124</sup> A distinction is drawn here between inalienability and taxability. It is to be noted that although the surplus lands were made inalienable for 25 years they were exempted from taxation for only 25 years. The homesteads, however, were made both inalienable and non-taxable for 25 years. *United States v. Board of Commissioners of Osage County*, 210 Fed. 948 (C. C. 8, 1914).

<sup>125</sup> *United States v. Board of Commissioners of Osage County*, 210 Fed. 888 (C. C. 8, 1914).

<sup>126</sup> The death of the allottee does not subject the homestead to taxation under this section. *United States v. Board of Commissioners of Osage County, Okla.* 109 Fed. 485 (C. C. W. D. Okla. 1911).

<sup>127</sup> 35 Stat. 778. This act was cited in *Adams v. Osage Tribe of Indians*, 50 F. 2d 683 (C. C. 10, 1912), cert. den. 228 U. S. 872, *Browning v. United States*, 6 F. 2d 801 (C. C. 8, 1905), cert. den. 200 U. S. 808 (1905), *Dismond v. United States*, 34 F. 2d 775 (C. C. 8, 1929), *Kearse v. Kase Indians v. United States*, 80 C. C. 204 (1904), cert. den. 200 U. S. 877, *Leandale Land & Stone Mining Co. v. Coleman*, 241 U. S. 482 (1915), *Morrison v. United States*, 6 F. 2d 811 (C. C. 8, 1925), *United States v. Lutz*, 188 Fed. 317 (C. C. W. D. Okla., 1910), *Work v. United States* *et al.* *supra*, 200 U. S. 161 (1924).

<sup>128</sup> 37 Stat. 80. The Act of April 18, 1912, supplemented the Act of June 7, 1897, 30 Stat. 62, 90. Act of June 28, 1906, 34 Stat. 539, 549, amended Act of June 29, 1906, 34 Stat. 580, 544, and amended by Act of May 25, 1918, 40 Stat. 601, and was cited in *Revere Propecting Indenture*, 10121, 29 Okla. and Com. 787. On Sol. I D. M. 4017, January 4, 1922, On Sol. I D. M. 4740, August 16, 1922, On Sol. I D. M. 14820, December 21, 1922, On Sol. I D. M. 24239, June 10, 1928, On Sol. I D. M. 28771, October 14, 1931, On Comp. Gen. 40178, February 4, 1932, On Sol. I D. M. 27593, November 28, 1934, On Sol. I D. M. 27603, January 26, 1937, 54 I. D. 855 (1934), 55 I. D. 476 (1936), *Browning v. United States*, 6 F. 2d 801 (C. C. 8, 1905), cert. den. 200 U. S. 808 (1905), *Dismond v. United States*, 34 F. 2d 775 (C. C. 8, 1929), *Globe Indemnity Co. v. Bruce*, 81 F. 2d 145 (C. C. 10, 1936), cert. den. 297 U. S. 716, *Kearse v. Kase Indians*, 204 Fed. 776 (C. C. 8, 1920), app. den. 200 U. S. 862 (1922), *In re Dismond*, 35 F. 2d 822 (D. W. D. Okla., 1908), app. den. 45 F. 2d 835, *In re Lutz*, 60 F. 2d 496 (C. C. 10, 1923), *Kearse v. Miller*, 200 U. S. 858 (1919), *La Motte v. United States*, 254 U. S. 670 (1921), *Leandale Land & Stone Mining Co. v. Coleman*, 241 U. S. 492 (1915), *McDuffy v. United States*, 240 U. S. 283 (1915), *Morrison v. United States*, 6 F. 2d 811 (C. C. 8, 1925), *Muld v. Perry*, 14 F. 2d 430 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1928), cert. den. 275 U. S. 601, *Ne Ksh Wye Shes (The)*, 200 U. S. 200 (1906) (App. D. C. 1923), app. den. 200 U. S. 776 (1923), *Revere v. Globe Indemnity Co.*, 200 U. S. 276 U. S. 575 (1922), *Tapp v. Stuart*, 6 F. 2d 877 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1904), *Taylor v. Jones*, 51 F. 2d 892 (C. C. 10, 1913),

cert. den. 284 U. S. 603 (1931), *Taylor v. Taylor*, 51 F. 2d 894 (C. C. 10, 1913), cert. den. 284 U. S. 872 (1931), *United States v. Board of Commissioners*, 20 F. Supp. 270 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1939), *United States v. Carson*, 19 F. Supp. 616 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1937), app. den. 98 F. 2d 1028, *United States v. Gray*, 284 Fed. 104 (C. C. 8, 1922), aff. 271 Fed. 747 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1921), app. den. 263 U. S. 689, *United States v. Jule*, 52 Fed. 626 (C. C. 10, 1913), *United States v. Moore*, 208 Fed. 286 (C. C. 12, 1907), aff. 202 Fed. 261 (C. C. 8, 1920), app. den. 287 U. S. 628 (1922), *United States v. Homan*, 8 F. Supp. 617 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1934), *United States v. Hughes*, 8 F. Supp. 678 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1934), *United States v. Johnson*, 47 F. 2d 165 (C. C. 10, 1901), *United States v. Le Motte*, 67 F. 2d 788 (C. C. 10, 1914), *United States v. Lutz*, 200 U. S. 218 (C. C. 8, 1918), *United States v. Munnerly*, 15 F. 2d 926 (C. C. 8, 1909), *United States v. Ransom*, 284 Fed. 108 (C. C. 8, 1922), *United States v. Banks*, 64 F. 2d 160 (C. C. 10, 1938), *United States v. Yelline Company*, 274 Fed. 115 (D. C. E. D. Wash., 1921), *Work v. United States et al.* *supra*, 200 U. S. 161 (1924).

<sup>129</sup> 40 Stat. 801, 879. This act amended the Act of June 28, 1906, 34 Stat. 650, was amended by Act of February 27, 1924, 43 Stat. 1008, and Act of March 3, 1925, 43 Stat. 1475, supplemented by Act of January 31, 1931, 46 Stat. 1047, and cited in 88 Op. A. G. 60 (1921), 86 Op. A. G. 96 (1920), On Sol. I D. M. 4017, January 4, 1922, On Sol. I D. M. 6870, August 10, 1922, On Sol. I D. M. 74069, September 30, 1922, On Sol. I D. M. 17687, December 19, 1925, On Sol. I D. M. 24239, June 10, 1928, On Sol. I D. M. 24239, June 10, 1928, On Sol. I D. M. 24242, March 26, 1927, On Sol. I D. M. 24293, June 10, 1928, On Sol. I D. M. 28707, May 4, 1929, On Sol. I D. M. 28280, August 21, 1929, On Sol. I D. M. 28781, October 14, 1931, On Sol. I D. M. 27603, January 26, 1937, 49 I. D. 430 (1932), 50 I. D. 672 (1934), 51 I. D. 160 (1935), 54 I. D. 350 (1938), 54 I. D. 341 (1938), 55 I. D. 450 (1938), *Adams v. Osage Tribe of Indians*, 59 F. 2d 603 (C. C. 10, 1923), aff. 80 F. 2d 918 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1931), cert. den. 287 U. S. 832, *Browning v. United States*, 6 F. 2d 801 (C. C. 8, 1905), cert. den. 200 U. S. 808 (1905), *Globe Indemnity Co. v. Bruce*, 81 F. 2d 145 (C. C. 10, 1936), cert. den. 297 U. S. 716, *Kearse v. Miller*, 200 U. S. 858 (1919), *La Motte v. United States*, 254 U. S. 670 (1921), *Leandale Land & Stone Mining Co. v. Coleman*, 241 U. S. 492 (1915), *McDuffy v. United States*, 240 U. S. 283 (1915), *Morrison v. United States*, 6 F. 2d 811 (C. C. 8, 1925), *Muld v. Perry*, 14 F. 2d 430 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1928), cert. den. 275 U. S. 601, *Ne Ksh Wye Shes (The)*, 200 U. S. 200 (1906) (App. D. C. 1923), app. den. 200 U. S. 776 (1923), *Revere v. Globe Indemnity Co.*, 200 U. S. 276 U. S. 575 (1922), *Tapp v. Stuart*, 6 F. 2d 877 (D. C. N. D. Okla., 1904), *Taylor v. Jones*, 51 F. 2d 892 (C. C. 10, 1913),



of Indians, the members thereof, or their heirs and assigns, were continued subject to such trust and supervision until January 1, 1970, unless otherwise provided by act of Congress. This act also provided that homestead allotments of Osage Indians not having a certificate of competency shall remain exempt from taxation while the title remains in the original allottee or one-half or more of Osage Indian blood and in his unallotted heirs or devisees of one-half or more of Osage Indian blood until January 1, 1970 with the proviso that the tax exempt land of any such Indian allottee, heir, or devisee shall not at any time exceed 160 acres.

Section 5 of this Act provides:

"The restrictions concerning lands and funds of allotted Osage Indians, as provided in this Act and all prior Acts now in force, shall apply to unallotted Osage Indians born since July 1, 1907 or after the passage of this Act and to their heirs of Osage Indian blood, except that the provisions of section 6 of the Act of Congress approved February 27, 1923, with reference to the validity of contracts for debt, shall not apply to any allotted or unallotted Osage Indian of less than one-half degree Indian blood. Provided That the Osage lands and funds and other property which has heretofore or which may hereafter be held in trust or under supervision of the United States for such Osage Indians of less than one-half degree Indian blood not having a certificate of competency shall not be subject to forced sale to satisfy any debt or obligation contracted or incurred prior to the issuance of a certificate of competency. Provided further, That the Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized in his discretion to grant a certificate of competency to any unallotted Osage Indian when in the judgment of the said Secretary such member is fully competent and capable of transacting his or her own affairs."

The Act of June 24, 1908,<sup>1</sup> continued the restrictions on the lands, moneys, and other properties now or hereafter held in trust or under the supervision of the United States for Osage Indians until January 1, 1984, unless otherwise provided by act of Congress. This act also continued the tax exemption on homestead allotments of Osage Indians not having a certificate of competency, while the title remains in the original allottee or one-half or more of Osage Indian blood or in his unallotted heirs or devisees of one-half or more Osage Indian blood, until January 1, 1984.

No general exemption of Osage Indians as such from the payment of taxes can be implied from those statutes. On the contrary, the plan has been to teach the Indians, by partial taxation, to assume the responsibilities of citizenship.<sup>2</sup>

## B HEADRIGHTS AND COMPETENCY

Section 4 of the Act of June 28, 1906 provides, in part

"That all funds belonging to the Osage tribe, and all moneys due, and all moneys that may become due, or may hereafter be found to be due the said Osage tribe of Indians, shall be held in trust by the United States for the period of twenty-five years from and after the first day of January, nineteen hundred and seven, except as herein provided

"That all the funds of the Osage tribe of Indians, and all the moneys now due or that may hereafter be found to be due to the said Osage tribe of Indians, and all moneys that may be received from the sale of their lands in Kansas under existing laws, and all moneys found to be due to said Osage tribe of Indians on claims against the United States, and all proper expenses are paid shall be segregated as soon after January first, nineteen hundred and seven, as is practicable and placed to the credit of the individual members of the said Osage tribe on a basis of a pro rata division among the members of said tribe, as shown by the authorized roll of membership as herein provided for, or to their heirs as hereinafter provided, said credit to draw interest is now authorized by law, and the interest that may accrue thereon shall be paid quarterly to the members entitled thereto, except in the case of minors, in which case the interest shall be paid quarterly to the parents until said minor arrives at the age of twenty-one years. Provided, That if the Commissioner of Indian Affairs becomes satisfied that the said interest of any minor is being misused or squandered he may withhold the payment of such interest. And provided further, That said interest of minors whose parents are deceased shall be paid to their legal guardians, as above provided.

Whereby That the royalty received from oil, gas, coal, and other mineral leases upon the lands for which section and division are herein provided, and all moneys received from the sale of town lots, together with the buildings thereon, and all moneys received from the sale of the three reservations of one hundred and sixty acres each heretofore reserved for dwelling houses, and all moneys received from grazing lands, shall be placed in the Treasury of the United States to the credit of the members of the Osage Tribe of Indians as other moneys of said tribe are to be deposited under the provisions of said Act, and the same shall be distributed to the individual members of said Osage tribe according to the roll provided for herein, in the manner and at the same time that payments are made of interest on other moneys held in trust for the Osages by the United States, except as herein provided.

Under the provisions of the foregoing act, the pro rata share of each Indian allottee aggregating \$2,510.76 was placed to his credit in the Treasury of the United States. The royalty received from oil, gas, coal, and other minerals, together with the interest on the pro rata shares was distributed to the Indians quarterly as they accrued.<sup>3</sup>

Section 5 of the Act of 1906 provides:

"That at the expiration of the period of twenty-five years from and after the first day of January, nineteen

<sup>1</sup> See Hearings II Comm. on Ind. Affs., H. R. 6214, 74th Cong. 1st sess., 1905, p. 115, and Act of June 24, 1908, 52 Stat. 1084, 1087. The District Court, in *In re Denmon*, 98 F. 2d 662 (D. C. W. D. Okla., 1908) app. dismissed 45 F. 2d 585, defined a headright.

What is an Osage "head right?" This is thoroughly defined by the Act of 1906 and in nothing more than that interest that a member of the tribe has in the Osage tribal trust estate and the trust converts of the oil, gas, and mineral rights, and the fund which were placed to the credit of the Osage tribe fully set out in the above act. (P. 664.)

Another court has defined a headright as follows: "The right to receive the trust funds and the mineral interests at the end of the trust period, and during that period to participate in the distribution of the bonuses and royalties accruing from the mineral estate and the interest on the trust funds is an Osage headright." *Globe Indemnity Co. v. Brown*, 81 F. 2d 148-149 (C. C. A. 10 1905). The tribal income derived from oil and gas sources up to June 1905 aggregated \$267,805,950.68, which entire sum, less the amounts authorized by Congress to be expended for the expenses of the Osage Agency were distributed under various acts of Congress to which reference will hereinafter be made, to the Indians per capita the shares of deceased Indians being paid to their heirs or devisees. *Id.* see *In re Brown*, 90 F. 2d 495 (C. C. A. 10 1902).

Headrights are not transferrable and do not pass to a trustee in bankruptcy. *Taylor v. Taylor*, 81 F. 2d 684 (C. C. A. 10 1921), cert. den. 284 U. S. 672 (1931); *Taylor v. Jones*, 51 F. 2d 892 (C. C. A. 10, 1931), cert. den. 284 U. S. 662 (1931).

<sup>2</sup> *United States v. Board of Comm'rs*, 28 F. Supp. 270 (D. C. N. D. Okla. 1930), *United States v. Johnson*, 87 F. 2d 135 (C. C. A. 10, 1936).

<sup>3</sup> *United States v. Le Mott*, 87 F. 2d 788 (C. C. A. 10 1935), *United States v. Sandoz*, 94 F. 2d 160 (C. C. A. 10 1938).

<sup>4</sup> *Division Production Corp. v. Carter Oil Co.*, 2 F. Supp. 81 (D. C. N. D. Okla. 1963), *Williams v. Carter*, 58 F. 2d 147 (C. C. A. 10, 1938).

<sup>5</sup> 53 Stat. 1074 1098.

<sup>6</sup> See *Choteau v. Durant*, 288 U. S. 891 (1933). Section 810 of title 25 of the U. S. Code (Act of August 29, 1891, 50 Stat. 805) provides:

"Whenever restricted Indian lands in the State of Oklahoma are subject to gross production tax on minerals including oil and gas, the Secretary of the Interior, in his discretion, may cause such tax or taxes due the State of Oklahoma to be paid in the manner provided for by the statutes of the State of Oklahoma.

hundred and seven, the lands, mineral interests, and moneys, hereinafter provided for and held in trust by the United States, shall be the absolute property of the individual members of the Osage tribe, according to the allotment provided for in their bills, as herein provided, and deeds to said lands shall be issued to said members or to their heirs, as herein provided, and said moneys shall be distributed to said members, or to their heirs, as herein provided, and said members shall have full control of said lands, moneys, and mineral interests, except as hereinbefore provided.

Section 6 provides that the lands, moneys, and mineral interests provided for in the act, of any deceased member of the Osage tribe shall descend to his or her legal heirs, according to the laws of the Territory of Oklahoma, or of the State in which said reservation may be hereinafter incorporated, except where the decedent leaves no issue, nor husband, nor wife, in which case the lands, moneys, and mineral interests must go to the mother and father equally.

When the Secretary of the Interior is satisfied that an individual Indian is able to manage his own property, the Secretary is permitted to issue to that Indian a certificate of competency.<sup>114</sup> So long as the Indian has not received a certificate of competency, the income derived as his share of the tribal royalty is exempt from the application of federal income tax laws.<sup>115</sup> The exemption, however, does not apply in favor of a white woman who receives income from land inherited from her children, members of the Osage tribe.<sup>116</sup>

Under section 8 of the Act of April 18, 1912,<sup>117</sup> jurisdiction of the property of deceased and of orphan minor, insane, or other incompetent allottees of the Osage tribe was conferred on the county courts of the State of Oklahoma. The act provided that a copy of all papers filed in the county court shall be served on the Superintendent of the Osage Agency at the time of filing, and authorized the superintendent, whenever the interests of the allottee require, to appear in court for the protection of the interests of the allottee. The act further authorized the superintendent or the Secretary of the Interior, to investigate the conduct of executors, administrators, and guardians and to prosecute any remedy, civil or criminal, as the exigencies of the case and the preservation and protection of the allottee or his estate may require.

Section 6 of the Act of April 18, 1912, authorizes the Secretary of the Interior, in his discretion, under rules and regulations to be prescribed by him and upon application therefor, to pay to Osage allottees, including the blind, insane, crippled, aged, or helpless, all or part of the funds in the Treasury of the United States to their individual credit, with the proviso that he shall first be satisfied of the competency of the allottee or that the release of said individual trust funds would be to the manifest best interests and welfare of the allottee, and further, that no trust funds of a minor or of an allottee who is incompetent shall be released and paid over except to a guardian of such person duly appointed by the proper court and after the filing by such

guardian and approval by the court of a sufficient bond entitling the guardian to administer the funds released.

Section 6 of this act provides that the proceeds of partition sales due minor heirs, including such minor Indian heirs as may not be tribal members, and those Indian heirs not having certificates of competency, shall be paid into the Treasury of the United States and placed to the credit of the Indians upon the same condition as attached to segregated shares of the Osage tribal fund, or with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior paid to the duly appointed guardian. The same disposition is provided in the act with reference to the proceeds of inherited lands sold to be made of the money in the Treasury of the United States to the credit of deceased Osage allottees.

Section 7 of the act protected the funds of Osage Indians against any claim arising prior to the grant of a certificate of competency. It provided further that no lands or moneys inherited from Osage allottees shall be subject to or taken or sold to secure the payment of any indebtedness incurred by such heir prior to the time such lands and moneys are turned over to such heir.

Section 8 authorized the disposition by will of all of the estate of an Osage Indian, including trust funds, with the provision that no such will should be admitted to probate or have any validity unless approved before or after the death of the testator by the Secretary of the Interior.

As stated by the United States Supreme Court in *Work v Lynn*,<sup>118</sup> it was believed when the 1906 Act was passed

that the income to be paid quarterly would not be in excess of the current needs of the members. For about ten years that proved to be true. Thereafter increased production of oil and gas under the leases that were given resulted in royalties which swelled the income to a point where the quarterly payments were greatly in excess of current needs and were leading to extravagance and waste. Administrative measures restricting the payments were adopted, but their validity was questioned (see *Work v Lynn*, 281 U S 852) and the matter was called to the attention of Congress by the Secretary of the Interior. (P 167.)

Because of the conditions outlined above, Congress in section 4 of the Act of March 3, 1921,<sup>119</sup> amended the Act of June 28, 1906, as follows:

That from and after the passage of this Act the Secretary of the Interior shall cause to be paid at the end of each fiscal quarter to each adult member of the Osage Tribe having a certificate of competency his or her pro rata share, either as a member of the tribe or heir of a deceased member, of the interest on trust funds, the bonus received from the sale of leases, and the royalties received during the previous fiscal quarter, and so long as the income is sufficient to pay to the adult members of said tribe not having a certificate of competency \$1,000 quarterly except where incompetent adult members have legal guardians, in which case the income of such incompetents shall be paid to their legal guardians, and to pay for maintenance and education to the parents or natural guardians or legal guardians actually having minor members under twenty-one years of age personally in charge \$500 quarterly out of the income of said minors all of said quarterly payments to legal guardians, and adults, not having certificates of competency to be paid under the supervision of the Superintendent of the Osage Agency, and to invest the remainder after paying all the taxes of such members either in United States bonds or in Oklahoma State, county, or school bonds, or place the same on time deposits at interest in banks in the State of Oklahoma for the benefit of each individual member under such rules and regulations as the Secretary of the

<sup>114</sup> For rules regarding certificates of competency to Osage adults see 28 C F R 2415.

<sup>115</sup> *Blackbird v Commissioner of Internal Revenue*, 88 F 2d 978 (C A 10, 1920).

<sup>116</sup> *Pettit v Commissioner of Internal Revenue*, 88 F 2d 978 (C A 10, 1920), cert den 281 U S 759 (1930), and sub nom *Onstott v Bureau*, 288 U S 801 (1931).

<sup>117</sup> 37 Stat 86, amending Act of June 28, 1906, 34 Stat 639, see fn 168 *supra*. In *Work v United States ex rel Motter*, 281 U S 853 (1923), the Supreme Court said:

"\* \* \* Until he has had a full opportunity to exercise this discretion neither he [Assistant Secretary] nor the Secretary can be compelled by mandamus to make the payment, and if in its exercise he does not act capriciously or arbitrarily beyond the scope of his authority, the writ will not issue if all" (P 863.)

<sup>118</sup> 266 U S 161 (1924).

<sup>119</sup> 41 Stat 1249. See fn 166, *supra*.

Interior may prescribe. *Provided*, That at the beginning of each fiscal year there shall first be received and set aside out of the Osage Indian funds, available for that purpose, a sufficient amount of money for the expenditures authorized by Congress out of the Osage funds for that fiscal year. *Provided further*, That all just existing individual obligations of adult, not having certificates of competency, not including upon the passage of this Act, which are approved by the Superintendent of the Osage Agency, shall be paid out of the money of such individual as the same may be placed to his credit in addition to the quarterly allowance provided for herein.

Prior to the decision of the United States Supreme Court in *Wool v. Lynn* the foregoing provision was administratively interpreted as requiring payment to the legal guardians of adult interested Osage Indians of the entire income of such Indians. As a result of the decision in the *Lynn* case, Congress in the Act of February 27, 1925,<sup>100</sup> provided for the return by legal guardians to the Secretary of the Interior of all moneys in their possession or control, theretofore paid them in excess of \$4,000 per annum for adults and \$2,000 for minors under the Act of March 3, 1908. The act also provided for delivery by the guardians to the Secretary of the Interior of all property, bonds, securities, and stock purchased or investments made by such guardians out of the moneys paid them, to be held by the Secretary of the Interior or disposed of by him as he shall deem to be for the best interests of the members to whom the same belongs. The act further provided that all funds other than as above mentioned and other property theretofore or thereafter received by a guardian or a member of the Osage tribe of Indians, which was theretofore under the supervision and control of the Secretary of the Interior or the title to which was held in trust for such Indians by the United States, shall not thereby become divested of the supervision and control of the Secretary of the Interior or the United States be received of its trust, and that the guardians should not dispose of or otherwise encumber such fund or property without the approval of the Secretary of the Interior, and in accordance with the orders of the court of Osage County, Oklahoma. The act also provided that in case of the death, resignation, or removal from office of such a guardian, the funds and property in his possession subject to supervision and control of the Secretary of the Interior or to which the United States held the title in trust should be immediately delivered to the Superintendent of the Osage Agency, to be held by him and supervised and invested as provided by the terms of the act.

Congress also modified the payments to be made in behalf of enrolled or unenrolled minor members above 18 years of age so as to permit the parents or legal guardians of such minors to receive \$1,000 quarterly. The provision with regard to the payment under the 1925 act reads as follows:

That the Secretary of the Interior shall cause to be paid at the end of each fiscal quarter to each adult member of the Osage Tribe of Indians in Oklahoma having a certificate of competency his or her pro rata share, either as a member of the tribe or heir or devisee of a deceased member, of the interest on trust funds, the bonus received from the sale of oil or gas leases, the royalties therefrom, and any other moneys due such Indian received during each fiscal quarter, including all moneys received prior to the passage of this Act and remaining unpaid, and so long as the accumulated income is sufficient the Secretary of the Interior shall cause to be paid to the adult members of said tribe not having a certificate of competency \$1,000 quarterly, except where such adult members have legal guardians, in which case the amounts provided for herein may be paid to the legal guardian or direct to such Indian in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior

the total amounts of such payments, however, shall not exceed \$1,000 quarterly except as hereinafter provided and shall cause to be paid for the maintenance and education, to either one of the parents or legal guardians actually having personally in charge, enrolled or unenrolled, minor member under twenty-one years of age, and above eighteen years of age, \$3,000 quarterly out of the income of such said minor, and out of the income of minors under eighteen years of age, \$500 quarterly, and so long as the accumulated income of the parent or parents of a minor who has no income or whose income is less than \$500 per quarter is sufficient, shall cause to be paid to either of said parents having the care and custody of such minor \$500 quarterly, or such proportion thereof as the income of such minor may be less than \$500, in addition to the allowances above provided for such parents. Minors due such adult members from their lands and then minor children's lands and all income from such adult investments shall be paid to them in addition to the allowance above provided. All payments to legal guardians of Osage Indians shall be expended subject to the joint approval in writing of the court and the superintendent of the Osage Agency. All payments to adults not having certificates of competency, including amounts paid for each minor, shall, in case the Secretary of the Interior finds that such adults are wasting or squandering such income, be subject to the supervision of the superintendent of the Osage Agency. *Provided*, That if an adult member, not having a certificate of competency so declares, his entire income accumulating in the future from the sources herein specified may be paid to him without supervision, unless the Secretary of the Interior shall find, after notice and hearing, that such member is wasting or squandering his income, in which event the Secretary of the Interior shall pay to such member only the amounts hereinbefore specified to be paid to adult members not having certificates of competency. The Secretary of the Interior shall invest the remainder, after paying the lives of such members, in United States bonds, Oklahoma State bonds, real estate, first-mortgage real estate loans not to exceed 50 per centum of the appraised value of such real estate, and where the member is a resident of Oklahoma such investment shall be in loans on Oklahoma real estate, stock in Oklahoma building and loan associations, livestock, or deposit the same in banks in Oklahoma, or expend the same for the benefit of such member, such expenditures, investments, and deposits to be made under such restrictions, rules, and regulations as he may prescribe. *Provided*, That the Secretary of the Interior shall make any investment for an adult member not without first securing the approval of such member of such investment.

Under the same section Congress provided that no guardian shall be appointed, except on the written application or approval of the Secretary of the Interior, for the estate of a member of the Osage tribe of Indians who does not have a certificate of competency or who is of one-half or more Indian blood.

Section 8 of this act provides in part:

Property of Osage Indians not having certificates of competency purchased as hereinafter set forth shall not be subject to the lien of any debt, claim, or judgment except taxes, or be subject to alienation, without the approval of the Secretary of the Interior.

Section 4 of the Act of February 27, 1925,<sup>101</sup> now vested in the Secretary of the Interior power to revoke certificates of competency issued to an Osage Indian of more than one-half Indian blood, whom he finds, after notice and hearing, to be squandering or misusing his funds.<sup>102</sup>

<sup>100</sup> 43 Stat. 1008. See fn. 189 supra. On the general subject of revocation of certificates of competency of Osage Indians, see 33 F. 1D 180 (1908).

<sup>101</sup> When if an Osage Indian were manifestly incompetent, and his business interests would be safeguarded thereby, his certificate could not be revoked unless he squandered or misused his income. On limitation on the amount of credit which may be granted on Osage Indian see Act of March 3, 1901, 31 Stat. 1068, 1068-1069.

<sup>102</sup> 43 Stat. 1008. See fn. 180, supra.

In section 6 of the act it was provided

No contract for debt heretofore made with a member of the Osage Tribe of Indians not having a certificate of competency, shall have any validity, unless approved by the Secretary of the Interior.

In section 1 of the Act of March 2, 1929,<sup>147</sup> Congress provides

The lands, money, and other properties now or hereafter held in trust under the supervision of the United States for the Osage Tribe of Indians, the members thereof, or their heirs and assigns, shall continue subject to such trust and supervision until January 1 1939, unless otherwise provided by Act of Congress.

Section 3 of this act provides

That section 1 of the Act of Congress of February 27, 1925 (Forty third Statutes at Large, page 1008), is hereby amended by adding thereto the following:

"The Secretary of the Interior, he, and is hereby authorized, in his discretion, under such rules and regulations as he may prescribe, upon application of any member of the Osage Tribe of Indians not having a certificate of competency, to pay all or any part of the funds held in trust for such Indians. *Provided*, That the Secretary of the Interior shall, within one year after this Act is approved, pay to each enrolled Indian of less than half Osage blood, one fifth part of his or her proportionate share of accumulated funds. And such Secretary shall on or before the expiration of ten years from the date of the approval of this Act, advance and pay over to such Osage Indians of less than one-half Osage Indian blood, the balance appearing to his credit of accumulated funds, and shall issue to such Indian a certificate of competency. *And provided further*, That nothing herein contained shall be construed to interfere with any restriction imposed by the Secretary of the Interior of restrictions from and against any Osage Indian at any time."

Section 4 of this act provides

That section 2 of the Act of Congress approved February 27, 1925 (Forty third Statutes at Large, page 1011), being an Act to amend the Act of Congress of March 8, 1921 (Forty first Statutes at Large, page 1249), be, and the same is hereby, amended to read as follows:

"Upon the death of an Osage Indian of one-half or more Indian blood who does not have a certificate of competency, his or her moneys and funds and other property accrued and accruing to him or her estate and which have heretofore been subject to supervision as provided by law may be paid to the administrator or executor of the estate of such deceased Indian or direct to his heirs or devisees, or may be retained by the Secretary of the Interior in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior, under regulations to be promulgated by him. *Provided*, That the Secretary of the Interior shall pay to administrators and executors of the estates of such deceased Osage Indians a sufficient amount of money out of such estates to pay all lawful indebtedness and costs and expenses of administration when approved by him, and, out of the shares belonging to heirs or devisees, above referred to, he shall pay the costs and expenses of such heirs or devisees, including attorney fees, when approved by him, in the determination of heirs or contests of wills. Upon the death of any Osage Indian of less than one-half of Osage Indian blood or upon the death of an Osage Indian who has a certificate of competency, his moneys and funds and other property accrued and accruing to his credit shall be paid and delivered to the administrator or executor of his estate to be administered upon according to the laws of the State of Oklahoma. *Provided*, That upon the settlement of such estate any funds or property subject to the control or supervision of the Secretary of the Interior on the date of the approval of this Act, which have been inherited by or devised to any adult or minor

heir or devisee of one-half or more Osage Indian blood who does not have a certificate of competency, and which have been paid or delivered by the Secretary of the Interior to the administrator or executor shall be paid or delivered by such administrator or executor to the Secretary of the Interior for the benefit of such Indian and shall be subject to the supervision of the Secretary as provided by law."

Under section 5 of the act, the restrictions concerning lands and funds of allotted Osage Indians, as provided in that act and all prior acts then in force, shall apply to unallotted Osage Indians born since July 1, 1907, or thereafter, and to their heirs of Osage Indian blood, except that the provision of section 6 of the Act of February 27, 1925, with reference to the validity of contracts for debt, shall not apply to any allotted or unallotted Osage Indian of less than one-half degree Indian blood, and subject to the further proviso that the Osage lands and funds and any other property which is held theretofore or which may hereafter be held in trust or under supervision of the United States for Osage Indians of less than one-half degree Indian blood not having a certificate of competency shall not be subject to forced sale to satisfy any debt or obligation contracted or incurred prior to the issuance of a certificate of competency, and with the further provision that the Secretary of the Interior was authorized in his discretion to grant a certificate of competency to any unallotted Osage Indian when in the judgment of the said Secretary such member is fully competent and capable of transacting his or her own affairs.

The Act of June 24, 1938,<sup>148</sup> in other modifying Osage payments, as follows:

That hereafter the Secretary of the Interior shall cause to be paid to each adult member of the Osage Tribe of Indians not having a certificate of competency his or her proportionate share, either as a member of the tribe or heir or devisee of a deceased member, of the interest on trust funds, the bonus received from the sale of oil or gas leases, and the royalties therefrom received during each fiscal quarter, not to exceed \$1,000 per quarter, and if such adult member has a legal guardian, his current income not to exceed \$1,000 per quarter may be paid to such legal guardian in the discretion of the Secretary of the Interior. *Provided*, That when an adult restricted Indian has surplus funds in excess of \$10,000 there shall be paid such Indian sufficient funds from his accumulated surplus in addition to his current income to aggregate \$1,000 quarterly, but in the event of any adult restricted Indian having surplus funds of less than \$10,000, such Indian shall receive quarterly only his current income not to exceed \$1,000 per quarter. *Provided further*, That the Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized to and may in his discretion pay out of any money heretofore accrued or hereafter accruing to the credit of any person of Osage Indian blood who does not have a certificate of competency or who is one-half or more Osage Indian blood, all of said person's taxes of every kind and character, for which said person is now or hereafter may be liable, before paying to or for such person any funds as required by law. *And provided further*, That upon application and consent of any restricted Osage Indian the Secretary of the Interior may cause payment to be made of additional funds from the accumulated surplus to the credit of any Osage Indian under such rules and regulations as he may prescribe. Rentals due such adult members from their lands and their minor children's lands and all income from such adults' investments, including interest on deposits to their credit, shall be paid to them in addition to the current allowances above provided.

Whenever minor members of the Osage Tribe of Indians have funds or property subject to the control or supervision of the Secretary of the Interior, the said Secretary may in his discretion pay or cause to be paid to the parents, legal guardian, or any person, school, or institution having actual custody of such minors,

<sup>147</sup> 45 Stat 1478 See in 171, supra.

<sup>148</sup> 52 Stat 1084 See in 172, supra.



such amounts out of the income or funds of the said minors as he deems necessary, and when such minor is eighteen years of age or over, the Secretary of the Interior may in his discretion cause disbursement of funds for support and maintenance or other specific purposes to be made direct to such minor. (17p 1034-1035.)

### C INHERITANCE

Exclusive jurisdiction of the probate of wills and the determination of heirs of the Osages is vested in the state courts.<sup>12</sup>

If an Osage dies testate, the Secretary of the Interior is authorized to approve or disapprove the will prior to institution of probate proceedings in the local court.<sup>13</sup> In the event that the will is disapproved, it may not be offered for probate, but if the will is approved, the state court is not bound by the Secretary's determination as to validity and it may permit the issue to be reargued before it.

The power of an Osage Indian to make a will has been exercised by the Solicitor for the Department of the Interior.<sup>14</sup>

There is no provision in the act of 1906, authorizing an Osage Indian to make a will. That authority is contained in Section 8 of the act of April 28, 1912 (27 Stat. 80, 88), entitled "An Act supplementing and to amend the act" of June 28, 1906, which section provides:

"That any adult member of the Osage Tribe of Indians not actually incompetent may dispose of any or all of his real or personal, present or future, unalienated trust funds, from which restrictions as to alienation have not been removed, by will, in accordance with the laws of the State of Oklahoma. *Provided*, That no such will shall be admitted to probate or have any validity unless approved before or after the death of the testator by the Secretary of the Interior."

The act in section 8 thereof, subjects the property of deceased and incompetent Osage allottees in probate matters to the jurisdiction of the County Courts of the State of Oklahoma. Such land, such personal property, however, cannot be sold or alienated and no will can be admitted to probate without the prior approval of the Secretary of the Interior. The word "minor" or "minors" is used through out the act of 1912, in connection with provisions similar to those found in the act of 1906. The clear indications are that the word as used in the latter act means the same thing that it was declared to mean in the former act, that is, a person under 21 years of age. As stated the word "adult" in the act of 1906, as applied to both males and females before they were 21 years of age or over. In view of the fact that the act of 1912 is "supplemental to and amendatory of the act" of 1906, section 8 thereof which authorizes any "adult" member of the Osage tribe of Indians to dispose of his property by will must be read into the act of 1906. The section thus becomes a part of and must be construed in connection with and act of 1906. In this view there is no escape from the conclusion that the word "adult" in said section 8 means a person 21 years of age or over. It was the exclusive right of Congress to determine at what age an Osage Indian becomes capable of making a will. It declared that age to be 21 or majority. A law of Oklahoma declaring a person to be competent to make a will at 18 years of age is directly in conflict with the Federal statute and the latter is controlling. *Yuskeff v. Clouse* (188 Fed. 338, 276 U. S. 228), *Priddy v. Thompson* (204 Fed. 935), *Letts v. Letts* (176 Pac. 234). It follows that testatrix not having reached the age of 21 years was not for that reason incapable of making a valid will.

### D LEASING

1. *Tribal oil and gas and mineral leases*—The greater part of the income from leases of the Osage Indians is derived from oil and gas lands. During the fiscal year 1924 the oil rights

to 70,737 acres in the Osage Reservation were sold by means of bids for \$17,500,800.<sup>15</sup> In the introduction to the discussion of the Osages, it has been shown that the title to the oil and gas in the Osage Reservation is held for the benefit of the tribe even though the surface has been allotted in severalty to individuals.

Section 3 of the Osage Allotment Act of June 28, 1906,<sup>16</sup> directed that the oil, gas, coal or other minerals covered by the allotted lands, should be leased to the Osage tribe for 25 years from and after April 8, 1906, and provided that mineral leases for such lands might be made by the tribal council with the approval of the Secretary of the Interior under such rules and regulations as he might prescribe.<sup>17</sup> Under the seventh paragraph of section 2 it was provided that oil, gas, and other minerals should become the property of the owner of the land at the expiration of 25 years, unless otherwise provided by Congress.

Section 3 of the 1906 act was amended by the Act of March 8, 1921,<sup>18</sup> so as to extend the reservation of minerals to the tribe to April 7, 1946. All valid existing oil and gas leases on April 7, 1921, were renewed upon the same terms, and extended, until April 8, 1946, and so long thereafter as oil or gas was found in paying quantities. The 1921 act also directed the Secretary of the Interior and the Osage Council "to offer for lease for oil and gas purposes all of the remaining portions of the unleased Osage land prior to April 8, 1921, offering the same annually at a rate of not less than one tenth of the unleased area."

This provision was again amended by the Act of March 2, 1929,<sup>19</sup> which extended the period of reservation to the Osage tribe of the minerals covered by such lands until April 8, 1939, unless otherwise provided by act of Congress. The 1929 act also amended the provision requiring the leasing of lands by the Secretary of the Interior and the Osage Council by providing:

"\* \* \* That not less than twenty-five thousand acres shall be offered for lease for oil and gas mining purposes during any one year. *Provided further*, That as to all lands heretofore leased, the regulations governing same and the leases issued thereon shall contain appropriate provisions for the conservation of the natural gas for its economic use, to the end that the highest percentage of ultimate recovery of both oil and gas may be secured. *Provided, however*, That nothing herein contained shall be construed as affecting any valid existing lease for oil or gas or other minerals, but all such leases shall continue as long as gas, oil, or other minerals are found in paying quantities."

Section 3 of the Act of June 24, 1898,<sup>20</sup> amended the 1929 act to provide that the minerals covered by such reserved lands shall be reserved.

"\* \* \* until the 8th day of April, 1898, unless otherwise provided by Act of Congress, and all royalties and bonuses arising therefrom shall belong to the Osage Tribe of Indians, and shall be disbursed to members of the Osage Tribe on their allot or as assign as now provided by law, after reserving such amounts as are now or may hereafter be authorized by Congress for specific purposes."

The lands, money, and other properties now or here after held in trust or under the supervision of the United States for the Osage Tribe of Indians, the members

<sup>12</sup> Schreckenhfer, The Office of Indian Affairs, Its History, Activities and Organization (1927), p. 189.

<sup>13</sup> 84 Stat. 569, 2d. 150, *supra*.

<sup>14</sup> See *Woe v. United States* re *rei Mosser*, 261 U. S. 822 (1923).

<sup>15</sup> 43 Stat. 1248, 2d. 135, *supra*.

<sup>16</sup> Sec. 1, 45 Stat. 1478. See ch. 171, *supra*.

<sup>17</sup> *Ibid.*, 1479.

<sup>18</sup> 62 Stat. 1084, 1083. For regulations regarding the leasing of Osage Reservation lands for oil and gas mining, see 26 C. F. R. 139.1-139.94. For regulations regarding the leasing of such lands for mining except oil and gas, see ch. 204.1-204.80.

<sup>19</sup> Act of April 19, 1912, sec. 8, 37 Stat. 86. See ch. 168, *supra*. Also see subsection A, *supra*.

<sup>20</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 8, 37 Stat. 86, 88.

<sup>21</sup> Op. Sol. I. D., D. 47112, April 14, 1920.

thereof, or then heirs and assigns, shall continue subject to such trusts and supervision until January 1, 1984, unless otherwise provided by Act of Congress.

3 *Agricultural lands of reversioned lands*—Section 7 of the On-Leave Allotment Agreement of June 25, 1906,<sup>120</sup> authorizes the allottees of the On-Leave tribe and then heirs to have their lands for farming, grazing, or other purposes, but requires all leases

<sup>120</sup> 84 Stat 889

for the benefit of the individual allottees of the tribe or their heirs to be approved by the Secretary of the Interior before becoming effective.<sup>121</sup>

<sup>121</sup> It was held under this section and sec 12 that the Secretary of the Interior had authority to adopt rules and regulations for the leasing of such lands and all such leases unless approved by the Secretary of the Interior were void. *See La Motte v. United States*, 404 U. S. 870 (1971). For regulations regarding such leases see 25 C. F. R. 177.1-177.1b.

### SECTION 13. THE OKLAHOMA INDIAN WELFARE ACT<sup>122</sup>

The Wheeler Howard bill as originally introduced applied to the State of Oklahoma.<sup>123</sup> The bill was amended at the suggestion of Senator Thomas of Oklahoma, chairman of the Senate Indian Affairs Committee, so as to make inapplicable to the tribes in Oklahoma<sup>124</sup> those sections which extended existing trust periods, limited alienation of restricted land, authorized the establishment of new reservations, and authorized tribal organization.

Two years later these provisions of the Wheeler Howard Act were extended to Oklahoma, with some modifications to fit the peculiarities of the local legal situation. Under the Thomas Rogers Oklahoma Indian Welfare Act, the Indians of Oklahoma became eligible to share in the program of self-government, corporate organization, credit and land purchase. This act also provided for the organization of Indians into voluntary cooperative associations for the purposes of credit administration, production, marketing, consumers' protection or land management, and authorized an appropriation of \$2,000,000 for loans to such associations and to individual Indians of the state.<sup>125</sup>

Under this act a considerable number of the Oklahoma tribes have adopted tribal constitutions and obtained corporate charters.<sup>126</sup>

These constitutions and charters differ in several respects from those adopted by tribes of other states.<sup>127</sup> For one thing, the substantive powers of the tribe are set forth in the charters, rather than in constitutions. The constitutions are restricted to such topics as membership and tribal organization. Another important characteristic of the Oklahoma tribal constitutions and charters is that none of them contain the broad police and judicial powers found in many other tribal documents. This lack may be ascribed to legislation thereby discussed,<sup>128</sup> depriving tribal courts in the Indian Territory of all power, and to the practical assumption by the State of Oklahoma of responsibilities which are elsewhere divided between federal and tribal authorities.

<sup>122</sup> Act of June 25 1906, 49 Stat 1987, 25 U. S. C. 501, *et seq.* Supplemented by Act of June 18, 1904, 48 Stat 984. Supplemented by Act of August 8 1917, 60 Stat 554; Act of May 9, 1918, 52 Stat 321. Child Circular of Comm. No. 2170, July 28, 1909. Memo Sol I D. July 31 1910, Statement by Comm. on S. 3730, to repeal Wheeler Howard Act, March 3, 1917, Memo Sol I D. March 10 17, Memo Act. Sol I D. July 14 1917, Memo Sol I D. November 29, 1917, Memo Sol I D. April 22 1918, Memo Sol I D. May 24 1918, Letter of Act. Comm. to Five Civilized Tribes Agency, June 20 1918, Memo Sol I D. September 13 1918, Ind. Off. Letter from Supl. Quapaw Agency, October 17 1918, Memo Sol I D. December 14, 1918, Memo Sol I D. April 3, 1919.

<sup>123</sup> See Hearings, Ind. Comm. on Ind. Aff., H. R. 6284, 74th Cong., 1st sess., 1905, pp. 11-12.

<sup>124</sup> See Hearings, Sen. Comm. on Ind. Aff., S. 2047, 74th Cong., 1st sess., 1907, p. 9.

<sup>125</sup> For regulations regarding this law, see 25 C. F. R. 22.1-22.27 (organization and loans to Indian cooperative associations), 24.1-25.28 (loans to and by Indian credit associations), 26.1-26.26 (loans by United States to individual Indians).

<sup>126</sup> Seneca (Seneca) Tribe of Oklahoma, constitution ratified May 12, 1917, charter ratified June 20 1917, Wyandotte Tribe of Oklahoma, July 21 1907, charter, October 10, 1917, Cheyenne Arapaho Tribes of Oklahoma, September 18, 1917, Kickapoo Tribe of Oklahoma, September 18 1917, Choctaw (Tarrant) 18 1908, Iowa Tribe of Oklahoma, October 28, 1917, Chickasaw February 5, 1918, Sac and Fox Tribe of Indians of Oklahoma, December 7, 1917, Pawnee Indians of Oklahoma, January 6, 1918, charter April 26 1918, Caddo Indian Tribe of Oklahoma, January 17, 1918, charter November 17 1918, Tonkawa Tribe of Indians of Oklahoma, April 21 1918, Ottawa Tribe of Oklahoma, November 10 1918, charter June 1 1919, Abenaki Shawnee Tribe of Indians of Oklahoma, December 12 1918, Citizen Band of Potawatomi Indians of Oklahoma, December 12 1918, Philotheneo Tribe of Oklahoma, December 27, 1918, charter April 15, 1919, Abanaki Quapaw Tribal Town, February 10, 1919, charter May 24, 1919, Miami Tribe of Oklahoma, October 10, 1919, charter June 1, 1940, Peoria Tribe of Indians of Oklahoma, October 10, 1919, charter June 1, 1940, Eastern Shawnee Tribe of Oklahoma, December 22, 1919, charter December 14, 1940.

<sup>127</sup> See Chapter 7, sec. 8.

<sup>128</sup> See sec. 4, *supra*.









W  
3408